



# AGAINST THE GODS

BOOK 07

*Mars Gravity*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# ***Against the Gods***

(逆天邪神)

by

***Mars Gravity***

(火星引力)

# Synopsis

---

Wielding the sky poison pearl,

Receiving the blood of an evil  
god,

Cultivating the strength to  
oppose heaven,

A lord overlooking the world!

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by alyschu,  
OverTheRainbow, Scrya,  
SummerRain, Dnton,  
crushanapple, Niles, gorold  
@ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes  
@ [Hasseno Blog](#)



This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and

incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 651 – Final Desperate Struggle!

---

Yellow sand filled the sky in front of the Blue Wind Imperial City, and the earth trembled as blood flowed in rivers and corpses covered the field.

The ferocious battle that had been going on for a full day and night had resulted in Blue Wind Imperial City having their entire defensive line broken. The last line of defense was already pressed up against the city gates by the huge Divine Phoenix Army.

The Divine Phoenix Army was clad completely in red. Their scarlet armor and weapons, which emitted a scorching aura, had all been refined with phoenix flames by the Divine Phoenix Sect. Not only were their armor and weapons light, their offensive and defensive capabilities were incomparably strong. It was not something the heavy silver armor and weapons of the Blue Wind Army could compare with. Moreover, the average strength of the soldiers in the Divine Phoenix Army was far greater than those of the Blue Wind Army. To sum it up, it would not be exaggerated to say

that one troop of Divine Phoenix soldiers could fight against ten troops of Blue Wind soldiers!

The earth had long ago been dyed red with blood, and the color of the ground was even redder than the scarlet armor of the Divine Phoenix Army. Countless corpses lay strewn across every inch of the ground in front of the Imperial City, yet this slaughter still continued. Seven hundred thousand Divine Phoenix Army soldiers majestically advanced forward. They spread as far as the horizon and seemed to be a blood-red tidal wave that came

from the depths of hell to eternally engulf Blue Wind Nation.

There were less than one hundred thousand troops left of the million-soldier defensive unit that Blue Wind Imperial City had scrounged together with all of its might. Yet they still persisted in their desperate struggle, yelling until their voices went hoarse. However, these voices soon began to become weighed down by grief and despair.

Countless arrows frantically poured down in squalls from the city walls, becoming an enduring tempest of missiles. This slightly slowed down the advance of the Divine Phoenix Army which was approaching the city gates. In the middle of the city walls, the commander-in-chief of the Blue Wind Army, Feng Yunlie, steadily roared out commands. His voice had long ago gone hoarse, but every roar of his still shook the mountains and rivers.

Cang Yue quietly stood not far from his right. Today, she did not wear the phoenix coronet,

and her pitch-black hair danced in the winds of war. She silently observed the carnage, but her expression contained no grimness or sorrow. Instead, it was blanketed with a calm akin to still water... because this day would have come regardless, it was not something that could have been avoided.

By her side stood Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushuang. As they looked at blood of their martyrs being splashed across the city gate and the gradually diminishing Blue Wind Army, they had long ago lost their composure, and their eyes kept



darting to Cang Yue as they time and again stopped themselves from speaking.

The blistering squall of arrows which descended from the walls suddenly began to subside, and soon, it had dribbled into nothingness. With the greatest threat removed, the Divine Phoenix Army, which had already gained the advantage, fiercely pressed forward, and in the blink of an eye, they had pushed the Blue Wind Army's last line of defense to the verge of collapse.

“General Feng, our arrows have been completely exhausted!!”

The hopeless news did not cause Feng Yunlie to move an inch. His eyes grew red and he let out a hoarse yell, “Open the city gates!!”

Amidst Feng Yunlie’s angry roar, the clanking sound of the great gates of Blue Wind Imperial City gradually opening could be heard. Feng Yunlie turned around and faced Empress Cang Yue, “Empress, allow Palace Chief Dongfang to

escort you...”

“Speak no further.” Cang Yue’s voice contained an incomparable amount of calm and resolve, “We have vowed to live or perish together with Blue Wind Imperial City!”

“Bang.” A heavy sound rang out as Feng Yunlie fell to his knees and kowtowed deeply to Cang Yue. “To be able to be your majesty’s servant is the honor of this general Feng Yunlie’s life! And in the next life, this general will once again stake his life

under your majesty's  
command!"

"Clash!"

Feng Yunlie raised his long blade and bounded down the wall as his voice shook the earth, "Men of Blue Wind, follow me... Slaughter these wild dogs from the Divine Phoenix Empire!!"

The city gates swung open, and all of the archers had thrown away their steel bows and picked up sharp sword or spears. They

yelled as they rushed out the city gates, welcoming the impending forces of the Divine Phoenix Army.

At this moment, everyone could practically see that the moment of Blue Wind Imperial City's final capitulation was at hand. Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushuang glanced at each other before bitterly exchanging a faint nod. Dongfang Xiu silently advanced a step forward, but before he could even lift his hand, he heard Cang Yue say in a chilly voice, "Palace Chief Dongfang, if you dare to knock us unconscious and carry us

away, we will immediately bite our tongue and commit suicide the moment we have awoken!”

Dongfang Xiu froze in place, and he helplessly let his hand drop to his side as he let out a long sigh.

The Divine Phoenix Army constantly surged forward, and there seemed to be no end to them. Meanwhile, Blue Wind Imperial City had entered its final struggle, and those archers who yelled as they charged out the city gates were the last

dredges of the Blue Wind Army.

“Close the city gates... follow me to kill!!!”

Feng Yunlie's roar rang in the air, and the city gates at their back began to slowly close with a low and deep rumbling sound. They had sealed the final defense of the Blue Wind Imperial City, but at the same time, they had also sealed off their only path of retreat.

Cang Yue stood on top of the

wall and heard the roars of the soldiers as she observed the blood-soaked battlefield. Her eyes could no longer maintain their calm, and they were now covered in a thick haze of tears. She raised both her hands and used all of her profound energy to shout, “Warriors of Blue Wind Nation, you have battled to this point, proving that you are already the greatest heroes of our Blue Wind Nation! Even though our homeland has been pillaged by these bandits, this land will forever remember your blood and your heroic souls! We, along with all the sons and daughters of Blue Wind, will forever remember your unyielding spirits!”



“We are right behind you right now! We will share the final glory of Blue Wind Nation along with you... and will live or die together with it!!”

Cang Yue’s voice resounded in the ears of every Blue Wind soldier. Their blood burned, and their faces twisted into expressions that were as sinister as a demon’s. Their eyes also turned as scarlet as that of bloodthirsty wolves as the aura around their bodies began to surge crazily...

An earth-shaking roar rang out across the sky that had been dyed blood red. There was no path of retreat left, and death was right at their doorstep, yet they did not feel any terror. Instead, they brought forth all their power, battle intent, fury, and resentment as they barrelled towards the Divine Phoenix Army which had originally been a symbol of terror.

The air which carried the thick smell of blood suddenly became frenzied as the shouts across the battlefield grew louder by

several times. The soldiers of Blue Wind who were already at death's door did not know pain, terror, or death. Facing the assault of the Divine Phoenix Army, they abandoned all defense and retreat. They willingly thrust themselves upon the weapons of the enemy and then fiercely roared as they thrust their swords and spears at their enemy's vitals.

There were some of them who had their bones broken by the impact of the armor of the Divine Phoenix Army, but these people used their jagged arm bones and thrust them towards

the throats of their opponents. There were others who had their weapons shattered by the enemy, who rushed forward despite their chests being impaled and the skin between their fingers split apart in order to thrust their weapons into a chink of the enemies' armor. There were some who were sent flying by the charging heavy cavalry, but they refused to allow themselves to faint and thrust themselves back into the fray like hungry tigers, dragging down the riders from their mounts so as to allow their companions to pierce the opposing side's throats with their sharp weapons.

The smell of blood in the air became even thicker and the battle. What was originally a one-sided battle which neared its end, suddenly underwent a terrible change. The strength and equipment of every soldier in the Divine Phoenix numbers was ten times better than a soldier of the Blue Wind Army. But during this final resistance of the Blue Wind Army, every soldier from the Blue Wind Army managed to drag at least one soldier of the Divine Phoenix Army down to the grave with them.

Amidst the howling blood wind, another fifty thousand soldiers from the Blue Wind Army died miserably while the Divine Phoenix Army... had actually lost more than fifty thousand troops as well. But there was no despair that showed on the faces of the remaining fifty thousand troops of the Divine Phoenix Army. Instead, their expressions twisted into the likeness of sinister demons... and their eyes, voices and auras seemed to become like that of a vengeful demon from the depths of the abyss.

They were not doing this for victory, but to use their own lives to fight against fate!

Yet the clearly superior Divine Phoenix Army began to tremble. Because on the brink of their final victory, they were not facing opponents who had abandoned all hope and lost all morale... instead, they were facing battle spirits that were not afraid of death!

“Sss....” In the air above the Divine Phoenix Army, the face of Duan Qinghang, the second-in-

command of the Divine Phoenix Army, turned green and he could not help but exhale a cold breath. From these Blue Wind soldiers, not only could he see a fighting spirit that had been ignited to its limit, he even saw the fires of their very lives burning.... Every single one of them had a power that was clearly miniscule, but at this time, it even caused him, a level six Throne, to feel a bone-piercing chill, “That Blue Wind Empress... just a few short words from her caused these Blue Wind soldiers to go completely berserk!”



“Phew!” Qi Zhencang, the commander of the Divine Phoenix Army, also let out a long breath and said, “She has only been on the throne for less than three years and she is only a little girl of twenty years of age. But she has already become the spiritual support of the Blue Wind Army! If not for her, we would not be in this situation where we are still struggling to completely conquer this Blue Wind Nation.”

“All these years, she wielded the frail military strength of Blue Wind Nation masterfully, using every kind of terrain and

formation to restrict and batter our army countless of times. We repeatedly entreated her to surrender and we promised that as long as she did so, not only would her life be spared, she would even be designated as the lord of the Blue Wind territories. Yet she completely rejected us! And now that our troops are breathing down her neck, she had countless opportunities to flee. Instead, she personally stood at the rear of her troops, vowing to live or die together with her troops and her country... With this kind of ruler, someone who is only a girl of twenty summers, as men, what reason would they have to not fight desperately to the

end?!”

“Honestly speaking, I, Qi Zhencang, have never truly admired a woman in my life... she is the first one!”

Duan Qinghang’s brows furrowed as he replied, “The aura of our army is weakening and there are even some who are cowering away from battle... Tch!”

“So why aren’t the both of you taking any action?! What are

you doing just standing there and staring!!”

A low voice rang out from behind them. The two people swiftly turned around and bowed their heads in respect, “Nineteenth Elder, Forty-third Elder.”

Two middle-aged men dressed in scarlet robes had suddenly appeared behind them; they had eyes that carried firelight and beards like fire. The dull golden phoenixes embroidered on their red robes signified their exalted

status—Elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect!

Among the three great commanders of the Divine Phoenix Army, only Feng Huwei was from the Divine Phoenix Sect. But within every army, there would be an 'supervisor' from the Divine Phoenix Sect. And within this core army, there would be two elder-class individuals to supervise the army. They would normally not make any moves. As elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect and as powerful Overlords who looked down on everything under heaven, they were not suited to

take action in this kind of battle. Furthermore, they disdained to take such actions as well. Their duties were to observe the movements and developments of the army and to personally report back to Divine Phoenix Sect Master, Feng Hengkong.

And right now, in this battle to conquer Blue Wind Imperial City, they had already grown impatient.

“An entire three years have gone by, yet we are unable to completely conquer this tiny

Blue Wind Nation! Sect Master has already been moved to anger many times! Blue Wind Imperial City is right now before our very eyes, yet a day and a night of fierce battle has not been able to break it yet! Furthermore, in just a short two hours, we actually lost tens of thousands of elite troops! This is simply preposterous!” The Nineteenth Elder Feng Feiheng roared furiously, “How am I supposed to account for this to the Sect Master?!”

Qi Zhencang smiled bitterly and replied, “I pray that the two elders be appeased. The last

dregs of the Blue Wind Army have consigned themselves to death and are trading their lives for one last fight. On the battlefield, these kind of troops who have their backs against the wall and are willing to fight to the end are the scariest. We cannot afford to be negligent in the face of such fighting spirit.... At present, we might have to lose tens of thousands of troops in order to completely destroy the remnants of the Blue Wind Army.”

“Hmph!” Feng Feiheng’s expression was flushed with anger, “Why should tens of



thousands of our Divine Phoenix soldiers accompany these pitiful and inferior remnants to their deaths?! We had originally expected that there would be no more than a few tens of thousands of casualties in the taking of this small Blue Wind Imperial City, so we never had the intention to intervene. But it looks like that was a great mistake indeed! If things continue the way they have been going, even if we are able to conquer this Blue Wind Imperial City... we wouldn't have any face to go back and see the Sect Master!"

“Feiying!” Feng Feiheng said as he looked to the side.

“Heh heh.” The Forty-third Elder, Feng Feiying, immediately responded. With a dull laugh, he rose into the air and flew towards the city gates of Blue Wind Imperial City. The indomitable aura belonging to an Overlord enveloped the area, instantly suppressing most of the screams emanating from the battlefield. He looked down from below, observing the ants that were clustered together. His arm ignited with flames and with a casual flick, he sent a ball of phoenix flames streaking

towards the city gates.

# Chapter 652 – Tempest Of Rage

---

A stifling aura of suppression shot down from above, causing Dongfang Xiu to unwittingly raise his head. He saw the flaming ball flying right at them... it was only a tiny fireball, but it carried with it a suppressive force that caused his entire body to instantly convulse... because it was made of phoenix flames, and it was phoenix flames from an Overlord at that!

Dongfang Xiu's entire body

froze, and his face went pale due to alarm. He instantly used his body to shield Cang Yue, and he caused all the profound energy in his body to unreservedly surge forth, yelling in a loud voice, “Scram... Everyone get away from here!!”

Booom!!

Dongfang Xiu’s voice was swallowed up by the raging sounds of battle, and the phoenix flames mercilessly fell to the ground, causing an explosion which caused the

heaven and earth to tremble. A pillar of violent flames rushed towards the sky in front of the gates of Blue Wind Imperial City. It was as if a slumbering volcano had suddenly erupted to life.

Over two thousand Blue Wind soldiers were engulfed within the firestorm as they were mercilessly incinerated by the phoenix flames, and the number of heavily injured people who were sent flying by the explosion was uncountable. Feng Yunlie was fiercely smashed against the city wall in the aftermath of that explosion. His whole body was covered in blood, and he was not

able to stand for a long time. Behind him, the already ravaged city gates and wall had been devastated by the phoenix flames to the point where they were on the verge of collapse.

Even though he was on the edge of the blast, Dongfang Xiu still had to use all his strength to block the impact, managing to somehow come out of it unscathed while fully protecting Cang Yue. He glared furiously at the sky, but the phoenix robes and the golden embroidery on them caused his pupils to contract suddenly—because those were symbols that clearly

marked this person as an elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect!!

And to be qualified to become an elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, one's profound strength had to be at least at the fifth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm!

So that was to say that the red-robed man floating in the air... was at the very least a mid-stage Overlord! A terrifying existence that his Blue Wind Imperial City could definitely not resist! His phoenix flames could easily



reduce all of Blue Wind Imperial City to cinders in the blink of an eye.

The veins on Dongfang Xiu's forehead stood out as he furiously rebuked the man, "As a grand and glorious elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, how could you stoop so low as to take action against normal soldiers... Do you want to even abandon your pride as a profound practitioner of the Tyrant Profound Realm?!!"

"Palace Chief Dongfang, there

is no need to get angry,” Cang Yue said in a chilly voice. “The Divine Phoenix Sect has long ago completely abandoned any semblance of conscience or virtue, so why would they still care about their sense of honor?!”

“Hehehe.” Feng Feiying was not the least bit infuriated as he gazed down from above... and it was a gaze which looked down from above in judgement while carrying the slightest trace of pity. “This elder is not interfering with the battles of mere mortals, I am merely granting you one final chance.

Open the city, surrender to us, and obediently wait to captured. Then it might still be possible for you to be...”

“Old bandit of the Divine Phoenix Sect, you can stop your wishful thinking!” Cang Yue’s delicate brows drew themselves into cold crescent moons, and every word that proceeded from her mouth was filled with hate, “We would hate to be the ruler of a dead kingdom... so even if we were to die a thousand times, we would never became slaves from a vanquished nation!!”

A girl who was barely twenty years of age, with the aura of a True Profound Realm practitioner... yet the sharpness and coldness of her gaze caused him to look away. Feng Feiying gave a cold laugh, and his whole body starting burning with flames. “Then all of you can accompany this wretched and pitiful city to become ashes and scorched earth!!”

Whoosh!!!

The scarlet flames on Feng Feiying’ body instantly soared

up tens of meters into the sky, and in a three thousand kilometer radius around him, the temperature sharply rose. All of Blue Wind Imperial City was engulfed in an oppressive heat, and a scarlet light blanketed the entire sky in the blink of an eye.

“Stop... Stop it!!” Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushuang’s line of sight had completely been flooded by the scarlet-red fire light, causing all color to drain from their face... if such a fearsome phoenix fire smashed against them, it would completely incinerate the northern part of

Blue Wind Imperial City. Not only would it destroy the city wall and city gates, it would also consume countless soldiers. Moreover, even more innocent civilians who were not willing to flee would be buried in the aftershock.

Feng Feiying, who had lost his patience long ago, would definitely not stop. He looked down on the people and city wall below, and a brutal thrill ran through him. "All you inferior denizens of this fallen nation who vainly attempt to rebel against our Divine Phoenix Empire, go to hell!"

Amidst his brash laughter, the phoenix flames which hid the sky and covered the earth mercilessly rained down. It was as if a glorious sun had collapsed in the middle of the sky as the red light of death enshrouded the northern part of Blue Wind Imperial City.

“Protect her Majesty!!” Feng Yunlie extended a blood-stained arm as he let out cry that was choked up by blood.

Dongfang Xiu, Qin Wushuang,

and all the most powerful practitioners of the Blue Wind Profound Palace had long ago shielded Cang Yue. All the profound energy in their bodies began to frantically surge out as their faces were distorted with pain... because each and every one of them knew that this was the phoenix flame produced by a mid-stage Overlord. So even if they used all their strength or even if they were ten times stronger than they were at present, they still could not block this attack.

Cang Yue tilted her head upwards and looked at the



flames of death which were growing closer and closer. But there was no alarm or terror on her face; instead, those beautiful eyes began to mist up...

Finally... is it going to be over...

Royal Father... Yue'er really cannot go on any longer... these three years... I have been so burdened... so afraid... and so tired...

“Your Majesty!!”

“Protect her majesty... Protect her majesty!”

The sounds around her gradually faded away, and very slowly, she began to close her eyes as two tears slid silently down her cheeks. Yet her mouth curved up to form a gentle and beautiful smile... Husband... I can finally... come and accompany you...

The all-encompassing crimson flames grew closer and closer and shone on faces that were

filled with boundless hate and despair. Each person bitterly closed their eyes and awaited the arrival of death and destruction.

At this time, a deep and low explosion rang through the air as another cluster of flames that came out of nowhere collided with the first flaming ball. That cluster of flames was also scarlet in color, but it was a much deeper red, and it burned with even more intensity. In an instant, that ball of fire had already spread more than three kilometers wide, and even though it began its descent, it was not falling onto Blue Wind

Imperial City. Instead, it was collapsing on the phoenix flames which were assaulting the city... and in a mere blink of an eye, the phoenix flames released by Feng Feiying had been completely swallowed up.

The phoenix flames which had been devoured stopped its descent and began to furiously struggle. But these terrifying flames which came from an all-powerful Overlord was like an earthworm that had fallen into the mouth of a python in front of these flames. Its pitiful struggles only lasted for a fraction of a second before it was

completely extinguished, and besides a few small threads of smoke that wafted through the air, there was not a trace of its existence left... and there was nothing left to stain even the smallest speck of land in Blue Wind Imperial City.

Feng Feiying's eyes dramatically bulged out, and he looked as if he had seen the most unbelievable thing in the world. At this time, the cluster of flames which had completely extinguished his phoenix flames rushed towards him, and despite the hundreds of meters separating the two, the

scorching aura seemed to plunge him into a purgatory of flames.

“Feiying... fall back now!!”

Feng Feiheng was extremely clear on just how much destructive power the phoenix flames that Feng Feiying had released just now possessed. To be able to extinguish that cluster of flames in an instant... the fearsomeness of those scarlet flames was unimaginable! As he saw those flames storm towards Feng Feiying, he desperately roared out those words.

Even though Feng Feiying was in a state of shock, his reaction speed was still extremely fast, and he circulated all the profound energy in his body to make a swift retreat... But after he had flown several kilometers, he was still caught by the edges of that scarlet fire.

“Uwaahhhhhh!!!!”

An extremely shrill and miserable cry pierced the skies above the blood-soaked battlefield. The very moment

Feng Feiying was touched by that scarlet flame, his entire body was instantly transformed into that of a human torch. He unceremoniously fell from the sky and just happened to land in a location that was not too far away from Feng Feiheng. After that, he began rolling on the floor, howling in agony... But the scarlet flames on his body grew more and more intense, and they were accompanied by a pungent smell of roasting flesh.

“Feiying!!”



Feng Feiheng quickly rushed forward, but before he could come within five steps of Feng Feiying, he was assaulted by a scorching sensation that was hard to endure. It caused his expression to change dramatically as he retreated in a hurry. And by the time he had recovered from his shock, Feng Feiying's screams had already stilled, and the flames on his body had been extinguished as well... The only thing that was left was a completely charred corpse, and the only thing that was recognizable was a clawed and charred hand which stretched towards the sky with all five fingers contorted in agony.

The Divine Phoenix Army commanders, Qi Zhencang and Duan Qinghai, had become completely petrified. Even more so, when they looked at that charred corpse, their eyes were filled with boundless shock and horror.

The air was incomparably hot, and within his body, there flowed the Phoenix bloodline which glowed even hotter, yet Feng Feiheng clearly felt a piercing cold aura start up his spine and spread to the rest of his body...

Feng Feiying was ranked forty-third amongst all the elders in the Divine Phoenix Sect! Furthermore, he was a level five Overlord who could lord it over most of the world! Feng Feiying's profound strength was only lower than his by two levels... yet he had only come into the briefest contact with those scarlet flames... and as a result, he had been burned into ashes in the space of a few breaths! He did not even have the opportunity to struggle or resist.

He was very sure that those scarlet flames were not phoenix flames because they did not have a trace of the aura given out by phoenix flames. But the power and the aura of these flames were sufficient to cause him, who possessed the strongest flames in the world—the Phoenix flames, to feel utter dread. He raised his head to look at the sky and roared in a trembling voice, “Who is it?! Who is it?!”

The flames in the sky had disappeared, and the red light and scorching heat that had obscured the sky had

disappeared along with it. But the light was clearly much dimmer than it had been before, as if a storm of dark clouds had replaced the fire which blanketed the sky. At the same time, an extremely heavy and gloomy pressure soundlessly engulfed the entire area. And under this pressure, the raging battlefield immediately became desolate. Not a single person could utter a sound, nor could a single person even breathe; even the blood flowing along the ground seemed to stop in its tracks, as if it had been completely and utterly frozen.

In addition, this pressure was not only heavy, it also contained a boundless rage... The rage was so violent that it seemed that it would burst open and explode at any moment.

Everyone unconsciously raised their heads to peer into the distant sky... where a figure stood wreathed in flames. The flames were so thick that they were unable to make anything out of it, resulting in them only being able to see an indistinct silhouette. The aura of rage that hung in the air was too fierce and terrifying, so it caused all who were present to be unable

to differentiate whether what was burning on that person's body was profound flames or flames of pure rage.

Furthermore, not far behind him stood another three figures, but all eyes were on the burning man, so no one took notice of them.

“Who... who is... who is that...” Looking at the burning figure in the skies above, Dongfang Xiu's pupils dilated, and he could not suppress the shock and fear in his voice. Even though that

person had used a strong and unfathomable power to extinguish the flames that were falling on Blue Wind Imperial City and had easily destroyed an invincible elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, he did not seem to be an enemy... but that person's aura of power and rage was simply far too terrifying... As the Palace Chief of Blue Wind, he had never experienced this degree of dread in his life before... No! He had not even experienced one-tenth of the fear he was experiencing right now.

He had no doubts whatsoever



that with such terrifying power, destroying the entire Blue Wind Imperial City... would be as easy and quick as flipping a hand.

Who was this person... and when did such a person exist in the Profound Sky Continent... and why would this person help Blue Wind...

“Uwah... It’s really... really scary...” Number Seven Under Heaven covered half of her eyes while relentlessly burrowing into Xiao Yun’s chest.

“This is indeed horrifying to the point where it cannot be described with mere words.” Number One Under Heaven observed the battlefield where rivers of blood ran and bodies were strewn everywhere. If even his heart palpitated at such a sight, then it was natural that Number Seven would do so as well. They had accompanied Yun Che and used the Primordial Profound Ark to transverse space from New Moon City, and they instantly arrived in this place... He had expected to arrive in the field of battle, but he did not expect to see such a horrific and miserable sight.

“No, it’s not that...” Number Seven Under Heaven said as her body curled up, “I am talking ab... I am talking about Big Brother Yun! He seems to be really scary right now...”

“Big Brother...” Xiao Yun cautiously made his way forward, but he was immediately held back by Number One Under Heaven. “Do not approach him!”

Beneath the Golden Crow flames, Yun Che’s body began to

steadily tremble ... That tempest  
of rage caused Number One  
Under Heaven to feel a deep and  
intense dread.

# Chapter 653 – I’m Back...

---

“Who... who are you... Why are you attacking my Divine Phoenix Army...”

Qi Zhencang, the commander-in-chief of the Divine Phoenix Army, had experienced all kinds of grand scenes. Even when they were facing the lords of great nations like Navy Tide and Black Fiend, he would hold his head up high, and his roar would be so loud that it would shake the sky. But the sound that he roared out at this moment

carried a tremor that couldn't be suppressed, especially the last few words, and even he himself could hear the sound of his teeth shivering.

That aura of profound energy was incredibly scary, but what made him in even more afraid was the furious atmosphere that covered the sky and sun. Under this rage, the large battlefield was as if it was covered by a large, black pot... He was sure that even thousands or millions of desperate wolves wouldn't be able to release such a horrifying aura... and it actually came from a single person!

It was also his appearance that made this large battlefield become as cold and still as the deep netherworld so suddenly.

Yun Che's anger was boiling crazily, and he could feel that every single cell in his body was on the edge of exploding. He came here in a hurry with longing and joyous emotions, he thought that he could see the people that he had been missing day and night very soon, and reunite with them... But he never thought that what welcomed him would be a

homeland violated and riddled with gaping wounds!

This was the second time that Yun Che had completely lost control of his temper in Profound Sky Continent... The first time was back when Xiao Lie and Xiao Lingxi were kidnapped by the Burning Heaven Clan, and this time, it was even more uncontrollable than before! His rage was mixed with flames and burned violently, and even the world that he saw was covered in a layer of scarlet.



Qi Zhencang's voice came from afar. The flames on Yun Che's body shook violently as he suddenly dropped from the sky onto the Divine Phoenix Army.

More than five kilometers of the nearby land shook violently. The flames on Yun Che were accompanied by an extremely forceful profound energy storm and it was released to his surroundings. Countless soldiers of the Divine Phoenix Army were rolling on the ground while wailing in fear, and even the mounts of the cavalry screamed out of fear. When each of them stood up from the

ground in distress, and looked at the shadow of a person who was falling from the sky, each of their pupils instantly enlarged until it almost exploded...

Because they saw the most terrifying scene in their whole life.

More than five kilometers of the ground collapsed severely, with Yun Che's foot as the center. Countless cracks on the ground radiated outward, the longest crack spreading until it went as far as one could see, and

it was three meters wide. And within the three thousand meters of area around him, the originally densely packed Divine Phoenix Army there all disappeared, even those densely piled corpses all disappeared without a trace... Following, pieces of armor and the remains of the corpses fell from the sky, becoming a true rain of blood!

“You... will... all... die!!”

Countless Divine Phoenix Army soldiers collapsed in extreme shock and horror. More than ten

thousand companions couldn't give them any sense of security. The sound ringing by their ears... it didn't even seem to be the voice of a human, but the deadly curse of the reaper.

“This is... the power of a Monarch!”

Feng Feiheng said as his voice shivered. He couldn't understand how a Monarch would appear in the territory of this Blue Wind Nation! His momentum and all of his actions obviously showed that he sided

with Blue Wind Nation... The small Blue Wind Nation, the peak of their profound realm was only at Thrones, how was it possible for them to have a Monarch as an ally—in another way, Monarch, this type of aloof existence that looked down on the whole universe, why would an honorable being like him help a small Blue Wind Nation!

“What? Mo... monarch!?” Feng Feiheng’s words made Qi Zhencang and Duan Qinghang lose the color in their faces simultaneously out of fear. Even though the two of them were only Thrones, they knew clearly

what the concept of “Monarch” meant! Their Divine Phoenix Nation, Divine Phoenix Sect’s Sect Master Feng Hengkong was also only at the peak of Overlord, and the fifty-six elders were all only mid-late stage Overlords... In the whole Divine Phoenix Sect, only among people like the Grand Sect Masters and Grand Elders, there existed a few limited, more than ten Monarchs, and these people, were the true foundation of Divine Phoenix Sect. They were an existence that surpassed the world. They almost never showed their faces normally, and even when Feng Hengkong met them, he would be very respectful towards them.

Millions of Divine Phoenix Army soldiers were enough to destroy Blue Wind Nation, but when facing a real Monarch, they were not much different from millions of ants.

“Commander Qi, what do we do... If he really is a Monarch...” Duan Qinghang said in a trembling voice. After having spent most of his lifetime on the battlefield, even when he faced enemies that ten times as many forces as his army, he wouldn’t panic at all, but if the person before his eyes was really a

Monarch, then it was not something that could be fought with an “army!”

Because when one reached this high realm that could look down upon the sky... the so-called numbers, armaments, disposition of troops, morale, strategies... These all became useless jokes.

“It shouldn’t be like this... Absolutely shouldn’t be like this! How is it possible that a Monarch would aid the small Blue Wind Nation!” Feng



Feiheng gnashed his teeth and said, "Let me go to him and..."

Feng Feiheng's voice suddenly stopped at this moment, because as the flames on Yun Che's body dispersed and the blood rain that was all over the sky stopped, he saw Yun Che's face clearly... At that instant, his pupils shrank abruptly, he lost his voice as he yelled, "Yun... Yun Che!!"

Even though Qi Zhencang and Duan Qinghang have heard of Yun Che's name many times,

they had never seen him in person before. But for Feng Feiheng, as the elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, three years ago, he was naturally at the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament... Those who had experienced that Seven Nation Ranking Tournament personally would never forget Yun Che's face for the rest of their lives.

When Feng Feiheng yelled Yun Che's name, Cang Yue's eyes that were watching Yun Che's back were already dull. Her eyes were trembling and lips were shivering, but no sound came out between her lips. She was

stunned while she reached out her arm towards the direction of Yun Che, and her feet tried to move towards him unconsciously, but her vision became more and more blurry, even the strength in her whole body was disappearing completely without a sound, making her body fall down slowly...

“Your majesty!” Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang wanted to hold her up in panic, but a golden shadow suddenly swung, and an incredibly fierce storm overwhelmed them, suddenly rendering them defenseless and

knocking them backwards, almost falling on the ground. Cang Yue, who almost fell on the ground, was held in the arms of a man in golden clothing. They focused their eyes and looked at the person who was holding Cang Yue, and then their eyes widened immensely at the same time.

“Yun... Yun Che!?”

“It really is you!?”

Yun Che held Cang Yue in his

arms, and the anger that was on the edge of being uncontrollable was surrounded by deep, gentle feeling and satisfaction, and he slowly calmed down. He had his back facing her earlier, but just as she started falling, it was as if there was a voice calling to him from the bottom on his heart, which made him turn around on instinct and rush towards her.

“Yue’er...” He held onto the body that was a lot weaker than it was three years ago. His heart was in extreme pain, and he didn’t know whether he should feel hatred or be glad. He hated that disaster was brought to Blue

Wind Nation, and the pressure of the doom of the nation was carried heavily by her for a whole three years. He was glad that he could be back in time at this last moment, and still be able to hold her in his arms.

If he came back slightly later... The consequences, he couldn't dare to think about it.

Cang Yue's eyes were unfocused like fog, and she looked at Yun Che who was close to her openly. At this moment, she didn't have any of the prestige or

determination that she had normally; she was so weak that it made people's hearts ache. Her lips moved slightly, and her voice was as if she was still dreaming, "Hus... band... Is it... really you..."

"It's me! It's me!" Yun Che nodded his head as hard as he could, "I'm back..."

"Am... I... dreaming..."

"Of course not!" Yun Che immediately held Cang Yue's

palm against his face to let her feel his body's temperature, "I am right here. Here in one piece... Look at me closely, this is not a dream. I didn't die... I didn't die at all... My Yue'er is still waiting for me to return, how could I die..."

The warmth, body, and scent that she missed and yearned for in her dreams... Cang Yue's tears flooded out of her eyes... At this moment, the Divine Phoenix, war, destruction of the nation, determination, hatred... nothing was important anymore. The figure of the person who had returned to her side like a dream



had completely filled her heart and soul. She caressed Yun Che's face clingingly; her vision was like a blur, and her voice was as if she were in a pipe dream, "My Junior Brother Yun... My husband didn't die... That's great... that's... great..."

She spoke in a low voice while crying, her arms fell down slowly, and her eyes also slowly closed... Under the large shock to her heart and soul, she peacefully passed out in Yun Che's arms, only there was still a tear falling silently from the corner of her eye.

Yue Che pressed his palm onto her chest and inserted the energy of heaven and earth into her body. Her inner vitality was incredibly weak; Yun Che could imagine that she probably hadn't slept for many days and nights.

“Yue’er, rest well... I will take care of the rest.” Yun Che mumbled softly in a low voice. He held Cang Yue, stood up slowly, faced Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang’s fully red faces, bowed slightly and said, “Palace Chief Dongfang, Palace Chief

Qin, thank you two for protecting my Yue'er... Thank you for your hard work all this time."

"This is... part of our job." When he looked at Yun Che, Dongfang Xiu's emotions couldn't be calmed. Three years ago, he was buried on the Primordial Profound Ark, there was no way he could have survived. Blue Wind Nation had lost its prince consort and lost its brightest pearl. But... he lived and came back! And his power increased "earth-shatteringly"!

He didn't dare to guess Yun Che's strength now, but killing a Divine Phoenix Sect's Elder figure within a few breaths, the Yun Che before his eyes... This young man who had once moved the whole Blue Wind Profound Palace, his profound energy plane now was already so strong that he couldn't even see it.

“It's good that you're back, good that you're back,” Qin Wushang nodded hard, being extremely overwhelmed, he already didn't know what to say.

Xiao Yun and the others landed from the sky, came behind Yun Che, and Yun Che put Cang Yue who was in his arms into Number Seven Under Heaven's arms, "Seventh Sister, protect her for me. She is my wife."

Number Seven Under Heaven nodded seriously, "Big Brother Yun, don't worry. Unless I die, no one will dare to get near her."

"Mn," Yun Che nodded slightly, there was no joy or sadness in his expression, it was so calm that it made people feel fear in

their heart. His eyes turned towards Xiao Yun and suddenly said, “Xiao Yun, have you ever killed someone?”

“Ah?” Xiao Yun stunned for a moment, and shook his head, “N... No.”

Yun Che turned around, watching the densely packed Divine Phoenix Army in the north, and anger and murderous intent boiled madly in his eyes once again, “If you want to become a true man, from today on, let your own hands be

covered with the enemy's fresh blood!!”

Once his voice ended, Yun Che's body had already shot outwards, carrying endless hatred towards the Divine Phoenix Army that had drove the Blue Wind Nation into the depths of despair.

Xiao Yun stood there blankly, not knowing what to do.

“Even though the thing that our elven clan hates the most is killing and war,” Number One

Under Heaven said, opening his mouth slowly, “today, if I were you, I will definitely make my whole body covered by these people’s fresh blood... Look closely at this land that was originally calm and peaceful. It is now being stormed over by enemies and soaked with its the blood of its people... This land was riddled with gaping wounds, buried with tens of thousands of people... Facing this kind of enemy that has committed a crime that cannot be forgiven, and who has lost their humanity, tolerance and mercy are not only cheap, but are stupidity!”



“Don’t forget, this is not only Yun Che’s homeland... it is also your homeland!”

Xiao Yun, “!!!!”

# Chapter 654 – Bloody Massacre

---

“Yun Che? Which... which Yun Che?”

“The prince consort of the Blue Wind Imperial Family... He personally challenged the Divine Phoenix Sect by himself all those years ago... What other Yun Che could there be?!!” Feng Feiheng yelled in a hoarse voice.

“But didn’t he die three years ago in the Primordial Profound

Ark?!” Qi Zhencang and Duan Qinghang had dumbfounded looks on their faces. “Moreover, the Yun Che all those years ago only had a profound strength that was at the Earth Profound Realm while his actual strength was comparable to a late-stage Throne... But this person’s strength even caused the Forty-third Elder to...”

“I want to know the reason behind this even more than the both of you!” Feng Feiheng roared as he gnashed his teeth, his eyes dilating to the largest extent. “But he is that Yun Che... there can be no mistaking

that!!”

“...Then what should we do right now? If he is really a Monarch...”

“Retreat!! Of course we retreat!!” Feng Feiheng yelled in a low voice, “Or could it be that you are naive enough to think that tens of thousands of soldiers can actually resist the might of someone at the Sovereign Profound Realm?!!”

At first he was prepared to

gather all his nerve and use the fame of the Divine Phoenix Sect and his status as one of its elders to negotiate with this fearsome Monarch who appeared out of nowhere. But after finding out this person was actually Yun Che, all of these thoughts flew out of his head... Three years ago, he dared to come by himself to the territory of the Divine Phoenix Sect to take on the entire sect by himself. And even though he faced the Sect Master of the Divine Phoenix Sect and many other elders as well, he did not lose even a bit of his imposing aura.

His innate potential and strength was incomparably strong while his temperament was even more tyrannical and unyielding.

Yun Che had dared to take on the Divine Phoenix Sect all those years ago when he was only at the Earth Profound Realm, and the him at present... he would not be restrained by the fear ordinary men had of the Divine Phoenix Sect!

Moreover, right now, he was releasing an aura of hate that

would cause even the heaven and earth to tremble!

Qi Zhencang's face twitched, and without the slightest hint of hesitation, he took out his Sound Transmission Jade and yelled, "All forces retreat... start making a full retreat!!"

Qi Zhencang's urgent order stunned a large number of commanders, and nearly all of them thought there was some problem with their ears. In response, many questions were transmitted back to Qi Zhencang

along these lines, “Re... Retreat? Just because of this... one person?”

“You idiots!!” Qi Zhencang roared in fury, “He is not just one mere man... he is a Monarch! Monarch!! The Forty-third Elder just died at his hands without even being able to mount the slightest resistance, are you all blind?! Make a full retreat... hurry up and retreat as fast as you possibly can!!”

Before Qi Zhencang could put down his Sound Transmission



Jade, he suddenly felt his entire body go cold. He unwittingly raised his head and saw that golden figure slowly fly down from the top of the wall... An aura thick with fury, resentment, and the promise of violence abruptly constricted his very soul, causing all the blood in his body to instantly stop flowing under that extreme oppression. Furthermore, throughout the entire battlefield, the six hundred thousand troops of the Divine Phoenix Army and the less than fifty thousand troops remaining of the Blue Wind Army all instantly froze as well... Even Number One Under Heaven had an expression of deep shock and

fear on his face.

In the Profound Sky Continent, this was the first time Yun Che had... completely and unrestrainedly released his full killing intent without any reservation. It was so intense that it was nearly tangible, and it was violent enough that it caused everyone's hair to stand on end and caused their bodies and souls to feel like they had been plunged into the depths of an icy lake.

“All of you... can go to hell!!”

A red light flashed in Yun Che's hand, and the Heaven Smiting Sword appeared and swept forward.

Boom!!!

Yun Che had only swept his sword forward once, without using any fancy techniques or profound arts, and yet that one attack caused a huge explosion that seemed to rend the sky and cause the earth to collapse. The earth in front of Yun Che had completely buckled, and sand

was flying everywhere while several thousand Divine Phoenix soldiers were immediately blown away by the incomparably strong profound energy storm. Before they could even utter a single wail of despair, they had been reduced to bright red blood flowers which swirled spectacularly in the air along with the remnants of their body, and very soon, the wide expanse of earth was stained red with the eye-piercing color of fresh blood.

Just one sweep of his sword had caused three thousand Divine Phoenix Soldiers... to die a terrible and miserable death!!

Qi Zhencang was situated in the middle of the army, so he was still very far away from the action, but this scene shocked him so much that it nearly caused his soul to fly away. He held the Sound Transmission Jade in a deathgrip and yelled with all his might, “All troops... Retreat... Ahhh!!”

After Qi Zhencang’s numerous shouts, which were filled with alarm, Yun Che’s figure had already approached with a speed that could not be comprehended by the naked eye. The gigantic

scarlet sword in his hand released a crimson profound light and an aura so violent that it could not be described as it exploded in the midst of the Divine Phoenix Army that had still not come back to its senses.

Booom!!!!

An earth-shattering explosion completely engulfed everyone's hearing. Instantly, the light in the sky became exceptionally dim... and that was definitely not because the sky had suddenly become shrouded in

dark clouds. It was because kilometers of land in the surrounding area had been sent into a great upheaval, carrying with it tens of thousands of soldiers from the Divine Phoenix Army. These soldiers were flung thousands of meters in the sky, and at that moment, the sky and earth seemed to have been completely overturned. Moreover, the entire sky was filled with pitch-black earth and Divine Phoenix soldiers who were wailing in terror. But these wails of terror only lasted for a few more moments as their bodies were shattered into pieces that were smaller than grains of sand by an extremely violent and berserk heavy sword

storm.

Crash...

The pitch black earth that filled the sky heavily fell back to the ground, but not a single one of the tens of thousands of Divine Phoenix soldiers were able to land back on the ground... because the only thing that fluttered to the ground were shattered fragments of blood and bones. Furthermore, not even a single whole finger could be found amongst the remains, much less a whole body.



Once the earth that had been heaved into the sky landed back down, its color was no longer gray and yellow. It had instead become a shocking, dull-red color, and it was mixed with countless shattered fragments of red armor and weapons. Above the ground, the still undispersed energy of the heavy sword caused streaks of distorted air to hiss and crackle.

The huge battlefield had in an instant... and it was really only an instant, morphed into a purgatory filled with blood,

terror, and anguished wails. People died without leaving a whole body behind ,and those who were still alive shivered, wailed, and felt their courage break apart... Numerous Divine Phoenix Soldiers who had not been affected by the attack dropped to the ground and curled up in fear, their pupils contracting. Additionally, the scene that had unfolded before them was so terrifying that their souls had practically left their bodies which resulted in them being to get back up.

The atmosphere was stifling. In fact, what everyone was feeling

was the pinnacle of oppression. Every single person from the Blue Wind Army had their eyes widen into saucers, and not a single one of them did not suspect that they were dreaming. The Divine Phoenix Army that they had hated relentlessly had been smashed in an instant, so they should have been filled with joy instead... but the scene that had appeared before their very eyes caused them to endure a shock and fear that was almost as great as the Divine Phoenix Army itself. Even Feng Yunlie, who viewed death with equanimity, was unable to come back to his senses for a long period of a time as he just stood there, staring

with eyes that had become as round as little moons.

Xiao Yun saw the blood which rained down from the sky, the endless amount of broken corpses, and the earth that had been dyed red in an instant. The great resolve that he had previously held was shaken badly. He fiercely swiveled around, and his palms covered his face that was as white as a sheet. "I can't do it... I really can't do it..."

Number Seven Under Heaven

hurriedly hugged and comforted him, “It is alright... it’s completely alright. I like Brother Yun, a person so kind that he would not be willing to hurt a little animal. If you really become like Big Brother Yun, I... I will actually be afraid instead, so... it really is alright.”

Number One Under Heaven’s expression had also become extremely ugly. He turned his face away, and he did not even dare to look at the battlefield that had been dyed the color of blood while he mumbled in a low voice, “To think that there was actually such a dreadful

killing intent... that exists in this world... huuu...”

As the commanders of the army, Duan Qinghang and Qi Zhencang had spent the majority of the time in a daze as they had never truly witnessed the might of a Monarch before. They personally witnessed one hundred thousand troops... an entire one hundred thousand men, under a single stroke of Yun Che's sword... just one stroke, die violent and ugly deaths.

Not to mention the fact that they were not even given the slightest opportunity to resist or struggle... but they did not even die while leaving a corpse behind; there was nothing left to bury!!

The Divine Phoenix Army which could sweep the other six nations and all under heaven, the Divine Phoenix Army that possessed the best equipment and the highest aptitude, in front of this one man, they did not even amount to ants!!

What's more was that even though they had been through many battles and their hearts were like stones, in that moment, their spirits had completely collapsed... Qi Zhencang stumbled backwards in shock and fear, landing on his buttocks with a thump. After that, he frantically yelled as if he had gone crazy, "Scatter... quickly scatter!!"

Qi Zhencang's howls nearly rent his throat, and the Divine Phoenix Army, which was still cowering in fear and shock, were jostled awake, as if they had been woken from a



nightmare. They collectively let out a strangled cry and frantically scrambled backwards... their spirit had collapsed, and even their commanders were scared witless, so the tens of thousands of soldiers that composed the Divine Phoenix Army did not care about military discipline at all. Instead, they fled like headless chickens, and the only thing that they cared about was fleeing with the greatest speed away from that terrifying devil that had descended from the skies. In the blink of an eye, they had been utterly defeated, and numerous men had lost their lives under the trampling feet of their own compatriots.

But Yun Che, whose hatred filled the heavens and the earth and who had completely lost control of his desire to kill, would not stop just because they were fleeing. His eyes turned a crimson red, and he soared into the sky as the Golden Crow flames began to quickly accumulate. In an instant, it swelled into a conflagration that was tens of meters wide, and from a distance, it looked as if another crimson sun had appeared in the sky.

“Burning Sun Rupture!!”

The crimson 'sun' exploded high in the sky and caused the fires of destruction to rain down. These were Golden Crow Flames, flames so destructive that even the slightest contact with them had consigned the Divine Phoenix elder Feng Feiying to death. So how could it be something that could be endured by the normal soldiers of the Divine Phoenix Army. The crimson flames that covered the sky rained down, and any soldier of the Divine Phoenix Army that came into contact with these flames instantly ignited into human torches before collapsing into piles of

ash... or in some cases, they had been obliterated into nothingness.

Screams, sobbing, roars, cries of terror, and the sound of burning... the atmosphere on this battlefield had horrifically morphed into a funeral dirge from hell.

As the Divine Phoenix Army who was “unrivalled under heaven,” was sweeping through Blue Wind, conquering its capital and taking control of it was supposed to be something so

simple that it was like stealing candy from a baby. But never in their wildest dreams had they imagined that they would meet such a mighty and extremely cruel demon such as Yun Che. Feng Feiheng's Phoenix profound strength was being frantically circulated, and his speed had been pushed to its utmost limit as the sounds that he heard all around him caused him to descend into a nightmare. At this time, he suddenly felt his entire body go cold, and he unconsciously turned his head back. To his shock and fear, he discovered that Yun Che was only tens of meters away from him.

Feng Feiheng's pupils dilated, and he grit his teeth fiercely as he used "Phoenix Flames Burns the Heavens" as all the phoenix flames in his body exploded towards Yun Che.

Yun Che's face was so dark that he looked like the life-reaping death god from hell itself. Facing Feng Feiheng's attack, the Heaven Smiting Sword in his hand briefly danced in the air... and since Feng Feiheng's mighty phoenix flames came into contact with the power of his heavy sword, it was instantly

reduced to fire flowers which scattered in the air. However, the profound energy storm generated by the heavy sword was not the least bit affected, and amidst the howling of torn air, it fiercely smashed into Feng Feiheng's chest.

Bang!!

Three arrows of blood consecutively shot out from Feng Feiheng's mouth. He landed heavily on the ground, and before he could stand up again, Yun Che had lifted him up

by the collar. With that, an icy sense of death pervaded his body from behind.

“I... I am Feng Feiheng... the Nineteenth Elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect... you are not allowed to kill me...” Feng Feiheng said as his every muscle and nerve trembled violently. “If not... if not, the Divine Phoenix Sect will definitely not let you off... Arghhhh!!”

Boom!!!



As Feng Feiheng let out a desolate and miserable scream, a cluster of fire exploded out his back, causing this Divine Phoenix Elder, who had felt unparalleled in this world for most of his life, to become flaming ashes which scattered across the vast sky.

# Chapter 655 – Yellow Springs Ashes

---

Qi Zhencang and Duan Qinghai had never before witnessed the strength of a Monarch before today, but they were very clear on just what kind of existence an Overlord was. Even in the strongest nation amongst the Seven Nations, the Divine Phoenix Empire, an Overlord was a mighty existence that was akin to a god... But after Feng Feiying, they personally witnessed the late-stage Overlord Feng Feiheng get slaughtered by Yun Che within two passes.

The horror and the alarm in the hearts of these two people could not rise any further. They turned their heads, and to their astonishment, the Divine Phoenix Army that had been boundless as an ocean had already been reduced to nearly nothing. But the fires of catastrophe were still ceaselessly falling from the sky, consigning segments of the Divine Phoenix Army to a fiery hell.

Qi Zhencang used a trembling finger to press on the Sound Transmission Jade and yelled,

“Everyone disperse... The vanguard, move towards the east! The rearguard scatter to the south! And the rest of you, flee to the west!!”

Under the orders of Qi Zhencang, the fleeing Divine Phoenix Army began to disperse in three different directions. Fleeing in one direction would only make it easier for the enemy to slaughter them, but fleeing in three directions would force Yun Che to choose between the three.

Facing the scattering Divine Phoenix Army, Yun Che stopped in midair and halted his pursuit, as if he was considering which direction he was going to take. Qi Zhencang, who was fleeing towards the east, observed the Yun Che who had stopped in one spot and fiercely breathed a sigh of relief. After that, he used all of his profound strength to flee away... this was the first time in his life he had ever fled in such a pathetic manner. Even during his worst defeats, he was never forced to flee in this manner... but right now, they were not fleeing from battle; instead, they were escaping a demon's massacre.

Yun Che still had not given chase despite the fact that a long period of time had passed by. He just stood there, watching the three groups of the Divine Phoenix soldiers run away at the greatest speed that they could muster. But the blazing fires of resentment which crazily burned in his eyes and the killing intent that was boiling all over his body had not lessened in the slightest... At this time, he finally made his move, but instead of giving chase, he flew higher into the sky until he was thousands of meters above the ground.

As he floated high in the air above, he could see all of the the Divine Phoenix Army's soldiers fleeing.

“You evil dogs of Divine Phoenix... all of you... must die!!”

Yun Che's soft litany of hatred... even though it was soft, it was like a devil's curse which pierced one's heart, and it clearly resounded in everyone's ears and soul.

His arm slowly rose in the air, and a column of crimson flames began to burn in front of him. This column of flames was not intense; instead, it shone with a strange light as it began to glow a burning red in the air... Facing these Divine Phoenix soldiers, all the flames he had used from the beginning were Golden Crow flames instead of the phoenix flames which were easier to control. Because only the Golden Crow flames' ruthlessness and violence could vent the rage and resentment that was burning in his heart.



That terrifying “demon” halted at one spot and did not pursue them for a good long while, so the Divine Phoenix Army’s full-fledged flight gradually became more relaxed. This was because they thought they had escaped from that devil’s cruel reaping scythe. But at this time, they suddenly felt the temperature in the air rise sharply. It went from warm to hot to a scorching heat that caused them discomfort... and after the span of just a few short breaths, it seemed as if scorching bands of red-hot iron was being placed on their skin.

It was to the point where even

the air that they breathed had become scalding hot, to the point which it scorched their internal organs and caused them to fiercely twist. Furthermore, this dreadful heat kept rising with every breath they took. They turned their heads back in shock and looked towards the figure in the sky above that was burning with scarlet flames... The air seemed to have morphed into shapeless flames which scorched them till their skin turned red. In addition, the crimson red armor which was tightly fitted to their bodies were like red-hot iron, and it caused more and more Divine Phoenix soldiers to wail in agonizing pain.

“What... what is going on?!” Qi Zhencang had the protection afforded by having the profound strength of a Throne, but he still felt as if he had been placed into a huge furnace, and his entire body burned with pain. His eyes widened and he rigidly held his breath because the air that flowed into his lungs were hotter than flames. Not only that, but below him, many of the Divine Phoenix Army’s soldiers had halted their retreat and were rolling on the floor in unspeakable agony instead as they frantically sought to strip their armor off their bodies. The armor had long ago become as

hot as molten lava, and it tenaciously stuck onto skin, to the point where forcibly removing it would also rip away a good portion of scorched flesh and blood.

The plaintive and mournful wails which filled the air sounded like they were being given off by evil spirits receiving hellish punishment.

This purgatory of flames which slowly descended from above engulfed the area in a thirty-five kilometer radius around Yun

Che. Without exception, the entire Divine Phoenix Army was encompassed in that area as well. Naturally, the northern part of Blue Wind Imperial City and the Blue Wind Army were unaffected by it. The only thing they noticed was that the air around them had turned rather hot. But they all witnessed the current state of the Divine Phoenix Army, and the innumerable screams of misery that rent the air only made it clearer for them.

“What’s happening?” Number Seven Under Heaven said in astonishment. All of a sudden,

her mouth opened wide and she pointed in Yun Che's direction, "That... that's..."

A huge golden figure had appeared, superimposed over Yun Che. It was the figure of an extremely gorgeous and noble bird that had manifested with its wings spread wide as it circled in the air. The bird's head was raised haughtily, and it looked like a head of a phoenix. Its feathers were the purest of gold, and it seemed as if each feather glowed with a golden colored flame. It had three feet, and its tail feathers were long and shared the same eye-catching

golden color as the rest of its body.

But what accompanied this gorgeous and splendid golden figure was an aura of destruction and an oppressive might which caused the earth and the sky to tremble.

“It’s the image of the Golden Crow!” Number One Under Heaven exclaimed in astonishment. It was not the first time he had seen the silhouette of the Golden Crow. Each time a Demon Emperor

used the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World, the image of the Golden Crow would appear, whether it was for only an instant or a long period of time. But all of the images he had seen up till now were only faintly discernible and semi-transparent, and the golden color of those images was also much duller. But the burning image of the Burning Crow seemed almost tangible... as if the true Divine Spirit of the Golden Crow had descended on the material plane. That eye-catching golden glow was so brilliant that he nearly could not open his eyes, and the extremely tyrannical might and aura of destruction caused his soul to



deeply tremble uncontrollably. Not to mention, that was despite the fact that he was far away from the image and wasn't the target of the attack.

When all of the previous Demon Emperors had their bloodline awoken in the Golden Crow's Ancestral Lands, they were only bestowed three drops of blood, and in terms of comprehending the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World, they were only given three months as well. The most powerful Demon Emperor in the history of the Illusory Demon Realm had only managed to

reach the fourth level of the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World.

However, in Yun Che's case, he had been bestowed with nine drops of blood. Because of his special Evil God fire body and his extremely high aptitude in learning, within the span of three months, he had comprehended all seven levels of the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World.

That was to say that Yun Che, this person who had been

inducted into the clan of the Demon Emperor, had Golden Crow flames that exceeded every single Demon Emperor in the history of the Illusory Demon Realm... and even the first Demon Emperor would not be able to compare to him! At this time, even if all the previous Demon Emperors were to be present at this scene, they would be completely astounded by the Golden Crow aura being released by Yun Che, much less Number One Under Heaven.

Because what Yun Che was showing was something that the seventh level of the Golden

Crow's Record of the Burning World that they had never come into contact with before and did not even dare dream about...

“All of you... can go to hell... now...” Yun Che chanted in a low voice, and when he heard the wails of pain that surrounded him, his eyes flashed with the ecstasy of catharsis. The seventh level of the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World... Even given his current strength, he could still barely handle it, and even so, it would still require an extremely huge consumption of energy. But for these invaders who had

committed unspeakable crimes against the Blue Wind Nation and for whom even ten thousand deaths would be insufficient to cleanse them of their sins... they had to die... All of them had to die!!

“Golden Crow’s Domain of Fiery Destruction... Yellow Springs Ashes!!”

The flames on Yun Che’s body and the Golden Crow’s image behind him ruptured with a low howl....

A roaring sound that seemed to signal the end of the world swallowed all the other sounds in the area. All of the people within Blue Wind Imperial City and on its walls witnessed their surroundings become instantly engulfed in crimson flames as their world turned into pure flames... the Divine Phoenix Army, the earth, the horizon and even the sky above became completely covered with flames. They could not see anything else besides fire, and it seemed as if the entire world had morphed into a hellish purgatory of flames.

All eyes had widened, and all mouths had gaped open to the greatest extent, but not a single person uttered a sound. Their ears had gone deaf, and their eyes were completely dazzled by the crimson flames.

Within the seemingly boundless and limitless flames, everything was mercilessly burned away. Every single person there witnessed the most shocking and terrifying scene of their lives. They were firmly convinced that even the eruption of the most fearsome volcano in the entire Profound Sky Continent would pale in

comparison to this boundless flame which shook the heaven and the earth and seemed like it had the power to end the world. Number One Under Heaven, Number Seven Under Heaven, and Xiao Yun had grown up in the Guardian Families which were in the highest echelons of power within the Illusory Demon Realm, so their experiences were far richer than that of the common man, but facing this all-encompassing conflagration, they were also shocked to the point that their souls nearly left their bodies... so if it was like this for them, then one can imagine what it was like for everyone else.



The boundless sky had been completely colored crimson. This fire which obscured the heavens did not last for long, but for the weak and fragile soldiers of the Divine Phoenix Army, this dreadful Golden Crow domain only needed an instant to do its work. After ten breaths, the air which had swelled up howled as the flames which filled the sky fell screaming to the earth.... But not a single dazed face turned away from this scene; instead, an expression of shock and horror appeared on their faces and in their eyes.

“Ah... ah... ah... ah....” As his hearing began to recover, Xiao Yun heard trembling sounds ceaselessly spill from his own throat.

The huge expanse of land in front of Blue Wind Imperial City had become terrifyingly empty. The entire thirty-five kilometer radius around Yun Che, everything within it had disappeared... the withered trees, the ruins of buildings, the rolling sand dunes, the fallen and broken stones, and the mountain of corpses and rivers of blood... All of it had disappeared!

The huge and majestic Divine Phoenix Army that had hundreds of thousands of troops and that seemed to swell up into a raging tsunami when it moved had completely and utterly vanished... They had not been swept away, they had vanished! Because within that empty space, there were no corpses, no broken armor, not even a trace of blood... all of it had completely vanished, and there was not a single trace of their existence left.

The surface of that entire area

had been flattened as smooth and even as a mirror, and the surface was so white that it caused everyone's heart to palpitate... Besides this white color, there was not any other color that the naked eye could discern. In the sky above, the crimson color had begun to retreat, but the clouds which had been floating in the sky had completely disappeared. Not even a small fragment of it remained.

This was not a massacre... it was not even destruction. Instead, it simply turned the earth in a thirty-five kilometer

radius into a blank slate!

Yun Che had become the sole existence within this space.

In the middle of this silent world, Yun Che slowly lowered his hand. Following the extinguishing of those flames which covered the sky, the violence and ruthlessness in his eyes had gradually died down as well. Looking at the empty earth below him, his expression had become completely calm. Slowly, he turned his head towards the north-west... that was the

direction in which the Divine Phoenix Empire lay in.

Destroying this Divine Phoenix Army... was only the beginning!

He was someone who definitely had to repay blood for blood... so if it came to the vengeance of an entire nation, his hatred would fill the heavens!!

# Chapter 656 – Frozen Cloud's Bad News (1)

---

“Sect Master... Sect Master, something huge has happened.”

Outside the Phoenix Main Hall, a person anxiously rushed over, and before he even appeared, his panicked voice preceded him. Feng Hengkong put down the map in his hand and said with sunken brows, “What matter could have caused such great alarm?”

That person quickly arrived before Feng Hengkong. He gasped for breath before proceeding in a frightened voice, "The Scarlet Life Crystals of Nineteenth Elder and Forty-third Elder... just shattered... They are already..."

"What?" Feng Hengkong's expression abruptly changed, and his voice became dangerously low, "When did this happen?!"

"It just occurred. It has not been even thirty breaths since



the crystals shattered. I hurriedly tried to use the Sound Transmission Jade to contact them, but I was unable to send out any transmission. It seems as if their Sound Transmission Jades have also been destroyed.”

Feng Hengkong’s brows knit tightly together. “Nineteenth Elder and Forty-third Elder were appointed the observers over the expedition that invaded Blue Wind. Yesterday, they even personally transmitted to me that their troops were already overlooking Blue Wind Imperial City and that they would break into it within a few days’ time...

Blue Wind Imperial City, could there still be an expert living there that was strong enough to kill them?!”

“That is definitely impossible!” Feng Hengkong swiftly rejected this possibility; the Emperor Profound Realm was the highest level of cultivation in Blue Wind’s profound cultivating world, and even if all the Thrones in Blue Wind cooperated together, they would definitely not be able to defeat either Nineteenth or Forty-third Elder, so for them to be killed was even more nonsensical. “Swiftly send a sound

transmission to commander Qi Zhencang and get him to report the exact situation right now!”

But before the Sound Transmission Talisman could be retrieved, an intense profound formation aura rose up from Feng Hengkong’s Sound Transmission Jade. This aura was astonishingly one that was emitted from a ten thousand mile transmission! Ten thousand mile transmissions required the consumption of an incomparably valuable Ten Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talisman, so even if it was his Divine Phoenix Sect,

unless the matter was truly urgent, they would not carelessly use a ten thousand mile transmission. Feng Hengkong promptly snatched up his Sound Transmission Jade, and a voice that radiated shock and terror immediately rang out from it, “Sect Master... It’s not good... not good at all... The main army ... we can’t contact any of them right now...”

“Can’t contact any of them... what does that mean?!” Feng Hengkong’s expression turned dark and his voice carried undertones of violence.

“Commander Qi, Vice  
Commander Duan... all the  
commanders of ten thousand,  
thousand, hundred troop  
subdivisions, and even any  
person who had a Sound  
Transmission Imprint on them,  
we can’t contact even a single  
one of them... It isn’t that there  
is no reply... It’s that we are not  
even able to transmit anything  
in the first place... It seems like  
their Sound Transmission Jades  
have all been destroyed. And  
even their very existence seems  
to have vanished off the face of  
the earth.”

“Wha.... at?!!” Feng Hengkong’s hand fiercely trembled, and the person at his side was so shocked that his face had turned completely white.

Feng Hengkong sent a transmission with sunken brows, “How many more troops do you still have under your command? And how far are you from Blue Wind Imperial City?”

“This general currently has two hundred and seventy thousand troops under his command, and I am three hundred kilometers

away from Blue Wind Imperial City... there is also Fifty-second Elder overseeing us as well.”

“Immediately activate all our flying profound beasts and bring with you a minimum of fifty thousand men and Fifty-second Elder as well. With the greatest possible speed, advance to Blue Wind Imperial City to verify what exactly happened! We do not care what method you use... but before the sky grows dark today, you must definitely arrive at your destination! No matter what you see, you must immediately report to us once you arrive!

“...This general obeys!”

Feng Hengkong silently kept his Profound Transmission Jade in his hand, and his expression was incomparably grim. Conquer the Blue Wind within three years; that was the time limit he had set for himself three years ago. Now, three years had already passed by, and yesterday, was when his troops had finally arrived at Blue Wind Imperial City and prepared to pierce the very heart of Blue Wind Nation... Yet somehow, at the final hurdle, a huge,



unfathomably-bizarre change  
had occurred.

This caused an extremely  
ominous premonition to be  
birthed in his heart.

The smoke in front of Blue  
Wind Imperial City had  
completely subsided, and there  
was not even a need to tidy up  
the battlefield.

The remnants of the Blue Wind  
Army were dealing with their  
own injuries and dazed

expressions would appear on their faces from time to time, as if they still whether they were awake or in some sort of dream...

They, who had already resolved to die, had ended up living, and not a single Divine Phoenix soldier stepped into Blue Wind Imperial City that they had fought desperately to protect... all of the soldiers of the Divine Phoenix Army, hundreds of thousands of them had died!

At the hands of one man... in

the blink of an eye, they had been reduced to miniscule ashes.

None of them would ever forget this scene for the rest of their lives. Not only that, but when that person slowly descended from the sky... their eyes, nerves, and blood all trembled fiercely... It was as if they were looking at a demon god of destruction who had come from the depths of hell.

It was the only prince consort of the Blue Wind Royal Family, the current Empress Cang Yue's

husband. Three years ago, he had shaken the Profound Sky with his might. Now, this person who had nearly become a myth had returned... No, the present him was no longer a “myth”... The power that he had shown was something only the gods of legend possessed!

Blue Wind Imperial City, which used to constantly bustle with noise and liveliness, had become exceptionally lonely and desolate today, and a bleak atmosphere had penetrated the place. Following the arrival of the Divine Phoenix Army, a large majority of its residents had

already fled far away, and only a small remainder of the people who had stayed here for generations refused to follow suit, deciding to live or perish together with their capital. But in the end, the outcome was completely unexpected. The Divine Phoenix Army did not break into the city. Instead, all seven hundred thousand of them were completely obliterated, and the prince consort, who had fallen in the Divine Phoenix Empire three years ago, had come back alive... In a moment, countless cheers and tears filled the place which was the last bastion of the Blue Wind Nation's honor and dignity.

The legend of obliterating hundreds of thousands of Divine Phoenix Soldiers in a single breath... this caused them to be able to see a fantastical hope emerge within their boundless shock.

The person who kept producing miracles for the Blue Wind Royal Family and Blue Wind Nation... he was not dead! And this time, would he once again bring about a miracle for the Blue Wind Nation which was on the verge of collapse...

## Moon Embracing Palace.

This place was the residence of Empress Cang Yue when she was still a princess, but even though she ascended to the throne, this was still her resting place... because this was also where she and Yun Che became man and woman. For the past three years, it was the only place where she could find any rest and peace.

On her phoenix couch, Cang Yue had descended into a deep and undisturbed sleep. Perhaps

it was because she was simply too exhausted, or perhaps it was because she was not willing to wake up from her dreams. Yun Che sat beside her, holding her small hand... From the moment he had carried her here, he had maintained a constant vigil by her bedside, not leaving even for a moment. His eyes also never left her once as his conscience was filled with boundless self-recrimination and grief... After they had married, he had only spent one month with her before leaving for Frozen Cloud Asgard, and he only returned to bid farewell to her as he once again had to leave for the Divine Phoenix Empire... and after that, the only thing that had come



back was the cold and heartless news of his demise. Then came the pain of her father's passing... and the calamity of impending doom and a heavy burden which would overturn the heavens...

These three years, when Cang Yue needed him the most, he was not by her side. He was not even here to face the calamity and pressures together with her, much less protect her.

Her figure had become much frailer and thinner than it was before, and her breathing had

become exceptionally weak. She had never collapsed, solely relying on her willpower to doggedly hold on. If she did not recuperate, it would not be long before she fell very ill... it would be an illness that would in all likelihood endanger her life.

Yun Che took out a very small, jade-green medicinal pellet, put it into her mouth, and used his profound energy get her to swallow it. This emerald green pill was refined using the Overlord Pellet as a reference, and he carried a lot of them on his person. But given Cang Yue's body, if she were to directly

consume it, the only result would be death via ruptured profound veins. But with Yun Che around, this would definitely not occur. Yun Che used his own profound energy and slowly and painstakingly refined that pellet... Once this medicinal pellet was fully refined, it would renew Cang Yue's body.

Her pale face gradually grew rosy while her crescent brows faintly quivered... Then, she slowly opened her eyes.

Her hazy and blurred vision slowly cleared up, and in it, appeared Yun Che's face. Her entire body instantly froze up when she saw him.

She had been unconscious for the last four hours, and even though it had not been a long span of time, she had many dreams... which confused reality and fantasy, causing her to be unable to differentiate clearly between the two. She was most afraid that the Yun Che that had once again appeared in her world... was only an illusion created by her dreams.

“Yue’er... Xueruo... Senior Sister... princess wife... you have awoken.” Seeing Cang Yue’s glazed eyes which were filled with broken sorrow, Yun Che faintly smiled, and these four gentle greetings told her that all of this was real and not just a dream.

Cang Yue’s beautiful eyes quivered, and with a strangled cry, she dove into Yun Che’s embrace and started crying with broken sobs. This girl who had displayed her indomitable will to the world and had supported the

Blue Wind Nation that had been struck by calamity for three whole years was now wholly and unreservedly revealing her weakness in his embrace... Those frail arms hugged him ever so tightly, as if she was afraid that, the moment she relaxed her embrace, he would disappear once again...

Outside, Number One Under Heaven, Number Seven Under Heaven, and Xiao Yun leaned against the wall. All of their expressions were rather troubled. Number One Under Heaven let out a light sigh and said, "No matter what, I never

expected that the first thing we would encounter when we came to the Profound Sky Continent would be battle.”

“Yeah.” Number Seven Under Heaven said in a small voice, “It was supposed to be a joyous and happy reunion, but the moment we came here, his own homeland had been smashed into ruins... Big Brother Yun must be feeling awfully unhappy.”

Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushuang came as well. Facing

these three people who were clearly very young, their expressions were filled with admiration and respect... because the profound energy aura which they occasionally emitted from their bodies caused them to tremble in fear.

“This is Blue Wind Profound Palace’s Palace Chief Dongfang Xiu, and beside me is the Vice Palace Chief Qin Wushuang. May I inquire as to...” Dongfang Xiu paused for a moment as he did not know whether he should call them “young friends” or “seniors.” Because given their profound strength, even if they



were more than one hundred years old, their appearance would still remain youthful, so the only thing he could say was, "May I inquire as to how I may address... these noble guests?"

From Yun Che's previous words and actions, they could see that he was very respectful to these two gentlemen, so the three of them did not dare be negligent and promptly replied. Just as Number One Under Heaven was about to open his mouth, Number Seven Under Heaven took the initiative and spoke, "Junior Number Seven Under Heaven greets the two Palace

Chiefs. This is my husband Xiao Yun, and he is sworn brothers with Big Brother Yun Che. And this is my eldest brother, Number One Under Heaven... Oh no! You must definitely think that our names are very strange, it is all our stinky dad's fault, so you are not allowed to laugh, even in your hearts!!!”

Number One Under Heaven's expression twisted instantly... His little sister was still too inexperienced after all, and she actually directly spilled their names out in public. The surname “Under Heaven” was already extremely rare in the

first place, and with names like “Number One Under Heaven” or “Number Seven Under Heaven” that were hard for people to forget even if they wanted to, if this information was spread and it reached the ears of the Four Sacred Grounds, there was a risk that this news would be linked to the Under Heaven Family of the Illusory Demon Realm!

Moreover, what made him even more depressed was that... his own sister had actually introduced Xiao Yun before introducing him! Looks like it was true that once one has a man, she would forget her elder

brother!

Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushuang were both silently shocked... They called them seniors and called Yun Che big brother, so it was clear that they were near Yun Che in age! Additionally, despite being so young, they had this level of profound strength cultivation, and there was no doubt that they were individuals that came from extremely exalted backgrounds.

“Ah, so that is how it is.”

Dongfang Xiu calmed his heart and slowly replied, "Since you are good friends with Yun Che, that means you are the revered guests of our Blue Wind Nation... Yun Che, he truly is an extraordinary person that cannot be measured with common sense. Five years ago he was sealed into Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace with a demon, so everyone in the world had assumed he was dead. Yet, he not only came out alive, but he even emerged with an even stronger profound strength than before. Three years ago, the entire Profound Sky Continent knew of his death in the Primordial Profound Ark, and

there was definitely no way he would survive. Yet... he once again pulled through. Now, his profound strength has reached a level that I am no longer able to fathom.”

“Perhaps this time, there is truly... hope that our Blue Wind will be saved,” murmured Qin Wushang in an emotional voice.

“We also don’t know how that Empress... erm, I meant how my sister-in-law is. Her aura... seems to have weakened to the point where things have become

very serious,” Xiao Yun said with a worried expression.

“Don’t worry, Big Brother Yun’s medical skills are so awesome, so nothing will happen,” Number Seven Under Heaven replied as she comforted him.

## Chapter 657 – Frozen Cloud's Bad News (2)

---

At this moment, the door to the resting chambers was pushed open. Yun Che and Cang Yue walked in side by side. Cang Yue's eyes were red; obviously she had cried an overwhelming amount earlier. Her face was no longer pale; the slightly red glow on her face gave her some glamor in her noble look, and even her eyes were a much brighter color than before.

They quickly greeted her. Dongfang Xiu asked eagerly,



“Your majesty, you’re awake... Are you still uncomfortable anywhere?”

Cang Yue smiled lightly, “I am fine now, there is no need to worry.”

She turned to Number One Under Heaven and the others and said their names correctly, “Big Brother Under Heaven, Xiao Yun, and Seventh Sister, welcome to Blue Wind Nation. You are my husband’s friend, so we should’ve given you the nation’s finest treatment, but

instead we let you witness this chaotic scene, we feel deeply apologetic.”

Cang Yue’s temperament had become very different compared to three years ago. Her gestures no longer seemed sweet tempered and delicate, but instead carried an elegance that was authoritative and prestigious. Her emperor’s aura grew rapidly during the three years under heavy pressure and infinite iron-willed decisions, and it gave Number One Under Heaven and the other two an invisible, pressuring feeling. Xiao Yun immediately waved his

hand and said, "Empress... uh, sis... sister-in-law, no need to stand on ceremony... If there is anything you need, please just ask us."

Number Seven Under Heaven pinched Xiao Yun when she saw him this nervous, and then said liberally, "You are certainly Big Brother Yun's wife, you are indeed very unusual. My husband is right; Sister-in-law doesn't need to stand on ceremony with us. Blue Wind Nation is in danger right now, so if there is anything that we can help with, please ask us."

“Brother Yun has done a huge favor for us three. If there are any requests, we will be ready to risk our lives to help,” Number One Under Heaven also said without any hesitation.

Cang Yue smiled slightly, “Thank you everyone... and thank you for taking care of my husband all this time.”

“Yue’er, your body is still weak now, you should rest more. Just leave the rest to me,” Yun Che said worriedly.

Cang Yue shook her head softly, “My body is completely fine. Even though the Divine Phoenix Army was demolished by husband’s martial prowess, the Imperial City’s disaster is still not solved. Divine Phoenix’s side must have been alerted, and within a day, an army will gather once again before the city gate. Our soldiers and citizens also need to be arranged and settled; it is not time for me to rest now.”

“Don’t make it too hard on yourself.”

“With you here, I am not afraid of anything,” Cang Yue said softly. There was no anxiety, darkness, or even any weight in between her eyebrows. All there was left was deep warmth and satisfaction. Because she didn’t lose him, because Yun Che was by her side, she already had the whole world, and she had nothing more to ask or complain anymore.

Cang Yue ordered for troops to be deployed, and Blue Wind Imperial City immediately prepared for war once again.

The sky started dimming slightly, and it was nearly sunset. During this time, Yun Che slowly understood more of the situation of Blue Wind Nation now from Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang... It could only be described with the words “suffered unspeakable misery.”

Over ninety percent of the main city was invaded and seized by the Divine Phoenix Nation, and a large area of it was burned and destroyed. Over fifty million of Blue Wind Nation’s

citizens died in the war... and this was only a conservative estimate. To take down Blue Wind Nation the fastest way possible, Divine Phoenix Nation was cruel and vicious, its crimes were too numerous to record... Perhaps in the eyes of Divine Phoenix Nation, even though the people of Blue Wind Nation were also human, they were only an inferior form of life that was not worth mentioning.

There were even more people who were left wandering with no home to return to... The Blue Wind Nation that was once peaceful and calm was now on



the edge of the abyss of destruction... even lingering on with its last breath of life was hard.

“Divine... Phoenix...” Yun Che said these two words in a low voice, traces of blood almost coming out from the gaps between his tightly gnashed teeth.

“Is there really no any response from Heavenly Sword Villa?” Yun Che asked.

“Sigh, no.” Dongfang Xiu sighed and shook his head, his expression showed sadness, “The previous emperor and her majesty both wrote letters personally nine times to ask Heavenly Sword Villa for assistance, but Heavenly Sword Villa ignored them all, and didn’t even give us an excuse. Divine Phoenix Empire was too powerful, so maybe it was slightly understandable that they were afraid of getting involved and face the doom of their nation themselves... but even to send a few strong practitioners to protect her majesty would be good...”

“Slightly understandable?” Yun Che scoffed, “This not only concerns thousands of years of trust between the Blue Wind Imperial Family and Heavenly Sword Villa... but the doom of a nation! Facing the doom of a nation, anyone who has some courage and uprightness would use everything they have, including their life to resist! Their Heavenly Sword Villa... as the prestigious Blue Wind Nation’s top profound cultivating force, the people who have the strongest resistance in the profound realm, actually gave up their family’s faith, ignored it while their nation is in danger... Every Blue Wind soldier who is guarding Blue

Wind Imperial City, heading to the battlefield today, every one of them understood that they would die on the battlefield, but they still proceed without hesitation! Those so-called disciples of Heavenly Sword... could not even be compared to our Blue Wind Nation's most common soldiers!!”

“Yeah... profound realm, if all gathered, they should've been the strongest resistance force, what a shame... what a shame...” Qin Wushang lifted his head, and his voice was desolated as well, “Shame that they have stronger power than

normal people, and a longer lifespan... but they also fear death more than normal people. The places that the Divine Phoenix went, there were extremely few people who resisted among those forces and families who tyrannize locally, and they were usually the ones who surrendered first to the Divine Phoenix Army, or even took initiative and use a generous amount of money to bribe them... just for surviving and keeping their family estate. Even the Xiao Sect was like so... The Sect Master and elders of the Xiao Sect who could dominate with a single hand in Blue Wind Nation, when the Divine Phoenix Army arrived...

forget resisting, they actually came out of their sect for twenty miles, greet them personally, and bowed and kneeled before the Divine Phoenix Army...”

A disaster of the nation made these forces that normally seemed to be high and noble reveal their disgraceful act. Indeed, they had profound strength stronger than that of normal people, enjoyed the wealth and glory that normal people wouldn't dare to dream of, and had an even longer lifespan... but they had already lost the courage that should have been flowing in their bones.

“As the strongest sect of the nation, their actions were like this at the crucial times of the nation... It really makes people look down upon them.” Number Seven Under Heaven said in anger.

“Indeed, if that was our clan... even if we survived after the nation was doomed, even I would look down on our own family.” Number One Under Heaven said without any expression.

“Palace Chief Dongfang, is my grandfather and little aunt alright?” Yun Che calmed down and finally asked... this question. When he didn’t see Xiao Lie and Xiao Lingxi at Blue Wind Imperial City, he had been worrying about their well-being, but he didn’t dare to ask, because he was afraid that he would hear an answer that he didn’t want to hear.

Dongfang Xiu smiled casually and said, “Don’t worry. About two years ago, her majesty had already had Palace Chief Qin escort them to Floating Cloud City personally. Floating Cloud



City is located in the most easternmost region and is poor and small. It shouldn't be affected by the war, and it should've been the safest location... Only, what we didn't expect was the Divine Phoenix Army actually sent more than two hundred thousand soldiers to take down Floating Cloud City."

"What!" Yun Che stood up abruptly, and his expression immediately darkened.

"Hehe, don't worry." Yun Che's

reaction was completely within Dongfang Xiu's expectation, "Floating Cloud City's mayor followed her majesty's orders, told their guards to retreat and surrendered themselves. Divine Phoenix Army didn't kill anyone in Floating Cloud City, even their army didn't enter the city, but instead was separated and guarded near Floating Cloud City. Her majesty would send a sound transmission every seven days, and they have been safe so far."

As if a giant rock that weight ten thousand kilograms disappeared from on top of his

heart, Yun Che sat down slowly with his whole body already soaked in cold sweat.

Xiao Yun's expression changed, and he finally couldn't help it and said, "Big Brother, the grandfather and little aunt that you mentioned just now, are they... they..."

Yun Che turned around and smiled slightly, "That's right..." He stood up once again, "I will go pick them up to here now, and let your family unite... when your grandfather sees you, he

will definitely be... very happy,  
very excited.”

“Ah... okay, okay...” Xiao Yun  
nodded blatantly, his hands were  
shaking nervously.  
Grandfather... Little Aunt...  
relatives... His real blood  
relatives...

Thinking he could see the  
Grandfather and Little Aunt that  
he had been missing day and  
night, and thinking that he  
could finally do one thing that  
could bring joy to Grandfather,  
Yun Che couldn't control his

eager emotions. Even though they were both safe and sound in Floating Cloud City, only with them by his side would he feel relief. He got up in preparation to leave, to find a place to use the Primordial Profound Ark, but when he had just started to move his steps, Dongfang Xiu suddenly called onto him, "Yun Che, there is something that I have been concerned about, and I think it would be better for me to tell you sooner. Or else... the consequences cannot be predicted."

Dongfang Xiu's serious tone made Yun Che stop his steps. He

looked at Dongfang Xiu, and said discreetly, “Palace Chief Dongfang, please speak.”

“It’s about Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“Frozen Cloud Asgard? What about Frozen Cloud Asgard? Were they also involved in the war?” Yun Che slightly locked his eyebrows. He didn’t forget that he was still the disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Dongfang Xiu shook his head

slowly and said, “During this three years, the Frozen Cloud Asgard has not sent anyone to fight the Divine Phoenix Army, but they gave us their resources that were accumulated for a thousand years like an unending stream, including spirit herbs, offensive profound artifacts, profound crystals, profound formations... they gave us an extremely strong assistance. The fact that we were able to hold the Divine Phoenix Army for three whole months at Heavenly Pass was reliant upon the thousands of profound crystals that contained magical profound formations given by Frozen Cloud Asgard. We couldn’t even dream that when we were

suffering from national disaster, it was Frozen Cloud Asgard, which we were usually the least unaligned with, that did everything they could, used all of their resources, and even used their foundations to help us.”

“...What exactly happened there?” Yun Che asked. He indistinctly felt that the reason Frozen Cloud Asgard did their utmost to help was because of Xia Qingyue.

“Six month ago, Fairy of Frozen Moon Xia Qingyue sent a sound



transmission to her majesty. It was only a few sentences, but the content of the sound transmission was that Frozen Cloud Asgard suddenly encountered a great calamity, they could not assist the Imperial Family anymore, and told her majesty to look out for herself...”

“What?” Yun Che’s heart tightened, he hurried forward, “What happened then? What exactly did the Frozen Cloud Asgard encounter!”

“No one knows.” Dongfang Xiu shook his head, “After that, no matter what method her majesty used, she couldn’t contact anyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard. On top of that, there was frequent emergency from the battlefield, Blue Wind Nation was in imminent danger, so her majesty didn’t have the time to worry about other things... We don’t know how Frozen Cloud Asgard is now at all.”

“Would it be that they suffered from the attack of Divine Phoenix Army?” Xiao Yun immediately said.

“No, impossible.” Yun Che shook his head right away, “Frozen Cloud Asgard’s location is in Snow Region of Extreme Ice. It is always in extremely cold, and it is covered with ice and snow, which makes it absolutely not suitable for an army to set foot in, especially the Divine Phoenix Army that fears the cold. Besides Frozen Cloud Asgard there, forget about a city, there aren’t any citizens, so the Divine Phoenix has no reason to attack there.”

Thousand Year Calamity?

Yun Che suddenly remembered the three words that Grand Asgard Mistress Feng Qianhui had told him back then, and these weren't just merely three words, it was a thousand-year fortune which concerned Frozen Cloud Asgard's survival. Feng Qianhui was also straightforward with him before when he entered Frozen Cloud Asgard as a male disciple, and it was completely to counter the fortune of "Thousand-Year Calamity."

What happened to Frozen

Cloud Asgard... Did the fortune of “Thousand Year Calamity” really happened?!

And six months had passed from when Xia Qingyue sent a sound transmission mentioning they “suddenly encountered a great calamity”... a full six months!

A thick layer of shadow covered Yun Che’s heart at this moment. Today was the first day that he had returned to Profound Sky Continent, but what he received wasn’t tearful reunions; instead

it was news that was heavier than the previous.

“I must go to Frozen Cloud Asgard right away!” Yun Che locked his eyebrows and said. At least Xiao Lie and Xiao Lingxi would be safe in Floating Cloud City, but Frozen Cloud Asgard... if he didn’t go and see what happened right away, he wouldn’t feel settled at all.

“There will be Divine Phoenix Army arriving within today. When that happens, make sure to send sound transmission to

me immediately. I have the profound ark with me, I will be able to return in an instant!”

“You can go without worrying. They have us here, nothing will happen.” Number One Under Heaven said as he lowered his brows while nodding.

Yun Che couldn't wait any longer, and he immediately sent a profound energy sound transmission to Cang Yue, who was in the main hall, personally deploying the troops. He rushed out of the room, flashed high

into the sky, and called out the Primordial Profound Ark. After pinpointing the estimate direction and distance towards Frozen Cloud Asgard, he then disappeared with the Primordial Profound Ark in the midst of space hissing.



# Chapter 658 – Working In Vain

---

In the next moment, Yun Che appeared in the sky over the Snow Region of Extreme Ice. This time, he estimated the distance very accurately, appearing no more than ten kilometers away from Frozen Cloud Asgard. Up in the air, he could clearly see its silhouette above him.

Yun Che didn't stop the slightest, putting all of his strength towards using Extreme Mirage Lightning and charging

like a lightning bolt in the direction of Frozen Cloud Asgard. At this moment, he heard a peculiar sound coming from the direction of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Boom... Boom... Boom...

The sound was incomparably heavy. Even if it was ten kilometers away, it was still heavy and ear-splitting. This was the violent clashing sound of immense strength striking against an incredibly hard object. The closer he got, the

heavier the sound became, making Yun Che increasingly sure that the sound was coming from Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Yun Che furrowed his brows and put his utmost effort into increasing his speed.

Qingyue... Please be alright...

Boom! Boom! Boom...

All of Frozen Cloud Asgard was

violently shaking. Innumerable snowflakes streamed down. With the exception of the thousand year profound ice, the comparatively weaker layers of ice had already broken off, leaving countless cracks throughout the area.

Beneath Frozen Cloud Asgard, in front of Frozen End Divine Hall.

Ye Qingsheng was incomparably sullen and irritable. He had put all of his energy into frantically venting

his emotions on the Heavenly Firm stone door. Six months ago, although he had encountered the obstruction of the Heavenly Firm Jade which should not have appeared, in order to avoid the ridicule of others and because the young master Ye Xinghan just happened to be in secluded cultivation, he had resolutely decided not to ask for help from the elders of the Divine Hall, hoping to use his own strength to force open the Heavenly Firm door.

He originally thought three or four months would definitely be

enough time and that by the time he had brought Xia Qingyue back to the Sun Moon Divine Hall, the young master wouldn't have come out yet.

But what he didn't imagine was that the Heavenly Firm Door's thickness would exceed his estimation. The twelve of them had bombarded the door, day and night for over five months, and had only just reached the door's breaking point. Because of this dragging on for so long, he became extremely fretful... Moreover, his biggest concern had already occurred... Young Master Ye Xinghan had already

come out from seclusion!

This mission had been personally given to him by Ye Xinghan six months ago. At that time, he had exclaimed that he would perfectly complete such a simple mission in the shortest period of time possible. Adding to the fact that Ye Xinghan originally planned to come in person, he obviously considered Xia Qingyue incredibly important. Having received such an important and easy mission, he originally felt proud of himself and excited from the bottom of his heart.

But now, six months later, the young master had already come out of seclusion, and in addition to having not captured Xia Qingyue, he hadn't even touched the hem of her clothes.

Ye Xinghan's sullen voice caused them all to shiver with fright. But luckily, when they were bombarding the Heavenly Firm door today, he felt it trembling... Today, they would definitely be able to blast it open.

“With the exception of Xia



Qingyue... the other women all must die!” Ye Qingsheng ferociously struck the Heavenly Firm Jade in front of him with his fist, and the shaking rebound force shook his entire arm with an acute pain. Moreover, his two hands were a blood-like red a long time ago. He definitely wouldn’t hesitate to use weapons to attack the door... but all the weapons that he had brought a few months ago, in the process of attacking the Heavenly Firm Door, had broken one after another—including the Emperor Profound Weapons.

Ye Ziyi shook his head. “No!

Right now, the young master is bound to be greatly displeased with us. In order to appease his anger, in addition to bringing back Xia Qingyue... since every Frozen Cloud Asgard disciple is a first class beauty, we must bring some back to make the young master happy!”

Boom!!!

Crack!!

Following the boom was the ear-piercing sound of something

shattering as numerous cracks spread out from underneath Ye Qingsheng's fist, quickly extending outward until the entire door was covered with them.

Ye Qingsheng's eyes widened as he began laughing madly. Their months of attacking had finally caused the Heavenly Firm Jade to weaken and cracks to appear... These cracks appearing signified that the Heavenly Firm Jade door had finally been thoroughly broken down. A Heavenly Firm Jade which had begun to crumble, was no more than a wall of fine ice. Any low

level profound practitioner  
could destroy it.

“Finally... Finally!!” Ye  
Qingsheng’s eyes opened as wide  
as they could, and his facial  
expression turned from excited  
to sinister. The pain in his arm  
had even become a strange kind  
of pleasure. Over five months of  
sullen and fretful worrying were  
finally over, and he could fully  
vent his emotions. “Out of my  
way!!”

Ye Qingsheng loudly roared,  
stuck out his arms, and

condensed all of his profound strength, releasing it upon the Heavenly Firm Jade door before him. The tyrannical pressure of an Overlord caused the ten others who had followed him to feel completely suffocated... But he didn't allow his excitement to cause him to lose reason, directing all of the power towards the Heavenly Firm Jade door and controlling the degree of strength in order to avoid any surplus force hurting Xia Qingyue, who was inside.

In that extremely oppressive explosion, the Heavenly Firm Jade door, which had endured

the strikes of two Tyrants and ten Thrones for over five months, exploded, breaking into pale white powder. Behind the Heavenly Firm Jade door which had been destroyed, was a crowd of women wearing snow white clothing while huddling together... The Frozen End Divine Hall was so big that, even with two thousand Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples huddling together, it still seemed extremely spacious and empty.

A cold air pervaded the hall, and even colder still were the disciple's expressions. They had known that the last line of

defense would eventually break and had already prepared their hearts. Receiving an additional six months already exceeded their expectations. At this moment, they were already absent of worry and fear, their cold expressions full of resentment, determination, and unwillingness... and also a little gratification since, at the very least, Xia Qingyue had already safely left over six months ago and hadn't fallen into the hands of these evil people at all.

“Hahahahaha!” Ye Qingsheng madly laughed, then his face darkened as he quickly said,

“You hateful women unexpectedly delayed this great lord for such a long time... If you had been well-behaved and let yourself be captured, this great lord wouldn’t be willing to kill a single one of you and would have given all of you to the young master. Those that received the young master’s favor, their future position would be even higher than this great lord’s. But you all unfortunately refused to yield and now are being forced... If I didn’t kill a few hundred of you, I wouldn’t be able to resolve my hate.”



“Fiend! You... “ Gong Yuxian extended her trembling hand and pointed. “You’ll one day meet heaven’s wrath... cough... cough, cough...”

Gong Yuxian’s face was a pale white, like paper, and her vitality was as thin as a string. These short few words had already caused her to start coughing incessantly. Her hands were supported by Murong Qianxue and Jun Lianqie, and she had already lost all ability to stand... She painfully persisted, not willing to let her vitality disperse, only because of her unwillingness... her indomitable

unwillingness...

Frozen Cloud Asgard, with its thousand year old foundation, abruptly encountered this all-encompassing calamity... They didn't even know who their enemy was and what their goal was... so how could they be willing! How could they be willing!

“Oh?” Ye Qingsheng narrowed his eyes as he looked at the incomparably weak Gong Yuxian, laughing disdainfully. “Hehe, to have received this

great lord's profound energy, injuring your heart and veins, yet unexpectedly remain living, tsktsktsktsk, not easy at all. How pitiful, how pitiful, your profound strength seems to already have completely scattered. Even if the Great Shifting Golden Deity had appeared to save you, you've already become disabled. It's pitiful enough to make this great lord want to reach out and kill you so that there is nothing left. How about this, these beautiful women, this great lord will kill them one by one. This great lord wants to see how many I have to kill before you die from anger... Hahahahaha!

“You...” Ye Qingsheng’s words caused Gong Yuxian’s whole body to tremble and caused her to abruptly cough up black blood. All of Frozen Clud Asgard’s females were pure of heart and devoid of earthly desires, and the Frozen Heart Arts caused their hearts to become cold as ice... But facing such an enormous disaster, even if they had cultivated the Frozen Heart Arts to completion, they wouldn’t be able to keep their hearts calm.

“Mistress!”

“Mistress!!” Murong Qianxue and Jun Lianqie hurriedly circulated their profound energy, working at all costs to protect Gong Yuxian’s heart and veins while tightly clinging on to the ice swords in their other hands... Six months of respite, but in the end they could not escape their desperate condition. Even if they pooled together the strength of everyone there, it still wouldn’t be enough to contend with the two Overlords in front of them... but no matter what, they would put their lives on the line to fight!

As Ye Qingsheng recklessly vented his feelings and egotistically howled, Ye Ziyi's facial expression shifted... In all of Frozen Cloud Asgard, the one with the strongest profound energy was Xia Qingyue... a full half-step into the Tyrant Profound Realm! Therefore, she was extremely easy to recognize. After the Heavenly Firm Jade door was blasted open and they had entered the Frozen End Divine Hall, his gaze had swept over the area numerous times, but he didn't see Xia Qingyue. He concentrated and realized... he couldn't feel Xia Qingyue's aura at all!

Confirming again and again, his face grew darker and darker. He snarled, “Xia Qingyue!! Where did you hide Xia Qingyue!”

“What?” Ye Ziyi’s words caused Ye Qingsheng to stare distractedly, causing him to go from madly laughing to being unable to move which caused his facial expression to change greatly... The entire Frozen End Divine Hall didn’t have a trace Xia Qingyue’s shadow, let alone the slightest bit of her outstanding aura!

All the other members of Frozen Cloud Asgard were there... only Xia Qingyue was missing!

“Stop!” Chu Yueli held her ice sword horizontally in front of her, her whole body prepared to spring into action. “Don’t even think of ever being able to find her... Only when she comes looking for you, will this blood debt be repaid!!”

Ye Qingsheng’s gaze rested on the stage to the right side of the



Frozen End Divine Hall, and his aura suddenly turned violent as his face took on a sinister expression... At his current realm, he could already sense the presence of spatial energy. Although it had already been a few months, he could still sense tiny vestiges of spatial energy that had yet to disperse... It became clear that it once had contained a profound space formation!

A profound space formation was, without a doubt, the highest level of profound formations on the entire Profound Sky Continent. Even

for the Four Great Sacred Grounds, creating a profound space formation was extremely difficult. That, and the enormous Heavenly Firm Jade door, absolutely should not have appeared at a place on the level of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

It was extremely clear, that during their unbearable, unceasing bombardment of the Heavenly Firm Jade door, Xia Qingyue had already escaped using the profound space formation!!

“Un... forgiveable!!” As if a basin of cold water had been poured over his head, Ye Qingsheng’s unbridledness and arrogance transformed into wrath and fear, his entire body trembling violently as he yelled, “You... had the impertinence to play with me!!”

Compared to his anger at all of his efforts having come to nothing, he was even more afraid of the consequences of not being able to bring Xia Qingyue back. In his anger, his killing intent increased and he roared, “You all... all of you, die!”

“Wait!!” Ye Ziyi pulled him back, face also darkened as he furiously said, “Speak! Where does the profound space formation lead to! Where is Xia Qingyue now... you all better speak honestly. We can still give you a path at life, this is your last chance!”

“Give up!” Chu Yueli clenched her teeth and her expression went cold, completely without fear. “We are already corpses, ready to be buried here. We absolutely won’t tell you! Don’t even think of ever being able to

find her!”

“Wretches... all of you... go die!!” Ye Qingsheng’s rage completely exploded. Six months of sullenness and days and nights without rest, all of his hopes and efforts came to nothing. The consequences would be incomparably serious, and Ye Qingsheng felt his head and heart being trampled. He snarled, and his entire profound strength exploded out, causing a tyrannical pressure to radiate all in all directions.

“Protect the Mistress!!”

Crying out in alarm, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue, and Feng Hanxue performed the Frozen Snow Dance Steps, simultaneously appearing in front of Gong Yuxian, causing resplendent ice spirits to dance throughout the sky. They had all already become Thrones, but the difference between a Throne and an Overlord was as big as the distance between the heaven and the earth. Even if it was just the profound energy released by an Overlord, they absolutely were unable to resist it.

The force of ten thousand mountains collided with them, inducing explosive pain within their chests and causing the ice spirits to rapidly disappear. They were only able to resist for two breaths of time before they were violently sent flying, resulting in their bodies heavily smashing against the Heavenly Firm Jade wall.

“Junior Masters!!”

“Master!!”

The Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples cried out in alarm... Yun Che had opened all of the profound entrances of the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies, and their cultivation had advanced by leaps and bounds, already completely entering the Emperor Profound Realm. From the perspective of the Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples, the Emperor Profound Realm in the Profound Sky Continent was an unparalleled existence, but in front of the Tyrant Profound Realm, they were unexpectedly not even able to withstand one blow.



“Still resisting in vain?” Ye Qingsheng lifted up his arm, his expression fiendish. “If you don’t tell us where Xia Qingyue is... you all will die! Now then... let’s start with your so-called Frozen Cloud’s Seven Fairies!!”

Ye Qingsheng’s arm expanded, and a wave of profound energy surged throughout the entire Frozen End Divine Hall. A murderous air enveloped the Seven Fairies, ready to descend upon them in an instant when, all of a sudden, an enormous explosion came from behind,

shaking the entire Frozen End  
Divine Hall.

Boom!!!

“Who is it!” Ye Ziyi said as he turned around. A golden figure flashed before his eyes... this golden figure had reached an incredible speed, making him unexpectedly unable to see the figure clearly even with his level five Tyrant Profound strength. Without a response, the figure swept past his line of sight towards the Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples.

It arrived in a flash, having  
seemingly pierced through  
space!

# Chapter 659 – Heartless Instant Kill

---

Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi frantically turned around, looking in shock at this ghostlike person who had suddenly appeared. Their hearts had also skipped a beat... such frightening speed, this person's profound strength would definitely be much higher than theirs!

The person in front of them looked only a bit over twenty years old. Dressed in a robe filled with golden patterns, his calm

expression seemed somewhat sinister. The two of them asked in unison, “Who exactly are you!!”

As they spoke, they had already measured his profound aura... their expressions turned dumbfounded at the same time and their earlier nervousness had instantly dissipated. Ye Qingsheng had also instantly spoke with contempt, “Hmph, it’s only an outrageous little brat.”

The other party’s profound

aura was only in the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm. Although, for his age, such cultivation was already considered shocking, in front of them, it would even be able to withstand one blow. It was at a level that would not be able to cause scratch them or resist their attacks.

As for his speed... it was probably because he primarily trained in speed type profound arts or because he relied on some sort of profound artifact.

Yun Che had sprinted over, and when Ye Qingsheng was overcoming the Heavenly Firm Main Door, he was already above the Frozen End Divine Hall. Then, he also clearly heard everything that Ye Qingsheng had said and instantly understood the gist of things... The fact that the Frozen End Divine Hall was created using Heavenly Firm Jade was something he knew very well. The toughness of Heavenly Firm Jade was something he had once tested using Dragon Fault... A blow at full strength did not even cause a scratch. Obviously, Frozen Cloud Asgard had escaped into the Frozen End Divine Hall due to the

unfortunate circumstance,s and these people had used a large amount of time to forcefully break apart the main door of the Frozen End Divine Hall.

As for himself, he had also fortunately arrived at the very last second.

Initially, he had considered the Frozen Cloud Ancestor's use of the luxurious Heavenly Firm Jade for the entire underground grand hall to be outrageous... But now, it had saved nearly all the women of Frozen Cloud as



well as everyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Yun Che's downcast gaze swept over the twelve people in front of him... All of them were unfamiliar faces, and all of them wore the same black clothing. Not only were there no emblems or signs on their clothing, their clothing didn't even have any other colors. They obviously had intended to hide their identity. As for profound strength... two of them were in the middle stage Tyrant Profound Realm while the other ten were at least in the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm!

Yun Che's gaze shifted away from them as his expression remained cold, and he did not reply to them. Instead, he turned and looked at Gong Yuxian, who was being supported by Murong Qianxue and Jun Lianqie.

The sudden appearance of this man had also caused everyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard to be shocked. But, when he turned around, all the women who saw his face were instantly stunned, and their beautiful eyes revealed looks of disbelief despite the

shock.

“Yun... Yun Che!?”

Scanning across the corner of Frozen Cloud Asgard, Yun Che could see the deceased Grand Asgard Mistress, Feng Qianhui, who still showed hatred on her face, within an ice coffin which had sparse ice spirits floating around it. He walked slowly and arrived in front of Gong Yuxian under everyone's gaze. Gong Yuxian's pale face was bluish as well, and her vitality was exceptionally weak. With one

glance, he could tell that not only were her injuries severe, they had lasted for several months. If it were not for the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies extending her vitality with their profound strength and her strong determination to survive, she would already have breathed her last breath and died long ago... If her determination was to waver even slightly, she would probably die within a few breaths of time.

Also, her body no longer emitted any profound aura... Her profound energy had dissipated. Even if she were to

recover, she would have to retrain her profound strength from scratch. He knew that to a person who arrogantly looked on the Blue Wind, who was the mistress of the Asgard, this was a fate that was crueler than death.

Yun Che let out a long breath, bent down, stretched out his arm, and injected some Heaven and Earth's energy into Gong Yuxian body through the air while saying with guilt, "Asgard Mistress... I'm late."

Gong Yuxian stretched out her palm with difficulty. Because of the extreme shock and agitation, her pale face showed an unusual tinge of red. “You... you... Yun Che... is that really you? Didn’t you... didn’t...”

“It’s me.” Yue Che strongly nodded as he opened his palm, and in the middle of it, a pocket sized Tree of Frozen End grew. “With the Frozen End Divine Arts as proof, unlike what many may have claimed, I did not die in the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago. I was only brought to another world by the Primordial Profound Ark and

returned today.”

In this world, the only people who possessed the Frozen End Divine Arts were Yun Che and Xia Qingyue. Seeing the Tree of Frozen End on Yun Che’s palm, they no longer dared to doubt that the person in front of them was someone who only looked similar to Yun Che. Instead, they knew full well that this was indeed the Yun Che that everyone assumed had died.

Gong Yuxian’s lips trembled, and her eyes glinted with a weak

and unusual glow. However, this unusual glow quickly faded away. “You are actually... still alive... such a... miracle... however... cough... cough, cough... Today... you shouldn’t have... shouldn’t have...”

Yun Che understood her meaning of “shouldn’t have”... Because the ones that caused Frozen Cloud Asgard to be in such a peril were two Overlords, his arrival... would only result in death.

“No.” Yun Che shook his head.



“I’m a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard. When the Asgard is in trouble... I should have returned earlier. Asgard mistress, please rest assured that now that I’m back... I will not allow anyone to trample over our Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“Tsk, hahahahaha.” Behind Yun Che, conceited laughter erupted out. When Ye Qingsheng had heard Yun Che’s words just now, he felt that it was undoubtedly an extremely laughable joke. “You’re going to make me laugh my head off. This wild brat that nobody knows which hole in the ground

he came from actually promised that he would protect Frozen Cloud Asgard? Hahahaha... Indeed, only poor laughingstocks are produced in such a pathetic and lowly place. The third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, although you can indeed walk against the law in a small nation like Blue Wind, it's a pity that citizens from such a lousy place would forever be jokes in front of this great lord. Your movements skills are indeed not bad, and you have the ability to receive this great lord's praise. However, if this great lord wants you to die in a breath of time, you would definitely not live for another breath."

“Yun Che? That name is a little familiar,” Ye Ziyi said plainly.

“Heh, of course it sounds familiar.” Ye Qingsheng coldly laughed. “He’s the brat that slapped Divine Phoenix Nation on the face during the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament back then and even enraged our Young Master. Tsk, tsk, I heard that he had disappeared along with that whatever Primordial Profound Ark. I didn’t expect him to actually come back alive... For a very long period back then, whenever Yun Che’s

name was mentioned, Young Master would grind his teeth in hatred. If he knew that this brat was actually alive... he would undoubtedly be delighted!”

Young Master? Primordial  
Profound Ark?

These two people caused Yun Che’s heart to sink as the name and face of someone he loathed appeared in his mind...

Sun Moon Divine Hall... Ye  
Xinghan!!

These people seemed to be from the Sun Moon Divine Hall and also seemed to be personally sent by Ye Xinghan!

Just what happened? Why would Sun Moon Divine Hall allow its people to attack Frozen Cloud Asgard? Sun Moon Divine Hall and Frozen Cloud Asgard... were obviously two different entities from two different worlds, and there was no reason why they needed to interact with one another!

With a face of playfulness and pity, Ye Qingsheng said, "It wasn't easy for you to survive, and yet you're rushing to your death now."

His eyebrows sank as he waved his hand. "Capture that brat now! But don't be too violent and kill him. Young Master will be very interested in finding ways to kill him!"

As he finished speaking, a man dressed in black who was behind him rushed forward like lightning and attempted to grab

Yun Che... From the ten people, only he moved. Among the ten, the lowest in profound cultivation was still in the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm. To handle someone who was merely in the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, even one person would be overkill.

“Yun Che, be careful!” Murong Qianxue and Chu Yueli shouted together in panic. At the same time, they grabbed their ice swords and wanted to move forward to defend against the attack with Yun Che. They had already personally felt these

people's strengths. Although the ten men dress in black were just followers, any one of them would be much stronger than anyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Facing the man in black that was rushing towards him, Yun Che's cold expression did not change, nor did he move from his position one bit. He only stretched out his palm and made a slight wave with his hand.

Boom!!!



A thunderous, loud explosion suddenly rang out, and the man in black who was still ten meters away from Yun Che... had instantly disappeared from where he was in the midst of the noise and landed on a stone wall thirty meters away before falling heavily onto the ground. His body was dyed with blood and went soft . After that, he did not move at all as though he was a stray dog that had just been beaten up.

The entire area, at that instant, had violently shaken.

Frozen Cloud Divine Hall became dead silent. Ye Qingsheng, Ye Ziyi... as well as everyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard was stunned right there... The man in black was in the ninth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, and even within the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, not one of them were his match. When he rushed at Yun Che, the pressure emitted from his profound strength was exceptionally intense. Even someone in the fifth level of the Emperor Profound Realm would be taken down in an instant.

As for Yun Che... he merely...

waved his hand a little!!

“Haokong!!!” After the men in black had regained their senses, they hastily rushed forward. The moment they touched the man in black’s body, their eyes trembled and revealed deep fear.

“All of his meridians are severed... his bones are broken... dead... already dead ...” uttered a man in black, his voice trembling.

“Whaa...            whatttt!!”            Ye

Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi were extremely shocked as cold sweat ran down their backs.

A level nine Throne... died... all his meridians were severed and his bones shattered... His opponent was only a level three Throne, and he only casually waved his hand! It really was only one casual wave. Before then, they did not detect Yun Che attempt to gather any profound energy. There was not even a slight wave of profound energy... nor had he used any profound skill!

He even did it through the air...  
and was at least ten meters  
away!

Given their cultivation that was  
in the middle stage of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm, they naturally  
could also kill a level nine  
Throne in one move... However,  
that would use up to eighty  
percent of their strength, and  
they would definitely not be able  
to do it as casually as Yun Che  
had done... They also could not  
possibly rely only their profound  
aura to kill through the air!  
Needless to say, severing  
someone's meridians and  
shattering their bones...

Murong Qianxue and Chu Yueli, who were originally about to intervene, were stunned, and all the women from Frozen Cloud Asgard stared wide-eyed with their mouths agape. They dared not believe the scene that they had just witnessed. Gong Yuxian's eyes trembled in an exceptionally vigorous fashion, and her breaths became much shallower... Yun Che did not die. She believed that with Yun Che unparalleled talent, within three years, his strength would definitely increase by leaps and bounds.

However, no matter how fast one's speed of growth was, it was not possible to reach a level that could easily defeat an Overlord in the short span of three years... Therefore, Yun Che's return brought her shock, joy... and eventually fear.

Furthermore, never in her wildest dreams would she imagine that... today's Yun Che could causally kill a level Throne in a matter of seconds.

Although she has not interacted with anyone above the Emperor

Profound Realm before, she clearly knew that in order to do so... one had to at least be in the latter stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm!!



# Chapter 660 – Scared Witless

---

All of the contempt that Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi possessed morphed in stone cold fear. They were not idiots; even though the other party's profound aura was only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, they were very clear what level of profound strength was required to perform the feat that he had just displayed...

They had never paid any attention to the Seven Nation

Ranking Tournament because, to the Sacred Grounds, the Seven Nations were inferior existences. If not for the might of the Phoenix Divine Spirit, they would not even pay any mind to the strongest nation, the Divine Phoenix Empire. So the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament was only a place where the strongest amongst the weak went to play. So they knew the name "Yun Che," not only because he had caused the Divine Phoenix Empire to lose the first time in the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, but also because of the anger this name had caused Ye Xinghan after he had returned from the Divine Phoenix

Empire.

And at this time, they began to vaguely remember... three years ago, Yun Che had beaten the ten strongest members of the youngest generation of the Divine Phoenix Empire, and his profound level had only been at the Earth Profound Realm. At that time, nearly everyone in Sun Moon Divine Hall expressed their disbelief and even treated it as a joke.

In addition, the ten Divine Phoenix disciples he had

defeated were all in the mid-stage of the Emperor Profound Realm... and some of them were even late stage Thrones.

So if that rumor was true... and if the Yun Che at the Earth Profound Realm could defeat late stage Thrones, then the Yun Che who now had the profound power of the Emperor Profound Realm...

The impact that scene had on Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi was simply too great. Their hearts and souls were greatly shaken,

completely unable to calm down. Facing this young man who only exuded an aura that was at the third level of the Emperor Profound, their hearts started to beat harder and harder in their chests.

Ye Qingsheng could no longer laugh. The only thing he could do was pray that what happened just now was only a coincidence that could not be duplicated. With that, he grit his teeth and gave a flourish of his hand. “All of you advance together... capture him!!”

As Ye Qingsheng's command cut through the air, the profound energy of the nine, black-robed Thrones exploded outwards. They gave a low cry and rushed towards Yun Che from multiple directions. The eyes of every single one of them gleamed with viciousness, and they held nothing back. Nine strong profound auras caused ripples to criss-cross through the intervening space... their companion had been killed in an instant by this young man who was weaker than him by half a realm, and perhaps that could be written off as a unique coincidence, but if nine people advanced together, this kind of "coincidence"... could not

appear no matter what happened!

Nine Thrones who were at the eighth level and above launched an all-out assault against a level three Throne. Before today, if they had heard of it, they would all definitely feel that such a situation would be extremely funny. But right now, while Yun Che's profound strength was actually at the Emperor Profound Realm, his true strength had never been comparable to the level of his profound strength. So even though he was also at the Emperor Profound Realm, the

strength of someone at the Emperor Profound Realm was to him... something that could only be described as “utterly weak.”

Despite facing the all-out assault of nine Thrones, Yun Che's feet still remained rooted to the ground, and not a single ripple could be seen in his eyes. He only raised his arm as a blue light flashed in his palm. Following a flourish of his hand, nine ice spirits suddenly shot out... the speed of the ice spirits was extremely fast, and nine blue lines were traced through the air. Those nine Thrones didn't even register the blue



flashes of light before the ice spirits made contact with their chests.

Chink, chink, chink, chink, chink, chink...

The blue lights were as small the lights of fireflies, but the moment those nine Thrones came into contact with them, their entire bodies were bathed in blue light as they morphed into ice statues... They had been completely frozen from the inside out!

There were no wails nor horror. Not even an instance of resistance was displayed. There was only the heavy ring of nine objects solidifying into solid ice... and in the very next instant, nine ice statues fell from midair to smash against the ground.

Bang, bang, bang, bang...

Once the ice statues came into contact with the ground, they instantly shattered into pieces. Some of them shattered into tiny fragments while others

broke into several big chunks. Even the least damaged statue had snapped at the waist as numerous cracks ran through his body. As for those who had flown the highest, their bodies had been shattered into dregs of ice... Moreover, along the floor that was filled with broken fragments, not a single trace of blood could be seen. That was because even their blood had been instantly and completely frozen in that one moment.

“Wha... wha... what?!!” Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi backed up a step simultaneously... the two mighty Overlords’ pupils shrank

into pinpricks, and even their legs could be seen to be trembling.

Nine high level Thrones were frozen and sealed in an instant... and the most horrifying fact was that after their frozen bodies had naturally fallen from the air, they actually all shattered on the cold and hard ground as if they were all made of regular ice.

As high level Thrones, they had the profound strength of the Emperor      Profound      Realm protecting their body. Even if

they fell to the bottom of an extremely deep ravine, there was no way their bodies would have shattered solely because of that. Additionally, even if they were sealed in ice, their protective profound energy should have still remained... Not only that, even if they had died in that instant, their profound energy should not have immediately and completely dissipated/disappeared.

But the scene that had just unfolded right before their very eyes was so horrifying that they could scarcely believe it... They had begun to suspect whether

this was an illusion that simply did not exist in reality... or perhaps they were stuck in a nightmare.

Unless... unless in that instant, not only were their bodies sealed in ice, but even their profound energy was sealed in ice as well.

Furthermore, this level of strength, how could it appear on someone who was only around twenty years old and whose profound energy aura was only at that of the Emperor Profound Realm?!

“Ah...” Behind Yun Che, all the girls of Frozen Cloud Asgard cried out in astonishment and unwittingly raised their hands to their lips, and even Frozen Cloud’s Seven Fairies were completely dumbfounded... the scene they had just witnessed was a million times more shocking than when he had killed that level nine Throne in an instant.

This was a power that they had never seen before, one that even completely exceeded the bounds of their understanding!

To be able to kill a level nine Throne in an instant was something that Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi could do as well. But to simultaneously kill nine late-stage Thrones, even if the both of them cooperated together, it was something they definitely could not do... and when Yun Che made his move, not only were they unable to sense the slightest ripple of profound energy, during the entire process, he had only waved his hand in an extremely casual manner... it was as if he had only used the energy it would take to lift a finger.



Both of them had been rendered completely breathless as the cold sensation in their bodies instantly swelled up tens of times over. But at this point, Yun Che's gaze fell on their bodies and they felt a thick and fierce killing intent lock in on them. "Now, it's your turn."

After being targeted by Yun Che's killing intent, their bodies suddenly ran cold, as if there was a python twisting around their bodies only to set their venomous fangs against their throat.

A terror they had never felt before spread through their entire bodies. If they were previously unsure of the gap between their power and Yun Che's, the moment Yun Che's killing intent locked on to them... that indescribable, bone-piercing cold, caused their very hearts and souls to shiver so severely that they could not control themselves no matter what they did, and that very oppressive pressure also caused their profound strength to curl up and become sluggish. All of these things led them to discover, to their horror, that this young man not only had a

profound strength that far surpassed the Emperor Profound Realm, he was also stronger than the two of them, both mid-stage Overlords, by nearly an entire realm as well!

They had only ever experienced such a strong might and pressure in the presences of a Monarch.

The Yun Che in front of them... just a flourish of his hand was enough to instantly kill nine late-stage Thrones... so he definitely had the ability to kill

the both of them!”

Ye Qingsheng started to shuffle his feet backwards... That was a movement which indicated that he was prepared to flee at any moment. At this time, he already knew that he could definitely not behave arrogantly, no matter the circumstances. He forced his terror down and did not allow it to show on his face while giving a low shout, “Yun Che! You.... Do you know who we are...”

“I don’t know who the both of

you are.” Yun Che’s every word was as heavy as a gigantic boulder smashing against their chests. “But I do know one thing... that the both of you are about to become dead men!”

RIIP!!

Before the sound of Yun Che’s voice had finished falling, his figure instantly blurred as his real body appeared in front of Ye Ziyi like a ghost... His speed was way too fast, it was so quick to the point that no one had any time to react at all, and even

when he appeared before the two of them, both of these mighty Overlords were still focused on the still-present afterimage that he had left behind.

“Ah!!” The figure that abruptly appeared caused Ye Qingsheng, whose nerves were already tightly wound, to give a strangled cry in shock and fear as he shot backwards like an arrow. However, Yun Che’s hand already had formed a death grip around Ye Ziyi’s throat, and with a simple shrug of his shoulders, he completely lifted him off the ground.

Ye Ziyi's eyes widened into saucers, and his eyeballs started bulging out as his entire face turned beet red... that hand around his throat was simply too fierce and tight, so much so that he was unable to even utter a groan of pain. Moreover, all of the profound energy in his body was completely suppressed by an extremely tyrannical strength. It completely sealed his every moment and did not even allow him resist even in the slightest. It was as if Yun Che was lifting a rigid corpse into the air.

Ye Qingsheng stumbled backwards in terror as the pretty faces of the women of Frozen Cloud Asgard completely went pale... Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi, both of them were incomparably powerful Overlords, and it was also the two of them that forced everyone from Frozen Cloud Asgard into this desperate situation. To them, they were stronger and more terrifying than demons. They were existences that could not be resisted or defeated, no matter what they did.

Despite that, Yun Che had



actually grabbed such a terrifying person by the throat, and that person could only twitch and convulse in that death grip without even being able to fight back... even both of his hands flopped uselessly at his side... he did not even have the strength to lift up both hands!

If he was not being completely suppressed by such an absolute power, how would it be possible for this mighty Overlord to not even be able to muster the slightest bit of resistance.

Ye Ziyi's pupils slowly dilated, and it seemed like they were going to explode out of his eyes as they were filled with terror, despair, and pleading. But why would Yun Che show even the slightest bit of mercy? With a slight twitch of his fingers, the bones in Ye Ziyi's throat were reduced to fine powder. Yun Che gave a low shout after that, "My Frozen Cloud Asgard had no quarrel or complaint with you, yet you have behaved against us in such an evil and vicious manner... even though you are only lapdogs... even if you died ten thousand times, it would not redeem your sins! Die!!!"

As the word “die” was spoken, a flame flashed in Yun Che’s eyes, and the red-hot Golden Crow flames ignited in his hand. It instantly spread to Ye Ziyi’s body and turned him into a human torch. Ye Ziyi, whose entire body was being baptised in the Golden Crow flames, was in such pain that even his pupils spasmed, and all of his fear and pleading was turned into extreme pain and despair...

The flames in Yun Che’s hands soared into the sky, and after a few breaths, they swiftly fell. Finally, after the flames died out and the last fire petal hit the

ground, Ye Ziyi's body had already completely disappeared... not even ashes remained.

The Frozen End Divine Hall had descended into an absolute silence. While the air had turned scorching hot, Ye Qingsheng's entire body went cold, and he felt as if he had been plunged into a frozen hell. He could only helplessly look on as Ye Ziyi was, in the span of a few breaths, reduced to ashes by Yun Che without even the slightest opposition... His body went limp the moment he saw Ye Ziyi's body completely disappear, and

as Yun Che's gaze slowly rotated over to him, he let out a shrill and strangled cry as he scrambled up the wall, attempting to desperately climb to freedom... It was as if he was a defeated dog who had been completely scared out of his mind.

# Chapter 661 – New Asgard Master

---

However, even if Ye Qingsheng's speed was ten times faster, it would still be impossible for him to escape from Yun Che's palms. Yun Che stood still, reached out his arm, and an invisible cold air stabbed through the space, instantly shooting out further than three hundred kilometers. The body of Ye Qingsheng, who was desperately escaping, became stiff and fell onto the ground while he was screaming. Following that, his whole body was frozen under a layer of ice

that was rapidly getting thicker.

“Keep... keep him alive!”  
exclaimed Gong Yuxian with a  
rapid voice.

Even without Gong Yuxian’s  
reminder, Yun Che wasn’t  
planning to kill Ye Qingsheng in  
the first place. He had already  
confirmed that these people  
were from the Sun Moon Divine  
Hall, but he still didn’t know  
why they would attack the  
Frozen Cloud Asgard...  
especially when these people  
were obviously under the

command of Ye Xinghan himself!

At the very least, he must figure out the reason behind this... especially Ye Xinghan's goal.

In the blink of an eye, Ye Qingsheng's whole body was completely sealed with ice, and whether it was his body or profound energy, they were all sealed completely. He laid on the ground without moving. Yun Che opened his palm, and along with a chaotic airflow, Ye Qingsheng's ice sealed body flew



up from the ground, quickly flew backwards until it landed by Yun Che's foot, and was heavily stamped on by Yun Che's feet ... The moment his feet landed, the ice layer that covered Ye Qingsheng's whole body shattered in an instant.

Ye Qingsheng wasn't unconscious. Without the ice layer on his body, his whole body was still shivering from the cold, and his face was covered with bruises, but his profound energy was completely suppressed and locked by a strength that was so strong he couldn't even resist against it. No matter how hard

he tried, he wasn't able to use any of it.

Yun Che lifted his eyes and slowly moved his feet away from Ye Qingsheng's back. Even without Yun Che stepping on him, that overbearing force of suppression still existed. On top of that, his body was completely frozen stiff. Not mentioning standing up, he couldn't even lift his arms or turn his head. There was only weak, unclear moaning coming from his mouth.

Bang!

Yun Che kicked Ye Qingsheng into a corner of the Frozen End Divine Hall, didn't give him another look, and hurried to Gong Yuxian's front. Because he felt that Gong Yuxian's breath was getting weaker by the moment, if it kept going on like this, her life would end at any moment.

“Asgard Mistress, you asked me to keep him alive, was it to question them where they are from?” Yun Che asked

peacefully while facing Gong Yuxian as he started to circulate Great Way of the Buddha and gather the nature's energy.

Murong Qianxue, Jun Lianqie, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue, Feng Hanxue... and all of the Frozen Cloud disciples looked straight at him with blank looks on their faces. All of their eyes were in a haze as if they were covered with ice mist and in a blur as if they were in a dream... Perhaps, they supposed, up until this very moment, they were still in the most fantastic dream.

A catastrophic calamity. During these six months, they were always in a desperate, hopeless situation... Their enemies included two Overlords and ten late-stage Thrones, and they could not fight against that power no matter what. For six months, they relied on the last breath of the Frozen End Divine Hall. Today, when the villains broke open the Frozen End Divine Hall, every one of them had prepared for death and had already stopped hoping for any miracle to appear... but, Yun Che, who had died three years ago on the Primordial Profound Ark... the only male disciple of

their Frozen Cloud Asgard actually came back at the very last moment and appeared before them.

Not only did he miraculously come back alive, his strength had become so strong that it was both completely unbelievable and incomprehensible. Ten strong, high-level Thrones were all killed by him in two short seconds; Overlords that were considered as so strong that they were horrifying and exceeded the existence of legends to Blue Wind Nation could not resist in front of Yun Che at all; they were no different from newborn

babes.

The danger that placed them in a desperate situation was solved in the blink of an eye because of Yun Che's return. The eleven villains who they hated and feared were all dead with their bodies unwhole, and the only one that remained was paralyzed, effectively dead. But none of them cheered in joy because all of this was too unreal. At this moment, they couldn't believe the Yun Che before their eyes was the Yun Che that they knew.

“Yes...” Gong Yuxian nodded slowly. “Our Frozen Cloud Asgard... cannot... not know... why we’re suffering from this disaster... cough... cough, cough...”

Gong Yuxian coughed severely, and a trace of black blood fell from the corner of her mouth.

“Asgard Mistress!” Murong Qianxue and Jun Lianqie exclaimed, and immediately, they started to transfer their own profound energy into her body in desperation. Yun Che



also put his palm onto her chest right away and let the nature's essence that he had just gathered flow into her lifeline. "Asgard Mistress, don't worry. We will definitely be able to get to the bottom of this... The person behind this, no matter who it is, will have to pay a heavy price for this... Asgard Mistress, don't speak now, close your eyes and calm yourself... There is no danger any longer, you just have to heal your wounds in peace and you will recover very soon!"

"No..." But Gong Yuxian shook her head and said, "There are somethings, that I must... say

now...”

Gong Yuxian’s voice was trembling and weak, but at this moment, her eyes were not unfocused anymore. Instead, they were bright and clear; even the weak vitality in her body had suddenly stabilized... But Yun Che didn’t stop worrying at this change; rather, his heart immediately sunk...

This was... a moment of clarity right before death!

Gong Yuxian was using all of the remainder of her life force... in exchange for one last bit of short clarity.

“Asgard Mistress, you...”

“Don’t... say anything... Listen to me... listen to me...” Gong Yuxian’s lips were trembling, and her weak voice was filled with deep urgency, causing Yun Che to not dare to interrupt her anymore. “Yun Che... Can you tell me... what realm your strength is at now?”

Everyone's focus gathered on Yun Che once again. They were all incredibly curious of what realm his strength was at now, but Yun Che knew that Gong Yuxian absolutely did not ask this question out of curiosity. He seriously responded, "My profound strength realm is at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, but if I use all of my strength, I might be able to battle against a Monarch that is under the third level."

Battle... against a Monarch?

Indescribable shock and looks of disbelief revealed themselves on the Frozen Snow disciple's beautiful faces as they all gasped uncontrollably. If Yun Che were to use all of his strength, he could battle against a Monarch... That meant, Yun Che's strength now, was already at the legendary... Sovereign Profound Realm!!

This was the highest realm that could be reached by the profound practitioners not only in Blue Wind Nation, but the entire Profound Sky Continent! It was the peak plane in this world! Once one entered this

realm, one would become a true Monarch among humans! A true legend of the profound way.

Gong Yuxian's expression was very calm, but in her eyes, an instant of bright brilliance flashed. She said slowly, "Then do you... still admit... that you are a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard?"

"If Asgard Mistress doesn't expel me, I will always be the disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard," Yun Che claimed without hesitation. He reached

out his palm, and a, ice-blue frost crystal slowly appeared in the center of his palm. “This Frozen Cloud Soul Crystal was personally given to me by Grand Asgard Mistress back then, and it is the proof of my identity as the disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Even though I have left Frozen Cloud Asgard for three years, this has always been on this disciple and was never left behind.”

Looking at the Frozen Cloud Soul Crystal in Yun Che’s hand, Gong Yuxian’s eyes showed movement. She used all of her strength to slowly nod, and even

her voice was accompanied with excitement, “Good... good... good... In a short six years... from no profound strength at all to being able to battle against a Monarch... Only six years... There has never been a case like this before in the Profound Sky Continent... Even though we are also a petty existence... you are still... willing to admit that you are my asgard’s disciple... You are indeed... a man who values relationships... No wonder... Yuechan was willing to abandon the Frozen Cloud for you... Qingyue wasn’t able to stop worrying because of you... Senior Master even broke the thousand year sect rule to let you become the first male



disciple...”

Gong Yuxian said these many things in one go, but her face become rosy from pale. Yun Che knew that this wasn't because her status was improving, but it was because she was another step closer to death. “Qingyue married you... Yuechan left the asgard because of you... I once thought that you were a misfortune to Frozen Cloud... When Senior Master accepted you as a male disciple, I also once couldn't accept or understand it... But today, I just found out that you are not only not a misfortune to Frozen

Cloud, you are the savior given to my Frozen Cloud Asgard by the heavens... If it wasn't for you, Frozen Cloud Asgard wouldn't exist after today... Senior Master was indeed insightful and wise..."

"Asgard Mistress, stop talking." Feng Hanyue and Feng Hanxue were already so anxious that they were close to crying. "The danger has passed. We will take you to the Frozen Heart Hall immediately... When we get there, you will definitely recover very soon."

“No...” Gong Yuxian weakly shook her head, and in determination said, “Don’t move me... Finish... finish listening to what I have to say... Yun Che... Since you admit your identity as the disciple of Frozen Cloud, then are you... willing to listen to my, this Asgard Mistress’, command?”

“...” Yun Che nodded. He didn’t try to convince Gong Yuxian because he knew that, to someone who was already filled with the will to die, even the strongest medical skills wouldn’t be able help. “I am the disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Naturally, I will listen to the command of the Asgard Mistress.”

“Good...” Gong Yuxian’s voice trembled even harder, her tone was suddenly even more solemn and just. “Frozen Cloud’s disciple, Yun Che... kneel down and listen to my command!”

Yun Che was stunned slightly, but facing the current Gong Yuxian, he couldn’t refuse at all. He kneeled down on one knee in seriousness before her, and at this moment, he saw Gong

Yuxian's right palm slowly open. A small, exquisite, diamond-shaped icicle floated in the air above the back of her palm, and it released a strange, fantastic blue light.

Looking at this icicle, the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies were all severely moved, and as they lost their voices, stammered, "That... that is..."

"This icicle is called the 'Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul,' it carries all of the Frozen Cloud Asgard's arts, secrets, and precious

memories of the past Asgard Mistresses. With this, you can also unlock every restriction in the asgard... and this, is also the proof of identity of my Frozen Cloud Asgard for the Asgard Mistress...” Gong Yuxian reached out, her arms trembling, and placed the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul before Yun Che.

“I will now... give you this ‘Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul’... From now on, you will be my Frozen Cloud Asgard’s... New Asgard Master!”

## Chapter 662 – Divine Phoenix Coming Again

---

Gong Yuxian's words and shocking actions were obviously her dying will. Murong Qianxue heavily shook her head. "Asgard Mistress, don't be like this... you'll definitely be fine. Our Frozen Cloud Asgard needs you."

"Asgard Mistress! We've already escaped from danger and you'll be able to recover soon. Now... is not the time to pass on the position of Asgard Mistress."

“Asgard Mistress...”

“Don’t try to persuade me...”  
Gong Yuxian smiled, “My profound strength has completely dispersed. Even if I fully recover, I would still only be a cripple and will only become a burden to Frozen Cloud Asgard... The only reason why I’ve forcefully willed myself to stay alive was because I was not yet satisfied. Now that Frozen Cloud Asgard has escaped danger and the most suitable person to become Asgard Master has appeared, I can finally... be at ease and accompany Senior Master...”



Originally, the next in line for Asgard Mistress was Xia Qingyue. However, over five months ago, under the crisis, Gong Yuxian forcefully ordered Xia Qingyue to flee using the profound escape formation, but due to the panic caused by her fright, she had forgotten to pass her the “Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul...” Currently, if Yun Che were able to become the Asgard Master of Frozen Cloud Asgard, then that would perhaps be an even better ending. Or perhaps that was also heaven’s will.

“Yun Che... I am well aware that me passing the position of Asgard Mistress to you... is quite tough on you... With your current cultivation, even if you entered one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, you would probably still be able to obtain a high position... But... even though the calamity has temporarily passed, the mastermind behind these villains is an enormous power that Frozen Cloud Asgard simply cannot contend against... Me... selfishly... handing over Frozen Cloud Asgard to you... is my command as Asgard Mistress... and also... my request... Please... you must... promise... promise me...”

Gong Yuxian focused all her energy into her hand to grab onto the front of Yun Che's clothes. Her eyes were tearful and were completely filled with deep beseechment... Right, beseechment.

Frozen Cloud Asgard's Mistress... was the "supreme" noble identity in Blue Wind Nation. The prestigious name was so prosperous that it even exceeded the name of the Blue Wind Emperor, and only the title of Heavenly Sword Villa Master could be compared with

it. But now, she was begging a person deeply to succeed the position of Asgard Mistress... and that person was a man; it was unprecedented in the history of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

This was because Gong Yuxian knew clearly that the disaster of Frozen Cloud Asgard was not over yet, it was only the beginning. Those people that were demolished by Yun Che were only a few underlings, and there were only so many forces in Profound Sky Continent that could have Overlords as their underlings. She had even already vaguely surmised that

the person behind all of this was possibly those who could undermine the entire Profound Sky Continent... one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds...

To save Frozen Cloud Asgard, she could only grab onto the last resort, which was the first, and also the only, male disciple in the history of Frozen Cloud Asgard... Yun Che, who was only at the mere age of twenty-two, yet with enough strength to have already stepped into the Sovereign Profound Realm.

The Frozen Cloud Asgard that was all female had a male as their Asgard Master; this would definitely attract the criticism of everyone under heaven. Yun Che knew, if they weren't pushed into such a desperate situation, they would definitely not have made such a decision. Gong Yuxian didn't want to see Frozen Cloud Asgard destroyed, and Yun Che was the same. How would he be willing to see that... Xia Qingyue belonged here, Chu Yuechan also belonged here, the Frozen Cloud Arts and Frozen End Divine Arts also came from this place... Frozen Cloud Asgard and himself were already linked in countless ways.

“...Alright!” Under Gong Yuxian’s imploring gaze , Yun Che took a deep breath, nodded slowly, reached out his right hand, and touched the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul with the back of his hand.

The Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul released a gentle blue light, automatically flew towards Yun Che, and then disappeared little by little above the back of his hand.

Yun Che held his own right

hand, felt the existence of the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul, and said slowly with determination, “Asgard Mistress, don’t worry. Unless I die, I will absolutely not let anyone bully my Frozen Cloud Asgard!”

Watching silently as the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul disappeared into Yun Che’s right hand, Gong Yuxian’s saddened expression was immediately replaced with endless satisfaction. She calmly closed her eyes, and said in a soft voice, “Good... good... Thank you... With your words, even if I die... I... can... rest... in... peace...”



Gong Yuxian's voice became softer with every word, and when the last word of hers had fallen, the last breath of her life faded away the same moment her voice... completely disappeared... After she passed on the Asgard Mistress' position to Yun Che, she left in peace.

“Mistress...”

“Asgard Mistress!!”

The grief-imbued yell of the Frozen Cloud disciples sounded in this ice-cold space. they kneeled by Gong Yuxian's body as their tears of pain fell... The record from thousands of years 'till now of the Frozen Cloud Asgard, the past Asgard Mistresses all died of old age, but this generation suffered from such calamity. Gong Yuxian's expression when she passed away was peaceful and calm, but her fingers were still clenched together, showing that she still had much hatred and unwillingness... she died with her hatred.

Yun Che stood up and gave a deep sigh. This calamity wasn't solved because of his return. Even though Frozen Cloud Asgard was somewhat saved, its foundation and support... Grand Asgard Mistress Feng Qianhui and Asgard Mistress Gong Yuxian had died one after another. In addition, those who allowed the Frozen Cloud Asgard to suffer from this calamity was Sun Moon Divine Hall...

Under Gong Yuxian's imploring, he did not expect to accept the position of the Asgard Master of Frozen Cloud Asgard...

The Frozen Cloud Asgard now was under the incredibly terrifying shadow of Sun Moon Divine Hall, so the position of Asgard Master also became incredibly heavy.

But since he dared to accept it, he had the awareness that maybe, one day, he would have to face the Sun Moon Divine Hall head on... Even more so, him and that Ye Xinghan already shared a bitter hatred of the other.

“Let Asgard Mistress... rest in

the ice coffin,” heavily said Yun Che as he looked at the Frozen Cloud disciples crying overwhelmingly in front of him.

Southeast of Blue Wind Imperial City, thirty-five kilometers away.

As one of the commanders of the Divine Phoenix Army, Han Xingzhao had already completed the mission of taking over of the west area of the Blue Wind Nation. Besides being told to ignore Heavenly Sword Villa, all of the west area of the Blue

Wind Nation was already under his control. These days they were all paying attention to the progress of the main army... Taking over the Imperial City was something just around the corner, and soon enough, there would no longer be a Blue Wind Nation. Instead, there would be a “Divine Phoenix Empire’s Blue Wind Realm,” and they could return to their nation with honor very soon.

Yesterday, he had already known that the Divine Phoenix Army had arrived at Blue Wind Imperial City.

Today, he was originally prepared to send a sound transmission to ask about the results of the battle... however, whether it was the main army's commander-in-chief, Qi Zhencang, or the vice commander, Duan Qinghang, none of them responded. Moreover, he and his subordinate then tried to send a sound transmission to almost everyone in the main army who had a sound transmission imprint... but none of them responded.

In shock, he immediately sent a ten thousand mile sound transmission to Feng Hengkong, and under the order of Feng Hengkong, he transferred all of the mounts and aerial pets, accompanied with fifty thousand soldiers of Divine Phoenix Army, and rushed to Blue Wind Imperial City with the troops moving faster than ever. On the whole way there, he was extremely anxious.

The supervisor who accompanied him... Feng Hengjiang, the fifty-second elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, his expression was also darkened



the whole way there. If it was just one or two people that didn't respond to the sound transmission, then maybe they were focused on the battle and didn't have time to respond, but none of them responded... this was absolutely abnormal.

When the sky begun to get dark, they were finally thirty-five kilometers away from Blue Wind Imperial City, but the scene before them stunned them all for a very long time.

“What... what is going on!?”

There was no sound of battle or yelling at all. This place was so quiet that it was frightening. Not only that, but the land in front was actually sunken to an extreme degree, and it sunk in an incredibly smooth manner... Not mentioning the things that a battlefield should have, like traces of fighting, bodies, or blood... there wasn't even a trace of it being stepped on.

This view extended as far as the eye could see.

Facing this extremely strange scene, everyone stopped moving forward. Feng Hengjiang flew down and landed. He stood on the land that had been sunk to a large degree and his expression changed... He felt an aura of a flame, and he had a feeling... that this strange, boundless area... was a area of destruction that seemed to be created by strong, unparalleled strength!

Still,, even with all of the supervisors from the Divine Phoenix Sect that came here together this time, they couldn't have created such enormous area of destruction... and the

Blue Wind Nation, it was even more impossible for a strength like this to appear from them.

The most crucial point was... where did the army of seven hundred thousand, Nineteenth Elder, and Forty-third Elder go? They were near Blue Wind Imperial City that they were invading just this morning, but not even a shadow was to be seen!

Could it be...

An extremely horrifying thought appeared in Feng Hengjiang's head, but he immediately denied it in panic... Impossible, how could something like this be possible!

“Fifty-second Elder, can you tell what happened to this area? What should we do now?” Han Xingzhao tried to ask calmly.

Feng Hengjiang's expression changed. He gnashed his teeth and ordered, “We will, of course, see what is going on ourselves at Blue Wind Imperial City... there

are only a few kilometers left. Immediately report the situation to the Sect Master and move forward at full speed!!”

“...Yes!”

Blue Wind Imperial City.

The sky started to dim, and the whole city was tense because they were still in the process of preparing for war since the Divine Phoenix Army could show up anytime.

Yun Che hadn't returned from the Frozen Cloud Asgard for a long time. Cang Yue and the others couldn't help but start to worry. At this moment, a panicked voice came from outside the hall.

“Your majesty... bad news!!”

Cang Yue hastily stood up from her throne and, with her eyebrows lowered, said, “Did the Divine Phoenix Army arrive!?”

A soldier of the Blue Wind in silver armor rushed in and kneeled on the ground. Then he rapidly said, “A wave of the Divine Phoenix Army is flowing in from the northwest ... They are currently less than fifteen kilometers from the Imperial City.”

“What?” Cang Yue’s eyebrows jumped, and the expression of the generals in the main hall all changed suddenly. Feng Yunlie stood up and roared, “Why did we only notice when the Divine Phoenix Army is this close... Are the sentries at the frontlines all dead!?”



“Your majesty, general, calm yourselves... This wave of Divine Phoenix Army soldiers is probably around fifty thousand. But the speed of their troops was extremely fast. Among them, around twenty thousand of them are riding the Fire War Horse of the Divine Phoenix Nation, and the rest of the thirty thousand soldiers were all riding different types of aerial profound beasts... Their speed is really too fast... May your majesty immediately order us to fight.”

Twenty thousand Fire War Horses... and thirty thousand aerial profound beasts that were carrying the Divine Phoenix Army... Everyone in the main hall gasped a breath of cold air.

Aside from the fifty thousand soldiers of the Divine Phoenix Army, just this frightening number of Fire War Horses and aerial profound beasts wasn't something that the Blue Wind Imperial City could defend against right now.

But none of them showed panic

on their faces because their Blue Wind Imperial City had a guardian that was as strong as god... more than hundred thousand soldiers of the Divine Phoenix's Main Army were demolished by him in an instant. There was no need to mention fifty thousand!!

“Looks like after the main army was demolished, the Divine Phoenix Army on the west noticed that something was not right, so they came over in a hurry to see what is going on,” Cang Yue said peacefully.

# Chapter 663 – The Overlord Returns

---

Looking out from Blue Wind Imperial City, the south-western sky was completely black. There were nearly twenty thousand aerial profound beasts with at least one Divine Phoenix soldier on each one. These aerial profound beasts consisted mostly of spirit profound beasts, but there were a few earth profound beasts as well... And the ones in the lead clearly released the aura of the Sky Profound Realm.

Underneath them, the Fire War Horses' speed was no less compared to the aerial profound beasts. These Fire War Horses were also spirit profound beasts. Not only were they extremely fast, they also possessed a great amount of stamina, and their collision force also terrified their enemies. They were a nightmare-like existence on the battlefield.

“Such an astonishing array of profound beasts... Probably comparable to Blue Wind's army of several hundred thousand!” Xiao Yun inhaled a cold breath.

“Clearly, the enemy wanted to test us at all costs through using the speed of these profound beasts. At the same time, with the power of tens of thousands of profound beasts, even if they were facing a large miscalculation, they would still be able to handle it,” Number One Under Heaven said sullenly.

The sound of hurrying footsteps rang out behind the them. Cang Yue came over quickly, and behind her were Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang... The two of them had extremely heavy expressions. Under them, the city gate

opened wide, and the Blue Wind Army that had been waiting rushed out, quickly getting into their battle formation, and formed a heavy defense in front of the city... However, looking at the gigantic horde of aerial profound beasts, there wasn't any soldier without shock and terror on their faces.

“Your Majesty, let's try a few more times... Our Blue Wind military can't possibly defend against fifty thousand Divine Phoenix soldiers. What's more terrifying is the profound beast horde. If Yun Che can't come back immediately... The

consequences will be  
unthinkable,” anxiously worried  
Dongfang Xiu .

Hearing a sound, the three of  
them turned around. Xiao Yun  
immediately asked, “Did  
something occur?”

Cang Yue held the sound  
transmission jade in hand and  
slowly said, “I just tried to send  
a sound transmission to my  
husband. I’ve already tried  
several times, but all of them  
had failed.”



“Ah?” The three of them were shocked. Xiao Yun quickly said, “Sound transmission failure? How... How is this possible! Big Brother is so powerful, it’s impossible for something to occur to him.”

“No, a sound transmission failing does not necessarily mean their sound transmission jade was destroyed,” Number One Under Heaven said calmly. “If they are somewhere with a special barrier or an isolation energy, it could also prevent sound from being transmitted. It must be the latter. Brother Yun is somewhere where sound

can't be transmitted."

"Then... Then what are we going to do?" Xiao Yun started panicking.

"Of course it's up to us to hold them back!" Number One Under Heaven waved his arm, and the profound energy from his body swirled up. "Why must Brother Yun rush back? Do the three of us not have enough power to delay this Divine Phoenix Army that is merely in the tens of thousands?" Number One Under Heaven looked meaningfully at

Xiao Yun, his voice also becoming sullen, "Xiao Yun! I can understand that you don't want your hands to be stained with blood. However, after encountering something slightly more difficult, the first thing you thought of is not to deal with it with your own power, but to rely on Brother Yun! You're married now, and the one you married is my cutest little sister! If you want to become a real man, your hands can remain unstained with blood, but at the very least you have to become reliable... rather than habitually relying on someone else!"

Number One Under Heaven's words caused Xiao Yun's body to tremble before clenching his teeth and forcefully nodded. "I... I understand."

"Big Brother, don't say that about Brother Yun! Brother Yun's personality is inherently kind. I don't want him to change," said Number Seven Under Heaven with an expression of displeasure as she held onto Xiao Yun's arm.

The corner of Number One Under Heaven's eye twitched. He

could only turn around with a face that was completely crestfallen. Yet, at this moment, the large Divine Phoenix profound beast swarm was already less than two and a half kilometers away. A heavy pressure also passed from afar, and a huge wave of terror once again covered Blue Wind Imperial City.

Number One Under Heaven quietly said, “Don’t be scared by this. Remember, this isn’t our Demon Imperial City! It is a place where the level of profound energy is lower. We’re just facing some weak Divine

Phoenix Army and low leveled profound beasts. The two of you have already entered the Tyrant Profound Realm. As long as there are no opponents capable of suppressing us, even if there were twice as many of them, we can stop it if all three of us work together!”

As Number One Under Heaven finished speaking, a green longbow appeared in his hands, and when he held the bow horizontal and pulled the bow string, twelve green profound arrows appeared on it... Once this was shot, these twelve profound arrows would not just

extinguish twelve lives, but would pierce twelve terrifying holes through the gigantic army in sight... piercing through the front of the army, all the way to the back.

At this moment, an unusual profound energy wave emitted from the south causing Number Seven Under Heaven's to exclaim loudly in shock, "Ah!! Look! What... What is that?!"

In the southern sky, a tiny gold dot suddenly appeared... Although it was tiny, it was as

bright as stars in the night. Furthermore, it was very fast. In the blink of an eye, that golden light grew ten times larger... then another ten times... In less than one breath's of time, it had already turned from a tiny light to a huge figure... It was completely gold, more than three hundred meters long, several tens of meters wide, and complicated golden lines floated around it.

As it neared Blue Wind Imperial City, its speed suddenly slowed down. The golden profound light it emitted also diminished. At the same time, a



violent surge of air, carrying a mysterious yet heavy pressure from the south, rushed past, which caused the Blue Wind citizens on the city wall that were caught off guard to be blown away.

“That is... a profound ark?” exclaimed Number One Under Heaven as he used his hand to block the incoming violent air. Its outline, as well as the profound energy it released while it was flying, proved that it was a unique profound ark. However, the speed that this profound ark had just shown had surprised him despite his

vast knowledge... Because, in terms of speed alone, it had already far surpassed the strongest profound ark of their Under Heaven Family.

What shocked him the most was not the golden profound ark, but the person riding it! Someone who had such a shocking profound arc was definitely not a simple person! If it was an enemy, then it would be disastrous!

Wave after wave of gasps spread throughout Blue Wind Imperial

City. Everyone dumbly looked at the golden color profound ark in the air. The people shocked by this profound ark were not just those in Blue Wind Imperial City. Everyone in the Divine Phoenix Army was also staring at this golden profound ark. The spiritual pressure that the profound ark released caused all of them to subconsciously slow down, until they came to a full stop.

“What is that?” Han Xingzhao said thoughtfully. “Could it be... a profound ark?”

As he said that, he looked at Feng Hengjiang's expression and noticed that his eyes and the muscles on his face... were all relentlessly twitching and trembling. He felt a shock in his heart and quickly said, "Fifty-second Elder, what is it?!"

Feng Hengjiang's stared straight at the golden profound ark and raised his hands. His lips moved and moved for a long time before he finally made a sound. "Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark!"

“Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark?” Han Xingzhao showed an expression of confusion. “What is that... Could it be something very scary?”

Feng Hengjiang fiercely inhaled a breath of air. “Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark... The exclusive ark of the Saint Emperor, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s highest ruler!”

“Wh-wh-what!!” Han Xingzhao nearly fell off his aerial profound beast in complete shock after hearing that. He had

never heard of the Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark, but who had not heard of the name of “Saint Emperor”! He was the leader of the Four Great Sacred Grounds—The ruler of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, the supreme existence that gazed down at the entire Profound Sky Continent from above! The true number one existence on the Profound Sky Continent!

He said in shock, “Fifty-second Elder, could... could you be mistaken?! How could someone like the Saint Emperor come to... this sort of place.”

“I’m not wrong! There’s only one Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark in this world! I was lucky enough to see it one time back in the day when I followed Sect Master to visit Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. I’m definitely not mistaken.” Feng Hengjiang’s body and voice were trembling. As an elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, he was someone that could walk against the law in the Profound Sky Seven Nations. However, in front of the name of “Saint Emperor,” he could not stop his body from shuddering no matter what. “Furthermore, the Saint Emperor highly values the

Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark and has never lent it to anyone. Even his godsons have no right to drive it privately. So, once the Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark appears... It will definitely be the Saint Emperor himself!!”

It was at that moment, the golden profound ark finally came to a complete stop. The light and profound energy fluctuations almost completely disappeared. The golden profound ark floated quietly in the air, and on the right, one of the ark doors slowly opened... Han Xingzhao and Feng Hengjiang held their breaths,



but before they could clearly see the figure that walked out from the ark door, an extremely terrifying rampaging aura had already locked onto them... They didn't dare to move a muscle as they felt like they were held down by a mountain that was tens of thousands of meters tall.

A tall and muscular figure walked out from the ark door and then slowly flew down. His eyes stared at the black Divine Phoenix Army and profound beast swarm in the southwest. He wore a gray shirt that couldn't be even more plain. It

was even a bit tattered, and his muscular body could even be described as “gigantic.” He was at least four or five times the size of a normal adult, and just by standing there, he was like a small mountain of meat.

Han Xingzhao and Feng Hengjiang opened their pupils wide. Their entire bodies trembled uncontrollably... What frightened them was not the person’s muscular and unusual body, but his rage and killing intent... The rage of the aura that had locked onto them was like the molten magma of hell. Just under this aura, they felt as

if their bodies would be torn to shreds any moment now. And the aerial profound beasts under them, as well as the Fire War Horses underneath, were all trembling erratically... They were even whimpering in terror.

“That... That person’s... aura is so terrifying!” Number One Under Heaven exclaimed. He knew in an instant that this person’s aura far surpassed his, who was at the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm... It was clearly the power of the Monarch realm!

And by the strength of the aura, it didn't seem to be weaker than an enraged Yun Che!!

Who was this guy... Wasn't Blue Wind Nation the weakest in terms of profound energy levels in the Profound Sky Continent. If so, why did a Monarch appear?!

However, despite his shock, Number One Under Heaven was relieved as this person's rage that was powerful to the point of being terrifying was directed at the Divine Phoenix Army... not

## Blue Wind Imperial City.

“Such... Such a huge person... There is actually someone this huge,” said Number Seven Under Heaven with her eyes wide.

Cang Yue, had already covered her mouth tightly, and after a long while, she finally couldn't help back and shouted, “Yuan... Yuanba! It's Yuanba!!”

They hadn't met for five years, and from her point of view, Xia Yuanba didn't seem look very

different, but his body was far taller and more muscular compared to what she remembered, and his gaze and aura had changed in an even more extreme manner. It caused her to be unable to link him with the old Xia Yuanba she knew. However, what made her scream out the name “Yuanba” was the slightly tattered gray shirt on his body.

Back when Yun Che first entered the Blue Wind Profound Palace, when she helped Yun Che sew his training uniform, in order to hide her feelings for Yun Che, she also made a set for

Xia Yuanba... Xiao Yuanba always treated it like a treasure, and enjoyed wearing it. Five years had passed, and he still had not discarded it. Although it was tattered in a lot of places and could not cover his body since it had grown, he still wore it...

“Yuanba... Which... Which Yuanba?” Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang all blanked. No matter what, they could not link this person who was emitting such a terrifying aura and driving the golden profound ark with Xia Yuanba, who had little to no talent in the past, was only of

the Elementary Profound Realm, and suffered tons of bullying in the Blue Wind Profound Palace.

“...” Cang Yue did not say anything. She was just so worked up that tears were about to fall... Yun Che returned, and now, Xia Yuanba had also returned... Everyone is safe and sound, this was great... great...

“Who... Who are you!” Feng Hengjiang held his breath and asked... His chest felt like it was being pushed down by a metal plate. He couldn’t even breathe



even though he wanted to. The person in front of him was not the Saint Emperor. Compared to the Saint Emperor's might, the rage and killing intent released by the person in front of his eyes terrified him more... That golden profound ark was the Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark without a doubt! Why was this person allowed to drive the Heavenly Sacred Profound Ark that the Saint Emperor never let others touch!

“The person sending you to hell!!” Xia Yuanba slowly raised his head, and that demonic gaze locked onto the entire Divine

Phoenix army and profound  
beast swarm in front.

Three years ago, he left the  
Divine Phoenix Empire to follow  
Spiritual Master Gu Cang and  
went into seclusion with intense  
hatred the second day after  
returning to Absolute Monarch  
Sanctuary. As he grew, he could  
feel the incredulous power  
hidden in his profound vein  
more and more clearly... In  
order to get revenge for Yun  
Che, he forced the power in his  
profound veins out at all costs...

Three years passed by in the blink of an eye. Yet the day he came out of seclusion, what he heard was the misfortune of the Blue Wind Nation being trampled upon by the Divine Phoenix Empire... He drove the Heavenly Scared Profound Ark with shocking speed and raced straight to the Blue Wind Nation. After passing the border of the Blue Wind Nation, he saw the scarred lands, the kinsmen that scattered around to escape like headless flies, the invaded and even burnt cities, as well as corpses that could be seen everywhere...

Infinite rage and hatred almost made his chest explode.

His eyes turned as red as blood, and he had no intention of stopping as he furiously flew in the direction of Blue Wind Imperial City, in hopes that the core of Blue Wind Nation had not been broken through yet.

And now, he had finally arrived. In his eyes, Blue Wind Imperial City had no signs of being invaded, and the rage that had boiled on for several hours finally found somewhere to be

unleashed... The people in front wore crimson armor, proving their identities as part of the Divine Phoenix Army. As he saw them, he was unable to control the rage that he had suppressed.

Bang!!

In the explosion that sounded like a bomb going off, Xia Yuanba's arm inflated in size. The originally thick arm became slightly thicker than a normal person's body, and the aura moving in the air also reflected how he had become several

times more irascible. In front of this terrifying and tyrannical might, Feng Hengjiang, who had the power of an Overlord, had no intention of resisting. His voice trembled in fear, “Wa... Wait! Senior from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary... We are... people of the Divine... Divine Phoenix Sect... Is there... some sort of... misunderstanding...”

“The ones I’m killing... are you... you animals of the Divine Phoenix Sect!” Xia Yuanba’s opened his eyes wide, his teeth clenched, and each word contained enough hatred and rage to make the earth tremble.

His arm that had inflated so much that it was about to explode was furiously swung forward.

“Wait... Wait... UWAAAA...”

That moment when he swung his arm, Xia Yuanba's entire body became scorching gold. The golden profound light released from his arm instantly covered the entire Divine Phoenix Army, including all the aerial profound beasts and the Fire War Horses, until it covered the sun.

The earth trembled, the entire Blue Wind Imperial City shook. In the golden radiance, the space crazily collapsed, and tens of thousands of spatial cracks and spatial black holes appeared forth, tearing and devouring everything that could be destroyed.

That one moment when the power in Xia Yuanba's body surged, all of the living things covered by the golden radiance were torn mercilessly to shreds. Even those as strong as Feng Hengjiang only had a single



breath remaining, and they were only a single crack away from shattering... In the next breath, they had already been demolished into blood stains as small as dust.

# Chapter 664 – Frozen Cloud Post-Calamity

---

The startling sound of thunder blanketed a fifty kilometer radius, but once it died out, all that remained was a deathly silence.

Following the dissipation of the golden light, the south-west side of Blue Wind Imperial City had become an empty void. Whether it was the Divine Phoenix soldier or the enormous herds of profound beasts, all of them had disappeared... there were no corpses, no traces of blood, no

fragments of broken armor. There was not even a trace of their existence left on this continent. The only thing that remained in the wake of that light was countless pitch-black, spatial tears which distorted as they rapidly shrunk and disappeared.

This was the second wave of Divine Phoenix forces to arrive today, and the way they had met their end was actually... exactly the same as their first wave!

Hundreds of thousands of

Divine Phoenix Soldiers had been reduced to ashes in mere seconds under Yun Che's wrathful flames. A thirty-five kilometer radius had been burned into nothingness... that scene had evoked extreme alarm and astonishment, and all of those who had personally witnessed it could not calm their hearts down. This was because what they saw was power which could truly raze the heavens and the earth; it was akin to the power described in those legends.

And to think that this kind of power and this kind of

scenario... was once again played out for them in the same day. Not only that, but this time, it was not Yun Che but someone else altogether. What was similar, however, was that the foes they eradicated were all dire enemies of Blue Wind Nation... his wrathful aura and his shouts of rage was not any weaker than the explosion of fury that Yun Che had previously displayed.

The huge, dark green bow in Number One Under Heaven's hand had vanished, and his heart was filled with boundless shock, but he was no longer panicked... the strength of this

“giant” was incomparably terrifying, and it seemed like he was not any weaker than Yun Che, but he definitely was not an enemy because the target of his wrath had been the Divine Phoenix Army, and when he had released his power along with the fires of his wrath, he had purposely controlled and restricted the energy so that it would not affect Blue Wind Imperial City behind him... If not, even the slightest backlash from that attack would have reduced the southern part of Blue Wind Imperial City to rubble.

Number One Under Heaven took in a deep breath and asked Cang Yue, “Just now you shouted ‘Yuanba,’ is it that person’s name? Could it be that you know this person?”

“His name is Xia Yuanba, and he is the junior brother of my husband and I... and even more than that, he is a relative of my husband,” Cang Yue replied in a voice filled with emotion.

“Ju... ju... jun... junior brother?” The eyes of Number One Under Heaven and Xiao Yun

widened into saucers as they found it hard to believe what they just heard. “Could it be that he is actually... younger than Big Brother?”

“Yes, he is more than one year younger than my husband,” Cang Yue replied softly

“ ! # ¥ %....” Number One Under Heaven and Xiao Yun could practically hear the sound of their jaws hitting the floor.

In the air, Xia Yuanba had fully



vented his fury following the complete destruction of the Divine Phoenix Army, and he had regained a modicum of calm. He slowly turned around and looked towards Cang Yue and Qin Wushang, who stood beside her. When Yuanba saw them, he, who had awoken the heart of a Tyrant and had long ago ceased to be cowardly and weak, felt his eyes quiver as they moistened slightly.

“Senior Sister Xueruo... Palace Chief Qin...” he said in a low voice as he swiftly flew over. During the period where he lived in the Blue Wind Profound

Palace, besides Yun Che, it had been Cang Yue who had treated him the kindness while Palace Chief Qin had always taken care of him. When he saw that both of them were safe and sound... there was nothing that comforted his heart more.

Ping!!

A faint shattering sound that seemed to resonate from the deepest depths of the soul caused a frazzled and frustrated Feng Hengkong to immediately open his eyes as confusion

fogged his vision for a moment...  
he could only hope that what he  
sensed was only a  
misconception.

But immediately, the sound of  
hurried footsteps could be heard  
from outside. What followed it  
was a shout that was filled with  
bewilderment, “Sect Master,  
this isn’t good! Fifty-second  
Elder’s soul crystal... suddenly  
shattered just a moment ago!”

“We sent a sound transmission  
to Fifty-second Elder and  
Commander Han who was

together with him, but we received no response whatsoever!”

Feng Hengkong slowly rose to his feet, a dark cloud covering his face. It had not even been an hour since Han Xingzhao had sent a sound transmission to him, reporting that there was a weird calm settling over Blue Wind Imperial City, and not only were there not traces of the Divine Phoenix Army, there were not even any traces of battle... and now, the situation that occurred with the main Divine Phoenix Army occurred once again, and they had

become impossible to contact  
with no new messages coming  
in!

What exactly was happening...  
over at Blue Wind Imperial City!

Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Yun Che used the Frozen Cloud  
Celestial Soul in his body to  
release a unique restriction.  
After that he, together with all  
the ladies of Frozen Cloud  
Asgard, entered the Frozen  
Cloud Secret Grounds and

deposited the ice coffins, in which the bodies of Feng Qianhui and Gong Yuxian rested, at the room at the very end of the area.

Murong Qianxua, Jun Lianqie. Mu Lanyi, Feng Hanyue, and Feng Hanxue knelt in front of the ice coffin, and all of the Frozen Asgard disciples behind them followed suit. They knelt for nearly two hours until Yun Che finally let out a soft sigh and said, "Let us depart and allow Mistress Gong to sleep in peace. She labored for Frozen Cloud Asgard her entire life, so it's about time she enjoyed her well-

deserved rest.”

Once he brought the gathered Frozen Cloud disciples out of the secret grounds, the sky outside had already darkened. Even though Frozen Cloud Asgard had met with a great calamity, they had the protection of their special barrier, and after that barrier had vanished, they had all huddled inside the Frozen End Divine Hall. As a result, no terrible battles had taken place, and the better part of Frozen Cloud Asgard had been preserved from harm.

The canopy of night had dyed Frozen Cloud Asgard in some sort of illusory beauty, transforming it into a fantasy of ice and snow, one of glittering snowflakes and crystalline glass. Yun Che glanced at the sky... there had been no sound transmissions from Blue Wind Imperial City, so it looked like no other Divine Phoenix soldiers had attacked it.

However, what he did not know was that the Frozen Cloud Secret Ground's special restrictions not only blocked auras from outside... it even blocked sound transmissions as well.



“We greet the Asgard Master!”

Just as Yun Che was about to turn around, all of the women of Frozen Cloud... including the Frozen Cloud's Seven Fairies, had all knelt down and bowed their heads as they solemnly paid their respects to him. He hurriedly said, “Get up, get up, you do not need to pay respect to me. Even though I am the temporary Asgard Master, you don't need to behave with such decorum towards me.”

Murong Qianxue sincerely replied, "It was due to the Asgard Master's actions that Frozen Cloud Asgard, along with all our lives as well, were saved. Moreover, you are also the person who was personally appointed by the previous Asgard Mistress as the new leader of our sect. So according to both our emotions and the law, we still want to kneel before you in respect. From today onwards, we sisters and disciples will follow the orders of the Asgard Master."

Every single one of the ladies of Frozen Cloud were paramount

beauties, but their hearts were like ice and snow, making it hard for people to approach them. This had previously caused his teeth to itch while he secretly raged that Frozen Cloud Asgard was a sinful place which greatly wasted its natural resources... and now he had become the leader of this very Frozen Cloud Asgard, and all these women of Frozen Cloud now knelt at his feet. This feeling was indescribably complex and subtle...

“... Fine, but all of you quickly get up, you can consider this my first command as Asgard

Master,” Yun Che said as he strove to keep a straight face.

All the ladies of Frozen Cloud rose to their feet, and even though their eyes still contained the bleak pain of being plundered when they gazed at Yun Che, they did not contain too much rejection towards their new male leader. Three years ago, when he was the first male disciple to ever be accepted in the history of Frozen Cloud Asgard, it caused all of the Frozen Cloud disciples to become puzzled... and this even included Gong Yuxian. But after that, he helped Murong Qianxue

and the other fairies open their  
Profound Entrances and helped  
six of them achieve the world-  
shocking Heavenly God's  
Spiritual Veins. In addition,  
coupled with him being able to  
understand the Frozen End  
Divine Art even faster than Xia  
Qingyue, these actions caused  
the disciples of Frozen Cloud  
Asgard to not reject or question  
him. It even caused them to  
lower their guards against him...  
and after a few months, they  
basically became used to his  
existence.

And now, he had returned in  
their hour of need and basically

single-handedly rescued them from their certain doom and demise. Furthermore, the power that he had displayed caused them to be incontrovertibly convinced... the calamity hanging over Frozen Cloud Asgard had not been completely removed, but having Yun Che, who had strength at the Sovereign Profound Realm was undoubtedly like having a powerful guardian which they did not even dare dream of before.

After going through these nightmarish six months, they had since formed a dependence

on their male sect master that was so strong that they themselves had not realized it yet.

“My senior and junior masters and all the various senior and junior sisters,” Yun Che said in a gentle and sincere tone, “Three years ago, I entered Frozen Cloud Asgard as its first male disciple, breaking a thousand years of regulation. And now that I have become Asgard Master, I still feel that it is rather inappropriate and it will bring about a great deal of criticism for our sect. The previous Asgard Mistress transferred the

position to me because she didn't have any other choice, so I will only temporarily assume the position of Asgard Master. When Qingyue comes back, I will immediately transfer the position of Asgard Mistress back to her. But everyone, do not worry. In the end, I am still a disciple of Frozen Cloud, so I will definitely keep my promise to the previous Asgard Mistress... unless I die, I will definitely not allow anyone to bully or trod on our Frozen Cloud Asgard."

Gong Yuxian had passed down the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul



to him, and inside of it lay the important memories of all the previous Asgard Mistresses and a large portion of the hidden secrets regarding Frozen Cloud Asgard. According to the records within, the escape profound formation that Xia Qingyue had used was a random teleportation formation, so no one would be able to decipher where she was sent to. In fact, it was not even known what the greatest scope of this teleportation would be.”

He also knew that the reason Ye Qingsheng and his goons attacked Frozen Cloud Asgard... was astonishingly Xia Qingyue!

This was something that caused him to be extremely confused while putting him on high alert. Xia Qingyue had spent sixteen years in the Floating Cloud City, and she had hardly left her own room. Even Yun Che, who was her fiance, had only seen her a few times in those sixteen years. After that, she had basically remained at Frozen Cloud Asgard and very rarely went abroad... even during those rare occasions, she had never left Blue Wind Nation before.

So why would the Sun Moon

Divine Hall suddenly want to aim for Xia Qingyue?

Could it be that Ye Xinghan took a fancy to Xia Qingyue's beauty?

That could not be... because Ye Xinghan should have never even seen Xia Qingyue before!

“Asgard Master, what should we do next?” Murong Qianxue asked in a quiet voice as her icy eyes filled with deep sadness and worry. Even up till now, they

still did not understand why Frozen Cloud Asgard, which had never involved itself in worldly affairs, would be struck with such a terrible calamity.

All of those beautiful eyes turned towards Yun Che. In the face of this dire calamity, this young man of not more than twenty-two years of age had quietly become their support. After all, wherever you went, it was the law of nature, the strong ruled supreme, and it was the same everywhere else.

Yun Che gave a faint but heavy sigh and said, "Let us first interrogate this wretch who deserves to die!!"

Yun Che extended his hand, and a cold wind blew, causing the black-robed man to cry out as he was dragged from far away before heavily landing at his feet.

Ye Qingsheng's profound strength had already been crippled by Yun Che, and his meridians were also severed, so he could not even commit

suicide if he wanted to, much less resisting or running away. In this frozen snowscape, he, who had no profound energy to protect him, was so cold that he kept trembling and shivering as the extremely bitter cold sent countless icy needles piercing into his body with each breath. resulting in untold pain. He looked at Yun Che and his eyes contained no more pleading, it only contained terror... but he was not even able to utter a single sound from his mouth.

Looking at him, the faces of all the ladies of Frozen Cloud were filled with fury and resentment.

Yun Che strode forward a step, and not wanting to waste any words on him, he simply extended his hand and caused his Profound Handle to fly out and sink into his body as he instantly performed the Profound Handle Soul Search.

Ye Qingsheng's entire body trembled while both of his eyes quickly lost their focus and became blank pools.

“What is your name?” Yun Che asked blandly as he removed his palm.

“Ye... Qing... Sheng...” Ye Qingsheng’s voice quavered due to the cold.

Ye?

Yun Che’s brows faintly quivered... it was Sun Moon Divine Hall after all! Even though Sun Moon Divine Hall was not a power that was tied together by a family, all of the people who entered Sun Moon Divine Hall had to change their surname to “Ye.” He urgently asked, “Is the sect that you



belong to Sun Moon Divine Hall?”

“...Yes...” Ye Qingsheng replied robotically.

Shouts of surprise and alarm rang around Yun Che. The name “Sun Moon Divine Hall” caused the pretty faces of the girls of Frozen Cloud to go pale.

There were not many powers within the Profound Sky Continent which had the ability to dispatch Overlords. During

the past six months, the words “Sacred Ground” had occasionally appeared in their minds, but they immediately dismissed those words. Because in regards to Frozen Cloud Asgard and even the entire Blue Wind Nation, the Four Sacred Grounds were akin to divine palaces that were high above the heavens, so they would never, ever have any interaction with their Frozen Cloud Asgard... and there was even less reason for them to act in such a vicious manner towards them.

But the name that they had heard at this moment was

indeed a name that belonged to the mythical Four Great Sacred Grounds that they could only gaze at from the ground.

“Who sent you here?” Amidst the voices filled with shock, confusion, and fright, Yun Che looked directly at Ye Qingsheng as he continued his questioning.

“It was Young Master... Ye Xinghan...”

“And Ye Xinghan sent the lot of you to Frozen Cloud Asgard in

order to capture Xia Qingyue?” Yun Che asked with sunken brows.

“Yes... we also had to guarantee that Xia Qingyue... was not harmed at all in the process...”

“Why did he send you to capture her? What scheme does Ye Xinghan have regarding Xia Qingyue?” Yun Che’s voice grew even deeper and more severe.

Ye Qingsheng’s hollow eyes turned blank, and it was a long

time before he replied, "I do not know..."

No lies could be uttered while someone was under the influence of the Profound Handle Soul Search. So since his answer was that he did not know, it could be confirmed that it was so.

The question that caused the most questions in Yun Che's mind was not able to be answered, so he heavily sucked in a breath and abruptly asked, "And where did Ye Xinghan see

Xia Qingyue? Or was it that he found out about Xia Qingyue's existence from another source?"

"Young Master... has never seen Xia Qingyue before... Young Master had heard... the name of Xia Qingyue... from an elder belonging to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region..."

"An elder from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region?" Yun Che's brows knit together tightly as he replied, "Which elder?"

“I... do... not... know...”

Yun Che ran out of patience and planted one foot on Ye Qingsheng's chest as he pressed both palms against his head. He released his Profound Handle and swiftly retrieved all of his memories... in the span of a few short breaths, he released Ye Qingsheng's head while his expression had turned grave.

# Chapter 665 – Frozen Cloud's Way Out

---

Ye Qingsheng's memories revealed that it was indeed Ye Xinghan who had ordered them to kidnap Xia Qingyue. Ye Qingsheng's father, the Divine Hall Master, and Heavenly Monarch, Ye Meixie, didn't know about it at all. On top of that, Ye Xinghan greatly valued Xia Qingyue. At first he wanted to come to Frozen Cloud Asgard himself, but because the profound art bottleneck had loosened all of a sudden, he had no choice but to send Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi instead.



Why did Ye Xinghan capture Xia Qingyue...

From Ye Qingsheng's memories, it could be confirmed that Ye Xinghan indeed had never seen Xia Qingyue before! Half a year ago, the name "Xia Qingyue" wasn't even mentioned.

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's... elder?

Yun Che was silent for a good while, then a name suddenly flashed in his mind...

Ling Kun!!

“Jasmine...” Yun Che lowered his eyebrows and asked, “Back then, at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, when you told me Xia Qingyue possessed the ‘Heart of Snow Glazed Glass’ and the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body,’ you mentioned that the ‘Heart of Snow Glazed Glass’ shouldn’t have appeared in this plane, so no one could

identify it. But if there was a chance for someone to notice the ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’...”

“So you think the reason Ye Xinghan kidnapped Xia Qingyue is because of her ‘Nine Profound Exquisite Body’?” Jasmine asked indifferently.

“That’s right.” Yun Che nodded and said, “Ye Xinghan found out about the existence of Xia Qingyue from an elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, yet... Frozen Cloud Asgard is basically

isolated from the world throughout the year. The disciples rarely leave the asgard, and have no connection with the Four Great Sacred Grounds! But in the Four Great Sacred Grounds, there is indeed a person who had seen Xia Qingyue... and it was exactly someone from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

“It was at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament held in Heavenly Sword Villa five years ago... Ling Kun from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

“In the memories of this person named Ye Qingsheng, the memories related to this ‘Ling Kun’ surmount to more than anyone else in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. In Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, only those who stepped into the Sovereign Profound Realm could be qualified to become an elder. Ling Kun’s profound strength is only at sixth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, but he was already appointed as an official elder in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. The reason is because, even though his profound strength is slightly lower, he is wise and full of stratagems... or incredibly cunning and extremely shrewd. He acts as the

‘think tank’ in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and is extremely trusted and valued by Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian. Not only do the other elders of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region not look down upon him due him having an elder status with lower profound strength, they all deliberately make nice with him... Also, he is the person who stayed outside of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region for the longest, so he is very experienced and knowledgeable. Whenever there is some major event for which Mighty Heavenly Sword Region needs to send someone, most of the time it would be this Ling Kun!”

The information about Ling Kun in Ye Qingsheng's memories made Yun Che's heart run cold. He interacted with Ling Kun twice before... once was in Heavenly Sword Villa, and the other was in Divine Phoenix Empire. When he was in Heavenly Sword Villa, Ling Kun once spoke to him in front of everyone and invited him to join Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Back then, Yun Che's profound strength was lower and he had no background or no reputation, but Ling Kun did this type of action that shocked and confused everyone. Now that Yun Che thought of it, that

showed Ling Kun's incredibly sinister judgement.

At the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament in Divine Phoenix Empire, the person who attended from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was Spiritual Master Gu Cang, who was in an extremely high position, from Sun Moon Divine Hall was their Young Master Ye Xinghan, and Supreme Ocean Palace sent Ji Qianrou, whom both Feng Hengkong and Ye Xinghan feared to some degree. Only Mighty Heavenly Sword Region sent a "low-level elder" like Ling Kun... Thinking about



it now, that wasn't because Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was not interested in the Primordial Profound Ark, but it was because Ling Kun had enough ability.

With a contained temperament, sinister eyes, deep shrewdness, and extensive knowledge... it was definitely possible for him to know of the existence of the "Nine Profound Exquisite Body." Jasmine had said that the most distinctive characteristic of the "Nine Profound Exquisite Body" was that it ignored natural law... and when Xia Qingyue of the Earth Profound Realm was

fighting against Ling Yun, facing Ling Yun's Sword Spirit Doppelganger, she casted a Frozen Cloud Domain that could only be casted by one in the Emperor Profound Realm... Ling Kun, who was present, naturally witnessed it in its entirety!

If it was him who found out about Xia Qingyue's "Nine Profound Exquisite Body," then everything would be easy to explain.

Jasmine said lightly, "The Nine Profound Exquisite Body is a

superb training incubator. If it really was Ling Kun who discovered Xia Qingyue's Nine Profound Exquisite Body, why didn't he take it and enjoy it himself or give it to someone from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region instead of leaking it to the people of Sun Moon Divine Hall?"

"Very simple." Yun Che said in a low voice, "The Nine Profound Exquisite Body was difficult to find even once every ten thousand years. If he used it himself and was discovered, the upper echelon of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would

definitely be unsatisfied or might even be angered! Furthermore, if he gave it to the top, strong practitioners of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, it would only be something that a subordinate ought to do to honor the superior. At most he could receive some 'reward.' But if he gave it to Ye Xinghan, it would be entirely different!

“Ye Xinghan was cultivating a type of dual cultivation heretic art. Almost everyone who knew about the Four Great Sacred Grounds knew about this. Every year he would secretly kidnap a large number of women to be

training incubators. If he heard about the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body,' he would definitely be overjoyed and would pursue it at any cost! So Ling Kun himself didn't take action on Xia Qingyue and didn't notify Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Instead, he told Ye Xinghan... The reason Ye Xinghan only knew about it six months ago was probably because Ling Kun only told him about the existence of 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body,' but didn't tell Ye Xinghan who the person who owned the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body' was and instead proposed an even higher wager. Until half a year ago, when Ye Xinghan finally

finished gathering the wager, he found out about Xia Qingyue's name and her location from Ling Kun!"

While Yun Che was speaking, his eyebrows also locked even tighter because the more he thought in this direction, the more he felt that was possible.

"Ling Kun..." Yun Che said this name in a low voice and marked it as danger in his mind.

Other than that, Yun Che also

retrieved more information that surprised him from Ye Qingsheng's memories... The Phoenix God of Divine Phoenix Sect didn't actually die and appeared once again three years ago after the Primordial Profound Ark had disappeared. It released an overbearing pressure that covered the sky which shocked and frightened the people of the Four Sacred Grounds and punished Ye Xinghan.

What happened? Feng Xue'er said so herself that the Phoenix God had disappeared a long time ago. The Grand Elder of the

Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Feiyang, also colluded with Ye Xinghan because of the passing of the Phoenix God...

Could there still be more hidden secrets?

But... no matter what, even if the Phoenix God really was still alive, the Divine Phoenix Empire trampling on Blue Wind Nation... must still be paid back tenfold!

“Sun Moon Divine Hall... why



is it Sun Moon Divine Hall.” Murong Qianxue’s face was a little pale. She was angry, confused, and panicking uncontrollably... but that was Sun Moon Divine Hall, one of Profound Sky Continent’s Four Sacred Grounds, the highest existences in all of Profound Sky Continent. Not mentioning fighting against them, just hearing their name would bring about an incredibly heavy pressure. “We never crossed Sun Moon Divine Hall and didn’t even have any contact with them, why did they attack us!?”

“Sun Moon Divine Hall... how

could it be...” Chu Yueli’s eyes were still in a fog of confusion. Not only Frozen Cloud Asgard... this was a name that was enough to make almost all the forces in Profound Sky Continent feel desperate.

“The goal of Sun Moon Divine Hall is still not clear, but we will get to the bottom to this eventually.” Yun Che faced the disciples and said calmly, “Two Asgard Mistresses both passed away because of this calamity. You must hate Sun Moon Divine Hall to the bones now, and the people who were sent by Sun Moon Divine Hall were all killed

by me... They didn't achieve their goal and even suffered a loss. Sun Moon Divine Hall will also definitely not let it rest. Under these circumstances, if our Frozen Cloud Asgard wants to exist under the shadow of Sun Moon Divine Hall, there are only two ways."

"May Asgard Master be explicit." Listening to what Yun Che was saying, the expression in everyone's eyes became imposing in a serious manner.

"First way, evacuate from Snow

Region of Extreme Ice,” Yun Che said slowly. “Those twelve people all died here. With Ye Xinghan’s temper, he will definitely be furious. Not long after, more people from Sun Moon Divine Hall will come and put Frozen Cloud Asgard in greater danger. Therefore, this place is not suitable to stay in anymore.”

Leave the Snow Region of Extreme Ice...

Looking at the endless ice and snow within their vision and the

familiar Frost Flower Snow Pond, their eyes were all quivering, speechless for a long period of time.

Murong Qianxue sighed softly and said, “Asgard Master, we all understand what you said. If we continued staying here, an even more severe calamity will befall us any moment. Facing Sun Moon Divine Hall, we cannot fight against them at all with our strength. But... the thousand year history of Frozen Cloud Asgard was all here for thousands of years. Resources, memories, arts, legacies, backgrounds, and even the

bodies of our ancestors are all here. In addition, just based on the environment, there is probably no other place more suitable than here to cultivate the Frozen Cloud Arts and the Frozen End Divine Arts. If we all leave here, this place will definitely be completely destroyed by the raging Sun Moon Divine Hall... Even if we saved our own lives, our Frozen Cloud Asgard... would then only exist in name...”

“Asgard Master, then what is the second way that you mentioned?” Mu Lanyi asked with hope.

The Frozen Cloud disciple's reactions were similar to what Yun Che had predicted. This place was a freezing place that was isolated from the world. Even without the dignity and foundation of their sect, they were already used to everything here. They were already used to the endless snow and cold. Their resistance to the people from the outside world was almost an instinct, and they rejected fitting into the outside world even more from the bottom of their hearts and souls. He answered with a serious expression, "The second way is simple. That is to directly face

Sun Moon Divine Hall, use our own strength to guard this place... and one day, make Sun Moon Divine Hall pay for the debt of blood!”

Yun Che’s words once again caused their eyes to go blank and their mouths silent for a long time.

Because... that was Sun Moon Divine Hall.

In Blue Wind Nation, they were an lofty existence. Even if they



faced Heavenly Sword Villa, they wouldn't be frightened at all. But against Sun Moon Divine Hall... Even if their strength was ten times or even a hundred times stronger, it was a huge monster that was absolutely impossible for them to fight against.

Taking a survey of all the forces of the Profound Sky Continent, who would dare to oppose Sun Moon Divine Hall, who would dare to become enemies with them... and who would dare to say something like “make Sun Moon Divine Hall pay for the debt of blood.”

“But...” Feng Hanyue said timidly, and was immediately interrupted by Yun Che, “No ‘buts,’ the reason we’re still staying here is absolutely not waiting for death, and what I said just now was also absolutely not an idiotic fantasy!”

“The situation now is actually not that bad,” Yun Che stated seriously. “When the twelve people were attacking our Frozen Cloud Asgard, they were constantly and deliberately hiding their identities. They obviously didn’t want to be

exposed. After all, Sun Moon Divine Hall is a ‘Sacred Ground.’ If news of them attacking Frozen Cloud Asgard without any reason got out, it would definitely hurt their reputation. Also, this attack was ordered by the Young Hall Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, Ye Xinghan. The Hall Master of the Divine Hall, Heavenly Monarch Ye Meixie, didn’t know about it at all. Therefore, Ye Xinghan’s actions later on shouldn’t be too important, and he would even try very hard to cover it up.”

“With your current strength, even if it is only a few underlings

from Sun Moon Divine Hall, it would be hard for you to resist. But, if you believe my words...” The expression in Yun Che’s eyes became serious as he declared, “I have a way to make all of the senior sisters and junior sisters’ profound strength reach the Emperor Profound Realm in half a year!”

“Make the six junior masters and senior masters that are already Thrones... all become Overlords!”

Feng      Hanyue      and      Feng

Hanxue's crystal-like eyes all widened as large as they could, even their mouths were opened wide... All of the Frozen Cloud disciples were all shocked still.

Because what Yun Che said now was a thousand times more preposterous than to “make Sun Moon Divine Hall pay for the debt of blood”...

# Chapter 666 – Sudden Crisis

---

As the night deepened, the ladies of Frozen Cloud, who had gathered, finally dispersed and returned to their own ice rooms to recover their nerves which had been frazzled and frayed over the past six months. But even though they were exhausted beyond belief, they still would not be able to sleep that night... Yun Che's words resonated in their ears... In a few months time, those who were below the Emperor Profound Realm would become Thrones, and those who were

already Thrones would become Overlords. Even the leaders of the Four Great Sacred Grounds would think it was some kind of fairy tale and treat it as some nonsensical joke. However, they could not help but believe his words when they saw his unwavering gaze... even though Yun Che did not even explain what “method” he was going to use.

If he could really make it a reality, then even though Frozen Cloud Asgard only had two thousand disciples, they would still ascend to the highest echelons of power within the

entire Profound Sky Continent and become a sect that would only lose to Divine Phoenix Sect and the Four Great Sacred Grounds.

The Sound Transmission Jade had still not rang with an impending sound transmission, so Yun Che was rather surprised... Once communication had been lost with the main Divine Phoenix Army, the other Divine Phoenix armies should have rushed over to investigate the situation at Blue Wind Imperial City... Could it be that the nearest Divine Phoenix Army was extremely far



away, so perhaps they could not reach Blue Wind Imperial City within a day?

Without giving it any further thought, Yun Che let his gaze fall on Ye Qingsheng, who had already fainted from the cold and only barely held onto life itself. He gave a cold snort and flipped his hand as a Golden Crow flame that was as big as his fist flared to life... At his full power, Ye Qingsheng would not be able to withstand the Golden Crow flames for more than five breaths, but the Ye Qingsheng right now would be reduced to ashes in an instant by the

Golden Crow flames.

“Wait!” Just as Yun Che was about to release those Golden Crow flames, he was interrupted by Jasmine’s shout. Yun Che hurriedly drew back his palm and asked, “What is it? Could it be that this person is still of some use?”

“While this person has already exceeded his usefulness, I must warn you of something before you dispose of him....” Jasmine said unhurriedly, “There was a soul imprint placed on these two

people, so once they die, all of the memories they had right before death would be transmitted to the person who laid the soul imprint on them. Since the two of them are the lapdogs of Ye Xinghan, all the memories before their death will be transferred to him!”

“...” Yun Che just stood there with a blank expression on his face. After that, his expression swiftly changed... Ye Qingsheng was not dead, but Ye Ziyi had already been burned to cinders by him. So now that it had reached this stage... Ye Xinghan should already be cognizant of

everything that had happened... not only did Ye Xinghan know that Yun Che still lived, he also would have a rough gauge of his current strength.

Yun Che smacked his hand against his forehead and said in an exasperated tone, "You... Why didn't you tell me this beforehand?!"

"Hmph!" Jasmine sniffed disdainfully, "You were being reckless yet you want to blame me? You instantly killed that purple-clothed old man called Ye

Ziyi, but that would at most alert Ye Xinghan to the fact that you still lived. But if you were to continue your reckless and foolish ways and kill Ye Qingsheng as you had just intended... then remember this, you just used the Profound Handle Soul Search on him just now, and if Ye Xinghan were to discover your possession of a Profound Handle, he would be able to persecute you as a demon under the guise of righteousness! At that time, the only option left would be to tamely flee back to the Illusory Demon Realm!”

Jasmine words caused shock to reverberate in Yun Che's heart... Illusory Demon Realm was a place that was demonized by the Profound Sky Continent. If Ye Xinghan were to find out about his Profound Handle, this demonization would not be confined to himself alone... it would also include everything connected to him, encompassing the Blue Wind Imperial Family and Frozen Cloud Asgard where he was presently residing. Ye Xinghan would use the excuse that he was "exterminating a demon" and officially throw the might of Sun Moon Divine Hall in order to destroy him!

“Before killing him, use your Profound Handle to erase the soul imprint placed on him!” Jasmine said in a cold voice.

Yun Che extended his left hand and his Profound Handle shot out, instantly burying itself into Ye Qingsheng’s body and directly wiping out all of the imprints within his soul... Not only did he erase the soul imprint, he even wiped his memories clean. After that, he flipped his palm open as he released a cluster of Golden Crow flames and instantly reduced him to nothingness.

As he withdrew his Profound Handle, Yun Che's expression grew grave... he had just told all the ladies of Frozen Cloud that their current circumstances were not too dire, that Sun Moon Divine Hall should not be paying them a visit anytime soon, but... if Ye Xinghan knew that he still lived, that changed things entirely!

Three years ago, he had destroyed the evil scheme that Ye Xinghan had plotted against Feng Xue'er on the Primordial Profound Ark, and he had also



killed two of his women... Yue Ji and Mei Ji, and now, he had killed two of his protectorates and ten of his lapdogs...

As the Young Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, there were not many people who dared to speak half a word against him. On the other hand, Yun Che had done far more than merely that! Ye Xinghan must hate him to the bone, and now that he knew that reports of his demise were greatly exaggerated, he would definitely spare no effort in eliminating him... even to the point where he may lose his sense of rationality.

“It looks like there’s gonna be a lot of trouble headed right your way.” Jasmine said in a bland voice, “If you don’t want all the women here to be wiped out, I would advise you to immediately load them up into the Primordial Profound Ark and flee as far away as you possibly can.”

“Even though they know they are up against Sun Moon Divine Hall, they clearly do not want to flee... because they know that once they flee, this place will be utterly demolished, and that

would mean that the root and the thousand year foundation of Frozen Cloud Asgard would be buried as well.” Yun Che said as he sighed, “Moreover, if Ye Xinghan cannot find me here, the next place he would think of would definitely be Blue Wind Imperial City... then, at that time, the city that my princess wife desperately fought to preserve will be ruined by Sun Moon Divine Hall instead of the Divine Phoenix Army....”

Not only did Ye Xinghan know that he was alive, he also knew his current level of strength. So when he finally came calling, the

people that he would bring or send would definitely be at the Sovereign Profound Realm... and there might even be more than one of them! If they wanted to raze Blue Wind Imperial City, it would only be a matter of lifting a finger.

Running away... had never ever solved any problems.

“Hmph, what else do you expect? Given your current strength, you are not qualified to contend against Sun Moon Divine Hall by yourself! Unless

you go back to the Illusory Demon Realm and bring your Little Demon Empress back. Because with the current strength of the Little Demon Empress, we do not even need to mention Sun Moon Divine Hall. Even if the Four Great Sacred Grounds joined hands together, they still will not be able to defeat her, and the most that they can hope for is to eke out a draw.”

“Definitely not!” Yun Che shook his head as he replied without hesitation, “Without even mentioning her status and the fact that the threat of Duke

Ming still hangs over everyone's head, she also hates the Four Great Sacred Grounds to the bone. In addition, given her temperament, if she were to really come here, she would definitely wreak such havoc that even the heavens would be overturned! Even I am unable to control her in such situations."

"Furthermore, her strength was bought at the cost of her own life! If she were to really use that degree of her strength, then the three years of life that she originally had left to her would be reduced even further," Yun Che said as his eyebrows knit

together. Of course, the more important point was that... if he were to flee back to Illusory Demon Realm to hide behind the Little Demon Empress right after he had just returned to the Profound Sky Continent... as a real man, he simply could not bring himself to do such a thing!

Jasmine gave an even more disdainful sniff, “So what now? Are you prepared to personally witness their deaths? Or are you prepared to die with them?!”

“...I still have at least twelve

hours to think of a plan,” Yun Che said as he sank into deep thought.

“Twelve hours?”

“Within Ye Qingsheng’s memories, the fastest profound ark Sun Moon Divine Hall possesses will only be able to reach this location in twelve hours!” Yun Che looked at the colour of the sky. “Even if Ye Xinghan exploded into action and scrambled to activate that profound ark, it will still be twelve hours before he arrived.



If I am still not able to come up with a plan at that time, I will have to force everyone into the Primordial Profound Ark and leave this place.”

“Speaking of which, you just said you would help them all raise their profound strength... are you going to use the Overlord Pellets to achieve that?” Jasmine asked as she changed subjects. No one else in this world had a better measure of what Yun Che was made of than Jasmine herself.

“Yes.” Yun Che said as he nodded his head, “It is the only method that will allow them to swiftly raise their profound strength.”

“The potency of the Overlord Pellet is not something that they can handle. If they rashly consume it, they will only be looking for death. Are you prepared to use the power of the Great Way of the Buddha to help them refine it one by one?”

“Of course, that is the only method available to me,” Yun

Che replied in a conspicuously helpless tone... Two thousand Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples, that was indeed a rather huge project. Because the Overlord Pellet was an extremely valuable treasure even within the highest levels of power of the Illusory Demon Realm, its medicinal strength would definitely not be small. And even given Yun Che's current profound strength and the strength of his fourth stage Great Way of the Buddha, helping all of them refine this pellet within their bodies would definitely not be easy.

But to allow Frozen Cloud

Asgard to rapidly ascend in power, to the point where they could at least preserve themselves in the face of Sun Moon Divine Hall's power, this was the only method he could think of.

“Also, you only have thirty-seven Overlord Pellets on your person right now, but there are two thousand Frozen Cloud disciples here. So are you going to go back to the Illusory Demon Realm to gather more ingredients?”

“There is no need.” Yun Che said with confidence, “The ingredients required to refine the Overlord Pellet are Purgatory Stones, Flaming Devil Vines, Rakshasa Heart-destroying Fruit, and other ingredients which not only contain a high level of power, but are also extremely hard to control. Even the best apothecaries of this continent would find it extremely hard to refine even a single one of these ingredients, and to refine several tens of these at one time would be as hard as scaling the heavens. That was the reason why the Illusory Demon Royal Family was only able to at most produce two Overlord Pellets

every century. Even though these ingredients are extremely high-grade, because of their volatility, they did not cost a lot. So I will be able to purchase more than enough of them from the Black Moon Merchant Guild... Yun Che's voice deepened faintly as he continued, "Anyways, I will have to pay the Divine Phoenix Empire a visit in the near future!"

"Two thousand Overlord Pellets and you are willing to use the Great Way of the Buddha to refine its energy for them one by one. You truly have your heart

set on this Frozen Cloud Asgard, don't you," Jasmine said as she gave a dull laugh.

"After all, I owe a favor to Frozen Cloud Asgard... Moreover, I accepted the Asgard Master position from Gong Yuxian right before she passed, so I should act more like a sect leader in any case," Yun Che said earnestly.

"Tch...." Jasmine gave cold snort, "It's clearly because of your guilt towards Chu Yuechan! The one thing in this world that

can cause a great lecher like you to behave earnestly... is only that woman!”

“...” Jasmine’s words pierced directly into Yun Che’s soul causing his breathing to roughen.

Another three years has gone by... Little Fairy, just where have you gone....

I requested the Black Moon Merchant Guild to search for Chu Yuechan back then... now



that three years have passed, I wonder if they have gotten any results.

All of Yun Che's worries were justified.

The moment Ye Ziyi died, a reaction occurred in Ye Xinghan's mind... at the same time, the memories he had of the events that occurred thirty breaths before his death were also transmitted into his mind!

“Yun... Che....” Ye Xinghan

slowly stood up and raised both his hands, and his wide-spread fingers distorted while his expression had become dark and terrible.

The change in his aura caused the many protectorates that he had by his side to freeze up in shock... they had followed Ye Xinghan for so many years, yet they had never ever felt such a dreadful anger and killing intent emanating from his body before.

“My father went to Supreme Ocean Palace... what profound

ark did he use?” Ye Xinghan asked slowly, his voice deepening to the point where it sounded like the growls of a demon.

Everyone did not know why Ye Xinghan asked such a question, but his head servant replied in a trembling voice, “He took... the Rainbow Sun Ark.”

“So that is to say that the Sun Moon Sacred Ark is still within the hall!” Ye Xinghan’s eyes abruptly focused as his old hatred surged back into life, and

a fierce killing intent that he had never felt before in his entire life swelled to such an extent that it threatened to rupture his body. He knew that he had already lost all sense of rationality, but he did not allow himself to calm down. He turned around and said in an incomparably deep voice, “Immediately inform the Ninth Elder, the Eleventh Elder, the Fifteenth Elder, and the Seventeenth Elder to come and see me!”

“Also, I will give you an hour to quickly prepare the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, I want to... personally pay a visit to this

lowly Blue Wind territory!”

# Chapter 667 – Frozen Cloud Celestial Shadow

---

Even though Yun Che and Ye Xinghan had only met once, Ye Xinghan's behavior at the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament and the Primordial Profound Ark had clearly revealed his nature to Yun Che. Once Ye Xinghan knew that he still lived, there was a great possibility that he would rush over as fast as he possibly could to kill him... and he would even come himself!

Right after he had solved the crises that Blue Wind Imperial

City and Frozen Cloud Asgard were facing, an even greater one popped up. From the sky, he surveyed Frozen Cloud Asgard which had more or less calmed down and heaved a long sigh of relief before summoning the Primordial Profound Ark and returning to Blue Wind Imperial Capital.

However, what he did not notice was that in the sky far above him a pair of beautiful, crystalline eyes had been observing him silently. It was only until he left that those beautiful eyes finally withdrew their gaze as faint emotions

bloomed on those features that were wrapped in cold mist; she was dressed all in white, as wispy as a fairy, and the ice spirits that floated all around her were even clearer and purer than the most perfect crystals in existence.

“Master, the conclusion of Frozen Cloud Asgard was completely different from what was expected,” the blue-clothed girl who stood by her side said. Her voice was laced with joy because she knew that even though the white-clad woman in front of her had sworn a vow of neutrality, she was still not able



to completely let go. Because if that was the case, she would not have taken a risk today and venture here once more. “However, the sect master of Frozen Cloud Asgard has now actually become a man... even though he was the one who resolved the crisis and there was no other alternative, I still feel that it’s a bit... weird.”

“If he can truly help Frozen Cloud Asgard safely live through this crisis, whether he is a man or a woman is of no concern.” The white-clothed lady replied in a gentle tone, “Men are also able to cultivate the Frozen

Cloud Art and the Frozen End Divine Art. The regulation that only allowed women to be accepted as disciples within Frozen Cloud Asgard was merely meant to protect it.”

“I just feel that it’s weird. Besides Senior Brother Han Yi, all of those men in our Snow Song Realm are so hateful.” The blue-clothed girl’s tender and pink fragrant lips pouted, but after that, she asked curiously, “Master, just now you kept looking at that person called Yun Che, was his body strange in any way?”

“...” The white-robed lady faintly looked to her side and replied, “He has the Frozen End Divine Art in his body, and he has already unlocked its sixth stage, but he can also ignite the Golden Crow flames. His body houses both fire and ice, and it is the extremely cold Frozen End energy and the extremely violent Golden Crow flames that are mixing together. However, the profound energy in his body is incomparably stable, and no disorder can be detected in his body... it is far too peculiar.”

The brows of the white-robed lady wrinkled slightly... as if she could not understand something. And at her level, there were not many things left that could cause her any confusion at all.

“Ah? So the flames he used to burn that purple-clothed man to ashes was truly the Golden Crow divine flames? I had thought I was mistaken.” The blue-clothed girl said in astonishment, “So that is to say that this continent actually contains one of the legacies left behind by the Golden Crow? Ooh... if the Flame God Realm’s Golden Crow

Sect finds out about it, they will definitely send people to investigate immediately.”

“...” The white-robed lady remained silent.

“Master, is anything the matter? Why have you suddenly become so serious?” the blue-robed girl asked as she looked at her.

“...” The white-robed lady faintly closed her eyes and looked as if she was focusing her

spirit to the greatest degree.  
“Have you sensed that... there is someone peering in at us from some other location?”

“Ah?” The mouth of the blue-robed girl widened but she immediately shook her head.  
“How can that be... how can any person on this plane discover our presence? I think Master must have been mistaken.”

“...” After a short while, the white-clothed lady’s eyes slowly opened and she softly replied,  
“Perhaps...”

At this time, the ice spirits around her suddenly fluttered chaotically and the celestial body underneath those icy mists shook violently as a mouthful of dark red blood suddenly spurted from her lips, dyeing her cloud-white robes in patches of red.

“Master!!” The blue-robed girl cried out in alarm as she hurriedly supported the body of the white-clothed lady while exclaiming in fright, “Why... why is it like this... didn’t you just have a relapse half a month ago... why did it happen again so

quickly...”

With a light wave of a cloud-white sleeve, ice flowers appeared in the air and all of the bloodstains instantly faded away into nothingness, but the complexion of the person wrapped by the icy mists had turned even more white, and even the trajectory of those dancing ice spirits had become extremely disorderly. The white-robed woman moderated her aura, but her voice still remained as indifferent as mist, “My injuries have fatally wounded me, and there is no reprieve for this situation. To be



able to linger on for the past thousand years is already the kindness of fate. I have no complaints.”

Her words signified that she had already began to feel her life coming to an end. The blue-robed girl’s eyes started gushing with tears. “No... Master cannot just yield to fate like this... the wounds master sustained a millennium ago were so severe. but Lord Realm King was still be able to deal with it... this time... Lord Realm King will definitely also have a way... or perhaps... I... I can go and plead with the Flame God Realm...”

“You are not allowed to speak foolishly!” the white-robed lady rebuked her in a soft voice. From the moment she vomited blood until now, in the span of slightly over ten breaths, her profound energy aura had already weakened by more than half. Eyeing the boundless icy world below her, she gave a light sigh and said, “Let us depart, the aura of this place is muddy, and it will merely accelerate and exacerbate my condition...”

“I had originally thought that I could part ways with it, but in

the end... it is still like a child to me... and perhaps I will be unable to stop myself from coming here once again in the near future.”

She held onto the blue-robed girl's arm and slowly floated upwards as they entered a profound formation which had silently appeared above them.

After the profound formation had disappeared, the figure of a girl with long, blood-red hair that fell to her waist and eyes which exuded a bewitching light

slowly appeared where they had been standing.

“Snow Song Realm?” The girl gave an extremely low and cold snort, “Hmph! No wonder I had always felt that the Frozen End Divine Art felt somewhat familiar... Looks like it was the ‘Ice Phoenix God Investiture Canon’ that does not contain the soul of the Ice Phoenix!”

“This is interesting indeed,” she said as she gave a low laugh, and following that, her body faded away and completely

disappeared from that place.

The moment he appeared in the skies over Blue Wind Imperial City, the strange energy fluctuations caused Yun Che's brows to furrow greatly as his gaze immediately swept towards the south... In the location where he had used the Yellow Springs Ashes to destroy the land, there was now astonishingly traces of an even greater destruction that took place. A deep crater that stretched several kilometers now existed in the ground that had already been levelled flat! And even though it seemed that

a long period of time had passed since that cataclysmic event, there were still traces of an extremely powerful profound energy aura lingering within that crater.

That seemed... to be the aura exuded by someone in the Sovereign Profound Realm!

“Lord Prince Consort! You have returned!” On the wall, Feng Yunlie, who stood at the forefront despite his wounds, let out a joyous and emotional cry as he spotted Yun Che. The

surrounding Blue Wind troops raised their heads as well, and strong emotions surged in their eyes... it was as if they were looking upon a deity.

Yun Che descended from the skies and asked, "General Feng, what exactly happened here? What events transpired while I was away?"

Feng Yunlie hurriedly replied, "About an hour after Lord Prince Consort had departed, there was yet another troop of Divine Phoenix soldiers which rapidly

approached from the west, and there were also a large number of Fire War Horses and flying profound beasts with them as well...”

“What?” Yun Che’s brows sunk. “Why didn’t you send a sound transmission to me?!”

“At that time, her majesty tried sending a sound transmission many times to Lord Prince Consort, but every time she tried, it ended in failure,” Feng Yunlie replied. “At that time, Lord Under Heaven guessed that



Lord Prince Consort may be in a location which contained an isolation barrier, so you would be unable to receive any sound transmissions...”

Sound transmission failure... isolation barrier? Yun Che was completely dumbfounded but then he remembered that he and the ladies of Frozen Cloud had been in the Frozen Cloud Secret Grounds which held the bodies of all the past Asgard Mistress of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Could it be...

“But Consort Yun does not need to be worried.” Feng Yunlie said in an excited voice, “When those Divine Phoenix soldiers were about to attack, an incomparably powerful... hero that seemed to be as strong as Lord Prince Consort himself appeared, and that hero was actually also...”

Bang!!

Following the sound of something being violently smashed aside, Yun Che heard a rough and heavy voice that he was all too familiar with. Not

only that, but that voice also clearly contained the sound of sobbing as it rang out, “Bro... Brother-in-law... Brother-in-law!!”

This was Yuanba’s voice. and in this world, only Yuanba would call him “Brother-in-law.” Yun Che’s heart abruptly swelled in his chest and he swivelled around to look at the figure which was barrelling towards him... and before he could even begin to become emotional, he was instead given a huge shock.

Because the originally huge Xia Yuanba... had actually grown even larger with the passage of three years, and he had grown so huge that Yun Che's eyes nearly popped out of his head in shock.

Boom!!

As Yun Che was still in a state of shock, he unconsciously side-stepped that rush and Xia Yuanba immediately flew into the air, and with a huge crash, he blew the corner of a wall into fragments. Xia Yuanba turned

around and immediately began to bawl, “Brother-in-law! Looks like you really didn’t die... that’s just great... Senior Sister Xueruo said you had returned... I... I... I thought I would really never be able to see you again...”

“I am so hardy, so how would I die so easily,” Yun Che smiled as he looked at the huge Xia Yuanba. With that, he went over and patted his arm... When his hand came into contact with that arm, he realized that the muscles that he touched were so hard that it was practically like steel. “Yuanba, I haven’t seen you for three years and you

have... grown once more. Alright, stop crying already. In the future, unless you see the body, don't believe that I have died."

"I... I... Mn!" Xia Yuanba vigorously wiped his eyes and energetically nodded his head as the corners of his mouth curved upwards and grinned with all of his might. "Right... I shouldn't be crying! Brother-in-law is clearly doing great and nothing happened to him, so I should be laughing instead. Ah, I should have known this would happen in the end. Brother-in-law is the luckiest man in the world... so

how would he die so easily.”

Cang Yue, Number One Under Heaven, Xiao Yun, and Number Seven Under Heaven had already come out. They looked at how Xia Yuanba, who had terrifying strength, exuded an overwhelming pressure, and had obliterated the Divine Phoenix Army in one punch, cried like a child in front of Yun Che and how just one word from Yun Che caused him to cry and smile at the same time. The discrepancy was simply too great, and it caused Xiao Yun’s group to be completely stunned.

Cang Yue looked at their dazed expressions, and she gently laughed, “My husband and Yuanba grew up together. They are the most important kinsman in each other’s lives. Their relationship is so good that it is admirable... and no matter how strong they become and how exalted their positions are, this is one thing that will never change.”

What was shocked Yun Che even more than the change in Xia Yuanba’s appearance was the change in his aura. The



profound energy aura that was swirling around Xia Yuanba's body was so thick that even Yun Che could scarcely believe it. He stared at Xia Yuanba and asked, "Yuanba, right now what level... is your profound strength at?"

"This..." Xia Yuanba smiled in a rather bashful manner, "If I say it, Brother-in-law might not even believe me, but right now, I seem to have already reached... the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm." Right after he said this, he hurriedly added words for emphasis, "It's true, I am definitely not lying to Brother-in-law!"

“He is really not tricking you.” Jasmine said immediately after, “His current profound strength is indeed at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!”

In Illusory Demon Realm’s Demon Imperial City, Yun Che had seen many Monarchs, so he was extremely clear on what the words “Sovereign Profound Realm” truly meant. He knew that even though the difference in strength between each level of the Tyrant Profound Realm was huge, the difference between each level of the Sovereign

Profound Realm was also like heaven and earth. The Overlord Pellet, which would allow someone to break through the bottleneck of the Emperor Profound Realm and allow that person to become an Overlord, was already one of the most valuable treasures in Demon Imperial City. Breaking through the bottleneck of the Tyrant Profound Realm to enter the Sovereign Profound Realm was something that, to common folk, was as hard as scaling the heavens...

And Xia Yuanba had actually, in the short span of three years,

jumped from the mid-stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm... to the mid-stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

The speed of this growth could not even be described with ten thousand “unimaginables,” and even if someone like the leader of a Sacred Ground were to find out, he would still be so jealous that he would vomit eight liters of blood.

Looking at Yun Che’s stupidly dazed expression, Xia Yuanba weakly said, “I never thought

that my profound strength would rise so fast. Master said it is because of my Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins... and I also slowly came to realize that my Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins were actually so awesome.”

“...” The corner of Yun Che's mouth twisted and he used his thoughts to ask, “Jasmine, you said before that the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins were the profound veins of the Ancient Era's War God, right...”

Jasmine, “??”

“And you also said that the Evil God and the Rage God were transcendent existences even among the gods that existed during the Ancient Era... but, I have the profound veins of the Evil God, the divine art of the Rage God, and I even have the blood and marrow of the Dragon God, the bloodlines of the Phoenix, and the Golden Crow... and I even endured the extremely cruel spatial storms for all of those years while I absorbed a large amount of energy from the Sea of Death... so I always thought that my

growth rate was already heaven-defying!!”

“Yet now, I realize that, in front of Yuanba’s Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins, the Evil God and Rage God and everything else... seem to be as weak as trash!!” Yun Che snarled as he gnashed his teeth. Xia Yuanba’s frightening and peerless rate of growth... could not help but make even him jealous.

# Chapter 668 – The Approaching Sun Moon Divine Hall

---

“Hmph, you really are naive!” Jasmine scoffed, “The most distinctive characteristic of the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins is its growth. But the distinctive feature of the power of the Evil God and the Rage God is Berserk and Sacred Body! Even though it’s only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm now, but under the berserk profound energy, it can contend with an early stage monarch! Under the power of Rage God, your body will be so tough, it



could also be compared to a Monarch's! As you are now, it is indeed impossible for you to match up against Xia Yuanba, but if you are in the same realm as him, it would be impossible for even ten of him to match you!"

"But..." Jasmine's voice lowered, "Even so, the degree of his growth was so great that it is indeed quite unusual. I have said before, once the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins awakens, the profound energy will immediately increase to the Emperor Profound or even the Tyrant Profound Realm, but this

is at the status of the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins being fully awakened. Three years ago, his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins was only at the early stage of awakening, but he has already managed to become an Overlord. Now, his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins still haven't fully awakened, but he is already a Monarch... At this plane, with such short amount of time, is impossible to reach this amount of growth through simple cultivation. The only possibility is that it came from the strength that had already been sleeping within the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins! But, in normal Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, it is

impossible to have innate strength this strong to be sleeping within, much less at this lower level plane... Then, there is only one possibility...”

“What do you mean?” Yun Che continued to ask.

“That is... his birth father or birth mother is an extremely strong person, so in the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins, besides the power of War God, it also carries a powerful innate gift and strength from the birth father or birth mother.

Or else, it is impossible for him to grow at such speed with the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins still not completely awake," Jasmine said with complete certainty.

"But, Yuanba's father was a merchant his whole life, almost not cultivating any profound strength at all, and Yuanba's mother... passed away when he was very young," said Yun Che as he locked his eyebrows.

"Xia Yuanba and Xia Qingyue, one of them has an extremely

strong Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, and the other has the 'Nine Profound Exquisite Body' and the 'Heart of Snow Glazed Glass.' If their parents are just normal people... that is simply the biggest joke!" Jasmine scoffed, "I have actually seen their father. That person named Xia Hongyi is indeed a normal person. But for their birth mother, not only is it impossible for her to have been a normal person... she must be so strong and in such a realm that you cannot even comprehend as you are now!"

Yun Che, "..."

Nightfall, the Moon Embracing Palace was brightly lit.

Blue Wind Imperial City was very quiet, and the dark clouds covered the light from the moon which made the entire capital so dark that it could almost suffocate people. Yun Che, Cang Yue, Xia Yuanba, and the others were talking to each other about the encounters during these three years. Reuniting after being separated for so long should have been full of joy, but with their homeland being stomped over, becoming a scene

of devastation wherever it meets the eye and with half of their homeland being taken over by the Divine Phoenix Empire, the atmosphere throughout was somewhat depressing.

“Yue’er, you should rest soon. Don’t worry. With me here, our imperial city will definitely be alright,” worried Yun Che with dear concern as held Cang Yue’s small hands.

But Cang Yue smiled, shook her head, and said, “Husband, after you left to Frozen Cloud Asgard,

I sent a sound transmission to Grandfather and Lingxi and told them you are back... Lingxi responded with a sound transmission with a heavy tearful tone... They must be almost wearing out their eyes waiting in Floating Cloud City. Even though it is midnight now, they must still be awake. You should go there soon and reunite with them. Here in the capital, we have Yuanba, so there is nothing to be worried about.”

Yun Che unconsciously turned his head to look in the east and sighed softly, but then shook his head slightly. “ Frozen Cloud



Asgard is in imminent danger now, and there is a possibility that it will affect here as well. I should finish dealing with the situation with Frozen Cloud Asgard before returning to Floating Cloud City in case they start worrying again right after we reunite.”

“What happened with Frozen Cloud Asgard? How is the situation now?” Cang Yue asked worriedly.

Yun Che was silent for a bit, and then, he briefly summarized

Frozen Cloud Asgard's  
encounters for the past six  
months and its current  
situation.

“What? Sun Moon Divine Hall!?” Xia Yuanba roared deeply and stood up all of a sudden in response. “Sun Moon Divine Hall again! Why did they attack my Big Sister... that Ye Xinghan...” The murderous intent in Xia Yuanba’s whole body boiled. “He almost killed brother-in-law three years ago, and now he actually attacked my big sister ...”

Yun Che said calmly, “Ye Xinghan has an arrogant, conceited, sinister, and even somewhat extreme personality, but at the same time, he is definitely not a foolish person. After he finds out that I am still alive, have ruined his plan once again, and even killed his people, the most likely thing he will do is to put me to death in the shortest amount of time, allowing me no chance to escape or run away. There is even a possibility... that he will come himself this time.”

“Just how I like it!!” Xia Yuanba held both his fists tight. “Watch

me smash his brain into mush with a single punch!”

Yun Che shook his head. “Yuanba, don’t be impulsive. My current level of strength has already been exposed to Ye Xinghan. If he wants to completely put me to death, the people that he brings will absolutely not be someone we can handle with just the two of us... In addition, you are representing Absolute Monarch Sanctuary now. If you show up, it could develop into a conflict between Sun Moon Divine Hall and Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. It will gain the

attention of both sides and even all of the Sacred Grounds' attention. To Frozen Cloud Asgard, not only is this not beneficial at all, it will, on the contrary, be an extremely horrible disaster."

"Ah? Why?" Xia Yuanba asked in confusion, "I can protect Frozen Cloud Asgard as the representative of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Then, there shouldn't be anyone who will dare to bully Frozen Cloud Asgard, right? How is it a disaster?"

Yun Che shook his head, lowered his eyebrows, and explained, "The reason the Sun Moon Divine Hall attacked Frozen Cloud Asgard was because of one of Qingyue's secrets, and at this moment, only Ye Xinghan and one person from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region knows about this secret. If this matter alerts the Four Great Sacred Grounds, then there will be a possibility for this secret to be known by more and more people... By then, Ye Xinghan wouldn't be the only one with his eyes on Qingyue. Instead, it will be all of Sacred Grounds and even more powerful forces. Frozen Cloud Asgard would also be involved

completely in this flood.”

Yun Che’s words had already shocked Xia Yuanba’s heart, and his brain quickly cooled down. He didn’t ask Yun Che what his Big Sister’s “secret” was, because he already realized. This “secret,” the less people who know about it, the better, including himself. If he really protected Frozen Cloud Asgard... then the situation would indeed escalate and include more and more parties — He himself clearly knew that he was no longer a normal disciple of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.

“Then what should we do now... Where is Big Sister now? Is she in danger?” Xia Yuanba asked anxiously.

The profound escape formation at Frozen Cloud Asgard is a random dimensional formation. No one knows where she was teleported to. We were not able to contact her even with the One Hundred Thousand Mile Sound Transmission Talisman, so she have been transported to somewhere very far away. But...” Yun Che smiled lightly and comforted, “Yuanba, you



don't have to be too worried. Six months ago, Qingyue was already half step into the Tyrant Profound Realm. Even in the whole continent, there are not a lot of people who could bully her. In addition, since she is that smart, you can rest assured that nothing will happen. Maybe she will come back after she finds out Frozen Cloud Asgard is safe and sound."

Even though Yun Che was also concerned with where exactly Xia Qingyue went, he wasn't too worried about her safeness in his unconscious mind. Her strength, gifts, and intelligence

were just an extremely small portion of the reason why he wasn't too concerned, but the main reason was that, besides her "Nine Profound Exquisite Body," she also possessed the "Heart of Snow Glazed Glass" which, Jasmine had mentioned, shouldn't have existed in this plane, and Jasmine had said that the people who possess the "Heart of Snow Glazed Glass" would be favored by the heavens... Even though he didn't really understand the concept of being "favored by the heavens," at the very least, she wouldn't encounter bad luck, right?

“Mm... yeah!” Big Sister is that strong, she will definitely be safe.” Xia Yuanba strongly nodded his head, and then, he thought of something and took out a golden, strangely-shaped Sound Transmission Jade. He didn’t use a Sound Transmission Talisman; instead, he input his profound energy within, and the Sound Transmission Jade started flashing in a golden light. Xia Yuanba spoke into the Sound Transmission Jade and said, “Master, disciple is now in Blue Wind Imperial City. Can Master help investigate and see if there are any special movements from Sun Moon Divine Hall... Especially the movement of high level sacred arks.”

Number One Under Heaven and Number Seven Under Heaven listened quietly to their entire conversation and didn't interrupt at all. Even though they were not from Profound Sky Continent, they knew the name Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and Sun Moon Divine Hall better than most people of the Profound Sky Continent. Because those were the villains who once invaded their Illusory Demon Realm and were one of the culprits that caused Demon Emperor's death which put the Illusory Demon Realm into a hundred years of chaos.

Originally, the reason they followed Yun Che to Profound Sky Continent was to accompany Xiao Yun to reunite with his relatives, but they didn't imagine that they would directly and indirectly come into contact with the two terrifying existences of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and Sun Moon Divine Hall in this nation which only had Emperor Profound as their highest realm.

The expression in Number One Under Heaven's eyes was really complicated. He came to

Profound Sky Continent to protect Number Seven Under Heaven, and he thought that he was too cautious and worried too much... But now, it was only the first day, and his mind was already unable to settle down.

Before Xia Yuanba could put away his Sound Transmission Jade, it suddenly shined again. He immediately picked it up and the soul voice of Spiritual Master Gu Cang was immediately sent into his mind, causing his expression to subsequently change.

“What did your Master say?” immediately asked as Yun Che’s eyebrows moved. The reason Xia Yuanba’s master would give him a response so quickly was obviously because he had noticed something strange from Sun Moon Divine Hall already.

Xia Yuanba lifted his head and said in a deep voice, “Master said, the Sun Moon Sacred Ark had already flown out from Sun Moon Divine Hall four hours ago. It was moving extremely quickly, and the direction it was flying in, was where Blue Wind Nation is!”

“Sun Moon Sacred Ark!?” Yun Che’s eyebrows locked. According to Ye Qingsheng’s memory, the Sun Moon Sacred Ark is the best profound ark of Sun Moon Divine Hall. Even though it could not be compared with the Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark that Xia Yuanba used this time, the speed of it definitely surpassed common folk’s knowledge, and it also has very strong offensive capabilities.

“I heard Master mentioned that the Sun Moon Sacred Ark of Sun Moon Divine Hall can only be



controlled by the Heavenly Monarch, Ye Meixie, and his son, Ye Xinghan. And Master said that Ye Meixie was still currently in Supreme Ocean Palace... that means Ye Xinghan must be in the Sun Moon Sacred Ark!" angrily exclaimed Xia Yuanba as he grit his teeth. During the secluded cultivation in the past three years, the reason his powers awakened and increased so fast was because of his desire to take revenge. The person he wanted to take revenge on was naturally Ye Xinghan. Even though he now saw that Yun Che was safe and sound, his hatred towards Ye Xinghan still only increased instead of decreasing because of

Frozen Cloud Asgard's  
calamity... If Ye Xinghan  
appeared before him now, even  
with Yun Che's reminder earlier,  
he would definitely punch him  
in the head with all of his  
strength——Even if he was the  
Young Master of Sun Moon  
Divine Hall, the only son of the  
Heavenly Monarch!

With the speed of the Sun  
Moon Sacred Ark, they will  
arrive in about eight more  
hours... at most nine hours!  
Brother-in-law, what should we  
do now?" Xia Yuanba was  
already unsettled and couldn't  
sit still. He tightly clenched his

fists, and the profound energy in his entire body was moving uncontrollably... Even though his profound strength was already so strong that it bordered upon terrifying, his almost instinctive trust and reliance on Yun Che had still not changed in the slightest.

Big Brother Yun, let's send the people from Frozen Cloud Asgard away immediately with the profound ark. With Big Brother Yun's profound ark, none of them would be hurt," Number Seven Under Heaven shouted.

“No!” Yun Che said in a deep voice, “This time, Ye Xinghan even used the strongest profound ark of Sun Moon Divine Hall to rush here as fast as possible. He must want to kill me at all costs. If he was left empty-handed at Frozen Cloud Asgard, destroying the Frozen Cloud Asgard would still be secondary. He will instead definitely target Blue Wind Imperial City immediately to force me to appear... If he had investigated me during these three years, he might even turn to Floating Cloud City! After all, my identity is the prince consort of the Blue Wind Imperial

Family, and Floating Cloud City was my birthplace.”

“But, that is Sun Moon Divine Hall! Dad said that no matter which one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds it is, they are all stronger than any of the Guardian Families! It is impossible for us to fight against them with just us alone,” Number Seven Under Heaven said in panic.

“Old Seven is right.” Number One Under Heaven also said in a serious manner, “Brother Yun,

you have that profound ark that can travel through space, so even if Sun Moon Divine Hall arrive, you can bring anyone you want to protect away safely. As for the other things... no matter what it is, nothing is more important than staying alive.”

Yun Che’s eyes turned slightly. Compared to other people’s nervous and slight panic, Yun Che’s expression was a lot calmer. “If we really reach that step, I will naturally take everyone and escape... but that will only happen if we have no other choice remaining.”

Beneath his feet was the last glory that Cang Yue used everything to protect under the disaster of Blue Wind Nation. How could he let this imperial city not be destroyed by the hands of Divine Phoenix, but be destroyed in the hands of Ye Xinghan because of him.

“Brother Yun, did you come up with some method? But the other side is Sun Moon Divine Hall, and their Young Master is coming in person, and you also said that the other party roughly knows the current level of your

strength...” said Number One Under Heaven while frowning. He absolutely did not question Yun Che’s ability... because back then, even Duke Huai failed miserably before him. But now under the current situation, no matter how he thought about it, he couldn’t come up with a way to counter it.

Unless he returned to Illusory Demon Realm and brought the Little Demon Empress over... then no matter how many powerful practitioners came from Sun Moon Divine Hall, they would all be fodder.



“Basically... but I am not very certain, so we can only gamble on it.” Without waiting for them to ask, Yun Che stood up and said, “Yuanba, you stay here and protect the Imperial City. If the Divine Phoenix Empire dares to come again, kill them all! Brother Under Heaven, Seventh Sister, you two stay here and protect Yue’er... Xiao Yun, you come with me to Frozen Cloud Asgard, right now.”

“Ah?” Xiao Yun’s expression was stunned as he doubtfully pointed to himself. “Me?”

“Ah!?” Number Seven Under Heaven rushed over and used half of her body to block Xiao Yun while saying with a panicked expression, “Wh... why are you taking Brother Yun with you? Sun Moon Divine Hall is so dangerous, what if Brother Yun... what if...”

“Don’t worry, did you forget about my profound ark? He is more safe with me than with you guys.” Yun Che reached out, brushed Number Seven Under Heaven’s shoulders, and pulled Xiao Yun over. “I promise you

that when you see him again, not a single hair on his head will be missing, or else, you can punish me however you like.”

“Seventh Sister, you don’t have to worry. With Big Brother here, I will definitely be safe,” Xiao Yun also immediately comforted.

Number Seven Under Heaven’s face blushed slightly because of the unconscious reaction just now. She immediately swung her arm and said, “Alright, alright. Brother Yun and I are

not those cowardly people... But you promised me, he can't even be missing a single hair!"

"Brother Yun, what are you going to do exactly?" Number One Under Heaven couldn't help but to ask in curiosity.

"To put it simply, we are going to scare them back." Yun Che smiled slightly, and his eyes shined slightly with a strange light. "The best way is to scare them so hard that they wouldn't dare to bother us in the future."

“Scare them back?” Number One Under Heaven was stunned, and everyone else was stunned too. If it was to frighten... with Yun Che’s strength now, it was enough to frighten a normal profound practitioner completely. But they were facing Sun Moon Divine Hall, the highest level of existence in the Profound Sky Continent, how could Yun Che scare them... or it could even be said that in the whole Profound Sky Continent, there was almost nothing that could be enough to scare them thoroughly enough.

Yun Che didn’t explain, simply

calmly saying, “I don’t know if it will work, but if it works, at least they wouldn’t bother us for a short period of time. But if it fails... we can only escape.”

“Xiao Yun, let’s go.”

“Ah... yes!”

“Yue’er, don’t worry. Even though there is a possibility that it will fail, if I want to escape, there is really not a lot of people who can hold me back in this world. No matter what, I will

not get into an accident again like three years ago. Before noon tomorrow, I will return safely for sure,” said Yun Che as he took Xiao Yun’s arms while looking into Cang Yue’s eyes. Then, he turned around and flew out of the main hall with Xiao Yun.

“Husband...” As his back figure disappeared from her line of sight, Cang Yue unconsciously stepped forward, looked at the night sky outside, and her eyes became blurry. This man she loved and married, his life seems to always be accompanied with troubles that others could not

understand. This was the first day they had reunited after being separated by life and death... but he had to leave in a hurry, to use his own strength to face one of the highest existences in the Profound Sky Continent...



# Chapter 669 – Four Great Elders

---

When a profound practitioner increased his profound strength, his speed would naturally increase as well. Especially for someone within the Sky Profound Realm who could utilize the Profound Floating Technique, he would be able to fly at an extremely frightening speed. However, it still could not be compared to the speed of a profound ark. When one had attained an even higher profound realm such as the Tyrant or Sovereign Profound Realm, although their speed

could surpass a vast majority of profound arks, it still would not match the speed of some of the higher quality profound arks.

Like Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark or Sun Moon Divine Hall's Sun Moon Sacred Ark.

However, when a profound ark was being operated, it would consume a large amount of high quality jades. The higher the quality of the profound ark, the faster it could fly. Accordingly,

the quality of the jades required would be higher, and the consumption rate would also be faster. Therefore, even at the level of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, they would not employ high quality profound arks haphazardly unless they had an emergency.

At this time, several thousand meters in the air, the Sun Moon Sacred Ark was flying at breakneck speed. The ark was several hundred meters long, and its entire body was silver. On the left side of the ark, there were the imprints of a scorching sun, and on the right side, there was a crescent moon. The speed at which it was flying was far

above any human's comprehension, and the profound practitioners on the ground could only hear the piercing noise of air being ripped apart. When they had looked up, they could not even see the silhouette of the ark. All that they could see were pieces of clouds and empty space left behind when the ark had flown past.

Inside the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, Ye Xinghan's face was still just like water, and his eyes were cold. At this point in time, his mind had already coldly sobered. He knew that his

impulsive activation of the Sun Moon Sacred Ark due to Yun Che would cause him to be punished by his father, but he did not regret this impulsive action.

Aside from Ye Xinghan, there were nineteen other people aboard the Sun Moon Sacred Ark. Fifteen within them were Ye Xinghan's personal protectorates. All of their profound strengths were in the Tyrant Profound Realm, with the strongest one at the ninth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm. As for the other four... they were each separated by Ye

Xinghan's side. Each of their faces showed not anger, but prestige. The aura they emitted was as heavy as a tall mountain. Not only were the profound strengths of those fifteen Overlords overbearing, as Ye Xinghan's protectorates, they all held a high position in Sun Moon Divine Hall. However, when they looked at the four individuals, their eyes were all filled with deep reverence.

Because these four, were elders from Sun Moon Divine Hall!!

And to become an elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall, one requirement had to be met, which was to reach the realm of Monarchs!

Moreover, these four were not only elders from Sun Moon Divine Hall but were also ranked in the top twenty. One among them was even ranked in the top ten. They were respectively, Eleventh Elder Ye Juanyun❖, Fifteenth Elder Ye Shi❖, Seventeenth Elder Ye Shuran❖, and the one whose profound strength was close to a late stage Monarch, Ninth Elder Ye Guying, was already at the

seventh level of the Sovereign  
Profound Realm!

“Just a mere Yun Che actually  
drove Young Master to fly into  
rage. Isn’t the young master  
overestimating him?”  
indifferently commented  
Fifteenth Elder Ye Shi after  
seeing that Ye Xinghan was  
calming down from his anger. It  
wasn’t that he had not heard of  
the name “Yun Che.” After all,  
single-handedly overturning ten  
great geniuses from Divine  
Phoenix Sect’s young generation  
had caused a great commotion  
three years ago. It was hard to  
not know of that matter...



However, they had only heard of it and nothing more because Yun Che did not qualify to hold their interest due to the difference in levels. As for hearing that Yun Che had foiled Ye Xinghan on the Primordial Profound Ark and then died on it, they had only just laughed it off... because anyone who dared to offend their Sun Moon Divine Hall's Young Master, even if he did not die in the Primordial Profound Ark, after coming out of it, he would die an even more miserable death.

After suddenly finding out that Yun Che was actually alive and

had even killed two of his protectorates, Ye Xinghan was thoroughly enraged. He wanted to kill him immediately and didn't hesitate to activate the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, and bring fifteen protectorates. He even brought four of their elders! This was like bringing a knife that could butcher cows to kill chickens!

“Ye Shi is right.” Ye Shuran slightly nodded his head and said, “Even though that Yun Che has impressive talent, what status does Young Master have? How is he even worthy of such treatment from the young

master? If Young Master wants him dead, why does he need to activate the Sacred Sun Moon Ark and come in person? Only I am needed to kill him without a proper burial.”

Ye Xinghan’s face was cold and dark as he quietly exclaimed, “Yun Che... has to die!!”

Ye Guying raised his head slightly, then said, “Young Master, this old one thinks that we should be a bit more cautious in going to Blue Wind to kill Yun Che at this time.”

“Why does Ninth Elder say that? With the four of us here, even if there are thousands Yun Ches, he would still die a certain death. That Yun Che was able to kill those two pieces of trash, Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi, is indeed unexpected, but how could he triumph over the four of us?” Ye Guying’s statement caused the faces of both Ye Shi and Ye Shuran to reveal puzzlement. As the Ninth Elder, Ye Guying’s profound strength cultivation had reached great heights. The position he held in Sun Moon Divine Hall was high, and although he was also an elder, while Ye Guying could call Ye

Shi and Ye Shuran by name, Ye Shi and Ye Shuran still had to be slightly respectful and refer to him as Ninth Elder.

“No, we still have to be careful, not against Yun Che, but the one that is supporting him from the shadows, or to speak more precisely—his master!” Ye Guying solemnly replied, “Although Young Master is impulsive in his rage, he is not stupid. I believe that he had considered and thought it over before bringing us four along with him.”

“I also have to agree with what Ninth Elder had said,” Eleventh Elder Ye Juanyun spoke. “It is said that Yun Che’s profound veins were crippled when he was young and were miraculously healed later on. Three years ago, when he swept the Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, it had been said that he had not even been cultivating in the profound for four years! And now that such a short three years have passed, his profound strength has reached the realm where he could kill Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi in but an instant! This level of power could be described as being exaggerated to the extreme. Even if it’s our Four

Great Sacred Grounds exhausting all our resources, it is still impossible for us to nurture a person to reach such a terrifying realm in such a short amount of time! It is truly hard to imagine what kind of expert could actually produce such a disciple!”

“Three years ago, there were rumors that there was a very strong and mysterious master behind him, but no one had ever seen his master.” Yue Guying indifferently continued, “That year, he faced the entire Divine Phoenix Sect in Divine Phoenix City alone without fear. At that

time, he was not even twenty years of age, so it was impossible for him to be that calm and bold back then. It must be that he had something to rely on. That might be sufficient to explain that the master behind him was so strong that it allowed him to not fear the Divine Phoenix Sect. At that time, Divine Phoenix Sect should have thought about this many times, which was why they decided to announce that they had “reconciled” with Yun Che during the Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, yet allowed Feng Feiyan to kill him on the Primordial Profound Ark.



“What I concerns me the most is that how he actually fled out of the Primordial Profound Ark alive.” Ye Guying continued, “Our Four Great Sacred Grounds also had a few predecessors that have stayed on the Primordial Profound Ark, but the outcome was that not a bag of bones was found! Yet Yun Che actually came out alive...”

“That’s really easy to explain.” Ye Shi smiled and said, “Young Master had said before that three years ago, in the Primordial Profound Ark, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary Xia Yuanba, who possessed the

Tyrannical Emperor❖'s Divine Veins, exited the Primordial Profound Ark before it was about to close. Divine Phoenix Sect's Princess Snow was initially sealed for death in a fortress alone with Yun Che by our Young Master, but that Princess Snow actually safely made it out... The reason that they could actually exit was with the help of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's spatial bracelet which was specially manufactured at great expense to prevent accidents in the Primordial Profound Ark. Xia Yuanba and Princess Snow had both escaped with the help of the spatial bracelet, so Yun Che naturally had as well! He

obviously never got taken away by the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago and had escaped with the help of the spatial bracelet. Only, when he thought about him having offended the young master, he knew that leaving the Primordial Profound Ark could only result in death. Divine Phoenix Sect would also not let him off, so he quickly went into hiding after leaving the Primordial Profound Ark, resulting in the false image that he had been taken away by the Primordial Profound Ark which led everyone to think that he was already dead. In this way, he would not be hunted down by our Sun Moon Divine Hall and Divine Phoenix Sect. From then

on, he was living in hiding... which was only exposed now.”

“Yes.” Ye Shuran nodded in approval, “This is the only explanation. That Yun Che is so cunning and could actually fool our Sun Moon Divine Hall and Divine Phoenix Sect for an entire three years... It’s no wonder why young master would be so furious!”

Yue Guying slightly moved his brows together, and then slowly nodded, “This is indeed the best explanation. But, I still have

another point of concern... Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi both had the soul imprint that Young Master personally planted in their bodies. Both Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi's soul crystals had shattered, which proves that both of them are dead. However, Young Master had only received Ye Ziyi's death imprint. This could only mean that Ye Qingsheng soul imprint had been erased before his death! For someone who could erase a soul imprint, how could he not have detected the imprint! But he still directly killed Ye Ziyi, and it seems like he deliberately killed Ye Ziyi so that he could pass the death imprint to the young master..."

“Hahahaha,” Ye Shuran suddenly laughed. “Ninth Elder has always been calm and wise, thinking things through carefully which is a quality many admire. But this time, you have worried too much. Although there is a strong master behind Yun Che, no matter how strong his master is, how could his master be stronger than Ninth Elder? Our Sun Moon Divine Hall has existed in the Profound Sky Continent for ten thousand years, who does it actually fear? Being ‘noticed’ by our young master should be little Yun Che’s greatest glory. Even if his talent

and strength were to be multiplied by ten, in the face of our Sun Moon Divine Hall, he is just a grasshopper that we can step on at anytime! If he is actually as Ninth Elder had said... how could he, just to live, actually make the effort three years ago to create the false image of being ‘dead’?”

“What Shuran has said also make sense.” Having heard that, Ye Juanyun nodded, “Every time those who have been implanted with a soul imprint breaks through, there is always the chance that the battering of profound energy would erase it.

Ye Qingsheng's soul imprint might have disappeared a long time ago without anyone knowing, and that happening is also very normal."

"Heheh," Ye Guying let out a laugh. "Perhaps I really am thinking too much into it."

"Ninth Elder always thinks carefully and has never underestimated anyone. It is precisely why he is extremely valued by the Heavenly Monarch." Ye Shi smiled and said, "This is also the reason



why I have always admired Ninth Elder... Oh? It seems like we are approaching the border of Blue Wind Nation. I wonder if Yun Che is already aware of us and has already covered his face to scamper off like a rat.”

At the very north of Blue Wind Nation, Frozen Cloud Asgard.

It was now very late at night, but the skies of the Snow Region of Extreme Ice were an ashen white reflected by the boundless snow and ice. Upon arriving at Frozen Cloud Asgard, Yun Che

and Xiao Yun did not exit the Primordial Profound Ark. He estimated how long it would take Sun Moon Divine Hall to arrive and took out two identical sets of outer clothing, belts, and shoes from the Sky Poison Pearl. “Xiao Yun, quick, change into these clothes!”

Xiao Yun and Yun Che’s body shapes were extremely similar, so Yun Che clothes naturally fit well on Xiao Yun’s body.

# Chapter 670 – Calamity Strikes Again

---

When Yun Che and Xiao Yun changed into an identical set of clothes. If one did not compare their facial features, both their front and back were ninety percent the same. After Xiao Yun changed his clothes, he anxiously said, “Big Brother, what are you... going to do?”

Yun Che slowly gazed at Xiao Yun, sizing him up, then slightly nodded his head and replied, “Good, we both have a very similar body structure. Unless it

is someone who knows us well, it would be very hard to differentiate us based on our figures alone.”

While talking, Yun Che took out a wooden box from the Sky Poison Pearl. “Sit down, I’ll help you put on a disguise so you will look like me.”

“Ah?” Xiao Yun was dumbfounded. His mouth gaping widely. “Dis... disguise?”

“Yes!” Yun Che nodded his head

and knitted his brow tightly. "Rest assured, I am using a special medicine for the disguise, not a profound energy disguise. Unless it is an expert, it would be impossible to see through it."

The most skillful person in the art of disguise that Yun Che had ever met in the Profound Sky Continent was Hua Minghai. But even if it was Hua Minghai, he could not compare with Yun Che in the art of disguise. With just a single glance, he could see through Hua Minghai's disguise, but as for his own, Hua Minghai could not see through it in a

short amount of time.

“But, why should I disguise myself as big brother?” Xiao Yun asked with a puzzled face.

“Because after the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall arrive... if there is no accident, there would be a short period of time that you would need to use my identity and face them,” Yun Che solemnly answered.

“Ah?” Xiao Yun gaped, “I...”

“Are you scared?” Yun Che smiled faintly.

Xiao Yun became absent minded for a short moment, grit his teeth, and strongly shook his head, “Not... not scared! Big Brother, do not worry. Even if I have to put my life on the line, I would...”

“Forget about putting your life on the line,” Yun Che smiled and interrupted him. “I have already assured Seventh Sister that I would bring you back and would

ensure that you wouldn't be missing a single hair. If you lose your life, your Seventh Sister would chase me down with a knife everyday. I wouldn't be able to rest in peace for the rest of my life if that were to happen."

As he spoke, Yun Che's face became serious. "However, this matter will still come at a great risk. Because Ye Xinghan wants me to die, he will surely bring at least three Monarchs with him! It's possible that he might bring a mid-stage Monarch... or even one that is even higher than a mid-stage Monarch. If we ever



fail, even though we could use the Primordial Profound Ark to escape, I believe you could envision how dire the consequences would be if that were to happen... After disguising yourself, I'll tell you what you need to do in detail. After a while, you have to firmly remember every word I say... as this matter will also be a huge challenge for you."

"Alright... I understand." Xiao Yun took in a mouthful of air and seriously nodded his head.

After Yun Che left the Primordial Profound Ark, he shrunk the ark into its smallest possible state... which was approximately the size of his palm. Then, after arriving in front of Frozen Cloud Asgard's main gates, he took the Primordial Profound Ark and placed it between two thick blocks of ice. To common knowledge, the way one entered and exited a profound ark was naturally going through its ark door. The Primordial Profound Ark could also be entered through the ark door, but it also had an additional special way of passage, which was also what Yun Che had always used since the start... that was space

transfer!

This was also one of the things that Yun Che would rely on when he faced Sun Moon Divine Hall today... Of course, the prerequisite for this was for the opponent to not discover the existence of the Primordial Profound Ark. However, the Primordial Profound Ark's energy medium was Hong'er and not its own body, so it wouldn't release any profound energy fluctuations when stationary. Added to the fact that the Primordial Profound Ark could become big or small, even if one was a Monarch, it would still be

hard to detect its existence. Even if they saw it, they would think that it was just a model of a profound ark.

It was late at night, and Frozen Cloud Asgard was very silent. There were still four more hours till dawn... In four hours, it was about time for Sun Moon Divine Hall to arrive. Yun Che used the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul to issue an Asgard Master Command... Soon enough, six streaks of snow-white celestial silhouettes flew over and landed before Yun Che. Only Xia Qingyue was missing within the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies.

“Asgard Master, is there any important matter happening?” Murong Qianxue asked with a frown. There must have been some sort of pressing matter for him to call them this late in the night.

Yun Che lowered his voice and calmly said, “It is indeed something important. People from Sun Moon Divine Hall are heading our way... They will arrive in about four hours. The one leading them is their Young Master Ye Xinghan, and he would be bringing at least three

Monarchs!”

“What?!” Murong Qianxue paled in shock. Sun Moon Divine Hall’s young master... Monarchs... To them, all these words were a thousand times scarier than their own nightmares!

Just two Overlords could already force Frozen Cloud Asgard into a dead end. If it weren’t for Yun Che’s timely arrival, Frozen Cloud Asgard would have already ceased to exist... At least three Monarchs,

just these alone would practically have enough power to sweep across the seven nations. Wanting to destroy Frozen Cloud Asgard would just require a simple hand gesture!

“As for the reason, there is no time for me to explain it to you. You guys immediately inform all of the Frozen Cloud Asgard disciples. Give them an hour to take their important belongings and another hour to gather here!”

“Has Asgard Master found a

place for us to escape to?” Jun Lianqie nervously asked.

“No, I never said that we have to escape!” Yun Che calmly said, “Our opponents are from Sun Moon Divine Hall. You guys should know very well that even if we escape today, we still would spend our future running, forever under the shadow of Sun Moon Divine Hall. The reason why all of Frozen Cloud Asgard’s disciples are to be gathered together here is to face Sun Moon Divine Hall together.”



Yun Che's words startled them. Chu Yueli let out a sigh and dejectedly said, "We are, after all, talking about Sun Moon Divine Hall. It is something that we simply are not able to contend against. If they stayed, they would only just die in vain... Just let the six of us stay and face Sun Moon Divine Hall. As for them... there is still four hours remaining, there may still be time for them to escape. The more people that could escape from the demonic hands of Sun Moon Divine Hall, the more sparks of life Frozen Cloud Asgard will have."

“No! I only said that we would face Sun Moon Divine Hall together. I never said that I want you guys to seek death!” Yun Che seriously said. “Even though Sun Moon Divine Hall’s young master came this time, it does not mean that we are doomed to perish. if you all trust me... I can’t guarantee that I can protect Frozen Cloud Asgard, but I can definitely protect everyone’s lives! No matter if it’s Senior Master, Junior Master, Senior Sister, or Junior Sister, I can assure you that none of your lives will be lost!”

“However, if all goes smoothly

as planned, even Frozen Cloud Asgard can be saved...” Yun Che slightly lifted his hand, and his gaze swept across their snow-colored faces and bright eyes, “then our Frozen Cloud Asgard will undergo a nirvanic rebirth. From then on, at least for a brief period of time, no one would dare to offend us... until we grow strong enough to oppose them!”

Under the night, with the quiet, snowy moon, Murong Qianxue, Jun Lianqie, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue, and Feng Hanxue all stared dumbstruck at Yun Che and were silent for a

long time... They weren't able to imagine what he was relying on when he said such words against the "Sun Moon Divine Hall's young master" and "at least three Monarchs" that he had personally stated.

As it grew deeper into the night, the color of the sky turned from a gray-white into a darker gray. Chu Yueli was the first to speak up. "Alright... Since you are our Asgard Master, we will naturally believe your words."

"We will go gather all the disciples now," Murong Qianxue

said while nodding. As she spoke, ice beads had already formed at the tips of her hair... Killing the two Overlords from Sun Moon Divine Hall had allowed Frozen Cloud Asgard to escape their destruction, but they all knew that it was not the end of their calamity. It was merely the beginning... However, they did not expect that an even bigger calamity would strike so soon.

“In addition, I will be in the Frozen End Divine Hall and will be setting up an isolation barrier. Before I come out on my own, unless those from Sun

Moon Divine Hall have come early, do not let anyone go anywhere near it,” Yun Che suddenly stated. Then, without any further explanation, he floated up into the sky and flew in the direction of the Frozen End Divine Hall.

Five hundred kilometers of cold desolation. The night wind was ice-cold. Before anyone realized it, the sky went from dark gray to grayish-white to pale white... and then became brightly lit. Four hours had quietly passed just like that.

All the Frozen Clouds Asgard disciples had long gathered in front of the main gate. A nervous yet determined atmosphere had also enveloped all of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Murong Qianxue and the others were floating high above in the sky. All of their beautiful eyes looked southward and would occasionally turn to look in the direction of the Frozen End Divine Hall... After Yun Che entered the Frozen End Divine Hall, there were no other movements. It was now nearing the “four hour” time span Yun Che had spoken of. They could

only continuously use Frozen Heart Arts to calm their minds.

At this time, from a distant location, an ear-piercing tearing sound could be heard from the southwestern sky. It was also quickly getting closer and closer... Then, in the direction of the tearing sound, a faint black spot could be seen in the pale sky.

“What is that... AH!!”

Following the scream of the



Frozen Cloud female, in but an instant... in just a short moment, the faint black spot which could be seen was becoming bigger at a terrifying speed, clearly appearing as a completely silver profound ark silhouette. Its terrifying speed far surpassed most of the Frozen Cloud ladies' cognition, and then, the silver profound ark suddenly stopped... Just like that, it stopped at a distance of around three hundred meters in front of them.

The cold wind became chaotic and space was faintly fluctuating as an enormous, indescribable

profound energy aura covered the entire Snow Region of Extreme Ice. This had even left Murong Qianxue, who was currently Frozen Cloud Asgard strongest, completely breathless. This level of profound strength could only be deemed “incomprehensible”... It was the people from Sun Moon Divine Hall... They had really arrived!!!

“This profound ark, is called the Sun Moon Sacred Ark. It is the highest quality profound ark in Sun Moon Divine Hall. It is very fast and they would have not activated lightly. However, in order to pay our Frozen Cloud

Asgard a visit this time, they had actually activated it.”

A slight tone of mocking could be heard from the calm voice that came over. They all quickly turned their head back and exclaimed in surprise despite their fear, “Asgard Master!”

Yun Che arrived while stepping on wind. In the blink of an eye, he flew in front of Murong Qianxue. No one knew what he had been doing in the Frozen End Divine Hall within those four hours. However, they could

vaguely feel that the heavy aura that was on Yun Che's body was weaker than it had previously been. At this point, while facing against the approaching the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, there was only calm in his aura and brows... There was even a bit of proudness. The only thing lacking was fear and anxiety!

Yun Che stood at the very front with his gaze fixed on Sun Moon Sacred Ark's ark door which had yet to open. There seemed to be a bit of a smile on his tranquil face. "Every Senior Master, Junior Master, Senior Sister, and Junior Sister, before us, is

indeed a calamity we have never countered in our Frozen Cloud Asgard's thousand years of history! However, since I am already Frozen Cloud Asgard's Asgard Master, I, Yun Che, am willing to bet on my dignity... that I'll never allow Frozen Cloud Asgard to fall into enemy hands! Nor will I allow anyone to suffer a tragic end. What you all have to do later on is that, no matter what happens next, don't panic! Perhaps..."

He turned his head and lightly laughed at Frozen Cloud's young ladies, "You would discover that Sun Moon Divine Hall isn't as

scary as you think.”

With the calamity before them, every single one of them smelled the odor of a stifling, ice-cold despair. However, Yun Che's words and his smile, when facing against such a powerful adversary, was like a gust of wind that brushed away more than half their depression and fear. The slightly trembling gazes of all of Frozen Cloud's young ladies fell upon the back figure of the one in front of them with a kind of dependence and trust. An indescribable, unfamiliar warmth unceasing grew in their hearts and

expanded. This was a sensation they had never felt even for late Asgard Mistress Gong Yuxian.

Chu Yueli silently looked at Yun Che's back figure as her beautiful eyes blurred into absent-mindedness for a while... Who knew that the young man who had been scorned and mocked by everyone in Floating Cloud City, who she had protected only because of Qingyue's request, would, in but a few years, shake the entire Blue Wind Nation and shake the entire Profound Sky Continent... And now, he had become the only thing Frozen Cloud Asgard could rely on

against its greatest calamity!

Following a heavy sound, Sun Moon Sacred Ark's ark door opened at this time. Each figure that slowly came out all possessed a boundless profound energy fluctuation on their bodies. Yun Che crossed his chest as his eyes swept through everyone who had walked down the Sun Moon Sacred Ark. The corner of his mouth slowly curled into a sneer. "Ye Xinghan, you've finally arrived. And I had even wondered how awesome your Sun Moon Divine Hall's profound ark was, but it was only like this. You've actually



made me wait this long!”

Each person who came out from the Sun Moon Sacred Ark stopped in their tracks as their expressions slightly changed.

In his fit of rage, Ye Xinghan had brought along four Monarchs, fifteen Overlords, and drove the Sun Moon Sacred Ark over in order to kill Yun Che in the shortest time possible. It was for the purpose of not allowing Yun Che to be able to react or have any chance of escaping. On the way there, they

had all envisioned all kinds of scenarios... When their Sun Moon Divine Hall unexpectedly arrived, they had expected Yun Che to be scared witless on the spot or perhaps flee while cowering like a rat; that within his fear, he would desperately run for his life... or perhaps, he would have detected it and would have escaped from the Frozen Cloud Asgard. Then, they would be able to destroy Frozen Cloud Asgard and attack Blue Wind Imperial City in order to see Yun Che's look of despair.

However, even in their wildest imagination, they would never

have expected to see such a scene when they arrived... Yun Che, who was calm and composed, appeared to have been waiting for their arrival. He had obviously known that they were coming... yet, not only did he not escape, he showed no signs of worry or fear. From his deafening voice, there were no signs of nervousness or fear. Furthermore, his slightly crooked lips and his eyes which looked at them with arrogance and mockery seemed as though he was viewing prey that had been captured!

As “hunters,” when they were

faced with Yun Che's gaze, they instantly felt like they had become the hunted.

# Chapter 671 – False Bravado

---

“Yun... Che!” Looking at Yun Che’s coldly smiling face, unspeakable resentment and loathing erupted in Ye Xinghan’s heart. Back then, it was this small fry, who was not even significant enough to be counted as a worm when compared to his lofty status as the Young Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, who completely wrecked his plans in the Primordial Profound Ark! If not for Yun Che, he would have already obtained Feng Xue’er’s Divine Phoenix body, and his current strength would have

broken through to the Sovereign  
Profound Realm while his rate of  
growth would be far greater  
than what it was today... All of  
his plans had been ruined  
because of this Yun Che!

When Yun Che had “died” in  
the Primordial Profound Ark all  
those years ago, he was still  
unable to get rid of the hatred in  
his heart.

And now that three years had  
passed, he discovered that Yun  
Che was not actually dead! He  
had even killed his men, once

again wrecking his plans... and even his profound strength had grown by leaps and bounds... to the point where it had even exceeded his own!

When he received Ye Qingsheng's death imprint, the anger, resentment, and killing intent that he felt in that instant... was so fierce that it felt as if his chest was going to explode!

If not for stone cold logic informing him that he might not be Yun Che's match anymore, he

would have rushed out like a crazed dog and used the cruelest method to brutally kill Yun Che. He stared at Yun Che, the coldness and hatred on his face giving way to a rotten and icy smile. “To think that you still lived... this truly gave this young master a huge surprise! All these years, this young master’s greatest regret was not being able to personally rip you to tiny pieces. To think that you would actually escape from the king of the Underworld and obediently deliver yourself into my hands.”

As he spoke, Ye Xinghan surveyed the background, and



his gaze fell upon the ladies of the Frozen Cloud. Immediately, his eyes widened into saucers, and his gaze turned feverishly hot as the expression on his face went from gloomy and cold to one of undisguised, evil depravity. “Yun Che, this young master suddenly feels extremely grateful to you. If not for you, this young master would not have known that Frozen Cloud Asgard was actually such a wonderful place! Who would have thought that in a tiny country that is about to be scattered like ashes, there would actually be so many peerless beauties waiting to be enjoyed by this young master. Tsk...”

Ye Xinghan's tongue extended out of his mouth as he slowly licked the corner of his lips, and a gulping sound could be heard coming from his throat. His excessively evil and wanton gaze and aura had grown so strong that even his anger and killing intent had been completely swallowed by it. This was definitely not something that Ye Xinghan was faking; he cultivated heretical arts and had his way with countless women, and while he had an insatiable appetite for beauty, his standards were exceedingly high. Regular beautiful women would not even catch his notice.

However, the ladies of the Frozen Cloud all had ice-snow skin, features like a cold moon, and possessed a stately and ice-cold temperament. Every single one of them seemed like snow lotuses from Mount Heaven which blossomed amidst the wind and snow; they were like snow fairies who descended to the earth after being exiled from the heavens, haughtily surveying the world in their peerless beauty.

During these thousand years, the number one beauty of Blue Wind Nation had always come from Frozen Cloud Asgard

without even a single exception!

Also, even if one and only picked a girl from Frozen Cloud Asgard... even if she was the plainest one of them all, she would still be a peerless beauty in the outside world, more beautiful than any other women for miles around her. Moreover, their cold and stately temperament was not something that a normal girl could compare to.

So even though Ye Xinghan had countless women at his disposal,

he still stared at every single lady of the Frozen Cloud with the depravity of a hungry wolf... and he had an entire two thousand women of Frozen Cloud to stare at! It would not be the least bit exaggerated to say that every single nerve and cell within Ye Xinghan's body was quivering with excitement. Two thousand women of Frozen Cloud, any single one of them would cause all the women that he kept back in Sun Moon Divine Hall to lose their luster. And those six ladies, who were standing at the forefront, who had the strongest profound energy auras of them all, especially caught his eye, making it almost impossible for

him to stop himself from drooling at the mouth...

As for Frozen Cloud Asgard, he had once heard of them a very long time ago, but an all-women power from the tiny nation of Blue Wind was not even worthwhile for him to remember, much less catch his attention. If not for the name “Xia Qingyue” and the fact that she was part of Frozen Cloud Asgard, he probably would have never have considered to coming to this kind of place. But never in his wildest dreams did he think that this place was actually a “paradise on earth”!

Sun Moon Divine Hall's young master, who held beauty as dear to him as life itself, suddenly felt as if he had wasted most of his life. At this time, his attention had already completely switched from Yun Che to the Frozen Cloud ladies behind him.... Compared to these beautiful and bewitching snow fairies, Yun Che's life was not even worth a damn!

Ye Xinghan's notoriety for using women to cultivate his heretic arts was something that all the women of Frozen Cloud

had heard of before. And what they saw today was far worse than any of the rumors that they had heard. Looking at his obscene and depraved expression, the faces of the ladies of Frozen Cloud were filled with a deep loathing. Murong Qianxue, Chu Yueli, and the rest of the Frozen Cloud Fairies all knitted their brows as the ice spirit around their bodies danced wildly and their hands tightened around the hilts of their ice swords... Today, even if they all had to perish together, they would definitely not allow themselves to be sullied by Ye Xinghan.



“Hahahaha!” After hearing Ye Xinghan’s words, Yun Che did not reveal the slightest bit of fear or anger; instead, he crossed his arms over his chest and let out a wild laugh. “Ye Xinghan, your death is at hand yet you still have the time to build castles in the air. This is simply too hilarious, hahahaha...”

“This young master’s death is at hand?” Ye Xinghan’s eyes slanted as he tilted his head back and let out a loud laugh as well, and it was even louder and more wanton than Yun Che’s laugh. “It looks like even though you have lived for three more years,

you have become a pitiful idiot who can't even tell whose death is actually at hand right now."

"Young Master!" Ye Shi said as he took a step forward. "When this brat saw the Young Master, he was clearly so frightened that he had lost his wits. Hmph, given the Young Master's status, there is no need to waste your breath on him. Let me go and capture him and leave his fate at the Young Master's disposal!"

"I will have to trouble Fifteenth Elder then," Ye Xinghan replied

leisurely. “But Fifteenth Elder, remember to be gentle with him. I definitely do not want you to kill him by accident.”

“Just watch me break his legs first!” Ye Shi said with a cold laugh. He circulated all the profound energy in his body and prepared to advance before a figure suddenly flashed in front of him. He was blocked by Ye Guying who gave a low shout, “Wait! Do not take any action yet! Haven’t any of you realized that there is something wrong here?!”

“When we had arrived, they had already gathered here, and they even called out the name ‘Sun Moon Sacred Ark,’ so they clearly knew that we were coming far in advance. Also, not only did they not flee, but they actually purposely waited here!” Ye Guying said coldly, “If they did not have anything to rely on or some scheme lying in wait for us, why would they act in such a manner?! Especially that Yun Che... just look at him, he isn’t the least bit worried or afraid. Rather, he looks like victory has already been grasped in his hand as his prey is about to take the bait!”

This situation was definitely out of the ordinary. After they had arrived and had found Yun Che, the scenario they had been greeted with was completely different from the one they had expected. Ye Shi replied, "There is definitely something weird going on, but I had just used all of my power to survey our present surroundings, and I cannot feel the aura of any strong individual. The strongest aura I have detected is that of the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, and this Yun Che only has a profound strength at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm! Even though I do not know why they would know of our arrival so far

in advance, they did not flee because they clearly knew that even if they fled to the ends of the earth, it would not be enough to escape from our grasp. That Yun Che is simply faking his current attitude... it's all false bluster and bravado!"

"You really think that he is faking it?" Ye Guying said with sunken brows, "We are all people that have lived for nearly a thousand years, and Yun Che is only slightly over twenty years of age. Do you actually think that any act put on by him could escape our eyes?"

Ye Shi's eyelids briefly twitched as Ye Shuran and Ye Juanyun both furrowed their brows.... The Yun Che who had stood in front of them had not only taken the initiative to wait for them here, but even as he faced their Sun Moon Divine Hall, he was still calm and composed. They could not detect a hint of fear or anxiety from his expression, gaze, or posture. On the contrary, the only thing that was displayed was continuous arrogance and contempt... they were all old monsters who had lived for several hundred years, and some of them were even close a thousand years old, so

they definitely did not believe that a young man of just over twenty years of age could “act” in front of them to such a degree.

In the depths of their heart, they had long ago confirmed that... there was definitely someone who had Yun Che’s back at this present moment!

“So what if there is?” Ye Shi persisted as he gave a contemptuous laugh, “Even if he really has some huge power backing him up... could it be



stronger than our Sun Moon Divine Hall? In this Profound Sky Continent, other than the other three Sacred Grounds, is there really anything else that can cause our Sun Moon Divine Hall to tremble?”

Ye Shi's words may have been arrogant beyond reason, but they were also unshakably true. As one of the premier powers in the Profound Sky Continent, other than the rest of the Sacred Grounds, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, Supreme Ocean Palace, and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, there was nothing else in this world that

they held as their equal. Even if Yun Che gathered all of the profound practitioners in Blue Wind Nation, it would not cause them to even bat an eyelid.

“He defeated the Divine Phoenix Sect by himself and managed to kill Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi despite cultivating for only six years, so I have no reason to believe that he is simply standing here and waiting for death!” Ye Guying said in an incomparably prudent manner, “Moreover, did you not hear what he just said... he said that our Young Master’s death was at hand! He could be

bluffing, or if the one who is backing him up really has that kind of power, even if there is only a one in a billion chance of that happening... do you dare take such a risk?!! If anything really happens to the Young Master, not only will we die, but our entire families and even our descendants will all have to die with us!!”

Ye Guying's words caused Ye Shi's body to tremble and the complexion of Ye Shuran and Ye Juanyun faces to change. Looking at Yun Che's extremely confident demeanor and attitude, these elders of Sun

Moon Divine Hall, all mighty Monarchs who loomed over the earth, did not dare make any rash or impulsive moves. Instead, they focused all of their spirit as they attempted to search for any hidden profound energy auras in the surrounding area.

“His cheap life, how can it be compared with the safety of our Young Master. It is not that I am being overly cautious and prudent, but his current attitude... is definitely not normal, so he must be hiding some kind of scheme. With the Young Master here, we definitely

cannot take such a risk.” Ye Guying calmly said as his eyes narrowed slightly, “Let me first get to the bottom of this! And after we have exposed all of his tricks and supporters and we have confirmed that he poses no threat, then we can kill him!”

“Oh? Why have you lot suddenly gone quiet? Weren’t you shouting about how you were going to capture me? Are you going to do it or what?!” Yun Che casually extended a hand and gestured them to come forward with his finger. This contemptuous action and sight would stoke the fires of rage in

even the lowliest of profound practitioners, even moreso for elders of Sun Moon Divine Hall.

Yun Che's expression was haughty and contemptuous, but the reality was that his back had long ago been drenched in cold sweat. Just now Jasmine had advised him on the strength of these four individuals. There was one who was at the third level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, two were at the fifth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and the one who looked the youngest was actually at the seventh level of the Sovereign Profound Realm... He

approached the latter stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and he was a monstrous existence that stood on equal ground with a grand elder of the Yun Family! He had predicted that Ye Xinghan would definitely bring along some strong individuals who were at the Monarch level, but the overall level of strength of his party far exceeded what he had expected.

Even Ye Xinghan himself had broken through to the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, and he was far stronger than he was three years ago.

If Ye Shi had really rushed at him like he intended to, his only choice would have been to whisk away all of the women in the Primordial Profound Ark and flee the scene... and all of the schemes that he had prepared would be rendered useless. But it was good that he had successfully caused the other party to become extremely cautious, allowing him to scrape through the first encounter without any mishap.

Ye Guying slowly strode forward and his body released



an aura which was not intense but was as boundless as the sea, and in the span of a few breaths, it had engulfed the entire Snow Region of Extreme Ice. The strength and dread invoked by this aura caused all the women of Frozen Cloud to go pale with fear... because this was power that far exceeded what they knew and even what they could imagine.

“Yun Che.” Ye Guying said in a bland voice, “Even though your talent is not common, in the eyes of our Sun Moon Divine Hall, it is not even worth mentioning. If we want to kill

you, it is only a matter of lifting our hands. It is just that before we proceed, I have a few questions I want to ask you, and if you honestly answer them, we can consider sparing the lives of the women behind you.”

These last words spoken by Ye Guying were completely farcical because even if they wanted to do anything to the women of Frozen Cloud, Ye Xinghan would definitely not allow them to. Yun Che eyed him coolly before tilting his head back and breaking out into a huge roaring laugh, “Hahahaha! Kill me? Just one level three Monarch, two

level five Monarchs, and one level seven Monarch, and you want to kill me? Hahahaha, this is simply the best joke I've heard in ages! Could it be that your entire Sun Moon Divine Hall is made up of presumptuous idiots?!"

Yun Che's words caused the expressions on the four great elders' and Ye Xinghan's face to greatly change... and it was not because of his arrogant and irritating insults, but it was because he had actually correctly stated the exact profound strength of Ye Shuran, Ye Shi, Ye Juanyun, and Ye

Guying!

There was not a single mistake  
contained in his words!!

# Chapter 672 – A Might Which Covers The Heavens

---

To be able to correctly ascertain a profound practitioner's level of profound strength, one had to have a profound strength higher than the other! Yet Yun Che was able to accurately shout out the profound strength of these four Monarchs, including Ye Guying, who was a late stage Monarch!

Yun Che only had the profound strength aura that was at the Emperor Profound Realm, so he

definitely would not be able to do this! The only possible explanation was that... there was someone here whose profound cultivation was extremely strong, and he might even be strong enough to surpass Ye Guying's strength!

Before it was only a faint suspicion, but following what Yun Che said, this misgiving's likelihood suddenly multiplied many times over... it reached the point where they could practically confirm that there was indeed a huge power that was backing Yun Che up. And the strength of this power far

exceeded their previous expectations... because the other person was able to accurately ascertain their profound strength, whereas they could not even detect the presence of that person! To be able to conceal his profound strength so perfectly from them, that person had to have a profound strength that exceeded them, and it was highly possible that his strength was far above theirs!

Could it really... actually be someone who was in the late stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm?

That was not possible... besides the Four Sacred Grounds, it should not be possible for any other high level Monarchs to exist elsewhere in this world!

At this time, they looked at Yun Che's face that was calm and devoid of fear, and he even had a provocative, cold smile plastered on his face. They were quickly disabused of the notion that all of this was just "false bluster and bravado."

Ye Guying quickly suppressed



the look of alarm that flashed across his face and gave a humorless laugh as he replied, "Let us first not talk about whether we are going to kill you today and move on to other matters instead... seeing your reaction, it seems as if you had already known about our impending visit for quite some time."

"Haha." Yun Che gave an extremely disdainful and cold laugh as contempt flashed in his eyes, and he looked at the powerful Ninth Elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall as if he were some kind of an idiot. "To think

that words so stupid that it insults one's intelligence would actually come out of the mouth of an elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall! When I killed Ye Ziyi, I was using Ye Ziyi's death imprint to transmit the entire manner of his death to your young master, Ye Xinghan. My motive was to get Ye Xinghan to immediately rush over here with his people to try and kill me... You actually have doubts over how I knew about your arrival? Hahahaha! This is the level of intellect possessed by an elder from Sun Moon Divine Hall... it truly is too laughable!"

Yun Che's words caused Ye Guying's eyes to tremble in anger, but his expression did not change. Instead of flying into a rage, he merely gave a tepid laugh and said, "You mean when you killed Ye Ziyi, you had already known about the death imprint on his body, so you purposely used this death imprint to let our Young Master know that you were the one who killed him?"

"What else?" The corner of Yun Che's mouth curled upwards as he mockingly replied, "Didn't any of you actually stop to think about why even though both Ye

Ziyi and Ye Qingsheng died...  
you did not receive Ye  
Qingsheng's death imprint?"

The expressions of all the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall changed simultaneously... Before this, when they were still on the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, Ye Guying had gravely voiced his suspicion that it was possible that the other party had preserved Ye Ziyi's death soul imprint to entice them to come here. Because if the other party could wipe away Ye Qingsheng's death imprint, it was impossible that he would not have discovered the existence of a

death imprint on Ye Ziyi's body. But they could not bring themselves to believe this, and they explained it away by coming to the conclusion that Ye Qingsheng's death imprint had faded away by itself, because there was no one who had the guts to provoke and "entrap" the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall... unless said person had a death wish!

However,, those exact words had come out of Yun Che's mouth this very moment, causing all of them to be involuntarily alarmed as a feeling of uneasiness which

should not exist was birthed in their hearts. But Ye Juanyun took a step forward and gave a laugh of contempt instead, “And so what if you did? Yun Che, you are only a pitiful frog in the well in our eyes, so what would you know about how high the sky is or how deep the earth is. You truly believe that just relying on that teacher behind you, you can challenge our Sun Moon Divine Hall? Hahahaha...” Ye Junyuan laughed wildly, “That is so incredibly naive! Our Sun Moon Divine Hall’s strength is something that you can never imagine and is something that you are not qualified to know as well! Your confidence and the backup that you think is

infallible, in the eyes of our Sun Moon Divine Hall, it is only a huge joke!”

“Oh?” Yun Che’s eyebrows drooped slightly as he replied, “You actually know who my master is?”

“Tsk tsk, anyone who has dared to behave in such a brazen manner in front of our Sun Moon Divine Hall has always died a horrible death, and even if they managed to survive, their fates were even worse than death...” Ye Shi continued with a

cold laugh as he put a hand on his chin, “Yun brat, don’t even talk about your master. Even if you had one hundred of those masters, you will definitely not be able to keep your life today!”

“Haha, what?” Yun Che gave a humorless laugh, and while his tone was arrogant, his voice began to deepen as well, “My master is normally within his own little world, so I normally will not dare to disturb his cultivation, and I am even less willing to borrow my master’s power.” Yun Che’s eyes instantly became dark and cold as he continued, “But Frozen Cloud



Asgard has no quarrel or grievance with you, yet you acted so viciously towards them. Not only did you push them into a desperate situation, you even killed their two previous sect masters... this hatred and animosity has created an irreconcilable gulf between us! And if I cannot avenge this wrong, then I am not fit to be the new sect master of Frozen Cloud Asgard!!

“So today, I will borrow my master’s strength and will use Ye Xinghan’s... no, will use all of your blood to offer up a sacrifice to the souls of the previous two

sect masters!” Yun Che raised his left hand. “You will soon know who exactly is the frog in the well! When my master condescends to appear before us, all of you better be ready for it... don’t become so frightened that you wet your pants and stain this pristine snowy land!!”

Yun Che’s tone was harsh, and his words were filled with animosity. As his words fell, Ye Xinghan’s face grew dark, and just as he was about to speak, he saw a light flash from Yun Che’s body. Following that flash... his entire person had disappeared from where he was standing!

Whether it was his figure or his presence, all of it had completely disappeared!!

Ye Guying and the rest of his companions were fiercely shocked... they definitely did not believe that a profound practitioner who was below the Sovereign Profound Realm could disappear without them noticing. But despite their enormous power as Monarchs, they could not detect Yun Che's presence even though their spiritual perception blanketed the entire area. It was in this manner that he had completely disappeared in an instant right

before their very eyes!

“What... what is going on?” Ye Shi sputtered in a deep voice as his eyes swept the area. According to their own knowledge and experiences, this was something that should not be possible! Without even mentioning that Yun Che was a Throne, even if he was a Monarch as well, it should not be possible for him to disappear completely before their very eyes!

Ye Guying’s brows sank, and he

suddenly remembered that Yun Che just said these words, “My master normally resides in his own little world, so I normally will not dare to disturb his cultivation...” His heart suddenly shook... his own little world? Could it be that his master was actually someone who could open his own little world, just like in the legends? And Yun Che’s complete disappearance was due to him entering his master’s “little world”?

Amidst their shock, a light suddenly shone out in front of them, and Yun Che’s figure

appeared before them once more. But the Yun Che who had appeared once again was not facing them; instead, his head was bowed and he had his withdrawn his aura. His stance was completely devoid of the wild arrogance that he had displayed before. Rather, he assumed an attitude of solemn respect.

“Yun Che, where is your master?!” Ye Shi roared, “I definitely do not expect you to tell us that once your so-called master heard the four words ‘Sun Moon Divine Hall,’ he was so frightened that he ran away,

haha...”

Ye Shi's laughter abruptly came to a halt as his expression underwent a great change.

An aged voice let out a long and drawn-out sigh. This sigh carried with it an indescribable heaviness, and it seemed to come from an ancient age. Accompanying this sigh was a boundless and indescribably majestic presence and might. This might seemed to have welled up from the ends of the earth, and in that moment, it

seem to fill the heavens and the earth.

In that instance, it seemed like the dome of heaven had completely collapsed! With it, the entire world descended into a deathly silence.

The four Monarchs of Sun Moon Divine Hall—Ye Shi, Ye Shuran, Ye Juanyun, and the mighty Ye Guying all felt their breath seize up in their chests as this might fell upon them. It was as if a mountain range was pressing down on their chests.



Forget about breathing, even their hearts had nearly been completely stopped as their bodies went rigid while every cell in their bodies shuddered violently and uncontrollably... and they could not stop no matter what they did.

They raised their heads after much difficulty, and their pupils contracted as they looked at the figure that had suddenly appeared out of thin air... his voluminous black robe fluttered in the howling, cold wind. The black robe covered half of his face, so they were unable to make out his appearance...

Under this incomparably dreadful pressure, even as mighty as they were, they still did not dare to meet the gaze of that man. Even the black robe on his body seemed to have the weightiness of a mountain.

In this world, the thing that was the hardest to fake was one's aura. And this black-robed man's aura was so strong that it was something they could not describe and could not even imagine. They were Monarchs which stood at the pinnacle of the world, so in this world, there should not exist any aura which would cause them to tremble...

Moreover, under this aura, they felt that they were as small as grains of sand before the blue sea. They could barely bring themselves to believe that this was an aura that belonged to another human being... but was the might of a primordial god of legends which covered the heavens!

What was even scarier was that, while this aura was majestic and boundless, it was not fierce or violent. Instead, it was completely calm... so that was to say that this was merely the presence that this black-robed man normally displayed.

It was not a deliberate show of force that would come about when one circulated all of his profound energy.

“Master!” Yun Che knelt to the ground and deeply bowed his head. The Yun Che who had been unreasonably arrogant in front of Sun Moon Divine Hall now spoke in a voice that was filled with a deep reverence... and there was even a hint of apprehension in that voice.

Ye Xinghan’s expression had turned incredibly ugly, and not

one of the four elders could laugh in this situation. They all looked at each other and saw that the eyes of everyone else was filled with a deep shock and unease... an aura which could cause Monarchs such as them to tremble with fear. Just based on that alone, they could tell that this person's strength definitely exceeded that of their own Sun Moon Divine Hall's Heavenly Monarch.

This was... Yun Che's mysterious master?

How could there be such a terrifying existence that was akin to a god or a devil on this earth?!!

## Chapter 673 – Exposed?

---

“This... this is ... Asgard Master’s teacher?” The ladies of Frozen Cloud said in a daze as they stared at the black-robed man in midair. The almighty power was one even the elders of Sun Moon Divine Hall could not endure which made its effects on them all the more obvious.

The fact that Yun Che had a mysterious master was something that everyone in Frozen Cloud Asgard knew. Because three years ago, when he entered Frozen Cloud Asgard,

he had made it clear to Grand Asgard Mistress Feng Qianhui that he already had a master, so he would only be able to enter the sect, but he would not become anyone's disciple. Furthermore, his terrifying rate at which his profound strength grew and his unbelievably heaven-defying medical skills had naturally come from his master as well. And today, they had finally witnessed the "true face" of Yun Che's mysterious master, and the aura and might that emanated from him exceeded their imagination and understanding by leaps and bounds.



They had previously imagined that Yun Che's master must be an extremely terrifying individual... but the reality of the situation had far exceeded their expectations!

No wonder he was so calm when he was facing Sun Moon Divine Hall... no wonder he dared to be so arrogant.

“So you are the people who seek to kill this old one's disciple?”

The black-robed old man opened his mouth, and even though his voice was soft and his tone was even, every single one of his words weighed on the ears of the party from Sun Moon Divine Hall like enormous and heavy boulders.

Ye Guying silently sucked in a breath and suppressed the alarm and fear in his heart. He calmly cupped his hands and proceeded in a manner which was neither obsequious nor overbearing, "Ah, so it is this distinguished one who is Yun Che's master. We are members of Sun Moon Divine Hall. Yesterday, your

disciple attacked us for no reason at all, and he killed twelve people from our Sun Moon Divine Hall. Two of these victims were the personal servants of our young master. So our Sun Moon Divine Hall has naturally arrived to seek redress. But we did not expect a distinguished one such as yourself would be overseeing this place, so we have been remiss in failing to offer our respect to you. Even though we have inadvertently disturbed this distinguished one's cultivation, our mission was to bring a murderer to justice as it is the right and proper thing to do... We believe that this distinguished one's profound

aura is unrivalled, so you are definitely not someone who is unable to distinguish right from wrong and cover up evil deeds.”

Ye Guying’s face was filled with righteousness, and his calm voice was laced with righteous anger as he sought to paint a scenario where Yun Che was the heinous sinner and Sun Moon Divine Hall was merely the party who was seeking “justice.” Moreover, he heavily emphasized the words “Sun Moon Divine Hall”... because in the Profound Sky Continent, there was no one who dared to offend Sun Moon Divine Hall.

“Haha,” the black-robed old man gave a polite laugh. “Anyone who has been killed by this old one’s disciple are definitely deserving of their deaths. On the contrary, it is your Sun Moon Divine Hall who assaulted these ladies’ territory for no rhyme or reason. If there was any crime that was committed here, this was it.”

“Hmph! This is a bunch of nonsense!” Ye Shi advanced as he raised his head and gave a cold retort, “There is definitely a special reason for our young

master to take action against Frozen Cloud Asgard! And even if one wants to retaliate, that is also something that only concerns Frozen Cloud Asgard! This brat Yun Che is only an outsider. Our Sun Moon Divine Hall has never taken any action against him before, yet he killed twelve of our people. So we have come here to seek justice as it is the right and proper thing to do! But in order to protect your disciple, you actually changed chose to deliberately distort the truth...”

“That is enough Ye Shi, do not be disrespectful.” Ye Guying

raised a hand and used his eyes to convey a message to Ye Shi. This was because the aura of this black-robed man was simply far too dreadful, and if they really angered him, the consequences would be too horrible to contemplate. He raised his head and said with a face filled with righteousness, "Our Sun Moon Divine Hall has existed for ten thousand years, and defending the Profound Sky Continent has always been our mission. Over this ten thousand year period, we have repelled those who sought to invade the Profound Sky Continent countless of times! Because of this, the people of the Profound Sky Continent have given us the title

of ‘Sacred Ground,’ and our the  
ten thousand years of  
meritorious service rendered by  
Sun Moon Divine Hall is beyond  
reproach! We bear the name of a  
‘Sacred Ground,’ and we also  
bear the burden of ensuring the  
safety of all that live within the  
Profound Sky Continent, so our  
actions have always been  
upright, candid, and completely  
beyond reproach! Perhaps  
because this distinguished one’s  
profound aura is unrivaled, you  
want to force us to bear the  
mark of a sinner, but even if we  
are not equal to this  
distinguished one, we will still  
definitely not allow you to do so!



“But if this distinguished one takes action and kills us for the sake of protecting your disciple...” Ye Guying continued with solemn eyes, “it just might be that all of the people in the world will not agree to it!”

Ye Guying’s words caused hatred and resentment to appear on the faces of all the gathered ladies of the Frozen Cloud. To them, these people were devils who behaved viciously for their own personal gain, yet right now, they unashamedly portrayed themselves as the guardian of the Profound Sky Continent, and they even dared

to use the will of the people as a threat. It was simply far too despicable!

But what they could not refute was that the Four Sacred Grounds were truly regarded as “sacred” amongst all the people of the Profound Sky Continent. And common knowledge regarding the “Sacred Grounds” was that they constantly defended the borders of the Profound Sky Continent, keeping them safe from invasion and eliminating countless of calamities which threatened the Profound Sky Continent.

In the eyes of the common man, it was the existence of the Four Sacred Grounds that ensured the peace and prosperity of the Profound Sky Continent.

So Ye Guying's "threat" was definitely not just a false alarm or pure bluster and bravado.

"Haha." The black-robed old man gave yet another tepid laugh, and he did not show any fury, but this laugh contained a trace of mockery. "There is

nothing that happens in this Profound Sky Continent that can escape this old man's eyes. Perhaps you can trick the entire world, but this old man knows all of the ugly things that you have done over the years. Just based on how many women your so-called young master has harmed over the years, that alone is already a sin that cannot be tolerated by the heavens!"

"When we have returned, we will naturally convey the words of this distinguished ones to our Hall Master," Ye Guying said without flinching. "Actually, this humble one has not left his

Divine Hall for a very long time, so I have always been ignorant and ill-informed when it comes to worldly affairs, so I do not know where this distinguished one hails from. May I be so daring as to ask where this distinguished one is from.”

Ye Guying’s words clearly showed his intense desire to retreat... This was an individual with a terrifying profound aura, so the only thing he needed to do now was ensure that he could leave as quickly as possible with his young master in tow! Facing this dreadful aura, he knew that every second they remained

here exponentially increased the danger that they faced.

“This old man’s name has long ago faded into dust...” the black-robed old man said with a slight pause. Following that, he raised his head slightly and suddenly let out a long and heavy sigh, “Ah, the world of mortals is vast and boundless, and their quarrels never end. I have already sworn to never again stain myself with the affairs of the mortal realm, and I definitely should not get involved in its quarrels... All of you should leave, this old man does not want to break his long

tradition of not taking a life because of you.”

As the words of the black-robed old man fell, the initial response of the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall was not relief. Instead, they looked at each other with strange expressions on their faces, and they felt the pressure on their bodies and the anxiety that was plaguing their minds dissipate.

Even the faces of the ladies of the Frozen Cloud were colored with a clear disappointment...

and anxiousness.

Yun Che's master had appeared exuding an extremely alarming aura, but when the other party asked for his name, he did not reply, asking them to leave instead... anyone here would be able to see that this person was perhaps afraid of Sun Moon Divine Hall!!

He did not dare let the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall know his name, and he also did not dare extend a hand against Sun Moon Divine Hall!!



However, this was also something that was inevitable! In this Profound Sky Continent, no matter how powerful a person or a power was, they still would not dare act rashly in front of Sun Moon Divine Hall!! And if they dared to make a move against Sun Moon Divine Hall, they were courting their own destruction!!

“Leave?” Ye Juanyun took a step forward instead with a bland smile draped across his face. Whether it was his expression or his gaze, both had

undergone a noticeable transformation... Even though the mysterious black-robed old man in front of them had a shocking aura, it began to increasingly look like... the aura that was emanating from his person was fake... it was almost as if it was being released by some kind of special profound artifact! Because this aura was simply too incredible, it was strong to the point where it was far too unusual and unreasonable. If there was really someone who had such an aura in this world, then why would Sun Moon Divine Hall not know of him?! Also, if he was really as strong as he seemed to be, why did he not have the courage to

present his name? Furthermore, before they had even begun to talk, he seemed to be urgently trying to chase them away.

“We have come here just to seek justice for the dead servants of our young master. If we were to leave just because of a few words from this distinguished one, then how would we be able to face those two dead servants and our brothers from the Divine Hall?!”

Ye Shuran narrowed his eyes as he spoke up as well, “That is

right, we did not even hesitate to use the Sun Moon Sacred Ark to travel thousands of kilometers, all just to come to this place. It was simply a fortunate coincidence that we found Yun Che. So if we let him go just like this, won't we lose a lot of face? Also, if word of this spreads abroad, then our Sun Moon Divine Hall is going to be ridiculed throughout the lands."

The black-robed old man did not move an inch, and his voice was still as calm as stagnant water, "So what are you intending to do? Will you definitely force this old man to

kill once again?”

“Naturally we would not dare to do so. Every single one of us here cherishes his own life,” Ye Guying said slowly as his eyes were far more relaxed than they were just a moment ago. “This distinguished one’s profound aura is so strong that this is the first time in my life I have ever witnessed such a thing. And I truly believe that you can easily kill any single one of us. But, after all, we are still a Sacred Ground of this continent... All of us are members of Sun Moon Divine Hall. This time, our young master has personally

ventured forth while being accompanied by four elders. If we were to retreat just because of the words of this distinguished one, then what dignity will our Sun Moon Divine Hall still have left?! As members of this Divine Hall, how can we act in such a way which will destroy the dignity of our sect?!

“However, we also acknowledge that we are not this distinguished one’s opponents, so the mission to kill Yun Che will more than likely end in failure. Yet we cannot leave just like this...” The depths of Ye

Guying's eyes shone with a deep craftiness as he continued, "But how does this proposal sound to you? Our Divine Hall's Elder Ye Shi will spar with this distinguished one, and I believe that given the strength that this distinguished one has, that you can definitely easily defeat Elder Ye Shi. Since that is the case, we will know that our strength is inferior and we will retreat in defeat. But we will not leave just due to this distinguished one's words, and this will allow us to return to our Divine Hall with our dignity intact.

"This way, no one will get hurt,

and our relationship will not be affected either. What is even better is that we will not cause this distinguished one to break his vow to not kill. So I believe that this distinguished one will definitely not reject such a perfect plan.”

Following Ye Guying’s slow speech, Ye Xinghan, Ye Shuran, Ye Juanyun, and Ye Shi all laughed gleefully in their hearts... This was indeed the careful and meticulous Ninth Elder. What a wonderful plan he had devised! Because by forcing this black-robed old man to take action, there would be one of



two conclusions. If he truly possessed a shocking power and was able to defeat Ye Shi, the restraint he had shown towards Sun Moon Divine Hall and his unwillingness to break his vow of not killing another would allow Ye Shi to survive this encounter and would allow them to retreat without losing a single member

And if his strength was simply inferior and this bizarrely strong aura was only artificially manufactured by some special means... then they could do whatever they wanted to all of the people present!

Of course, if he rejected this request... then it would completely confirm that he was all hot air!!

So without even waiting for the reply of the black-robed old man, Ye Shi had arrived in front of him in an instant. As he drew close to the old man, that peerless and dreadful aura caused all the nerves in his body to spasm uncontrollably, but he immediately suppressed those spasms with all of his might. He gave a smile that did not reach his eyes as he said, "This humble

one is the fifteenth elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall, Ye Shi, and I have come specially to experience this distinguished one's unrivaled profound strength. This distinguished one only needs to defeat me and we will immediately leave this place and will never appear before this distinguished one ever again... I hope that this distinguished one will show mercy to my humble self."

"Hahaha." The black-robed old man said as he gave a dull and emotionless laugh, "Since these are your intentions... then I will accept them."

# Chapter 674 – Absolute Deterrence

---

“However, we do not need to spar,” the black-robed old man said as he lifted his left arm and a pale and slender white hand appeared from amidst that voluminous black sleeve. The hand slowly flipped open, and a cluster of flames that was only the size of a fist soundlessly appeared and began to silently hover there as it burned.

This was a cluster of blue flames, and among the profound flames, blue profound fire was

one of the lowest grades of profound flames. It was also a profound flame that belonged in the lower rungs of power. Above the Earth Profound Realm, all of the profound flames should be purple at least. So that was to say that blue profound fire could not even harm a Sky Profound Realm practitioner, much less these strong and mighty Monarchs.

But what differentiated this blue flame from normal profound flames was the bizarre ice-blue tint that these blue flames had... and its color was almost exactly the same as that

of extremely dense ice energy. What was even more bizarre was that one could not feel any profound energy emanations coming from this icy-blue fire. It was as if it was not even profound fire, but instead was the most ordinary and most harmless natural flame which could only be used to burn normal things.

“You only need to be able to block this old man’s small cluster of starfire and this old man will leave immediately and never again meddle in the affairs of your Sun Moon Divine Hall. But if you cannot even handle

this tiny bit of starfire... then all of you will have to leave immediately and never trespass in this place again!”

The icy-blue flames gently swayed on top of the black-robed old man’s palm. While that heavy voice was still calm, it carried along with it an incomparably huge pressure, and the way the words were phrased made it obvious that this was not a discussion; instead, it was an unquestionable order... Furthermore, there was one more thing that was left unspoken but was clearly spelled

all for all to see: You are basically not even to exchange blows with this old man. So if you can fend off this tiny cluster of flames, it will be counted as your win!

Once someone becomes a Monarch, he would have reached the highest level of power in this world. So as an individual that could look down on the rest of the world, there was never a time when a Monarch had been so despised before. Ye Shi's heart burned with anger and he gave a cold laugh, "Even the Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix God who is at the



Divine Profound Realm would not dare to look down on an elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall. So this distinguished one, to speak in such a manner, you must truly be unafraid that your own words will come back to haunt you!”

“Haha...” The black-robed old man gave an indifferent laugh and did not speak any further. He simply pushed his hand out slightly, and the icy-blue flames leisurely flew towards Ye Shi’s chest.

The stronger one's profound energy was, the stronger one's comprehension of the natural laws would be, so the released energy would naturally become strong and dense. And once one had reached the level of Monarch, even the amount of energy it would take to lift a finger was enough to cause the air around to twist and tremble... This icy-blue flame flew out without a single vibration of profound energy, and there was no rippling or distortion in the space around... In fact, without even needing to mention space, even the natural elements in the area were not disturbed in the slightest.

When it was still in the black-robed old man's hand, they could still understand that this cluster of fire's lack of aura was due to the old man using profound strength to suppress it, but now that it had flown out of his hand, it still did not have any energy aura to speak of... The only explanation was that this cluster of fire was not composed using any laws of fire, and it was merely the most ordinary of flames!!

Besides this explanation, there was definitely no other

possibility!

Immediately, Ye Shi's only remaining thread of anxiety vanished into thin air. At this moment, he could completely verify that the black-robed old man who had appeared out of nowhere was only bluffing, and that absurdly strong aura was definitely artificially created by some special method in order to scare others... that is right! In this world, besides the Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix God, there existed no other person that could defeat the Saint Emperor, the Sovereign of the Seas, the Heavenly Monarch, or

the Sword Master! To think they had almost been so scared that they were going to retreat!

Ye Shi's expression immediately grew dark, and he gave a cold laugh. He did not even bother to circulate his profound energy and simply sent a palm towards the incoming cluster of icy-blue flames. When his hand came into contact with the fire, he did not even feel the slightest bit of heat at all. That fire completely vanished from his view without leaving even a single mark behind.

“Hahahaha!” Ye Shi began to laugh wildly, “And here I was, thinking that this was some noble individual that hailed from unknown parts, but it looks like it was only a mad clown who tried to use smoke and mirrors to trick us! Hahahaha, this is simply too hilarious!” As he continued to laugh, he turned towards Ye Xinghan. “Young Master, Ninth Elder, it looks like today we will...”

When he had spoken up to this point, his voice suddenly came to a sudden halt. This was because he had discovered that

Ye Xinghan, Ye Guying, Ye Juanyun, and Ye Shuran all looked like they were looking at something extremely terrifying as their eyes had opened to their widest degree and their pupils had completely dilated. As for the fifteen protectorates behind them... their faces were filled with abject terror and all the muscles on their faces and their entire bodies were trembling greatly... and as that trembling grew more and more intense, they opened their mouths as if they wanted to say something, but in their extreme terror, they could not voice their words.

The entire world seemed to completely freeze at that point, and there was a momentary silence that was broken by Ye Guying's desperate and hoarse roar, "Your hand!! Hand!!"

Ye Shi involuntarily turned to look at his own hand... In an instant, his pupils had widened by many times, and his face had turned deathly white due to his extreme shock and terror.

Because the arm that he lifted up... no longer had a hand attached to it!!



His right hand... had disappeared!!

And this cluster of icy-blue flames continued to silently burn on the arm that had lost a hand... No! His arm was not being burned. To be accurate, it was being devoured! And as the icy-blue flames spread, he witnessed his hand disappearing inch by inch... and in the blink of an eye, the flames had spread to near his shoulder and half of his arm had completely disappeared.

During this entire process, there was no aura or sound that he could sense. In fact, he could not even feel the slightest bit of pain! There was no hint of something being burned... no one could see even a speck of ash being produced!

It was as if his arm was being mercilessly devoured by an invisible and terrifying black hole!

And what was being devoured was the mighty body of a

Monarch at that!!

This was something that all of them had never seen or heard of before. This was a terrifying scene that completely exceeded their knowledge. Ye Shi's pupils had dilated to the point where it seemed like they were going to rupture as the greatest fear that he had ever felt in his life swelled up within him, causing him to let out a hoarse and distorted cry while he frantically focused all of his profound energy towards his right arm, as he was trying all means to suppress that dreadful "fire." But the moment his profound

energy came into contact with the icy-blue flame, it seemed to be swallowed up completely and disappeared in an instant. The blue flames did not even seem to be the least bit affected, much less suppressed, as it still unhurriedly continued to burn its way up slowly towards Ye Shi's shoulder...

There was no pain... not even the slightest hint of pain, but as he witnessed his body slowly disappearing, Ye Shi experienced a fear that was several times worse than being plunged into hell. His whole body shook as shrill screams echoed from his

mouth while his eyeballs practically protruded from his eyes in extreme fear and a web of blue veins could be seen scrawled across his forehead...

But no matter how he screamed and struggled, that cluster of beautiful, crystalline flames that was even scarier than a demon continued to silently burn...

“Save... Save me...”

Shing!!

Ye Shuran fetched a deep-purple longsword from his spatial ring, and as his body blurred, the purple sword made an arc through the air as it slashed down on Ye Shi's right arm, fiercely cutting off the remains of the arm that had been infected by that icy-blue fire.

But before the members of Sun Moon Divine Hall could breathe a sigh of relief, they discovered, to their horror, that even though Ye Shi's amputated arm had completely disappeared, the icy-

blue flames still remained, and it hung there in midair without dissipating until it separated into several smaller clusters... which all fell on Ye Shi's body.

In the blink of an eye, many holes appeared on Ye Shi's remaining arm, his legs, his chest and his abdomen... and as the embers swiftly spread and magnified, they whittled away at Ye Shi's body as it began to be reduced to nothingness.

Ye Shi's screams of shock and terror grew more and more

shrill as his entire body began to spasm and warp. His remaining arm was frantically flapping as if he was trying to tear apart his own body... but the moment his left arm touched the icy-blue flames, it began to shrink into nothingness as well. His frantic struggles caused the icy-blue flames to spread even faster to the entirety of his body as it caused this mighty Monarch's body to be covered with holes...

The weakest member of Sun Moon Divine Hall that was present was still an Overlord, and the strongest was a Monarch who had almost reached the late



stage of the Sovereign Profound Realm. But every single one of them had expressions of deep shock and terror on their faces. The pretty faces of the ladies of the Frozen Cloud had paled in shock as well... because they were witnessing an event that was so dreadful that it was unfathomable! And at this time, Ye Guying hurriedly turned towards Ye Shuran and screamed, “Shuran, throw your sword away!!”

Ye Shuran gave him a blank stare before he involuntarily dipped his head and he was immediately frightened to the

point where his spirit nearly left his body... The purple sword in his hand that he had used to sever Ye Shi's arm had been contaminated by some of those icy-blue flames... and even though it was only a small amount, it had already caused the entire tip of the sword to disappear as it began to swiftly spread downwards.

Ye Shuran's hand began to tremble as his soul flew out of his body, but he did not immediately throw the sword away. This was because this purple sword was Ye Shuran's beloved sword since it had

accompanied him for more than three hundred years, and normally, he held it to be as precious as his own life. But in this moment of hesitation, the icy-blue flames had already engulfed most of the sword and raced towards his hand.

Ye Guying suddenly dashed over and fiercely struck Ye Shuran's hand. He had not held back at all and caused Ye Shuran's hand to dislocate as the purple sword flew a great distance. Ye Guying stopped there and gave a low yell, "Do you want to die?!!"

Ye Shuran's entire body was filled with cold sweat. If his hand had been afflicted by that icy-blue flame, he would undoubtedly share the same fate as Ye Shi! After the lingering fear had passed, he promptly replied, "I than... thank the Ninth Elder for saving my life."

Ye Shi at this time, however, had already become unable to utter a single word. Most of his body had disappeared, and what remained was not recognizable as a human being. Even that was being swiftly consumed by those

icy-blue flames. Those remains occasionally twitched, proving that the elder from Sun Moon Divine Hall who had the strength of a Monarch still had a trace of life left, but very soon, even the last vestiges of life soon completely faded away... and his entire body had completely faded away from existence!

There was not even a single trace of him left!

As they looked at the spot where Ye Shi had vanished from, the faces of all the people

present were filled with a stunned horror. All of them remained rooted to the spot as if they had turned to stone. A cold wind blew, and their bodies trembled as a chill that was ten thousand times colder than the wind frantically washed through them... Their bodies had long ago become drenched in cold sweat.

The Sun Moon Young Master and the Sun Moon Elders... they were undoubtedly all peak existences on this earth, but at this moment, only fear existed in their hearts... Even their shock had been buried beneath a

fear that was far too heavy. This black-robed old man had a peerlessly strong aura, so they had concluded that he might truly have an extremely terrifying strength, but they had never expected that his very first move would be so dreadful!

This small bit of starfire had actually caused a mighty Monarch to disappear from this world without even being able to put up a fight... The scene they had just witnessed was more than terrifying... it was a power that should not even exist in the mortal realm, something that should only belong within

myths or legends!

This flame had not only been freely been created by the black-robed old man, but it did not even produce a hint of profound energy.

“Sigh...” the black-robed old man gave a soft sigh. “I had originally only wanted to give a stern warning, but who would have thought that an elder of a Sacred Ground would actually lose his life due to this small bit of starfire. To think that the profound level of this Profound



Sky Continent has fallen to this extent...”

The black-robed old man had seemed disappointed and frustrated... his words indicated that he had only wanted to use this bit of fire to give Ye Shi a warning, but he had never expected a stately elder of a Sacred Ground like Ye Shi would die without even being able to resist...

In other words, what was being said was... I know that all of you are very weak, but I had not

expected you to be quite this weak!

“Since I have broken my vow to not kill another... then all of you can stay here as well.” The black-robed old man gave another soft sigh as he extended his pale, white hand. Another cluster of identical icy-blue flames burned on top of his palm... and this cluster of icy-blue flames was more than two times larger than the previous one.

And it was still the same as before, he had easily ignited

these flames without even giving any indication that he had circulated his profound energy! It was as if this process was far too simple for this black-robed old man, and it was something that he did not even need to concentrate to perform.

Looking at that cluster of icy-blue flames, all of the hair on the bodies of the remaining three Divine Moon Elders instantly stood on end. And Ye Xinghan had also hurriedly retreated several steps as his expression no longer contained any vestiges of his previous arrogance and brashness; what remained was

only the deathly pale color of  
shock and fear.

# Chapter 675 – Flee In Disorder

---

“Se... Senior, please wait!!” Ye Guying panicked and Ye Xinghan’s way. “We will obey Senior’s order to leave immediately, and will not disturb Senior anymore...”

Ye Guying’s expression and eyes lost the steady and calm he previously had., even his voice was noticeably trembling. He changed how he addressed the black-robed old man from “distinguished one” to Senior as well. Ye Shi❖... the elder of

their Sun Moon Divine Hall, a mid-stage Monarch who looked down upon the world, and even had a lofty position in Sun Moon Divine Hall, had managed to be casually burned into nothingness by a small flame that was set off by the black-robed old man. This strength was so terrifying and so incomparable...

His unbelievably overbearing aura was just an aura, but they clearly witnessed the process of turning Ye Shi❖ into nothingness as they were just within thirty meters! That was strength that completely

exceeded their knowledge and imagination! To turn a mid-stage Monarch into nothingness with such ease, not mentioning the Saint Emperor, Sovereign of the Seas, Heavenly Monarch, or the Sword Master the four rulers of Four Great Sacred Grounds, even the one and only Phoenix Spirit, who was half-step Profound God back then, wouldn't be able to do it!

Even if it was the phoenix flames released by the Phoenix Spirit's strength with all its might that could cover the sky, a mid-stage Monarch would still be able to somewhat resist.

But this black-robed old man lit up icy-blue flames the size of his fists with just a wave of his hand.

The density and the power of this ball of icy-blue flames must be so strong that it was on a level they cannot even imagine. The law that it involved was definitely more than one or two great realms from the limit that they could understand!

There was actually such a terrifying person that exists in



this world!

Thinking on it now, the reason he let them leave just now was not because of fear towards Sun Moon Divine Hall... but it was clearly because he despised to even lay his hands on them!

“Hmph!” the black-robed old man scoffed lightly, the icy-blue flames in his palm swayed. “I let you leave just now, but you deliberately provoked me and made me break my ten thousand year vow to not kill. Now you want to leave? How can I let you

off so easily!”

The black-robed old man's voice was not calm like water like before anymore, but there was some anger in it now, and obviously, it was anger of breaking his vow! The “ten thousand year vow” that came from his mouth shocked everyone that was in his presence... This scary old man's lifespan... was actually more than ten thousand years!!

To have a ten thousand year lifespan, how scary was this old

man's realm?!

That ball of icy-blue flames danced around a bit in the center of the black-robed old man's palm, and from that, Ye Guying and the others' hearts cramped up. The image of Ye Shi❖ miserably dying reappeared in their minds like a nightmare, and they were on the verge of dying in the same miserable way!

“Senior, calm your anger!” Ye Guying cupped his hands, kneeled down, and said in a

humble and panicked manner, “No matter how overconfident we are, we would definitely not dare to offend Senior master. Just now it was really just for us to be able to give an explanation when we return to Sun Moon Divine Hall. That was why we suggested to compare our strength a little with Senior... The reason Elder Ye Shi❖ died in the hands of Senior was because he wasn’t good enough. It cannot be blamed on Senior at all. I, as the Ninth Elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall, promise that after Senior raises your hand high in mercy and let us go today, our Sun Moon Divine Hall will definitely not hold you accountable for what happened

with Elder Ye Shi❖, and the grudge with your disciple would also be done for once and for all...”

As one of the top ten elders of Sun Moon Divine Hall, Ye Guying hadn't showed such a humble attitude for many years. But in front of this black-robed old man, how could he dare to display his usual attitude? He could not even wait to crawl onto the ground now because it would be as easy as waving his hand for him to kill them! And his murderous intent had already been incited! If he really attacks... Ye Shi❖ didn't even

have the ability to struggle, so they wouldn't be able to either! Not only would they all die, they would have died for nothing!

This was the scariest person that they had encountered in their whole lives, and it was also the first time that they faced a real deadly threat, how could they dare to be rash! Even if it was the Elder of Sun Moon, under the shadow of true death, they could only beg for their lives with everything they had.

“Heh, not accountable?” The black-robed old man laughed softly in disdain. “You think I am afraid of being ‘held accountable’ by Sun Moon Divine Hall!? The Sacred Grounds that are too high to be reached, in my eyes... demolishing your Sun Moon Divine Hall is as simple as waving my hand!”

His voice was calm, but it shocked everyone’s hearts and souls tremendously. “To demolish your Sun Moon Divine Hall is as simple as waving my hand,” such presumptuous words, who else in this world

would dare to say that? If they heard something like this before today, Ye Guying and the others would definitely treat it as the biggest joke in the world, but at this moment, what they felt wasn't ridicule and contempt but was deep shock and fear... The terrifying image of Ye Shi being casually burned into nothingness by a little spark t emerged before their eyes again and caused chills to run through their entire bodies.

Ye Guying said in panic, "Yes, yes... Senior is a master from another world. Sun Moon Divine Hall must not be worth



mentioning in your eyes. But... if anything happened to Young Master today, even if it is Senior, my Sun Moon Divine Hall would not rest easily. Even though it is impossible to do anything to Senior, Senior is a master who has not been in contact with the mundane world for many years, I suppose you would not be willing to induce this type of 'little trouble.' Also..." Ye Guying came up with an idea in the spur of the moment, stayed calm, and said, "Senior is angry because you broke your vow to not kill unintentionally. But killing comes from the heart. If there isn't really any intent to kill, it doesn't count as breaking your vow. Senior didn't kill Ye

Shi intentionally, it was only because ❖Ye Shi wasn't strong enough and was overconfident when catching Senior's divine flames. That's why his spirit perished... Ye Shi❖ died because of himself, not because of Senior, so Senior actually didn't break your vow."

"Now that Senior has murderous intent against us, if you kill us all, then you would really be breaking your vow! Senior is an unparalleled master in this world, and we are just commoners who are not worth mentioning. There is no need for Senior to break your vow

because of insignificant us and taint your clear heart that has been closed off from the world.”

“Ninth Elder is extremely right!” Ye Juanyun immediately followed up, “Even though there is a misunderstanding between your disciple Yun Che and us, but... more than ten of us died by Yun Che’s hand, and we have never even hurt a single hair of your disciple! Senior has upheld his vow for many years, so you must have a big heart and your heart is like the master creator of the vault of heaven...”

“Say no more!”

A calm voice interrupted Ye Juanyun❖. The black-robed old man slowly retracted his palm, the ball of icy-blue flames also disappeared, and the murderous intent that slightly filled the air also dispersed, but that overbearing pressure that covered the sky still existed and was heavily bearing down on their hearts and souls. “Even though you said what you said to live, it is also reasonable. Nevermind, you all can leave. After today, you can never come

back here!”

Everyone from Sun Moon Divine Hall lifted their heads, as if they heard a voice from heaven. For the first time in their lives, they had the feeling of “escaping from death.” Ye Guying said in a trembling voice, “Thank you Senior for your mercy! My Sun Moon Divine Hall will remember Senior’s grace...” His voice stuttered, but he took a breath and then said, “Allow Junior to ask, may Senior grace us your great name! In the future, no matter where Senior goes, my Sun Moon Divine Hall will definitely

retreat and keep our distance. And we will absolutely not offend anyone related to Senior.”

What Ye Guying had said was absolutely not to take revenge after finding out his name... Ye Shi❖ died miserably, but the strength of the black-robed old man completely exceeded their knowledge, so they didn't even consider getting revenge. As for “retreat and keep their distance,” this was not false at all! This level of horrifying existence, they just hoped they never encountered it ever again in their lives.

“Great name?” The black-robed old man slowly said, “What can you do even if you know? In this world, my name has not existed for a long time. If it wasn’t because I accepted my last disciple under destiny, the rest of my life will no longer be in contact with the mundane world.

“My name is Heaven Seizer! Heaven Seizer is the name!”

“Heaven... Seizer...” Ye Guying said it in a low voice. This was

indeed an unfamiliar name that he had never heard before, and it was also the wildest name that he had ever heard! How wild or how strong would a person be to dare to use “Heaven Seizer” as his name!

“Senior Heaven Seizer, we will leave right this moment! If you have time in the future, I wish you would descend and come be a guest at our Divine Hall. Our whole Divine Hall must greet you!” Ye Guying’s footsteps had already started backing off faster and faster while he was speaking. He could not wait to fly away from this place



immediately. What he said was half to settle the black-robed old man's emotions, and the other half was naturally to try to make nice with him. Because such a horrifying person, even if he cannot make friends with him, he absolutely cannot become enemies with him.

When they immediately turned around and prepared to fly towards the Sun Moon Sacred Ark, a voice suddenly sounded behind their backs,

“Wait!!”

Yun Che was the one who had spoken. It seemed like because of impatience and unwillingness that his voice was especially deep. Ye Guying and the others stopped their footsteps and chills were running down their backs... The black-robed old man let them go, but this didn't mean Yun Che let them off the hook! If Yun Che strongly asked the black-robed old man to keep them all here...

“Che’er, no need to say much.”

Before Yun Che could say anything, the voice of the black-robed old man had already sounded calmly, "Master knows what you want to say. You really thought that master let them go because I despised laying my hands on them or am unwilling to break my vow? Wrong!"

His voice became a little harsher now, "Master taught you a long time ago, unless there is really a threat on your life, you cannot borrow master's strength and cannot become reliant on it! Master knows that you hate these people to the bones because of the matter of

Frozen Cloud Asgard, and impatiently want to put them to death, but it is to my limit to make them leave. If you want them dead, you can only use your own strength to do so!!”

“Six years ago when we met as master and disciple, you were only a cripple with crippled profound veins. Master repaired your profound veins, guided you for three years, and none of the younger generations of the Seven Nations could be a match to you! Three years ago, master broke the space and brought you back from the Primordial Profound Ark, and until now,

with your strength, you can already battle a Monarch! Even though you can't kill them now, if you cultivate with your heart under master, in three more years, you would be able to kill any one of them with just a wave of your hand! In three more years, the whole Sun Moon Divine Hall will be under your feet. There is no need to harm your cultivating heart yourself today just for today's pleasure!"

These words were all said to Yun Che by the black-robed old man, but hearing this, every single person of Sun Moon Divine Hall trembled in fear.

In six years of time... from a cripple with crippled profound veins to having the strength to battle against a Monarch... It merely took six years!!

This was such a horrifying concept!!

And they all clearly knew that these words were definitely not false! Because according to their investigation of Yun Che over these past three years, six years ago, he was really just a cripple with crippled veins. The people

from the city that he lived in for more than ten years all knew about him, and he was even the laughing stock of the entire city!!

At first, when he revealed his strengths at the Divine Phoenix Sect, he only cultivated profound strength for a short three years!

They finally found the answer to this terrifying fact today. It was because, behind him, there was such a horrifying master! It was a thousand times more

horrifying than what they had once imagined!!

With six years, from a cripple to the strength of the level of a Monarch, even though their Four Great Sacred Grounds looked down to the whole world, they could never achieve that themselves.

There was also a sentence that every one of them heard clearly... The reason Yun Che was still alive, wasn't because he wasn't trapped in the Primordial Profound Ark like they had



guessed but was because he was saved by the black-robed old man from the Primordial Profound Ark!!

Which means, he could actually travel through space between the Profound Sky Continent and the Primordial Profound Ark!!

An indescribable shock trembled in their hearts and souls. As the strongest Monarchs of the Profound Sky Continent, they couldn't begin to understand the realm that the black-robed old man was in...

Compared to it, it was like a completely different world.

Yun Che lowered his head and said, “Master is right, disciple will remember it.”

His voice was very soft and low. This arrogant, wild Yun Che who dared to face the Divine Phoenix Sect alone, and even had the guts to offend Sun Moon Divine Hall seemed to be especially respectful and toned down in front of his master.

Ye Guying grabbed Ye Xinghan's arm, rushed into the sky as fast as he could, and did not dare to stay any longer... Six years and he was able to battle Monarchs... Three more years and he could kill any one of them... Three more years and he can step on all of Sun Moon Divine Hall as he pleased... These words were just like a curse that lingered within his heart and soul.

He started to feel like becoming enemies with this Yun Che, who they looked down upon before, seemed to be the biggest mistake that they had ever committed over these years!

# Chapter 676 – Casting Off The Calamity

---

The nineteen members of Sun Moon Divine Hall fled, entering the Sun Moon Sacred Ark in less time than it would take to utter a breath, lest the frightening black-robed old man suddenly changed his mind. Following the shutting of the ark's door, the Sun Moon Sacred Ark shot into the horizon in a flash, disappearing amongst the boundless snowfall which only left behind a slowly dissipating frigid current in its wake.

When they had arrived, they had twenty people altogether, including the Young Master, four great elders, and fifteen formidable protectorates. They originally believed this line-up to be completely overkill, like using a butcher's knife to slaughter a chicken. But shortly after they had arrived, they hadn't been able to harm Yun Che in the slightest. Instead, they had lost one of their great elders. Moreover, having to retreat in such a state... their hearts continued to tremble with fear as their entire bodies were drenched in cold sweat until the Sun Moon Sacred Ark had flown several hundred kilometers away.

“They’ve left... they’ve finally left...”

The overbearing aura of a Monarch that had caused all those who felt it to tremble disappeared without a trace, and the surroundings which had previously been saturated with the aura returned to normal. Following the Sun Moon Sacred Ark’s panicked flight, the women of Frozen Cloud Asgard should have felt relieved, but all of them stared in a daze at the black-robed old man who floated in the air. They looked at him as

if they were looking at a diety.

Murong Qianxue took a step forward, and with the deference of a junior greeting a senior said, “Junior Murong Qianxue, on behalf of Frozen Cloud Asgard, thanks senior for his kindness!”

“Heh...” The black-robed old man weakly laughed, “Senior Master Murong... being called senior, I cannot... accept...”

The black-robed old man’s voice caused Murong Qianxue to

be dumbfounded. In her astonishment she raised her head to look towards the black-clothed figure. All of the women from Frozen Cloud Asgard behind her were petrified... since this voice completely lacked its previous deepness, indifference, and age... it clearly was Yun Che's voice!!

“Whew...”

Letting out a long breath, the black-robed old man's body violently flashed, and he fell, landing heavily on the snowy



ground.

“Ah! Big Brother!”

“Yun Che” cried out in alarm, hurrying to the black-robed old man’s side as he used his body to help him up. At this moment, the black-robed old man’s body lacked all of its previous earth-shattering pressure, instead appearing as weak as someone who was nearing death.

Murong Qianxue and the others looked at each other in dismay.

Mu Lanyi quietly asked, “Asgard Master, how did this happen? Senior, he...”

“No... it’s not!” “Yun Che” waved his hand, and stuttered, “I’m not the Asgard Master, Big Brother is the Asgard Master... ah... he... he is big brother...”

The black-robed old man’s robes were peeled back which, astonishingly, revealed Yun Che’s face underneath... appearing exactly the same as the “Yun Che” currently helping him stand up!! The Yun Che

which had removed his black robes had a face that was deathly pale, and his chest moved up and down violently, urgently and heavily breathing in and out. He laid there paralyzed, unable to get up for the longest time. He shut his eyes while his face revealed a satisfied expression as he laughed, “Very good... my Dragon Soul... was able to last long enough... whew...”

His voice was incredibly weak, but it was definitely Yun Che’s voice. On the other hand, the “Yun Che” who was helping him stand had the voice of a

stranger. “Yun Che” was also hurriedly wiping away at his face, revealing his own face underneath as he anxiously said, “Big Brother, you have to be alright... your aura... how could it become so weak?”

“I’m alright,” Yun Che nodded his head. Laughing lightly he continued, “I merely overused my energy. I’m just tired, after resting for a bit I will be fine.”

The black-robed old man that had thoroughly frightened Sun Moon Divine Hall, causing them

to retreat in fear, had become Yun Che. Moreover, “Yun Che” had become a stranger, causing the Frozen Cloud Asgard women to stare stupidly at them, gazing dimly at Yun Che and Xiao Che. Chu Yueli said in bewilderment, “Asgard Master, this... how did this happen?”

“This is my sworn brother... Xiao Yun,” said Yun Che, whose profound aura had calmed down a bit, as he rose with difficulty while borrowing Xiao Che’s shoulder. “Before, he was within the profound ark. I disguised him as me. Just now, when I suddenly disappeared and

entered the profound ark, the ‘me’ who you all saw exit was him.”

“... Everyone... fairy sisters... ah, and senior sisters, I... I am called Xiao Yun,” Xiao Yun stuttered, not daring to lift his head as he spoke. Just facing one of these women who were just like snow immortals, his heartbeat would speed up and he wouldn’t be able to speak coherently, let alone facing so many all of a sudden.

If he hadn’t seen it with his

own eyes, he might not have been able to believe this world contained such an unexpected... wonderland?

“As for my so-called ‘master,’ from the beginning, it was me,” Yun Che laughingly said. In regards to Xiao Che’s reaction, he wasn’t the least bit surprised.

“It was all a facade.” Yun Che understood that they were bewildered and smiled, saying, “I used special techniques in order to produce such an imposing aura. As for the

starfire that killed Ye Shi, I prepared that a few hours beforehand in the Frozen End Divine Hall. As for everything else... I fabricated it all in order to intimidate them...”

The heaven-encompassing power that was able to intimidate Sun Moon Divine Hall was naturally from Yun Che's Dragon Soul. He had used all of his might, doing his utmost to urge forth the Dragon God Soul to release the tremendous power of the Dragon Soul. Although Yun Che's current power was far from sufficient to bring out all of



the Dragon God Soul's power, in the end, it was still from the Dragon God and was a power on the level of a "god." Even if it was only a shallow bit of it, it was still enough to cause mighty Monarchs to tremble in fear.

Although the Dragon Soul Domain's strength could defeat enemies in the blink of an eye, the amount of energy Yun Che expended was exceedingly large. Before using it, he also did not know how long he would be able to keep it up for. Today was a gamble. Luckily... he had succeeded!

Exterminating Ye Shi caused Sun Moon Divine Hall to fly away in terror from the otherworldly ice-blue flame. That very flame was Yun Che's fusion of Frozen End Divine Arts and the phoenix's flames to create "Ice Flame." Yun Che needed a long time to create Ice Flame; moreover, for the entire process he had to fully concentrate his heart and mind and not have any disturbances. It was simply unrealistic to use it during fights or when facing enemies.

The two clusters of Ice Flames which he had used against Sun Moon Divine Hall were created by him in the Frozen End Divine Hall before their arrival. But all energy, after being created, would naturally begin to dissipate. As soon as it had left the creator's body, especially upon touching other objects, its strength would explode and begin to dissipate into nothingness.

In addition, the only person who was able to create and hold onto Ice Flame was naturally Yun Che. But even if Yun Che could make it in advance, he

couldn't simply take out the Ice Flame as soon as Sun Moon Divine Hall arrived. If he had done that, the deterrence factor would not be as strong, and he wouldn't be able to create the image of an "absolutely strong and unprovokable master" by laying all his cards out on the table.

But Yun Che had an extremely special container for the Ice Flame... which was the Sky Poison Pearl!

This was because the Sky

Poison Pearl had already assimilated into his body and could be considered a part of his body. Since the Ice Flame he created could only be held within his body, it could naturally be stored with the Sky Poison Pearl as well. As a result, when Yun Che had created the two batches of Ice Flame in the Frozen End Divine Hall, he had inserted it into the Sky Poison Pearl... Nevertheless, even if it was in the Sky Poison Pearl, the power of the Ice Flame would still dissipate a bit. The batch of Ice Flame which Yun Che had used to exterminate Ye Shi was the first batch he had made in the Frozen End Divine Hall, and as a result, it had dissipated

more... compared to the latter batch, it was only half the size.

The Dragon God Soul's pressure was enough to intimidate Sun Moon Divine Hall, but it wasn't enough to scare them into fleeing. Today, from beginning to end, Yun Che had relied the most on the Ice Flame. At the time, when Yun Che was only at the Earth Profound Realm, the batch of Ice Flame he created was sufficient to destroy the Heavenly Profound Jade which had taken two Overlords an entire half year to destroy. At the Sky Profound Realm, the Ice Flame was enough to create a

large hole in the ancient Primordial Era Profound Ark. Presently, having reached the Emperor Profound Realm, he believed that even if it was a Sovereign, they wouldn't be able to completely resist the power of the Ice Flame.

It was just that, the terror of the Ice Flame, still far exceeded his expectations. He had originally expected that, in the face of the auraless Ice Flame, Sun Moon Divine Hall elders would certainly treat it with contempt, and as a result, they would get hurt and have to use their entire power to resist the

Ice Flame... and even if they only lost a single hand, it would still be enough to cause great fear... after all, it was energy that his “master” casually threw out.

What he hadn't imagined was that one of the four great elders, in the blink of an eye, would perish and burn into nothingness as a result of the Ice Flame without the slightest ability to resist! Moreover, this was Ice Flame that had already lost more than half of its power!

This was the Evil God's power defying natural laws, combining ice and fire together which



resulted in an absolutely terrifying degree of power!

In addition, the energy it created was naturally extremely strong. It caused the crowd of Sun Moon Divine Hall elders who would normally look down on the world to turn ashen-faced in fright and for their voices to tremble in fear. Finally, when they ran away, they frantically ran, not even daring to look back.

“So it was like this...” Chu Yueli mumbled softly. Her expression

didn't release any of its tension, growing even more astonished instead. This was all a facade... but they had no way of imagining what kind of techniques could create such a facade.

It was no wonder that when "Yun Che" emerged the second time his expression had none of its previous haughtiness, and instead, most of the time he lowered his head, speaking softly and a bit hoarsely... they had originally thought that he was being deferential in front of his master when in reality it was just a fake Yun Che.

“No matter how it happened, Sun Moon Divine Hall’s villains have all been scared into running, trembling as they fled.” Feng Hanyue said as she clasped her hands in front of her chest, facing Yun Che.

“Yes, Yes!” Feng Hanxue immediately followed, nodding her head, “Although it was fake, Asgard Master is too amazing, scaring all those powerful people into fleeing, scaring them so much that they probably... wouldn’t dare to come back, would they?”

“Yes... at the very least, until they discover the truth, they won’t have the guts to come back. After all, often the stronger a person is, the more they fear death... In the future, this place, not only will it not have danger, it could be said... it will be the most safe place... whew...” After speaking, Yun Che’s head felt a bit of dizziness. He let out a heavy breath of air and closed his eyes. Today’s harvests were great, having completely exceeded his expectations. In this way, not only would Sun Moon Divine Hall no longer dare to come back to the Snow Region of Extreme

Ice, his own degree of safety had greatly increased since the news that he had an extremely strong master who could seize the heavens would be spread by Sun Moon Divine Hall. At that point, no matter who or what power wished to take his life, they would have to consider whether they could afford to provoke the “master” which had caused Sun Moon Divine Hall to piss their pants in fear!

Although the “master” was a facade that he had designed, the might of the world shocking flame that was able to burn Ye Shi to nothingness... this

couldn't be faked!

In this way, Frozen Cloud Asgard had thoroughly broken through its difficult circumstances. In addition, he would be able to be at ease and relax... and go to handle the problem of the Divine Phoenix Empire!

“Asgard Master...” Yun Che’s appearance caused Murong Qianxue to softly cry out, promptly moving forward to personally prop Yun Che’s body up. “Asgard Master is currently

very weak, quickly take him to the Frozen Palace to rest... Sir Xiao, please come along too.”

“Ah?” Xiao Yun stared blankly then hurriedly waved his hand, saying with an ill-at-ease expression, “No, no... I won’t enter, I heard big brother say that Frozen Cloud Asgard doesn’t have... doesn’t have any males...”

Jun Lianqie relaxedly said, “Although our asgard seldom accepts male visitors, Sir Xiao is the Asgard Master’s sworn

brother and also is our palace's noble guest. In addition, Sir Xiao helped Asgard Master repel the powerful enemies and can be considered our Frozen Cloud Asgard's benefactor. At the very least, let us extend our invitation of friendship, please."

Xiao Yun looked to Yun Che, who was being held by Murong Qianxue, for help, only to discover that his eyes were lightly closed and his breathing was steady, as if he had already fallen into a meditative state. Having no other option, Xiao Yun scratched his forehead and said with an embarrassed



expression, “Okay... then I will have to impose.”

After all, in this completely foreign land. Without Yun Che’s Primordial Profound Ark, he had no way to return to Blue Wind Imperial City.

# Chapter 677 – The Shuddering Divine Hall

---

The speed of the Sun Moon Sacred Ark was extremely fast. Soon enough, the vast snow region was hundreds of miles behind them.

When they were out of Blue Wind Nation, the people from Sun Moon Divine Hall finally calmed down a bit. They wiped their foreheads which were still covered in cold sweat.

“I had no idea... that in this world, there is actually someone this terrifying!” said Ye Juanyun still fearful as he took a deep breath.

“Sigh, the territory of Profound Sky Continent is this vast, and there is nothing too strange in this boundless universe... Maybe, we really were looking at the sky from the bottom of a well,” Ye Guying sighed. Since he first entered Sun Moon Divine Hall several hundreds years ago, this was the first time he had been so frightened... Thinking back to the black-robed old man who was beyond

horrifying, it was like he had visited the gates of hell.

“This is outrageous!” Ye Xinghan punched out brutally, causing a deafening sonic boom. His voice was filled with hatred, “Among the strongest practitioners in this world, besides the Phoenix God of the Divine Phoenix Sect, it is impossible for anyone to exceed my father’s level... How could someone like this suddenly appear out of nowhere!! Why was someone like this completely unknown before!!”

“Young Master, please calm down.” Ye Guying comforted in a soft voice, “When someone reaches a level like that, if he wants to be unknown, there is no one in the world at all who has the ability to discover his existence. Young Master, do you still remember how he appeared? There was originally no trace of his aura, but in an instant, it covered the sky and the sun, and his entire person also suddenly appeared in the middle of the air. Even when Yun Che went to call him out, his person and aura also completely disappeared, and then appeared again out of thin air. Young Master, do you know why that is?”

Ye Xinghan gritted his teeth hard, and said in a low voice, “Autonomous world!”

“That’s right!” Ye Guying’s face was full of shock... and admiration. “At the level of us Monarchs, we can create our own space for storage. Once someone reaches a certain supreme realm, they can control space as one pleases and create their own little world! This is absolutely not a false legend. It’s like the Supreme Ocean Palace’s ‘Divine Ocean Secret Realm,’ and the Primordial Profound

Ark that Young Master was on three years ago. The worlds within are all independent small worlds created by strong practitioners using an unparalleled divine power during the Ancient Era. Sss... I thought the profound practitioners who are at this level in this world had already gone extinct and would appear again. I did not expect, today... I actually saw someone like this myself!”

“His realm is so high that even we cannot comprehend it.” Ye Shuran shuddered violently when he thought about Ye Shi, a

mid-stage Monarch just like him, being burned into nothing by the flames that were thrown out from the fingers of the black-robed old man so casually. He said in a trembling voice, "If he wants to kill us, it is simple as easy as turning his hand. Even when he held our Sun Moon Divine Hall in contempt... I feel like he wasn't just bluffing. If it wasn't because he wanted to use us as examples, it is impossible for us to still be alive."

He looked at Ye Xinghan and said with a lingering fear, "If we die, we die, but if was Young Master... we really couldn't



redeem ourselves even if we died ten thousand times!”

“I feel like he simply felt disdain at the thought of attacking us, even killing Ye Shi❖ was just an accident.” Ye Guying sighed heavily and said, “Back then Yun Che dared to face the Divine Phoenix Sect alone. Now he even killed the people of Sun Moon Divine Hall and intentionally sent the death imprint to Young Master, so I had already thought that he must have someone supporting him... But I absolutely did not think the person behind him was someone this shocking and

frightening.”

“Lord Heavenly Monarch will know about Ye Shi❖’s death immediately for sure. When we return... how should we answer him?” Ye Juanyun locked his eyebrows and said anxiously.

“What can we do? Of course report exactly of what happened in detail.” Ye Guying said, “We had never heard of this ‘Heaven Seizer’ before. But he mentioned ‘ten thousand years,’ which means that he is an old monster that has lived for at least ten

thousand years. His name probably was once renowned in the world ten thousand years ago, so it is normal for us to have never heard of it. But Lord Heavenly Monarch has the memories that are passed down through the generations of the Sun Moon ancestors, so he might know the name.”

Ye Guying turned his head, looked in the direction of Blue Wind Nation and said in an incredibly serious manner, “Young Master, I know that you must be very unwilling, but... as the future owner of Sun Moon Divine Hall, you must learn to

endure a moment... or even a lifetime of anger. With the strength of Yun Che's backer, it is definitely not a wise decision to become enemies with him! With the protection of someone like this and with his shocking growing speed in strength... maybe it really isn't empty words that six years later he would be strong enough to stomp over all of Sun Moon Divine Hall by himself... Moreover, it was said by the person named 'Heaven Seizer' himself. So..."

"So, before we are certain that we can shake his backer, we

must not become enemies with him.” Ye Juanyun’s expression was heavy, as he continued to say, “We also need to try our best to resolve the resentment from before... This matter really cannot be treated lightly.”

“We should return to the Divine Hall immediately and let Lord Heavenly Monarch decide how to handle this matter with Yun Che.”

Even though the amount of time Yun Che faced Sun Moon Divine Hall wasn’t long, under

the activation of the Dragon Soul, each breath was accompanied with an extremely large consumption of his mental energy. With such consumption, if he was a normal profound practitioner, it would take at least a couple of days of rest to be at ease and more than half a month to recover, and it would develop a irreversible side effect. Yun Che has the dragon soul origin, so his rate of recovery of his mental energy cannot be compared to a regular person's, but even so, he didn't wake up from meditating until high noon.

“Ah! Asgard Master, you finally woke up... Senior Sisters, Asgard Master is awake!”

Right as Yun Che opened his eyes, he heard a young girl's surprised yell by his ear. He woke up from the chilly bed and saw a beautiful young girl in white standing there. There was joy and a slight red glow on her cheeks that was finer than snow lotus, and her beautiful eyes were looking at him without blinking... Because of his heroic action of scaring Sun Moon Divine Hall off, the way she looked at him was obviously different than before.

Yun Che sat up, inspected his own mental status now, and asked the young girl, “Senior Sister Hanxue, what is the time now?”

“It’s already high noon.” Feng Hanxue answered in a clear and melodious voice, and her beautiful eyes showed surprise. “Eh? Asgard Master, how did you know that I am Hanxue? I am the same as my Big Sister from top to bottom. Even our disciples and senior sisters that are most familiar with us... even the previous Asgard Mistress



couldn't tell us apart, but Asgard Master called out my name immediately. You also seem to be very sure."

"It's actually very easy to tell." Yun Che said while smiling, "Even though your appearance, voice... even expressions are almost the same, there is still a little difference in your body scent."

"Body... scent?" Feng Hanxue was lost as her mouth gaped a little.

Yun Che said slowly, "To become a qualified medical practitioner, one must learn to identify hundreds of herbs. Many of the medicinal herbs looks the same, so to identify them, one must rely on their scent. That is why the nose of many medical practitioners are more sensitive than normal people's. Senior Sister Hanxue and Senior Sister Hanyue's body scent is very similar, but Senior Sister Hanxue's body scent carries a scent that is slightly close to the smell of a Snow Fern Flower, and Senior Sister Hanyue has the smell of a Frosting Flower. Normal people wouldn't be able to tell the difference, but to me, it is

something that can be easily identified.”

“Snow Fern Flower... what kind of flower is it? This is the first time I’ve heard of it.” Feng Hanxue blinked, and before Yun Che could say anything, she spoke herself, “But the name is very nice, so the smell must be very pleasant! Asgard Master, you are so impressive. I feel like there is nothing that you can’t do in this world. No wonder that even though you are a man, previous Asgard Mistress still insisted on passing the position of Asgard Master to you.”

“That is of course! There is still a lot more that I know. If Senior Sister Hanxue is willing, I can show it to Senior Sister Hanxue only.” Yun Che was not humble at all and said smilingly, but in his smile... there seemed to be a few... evil intentions?

“Ah? Yes! Asgard Master said it yourself, you are not allowed to go back on your words!” Feng Hanxue said happily, “But, I have said many times, it’s Junior Master, not Senior Sister!!”

“I understand. Oh right, Senior Sister Hanxue, where is Xiao Yun now?”

“He is in the Snow Cloud Hall. Asgard Master, are you and him really sworn brothers? But your personalities are completely different. Xiao Yun kept his head down the whole time and didn’t dare to talk with us. After we settled him in at the Snow Cloud Hall, he hasn’t come out for the entire morning,” Feng Hanxue said while laughing. Then, she suddenly noticed something and said while trying to keep a straight face, “It’s Junior Master, Junior Master, Junior

Master! Not Senior Sister! Even if... even if you are the Asgard Master now, the seniority cannot be ignored!”

“I understand, Senior Sister.”

“...You never listened to Junior Master!!” Feng Hanxue stomped her foot, turned her face away, and seemed like she got upset.

At this moment, the snow curtain seal on the door was removed. Murong Qianxue, Jun Lianqie, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli,

and Feng Hanyue, the five of them walked in quickly. When they saw Yun Che, their beautiful eyes all lightened up at the same time. “Asgard Master, you woke up.”

Whether it was their words or the look in their eyes, they were all accompanied with deep worrying and care. Three years ago in the Frozen Cloud Asgard, the voice that he heard was almost completely cold, chilly, and without emotion. At first, after he helped them open all of their profound entrances and achieve the Heavenly God’s Spiritual Veins that they

couldn't even dare to dream about, they gave him their approval and even some thanks. At least they stopped taking his profane intentions into account and opposing his joining Frozen Cloud Asgard, but that was merely it.

But as of today, it was completely different. He first solved Frozen Cloud's calamity and then scared Sun Moon Divine Hall into retreating... that was Sun Moon Divine Hall, in all of Profound Sky Continent, there were only a handful of forces that could go head to head with Sun Moon



Divine Hall! And what's more was that he could have ignored them all, yet instead, he risked his life, directly faced Sun Moon Divine Hall, and resolved this disaster. Even if their hearts were ice cold, they deeply felt gratitude and warmth.

And there wasn't any rejection towards his position as the Asgard Master.

“Mm, I worried you all.” Yun Che leaped up from the ice bed, his eyes turned towards outside the window. “Frozen Cloud

Asgard suffered from these six months of calamity, so it will take a while to reform. During this period of time, I will need your hard work. I still have other important matters, so I cannot stay here long for now.”

“Asgard Master, you are leaving now?” Murong Qianxue stepped forward unconsciously. “But, you were just in a coma for such a long time, it would be better for you to rest more.”

“No need. I only wore out some of my mental strength before.

Now I am completely fine.” Yun Che’s eyebrows lowered slightly, and he said in a low voice, “Blue Wind Nation was stomped by Divine Phoenix Empire into the way it is now... Forget about my status of Blue Wind’s prince consort, even if I am merely the most ordinary citizen of Blue Wind... I absolutely cannot forgive them!”

# Chapter 678 – Floating Cloud City’s Devilish Energy

---

“Junior Master Yueli, during these three years, was there any... news of Yuechan?” After hesitating, Yun Che still asked the question. He knew in his heart that the possibility of him getting a certain answer was so minuscule that it might as well be zero.

Seeing how expectant he was, Chu Yueli’s expression dimmed as she shook her head.

“It’s okay...” Yun Che took a deep breath. “Three years ago, I once entrusted Black Moon Merchant Guild’s headquarters with obtaining any information they could on Yuechan. With Black Moon Merchant Guild’s ability and it having been three whole years, they have to have found something... Maybe, they have already found out where she is.”

“Mn!” Chu Yueli nodded slightly, and her beautiful eyes were sparkling rays of hope. “Asgard Master, when you head

over to the Black Moon Merchant Guild, remember to ask them if they have obtained any information on Qingyue. Now that the crisis here has been dealt with, it is instead not safe for her to be out.”

“I will.” Yun Che nodded, “I should be in Divine Phoenix Empire for a period of time. Maybe my stay will be long or maybe it will be short. If there are any accidents, remember to send me a sound transmission immediately. I will have a way to get back here right away!”

Yun Che bade farewell to the Frozen Cloud disciples, retrieved the Primordial Profound Ark, travel through space, and returned to Blue Wind Imperial City.

Compared to yesterday, Blue Wind Imperial City was a lot more peaceful today; at least, that heavy, dark, and desperate atmosphere was half gone. The return of Prince Consort Yun and the news of him demolishing the army of tens of thousands of Divine Phoenix Empire had already spread throughout Blue Wind Imperial City and its surroundings,

lighting up the hope that was extinguished a long time ago.

“Husband, how did it go with Sun Moon Divine Hall?”

When Yun Che returned, Cang Yue quickly came out to welcome him. Under the phoenix crown, her tender face was covered with deep joy and tiredness that couldn't be hidden. Apparently, because she was worrying, she stayed up all night again.



“Empress sister-in-law, Big Brother really was too... too... too impressive!” Before Yun Che could answer, Xiao Yun was unable to hold back his excitement and yelled, “The people from Sun Moon Divine Hall were all so strong. Not only did their Young Master come personally, there were also a few Monarchs. But Big Brother burned one to death, and the others were all scared off... he scared them so hard that they would absolutely not dare to come again. Ah... Seventh Sister, you don’t need to examine me, I am really not injured at all. I only stood there for a little while and didn’t fight with anyone, ah OW-OW-OW...”

Xiao Yun's plain words naturally couldn't illustrate the scene back then, and he didn't know that under the surface of an incredible success, Yun Che's every breath was as if he was walking on a steel wire above a thirty thousand meter deep abyss.

Cang Yue didn't inquire any further, because just by looking at the assured expression in Yun Che's eyes, she knew that the calamity of Frozen Cloud Asgard had been already resolved... even though their opponent was

Sun Moon Divine Hall. She smiled and said, "As long as everything is fine. This time, you should go to Grandfather's side."

"Mn, I will take Xiao Yun there right away." Thinking about Xiao Lie and Xiao Lingxi's faces, warmth naturally flowed through Yun Che's heart, and then, it became stronger and stronger, turning into excitement so strong that he almost lost control.

"Xiao Yun, the Floating Cloud

City that we are going now... is where you were born. When we get there, you will be able to see your real blood relatives,” said Yun Che as he picked up the Primordial Profound Ark once again and smiled.

Xiao Yun opened his mouth, paused for a good while, and then shook his head hard, “Yes!”

Finding his own blood relatives and meeting and reuniting with them was the main reason that he came to Profound Sky

## Continent with Yun Che!

“I want to go too,” said Number Seven Under Heaven as she hopped and grabbed onto Xiao Yun’s arm.

“You and Xiao Yun are family now. How could we meet family without you. You can’t not go!” Yun Che smiled and said, “Yue’er, I will bring Grandfather and Little Aunt back soon. Brother Under Heaven, Yuanba, I will leave the imperial city to you two.”

“Brother-in-law don’t worry, no matter how many people they send, they shouldn’t even think about coming near here!” Xia Yuanba raised his strong arms, held his fists together, and exaggeratedly cracked his knuckles.

“Xiao Yun, Seventh Sister, let’s go.”

“Ah? Just... just go like this? Should we prepare something, like... like...” Xiao Yun didn’t know what to do all of a sudden. For over twenty years in the

Illusory Demon Realm, he was labeled as the “Profound Sky Bastard.” Even though he was twenty-two years old, he had never seen any of his blood relatives before.

“You don’t need anything, let’s go!!” said Yun Che as he grabbed onto Xiao Yun. Compared to Xiao Yun’s nervousness, he couldn’t wait any longer.

After entering the Primordial Profound Ark and setting the distance and direction of the travel, in only an instant, they

were already in the air above of Floating Cloud City.

Leaving the Primordial Profound Ark, Yun Che took a deep breath of the air here... “I finally returned again, to the place that I grew up in...”

The air still held a familiar smell, but without the scent of the smoke of gunpowder this time.

From three thousand meters up in the sky, Yun Che silently



looked down at his homeland that he was most familiar with. Blue Wind Nation was the smallest nation out of the seven nations of Profound Sky Continent, and Floating Cloud City was the smallest city of Blue Wind Nation. It was originally not noisy and lively compared to other large cities, but Floating Cloud City was currently even quieter than how Yun Che remembered it. Even though there was some people on the narrow streets, it was far less than usual.

As Cang Yue had said, even though Divine Phoenix Empire

surprisingly sent a whole army of two hundred thousand to Floating Cloud City, they didn't have any intention of attacking. Yun Che's eyes swept over Floating Cloud City, and there didn't seem to be any trace of battle... Not to mention large scale ones, there weren't even small scale skirmishes. The streets were neat, there was no damage to the buildings, and the entire city wasn't shrouded with an atmosphere of panic. Moreover... With Yun Che's scouting, there was only one set of troops which should be the Divine Phoenix Army's in the direction of the City Head's Palace in Floating Cloud City which only numbered around

hundred.

Yun Che was relieved with this result, but at the same time, suspicion rose within his heart.

The citizens of Floating Cloud City were weak, the city was small, the land was poor, and the surrounding of the city was not abundant with resources. Even the profound beasts that existed there were ones of the lowest level, so there was no value in hunting them. On top of that, its location was at the most eastern side of Blue Wind

Nation. The region was remote, and troops needed to travel a long distance, so taking it over would do more harm than good. If they had to take control of it, with the military force of the Divine Phoenix Army, a few thousand soldiers and mounts would be able to manage it... but the Divine Phoenix sent an army of two hundred thousand soldiers!

And this was before they sent their troops to Blue Wind Imperial City!

Just as Cang Yue had said, after the two hundred thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army arrived here, they never left.

But before their very eyes was a scene like this in Floating Cloud City.

Everything had a strangeness to it that could not be explained with common sense.

What's going on?

What is the Divine Phoenix Empire trying to do to Floating Cloud City?

BOOM~~

BOOM~~~

BOOM!!

Deep explosions came from the east, northeast, and southeast. Some of the explosions were far away, and some of them were

relatively closer and even more concentrated. Yun Che quickly turned his head to look to the east, and when his eyes looked that way, he saw a bunch of red shadows that were either condensed or scattered at the uneven, abandoned mountain region on the east side of Floating Cloud City. His eyebrows scrunched up a bit as he squinted as much as possible and slowly noticed that the red shadows were part of the Divine Phoenix Army which were wearing scarlet-red light armor!

“What is that sound? Could a battle be taking place over

there?” Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven looked to the east and asked in alarm.

“It’s the Divine Phoenix Army!”

“Divine Phoenix Army? Could someone be in a battle with the Divine Phoenix Army?” Xiao Yun immediately asked. His eyes and Number Seven Under Heaven’s eyes couldn’t compare to Yun Che’s as Yun Che possessed the power of the Rage God.



“No,” answered Yun Che as he shook his head. There was deep confusion in between his eyebrows. “From what it looks like, they seem to be blasting the ground in a controlled manner.”

“Blasting... the ground?” Xiao Yun’s eyes widened. “Why would they do that? Could it be for training soldiers?”

Yun Che pondered, shook his head, and said, “I don’t know. Let’s ignore them for now. Let’s go, we’re going to land.” He extended out his hand and

pointed at the most familiar place in his life. "That is Xiao Family's courtyard, and it is also the place that I grew up in for sixteen years. Grandfather and little aunt are there right now."

Just as Yun Che's body was about to land, Jasmine suddenly yelled deeply in his mind, "Wait!"

Yun Che's body suddenly stopped. Whenever Jasmine suddenly used this tone, she must have noticed something that cannot be ignored. He

immediately focused and said,  
“Jasmine, what’s wrong?”

“Where is this place?” Just as Jasmine finished speaking, she recognized the place herself. “Floating Cloud City?”

Apparently, Jasmine had just woken up from her sleep. Yun Che answered, “I just returned here, what did you find? Is there something wrong here?”

“...” Jasmine was silent for a good while, and then she said in

an incredibly deep voice,  
“Why... why is there devilish  
energy here!”

“Devilish energy?” Yun Che  
was stunned. “What do you  
mean by devilish energy?”

“...” Jasmine continued to be  
silent for a while, and her voice  
became even deeper, “It indeed  
wasn’t an illusion. That is  
definitely devilish energy!  
Devilish energy... to explain it  
simply, is when one or more  
types of negative emotions reach  
a certain limit. The law becomes

twisted, and profound energy will mutate! The devil profound energy that it creates is even stronger than profound energy of the same level, but it is also harder to control. Because devilish energy will only be created with extreme negative emotions, the ones who possess devilish energy... all have twisted minds and beliefs. They are evil creatures that should not exist in this world! Or they can be directly called a demon or devil!

Yun Che, “...”

“This plane is really getting interesting, there is actually devilish energy here!” Jasmine said in a low voice. Towards the “devil,” she had deep disgust and even hatred because she had been poisoned by the most fearsome devilish poison!

“This person is in Floating Cloud City?” asked Yun Che as he lowered his voice.

“That’s right, and... it is within Xiao Sect that you are about to return to!”

“What!?” Yun Che’s heart was shocked.

“Go down and check it out immediately. I’d like to know what kind of person could release devilish energy on such a low level plane!” Jasmine’s tone was especially unusual.

# Chapter 679 – Fen Juechen?!

---

“Big Brother, what’s wrong?” Both Xiao Yun and Number Three Under Heaven instantly tensed up after seeing Yun Che suddenly stop accompanied with a change in his expression.

“Sigh, looks like there’s going to be a small problem here,” Yun Che said rather helplessly. “Let’s go down.”

As Floating Cloud City’s largest



profound cultivating clan, Xiao Clan looked especially eye-catching within the city from up above. The place where Yun Che landed was not where the main entrance was located. Instead, he landed on Xiao Clan's east side, almost subconsciously, on a certain courtyard close to the rear mountains.

This place was very quiet, the entire Xiao Clan was very quiet. The courtyard before them was very small and only had simple decorations and a simple house. An emerald-green grape arbor was at a corner of the courtyard, and it was packed with grapes

that were almost ripe. Next to the grape arbor was a simple stone table and what appeared to be two small stools. The stool to the right was even covered with tons of long cracks.

As he stood in the center of the courtyard and looked at everything before him, the light in Yun Che's eyes wavered as he stood, completely dazed for a moment.

“Big Brother, this place is?” Xiao Yun curiously asked when he saw Yun Che's appearance.

“This place is a place that carries almost all of the memories of the first sixteen years of my life,” Yun Che softly answered.

“Ah? This is... Big Brother Yun’s home?” Number Seven Under Heaven asked in shock as she looked around. To ordinary citizens of Floating Cloud City, being able to possess a courtyard like this was considered to be lavish. But to someone born from a Guardian Family, especially to Number Seven Under Heaven, who was the

Under Heaven Family's only princess, this kind of home was just too simple and shabby... He was the Yun Family's Young Patriarch, the Illusory Demon Realm's Demon Lord, and even could be regarded as the fated person who had saved the entire Illusory Demon Realm... She never imagined that the place where Yun Che had grown up in would actually be this crude.

“Right, this is my home,” Yun Che smiled. “I’ve been living here from as long as I can remember. But at that time, this place wasn’t only mine, it belonged to my little aunt as

well. At that time, we would spend every day together. Wherever I went, she would go, and wherever she went, I would follow as well. We were like each other's shadows... until I turned ten, when Grandfather said that we weren't allowed to live in the same courtyard and found a new courtyard for Little Aunt. Because of this, Little Aunt would cry for days, and I also used all my energy to protest against this. However, the grandfather that usually pampered and spoiled us in every possible way wouldn't budge no matter what on this matter. “

“From then on, Little Aunt, who was now living in her new courtyard would usually secretly come over to sleep with me. But when she was discovered by Grandfather, she would get a fierce scolding... Later on, we gradually understood that it was improper for men and women to be that intimate, so Little Aunt no longer secretly came over.”

Yun Che softly recounted softly with a faint smile. His current smile came from his soul, without the least bit of impurity. In those years, even though he was regularly mocked by others, occasionally bullied, and always

bore the contempt and pity filled eyes of others, because he had Little Aunt at that time, his happy times were far more than the sorrowful ones; even his feeling of inferiority was dim.

During these years, he was no longer that profound vein cripple who didn't have a future. He only grew stronger and was now looked up to by more and more people, so much that some would fear him. His current level was much higher than the Xiao Sect that the Xiao Clan revered like gods, yet it also caused his world to be filled with trials and hardships, causing

him to not be able to return back to the happy world where only Little Aunt existed.

More than six years had passed since the time he had come here, but everything here almost completely overlapped everything in his memories without any hint of change... Regardless of whether it was the gate, windows, stone table, or grape arbor... Even the lantern that was hung there on the day of his wedding with Xia Qingyue six years ago was still there, though it had already been deformed by the wind.



The entire courtyard looked incredibly tidy, without any of the ruined, messy appearance Yun Che had expected from a place that had been left six years ago. It was like everyone had come to sweep this place every day. Yun Che advanced forward and stood before the stone table. He lightly pressed a finger on the stone table, swiped, and then lifted it... There wasn't even a trace of dust.

This place... had just been swept by someone...

Yun Che's heart trembled.  
Could it... could it be...

“Little Che... is that you?”

In this world, there were very few sounds that would stir Yun Che's rock-hard soul, but Xiao Lingxi's voice was definitely among them. Yun Che's mind shook, and he almost instantaneously turned around... At the entrance of the courtyard was Xiao Lingxi, clad in a light green dress. Her beautiful, starry eyes were filled

with a layer of thick watery mist.

“Little Aunt...” Yun Che uttered softly. His arms unconsciously lifted forward, wanting to travel through space to touch the closest, most familiar, and most important girl in this life. I’m back...”

“Ah...” Xiao Yun couldn’t help but make a sound. He looked at Xiao Lingxi, and asked dazedly, “She’s... she’s...”

The “little aunt” Yun Che uttered confirmed this girl’s identity... This extremely beautiful girl with a delicate temperament who seemed to be even younger than he himself, was... his little aunt... was his own blood related... relative...

Xiao Lingxi’s little hand heavily pressed on her lips as sparkling tears fell like jade pearls. After time froze in that short instant, she cried softly and threw herself at Yun Che with her tears scattering. She heavily threw herself into his bosom, and both her arms tightly hugged him as her torrential tears quickly

drenched a large area on his chest.

“Little Che... Little Che... Little Che...” she repeatedly called out, and soon, she couldn’t hold back her sobs.

“I’m sorry, Little Aunt... I promised you that I would come back in a month, yet... yet I’ve made you painfully wait for three years.” Yun Che formed a loop as he gently hugged the girl in his chest. Her waist was even more delicate than three years ago, and her body was even

more fragile... Even her profound strength had declined instead of advancing. Within these three years, Yun Che had grown about a foot, causing the girl in his bosom to appear even more delicate and exquisite in front of him. And what pained Yun Che the most was her weeping... The Little Aunt he knew would laugh loudly and cry loudly. In front of him especially, she wouldn't hold anything back and let herself loose.

But the Little Aunt before him, even though she was sobbing, she was actually trying her best

to repress it, to not make any sobbing noises, and only her shoulders continued to violently spasm. She had less spirit than before, and what replaced that was actually a dense melancholy that almost broke Yun Che's heart.

In these three years, news of his "death" and Blue Wind Nation's huge calamity had carved out many cruel scars on her heart...

Yun Che's hands silently tightened. He lifted his head as

wisps of pain rippled in his eyes... When there was nothing good about me, when my profound veins were still crippled, what I saw the most every day was Little Aunt's smiling face... Now that I'm getting stronger by the day, why is it that I'm always giving Little Aunt heartbreak and pain everything...

The power I was chasing...  
what exactly was I doing it for?!

Xiao Lingxi forcefully shook her head as she hugged him even



tighter. The chest she was leaning on was even broader than before, and it was also the only place in the world where she truly felt stable and content in. While still sobbing, she softly said, “I know... that Little Che didn’t do it on purpose... It’s good that Little Che is back... I thought that I’d never see Little Che again... My Little Che’s... finally back...”

She mumbled, the pain of having lost someone and the joy of having regained them once more even after all hope had been lost clearly evident. Yun Che sucked in a long breath of

air. He spoke lowly, with an incomparably firm voice, “ Little Aunt, I’ll promise you that I’ll never you...”

Yun Che’s voice suddenly halted as his entire body abruptly stiffened. His gaze that had instantly become ice-cold suddenly swept behind him as he quickly turned around, bringing Xiao Lingxi along with him.

Because in that instant, an extremely cold aura had locked onto him out of nowhere... He

possessed the Water Spirit Evil Body, so he wasn't afraid of the cold, but when that aura enveloped him, it caused him to instantly feel a frigid, heart-piercing sensation. All the hairs on his body shot up and stood on end. Two abyss-black, fiendish eyes had even been faintly projected in his mind. He suddenly felt like he was standing a thick and terrible pitch-black hell.

This kind of densely cold, extremely uncomfortable aura that I've never felt before... could this be the devilish energy Jasmine was talking about?

Who is it?!

In the instant he turned around, Yun Che's gaze locked onto a black figure that floated in midair... Dressed in black from head to toe, he was shorter and thinner than Yun Che. His long hair was as black as night and reached the middle of his waist. His complexion was stiff and pale, and his eyes were lifeless without a hint of light in them. The aura emitted from his body carried a coldness which seeped into one's bone marrow, yet Yun Che actually couldn't

find the slightest hint of life within it... It was as if what floated there was not a living person, but a dead corpse.

When he saw this black figure's face, Yun Che's brows fiercely moved as his revealed deep astonishment on his face.

“Fen Jue... chen?!” The moment he finished his sentence, Yun Che's voice held a distinct hesitation.

His outer appearance and

expression were exactly the same as the Fen Juechen in his memories. However, the Fen Juechen he knew never had this kind of aura. Not only that... he clearly felt a distinct, ice-cold danger from that black-robed person! With the realm Yun Che was currently in, those that made him feel danger at least had the power of early-stage Monarchs, and when he released Fen Juechen three and a half years ago, his profound strength was only at the Spirit Profound Realm. In a short, not even four years, there was no way he could possibly reach a level that was strong enough to threaten him.

“Hm? It’s actually this guy.” Jasmine’s voice also held the same astonishment.

“Yun... Che!!” His face was still stiff, and when he spoke, whether it was his expression or dark eyes, there wasn’t the slightest bit of wavering, yet his voice carried an ice-cold, bone-piercing resentment. “You’re still alive... you’re actually still alive!!”

“...” The aura enveloping Yun Che instantly became colder many times over. The instant

this black-robed person opened his mouth, Yun Che was now certain... that this person was truly Fen Juechen! Because this kind of voice, this kind of tone, and this kind of hatred was exactly the same as when he had released him that year!

“Did you know how much I hated and how much I suffered when I heard that you had died?! In these years, I’ve even wished that you would come back to life in my dreams so I could personally tear you to shreds!!”



Fen Juechen's hands trembled as two balls of black air which increasingly grew bigger floated around the palm of his hand. Yun Che glanced at the two balls of black air... He merely glanced at them, yet it caused his entire body to feel extremely uncomfortable. He shifted his gaze back and looked straight at Fen Juechen without backing down. "Looks like your dream has already come true. However... Do you really think that the current you can kill me?"

Before Fen Juechen had even replied, Jasmine coldly laughed

in Yun Che's mind, "His currently profound strength level is at the fifth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Added with the special attributes of his devil profound strength, if you were to fight him head-on, he would definitely be able to kill you!"

"~ ! # ¥ %..." The corner of Yun Che's eyes twitched greatly. "You're... kidding, right?!"

That year, when he had exterminated Burning Heaven Clan, the main reason why he

had only spared Fen Juechen was because he had saved Xiao Lingxi, and Xiao Lingxi pleaded with him. The secondary reason was because he subconsciously believed that even if Fen Juechen were to live, he would never be able to become a threat. At that time, a thousand Fen Juechens weren't even able to harm him. Moreover, with his unparalleled growth speed, even if Fen Juechen's innate talent was ten times higher, the distance between them would still grow farther until he was reduced to a mere existence like an ant.

The bloodlines and divine power he possessed was an extravagance that ordinary people couldn't even hope for even over hundreds of generations! His master was also Jasmine, whose very existence transcended this plane. On the Profound Sky Continent, in regards to growth speed, there shouldn't be anyone who would be able to surpass him.

Xia Yuanba's astonishing growth speed was because he possessed the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. It was also this heaven-defying talent that made him the precious

treasure of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, the number one ranked Sacred Ground.

The Fen Juechen of that time who was only in the Spirit Profound Realm... How could he, in the short period of four years, have already become a mid-stage Monarch?!

“You think that I’m kidding?” Jasmine coldly replied. “However, you don’t need to be that surprised. His strength wasn’t actually achieved by cultivation. Even his devilish

energy was not birthed from his own will. In fact, a devil origin was injected into his soul!”

# Chapter 680 – Arranging The Duel

---

“Devil origin? What’s that?”

“You had better focus on how to deal with the situation at hand first! This person has an exceedingly heavy desire to kill you! Hmph, when you don’t cut the grass and remove the roots, you leave behind a calamity for yourself! But I never thought that the misfortune that you would find would be so huge!” Jasmine criticized in a cold voice.

“Big Brother, this person is...”

“Do not follow me!” Yun Che fiercely thrust a hand out behind him, and a wave of energy rushed out and forcefully pushed the onrushing Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven back. At the same time, he used his other arm to grab Xiao Lingxi and thrust his body in front of hers.

“Do you think... that I am still that useless piece of crap that you left alive all those years



ago?!” Fen Juechen’s eyes and tone were incomparably dark and sinister. He raised both his hands which were covered in swirling black energy and a cold, mournful aura. This shook the air, causing everyone’s hearts to race. Even the light began to dim gradually as he continued to speak, “Do not worry, I will not take your life straight away... I will first let you experience all of the pain and suffering that I have endured over the last few years!!”

Fen Juechen’s eyes suddenly flashed with a black light, one that was even deeper than the

blackest of nights. His arm thrust forward, and a wave of black energy rushed towards Yun Che's throat.

The light around Yun Che rapidly dimmed, and before the cold and sinister energy had even drawn near, it had already seeped into his bones. Yun Che had never seen this kind of profound energy or aura before in either of his two lives. When he had exchanged blows with Hui Ye in the Illusory Demon Realm, his Fallen Devil Flames also radiated a sinister aura, but in terms of purity and density, it could not even be compared to

the aura being radiated by the attack which sped towards him!

This Fen Juechen... what exactly happened to him in the past few years?!!

Yun Che's arm swept up, and phoenix flames instantly ignited and rushed out to meet that sinister and black energy... But at this time, Xiao Lingxi suddenly rushed in front of him with an anxious cry and spread her arms wide open as she attempted to block the attack.

“!!” Xiao Lingxi’s sudden action had shocked Yun Che greatly, but he responded by extinguishing his phoenix flames and grabbing Xiao Lingxi. After that, his gathered profound energy changed to become completely focused on defense.

“Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!!”

But Yun Che was not the only one whose expression changed, Fen Juechen’s expression also suddenly changed and he hurriedly retracted his

outstretched arm. A majority of the black profound energy that was rushing towards Yun Che was immediately and forcefully taken back by Fen Juechen while the remaining energy exploded on the Evil God Barrier that was in front of Yun Che.

Ssss!!

The colorless Evil God Barrier had become stained black, and after a second, the black energy had completely dissipated while multiple fist-sized holes had astonishingly appeared on the

surface of the Evil God Barrier.

The scene caused alarm to flare in Yun Che's heart. It was clear that the dark energy was

something that Fen Juechen had casually created, yet it had easily broken through his Sealing Cloud Locking Sun! Sealing Cloud Locking Sun was a defensive barrier that was formed using the Evil God's power, and when it was not able to endure an attack, it would directly collapse. But this time, not only did Sealing Cloud Locking Sun not collapse, it had also been eroded away, and

many holes were created in it.

That dark profound energy... contained such a terrifying corrosive power! Could this be one of the dreadful properties of devil profound energy that Jasmine was talking about!?

But the shock in Fen Juechen's heart was definitely no less than Yun Che's. He was the most clear on the kind of terrifying power that he wielded right now. The aura of the Emperor Profound Realm emanated from Yun Che, and even though his rapid

increase in strength in these few short years was nothing short of shocking, a mere Throne was only a pitiful ant in Fen Juechen's eyes right now. If he wanted to destroy one, it would be as easy as waving his hand!

But even an Overlord would have an extremely hard time blocking the power that he had released just now due to his loss of control. Yet this attack had been completely blocked by Yun Che... and it was clear that Yun Che had forcibly converted his attack into a defense.



But this shock only lasted for a mere moment, and his gaze was not locked on Yun Che but Xiao Lingxi. After making sure that she had suffered no wounds, his aura stabilized, but after that, it immediately became even colder and more severe.

“Little Aunt, are you alright?” Yun Che hurriedly pushed Xiao Lingxi behind him. Xiao Lingxi shook her head and grabbed him instead while saying in an extremely anxious tone, “I am alright... Little Che, hurry up and leave! Hurry! He isn’t the Fen Juechen of all those years ago. Right now he is really

powerful, there is no way you can beat him... hurry up and leave! If not, he will... he will kill you. Leave! Quickly!!”

“Yun Che! You have finally fallen into my hands... so I will definitely ensure you die a dog’s death!!” After seeing how Xiao Lingxi had disregarded her own life to protect Yun Che, Fen Juechen’s eyes shone with the fires of hate, and the black energy surrounding his body abruptly erupted around him. In the blink of an eye, the sky and the earth grew dark. The air completely stopped flowing as the surroundings grew so dark

and sinister that it was as if everyone had been plunged into a hellish purgatory.

“What... what is this?” Xiao Yun said in alarm as he tightly shielded Number Seven Under Heaven. The world in front of him had swiftly become dark and gray, it was as if all the light in the area had been swiftly devoured by something. This kind of bizarre scene was something that he had never seen before even though he had grown up in the Demon Imperial City which was the location of the highest echelons of power within the Illusory Demon

Realm.

“Don’t!!” Xiao Lingxi swiftly cried out as she turned around and spread her arms once more, using her body to shield Yun Che. She looked at Fen Juechen whose entire body was covered in swirling black energy, and her trembling eyes contained an urgent plea, “Big Brother Fen, I’m begging you... I’m begging you, please don’t kill him!”

“I need to kill him!” Fen Juechen exclaimed with a low shout, “He had repeatedly

stepped on my head and has ground my dignity into dust... He killed my father, killed my grandfather, and killed my master... He killed all of the people in my clan... All of them! My hate towards him soars to the heaven. and my grudge against him is great enough to fill the ocean, so how can I not take my revenge... I do not engage in wanton slaughter, but he... must die by my hand!”

“Big Brother Fen...” Xiao Lingxi gently shook her head while she continued pleading with him, “Even though everyone is afraid of you, I have always known that

you are not a villain who revels in the slaughter of the innocents. You actually have an extremely kind heart... and you are an extremely good person. You not only saved me, but you also saved all of the people within Floating Cloud City. But why can't you put down all of your hatred and spare yourself as well! You are always burdened by vengeance and hate, don't you feel tired?! Doesn't it hurt?!"

"Tiredness? Pain? What do... these things amount to..." Fen Juechen's voice became cold and rough, "I am only the way I am today because of him! In order

to obtain the power to kill him and take my revenge, I have endured pain that is beyond all of your imaginations!! Even now, I am still plagued by this enormous, unending pain! And with every breath, this pain reminds me to never ever forget this grudge!”

Yun Che, “...”

Fen Juechen slowly extended a hand, and within his palm lay a pitch-black vortex that was as dark as a black hole. “As I have said before, I will not reject any

other requests that you make of me! As long as you desire it, I will not hesitate in the slightest, even if it costs me my life! But only my vengeance... cannot be stopped!”

The pitch-black vortex seemed to suck in the souls of everyone present, and if a strong profound practitioner were to just take a look at it, that person would feel a quaking that emanated from his very soul. Xiao Lingxi still remained rooted to the spot, shielding Yun Che with her body. The plea in her eyes slowly died, but it was replaced with a heavy



determination instead. “Little Che killed your entire clan, but when it comes down to it, the reason he did it was me! So if you want to kill Little Che... kill me first instead.”

“...” Fen Juechen’s chest fiercely swelled, and the hand which he extended began to faintly tremble, “No... this has nothing to do with you, I won’t kill you... even if I kill myself, I still will definitely not harm you. I only beg that... you do not obstruct me from killing Yun Che! You should know that... with your power, you won’t be able to stop me.”

“I am indeed unable to stop you.” Xiao Lingxi’s gaze remained firm and decisive. “But if you really kill Little Che... I will hate you for all eternity! And I will never, ever forgive you!”

Fen Juechen froze over, and the dark and gloomy energy suddenly stagnated. Following that, his eyes, arms, and his entire body began to be wracked by faint quivering. That dark and gloomy energy began to resume its movement, but it began swirling around

chaotically... and the hate in his eyes was replaced by a deep and profound pain.

No one could understand the fierce impact that Xiao Lingxi's words had on his soul.

No one knew why Fen Juechen, who had come to Floating Cloud City for the sake of vengeance, would choose to remain at this place and not depart.

Nor did anyone know why Fen Juechen, who originally for the

sake of vengeance was willing to endure endless agony to swiftly absorb the devil origin at all costs, began to continuously slow down the rate of his absorption of the devil origin after he arrived at Floating Cloud City.

Because in his world that was filled with darkness and gloom... she was his only source of warmth, his only source of light. And unconsciously... she perhaps became even more important than his bone-chilling vengeance... or at the very least, she was far more important than his own life.

“...Hm?” Yun Che had originally looked at Fen Juechen with a cold gaze, but now his gaze had wavered and his expression betrayed his astonishment. Because Fen Juechen’s originally extremely cold and sinister aura began to become chaotic, and his gaze and expression began to distort with exceptional pain. Even that ice-cold killing intent that originally locked onto him quickly dissipated amidst the chaos.

“Arghhh...” Fen Juechen’s face

suddenly turned pale. Dark red blood spewed from his mouth, and a large cloud of dark-colored blood sprayed down on the floor.

“Ah!” Xiao Lingxi gave a cry of alarm as she was left at a complete loss.

“What is happening?” Yun Che’s brows furrowed as he asked Jasmine, “You just said that his devil profound energy was not something that could be derived from his own will... so is he suddenly losing control of that power?”

“No!” Jasmine said in a low voice, “His profound energy attacked his own heart. Hmph, it looks like his mind and soul was agitated by what just happened... and in his case, they were agitated to an extremely large extent.”

“Yun... Che!!” Fen Juechen fiercely raised his head and glared doggedly at Yun Che. His blood-smeared face was both pale white and malevolent. The two words that he yelled out contained a surging hate and killing intent that far exceeded

what it was previously.

“...” Yun Che gently pushed Xiao Lingxi behind him and began to slowly walk towards Fen Juechen.

“Little Che!!” Xiao Lingxi anxiously pulled on Yun Che’s shoulder. “Do not go over! He...”

“Don’t worry.” Yun Che said as he held the hand that was tightly clasped around his shoulder and looked deeply in her eyes, “The grudge between him and I is not



something that can be wiped away or something that he can be dissuaded from. As long as I am alive, it is not something that can be avoided. The only option left for me is to face it head on.”

“Little Aunt, do not worry. He is indeed not the Fen Juechen of all those years ago, but I am also not the same Yun Che either. If he wants to kill me, it will not be easy as he thinks.”

Yun Che’s voice fell, but he did not continue to advance towards Fen Juechen. He only looked up

at Fen Juechen and said in a calm and tepid voice, "Fen Juechen, your desire to kill me is so fervent that you dream about it. I also wish to resolve the sudden nuisance that you have become as quickly as possible, so I do not need to waste long and sleepless nights worrying about you. However, today is not the time for such an encounter. Because there are far too many things for me to deal with at the moment, so I do not have any time to waste on you right now. And as for you..." Yun Che gave a long and calm laugh, "As long as my Little Aunt is here to protect me, it would be hard to kill me even if you wanted to."

Fen Juechen's eyes widened into saucers, and the black energy surrounding his body fiercely swelled up. But before he could open his mouth, Yun Che's expression and voice instantly grew deeper as Yun Che extended his right hand and pointed to the east, "But the grievances between you and I are something that we have to settle, no matter what! And it can only be settled between the both of us! So three months from now, on the Eastern Sea that is one hundred and fifty kilometers from here, let us have a duel to death!!"

“At that time, I will come alone and will bring along no one else! And as for you...” Yun Che’s eyes faintly narrowed. “If you are scared that you will be buried forever in the Eastern Sea, then bring as much help as you want!”

Both their gazes collided in the cold air; one was filled with hatred, and the other was as still as stagnant water... Suddenly, Fen Juechen’s body erupted with an incomparably deep black light, and an absolute darkness appeared for a moment in front

of everyone's eyes. After the darkness had been dispelled, Fen Juechen's body had disappeared from sight and even his aura had completely vanished from the place.

Yun Che's arm slowly fell and he silently breathed a sigh of relief, but his brows were still knitted tight.

In the two days since he had returned from the Illusory Demon Realm, he had run into one problem after the other... and each problem was greater

than the last. He had truly never thought that the Fen Juechen that he had spared that day and never spared a second thought to would actually appear before him again in such shocking fashion.

“Ah, it is indeed true that calamity ensues if you do not pull up the roots as well!” Yun Che scratched his forehead as those words resounded in his heart.

# Chapter 681 – Reunion

## (1)

---

“Little Che, are you okay? Are you hurt anywhere?” Xiao Lingxi was relieved after Fen Juechen had finally left. She immediately grabbed Yun Che’s arm to make sure he wasn’t hurt by the attack just now. After all, she saw first hand how scary Fen Juechen was now.

“I’m alright, don’t worry, he didn’t even hurt a single hair of mine,” Yun Che smiled and comforted her.

“That’s good.” Xiao Lingxi was slightly settled, but her fine face was still covered with a layer of paleness from the excessive shock. She quickly said in an anxious voice, “Little Che, you must not confront him in three months. He has become very strong, far stronger than you can imagine. No matter what, don’t go, or else you really will be killed by him. Even the large army from the Divine Phoenix Empire doesn’t dare to offend him.”

“...Little Aunt, you mentioned



earlier that he saved you and all of Floating Cloud City, what was that about?” Yun Che asked.

Xiao Lingxi tried her best to calm herself and said in a soft voice, “A year and a half ago, Big Brother Fen, he... he came here looking for you for revenge. He killed many from the Xiao Sect, but he stopped after I stopped him. After that, he had been staying here, and he hadn’t killed anyone else since... Then, after a year had passed, two hundred thousand soldiers from Divine Phoenix Empire’s army suddenly arrived. After their leader entered the city, I

happened to run into him, and he suddenly ordered them to kidnap me...”

“Ordered them to kidnap you?”  
Yun Che’s expression suddenly darkened.

“Mn... Fortunately, Big Brother Fen showed up just in time to save me and killed a person who was with their leader. He hasn’t killed anyone since and warned the Divine Phoenix Army that they aren’t allowed to kill anyone from Floating Cloud City. Because of his deterrence,

the two hundred thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army didn't kill anyone from Floating Cloud City anymore. They rarely even step foot into the city now. Or else, with how brutal the Divine Phoenix Army is, even if Floating Cloud City didn't get slaughtered, in half a year, they definitely would have stepped all over it and destroyed it in its entirety."

"...The reason he didn't continue killing the people of Divine Phoenix Army must be because Little Aunt stopped him, right?" Yun Che said as his eyebrows slanted, and there was

an inconspicuous hostility in his eyes. At this moment, he felt glad on top of the regret that he didn't kill Fen Juechen back then... If it wasn't for Fen Juechen... it was extremely possible that Little Aunt might be...

Leader of the two hundred thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army... No matter who you are... Even if you are the Heavenly Emperor, you must die!!

“Mn, if he attacked the Divine

Phoenix Army, the somewhat peaceful situation would lose control completely. Then, Floating Cloud City would very likely be involved in a large calamity, so I had to stop him... and he hasn't killed any more people. Even though Big Brother Fen looks very cold-blooded and everyone is scared of him, he really isn't a bad guy, I... have been grateful for what he has done this entire time. But... how did it become like this between you two..." Xiao Lingxi helplessly mumbled. Back then at Burning Heaven Clan, he stopped Fen Juecheng desperately for her; in Floating Cloud City, he saved her again, and protected all of Floating

Cloud City for her.

But there was the hatred of extermination of an entire clan between him and Yun Che.

“Little Aunt,” Yun Che comforted her in a soft voice, “don’t you worry, I will handle the matter between me and him properly.”

“Big Brother,” Xiao Yun slowly brought Number Seven Under Heaven over. He peeked at Xiao Lingxi, turned away nervously,

and said with worry, “Who was that person just now? Is he Big Brother’s enemy?”

“Mn, you could say that it is a blood feud,” Yun Che said very directly.

“That person’s aura is so scary.” Number Seven Under Heaven said with lingering fear, “Big Brother Yun, didn’t you say that the profound energy plane in the place that you grew up in is very very low? How come there is someone that strong... I have never felt an aura this terrifying

before.”

Xiao Yun nodded his head strongly in agreement.

“It’s complicated,” Yun Che replied, half dismal and half helplessness. “Okay, don’t think about him now. His self-esteem is extremely high. Since I promised to fight with him three months later, he shouldn’t appear to find me again before that.”

“Little Che, you haven’t



introduced me, they are...” Xiao Lingxi looked at Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven and revealed an amiable smile.

“I... I... I... I am Xiao Yun.” Facing Xiao Lingxi’s question and gaze, Xiao Yun was so nervous that he stuttered because he heard Yun Che calling her Little Aunt this whole time. In Illusory Demon Realm, he heard this reference too many times from Yun Che. Towards Yun Che, she was the most important person in his life. And towards himself, Xiao Yun... she was one of the two blood relatives that he had left in this world!

One was his grandfather, and the other was his little aunt who has seniority over him even though she was actually one year younger than him.

Number Seven Under Heaven roughly pinched Xiao Yun, who was incredibly nervous, and said openly, "I am Brother Xiao Yun's wife, everyone calls me Seventh Sister. Big Brother Yun mentioned 'Little Aunt' a lot in front of us, and we finally met you today... Little Aunt is even prettier and more charming than imagined."

“I welcome the both of you to Floating Cloud City. My apologies... you two must have been frightened even though you just got here,” Xiao Lingxi smiled and apologized. If she was complimented like that three years ago by someone Yun Che brought, she would be joyful without thinking twice. But she had greatly changed after these three years, and she was no longer that naive, childish young girl. Everything she said and the smile she gave all showed grace and subtleness on her that rarely appeared before.

“He’s Xiao Yun, my sworn brother, same age as me. This is Xiao Yun’s newly wedded wife, they just got married less than a month ago. Other than this, they have another... more important identity,” Yun Che said mysteriously.

“Another identity?” Xiao Lingxi was confused.

“You will find out soon.” He said softly without waiting for Xiao Lingxi to question, “Little Aunt, is grandfather home?”

“Mn, he is in his own courtyard.” Mentioning Xiao Lie, Xiao Lingxi’s expression became eager. She grabbed Yun Che’s hand. “After princess sis told us you returned, your grandfather has been waiting for you. I wonder how happy he’ll be after he sees you.”

“I also missed grandfather a lot... Let’s go right now!” Yun Che vigorously nodded his head, and started walking out of the courtyard with Xiao Lingxi.

“Hurry and catch up!!” Number Seven Under Heaven dragged Xiao Yun who was staring into space. Then, as if he had just woken up from a dream, he immediately followed behind Yun Che.

The interior of Xiao Sect hadn't changed much, and he didn't forget where grandfather's courtyard was located in the slightest. He could also remember all the names and faces of the people that he passed by... and when those people saw him, they would be stunned, yell in shock, or would turn aghast as if they had just

seen a ghost.

He was getting closer to where Xiao Lie was step by step, and he ignored the exaggerated reactions of everyone in Xiao Sect. Yun Che asked very worriedly, “How has grandfather been these three years?”

Xiao Lingxi lightly bit her lip as soon as she heard him ask that. This unconscious action caused Yun Che’s heart tighten, and she answered faintly, “Three years ago, after we received news that

you passed away, father was very calm. He had been trying his best to comfort me and the previous emperor, and he didn't shed a single tear. But I know that it must have been very hard on him... it was harder on him than anyone else. When father was at the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he had a great appetite, but after that, he would only eat one meal at most each day... and he has been like this ever since."

"After that, the previous emperor was killed. Father was helping princess sis handle the previous emperor's funeral, and he suggested taking me back to



Floating Cloud City. The day that we returned, dad was suddenly unconscious and had lapsed into a coma for a full day. After that, he was seriously ill for a long time. Even though he was cured from his illness later on, his body grew weaker every day, and he aged extremely quickly. Starting from a year ago, he couldn't... couldn't even walk on his own..."

"..." Yun Che held his fists tightly and took a deep breath. When he was in Illusory Demon Realm, the thing that he worried most about was Xiao Lie's well-being. Three years ago, Xiao Lie

had already once resolved himself to die because he had nothing left to live for. It was because Yun Che said in a firm tone and gave him the hope that his “biological grandson must still be alive and must have grown up safely into an adult.” Hearing that, he then no longer had the will to die.

And receiving the news of his death, there was no question that Xiao Lie would be affected heavily... He had received too many cruel shocks throughout his life, and this would be the one that extinguished his final flicker of hope and would cast

him into the depths of despair. The reality was even worse than he had expected because accompanied with the news was the disaster of the Blue Wind... The thing that caused his body to become weaker was obviously his dark and heavy will to die.

“Grandfather will recover... he will recover!” Yun Che said loudly, and his eager footsteps became even more rapid.

Xiao Lie was still living in the same courtyard. The door of the courtyard had been taken down

which should have been Xiao Lie's idea. Standing at the entrance of the courtyard that he had once visited everyday but hadn't stepped in for a whole six years, Yun Che saw the old man sitting in the middle of the courtyard on an old bamboo chair... His eyes were closed, and he was sunbathing under the sunlight that was somewhat warm. There was indifference on his calm face... that was an indifference that was often seen on the dead. His hair was completely white, without a trace of even a single black hair.

A sour feeling spread from Yun

Che's nose to his whole body, and there was deep heartache and guilt, directed at himself. Xiao Lie was only slightly over sixty years old now, and on top of that, his profound energy was close to Earth Profound Realm, so he shouldn't show any trace of being old. He hadn't seen him for three years, but he seemed like he aged thirty years. He was about sixty, but he looked like he was eighty or ninety.

They slowly walked in. Just as Xiao Lingxi was about to call out, Xiao Lie slowly opened his eyes, looked at Yun Che, and revealed a joyous smile on his

face, "Che'er is back."

Xiao Lie was very calm, there was the color of joy and gratefulness in his aged eyes, but there was even more of an extremely thick and heavy grayness. Yun Che walked up quickly and kneeled down heavily in front of Xiao Lie with his palms on his knees. "Grandfather, Che'er is unfilial and caused you to suffer."

Xiao Lie shook his head, smiled lightly, and said, "Seeing that you are alive safe and sound,

how would grandfather be suffering. Che'er is a lucky one, you could resolve danger every time. In the future you will definitely achieve great happiness. Heh heh, as long as you and Lingxi are safe, my life will be without regrets."

# Chapter 682 – Reunion

## (2)

---

“No!” Yun Che shook his head hard. He looked at Xiao Lie’s blurry eyes and eagerly said, “Grandfather, do you remember that I mentioned ‘Illusory Demon Realm ’after I saved you and Little Aunt from the Burning Heaven Clan?”

“I remember.” Xiao Lie closed his eyes lightly. “That is a very far... an incredibly far place.”



“Back then I told Grandfather that my biological parents are from Illusory Demon Realm. They didn’t get caught by those villains and returned safely back to Illusory Demon Realm in the end, so Grandfather’s biological grandson must have also returned there with them safely. I also promised Grandfather that one day I would find a way to go to Illusory Demon Realm and reunite Grandfather with your own biological grandson. Grandfather, do you know where the Primordial Profound Ark took me during the three years that I was out of contact?”

Xiao Lie, “...”

“It was the Illusory Demon Realm!” Yun Che said loudly, “This must be the arrangement of the heavens. Not long after I arrived there, I found my biological parents!”

As soon as Yun Che said that, Xiao Lie’s weak body shook in response, and his unfocused, blurry eyes immediately started trembling with strange light. “Che’er... what you said... what you just said... is that true?!”

Back then, his grandson followed Yun Che's biological parents! If Yun Che found his biological parents, then his child that was with them back then... his biological grandson...

“Ah!!” Xiao Lingxi exclaimed, and she covered her lips with her hands.

“It's absolutely true! Even if there were ten thousand blades pointed at me, I would never lie to grandfather!” The expression in Yun Che's eyes was incredibly firm as he said, “Not only did I

find my parents, I also...”

Xiao Lie's body trembled very violently at this moment, and his hands started shaking uncontrollably. His legs that could barely stand straight originally, started standing up little by little while shivering... Yun Che lifted his head in surprise and saw Xiao Lie's eyes looking straight behind him.

Xiao Yun was at the entrance of the courtyard with Number Seven Under Heaven as he nervously hesitated, wondering

whether or not to walk in.

“Father!!” Xiao Lingxi immediately walked up and supported Xiao Lie who suddenly stood up. Yun Che also supported him on his other side right away. He hadn’t said that he found Xiao Yun in Illusory Demon Realm yet, and he didn’t make it clear that he brought him with him, but the way Xiao Lie looked at Xiao Yun and his uncontrollable emotion all of a sudden... Could there really be something like “bloodline connection” that exists in this world?

“Child...” Xiao Lie lifted his arm slowly in Xiao Yun’s direction as Xiao Yun was staring blankly. His voice trembled, and his eyes were misty, “What... what is your name?”

“My...” Xiao Yun pointed at himself blankly. “My... my name is Xiao Yun.”

“Xiao Yun... Xiao... Yun...” Xiao Lie said the name in a trembling voice, and then he nodded slowly and heavily, “Good...”

good... Born by the Xiao Family, raised by the Yun Family, good name...”

“Father, what are you talking about?” Xiao Lingxi’s beautiful eyes that were gazing at Xiao Yun widened slowly, and her eyes started trembling even harder as she started to piece everything together. “Could he be... so he is...”

Xiao Lie took another difficult step forward with his quivering body. His husky voice was accompanied with deep sorrow

and excitement, “You look exactly the same... as your father... when he was young...”

“Ah!” Xiao Lingxi gasped lightly, and was stunned on the spot. Yun Che immediately realized why grandfather would be so excited before he even introduced Xiao Yun and understood why his father said that his grandfather would definitely be able to recognize him the instant his grandfather saw Xiao Yun. The reason was because Xiao Yun actually looked just like his father when his father was young... After all, Xiao Ying and Xiao Yun were



biologically father and son.

“You are... my grandfather?”  
Xiao Yun looked at the old man who was already in tears in front of him, and there was a sour feeling gathering uncontrollably from the tip of his nose to his heart, one that he couldn’t hold back.

The memory back then rose once again in his mind, and it made every word Xiao Lie said sorrowful. “Back then, before your father handed you to your foster father, your mother

tattooed the character 'An' on your left arm so that they could find you again... After you were born, your mother named you Xiao An. That 'An' on your left arm is your name and resulted from the hope that you and your foster parents could escape danger safely and that they would be able to reunite with you in the future."

Xiao Yun was stunned for a long time, and then slowly, he pulled up the sleeve of his left arm. On the forearm close to the top, the small, delicate character "An" was clearly printed there.

Looking just like Xiao Ying from back then, and the “An” on his arm... There was no need for Yun Che’s explanation, everything was already proven incredibly clearly.

“Grandfather,” Yun Che smiled and said, “I didn’t lie to you back then right? I knew that you two will one day reunite. Xiao Yun... he is your grandfather.”

Xiao Yun tried his best to suppress the uncontrollable emotion in his heart. He swiftly

stepped forward and kneeled down heavily before Xiao Lie. "Grandson Xiao Yun greets grandfather... grandson is unfilial. I was born more than twenty years but still hadn't been able to express my filial piety before grandfather, and allowed grandfather to suffer from pain and worry."

Xiao Lie had been holding his tears back, but the moment he heard Xiao Yun's words, he burst into tears... he had imagined countless of times what it would be like to reunite with his grandson. But back then, they had personally placed him in

danger. Even if he was still alive, he wasn't able carry out his responsibility of raising him all these years. In addition, even if they were to reunite one day... if his grandson knew what happened back then, it would be reasonable for his grandson to hate him, blame him, and ignore him.

However, not only did he not hate or blame him, on the contrary, he kneeled down in front of him and called himself "unfilial." This was like the most luxurious gift in the world. He reached out and held onto Xiao Yun's arms, coming into contact

with the closest remaining family that he thought he lost forever and only dared to desire in his dreams. “Good child... how are you unfilial... You are still safe and sound, this is being filial. You are willing to come back, this is filial. Grandfather has wronged you for your entire life, but you are still willing to call me grandfather, this is nothing but filial! All this time, it should be grandfather who should be apologizing!”

“Grandfather, please don’t say that.” Xiao Yun’s eyes were filled with tears. “Big Brother told me everything about what happened

back then. Father and Grandfather's mortality both are so high that it reaches the clouds, and you are both incredibly noble people. I am lucky and proud to have a father and grandfather like this. I have never blamed you two for anything. Also, for the more than twenty years in Illusory Demon Realm, my parents treat me like their own, and I have been living great life, better than anyone else, and I haven't been wronged at all. But grandfather has suffered a lot.”

“To be able to see that you grew up safely into an adult, and so

lovable and mature, even if grandfather needed to suffer hundred times or thousands times more, I will not complain. Good child... get up, get up, quick,” Xiao Lie help Xiao Yun up with his trembling arms, and his whole face was covered with tears from his excitement.

Yun Che’s eyes teared up a little as well because he finally accomplished grandfather’s wish. He said softly, “Grandfather, this time Xiao Yun didn’t come here alone. Before he came back, he had already built a family and gained accomplishments. Not only was



he bestowed the title of King above tens of thousands of people in Illusory Demon Realm, he also married a princess from a top family.”

Before Yun Che’s voice fell, Number Seven Under Heaven already kneeled down by Xiao Yun’s side and said, “Granddaughter-in-law Little Seven greets grandfather.”

“Good... good...” Everything was too wonderful, one thing after another caught him by surprise. At this moment, the

expression on his face and in his eyes possessed excitement, joy, infinite satisfaction, and numerous tears; there was no trace of grayness or deathly stillness anymore.

“Xiao Yun, Seventh Sister, hurry over and hold grandfather.” Yun Che smiled and said, “You all must have a lot of things you want to say to each other since your family just reunited. Grandfather’s body is weak now, and he cannot stand for long, so help him into the room.”

“Mn!” Xiao Yun wiped his tears immediately, grabbed onto Xiao Lie’s arms with Number Seven Under Heaven, and helped him slowly to the room with each on either side. Xiao Lie’s footsteps were slow and cautious, and there were tears and a smile on his face... That deep satisfaction and happiness came directly from his soul.

Yun Che and Xiao Lingxi didn’t follow them in. Xiao Lingxi grabbed onto Yun Che’s clothes tightly. Her eyes were filled with tears from the excitement, and she said softly, “That is really great... This is the first time I

saw dad so excited and this joyful. It really is great... so great...”

“He is Big Brother’s biological son and my biological nephew... Our family actually has a chance to reunite.” Xiao Lingxi mumbled in a low voice as if she was talking in her sleep, “Everything, is just like I am dreaming.”

“Yeah, Xiao Yun is the one who should follow the rules and call you Little Aunt.” Xiao Yun looked at Xiao Lingxi’s blushing

cheeks and said seriously, “As for me, I am completely not related to you, and you are actually one year younger than me. Normally, I should call you Little Sister Lingxi, but I called you Little Aunt for so many years all for nothing, it is such a loss.”

“Little Sister... Lingxi?!” Xiao Lingxi immediately pinched her fingers onto Yun Che’s arm and said angrily in her delicate voice, “Is Little Sister Lingxi something you are allowed to call me!? I am your Little Aunt... and I will be forever! You actually dare to show no respect for your senior in front of Little

Aunt.”

“Owowow...” Yun Che exaggeratedly yelled and said as if he was wronged, “You clearly knew that we were not related by blood... not even a little bit.”

“My dad is your grandfather, so I am still your senior! You said Xiao Yun is your sworn brother before, and I am Xiao Yun’s Little Aunt, so of course you must also call me Little Aunt as well!” Listing out sufficient reasons, Xiao Lingxi’s face revealed a proud smile. “So

don't think that just because my biological nephew is back you can show no respect for your senior in front of Little Aunt. And you want to call me Little Sister Lingxi? Hmph."

"Well..." Yun Che stared at Xiao Lingxi in appreciation and smiled. The smile on his face was accompanied with a bit of ill intentions. "Did Little Aunt really forget? In front of Little Aunt, what I am best at is showing no respect for my senior!"

Yun Che had forcefully but gently grabbed hold of Xiao Lingxi's tender body. Before she could react, Yun Che had already heavily kissed onto her supple lips. The tender cry that was just about to come out of her mouth were entirely drowned out by the scent of man.

“Ah...” Xiao Lingxi's beautiful eyes widened and cried out a little with her arms subconsciously struggling against Yun Che's chest . Before, when Yun Che tried to sneak a kiss with her, after he got what he wanted, he would always escape to somewhere far away.



But this time, he didn't escape, and he forced her to not be able to escape. While she was struggling, he was intoxicated by the sweetness between her lips.

Slowly, Xiao Lingxi's struggling became weaker and weaker, and her arms that were against his chest lost strength, lowered slightly, and then lifted again quietly. She hugged him fearfully. Her thin, delicate neck also lifted up a bit. She started responding to him in a daze, seeming to have forgotten Xiao Lie and Xiao Yun were in the house fifteen meters away and could see them the entire time.

A red blush spread on her snowy face, slowly warmed up her body, and melted her young girl's shyness.

After a long time, their lips finally separated. Xiao Lingxi leaned on Yun Che's chest as she panted lightly. Her eyelashes were trembling slightly, her delicate face was red as cherry blossoms, and her eyes were unfocused like the mist, as if she hadn't woken up from her dream just now. Yun Che's eyes looked down and he called out to her softly, "Little Aunt..."

“Don’t talk...” Xiao Lingxi’s forehead leaned harder into his chest, and her arms held him even closer, “Just like this... hug me for a while...”

“Mm...” Yun Che stopped talking. The two of them leaned together quietly, feeling each other’s presence and existence and hoping that time could be paused at this moment forever.

---

crushanapple: The An (安) in Xiao An means safe and peace.

# Chapter 683 – The “Old Man Duotian” Of Legend

---

On the edge of Profound Sky Continent, in a place that was always peaceful.

“Everything you have said... it’s all true?”

Within a mysterious space that floated within the air, it was so quiet that it was as if everything was completely frozen. Underneath the gigantic Sun

Moon totem stood a tall person. He wore white clothes, and lacked any aura on his body; the light and darkness from the Sun Moon totem shone onto his average face that lacked any unique features. He looked to be around thirty to forty years old, but his eyes contained incomprehensible deepness.

In front of him, the Sun Moon Divine Hall's ninth elder, Ye Guying, had his head bowed low. He was trying his hardest to hold his aura, and even his breath in... Under the heavens, there was only one person that could make him act so

subserviently.

The master of the Sun Moon Divine Hall... Ye Xinghan's biological father... The person that was listed alongside the Saint Emperor, the Sovereign of the Seas, and the Sword Master as the current Four Hegemons... The one with the title of "Heavenly Monarch" —Ye Meixie!

Towards the doubt of the white-robed person, Ye Guying's body subconsciously moved forward, and said respectfully,

“In response to the Heavenly Monarch, there is not a single word of lie from what Guying just said! Creating a world, breaking the void, an aura that covers the heavens, creating a fire from nothingless... These things

Ye Meixie had his back towards Ye Guying. His head was slightly raised as he looked up into the Sun Moon totems that were high up in the clouds, releasing eternal light. “Guying, you have always been calm and prudent and your thoughts are always detailed. Since you saw it with your own eyes, and have said it

yourself, I naturally will not doubt it. It's just that I never thought that such an existence had hid itself in this world."

"If I didn't see it with my own eyes, I wouldn't dare to believe either." The scenes in front of the Frozen Cloud Divine Hall surfaced in his mind, causing Ye Guying's face to be unable to control the deep respect and fear on his face. "That Yun Che was useless six years ago, this point is definitely true, but three years ago, with the powers of the Earth Profound Realm, he single-handedly defeated ten of the Divine Phoenix Sect's



younger generation. All of them were powerful people of the Emperor Profound Realm as well. Only three years have elapsed, but he can now kill two mid-stage Overlords of our Sun Moon Divine Hall! When I found out about it, I was shocked and couldn't comprehend how this was possible, but after seeing that terrifying master, I actually understood... Only with the guidance of such a master beyond this world could a freak that defied logic like Yun Che appear."

Ye Meixie's expression didn't change. He slightly raised his

head and said faintly, "Then did you manage to get that person's name?"

"Yes!" Ye Guying nodded slowly, "I risked the danger of angering him and asked for his name. He didn't avoid it at all and directly told me that his name was 'Doutian'..."

The moment the words "Doutian" came out of his mouth, Ye Guying felt a sudden movement of profound energy on Ye Meixie's body. Ye Meixie's half-shut eyes suddenly opened

as and he forcefully turned around. “What did you say? Doutian?! You’re sure it’s Doutian?!”

Ye Meixie’s reaction shocked Ye Guying. In a thousand years, he had never seen the Heavenly Monarch that looked down upon the world reveal such a violent reaction, so he quickly answered, “He said it himself. With his level, since he said it, then he would not use a false name.”

An unnatural movement

appeared in Ye Meixie's eyes. His aura was still scattered everywhere. "But did he say how long he has lived for?"

"He did not," Ye Guying replied. "However, he mentioned the words 'ten thousand years ago' inadvertently... With his terrifying realm, it might be possible that he really has lived for more than ten thousand years. Heavenly Monarch, could it be that you have once heard of the name 'Duotian.'"

Ye Meixie looked directly at Ye

Guying. From the movement of his soul, he could be sure that, at the very least, Ye Guying did not lie at all. After quite a while, he turned around, his voice slow and distant, “In an era long ago, which is at least ten thousand years in the past, at the time, the name of Sun Moon Divine Hall was not yet known to the world.. The founder of our Divine Hall, Ye Qihun, was only a hundred years old, and his profound energy level was only just in the Monarch Profound Realm. At the time, whether they were commoners or people of the profound way, there was a single name that everyone knew...”

“Old Man Duotian!”

“Old Man... Duotian? Ten thousand years ago...” Ye Guying suddenly raised his head and exclaimed, “Could it be...”

“In the knowledge of the current profound practitioners, the Monarch Profound Realm is the peak of mankind. The Divine Profound Realm only exists in legends, a realm that could never be achieved. However, in the memories passed down by our ancestors, the name “Divine Profound

Realm” did not appear after the Phoenix Spirit’s appearance five thousand years ago, even though it was passed down from ten thousand years ago. This was because, at the time, ‘Old Man Duotian’ was someone said to have surpassed the Monarch Profound Realm and was half-step into the Divine Profound Realm!”

“Divine Profound... Realm!” Ye Guying muttered.

“In that era, the cultivation of Old Man Duotian was at the

peak and was on a miraculous level. Don't talk about someone that could rival him, no one who could even pose him a threat existed.. It was even more impossible for someone to kill him."

"Then what happened to this Old Man Duotian later? Since no one can kill him, then did he die of old age, or... or..." After the initial shock, Ye Guying's heart had gradually come to a conclusion... Yun Che's master proclaimed himself as "Duotian", and had shocking powers. The person that the Heavenly Monarch called "Old



Man Duotian,” the former has lived for at least ten thousand years, the latter’s name trembled the world ten thousand years ago...

“Duotian”, is the ‘Old Man Duotian’ from ten thousand years ago”!?

“No!” Ye Meixie shook his head lightly. “All traces of him just vanished into thin air one day. No one has ever saw him afterwards, nor did anyone know where he went either. it was as if he suddenly completely

disappeared from the Profound Sky Continent. Not long after, a rumor spread through the Profound Sky Continent: The Heavenly Old Man had a sudden insight and formally stepped into the Divine Profound Realm from being just half a step in and became the first Profound God in the history of the Profound Sky Continent. Receiving unparalleled divine powers through understanding the highest laws, he broke through the void and rose into a higher-leveled world of the profound way.

“From then on, Old Man

Duotian never appeared again, nor did a second 'Old Man Duotian' appear. The only thing that was half a step into the Divine Profound Realm, the Phoenix Spirit, is not human either. After ten thousand years, it's enough for any traces to be long forgotten. The people from the age of 'Old Man Duotian' have long since scattered to ashes. Old Man Duotian was completely forgotten, and the legend of the Monarch Divine Realm being the limit of humans has become more and more firmly entrenched. If it wasn't for the memories of the ancestors being passed along each generation to never be forgotten, including me, no one

would know the name “Old Man Duotian’ in this world.”

Ye Meixie’s expression became more and more sullen. As someone who had thought himself as invincible, suddenly finding out about a hidden existence on a higher level in this world, his mood naturally would not be good. He said softly, “If they are both named “Duotian,” then the name might just be a coincidence, but with over ten thousand years of age and incomprehensible power, it definitely is so simple, that this Duotian, might very well be the ‘Old Man Duotian’ from our

ancestor's memories!”

Although he already thought this before, Ye Guying's eyelids still jumped. A person that was invincible throughout the world ten thousand years ago, with half a step into the Divine Profound Realm, who might have even completely entered it... Then ten thousand years later, it was extremely hard to imagine how terrifying he was!

No wonder, with the flames he lit from his fingers, he was able to turn a powerful monarch into

nothing.

“From your description, this guess has at least a seventy percent chance of being true,” Ye Meixie said with a frown. “Who would have thought that the Old Man Duotian ten thousand years ago did not rise to a higher-level world, but had never left the Profound Sky Continent! Perhaps, one day, he suddenly had a complete understanding. Thus, he erased all traces of himself and ignored the world... Until today, he still lives in this world. If he really reached the level in legends, then having a lifespan greater

than ten thousand years is definitely not impossible!”

“It can’t be wrong. That is definitely a realm surpassing the Monarch Profound Realm!” Ye Guying, who has always been careful and never said absolute things, said with a tone beyond absolute certainty, “Guying has cultivated for thousands of years and is only a step away from the late stage of the Monarch Profound Realm. He assumed that he could look down on the entire Profound Sky Continent, but in front of that person’s aura, I felt like I was as tiny as a child. My body shuddered

uncontrollably, and I could not even keep calm. If it wasn't for the absolute suppression of realms, it would be impossible!"

"Absolute Monarch Sanctuary has ten odd people in the Monarch Profound Realm, and only with a lot of time and effort could they build up a spatial profound formation and seal it into the bracelet... But it could only be used once! Yet that person, he entered the Primordial Profound Ark with just his body and brought Yun Che back out without harm! This is clearly the power to shatter the void which is only



possessed by the gods of legend!”

From what he had seen with his own eyes, heard with his own ears, in combination with the name “Old Man Duotian” that Ye Meixie described in person, the more Ye Guying thought about it, the more shocked he was. Cold sweat began to dribble down from his forehead... They actually pissed off such a character that they really were incredibly fortunate to be able to come back alive.

Ye Meixie remained in silent for

a long time, then said calmly, "Tell the entire hall later, that no one, before I remove the order, is allowed to provoke Yun Che, including those he's affiliated with."

"Understood!" Ye Guying raised his head and listened to the orders. Right now, even if he was three times more daring, he would not dare to step into Frozen Cloud Divine Hall ever again. After a bit of hesitation, he said carefully, "Heavenly Monarch, do we need to loosen the relationship with Yun Che? After all, the Young Master and Yun Che already have deep

rooted grudges. Yet the person behind Yun Che is that Old Man Duotian. If this grudge isn't resolved, I fear..."

Ye Meixie turned his face over and looked with eyes like frozen swords, "You're scared?"

Ye Guying laughed wryly and said, "In response to the Heavenly Monarch, Guying was fortunate in this life to become a person of the Divine Hall and stand at the peak of the world. I am now one thousand and three hundred years old and never

knew what ‘fear’ was. However, that Old Man Duotian, truly made me afraid.”

He was already addressing Yun Che’s “master” directly as “Old Man Duotian,” so it was clear that he subconsciously believed it all already.

# Chapter 684 – Devil Sword Conference?

---

“Guying has never felt fear before in his life because there was basically nothing in this world that could threaten our Sun Moon Divine Hall. But the strength of that Old Man Duotian has transcended the ordinary and entered into the realm of the divine, something that surpasses the ancient and illuminates the new. He personally said that destroying our Sun Moon Divine Hall would be as easy as flipping a single hand... and as an Elder of our Divine Hall, someone who is

responsible for defending our ten thousand year legacy, it was something that I could not take lightly.

“Besides Old Man Duotian, that Yun Che also causes my blood to run cold. When I was waiting for the Heavenly Monarch to return, I took the time to collate and pore through all the information I could find on Yun Che. And what I found indicated that this person is possessed of an extremely arrogant and yielding character. Moreover, he will avenge even the smallest of grievances, and his methods are both vicious and merciless. All

of those who have offended him or made an enemy out of him, every single one of those people have met a miserable end. In the past, within the territory of the huge Divine Phoenix Sect, he dared to give them a fierce slap across the face despite having no backup at all. Given his temperament, if he ever gains sufficient strength, he will definitely come to take his revenge on the Young Master, and in doing so, he will implicate and bring calamity to our entire Sun Moon Divine Hall! Moreover... moreover...”

Ye Guying inhaled deeply

before continuing, “Heavenly Monarch, I won’t lie to you. Him not wanting to break his vow to not kill was only one of the reasons why that Old Man Duotian let us go that day. The other reason... the more important reason, was actually that he was rebuking his own disciple and admonishing him to not rely on him but instead rely on his own strength to settle his own quarrels... and he even personally said that Yun Che only needed three more years to be unrivalled under the heavens and in six years, he would have enough strength to trample over our Sun Moon Divine Hall!”



Ye Meixie, “...”

“If this was only a potential threat, we could simply weed it out before it has a chance to blossom. But standing behind this threat is the Old Man Duotian, who we simply cannot afford to provoke. So we can only stand witness to his continuous growth. Given his unfathomably fast advancement in the profound, it might really not be mere fantasy to believe that he could actually be unrivalled under the heavens within the span of a few years! In addition, with his temperament and his previous

conduct, the threat he poses to our Sun Moon Divine Hall... is definitely not something we can afford to take lightly!”

Ye Guying’s words caused Ye Meixie’s eyelids to faintly tremble and caused his brows to knit together even more tightly. After a short period of time, he suddenly asked in a calm tone of voice, “Han’er has mentioned this to me before. Three years ago, in the Primordial Profound Ark, Supreme Ocean Palace’s Jade-faced Demon Monarch, Ji Qianrou, had acted against him before in order to protect Yun Che. Did this actually happen?”

“Indeed, what you have said is true.” Ye Guying nodded his head. Regarding this matter, more than half of Sun Moon Divine Hall knew about it as well. and that was because when Ye Xinghan had returned from the Divine Phoenix Empire all those years ago, he remained in a state of constant rage for many days... and one of the people he cursed was that very Ji Qianrou.

“Hm.” Ye Meixie lapsed into a studied silence before he slowly said, “Before the sun sets today, use my name to make a sound

transmission to Supreme Ocean Palace's Grand Elder Mo Chenfeng, and request that he sends out one more invitation card to invite Yun Che to participate in the Devil Sword Conference that will take place in several month's time! Since Ji Qianrou and Yun Che have some history together, he would be the most suitable person to relay this message."

"Devil Sword Conference?" Ye Guying raised his head and his face was clouded with suspicion, but after a brief contemplation, he spoke, "Could it be that the reason why Heavenly Monarch

paid a visit to Supreme Ocean Palace was due to matters concerning the Devil Sword Conference?”

“That’s right,” Ye Meixie said as he faintly nodded his head.

“That devil sword, could it be...”

“Naturally it is that Heavenly Sin Divine Sword!” Ye Meixie answered as he gave a cold snort.

“The Heavenly Sin Divine Sword that went missing for one thousand years, it was actually in the hands of Supreme Ocean Palace all along?” Ye Guying asked with a shocked expression on his face. “I had thought that...”

“No!” Ye Meixie said in a cold, emotionless voice, “Supreme Ocean Palace is merely organizing the Devil Sword Conference, but the ones who suggested holding this meeting in the first place was Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.”

“Ah, so it was as I thought! So Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is admitting that they stole away the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword all those years ago?”

“Humph!” Ye Meixie gave a cold laugh, “Did you actually expect that sly old fox Xuanyuan Wentian to admit to such a thing? According to his own words, they had only recently found this sword in some remote and desolate region. After recognizing that the sword was actually the Eternal Night Royal Family’s Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, they proclaimed that this divine sword should

not be monopolized by their Mighty Heavenly Sword Region alone, but it was something that should be shared with all the heroes of the realm. Thus, he proactively suggested holding this Devil Sword Conference. And in order to make it clear that he didn't have any selfish ambition or dark schemes involving the sword, he also proactively suggested that the Devil Sword Conference not be held in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and even directly passed the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword to Supreme Ocean Palace.”

“Mighty            Heavenly            Sword



Region must take us all for fools!” Ye Guying said with sunken brows, “One thousand years ago, the Four Sacred Grounds joined hands to eradicate the Eternal Night Royal Family, but it was only after we had done the deed that we discovered we were all being used by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! The Eternal Night Royal Family was consigned to oblivion while the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword disappeared as well. In all likelihood, it had long ago fallen into the hands of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! So organizing this so-called ‘Devil Sword Conference’ clearly indicates that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region spent an entire

millennium                      unsuccessfully  
trying to discover the secrets of  
the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword,  
so now they have no choice but  
to borrow our strength as well.”

“It is indeed as you have said.  
But the gimmick behind this  
Devil Sword Conference is  
sufficient inducement to entice  
everyone.” Ye Meixie continued  
as his voice grew soft,  
“Xuanyuan Wentian personally  
said that it is extremely likely  
that the Heavenly Sin Divine  
Sword contains the secret of  
attaining divinity!”

“This...” Ye Guying lapsed into a short stupor before shaking his head resolutely. “Those are merely cheap words flung our way by Xuanyuan Wentian, it definitely isn’t possible! If not, how could the guardians of this sword, the Eternal Night Royal Family, have been purged!”

“The secret of attaining divinity. Even though it is clear that this is something cooked up by Xuanyuan Wentian to reel us in, for those of us who have lingered at the peak of the Sovereign Profound Realm for hundreds of years without being able to advance even a step

further, it is irresistibly enticing. Moreover...” Ye Meixie’s tone changed and his pupil’s grew dark as he continued, “It might not just be empty words.”

“The Heavenly Monarch’s meaning is...”

“One thousand years ago, the strength of the King of Eternal Night was the weakest amongst the rulers of the Five Sacred Grounds. But when he went berserk and devilized, it took fourteen hours of fierce battle and the combined might of the

leaders of the other Sacred Grounds along with seventeen elders to defeat him! And even though his flesh was destroyed, his soul did not dissipate. Not only that, it was fully preserved and all the might we could muster was not enough to destroy it. In the end, we could only pay a huge price to seal him into a soul coffin and allow him to dissipate naturally.

“Till this day, the power displayed by the King of Eternal Night after he went berserk still causes my heart to tremble with fear. Death of the body but not the soul is a divine power that

transcends the Sovereign  
Profound Realm. Every time I  
think of it, I have this profound  
feeling that this ability cannot  
be so easily dismissed as a  
byproduct of devilization... and  
if one was to say that this was  
the power of someone who had  
transcended the Sovereign  
Profound Realm and taken half a  
step into the Divine Profound  
Realm, it isn't beyond the  
bounds of logic.”

“...” Ye Guying did not say  
anything. He had not been  
present at the fierce battle with  
the King of Eternal Night all  
those years ago, nor did he have

the qualifications to be present. So he was unable to truly understand Ye Meixie's words.

Ye Meixie turned around and continued, "Those invited to the Devil Sword Conference all possess the ability to attempt to decipher the secret behind the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. Only the strongest individuals and powers in the Profound Sky Continent will be present. Considering Yun Che's ability to kill our Divine Hall's protectorates, he possesses the qualifications to attend. Given his haughty nature, he should not reject attending a meeting of

the strongest powers in the realm. And at that time...”

Ye Meixie did not continue to speak, and despite the glow of the Sun Moon Totem, his pupils were so dark they did not contain a hint of light. Ye Guying rose out of his chair and replied in a respectful tone, “I obey the will of the Heavenly Monarch.”

“You may go... Ask Han’er to attend to me after this.”



“Yes.” Ye Guying retreated two steps before soundlessly leaving.

At the same time: Blue Wind Nation, Floating Cloud City.

Even if one were to beat Yun Che to death, he would not have thought that the name he had casually thought of, “Duotian,” actually belonged to a real person! To think that it was the name of a mythical powerhouse who existed ten thousand years ago and had the strength to shake both the heavens and the earth.

Furthermore, not only did this not expose a flaw in his plan, it actually caused the deterrent he had created to multiply exponentially!

To the point where even Ye Meixie had given personal instructions to not interfere with him!

It had also created the opportunity for him to be invited to the Devil Sword Conference.

At this time, Yun Che, who was unaware of all that was happening, had just flown out and arrived in the area east of Floating Cloud City. He floated hundreds of meters above as he coldly eyed the ground below.

The two hundred thousand Divine Phoenix soldiers were spread across the rolling hills of the land below. They were split into units of ten, a hundred or a thousand. All the movement they were making caused the ground to rumble, producing the incessant sound of rumbling

which came from every direction.

Xiao Lingxi had informed him that after the Divine Phoenix Army had arrived, they had never chosen to garrison themselves in Floating Cloud City. From the second day of their arrival, they had engaged in these actions... the concentrated and muffled sounds of explosions continued nearly unabated and had already continued for close to six months. The common consensus among the people of the Floating Cloud City was that the Divine Phoenix Army were training

their troops.

But Yun Che was naturally not so naive as to believe that they were really training their troops... because it was impossible that the invincible Divine Phoenix Army was formed and moulded using such a ridiculous method.

But after observing them for a long period of time, he still could not puzzle together what this huge Divine Phoenix Army was trying to accomplish...The broken and damaged ground

had clearly been flipped over countless of times. The movements, range, and frequency of the actions of the Divine Phoenix Army were all uniform and it was clear that “training” for half a year had drilled these actions into their bones.

“Jasmine can you see what exactly they are doing?” Yun Che asked as his brows pinched together.

“Hmph, do you need to ask me when it comes to these kinds of

things?” Jasmine replied huffily.

Yun Che’s mouth bent at a crooked angle and he activated “Hidden Flowing Lightning.” causing his presence to be completely concealed. After that, he silently descended and hid himself at the edge of the Divine Phoenix Army’s encampment.

Before too long, a soldier of the Divine Phoenix Army left his “training squad” and slowly shuffled his way towards where Yun Che was hiding, mumbling

something incomprehensible under his breath while trying to loosen the armor around his waist. When he had reached a “convenient” spot that was behind a tall rock, a hand flashed out of thin air and locked onto his throat.

The soldier felt his neck was being held by iron clamps that were as heavy as thousands of kilograms as his eyes bulged out and some of his blood vessels exploded. He could not utter even a single sound despite his shock and horror. Yun Che coldly looked at him and profound light flashed on his



arm. His Profound Handle instantly broke through the soldier's mental defenses and embedded itself into his soul. Following that, memories flowed like water into Yun Che's mind.

In a flash, Yun Che withdrew his Profound Handle, and with a casual flick of his hand, he threw the soldier to the ground. The soldier's eyes were still stretched wide open, but he was no longer breathing.

After Yun Che had absorbed the

soldier's memories, not only were his doubts not cleared up, but his brows knit together even more tightly. That was because the information he had retrieved from the soldier indicated that his orders were to undergo special training in this location.

The content of this special training was to gather up all of one's profound energy and smash it against the ground. The louder the better and the heavier the better... if anyone was caught slacking, they would be slapped with heavy punishments, and the punishments were severe to the

point where soldiers could be executed on the spot.

However Yun Che did not come away completely empty handed. At the very least, he now knew one person's name, likeness and the location he was normally at!

Feng Huwei—the great commander of these two hundred thousand Divine Phoenix Soldiers, the famed and brilliant Great General Huwei of the Divine Phoenix Empire. He was someone who possessed the bloodline of the Phoenix and

also belonged to the Divine Phoenix Sect.

The most important thing, however... was that when the Divine Phoenix Army descended upon the Floating Cloud City, it was him who tried to seize Xiao Lingxi! If not for the aid of Fen Juechen, the consequences would have been unthinkable.

Yun Che's gaze shot towards the south-east... that was where Feng Huwei's large tent was located! In an instant, he had morphed into an after-image

that was hard to discern with the naked eye as he rushed towards that location. An icy-cold killing intent rippled in those calm eyes.

# Chapter 685 – Then That Is Simply Too Wonderful!

---

In the middle of the Divine Phoenix Army's encampment lay a large crimson tent that was shaped like a flame; it was especially eye-catching.

As Divine Phoenix Empire's designated commander stationed at Floating Cloud City, Feng Huwei had been in a good mood all this while because he knew the importance of this "mission" that he was

overseeing. Being entrusted with such a heavy responsibility clearly showed the trust and how highly the sect leader and the elders regarded him. Once this mission was over, it was extremely likely that his position in the Divine Phoenix Sect would rise.

However, for the past two days, the army which had launched the assault on Blue Wind Imperial City had suddenly ceased all communication, so he felt somewhat ill at ease.

“Is there still no news from the main army?”

There were only two people in the big tent. Feng Huwei was dressed in light clothes, and he sat slumped on a wooden chair, a cup of strong liquor in hand, as he listened to his vice commander's report.

“It isn't only the main army, the west army's commander Han Xingzhao personally went with the Twenty-Fifth Elder to investigate the situation at Blue Wind Imperial City and we have



also lost contact with them. They even brought along fifty thousand troops and thousands of Fire War Horses and aerial profound beasts, so it should have been no problem for them to advance and retreat as needed, but..." Feng Huwei's number one deputy general, Tian Yi, said even as a look of profound fear creased his face. They had galloped from one battlefield to another for more than a hundred years, but they had never encountered such terrifying situation before. Those tens of thousands of troops seemed to have simply evaporated from the face of the earth in the space of a minute.

Feng Huwei furrowed his brows as he sunk into a contemplative silence. After a short while, he slowly began to speak, “To cause tens of thousands of troops and three elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect to disappear in such a short span of time that they did not even have the opportunity to send out a sound transmission, to be able to do this... the only possibility is that a guardian who is at the Sovereign Profound Realm has appeared at Blue Wind Imperial City!”

“Sovereign      Profound...      A  
Monarch?!” Vice Commander  
Tian Yi’s head jerked up as he  
yelled in alarm, “How is that  
possible?!      The      Emperor  
Profound Realm has always been  
the limit in Blue Wind Nation,  
and in their thousand year  
history, not even a single  
Overlord has ever risen from  
there. So how could there  
suddenly be a Monarch?!  
Moreover,      profound  
practitioners who have attained  
the power of the Sovereign  
Profound Realm are existences  
which are akin to absolute  
emperors within this continent,  
so why would they bother lifting  
a hand to aid a lowly nation such  
as Blue Wind Nation.”

“Besides this, there can be no other explanation. I also believe that the Sect Master and all the other Elders have definitely come to the same conclusion.” Feng Huwei said without the slightest hesitation, “If one were to say that Blue Wind Nation has no Monarchs... then how do you explain that terrifying black-clothed man in Floating Cloud City?!”

Tian Yi's words died in his throat. As he remembered the horrifying scene that he had witnessed half a year ago and

that aura which seemed to come from the very depths of hell, his heart still violently seized up in his chest.

“Therefore, I do believe that the Sect Master and all the Elders have also reached the same conclusion.” Feng Huwei threw the now-empty pot of liquor away as he continued to speak calmly, “However, even if there is a Monarch guarding Blue Wind Nation, he can only do so for so long! Our Divine Phoenix Sect has twelve such Monarchs! So that person is truly naive if he thinks that he can challenge our Divine

Phoenix Empire just because he is a Monarch as well!!”

“My general’s words are absolutely right. Whoever dares to challenge our Divine Phoenix Empire, even if they are Monarchs, are only courting their own deaths in the end!” Tian Yi declared as he nodded his head, “The loss of seven hundred thousand troops and the blood debt that must be paid for the deaths of three of the Divine Phoenix Elders, I believe our Emperor will make him pay ten times the price!” He stopped for a moment and then cupped his hands respectfully before

continuing, “This commander also has an important matter that the general needs to make a decision on.”

“Speak!”

“Yes!” Tian Yi strode forward two steps and spoke in a low and suppressed voice, “Just this afternoon alone, eleven soldiers have been killed, and their bodies were all found several kilometers away from the encampment...”

“Heh.” Feng Huwei was not even shocked, so he naturally did not get angry. That was because too many similar occurrences had happened within this half a year. After a period of time, soldiers would suddenly go missing, and when their corpses were found, they bore the traces of terrible torture, so it was clear that they had underwent interrogation. He gave a cold and disdainful laugh, “Do not worry about it. No matter what methods they use, they will not be able to get any useful information out of them.”



“No, this time the situation is rather different.” Tian Yi immediately replied, “This time, the bodies we found all had no external wounds, but every single one of the soldiers had stiff and dull expressions on their faces. So it is extremely likely that someone... invaded their souls!”

“Soul search?” Feng Huwei wondered as his brows furrowed together, but he followed that up with a cold snort, “To have the ability to use a soul search technique... it looks like after they had spent a long time groping around in the dark, they

finally decided to send out some experts.”

“This commander believes that the general must pay even more attention to his own security from now on,” Tian Yi suggested.

“There is no need to worry,” Feng Huwei said with a dismissive wave of his hand, and he continued speaking in an unworried tone, “So what if they are from Four Great Sacred Grounds? Our Divine Phoenix Sect has the protection of the

grandPhoenix God, so even if they have the guts to kill our troops, they will not have the guts to make a move against this general. This general has the bloodline of the Phoenix, so I am under the protection of the Lord Phoenix God himself!”

“Then this commander has worried too much about this,” Tian Yi said respectfully. Looking at Feng Huwei’s confident demeanor, he hesitated for a moment before finally gathering up his courage and speaking, “General, besides stationing our troops and keeping them prepared, why

exactly are we ‘training’ our troops everyday? This commander does not dare to make any assumptions or conjectures, but in the past few months, all of our soldiers and officers have also...” When he spoke of this matter, he suddenly felt Feng Huwei’s gaze grow ice-cold and dense. His entire body stiffened, and he did not dare to continue speaking about this topic any further. He instead hurriedly said, “This commander has spoken out of turn, I beg the general for his forgiveness.”

“As long as you know you have

spoken out of turn, then it's fine!" Feng Huwei said with a loud harrumph. He turned his gaze away from Tian Yi before continuing to speak calmly, "Never ask this question ever again! All you need to know is that this was something personally ordered by the Sect Master himself! If we accomplish our mission, all of us will return to the country covered in glory! If we mess this up, then even this general will not be able to bear the consequences of our failure! So when it comes to questions that should not be asked, you should just be a good lad and keep your mouth shut! When you need to know about what is happening,

it will naturally be revealed to you!”

“Understood!” Tian Yi replied hurriedly and he did not dare speak after that.

“Oh, is that so? Then it’s such a pity that all of you most likely won’t have the chance to make your triumphant return after all.”

A haughty and mocking voice suddenly rang through the air and seemed to come out of

nowhere. Tian Yi vigorously bounded up from the ground with his longsword instantly coming out of its scabbard. “Who is it?!!”

This was the great general’s main tent, and it was heavily guarded by layers of defenses. And aside from all of this, Feng Huwei himself was a mighty early stage Overlord while Tian Yi was also a third stage Throne. But this voice still rang out as if that person was right beside them and they had not even noticed the presence of anyone before this. So even though their reactions were extremely swift,

the hairs on their bodies instantly stood on end due to this great shock.

Tian Yi gripped his longsword tightly as he swiftly surveyed his surroundings, but he did not even catch the shadow of the one who spoke. He turned around and prepared to take his place beside Feng Huwei. But to his shock, he saw a young man clothed in golden robes silently standing not even a foot away from Feng Huwei's back. That person wore an extremely cold smile on his face, and his eyes were as black as the pools of the underworld. Feng Huwei, who



had the strength of an Overlord, was emitting profound energy from every pore of his skin as he glared furiously... yet he did not notice the young man who was standing right behind him!!

The longsword in Tian Yi's hand fiercely shook as he yelled in alarm, "General, be... behind you!!"

Feng Huwei automatically turned his head, and his face came within inches of touching the face of another person. Instantly, his pupils shrank into

pinpoints as he sprang backwards. When he had straightened up, his entire body was covered in a sheen of cold sweat. He extended a finger towards the young man, and just as he was about to say something, he realized that the face of this uninvited guest seemed vaguely familiar. But after that moment of bafflement had passed, his expression suddenly changed and he croaked out the words, "You... you are Yun Che!"

"Oh?" Yun Che crossed both hands over his chest and coldly smiled as he looked at him

askance, “The Divine Phoenix Empire’s famed and brilliant Great General Feng Huwei actually recognizes me. Ah, this is a great honor indeed.”

“Yun... Yun Che?” Tian Yi turned his head to look at Feng Huwei. “That Yun Che? Didn’t he already... die three years ago?”

As a member of the Divine Phoenix Sect, not only did he have the status of a great general, his profound strength had also reached the Tyrant

Profound Realm, so naturally he had the qualifications to compete in the Seven Nations Ranking Tournament. So this face which belonged to the person who had trampled all over the dignity of their Divine Phoenix Sect, how could he forget it.

“You’re actually still alive!” Feng Huwei said in a deep voice. If it was the Yun Che of three years ago, Feng Huwei would definitely not be scared. But just now, Yun Che was standing not even an inch behind him, but he did not notice a single thing! Even if he was a fool, he would

recognize the level of power required to perform such a feat. Moreover, even though not a single ripple of profound energy emanated from Yun Che's body, his mere gaze alone caused Feng Huwei's heart to start beating rapidly in his chest. All of these things added together proved that Yun Che standing before him, who should have died a long time ago, had a strength that was far more terrifying than it was three years ago.

“And you... are about to die right now,” Yun Che said with a low, cold chuckle as a stream of icy-cold killing intent locked

squarely onto Feng Huwei.

“Don’t even think of harming my general!!” Tian Yi gave a ferocious shot as he waved his sword to protect Feng Huwei. After that, he grit his teeth and thrust the sword towards Yun Che’s chest. But at the same time, he was growing more and more flustered because such a great commotion was occurring here, yet there was no reaction from any of the guards outside... Could it be that all the guards had already been taken care of by him? But there clearly had not been any movement outside at all!!

At the same time, all the guards stood at attention outside the big tent, their expressions cold and grave... while a colorless and shapeless “Frozen End Illusory Mirror” had engulfed the entire tent, and in this space which Yun Che controlled, no sound or aura could escape from within.

At tip of Tian Yi’s sword appeared an eye-startling vortex, and even though this sword stroke seemed simple and without flourish, it was an attack that used all of his power. But Yun Che did not even move

an inch as he waited for Tian Yi's sword to pierce his chest.

Seeing that Yun Che had no intention to dodge, a faint glimmer of joy appeared in Tian Yi's eyes as all of the profound energy in his body surged forth and concentrated at the tip of the sword that was fiercely thrusting towards Yun Che's heart...

A sword stroke which contained all of the power of a Throne could easily cut through fine steel, yet when this sword



solidly came into contact with Yun Che's chest, not a single sound rang out. Tian Yi felt as if his sword had suddenly slipped into a void and all the profound energy he had released had exploded inside this "void" as it disappeared without a single trace...

Tian Yi's long sword pressed against Yun Che's chest as he stood there, completely petrified and at a loss for words. In the next instant, the longsword in his hand shivered, and the body of the sword dispersed into a cloud of tiny dust particles which drifted to the floor. What

was left was only the handle of the sword which he was still gripping.

Tian Yi had a dazed expression on his face; his eyes were not focused at all and his entire body stood there, unmoving. Following the destruction of his sword, he too collapsed like a block of wood on the floor. His eyes were wide open, but there was no movement in them... not a single wound could be seen on his body, nor was there any life in him either.

“Tian Yi!” Feng Huwei moved a step forward before immediately bounding backwards. He gazed at Yun Che and his expression was incomparably dark and heavy... he had not even been able to see the method by which Yun Che had used to kill Tian Yi.

“Great General Huwei.” Yun Che gave a cold laugh as he looked at Feng Huwei, and his killing intent was so strong that he caused Feng Huwei’s body to spasm; it seemed like he did not even dare move a muscle. Yun Che continued, “I heard that a few months ago, when you led your troops into Floating Cloud

City, you gave orders to capture my little aunt?”

Yun Che's voice abruptly grew dark and cold, “You have great courage indeed!!”

Yun Che's words caused Feng Huwei's eyelids to fiercely twitch. He was extremely clear on who Yun Che was talking about. Because when he had encountered Xiao Lingxi in Floating Cloud City, the two city lords politely introduced her as Yun Che's little aunt, and that had caused him great excitement

at that time. At the moment, he immediately knew why this Yun Che who “had come back from the dead” would suddenly come to pay him a visit and why Yun Che had such a strong desire to kill him... He had heard more than once that one of the strongest sects in Blue Wind Nation, a huge sect which had survived for a millennium, had been viciously wiped off the face of the earth for the crime of kidnapping his little aunt, and he did not even leave a trace of it behind!

Feng Huwei kept his cool and suppressed the fear that was

welling up inside of him. A cold smile appeared on his face instead as he said, “You want to kill me? That will depend on whether you have the guts to or not.”

“Oh?” The corner of Yun Che’s eyes twitched.

“You may indeed have the power to kill me right now, but...” Feng Huwei extended a hand and pointed towards his own temple, “But there exists a soul imprint laid down by the Sect Master himself within my

soul right now! If you dare to kill me, then the last thirty seconds of my memories before my death will be instantly transmitted to the Sect Master! Heh, if you dare to kill a member of the Divine Phoenix Sect, your ensuing death will be even more miserable, and all the people related to you will die miserably as well! So if you have the guts, then come and kill me!”

“Oh really?!” His expression did not change according to what Feng Huwei expected; rather, his gaze grew amused and he gave a cold laugh which carried contempt that was even

more profound, “Then that is...  
simply too wonderful!!”



## Chapter 686 – Profound Strength Endowment?

---

As Yun Che's voice fell, his figure suddenly blurred. Feng Huwei, whose nerves were on edge, suddenly came to that realization, but before he had any time to react, a hand had already formed a death grip around his throat; the entire process had been so fast that his eyes were basically unable to follow Yun Che's movements.

In fright, Feng Huwei attempted to swiftly circulate the profound energy in his

entire body, but just as his profound energy was about to explode, a gigantic and earth-shattering power had already wildly surged into his body, and it instantly suppressed his profound strength and caused the profound energy wave that was about to explode to disappear without a trace.

Feng Huwei went pale with fright; Yun Che could appear soundlessly behind him without giving off any trace of his existence. He could also kill Tian Yi in a similar fashion as well. These two things alone were enough to tell him that it was

extremely likely that Yun Che's current strength had far surpassed his own, but he had never ever thought that the gulf between his strength and Yun Che's strength was actually so incredibly vast. As the great general Huwei of the Divine Phoenix Empire, who had always been accorded the highest of status, he had always been proud of his own strength, but under Yun Che's profound energy suppression, he could not even circulate his own profound energy, much less cause his profound energy to go wild!

“You...” Feng Huwei’s pupils grew so large they looked like they were about to pop. He had originally approximated that even if he could not beat Yun Che, he would still have a sixty percent chance of being able to flee to safety. But now that Yun Che’s hand was around his throat, he could not even muster any strength to resist him. Even making a single sound was an exceedingly difficult thing to accomplish.

“Are you still going to continue asking if I have the guts to kill you or not?” Yun Che gave a cold and contemptuous laugh, “You

dare to call yourself the so-called great general Huwei, yet you are actually as naive as a dumb hog.”

Boom——

Following the merciless release of Yun Che's energy into Feng Huwei's body, a muffled explosion rang out from Feng Huwei's body. His entire body spasmed severely, and blood flowed from all seven apertures; his awareness swiftly flew away, and in this instant, Yun Che's Profound Handle swelled out and entered Feng Huwei's soul

as he quickly read all of his memories.

It was extremely normal for an ordinary Divine Phoenix soldier to not know what exactly the Divine Phoenix army was doing here, but it was impossible for their commander, Feng Huwei, to not know as well.

Feng Huwei's memories were being processed at a rapid pace, but once he tried to access the memories concerning the "Floating Cloud City Mission," an abnormal blankness suddenly

appeared within Feng Huwei's memories!

More accurately speaking, it was an obfuscating darkness!

This obfuscating darkness was clearly formed from an extremely strong mental profound energy, and whether it was its strength or its aura, it definitely did not originate from Feng Huwei. It had definitely been put there by another person. And what the obfuscating darkness blanketed just so happened to be all the

key memories regarding the “Floating Cloud City Mission,” hence Yun Che could not obtain any of the information that he wanted.

“This is a Cage of Memories that has been set up by someone whose mental power is extremely high!” Jasmine said unhurriedly, “And even though the memories locked up in this cage belong to Feng Huwei, he knows very clearly that he is not allowed to use words, profound energy sound transmissions, writing... or any other method to tell other people. If he has any such intention or takes any



actions that indicate he is about to do so, this mental energy will instantly trigger and destroy this portion of his memory. On the other hand, if others try to use any Soul Search techniques to obtain these memories, it will not be possible either! So likewise, your Profound Handle will not be effective in this scenario!”

Since Jasmine said that it was not possible, then it definitely would not be possible. Moreover, Yun Che could clearly feel that this obfuscating darkness was intertwined with this portion of Feng Huwei’s

memories, and if he tried to use his Profound Handle to forcibly wipe away the obfuscating darkness, then the memories which are intertwined with it will also be wiped away, leaving him with nothing in the end.

After thinking about it for a while, Yun Che decided it was best to not force the issue, so he simply read all of Feng Huwei's other memories and withdrew his Profound Handle once he was done.

“It looks like among the two

hundred thousand Divine Phoenix soldiers here, only Feng Huwei can give me the answer that I desire.” Yun Che said with a deep sigh, “And it is clear that the reason the Divine Phoenix Sect set up this Cage of Memories within Feng Huwei’s mind is because they were worried that the Four Great Sacred Grounds would take action against Feng Huwei and forcibly use a Soul Search technique on him.”

After all, the only powers that could threaten the Divine Phoenix Sect within Profound Sky Continent were the Four

## Sacred Grounds.

When he had infiltrated this tent, he had also clearly heard Feng Huwei and his vice commander Tian Yi mention “the Four Great Sacred Grounds,” so they clearly knew that the Four Great Sacred Grounds were behind the occasional abductions that had occurred every now and then.

“To be able to set up a Cage of Memories such as this one, not only does the creator need to have extremely strong mental

strength, it also was accompanied with risks that cannot be controlled or calculated.” Jasmine said with a cold laugh, “This Divine Phoenix Sect seems to be hiding a huge secret indeed.”

“At least, it is a lot bigger than what I had originally anticipated...” Yun Che’s eyes flashed. “I have always had my suspicions on why the Divine Phoenix Empire would take action against Blue Wind Nation. Or perhaps swallowing Blue Wind Nation was just a pretext and this place... is where their real objective lies!!”

“I am suddenly rather curious about something right now.” Jasmine said with a peculiar interest, “When do you intend to depart for the Divine Phoenix Empire?”

The thing that women had most in abundance would forever be their curiosity... and Jasmine was no exception.

Yun Che replied without a hint of hesitation, “This very day!

“When it comes to things like settling debts, even a one day delay is too long.”

“Hmph.” Jasmine giggled through her nose which more or less conveyed her meaning, which was “so it’s going to be like this after all.”

Feng Huwei, who was still in Yun Che’s clutches, finally regained his consciousness at this time. He opened his eyes and looked at the cold smile draped across Yun Che’s face and immediately felt his body go

cold. He almost demanded in a quavering voice, “You... what did you just do to me?!”

As soon as he spoke, he discovered that his own voice had become extremely weak.

Yun Che did not reply; instead, he directly disregarded him and looked straight ahead. When he spoke, the words that came out of his mouth were filled with icy-cold cruelty and killing intent, “Feng Hengkong, now that you know I am alive, do you feel very disappointed?!”



“I owed a debt of kindness to Feng Xue’er, but three years ago, because of the issue of bloodlines, you sought to persecute me and disturbed my peace. After that, on the Primordial Profound Ark, you ordered Feng Feiyan to find a suitable opportunity to kill me. For Xue’er’s sake, I was originally planning to forget about the whole thing and not pursue the matter any further...”

“But you have truly given me a nice surprise!!”

Yun Che's voice was so sinister and cold that it caused the nearby Feng Huwei to shiver all over... he instantly understood that Yun Che was not just standing there talking to himself, but he was clearly using his death soul imprint... to send a message to the Emperor of the Divine Phoenix Empire, the Divine Phoenix Sect's Sect Master, Feng Hengkong!!

That also meant that once Yun Che was finished, it would be his turn to die!

Not only did the death soul imprint not pose any threat to Yun Che, it was actually utilized by Yun Che in the end!

“Right now you must be wondering just where those hundreds of thousands of troops went to... That is right, I did it. However, this is only just the beginning... Ah, no! It can’t even be counted as a prologue!”

“Killing my royal father, trampling over Blue Wind Nation’s territory, trampling

over countless of my friends and countrymen, and turning my homeland into a hellhole filled with fear, despair, and suffering! All of these things are weighed against you and I want your Divine Phoenix Empire... to pay it back a hundred thousand fold! So wash your neck and wait!!”

Bang!!

With an explosion, Feng Huwei was fiercely thrown to the ground by Yun Che, and his body instantly ruptured as a large amount of blood and flesh

was splattered against the ground... yet not a single drop of it had touched Yun Che's body.

No one would have thought that the Divine Phoenix Empire's famed general, Huwei, who caused the other six nations to tremble in fear, would die in such a miserable fashion. Forget about leaving a corpse behind, not even a whole finger was left... all because he touched Yun Che's reverse scale!

So even though Yun Che had not obtained the answer he

wanted, he had already killed the person that he had wanted to kill. Furthermore, Feng Huwei was an important member of the Divine Phoenix Sect, so his memories contained many things regarding the sect itself... including some of its secrets.

Yun Che withdrew his Frozen End Illusory Mirror and silently took his leave as he returned to Floating Cloud City. Meanwhile, outside of the large tent where he had just been in, the layers of guards stood at their posts, their expressions solemn, as not a single one of them knew that

their grand commander Feng Huwei had died without even leaving a corpse behind.

“So the reason you chose to battle Fen Juechen three months later was so you could use this period of time to exact vengeance on the Divine Phoenix Empire?” Jasmine concluded in a voice filled with intention.

“Yes!” Yun Che was flying as fast as he could so the Floating Cloud City in his vision steadily grew nearer and nearer. “Three

months is more than enough time for me to baptize the Divine Phoenix City! Even if I can't baptize them in blood... I can at least flip the damn Divine Phoenix Sect upside down! If not, I won't be able to get rid of the hate in my heart!"

“Other than that, the Divine Phoenix Sect is still strong after all, so I will not be able to directly confront them. This bloodbath will come with risks, both big and small, so it will definitely cause my profound strength to increase proportionately as well. And at that time, I should have the



confidence to have a battle with Fen Juechen!” Yun Che claimed rather confidently.

“Hah! If that is what you truly think, then you are gravely mistaken!” Jasmine said coldly, “Within the three months specified by the arrangement of the duel, Fen Juechen’s growth will definitely far outstrip yours! Today, you are barely his opponent, but you can still try to force a battle. But if you wait for three more months... you won’t even have the strength to resist him anymore.”

“What?” Yun Che’s speed immediately dropped as he said, “Why?”

“As I told you before, his devilish profound strength is not manifested from his own will, it comes from someone else instead! Within his body... or more accurately speaking, within his soul and his profound veins, an extremely large devil origin has been infused! The reason why he has become as strong as he is today is completely due to him absorbing the power of that devil origin. But this is definitely not the power of completely absorbing

the devil origin! If I am not wrong, he has only absorbed about thirty percent of the devil origin's power!”

“Thirty percent?!!” Yun Che’s expression was filled with alarm because just thirty percent of the devil origin’s power had bestowed Fen Juechen with the might of a mid stage Monarch! So if he absorbed the whole thing... how terrifying would he become?!

“He hates you to your very bones. So because you have set a

three month deadline, in order to guarantee that he will be able to kill you, he will definitely try his best to completely absorb the devil origin! No matter how you cultivate, you will definitely not be able to catch up to the speed of growth bestowed by this method.”

“...” Yun Che’s speed slowed down even more, and all of the sudden, his heart was weighed down by a heavy pressure. He furrowed his brows in silence for a while before starting in a low voice, “According to the legends and records, some kinds of profound arts possess a

certain endowment technique that will allow one person to endow it upon another. But when it comes to something like profound strength, it has to be obtained through on one's own painstaking training or from absorbing and refining some worldly treasure. Both of these methods take a long period of time and has to be done step by step, there definitely isn't such a thing as someone being able to give his profound strength to another... this could be said to be a part of the fundamental knowledge of the profound way! If not, if profound strength could truly be endowed, then an expert who is nearing the end of his or her lifespan could directly

give an entire lifetime's worth of profound cultivation to an infant... or it could be even a case where many Overlords give their strength to one person and forcibly birthed a Monarch... if that was the case, then wouldn't the entire profound world descend into chaos?!

“The devil origin that you speak of is clearly devil profound energy that has been cultivated by someone else! How can this kind of thing be directly transferred into someone else's body to allow him to directly absorb its power?” Yun Che questioned in a flummoxed

voice, “Could this perhaps be a special characteristic of devil profound energy?”

“Of course not!” Jasmine directly rebutted him, “If devil profound energy had this kind of unique characteristic, then the entire cosmos would have become the playground of devils!”

Jasmine’s next few words caused Yun Che’s heart to leap in alarm, “Also, in regards to the devil origin in Fen Juechen’s body, even I am... extremely

puzzled by it.”

“It’s something even you do not know?” Yun Che stopped in midair and his brows knit together tightly. Something that even Jasmine could not make sense of... just what exactly had happened to Fen Juechen?

“The world you are able to see, is far smaller than what you imagine, while the limits of the profound way, are more so something the current you cannot imagine. Never be so naïve to think the so-called



‘fundamental knowledge’ is the truth!      Profound      Strength Endowment is indeed extremely difficult, but it is definitely not impossible... Do you know how my profound strength came to be?”

In a disinterested tone, Jasmine revealed something Yun Che had always wanted to ask, but had never dared to

---

alyschu: To anyone who forgot what a reverse scale is, it's the scale you never touch on a

dragon unless you want it to eat  
you alive!

# Chapter 687 – Xiao Family’s Joy

---

“Could it be that, your strength... comes from endowment?” Yun Che asked in a low voice. When he had first met Jasmine, she personally said that she was thirteen years old. However, at that time, he was not truly cognizant of just how strong Jasmine really was. And as he scaled greater and greater heights, he became even clearer on just how terrifying Jasmine’s strength actually was. Even now, when he was strong enough to go toe to toe with a low level Monarch, he was still unable to

fathom the limits of Jasmine's power.

To have such terrifying power at the tender age of thirteen... if one were to tell him that it was done through personal cultivation, he really would not be able to accept that.

“That’s right, my strength does indeed come from endowment.” Jasmine replied in a manner that was totally out of Yun Che’s expectations. This was because this was a topic that she had never allowed Yun Che to ask

about before, but right now, she replied in a very straightforward fashion, “But even though such a method as Profound Strength Endowment does exist, it is far more difficult than what you imagine it to be. In addition to its difficulty, the conditions that need to be fulfilled in order for this method to work are exceedingly harsh. Even in my own world, the Profound Strength Endowment method might not even succeed once despite thousands of years passing. Furthermore, even the most perfect Profound Strength Endowment method in this boundless universe will cause at least half of the profound strength being transferred to be

lost during the endowment! The reason why I was able to successfully receive the endowment was...”

After she had said those words, Jasmine’s voice came to an abrupt halt. Clearly, she had noticed that she had almost said something that she should not have as she was relating her story. After a brief moment of silence, she gave a cold snort and continued speaking, “And in the Profound Sky Continent, which is among the lowest planes of existence within the boundless universe, an extremely high-level profound technique such as

Profound Strength Endowment will definitely not appear here. So what happened to Fen Juechen should not be Profound Strength Endowment.”

“Not Profound Strength Endowment?” Yun Che asked in a shocked voice. “Then what is it? The devil origin that he had absorbed, isn’t that just devil profound energy that someone else had cultivated? Based on its characteristics, this is essentially allowing Fen Juechen to absorb its power bit by bit as he inherits someone else’s strength!”

“When we had first encountered Fen Juechen again, his extreme increase in power and the devil profound energy aura that he was emitting caused me to believe that his body had been taken over by a devilish soul. But after that, I realized that he still retained complete control over his own body. So I tried to probe the devil origin within his body, and I discovered that the spiritual aura of the devil origin and the spiritual aura of Fen Juechen was actually flawlessly compatible!” Jasmine said in a voice that was thick with suspicion, “This is the part that leaves me at a loss.



“If a devilish soul that possessed a source of power tried to forcibly enter a person’s body, there should only be three results: The destruction of the body, possession by the spirit, or the owner of the body using an even stronger profound or mental strength to repel the spirit and cause it to dissipate. But within Fen Juechen’s body, the devilish soul that entered his body is perfectly compatible with his own soul. Not only is there no sign of mutual destruction or an attempt to wrest control away, it actually seems like two fractured halves of a soul being slowly melded back together again!”

“~ ! @# ¥ %.....” If Jasmine had concluded that it was indeed Profound Strength Endowment, then even though it was inconceivable, Yun Che would still be able to understand the situation instantly. But Jasmine’s current explanation caused Yun Che’s mind to swim. He shook his head and once again began flying towards Floating Cloud City. “The more I learn about it, the more complicated it becomes, forget it... I think it’s best if I ask Fen Juechen himself three months later.”

“Weren’t you listening to what I was just telling you?” Jasmine asked in an icy voice, “The you right now is already not his opponent, and three months later, you will be even less capable of fighting of him. So you’re prepared to go and die?”

Yun Che curled his lips rather calmly. “I have the Primordial Profound Ark, so even if I can’t beat him, I can still run away! Moreover...” The faint smile on his lips slowly vanished as his brows faintly knitted themselves together. “Moreover, even if I don’t run, I won’t let him kill me so easily! Because I will not

allow myself... to lose to someone I've already defeated before!"

"..." Jasmine could not be bothered to respond anymore. She silently floated in the space within the Sky Poison Pearl as she guided the world's richest purifying energy to purify the last bit of the devilish poison that still clung to her soul. After a few moments, she suddenly and faintly opened her eyes and murmured to herself in a soft voice, "Could it be some kind of forbidden reincarnation technique?"

After he had arrived back at the Xiao household, he found that Xiao Lie's courtyard was still filled with the sound of joy and laughter. In the short span of a few hours, Xiao Lie seemed to have become a completely different person. The joy of having found something that was thought to be lost over twenty years ago caused his old eyes to be filled with tears of joy.

“Little Che!” Just as Yun Che landed on the ground, Xiao Lingxi ran over to welcome him back and tightly hugged his right

arm as if she was afraid that he would fly away once more the moment she let him go. But she immediately remembered that Xiao Lie and Xiao Yun were still around, so she hurriedly loosened her grip as a charming blush stained her tiny cheeks... she was as intimate as she was before, but what was different now was her mentality towards him.

“Che’er, you’ve returned.” Looking at the Yun Che whom he had raised from a tiny infant return, Xiao Lie gave a satisfied and grateful smile.

“Big Brother, what’s the situation over there? Did you manage to figure out what exactly they were doing?” Xiao Yun asked. In comparison to before, there was now some anxiety that could be seen on his face. That was because before this, while Floating Cloud City did indeed have something to do with him, it was still a remote and alien existence to him. But now, having come back to the place where he was born and having met those who were related to him by blood, he had begun to develop a sense of belonging towards Floating Cloud City.

Yun Che shook his head. “The Divine Phoenix Army is indeed undertaking some kind of secret mission, but they have protected this secret far too well, and even when I used the Profound Handle Soul Search, I still could not find out anything.”

“Even the Profound Handle Soul Search didn’t work?” Number Seven Under Heaven said in a shocked voice. In Demon Imperial City, there was no one who did not know of the tyrannical power of the Profound Handle Soul Search.



Even if the Profound Handle Soul Search did not work, that would mean that the matter at hand was highly unusual.

“Yes.” Yun Che nodded his head gravely, “So this matter is far more serious than what we had initially anticipated. But no matter what, we still need to get to the bottom of this.”

As Yun Che spoke, the gaze which he directed towards Number Seven Under Heaven grew strange. The change in his eyes caused her to look down at

herself suspiciously and ask, “Big Brother Yun, is there anything... wrong with my body? Why are you looking at me like that?”

“Hold out your hand,” Yun Che said in a serious tone.

“Ah? Oh.” Yun Che’s expression caused Number Seven Under Heaven to tense up and she anxiously thrust her right hand forward. Xiao Yun, who was by her side, was even more anxious than her. “Big Brother, Seventh Sister... is anything the matter

with her?”

Yun Che did not reply, instead he pressed a finger down on Number Seven Under Heaven's arm and let it rest there for three breaths. After that, he withdrew his finger and slowly exhaled before speaking slowly, “Xiao Yun, Seventh Sister, the both of you need to prepare your hearts... for what I am about to say.”

Yun Che's expression, tone, and the way he had exhaled caused Xiao Yun and Number Seven

Under Heaven to hold their breaths. Their hearts seized up in their chests, and they did not dare breathe. But after that, Xiao Yun finally managed to stutter out a reply, “Seventh Sister’s body, could it be... that there is some problem that has happened to it?”

They were sufficiently clear that Yun Che’s medical skills... were definitely not something to be laughed at.

“Yes, and it is very serious indeed.” Yun Che extended two

fingers and pointed at the two of people whose hearts were about to stop out of fear. “Seventh Sister... is pregnant, which also means that the two of you are about to become parents!”

“...Ah!” Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven stood there with blank expressions on their faces before crying out in alarm at the same time.

“Rea... rea... rea... really?” Xiao Yun grabbed Number Seven Under Heaven with one hand and Yun Che with the other, and

he was so excited that his face was flushed red.

“Oh... I... I...” Number Seven Under Heaven’s hand unconsciously strayed to her stomach. Her face was blushing, and she could not string together a coherent sentence as her shock and instinctive response of joy and fear rooted her to the spot.

“Of course, it’s true. I am a genius doctor after all, so do you think I’d get even something like this mixed up?” Yun Che asked

as he looked towards them with bemused eyes. “Isn’t your efficiency a bit too high? I mean, just look at how long you’ve been married. You’ve actually made a baby! Could it be that before the both of you were even married...”

“No I didn’t, I definitely didn’t!” Xiao Yun said in a fluster.

“Good heavens!” Xiao Lingxi said in shock, “Father, did you hear that?! Little Seventh is pregnant! You’re going to be a

great-grandfather!”

Yun Che's voice was loud, so how could Xiao Lie not hear it. His arm was half-raised into the air, his entire body was faintly trembling, and he was so moved that he could barely speak. Yun Che quickly strode to his side and declared, "Grandfather, in a few months, you will ascend to the position of great-grandfather! Heh heh, look, Xiao Yun has not only come back safe and sound, he has also brought back such a wonderful daughter-in-law and even came back with children of his own."



“Good... it’s truly good...” Xiao Lie said in a trembling voice as he dipped his head, tears of joy flashing in his eyes. At this time, a cool breeze blew, and Xiao Lie’s brows furrowed instantly as he exclaimed, “Yun’er, hurry up and bring Little Seventh back to her room. It’s cold out here and we don’t want to hurt the baby!”

“Haha!” Yun Che gave a great guffaw, “Grandfather, you don’t need to worry at all. Even though Seventh Sister is really young, her profound strength is already at the Tyrant Profound

Realm. Even Heavenly Sword Villa's Villa Master, Ling Yuefeng, would not be her match. Furthermore, the profound art that Seventh Sister cultivates is incomparably pure, so the baby in her stomach will be protected by an incredibly pure and powerful profound energy which means that even if you wanted something to go wrong, it would be tough.

“Ah, but Grandfather, look at yourself. I have only left for three years, but your health has deteriorated by this much. If you do not hurry up and treat yourself better, you might not

even have the ability to carry your great-grandchild.”

“Hahahaha.” Xiao Lie gave a great laugh of his own and supported himself using the chair before slowly and resolutely standing up. “My old bones are still very tough, and it’ll be no problem for me to live a few more decades and see the little baby grow up and give birth to more little babies.”

“Father...” Looking at Xiao Lie’s aura and spirit grow much more vigorous than before caused

heartfelt joy to well up in Xiao Lingxi's heart. She believed that as long as he remained in this condition, Xiao Lie's body would definitely recover in the shortest amount of time necessary.

The news of Number Seven Under Heaven's pregnancy caused the family to be covered in a joy that practically boiled over. Once the rejoicing had finally died down a little, Yun Che finally found a chance to say something that he had been wanting to say, "Grandfather, Little Aunt, Xiao Yun, and Seventh Sister will stay in Floating Cloud City for a period

of time, so you'll have to take care of them. Even though I've only just returned... I need to go somewhere immediately after this, so I'll have to leave the both of you for a while."

"Where are you going to go?" Xiao Lingxi's expression became anxious as she frantically grabbed Yun Che's hand. "You've only just returned, but you want to leave again? Is it... is it to go and do something dangerous again?"

"I need to make a trip to the

Divine Phoenix Empire, and I will be leaving before evening falls.” Yun Che held Xiao Lingxi’s hand and gave a light-hearted smile. “However, there will be no danger at all, and it won’t be long before I return. At that time, I’ll accompany my Little Aunt for as long as she wants me to.”

# Chapter 688 – Sword Pointed At Divine Phoenix

---

“The Divine Phoenix Empire? Why are you going there!” Xiao Lingxi’s expression became panicked. Because towards all of the citizens of Blue Wind Nation now, this was a name like a nightmare. She held Yun Che’s hand tightly and said, “Three years ago, you were in an accident in Divine Phoenix Empire, how could you... how could you...”

“Don’t worry.” Yun Che said, full of confidence, “Three years ago, the Divine Phoenix Empire wasn’t what caused my accident. On the contrary, the Divine Phoenix Empire wasn’t able to do anything to me three years ago, and it is even more impossible for them now.”

“No... no matter what, the answer is no! I absolutely do not want you to do anything dangerous anymore!” Xiao Lingxi shook her head in determination and looked to Xiao Lie for help. “Father, hurry and stop Little Che, he is going to do something dangerous



again.”

Xiao Lie looked directly at Yun Che. Following with the change of attitude in his heart, his eyes had become a lot clearer than before. He said slowly, “Che’er, are you this eager to go to the Divine Phoenix Empire because you want to force them to retreat?”

“Yes!” Yun Che nodded, “At the least, I am a citizen of Blue Wind Nation, and more importantly, I am the prince consort of the Blue Wind Imperial Family. My

homeland was attacked, and Royal Father was murdered. I cannot be silent no matter what. Another day the Divine Phoenix Empire is in our Blue Wind Nation, another day our Blue Wind Nation suffers disaster, so I must go to the Divine Phoenix Empire as soon as possible. There is also a lot of peculiarities with the Divine Phoenix Army's two hundred thousand soldiers on the east side of the city. If I cannot investigate it, I cannot settle down."

Xiao Lie nodded his head slowly and said with a light smile, "No matter what, you need to make

sure of your own safety. Even if it is for me and Lingxi... do not put yourself in a position of danger.”

“Mn!” Yun Che nodded his head hard and said, “I definitely will.”

Xiao Lingxi immediately started to panic. “Father, you...”

“Lingxi, we can’t stop him.” Xiao Lie chuckled and said with a sense of loss, “Che’er is completely grown up now. The

world that he can be in contact with is larger than what we can see with our eyes. Moreover, this time it wasn't for his own vengeance, but it was for Blue Wind Nation itself. If he could really save countless of people of the Blue Wind from suffering, we can only stand proud. What reason is there for us to stop him?"

"Father..." Xiao Lie's words melted Xiao Lingxi's determination into weakness. She lowered her head, bit softly on her lips, and uttered, "But, I am afraid... I am so afraid..."

Five years ago at Heavenly Sword Villa... Three years ago at Primordial Profound Ark... Behind the two times of losing and regaining was two feelings of devastation that also made her collapse. Her mindset changed many times over these years, and it revealed ever so clearly what was most important to her deep down. Now that she reunited with him once again, she only hoped that he would be safe, and would not be suffering from disasters. Everything else... was not that important.

“Little Aunt, don’t worry.” Yun Che comforted her softly, “Three years ago I already broke my promise to you and made you sad over me for that entire period of time. This time, I will definitely not break my promise to you again... At most I’ll be back within a month. Even though this time I am going to the Divine Phoenix Empire, there will not be any actual danger. If you don’t believe, you can ask Xiao Yun.”

“Yes yes yes yes!” Xiao Yun of course nodded his head immediately, “Big Brother is super strong right now, so no

matter where he goes, it is very hard to be in danger even if he wanted to be. Also, Big Brother has a very magical Profound Ark, it can instantly soar through space. Even if he is really in danger, he can escape immediately, and no one will be able to catch up. So I don't worry about Big Brother at all, and Little Aunt doesn't need to worry about him either."

Xiao Yun was not deliberately trying to comfort Xiao Lingxi for Yun Che; rather, it was worship and trust towards Yun Che from the bottom of his heart... After all, he was the one who fell the

forces of Duke Ming that shrouded the entire Illusory Demon Realm and saved the Demon Emperor's clan. Duke Ming's devious mind, force, and ambition were so scary that he almost replaced the Demon Emperor's clan and ruled the Illusory Demon Realm, but because of Yun Che, their plan was foiled and it ended with their clan being demolished. Also, Sun Moon Divine Hall, whose name was even known in Illusory Demon Realm, when they came with ill intent, they were tricked and played with by Yun Che, and they frantically ran away with their tails tucked between their legs...



On top of that, with the Primordial Profound Ark that can travel through space... Even though Yun Che's strength was not at the peak, Xiao Yun believed that in this world, it was absolutely harder to take his life than to kill a peak level Monarch. On the contrary, it was those who he targets or who was enemies with him that needed to worry.

“...” Xiao Lingxi bit her lips even harder, her hand that was holding onto Yun Che unwilling to let go. After a good while, she

lifted her head and looked at Yun Che with her clear eyes, “Then... can you leave tomorrow? You just came back, and I haven’t had to time to look at you closely... Right, Xiao Yun and Little Seventh are going to the mountains to pay respects to father tomorrow. You can bring them there, so don’t leave today, okay?”

With her soft begging words, how could Yun Che reject? He nodded slightly, “Okay, then I will leave tomorrow... Mn, I haven’t had meal made by Little Aunt in years.”

“Mn...” Xiao Lingxi smiled lightly. She looked quietly at the face that was almost within her reach. The expression in her eyes and her smile all became misty and lost.

Xiao Lie's eyes were on Xiao Lingxi this whole time. Looking at Xiao Lingxi's expression now and, the way that she looked at Yun Che, his eyebrows tightened a little. Then they relaxed immediately, and he revealed a light smile at the corner of his mouth.

Night had fallen, there was a fancy dinner on the table, and the atmosphere was joyous. Xiao Lie, who usually doesn't have much appetite, ate three large bowls of rice. His face glowed brighter and brighter, and he had heartily laughed more today than in the past three years altogether. Maybe he never dreamed that he would be able to eat with his biological grandson at the same table.

After dinner, Yun Che called upon Xiao Yun, "Xiao Yun, come with me for a second, I have

something that I need to tell you privately.”

Xiao Yun was dragged all the way out the courtyard by Yun Che. Looking at how serious Yun Che was, Xiao Yun asked somewhat nervously, “Big Brother, is there something very important?”

Yun Che lifted his hand to tap his chin. Then, he stepped closer and said in a low voice, “Actually, when I said that Seventh Sister is pregnant this afternoon... it was fake.”

Xiao Yun was stunned, and then his whole body jumped, “What! Fa... Fake!?”

“Shh!! Lower your voice!!” Yun Che placed his hand on Xiao Yun’s shoulders and said, “The reason I said that was of course not to lie for fun, it was for grandfather!”

“You saw how grandfather’s health situation is!” Yun Che’s expression became serious, “For a person who cultivated profound arts for half of his life,

the only reason that he would become like this today was because of the death wish that emerged from his heart for all this time! I heard some people from the Xiao Sect said that, back then, grandfather and grandmother's relationship was very deep. Not long after grandmother gave birth to Little Aunt, because of Uncle Xiao... which is your father's death, she died of depression. If it wasn't to raise me and Little Aunt, grandfather would have left with grandmother. As Little Aunt and I grow up, grandfather's mental state obviously became worse and worse. During that time, I used revenge and the hope of you still

being alive in this world to support him... but three years ago, when the news of my death hit him, it made grandfather birth the thought of death these three years. If it wasn't for Little Aunt still being here, he might have killed himself already."

"Now that you and I are back, grandfather is very happy and satisfied. But even so, it wouldn't be that easy to get rid of his wish for death that he had for three years, and it has almost become a habit. After his wish of all these years is fulfilled, his will of wanting to end his life to accompany grandmother and his



son might become stronger, so I had no choice but to make up the story of Seventh Sister being pregnant to give grandfather a larger surprise and something to look forward to.

Listening to Yun Che's words, Xiao Yun calmed down very quickly. He thought for a while, nodded his head, and said worriedly, "Big Brother makes a lot of sense, but this kind of lie is very easy to see through. Also, lying to Seventh Sister and grandfather, it is... it is not very good no matter what. They are so happy, so if they know that it's fake, they will definitely be...

be very sad.”

“You don’t have to worry about this at all.” Yun Che smiled mysteriously, reached out his hand, and there were two pills the size of a fingernail, one white and one red. “Have these two pills. Take the red one yourself, and give the white one to Seventh Sister, and then... after tonight, Seventh Sister will be pregnant.”

“Ah? Re... really?” Xiao Yun’s mouth opened. He reached out, took the pills from Yun Che’s

hand, looked at it with curiosity, and said wonderingly, “There is actually a pill so magical? Really... will it work guaranteed?”

“I can refine a bunch of Overlord Pellets easily, not to mention this type of simple pill for a husband and wife.” Yun Che said very casually, “As long as your Seventh Sister is not on her menstrual cycle today, there will not be a problem at all.”

“Hehe, I of course wouldn’t doubt Big Brother’s medical

skills at all, this is great.” Xiao Yun held the red and white pills in his hand tightly and carefully, and then he lifted his head and asked confusedly, “Big Brother, what did you mean by ‘period’ just now?”

“...” Yun Che immediately recalled Number Seven Under Heaven’s facial color and the pulse that he got casually and said, “This is a medical term, you don’t have to know it. You and Seventh Sister just have to take the pill and everything will work out.”

“Oh! I will go right away!” Xiao Yun nodded, but just as he lifted his leg, he withdrew them back and said somewhat embarrassedly, “But... but how should I tell Seventh Sister? If I tell her that the pregnancy is fake, she might be sad and angry, but if I don’t say it... I don’t know how to tell her about the pill... I’ve never lied to Seventh Sister before, this, this...”

Yun Che rolled his eyes, reached out, took the white pill from Xiao Yun’s hand, jumped up from the ground, and yelled, “Seventh Sister!”

Number Seven Under Heaven in the courtyard turned around and said, "Big Brother Yun, what is the matter?"

Yun Che flicked his fingers, and the white pill flew towards Number Seven Under Heaven. "You just came to Profound Sky Continent, so I'm afraid that the environment would affect the fetus in you, so I prescribed an anti-abortion pill for you, take it quickly."

Number Seven Under Heaven

reached out, caught it, took a look at it, and ate it without even thinking. She smiled and said, “Thank you Big Brother Yun.”

In Illusory Demon Realm, everyone knew that Yun Che was a genius doctor who could cure any sickness. His pill couldn't be bought even with ten of thousands of gold. Even if she believed in ghosts, she wouldn't suspect a thing about the pill Yun Che prescribed.

Yun Che landed as light as a feather and said to Xiao Yun,

“Okay, it is solved.”

Xiao Yun smiled embarrassedly and then took the red pill right away.

Yun Che looked at Xiao Yun and said suddenly, “The leader of the two hundred thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army at the east side of the city was killed by me. Now that they don’t have a leader, they won’t take action very easily. After I go to the Divine Phoenix Empire tomorrow, I cannot predict what will happen, and I cannot



predict where the Divine Phoenix Army will go to, but I absolutely cannot rule out the possibility of them getting an order to attack Floating Cloud City... so during this period of time, Floating Cloud City will have to depend on you and Seventh Sister's protection. If you are unwilling to stain your hands with blood, then take grandfather and Little Aunt, and leave safely right away... or send a sound transmission to me directly. With the Primordial Profound Ark, I can come back anytime."

"Big Brother, don't worry. No

matter what, even if I put my life on the line, I would not let anything happen to grandfather, Little Aunt, or Seventh Sister,” Xiao Yun exclaimed in determination.

Yun Che turned around, looked to the south, and the expression in his eyes darkened. “Divine Phoenix Empire... Divine Phoenix Sect! Prepare to accept my fury!”

# Chapter 689 – Divine Phoenix’s Killing Intent

---

Divine Phoenix Nation, Divine Phoenix Sect.

The right side of Feng Ximing’s face was dark red, like blood, and it was swollen as well. After being slapped so heavily by an enraged Feng Hengkong, not even Feng Ximing, who had such strong profound strength, had been able to completely recover. He stood in front of Feng Hengkong, bowing respectfully as he said, “Royal Father, why have you summoned me?”

Both of Feng Hengkong's hands were behind his back as he faintly said without turning around, "Feng Huwei has died."

Feng Ximing's brows suddenly furrowed. "Died?! It definitely seems like someone from the Four Great Sacred Grounds must have finally been unable to hold back and thus made a ruthless strike! Then... then that secret, has it been leaked?"

"Feng Huwei's body was enchanted with the Cage of

Memories which was created by the collaboration a few grand elders. There is absolutely no way that the secret was leaked.” Feng Hengkong’s brows narrowed. “Furthermore, the one who killed Feng Huwei actually wasn’t someone from the Four Great Sacred Grounds. I don’t believe that the Four Great Sacred Grounds would risk offending the Phoenix God to kill Feng Huwei just because they had some doubts.”

“It’s not someone from the Four Great Sacred Grounds?” The surprise atop Feng Ximing’s face intensified as he said,

“Although Feng Huwei is the general of the Divine Phoenix Army, his profound strength by no means weak. Other than someone from the Four Great Sacred Grounds, who else has the power to and dares to kill Feng Huwei... Moreover! There is also the two hundred thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army at Feng Huwei’s side!”

“It is someone you never would have thought of.” Feng Hengkong turned around. The expression on his face was incomparably heavy and ugly as he said, “It’s Yun... Che!!”

“What?” Feng Ximing suddenly raised his head, abruptly ripping open the wound on his face which caused the edge of his eye to twitch sporadically. “It’s that Yun Che?”

“Hmph, is there any other? It is indeed the Yun Che who should have been buried within the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago!” Feng Heng heavily continued, “Don’t bother asking how he is still alive, that is something that I want to know more than anyone else!”

“How could he have lived? Three years ago, he disappeared along with the Primordial Profound Ark. There was simply no possibility of survival! Could it be... that it is only someone who looks similiar? Or perhaps just a simple illusion to confuse us?”

“Hmph, I have not yet reached the point where I am unable to determine if someone is real or not!” snorted Feng Hengkong. The voice, expressions, glares... and the wild arrogance which emanated out from Yun Che’s



body from within Feng Huwei's death soul imprint, there was absolutely no one within the world who could possibly reenact it. "Not only is he alive, his profound strength has advanced even further these last three years. Beneath his hands, there was simply nothing Feng Huwei could do to resist."

"Could it be that his current strength has already reached the middle stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm?" asked Feng Ximing in shock. Feng Huwei's profound strength had been at the early stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm, so for Yun Che

to be able to render him helpless, Yun Che had to at least have the power of a mid-stage Overlord. “It can’t be! There is absolutely no way! No matter how talented he is, it’s not possible to advance so much within such the short span of three years!”

“Wrong! His current strength is perhaps even greater than the middle stage of Tyrant Profound Realm.” Traces of coldness emerged within Feng Hengkong’s eyes as he solemnly said, “The strange disappearance of the seven hundred thousand soldier army,

including the two supervisor elders, Fei Heng and Fei Ying, in Blue Wind Imperial City was all due to him... These were his own words! If they are true, then his strength is definitely greater than the middle stage of Tyrant Profound Realm. It is very possible... that he has already reached the late stage of Tyrant Profound Realm!”

“That’s even more impossible!” Feng Ximing shook his head without hesitation. “Back then, Yun Che had used all his strength and could only barely defeat Xiluo; his strength was probably only in the ninth level

of the Emperor Profound Realm. In just three short years, even if he ate the Great Shifting Gold Pellet, it's impossible that he could advance to the late stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm in such a short amount of time. If he used some special method or profound artifact, I could still accept it. However, if we said that he relied on his own strength to obliterate the seventy thousand strong Divine Phoenix Army and the two overseeing elders, I would never believe it no matter what.

“Furthermore, even if we consider the worst, even if Yun

Che had really come back from the dead and now possesses the strength of a late-stage Overlord, he would only be a trifling thorn in our side. Also, knowing that the disappearance of the army had nothing to do with the Four Great Sacred Grounds, shouldn't royal father feel reassured instead, why is your expression still so glum?"

"Hmph, even if there were another ten Yun Ches, he would not be able to conjure up much of a storm!" Feng Hengkong's eyes knitted tightly. "But, did you forget for what reason Xue'er was unconscious for three

years!”

Feng Ximing’s expression changed drastically. “Could royal father be afraid that Xue’er...”

“I’m not worried!” Feng Hengkong’s chest rose strongly, and his expression was so ugly that his face nearly contorted. “It’s something even more scary than what you imagined! Do you know what Xue’er told us before we were chased out? She wanted us... to treat Blue Wind Nation kindly!”

“... Was this the reason why royal father ordered everyone to not talk about sending troops to Blue Wind?” Feng Ximing started to realize the severity of the problem.

“How could we not agree to a request from Xue’er!” Feng Hengkong clenched his fists tightly. “Three years ago, Yun Che had indeed used his life to save Xue’er... and Xue’er had been unconscious for three years because of him and even cried in sadness for him! Before this... have you ever seen Xue’er cry?”

“We’ve long realized that her feelings towards Yun Che were not simply just pure gratitude!” Feng Hengkong’s body started to tremble as rage appeared in the depths of his eyes as well as a sense of anxiety. “Xue’er obtained an ice type aerial profound beast out of nowhere, and we learned that the ice type profound beast was known as the Snow Phoenix. It only exists in a region in Blue Wind Nation known as the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, and Yun Che had once flown on a Snow Phoenix.”



“Then... could it be...”

“Before Xue’er returned to Phoenix Perching Valley, she had suddenly requested to go to Blue Wind Nation’s Snow Region of Extreme Ice... and only one force exists at the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, which is Frozen Cloud Asgard! And Yun Che, was a member was of Frozen Cloud Asgard!”

Feng Hengkong’s words caused Feng Ximing’s expression to darken time and time again. “Does that mean that even

before the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Xue'er and Yun Che had already known each other?"

"We should have already known that with Yun Che's temperament. How could he have been willing to save her using his own life only because Xue'er had helped him! Similarly, how could Xue'er have been that heart broken if it was only because of the gratitude of him saving her..." Feng Hengkong's rage had started turning into hostility, and the temperature within the entire Divine Phoenix Main Hall had

started to rise intensely.

Feng Xue'er... A precious gem bestowed by heaven upon the Divine Phoenix Sect, the future Phoenix God of the Divine Phoenix Sect! His biggest pride, the most precious thing in his entire world, much more than his life. A daughter that was much more important than the entire Divine Phoenix Sect combined. But she had shed her tears for an outsider, an enemy of the Divine Phoenix Sect...

He could never blame Feng

Xue'er, but his hatred for Yun Che had already grown leaps and bounds! The fact that he possessed the Phoenix bloodline and insulted the pride of his entire sect was nothing in comparison.

Because Feng Xue'er's suggestion of treating Blue Wind Nation kindly had already thrown him into utter confusion and caused him to order a ban within the entire city. Furthermore, Yun Che was still alive! If Xue'er were to learn that Yun Che was still alive... he could not imagine what would happen.

Feng Ximing said with some calmness, "However, Xue'er usually stays either at the Phoenix Realm or Phoenix Perching Valley. It would have been impossible in the Phoenix Realm, and as for Phoenix Perching Valley, there are enchantments on three of its boundaries. For the last one, there lies a Great Phoenix Formation. Only members of our sect would be able to enter. It is impossible for Yun Che to have come into contact with Xue'er!"

“The problem probably lies on the Great Phoenix Formation!” Feng Hengkong’s expression darkened even further. “The Great Phoenix Formation does not only allow our sect members to enter. Don’t forget, Yun Che also possesses the Phoenix bloodline and can enter without restraint as well! Three years ago, several days before the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament began, you once personally told us that Chen’er’s chief bodyguard had died tragically within the Great Phoenix Formation...”

Feng Ximing was shocked

before his expression drastically changed. “Royal Father, do you mean that the person who killed Feng Chihuo back then was Yun Che?! And after that, he passed through the Great Phoenix Formation and met Xue’er in Phoenix Perching Valley?”

“Highly likely!” Feng Hengkong solemnly said, his clenched fist making cracking noises. Back then, when he had heard that Feng Chihuo had died, he treated it as if it was nothing because he was preparing for the Seven Nation Ranking tournament and the Primordial Profound Ark. He would not

bother with a lowly bodyguard's death. Furthermore, dying within the Great Phoenix Formation meant that it was likely a battle between sect members and he had lost due to inferior skills! However, when Feng Xue'er had awoken, all her actions had caused his mind to be in a mess, and he had unknowingly recalled the "small matter" that had happened three years ago.

"Xue'er is pure and innocent, her heart untainted. Yun Che possessed the aura of the Divine Phoenix, so even if he had barged into Phoenix Perching



Valley, Xue'er would not be cautious against him. Also, he is very glib-tongued and silenced so many people during the ranking tournament... Xue'er would not be able to resist his bewitchment!" Feng Hengkong clenched his teeth together tightly. Although this was all speculation, the more he thought about it and the deeper he thought about it recently, the more likely he felt that this was true.

"What shall we do next?" On Feng Ximing, the same sense of hostility as the one on Feng Hengkong appeared.

“Of course it is to kill him within the shortest amount of time!” Feng Hengkong uttered each word with killing intent, “No matter what, we must not let Xue’er see Yun Che... No! We must not let Xue’er find out that he’s alive!

“Ming’er, go inform all the elders together in the Divine Phoenix Main Hall tomorrow afternoon to discuss matters! Furthermore... it looks like we must employ a grand elder to kill Yun Che! Although the possibility that Yun Che is in the

late stage of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm is low... he  
needs to die!" As he finished  
speaking, only the sound of his  
grinding teeth could be heard.

In his entire life, he had never  
had such bone deep hatred for  
someone.

Allowing a cornerstone Grand  
Elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect  
to kill a twenty odd year old  
youth, any member of the  
Divine Phoenix Sect hearing this  
would stare mouth agape in  
disbelief, but Feng Ximing did

not appear to be shocked... because just as Feng Hengkong had said, Yun Che had to die! His life was worthless... but this concerned Feng Xue'er!!

“I understand.” Feng Ximing bowed solemnly.

Feng Hengkong's chest rose and fell strongly before he eventually calmed down and seemingly muttered to himself, “Looks like before we can ensure that Yun Che and all worries are eliminated, we must try and delay Xue'er's trip to Blue Wind

Nation's Snow Region of the Extreme Ice..."

He turned around and looked at the right side of Feng Ximing's face, and his gaze immediately turned much gentler, "Ming'er, is your face still hurting... Royal Father could not control his emotions and apologizes."

Feng Ximing immediately replied in shock, "What is royal father saying! I spoke out of line and made Xue'er sad. Royal father reprimanding me is only natural. I only feel ashamed and

have no complaints. What royal father is saying now only makes me feel worse.”

“Heh heh,” Feng Hengkong reassuringly laughed slightly, before waving his hand. “You may leave. Only we need to know what has been said today.”

“Understood! Naturally, I won’t tell anyone anything that we discussed... I shall not disturb royal father anymore and will withdraw!”

Exiting from the Divine Phoenix Main Hall, Feng Ximing's originally calm expression had sunk as well. He looked up, touched the swollen right side of his face, and his entire face contorted. His eyes stared widely, and within the depth of his eyes, there was a malicious, ice cold, killing intent ... Gradually, traces of blood seeped through from between his teeth and gathered on his trembling lips.

“Yun... Che!!! You... actually... dare...”

“You... actually... dare!!!”



# Chapter 690 – Sleeping In Each Other's Embrace

---

Floating Cloud City gained its long awaited peace tonight. With the terrible death of Feng Huwei, the Divine Phoenix Army that had lost its general also stopped their “mission” and quieted down in a panic... Although they didn't retreat, they didn't disturb Floating Cloud City.

Here was the courtyard where Yun Che had lived for sixteen years. The room was organized like it has always been, with a

minimal changes.. Its scent within was also extremely familiar. The only change was the person's heart.

Yun Che laid on the soft bed. The bedding was bright red, and around it were red drapes. There was a split second of haziness as Yun Che felt like he had returned to the wedding night between him and Xia Qingyue...

Yet in this room was Xiao Lingxi's hard work; she would come here at least once everyday... She did her best in

order to preserve everything about Yun Che.

“Six years and seven months have already passed since the wedding with Xia Qingyue.” Yun Che carefully lifted the red drapes around him, then said with a smile, “Speaking of which, it was also on the wedding night that I met you, Jasmine... If I didn’t meet you, my life would probably be completely different, huh.”

Yun Che was muttering to himself, but Jasmine was not in

deep sleep for once, so the moment he finished speaking, Jasmine said calmly, “Hmph, if you didn’t meet me, with your personality that likes to court death, you would have died already even if you possessed a hundred lives!”

“Aren’t you the same!” Yun Che retorted, then immediately asked, “Your sleeping time seemed to have gotten shorter recently, is the devilish poison nearly purified?”

“There’s about thirty percent

left,” Jasmine said slowly. “As expected of the Sky Poison Pearl, the power of purification far exceeds my expectations. The devilish poison in my body would be feared even by True Gods. If it was completely released, it would be enough to turn the entire Sky Profound Continent into a deathly hell. Furthermore, after it destroyed my body, it was entrenched deep into my soul. It is thousands of times harder than purifying a normal bodily poison. I had thought that completely purifying it would take at least thirty years. Never would I have thought that it would have been purified to such degree in only a short seven years. The

remaining thirty percent could be completely purified within a few more months.”

“That’s good,” Yun Che nodded. Then he said, “Oh... You told me to raise my profound strength to the Sovereign Profound Realm in thirty years back then. Was it because you thought that you needed at least thirty years to completely purify the devilish poison?”

“That’s one of the reasons,” Jasmine said faintly. “The other was to spur you on. However,

from the looks of it, I had underestimated the Sky Poison Pearl and also underestimated your talent and luck.”

“Hehe!” Yun Che chuckled proudly. Then, he said in a “humble” manner, “However, I’m only at the Emperor Profound Realm. I’m still very far away from the true Sovereign Profound Realm. Perhaps... I really can’t become a Monarch in thirty years.”

“Right now, it does count as you having reached my

estimated goal!” Jasmine continued calmly, “I need to reconstruct my body, need enough Purple Veined Divine Crystals, and at least the life’s vitality of a Monarch’s strength. Even though your profound strength is only at the Emperor Profound, in terms of strength, it is already at the early stage Sovereign Profound Realm. Because of the Dragon God’s bloodline and the Great Way of the Buddha, your life’s vitality is even better than that of a Monarch at his peak, so reconstructing a body with your current life’s vitality is much more perfect than what I had anticipated!”



Yun Che's mind was shocked. "Really!? Then why didn't you say so earlier! If I knew that, I would have quickened my pace of collecting Purple Veined Divine Crystals and the profound beast cores!"

Yun Che's voice was filled with true joy and anxiousness, yet it only returned with Jasmine's snort, "Hmph! So what if I said it earlier? Did you find the Netherworld Udumbara Flower? Without the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, the soul and the body cannot perfectly fuse...

This way, what's the use of merely reconstructing the body!"

"...Understood, I will try my hardest to find it. I'll go and ask at the Black Moon Merchant Guild tomorrow, they might have some news."

"Tomorrow?" Jasmine said lowly, "Originally, you said that you will go to the Divine Phoenix Nation today, yet just due to a single sentence from your little aunt, it turned into tomorrow. The principles you

always talk about are always nothing in front of women. Hmph, it really suits your personality as a sex fiend!

“If you die terribly any day, it will definitely be because of a woman.”

The title Jasmine used the most for Yun Che was “sex fiend.” Over so many years, the number of times she used that was even greater than the number of times she had referred to him as “Yun Che.” This sort of thing that was used to mock Yun Che,

Yun Che had already heard countless times... Yet after Jasmine had said this, the Mirror of Samsara on Yun Che's neck suddenly shone out a dim silver light... The light faded with a flash.

However, neither Yun Che nor Jasmine noticed.

“Yes yes yes, it might be because of you. So you will continue meet me in your next life, then continue force me to repay my debt like in this life... Now that I think about it, it's not

that bad,” Yun Che put his hands behind his head and said smilingly.

“...Hmph,” Jasmine replied in contempt.

Yun Che laid down for a while, but he didn't sleep. Instead, he silently felt the silence of the entire Xiao Clan. Fifteen minutes later, he opened his eyes, raised the corners of his lips, and revealed an evil smile as he muttered, “Hmm... Grandfather and the rest should be asleep now.”

He flipped over and walked out of the room door. His body jumped and silently flew up; then, with flash that wouldn't be very noticeable to the naked eye, he arrived at the little courtyard where Xiao Lingxi was.

Xiao Lingxi wasn't asleep yet; her room was still lit with a warm-colored light, and the faint light painted a scene as beautiful as a dream onto the window.

Seeing her figure, Yun Che

subconsciously smiled. He raised his hand and lightly moved his wrist. With that, the window quickly opened without any sound, and he flew right in.

Before Xiao Lingxi managed to scream, she was embraced by the waist, and her lips were forcefully kissed. All sound became helpless whimpers... She subconsciously struggled, but after smelling the smell that she was most familiar with in this life, her struggles became weaker and weaker until her entire body melted into Yun Che's embrace as she closed her eyes and allowed the man that

suddenly broke in to violate her lips.

The lights in the room were extinguished by a force of profound energy. As Xiao Lingxi was still in a loving confusion, her upper body was pushed down onto the bed by Yun Che. He shook one of his hands lightly, and the butterfly belt as well as the buttons on her clothes were all undone. His hand directly reached underneath her undergarments without any obstacles. Following her thin waist up, he grabbed a soft, full mound and started squeezing it lightly.



“Mmm...” Xiao Lingxi’s eyes jumped as she them widely and let out a long whimper. Her body also struggled subconsciously. Although she had been “bullied” by Yun Che in many ways, it was through the clothes every single time, yet this time, she was being violated by Yun Che without any barriers. However, no matter how she whimpered and struggled, she was still weak like a wounded little animal. Finally, in her franticness, she subconsciously bit onto Yun Che’s intruding tongue.

Yun Che's actions stopped as he opened his eyes and looked at the young lady that whose lips his were wrapped around... Xiao Lingxi breathed heavily. Her breath came out lightly onto Yun Che's face, and her thin brows trembled slightly in her nervousness.

Compared to Yun Che, Xiao Lingxi, who had no experience, was no different from a white sheet of paper. Afraid that his over the top actions would terrify her, Yun Che regretted it a little, then lightly lifted his hand from that soft peak...

Upon sensing his action, a softness suddenly pressed onto his hand, and all of a sudden, the snow-like mound once again filled up his hand.

“Hug me and sleep... No letting go... the entire night.” She laid her head down on Yun Che’s chest, and as her voice trembled in nervousness, her beautiful eyes were shut tight, afraid to meet his gaze.

Yun Che smiled lightly, he held Xiao Lingxi up, got onto the bed,

and embraced her tightly... Then, they slept in each other's arms like they did when they were younger.

“Little Che, you can... never leave me again,” she murmured faintly as if she were sleep talking.

“Mn...” Yun Che replied in an even lightly voice.

“...This huge sex fiend, he actually even made a move on his little aunt!” In Yun Che's

mind, Jasmine's voice that carried a faint bit of killing intent rang out.

The next morning Yun Che, Xiao Yun, and Number Seven Under Heaven went to offer sacrifices to the Xiao Ying couple. Then, he unwillingly said his goodbyes to Xiao Lingxi and Xiao Lie before leaving Floating Cloud City and arriving at Blue Wind Imperial City.

Blue Wind Imperial City was still in a state of intense nervousness, but the terrified

atmosphere was much fainter than two days ago.

After informing Cang Yue that he was about to go to the Divine Phoenix Empire and force the Divine Phoenix Army to retreat, Cang Yue remained silent for a long while as she leaned against Yun Che's shoulders and looked at the painting of Cang Wanhe on the wall. She said softly, "Husband, I am royal father's only daughter. The grudge of killing father was originally irreconcilable... But, I am the Empress of Blue Wind Nation. Inciting more conflict would only cause the people of Blue

Wind Nation to get caught in a more terrifying spiral of war. If the Divine Phoenix Army could retreat, stop the war, and promised to never invade again...”

Cang Yue closed her eyes softly, “Then temporarily forget about getting revenge for royal father.”

“Yue’er, don’t worry, I know what to do,” Yun Che smiled and said. He knew that Cang Yue’s words were due to worrying about the future of Blue Wind Nation, and she was worrying

about him even more... She knew that she couldn't stop him and could only use words like this in hopes of minimizing the conflict between Yun Che and the Divine Phoenix Empire. Since, the smaller the conflict, the lower the risks he has to endure.

“Brother-in-law, I'll go with you!!”

Xia Yuanba smashed his fists in front of his chest, letting out a loud sound which caused the entire palace to shake violently.



“See if I smash the homes of those Divine Phoenix bastards into pieces with a punch!”

“No, Yuanba, you stay here,” Yun Che looked at Xia Yuanba and said. “I alone am enough for the Divine Phoenix Nation. You stay here, there’s a more important mission for you.”

“Blue Wind Imperial City is the last line of defense for Blue Wind Nation, it cannot be collapsed! If I anger the Divine Phoenix Nation over there when they can’t catch me, they may

very well vent their anger here. So someone must be here to protect this place... Yuanba, it's because you are here that I can go to the Divine Phoenix Nation without worry."

Yun Che's final sentence caused Xiao Yuanba, who was already rubbing his fists, to not insist anymore. He nodded with a great amount of force, "Brother-in-law, don't worry. With me here, no one from the Divine Phoenix Nation can think about getting near!"

“Brother Under Heaven, I’ll trouble you as well. Sigh... Originally, I brought you and Seventh Sister to come and play. I never thought that it would bring you guys so much trouble.”

“Heheh,” Number One Under Heaven smiled calmly. “Brother Yun, you don’t have to be so formal. I believe that with Brother Yun’s ability, merely a Divine Phoenix Nation... is not even worth mentioning.”

“Of course!” Yun Che laughed with arrogance thriving from

his body. He hugged Cang Yue and looked at her eyes. “Yue’er, rest assured, I’ll be back. Just wait for me at home... I promise I will make the Divine Phoenix Nation give you an answer with utmost ‘sincerity.’”

Yun Che lightly kissed Cang Yue on her forehead, then flew up and summoned the Primordial Profound Ark. Then, by the next moment, he had already disappeared in a spatial whirlpool.

# Chapter 691 – Meeting Zi Ji Once Again

---

The main branch of Divine Phoenix Sect was slightly west of the center of Divine Phoenix City, and the Black Moon Merchant Guild was at the very center.

The size of the Black Moon Merchant Guild was more than several dozen kilometers and could be comparable to a small town. Anyone would find it hard to believe that it was actually just a merchant guild's station if they didn't see it with their own

eyes.

The Black Moon Merchant Guild had a total of eight floors. Although they were only eight floors, the height of each floor was incomparably shocking. Adding them together, the building actually shot through the blue skies. At the very top, a gigantic black-colored crescent moon exalted itself among the clouds. Seemingly, at any corner of this humongous Divine Phoenix City, it was clearly visible if one were to raise his head to take a look. The gigantic plaza at the front of the merchant guild was still filled

with people like before, and every day, there would be countless profound practitioners trying to enter the place. However, not even one out of ten of them would turn out successful. And out of those who could enter, about eighty to ninety percent of them would only be able to enter the first two floors.

A youth in a long black robe with a solemn-looking and inconspicuous face, arrived at the center of the Black Moon Plaza where the seven-colored jade stage was. Raising his head, he looked at the large, cloud-

piercing structure which was reflecting a pure jade luster. Although this was a merchant guild, every single one of its individual bricks and tiles was much extravagant than the ones used by the Blue Wind Imperial Family. Above the gigantic black moon at the top and under the shroud of extremely grand, imposing atmosphere, anyone who looked up towards it would seemingly have the impulse to worship it.

“Carrying a history even longer than Divine Phoenix Sect and possessing a tremendous to indiscernible background...



Hopefully, it won't disappoint me." The youth softly muttered to himself, walking towards one of the profound arrays at the jade stage. As he approached it, a purple glow rose from his body, and then, under the attention of the incomparably surprised crowd around him, he immediately entered the profound array.

For the first six floors of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, whenever one wished to enter, he or she would have to always strike the jade stage once to obtain the qualifications to enter. However, the seventh

floor was different from the first six. The moment one obtained the qualifications to enter it, the teleportation array would memorize the target's essence, and the person could then enter it directly in the future... unless the Black Moon Merchant Guild decided to erase the target's essence.

Because, compared to the first six floors, the seventh floor was a completely different world. To the Black Moon Merchant Guild, people who could enter the seventh floor and those who couldn't were people of two different worlds.

When the profound light dispersed, Yun Che opened his eyes. What was revealed in front of him was what seemed to be a boundless garden at first glance. Adorned within the lush jade greens were various gorgeous, exotic flowers and herbs. Every single large tree was tall and erect, and within every single vertical stream, the endless trickling of flowing water could be heard. Such a sight would cause people to believe that they had suddenly walked into a divine realm instead of entering the interior of a merchant guild.

In front of him, three beautiful young girls wearing different dresses gracefully arrived and lightly bowed. “Welcome to Black Moon Merchant Guild Young Master Yun. Mister Zi is personally waiting for you, please follow this lowly one.”

Yun Che was currently in a disguise, yet when he heard how these three young girls addressed him, Yun Che was not fazed in the slightest. After all, that teleportation array had clearly memorized the entrant’s essence. Rubbing his face, he revealed his true look and smiled. “Then I will have to

trouble you three little sisters.”

The three young girls gracefully smiled as they brought Yun Che through the jade-green garden and even through a small hill. Arriving at the same extravagant courtyard as before, seated under the same long pavilion was a purple-colored elder wearing a warm smile.

“You’re here.” Zi Ji slowly rose. His clearwater eyes sized up the youth before him, and gently nodded. His face revealed a

meaningful smile. “It’s been three years since we last met, and your demeanor has surpassed your former by at least ten times... Haah, the younger generation will surpass the older as they say.”

“Junior Yun Che greets Senior Zi. Senior, you give me too much praise.” Yun Che took a step forward and bowed with cupped hands.

“Hoho, please sit.” Zi Ji stretched his hand forward, and then, sat at the same time as Yun

Che. “Qing Chen, boil a new pot of tea. It has to be ‘Drunken Red Earth’ that has been freshly picked out this morning.”

“Yes.” The young girl in an azure dress politely bowed and floated away. The other two young girls split to Yun Che’s two sides beautifully and gracefully. Carrying light smiles on their lips and standing with respectful postures, they looked as though they could be freely dispatched by Yun Che.

“Senior Zi seems to have long

predicted that this junior will come for a visit,” Yun Che smiled. Before he came here, he was absolutely sure that the Black Moon Merchant Guild was already aware of the news of him returning alive... If they hadn’t known, then he would have been disappointed.

“This old one has predicted that you would come, but I had never expected that it would be this soon,” Zi Ji lightly smiled. Compared to three years ago, his gaze on Yun Che seemed to have largely changed. “With the information this old one obtained, you were in Floating



Cloud City two hours ago. But now, you have actually appeared in front of this old one.”

The information network belonging to the Black Moon Merchant Guild was impressive as expected. To actually have feelers stretching all the way to Floating Cloud City... Of course, the garrison set up by the Divine Phoenix Army over there might be related as well. The distance between Floating Cloud City and Divine Phoenix City was extremely far. Back then, when he set off from Blue Wind Imperial City which was much closer, even when he journeyed

throughout day and night, it still took him several days. Yet now, with merely two hours, he had arrived at Divine Phoenix City from Floating Cloud City... This was indeed overly frightening. Even the strongest profound ark on Profound Sky Continent would definitely not be able to accomplish such a feat.

In regards to this point, Yun Che naturally couldn't possibly not know of it, but he never thought of giving an explanation. Just as he was about to make a pass with a smile, he heard Zi Ji speak, using an admiring tone, "If it

was someone else, this old one would have already been shocked beyond belief and would suspect that the person before me was a ghost or god. But your respected master is, after all, Old Man Duotian, who had once shaken the world ten thousand years ago. Crossing through the Primordial Profound Ark's dimensional space was already a small feat for him, so with your respected master's godly powers, the distance of a hundreds of kilometers between this place and Floating Cloud City is merely a flick of a finger."

Old man... Duotian? Respected master?

The hell!?

A hint of astonishment flashed past the depths of Yun Che's eyes, and to this astonishment, in Zi Ji's eyes, was naturally misunderstood as something else. He chuckled, "There's no need to be surprised. It's not that my Black Moon Merchant Guild is powerful and large enough to know of your respected master's existence, rather, Sun Moon Divine Hall

did not keep the matter of encountering your respected master in Snow Region of Extreme Ice a secret. Currently, Absolute Sword Monarchy, Supreme Ocean Palace, and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region already knows of this matter.

“Although the name of ‘Old Man Duotian’ has long disappeared for ten thousand years, the Four Great Sacred Grounds were all established ten thousand years ago. The memories of their ancestors are inherited through generations and are never lost. This is why there are still people who knows

of the name of your respected master. But, never would one expect that the unbeatable supreme being of the profound realm ten thousand years ago did not actually shatter void-space and ascend to a higher realm as the rumors had stated, but instead had been staying on Profound Sky Continent the entire time, overlooking the vast number of lives. I heard from rumors that your respected master had formed his own world and extinguished a Monarch with a speck of fire. I'm afraid that us so-called experts of this realm are merely ants in your respected master's eyes."

Zi Ji's voice and expression did not carry any intentions to probe or falsehood. All they carried were deep respect, fear, and astonishment towards an expert. Yun Che listened with a calm expression, yet, his inner heart was completely stupefied...

What... is this situation?

Could it be... a person called "Duotian" really once existed? And he was even an ultimate boss-level figure in primordial times?

Seeing how Zi Ji looked... Not only did this unexpected “coincidence” not leave any flaws, it instead had cemented the existence of him having a “strong teacher” even further!?

“My mentor hadn’t meddled in mortal matters for many years and has never been willing to be spoken of by others. I hope Senior Zi understands.” Yun Che smiled very calmly, yet, in his heart, he was thinking: I have completely no idea of who this “Old Man Duotian” is. If we were to start conversing about



him, I might accidentally reveal some flaws... It seems, there's a need to find a way to understand this "Old Man Duotian" person of ten thousand years ago.

"This old one only has respect for your respected master and most definitely has no intentions to probe," Zi Ji sincerely said.

That azure-dressed young girl named "Qing Chen" gently walked over, and held in her hands was a new pot of boiled tea. Before she even approached, a heart-intoxicating fragrance

had already suffused into the air. Yun Che could not help but make a light sniff and spoke, "Speaking of which, in the two times this junior has visited, both were times when Senior Zi was fortunately free. With Black Moon Merchant Guild's grand name, Senior Zi must be especially busy on normal days."

"Hohoho," Zi Ji smiled as he shook his head. "That's not case. This old one has been here for more than a hundred years, but there was never a time I have been busy. There are countless capable people on Profound Sky Continent, but people who have

the qualifications to enter the seventh floor are hardly one in a million. To give an estimate, there will be a guest here once every month while I'm free for the rest of the time."

"A month?" Yun Che revealed a look of surprise, and then, continued, "The depths of Senior Zi's profound strength cannot be measured. I'm afraid even the broadness of knowledge you possess cannot be compared to anyone else's. Even in the Four Great Sacred Grounds, you will definitely carry an extremely high position. If it's really as Senior

Zi says... then in regards to Senior Zi's abilities, isn't it an extremely huge waste? And this seventh floor is clearly empty lodgings. With its expansiveness and boundlessness, with looks similar to that of a divine realm, with merely its construction costs, it mostly likely far surpasses any imperial city from the six countries with a simple estimate. Yet, it's only used to receive a guest once every month?"

"That's not merely the case," Zi Ji lightly smiled. He received the teapot from the azure-dressed young girl's hands and

personally filled the cup of tea in front of Yun Che. “For the Black Moon Merchant Guild to be able to exist for thousands of years and flourish without end, it naturally stems from a matured survival plan. The number of customers in this seventh floor cannot be compared to even one ten thousandth of the customers in the lower six floors, but the construction costs and yearly maintenance fees of this floor are more than a hundred times of the previous six floors added together. That is because... people who are able to enter the first six floors, are our Black Moon Merchant Guild’s distinguished guests, while people who have the

qualifications to enter this place... are my Black Moon Merchant Guild's lifeline!"

"I believe with your wits, you should definitely understand this old one's words," Zi Ji said with calm smile.

Yun Che lightly closed his eyes. After a short moment of silence, he opened them and gently nodded. "I see. This junior has always believed that this junior's knowledge and experience are considerably broad. But during my two visits here, with such

celestial scenery and to have a supreme figure such as Senior Zi personally receive me, even I feel a little flattered. In that case, with every subsequent visit, affection will build. And, to build such close relationships with seemingly all of the experts and formidable powers on Profound Sky Continent, I believe your Black Moon Merchant Guild is the only one.”

“Hoho. Here, drink some tea.” Zi Ji raised his hand with a smile. Raising his teacup, he took a light sip, enjoying the aftertaste.

Yun Che raised his own cup of tea, though he drank it all in an instant. Shaking his teacup, he said with a smile, "Senior Zi's tea sure is a worldly treasure. It's just that this junior has always been ignorant in the tastes of tea, so it seems this junior has wasted a heavenly gift."

"No matter how good tea is, as long as it goes into your hands, even if it's spilled by you, it would still be a fortunate matter. How can it possibly be called a waste of a heavenly



gift?” Zi Ji said with a laugh.

“This junior isn’t worthy of such praise from senior,” Yun Che said with a faint smile. He had initially arrived at Divine Phoenix City with a baleful aura, but, after reaching this place, in less than ten minutes, his inner heart was already clear and serene. The man in front of him, Zi Ji, had a calm, quaint, and encompassing presence... as though he was clear water that went untouched for ten thousand years in an ancient well.

“If you aren’t worthy, then I’m afraid there’s no one in this Profound Sky Continent who is.” Zi Ji’s tone was still the same as before, yet, he suddenly made an abrupt change in subject, and asked, “With your arrival here, what are your plans for Divine Phoenix Sect?”

Yun Che’s eyes narrowed, and a baleful aura instantly surged from his entire body. The killing intent gathered in his eyes was also revealed in front of Zi Ji without the slightest concealment. “Senior, what do you think this junior should do?”

The surrounding space instantly turned suffocating without any warning, causing the tender bodies of the three young girls at the sides to shudder at the same time. Zi Ji still carried the same calm and light smile; his expression did not have the slightest even in the face of Yun Che's aura. "This old one only sees the results."

"Then senior, what kind of results do you think it will be?"

Zi Ji gently shook his head.

“Unpredictable. When this old one first met you three years ago, although I was shocked at your talent and the presence and shrewdness that surpasses your age, when you left, this old one had believed that if you were to head to Divine Phoenix Sect, there was more than a ninety-percent chance that you would have lost your life there, while the other ten percent was, even if you managed to keep your life intact, you wouldn't have been able to obtain what you wished for. That was because I understood Divine Phoenix Sect more than I understood you.

“Ever since this old one has settled down here, not a single person I have seen in these hundred years weren’t outstanding individuals, and I had believed that my evaluation on people and various affairs would never go wrong. But, only when it comes to you, this old one had never guessed the ending in the slightest. A youth of not even twenty years old with profound strength at the Earth Profound Realm actually dealt a crushing blow to Divine Phoenix Sect, rendering them powerless on their own turf. In these years, you are the only one who has made me miscalculate completely.

“Divine Phoenix Sect had been established for five thousand years, and their roots are immensely deep. Even the Four Great Sacred Grounds find it hard to fathom their depths. Although your strength has greatly surpassed what it was three years ago, if you do not rely on the power of your respected master and head for a direct confrontation with only your own strength... If this was the first time we met, the only thing I can describe this situation as is ‘an egg hitting a stone.’ But now...” Zi Ji gently shook his head, as though he was deprecating himself. “I do

not dare to jump to conclusions. Even though you're only three feet away from me, it feels as though we're separated by ten thousand miles. Hoho. I can't see through you at all."

The tender mouths of the young girls who were standing at Yun Che's sides widened at the same time. They, who were exerting great effort to maintain their beautiful and tender smiles on their faces, were unable to conceal their deep surprise at all. They were extremely clear of the kind of position Mister Zi had. This was the first time they had heard such words... and it

was even towards a person of such a young age.

“Hmph. The mere Divine Phoenix Sect still does not possess the qualifications to have my teacher make a move.” The corner of Yun Che’s brows rose, and a stern killing intent could be felt from his voice. “I won’t do much to them either. I merely want them... to pay at least ten times the debt they owe!”

“Speaking of which...” Yun Che suddenly switched the subject of



the conversation. “I heard from rumors that three years ago, after the disappearance of the Primordial Profound Ark, the Divine Phoenix of Divine Phoenix Sect made an appearance?”

The appearance of the Divine Phoenix three years ago appeared in the memories of Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Ye Ziyi, and it similarly appeared in Feng Huwei’s memories as well... and he had even personally saw it! Not only did the Divine Phoenix appear, its overbearing strength and pressure had even coldly silenced the people of the Four

Great Sacred Grounds and had even mercilessly punished Ye Xinghan in front of everyone.

But... The Divine Phoenix had clearly already disappeared!

“That’s right,” Zi Ji lightly nodded. “Three years ago, there had long been rumors about the Divine Phoenix’s depleted lifespan and its disappearance. We then found out, because of the Divine Phoenix’s disappearance, it would cause Divine Phoenix Sect to lose their strongest backing, and the

moment this was exposed, there was a possibility of facing the crisis of extinction. Because of this, the Great Elder of Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Feiyan, secretly surrendered to Sun Moon Divine Hall, and had even informed them of the disappearance of the Divine Phoenix. But, the descent of the Divine Phoenix three years ago, was personally witnessed by everyone in Divine Phoenix City, which clearly proved that its 'disappearance' was merely a test. What it was testing, was naturally people like Feng Feiyan who carried ulterior motives."

“I see.” Yun Che slightly frowned; his heart was still filled with doubts. The Divine Phoenix had already passed on, this was what Feng Xue’er personally told him. With Feng Xue’er’s heart, she definitely couldn’t have lied. And Feng Xue’er had even succeeded all of the Divine Phoenix’s source of power, soul energy, and even memories... If that’s the case, how could the Divine Phoenix possibly still be alive!?

“There’s no need to doubt it, that Divine Phoenix spirit already died long ago,” Jasmine suddenly said with a cold tone.

Yun Che was startled for a moment. “Then the one that appeared three years ago...”

“Hmph. It’s merely a soul fragment which carried a little amount of power source,” Jasmine blandly said. “To leave behind a soul fragment which contains a bit of power is something a mortal isn’t capable of doing and isn’t something one would think of. But, the Divine Phoenix spirit is a cloned entity of the Phoenix’s soul, it’s an easy feat for it if it ever wants to do so! After it passed down all of its

soul energy and origin power to Feng Xue'er, most likely, in order to guard against the appearance of people such as Feng Feiyan, it purposefully split a small part of itself and attached it within Feng Xue'er's body. But, this detached soul fragment wouldn't be able to exist for a long period of time, and by now, it should have completely dispersed. If it we are talking about it being alive... That's absolutely impossible!"

"... Is that so." Yun Che roughly got the gist of it.

“Mister Zi, in these three years, about Princess Snow of Divine Phoenix Sect... Do you have any news on her?” Yun Che asked.

Zi Ji deeply glanced at Yun Che; his eyes carried a certain profound meaning. A short while after, he lightly smiled and said, “Three years ago, after the departure of the Primordial Profound Ark and before the appearance of the Divine Phoenix, Princess Snow had fallen unconscious... Then after, she had been in deep slumber, and for three whole years, no matter what methods were used, she was unable to awaken.”

“What?” Yun Che’s expression greatly shook. “In deep slumber for three years? Three whole years?”

“That’s right. If the information I received was not mistaken, it was only yesterday when Princess Snow finally woke up.”

“...” For a moment, ripples surfaced in Yun Che’s heart. In Feng Huwei’s memories, he did not find any information regarding Feng Xue’er’s situation



these three years. In these two days, he had been pondering and suspecting that, with Feng Xue'er's heart and the pure feelings she had towards him, when the Divine Phoenix Empire invaded Blue Wind Empire, she should have definitely prevented it from happening! And Feng Hengkong had always extremely pampered her as well, complying with all her wishes... Blue Wind Empire shouldn't have fallen into such dire straits.

So... She had actually been in deep slumber, for a whole three years.

Yun Che took a light breath and asked “Then Mister Zi, do you know why Princess Snow fell into deep slumber for such a long period of time? It shouldn’t be due to injuries, right?”

“In regards to this point, I only have conjectures as well.” Zi Ji slowly said, “After Princess Snow fell into deep slumber, her entire body was enveloped in scarlet flames, burning endlessly. Within three feet, not a single person could approach her. And the place where she had slept for three years, was

brought about by the Divine Phoenix which appeared three years ago. Thus, the Divine Phoenix should be refining her physique with phoenix flames, or bestowing her with even stronger phoenix flame abilities, aiding her in stepping into the Sovereign Realm from half-step from the Sovereign Profound... That's most likely the case. Currently, Princess Snow has already awoken. If you're concerned, you can try asking her about it directly. Hohoho."

Zi Ji smiled very meaningfully.

It's no wonder either. The reason why Yun Che would "lose his life" in the Primordial Profound Ark was known to seemingly everyone in the Profound Sky Continent, so how couldn't Zi Ji know of it... As the core figure in Black Moon Merchant Guild, he could only know much more than others.

# Chapter 692 – Lost Control

---

Thinking about Feng Xue'er, Yun Che immediately became silent. It wasn't that she didn't stop them, but it was because she was in a coma and couldn't stop them... this relieved a certain part of his heart. But when facing the Divine Phoenix Sect, how should he face the Feng Xue'er who had just woken up?

Zi Ji also didn't speak. He smiled, looked at Yun Che, and the light in his eyes were so

condensed and solid that it seemed to be piercing through Yun Che's heart and soul. At this moment, Yun Che lifted his head; the expression on his face and his eyes had calmed down. "Senior Zi, this junior is visiting your noble Merchant Guild once again because of several matters. Does Senior Zi still remember the 'Netherworld Udumbara Flower' that this junior asked you about three years ago?"

"Oh? You are still looking for that item?" Zi Ji shook his head slowly. "These years, this old man has occasionally investigated whether or not the

Netherworld Udumbara Flower still exists in this world. But unfortunately, there are already very few who knew about this flower, not to mention those who have seen it. These years, followed with more and more humans in the Profound Sky Continent, the yang energy in the continent has surpassed the yin. The Netherworld Udumbara Flower is an extremely yin, demonic, and evil item. It should have gone completely extinct on Profound Sky Continent thousands of years ago. Furthermore, with time moving forward, unless a calamity that destroys the world appears out of nowhere, the yang energy in Profound Sky

Continent will only become stronger and stronger. In other words, the already extinct Netherworld Udumbara Flower will never appear ever again.

“At least that is how it is in Profound Sky Continent.”

Last time, Zi Ji's answer was that the Netherworld Udumbara Flower had gone extinct and that it shouldn't appear again. This time, the answer was the same... and he was even more sure of it. Yun Che showed disappointment on his face, but then asked



immediately, “I remember that Senior Zi said last time that the last Netherworld Udumbara Flower sighting that was recorded in Profound Sky Continent was one thousand and three hundred years ago. Then... can Senior Zi tell me, where the last Netherworld Udumbara Flower was found back then?”

The reason that Yun Che asked this question was obviously because he wanted to go check out the place that the last recorded Netherworld Udumbara Flower was found. Since the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was able to

grow there, that meant that the place must be extremely yin and evil. Even though more than a thousand of years have passed, there... was a possibility that the environment might not have changed too much.

Of course, the possibility of it was next to nothing. After all, with one thousand and three hundred years, this course of history was not a short one. Even the Blue Wind Imperial Family only had a thousand years of history. The reason he would ask was because he didn't want to give up on even the most remote hope. But, what

surprised him was that after he finished this sentence, he clearly saw that Zi Ji's facial expression became stiff for a second, even the casual smile on his face disappeared.

“...I cannot tell you,” Zi Ji shook his head slightly and said slowly.

Zi Ji's reaction caused Yun Che's eyebrows to twitch. He placed his hand onto the stone table and said, “Very well! Then I will buy this information from Senior Zi! Senior Zi only needs

to tell me the name of that place and where it is located! Name any price... as long as I can afford it!”

“No!” Zi Ji still shook his head. “On this matter, I cannot tell you the answer, and I cannot sell it to you as information.”

“Why? Could that place... have some exceptional hidden secret?” Yun Che asked aggressively.

Zi Ji shut his eyes slightly and

said, “Because that place, is a ‘secret ground.’ Since it’s a ‘secret ground,’ not mentioning entering, even the people who know about it, in this world, are as rare as phoenix feathers or qilin horns... At least in the Profound Sky Seven Nations, including the Divine Phoenix Sect, no one knows about it. Also, in that ‘secret ground’ now, there are no longer any Netherworld                      Udumbara Flowers.”

Even the Divine Phoenix Sect didn’t know about it the “secret ground” Zi Ji was referring to, so it was naturally an absolutely

unusual existence. Yun Che didn't think that the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that he asked about with tiny hope would have him come across an incredibly mysterious... and even somewhat strange "secret ground."

Seeing Zi Ji's attitude, Yun Che knew that no matter how he asked, he wouldn't be able to find out the answer to it. He locked his eyebrows tight, stopped wasting his breath, and nodded in an especially calm manner. "I see... since it is such a 'secret ground', then this

junior should not look into it.”

But he kept what Zi Ji said before in his mind.

“Then, three years ago, this junior asked for help to find Chu Yuechan... does Senior Zi have any information on that matter?”

Yun Che spoke in a very calm manner, but when he was speaking, his fingers clenched uncontrollably, which revealed that his mind was definitely not

as calm as he looked on the surface. Three years of time, searching for Chu Yuechan, who has very distinguishable traits... He believed that with Black Moon Merchant Guild's information network that shrouds the Profound Sky, no matter what, there should be some news. Even if it was just traces of it.

“Sigh...” But just as Yun Che finished speaking, he heard Zi Ji sigh softly, and his heart sank immediately.



“Three years ago, not long after you asked my Black Moon to search for Chu Yuechan, you died on the Primordial Profound Ark. At that time, everyone thought you had no chance of surviving, so Black Moon didn’t continue to look for Chu Yuechan. Half a year later, Spiritual Master Gu Cang, from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, suddenly came and asked me to look for Chu Yuechan... Searching for Chu Yuechan was secondary, but there was an extreme possibility that your descendant is by her side. The heart of his disciple, Xia Yuanba, was filled with anger and hatred because of your death, and it was long lasting. Cultivating under

this mindset would cause him to easily have a fiendish rebound. After Gu Cang understood everything about your past, he hoped that he could find your descendant to resolve the hatred in Xia Yuanba's heart. Because of this, I personally used Black Moon's information network to find out Chu Yuechan's whereabouts, and the search directly covered Profound Sky Seven Nations."

"And? Did you find her?!" Yun Che held his breath and asked.

Zi Ji gave him a deep look and said, “Spiritual Master Gu Cang and I have been friends for a few hundred years, and I received his help multiple times. This was the first time he personally asked me for something, so of course I did everything I could. But, using all of Black Moon’s information gathering power which covers the entire Profound Sky Seven Nations, including Divine Phoenix, for a whole ten months, we still didn’t find anything. Therefore, the most likely possibility... is that she is already dead.”

“What did you say?!!” Yun Che

stood up suddenly, and following with a large exploding sound, a crack that was more than one foot long appeared on the stone table beneath his palm. His calm face turned ferocious, and his eyes were red like blood. “You’re saying that she... is dead?!”

“I know better than you how strong the information gathering ability of the Black Moon Merchant Guild is. Chu Yuechan should be extremely easy to find, but no matter what we did, we couldn’t find any trace of her... Sigh, this is indeed the worst, but also the

most likely, or even the only possible conclusion,” Zi Ji sighed and said.

“You’re lying!!” Yun Che’s pupils dilated, he reached out suddenly, grabbed harshly onto Zi Ji’s collar and pulled him up from his stone chair, “You say she’s dead?! What evidence do you have to say she’s dead?! Do you know who Chu Yuechan is?! She is my, Yun Che’s, woman, the leader of the Frozen Cloud’s Seven Fairies, the most beautiful fairy in Blue Wind Nation! Anyone who sees her wouldn’t be able to forget her for the rest of their lives! Even though she

gave up her profound arts, her profound strength still exists. In Blue Wind Nation, there is no one who could kill her!! What do you mean that she's dead!"

"Sir... Sir Master Yun!" Yun Che's action surprised the three young girls in colorful clothes. Zi Ji's position was so high that even when Feng Hengkong saw him, he would bow to him immediately. For anyone to dare to grab his collar so rude and violently... and even on Black Moon Merchant Guild's territory.

Zi Ji had lived for close to a thousand years, but there weren't many people who would speak loudly to him, and no one has ever dared to treat him like this. However, his expression was still calm, and he did not express anger at all. On the contrary, after momentary of surprise, he felt impressed deep down... Once a profound practitioner had reached a high level, they would be arrogant and cold to emotions, especially towards women. Not mentioning Overlords and Monarchs who looked down to the world, even Thrones who dominate a territory would see them as toys that they can have as much as they want. Even if

they especially valued a certain woman, they could not be compared to the cultivation of profound way.

But the young man in front of him who was hard to read and had deep eyes that even he couldn't see through up close lost control of his emotions like this because of the news of the woman's death.

“With Chu Yuechan's profound strength, it is indeed difficult for her to find an equal match in Blue Wind Nation. But, when



Black Moon started searching for Chu Yuechan, Divine Phoenix's invasion on Blue Wind had already been in progress for a few months. Blue Wind Nation was already a mess with disasters everywhere, and there were countless deceased. Each Divine Phoenix Army had at least a high level Throne or even an Overlord, so Chu Yuechan would not be a match for them. If she ran into the Divine Phoenix Army, it would be difficult for her to even escape. The only possibility that the branch could think of when Black Moon has searched for this long but wasn't able to find anything was during those months..."

“Shut up!!”

BOOM!!

The stone table exploded, and Zi Ji was pushed back several steps. Yun Che held his fist tightly while his whole body was trembling; his eyes were red like a vicious, blood-thirsty wolf. He pointed at Zi Ji and roared, “What Black Moon Merchant Guild! The reason you couldn’t find my little fairy is because of your own incapability. You made empty promises and even curse

that she's already dead... I'll tell you, even if all of the people from Black Moon Merchant Guild are dead, she wouldn't even be missing a hair!!”

“Huu...” Yun Che breathed a heavy breath, and his voice suddenly lowered, “What kind of crappy Black Moon Merchant Guild is this, you're just a bunch of incapable people. You dare say you have a heritage that spans thousands of years, yet you can't even find a single person... this is absolutely a waste of my time and friendship!!”

Yun Che swung his hand while cursing and turned around to leave.

From when Black Moon Merchant Guild's name became well-known in Profound Sky until now, it had been thousands of years. In these thousands of years, no one had ever dared to behave rudely on the territory of the Black Moon Merchant Guild. No one had even dared to be disrespectful to the people of the Black Moon Merchant Guild. On the contrary, the higher the plane of the person, the more they respect and fear the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

For Yun Che to act like this at the Black Moon Merchant Guild... its headquarters at that... and on the seventh floor of its headquarters, he was definitely the first one in history to yell at Zi Ji like this.

Zi Ji's eyebrows moved, slightly tightened, and then relaxed. He was still not mad; on the contrary, he laughed bitterly and then said to the three young girls that were already frightened into not knowing what to do, "Sigh, go get him back."

The three young girls were stunned all at once, and then they flew out one after the other to Yun Che's side like three butterflies. One person blocked Yun Che's path, and the other two each grabbed onto Yun Che's arm. "Sir Yun, please calm down. Mister Zi was only reporting the result of the investigation, he definitely did not intend for it to be a curse... Maybe, it was indeed an oversight of the information network. We sisters apologize to Sir Yun for the Black Moon Merchant Guild, we only ask Sir Yun to calm your anger."

One more step and Yun Che would be able to collapse directly onto the chest of the young girl in green. He stopped, lifted his head, closed his eyes, and his chest rose and fell severely. It was then when he finally started to slowly calm down... He raged in this Black Moon Merchant Guild, and his words were filled with insults. If it was someone else, just by humiliating the Black Moon Merchant Guild, even if the person had ten lives, the person would die here. But he got such “special treatment,” and he knew the main reason was his “mysterious master” who didn’t

actually exist.

He turned around, faced Zi Ji, and his expression was calm again. "Senior Zi, this junior was not able to control my emotions for a moment, please forgive my rude words and actions."

"You don't need to take it to heart." Zi Ji shook his head and smiled. He lifted his arm, and the shattered stone table that was broken by Yun Che in front of him disappeared and was replaced with an identical,



complete stone table. “If you don’t mind, drink some more with this old man.”

# Chapter 693 – The Culprit Who Was Discovered Too Late

---

Yun Che stopped talking and slowly walked back, returning to his seat in front of Zi Ji.

“The matter involving Chu Yuechan, this old man really feels that...”

“Let’s drop the matter.” Yun Che raised his hand to stop him. Although his face remained calm, his eyebrows were still

tightly knit together. “Regarding my request for the Black Moon Merchant Guild to search for Chu Yuechan, just cancel it now! As for payment, there is no need for me to pay you. You also don’t have to tell me about the so-called ‘result’ that you’ve obtained!”

“As for the fact that I badmouthed your guild previously, I retract whatever I said... but there’s one thing that I must say again...” In a determined manner, Yun Che said, “The fact that your guild cannot find her can only mean that that is the limit of your

guild's ability! She isn't dead... definitely not!!”

Little Fairy, you're definitely okay. Our child... is already four now... You all must be living peacefully at a very secure and secretive location... If our child is a boy, he must have already started learning how to protect you... If our child is a girl, she is definitely as beautiful as you...

Before I find you... even if the Sky Emperor himself were to say that you all are no longer in the human world, I would not

believe him either!

“Hoho, this old man can only wish that everything is as you hoped for.” Zi Ji laughed slightly, “For things to turn out this way, this old man is ashamed as well. In order to make up for it, let this old man offer you some free information that we obtained while searching for news of Chu Yuechan... and this matter concerns Chu Yuechan herself. I’m sure you’re interested.”

“Concerns her?” Expectedly,

Yun Che immediately looked at him. "Senior Zi, please tell me."

Zi Ji drank some tea and then replied softly, "Back then, after you had escaped from under Heavenly Sword Villa's Sword Management Terrace and found out what happened to Chu Yuechan, did you ever wonder how matters spread to the entire world?"

Zi Ji's words immediately caused Yun Che's expression to change slightly as he replied in a deep voice, "Of course I

wondered! With Senior Zi's knowledge, you should know the prestige and respect Frozen Cloud Asgard commands within Blue Wind Empire. Females of Frozen Cloud Asgard are known to be eternally pure and untainted. As Chu Yuechan was the head of the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, news of her pregnancy spreading would definitely tarnish Frozen Cloud Asgard's reputation to a great extent. Therefore, Frozen Cloud Asgard would definitely try to cover up the matter as much as possible and not allow it to spread. Heavenly Sword Villa's Villa Master, Ling Yuefeng, used to love Chu Yuechan deeply... Even if he didn't, he would

definitely understand the underlying impact of this and would immediately cover up matters, preventing more people from finding out such a thing. However, when I had awoken, everyone had already learnt the truth regarding this.”

“Although I had always wondered about this back then, I did not go out of my way to look into this matter. Even if the news had been immediately covered up, there were no guarantees... Senior Zi, about what you want to tell me...” Yun Che’s face gradually darkened, “could it be that someone had



spread the news deliberately?”

From how Yun Che had reacted when Zi Ji told him the news regarding “Chu Yuechan’s death,” he had already guessed the consequences of telling him this piece of information. Zi Ji nodded slightly, “That’s right. This information being spread was not due to a lapse in the cover up. Instead, it had been spread deliberately... and the one who leaked it and fanned the flames was the wife of the Heavenly Sword Villa’s Villa Master, Ling Yuefeng, that you just mentioned... Xuanyuan Yufeng.”

Yun Che stood up vigorously, his narrowed eyes immediately emanated ice cold anger and killing intent.

Back then, it was basically due to the fact that everyone had heard the news of Chu Yuechan's pregnancy that Gong Yuxian was forced to kick Chu Yuechan out of Frozen Cloud Asgard to protect its reputation... she could even have been put to death. However, if the news had not been spread so widely, when Chu Yuechan had returned to Frozen Cloud Asgard, she would

have been chided and punished, but at the very least, she would not have been chased out of Frozen Cloud Asgard... Furthermore, if Chu Yuechan had insisted, she would have been able to keep her child and would not have had to wander outside alone with a child in her womb... with no news of her even now...

It turns out that there was actually a culprit behind all of this!

After a while, Yun Che finally

sat down, and a near pitch black haze shrouded his half opened eyes.

After his malicious aura had been gradually suppressed, Zi Ji calmly asked, "From the looks of it, you don't seem to be that surprised."

"...Ling Yuefeng loved Chu Yuechan deeply, and this lasted for ten entire years. In order to see her face, he had even abandoned his pride, although his wish did not come true." Yun Che seemed to have calmed

down. “This was a fact that nearly everyone within the Blue Wind profound world knew. As his wife, there was no reason why Xuanyuan Yufeng wouldn’t know of it. Women are jealous creatures. The more powerful a woman’s strength and background was, the more accurate this statement would be. Towards Chu Yuechan, she held deep jealousy. It’s also likely that, back then, when Chu Yuechan came to Heavenly Sword Villa because of the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, Ling Yufeng did things that he should not have done which alerted Xuanyuan Yufeng that his heart had not given up yet, resulting in hatred borne from

this matter. Therefore, after she found out that Chu Yuechan was pregnant..." Yun Che's voice became filled with killing intent yet again, "she carried out such a backhanded move!"

"Hoho, the reason that I have discovered this is no different from what you have guessed." Zi Ji laughed plainly as he continued, "Judging by your past experience, I can see that you're a man that repays kindness with kindness and seeks revenge for grievances. As for how you're going to handle this, it is not right for me to ask... However, do you

understand anything about Xuanyuan Yufeng?”

Yun Che calmly replied, “I’ve heard that she was originally from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... Especially from her surname! ‘Xuanyuan’ is a surname that only exists within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.”

“The surname ‘Xuanyuan’ indeed only currently exists within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, but not everyone there has the surname ‘Xuanyuan,’” Zi

Ji calmly corrected. Yun Che already knew what Zi Ji had said was true as he knew that Ling Kun did not have the surname 'Xuanyuan.' "Instead, the surname 'Xuanyuan' is very rare within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Including Xuanyuan Yufeng, there are only thirty people that held this surname.

"And Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Sword Master, Xuanyuan Wentian... as well as all the previous Sword Masters, all possess the surname of Xuanyuan!



“The founding ancestor of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... also had the surname Xuanyuan!”

“Do you mean that, those with the surname Xuanyuan... belong to the bloodline of the founding ancestor of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region?” Yun Che frowned as he asked.

“That’s right,” Zi Ji nodded, his expression becoming more serious as he warned Yun Che, “Xuanyuan Yufeng’s father is the ninth elder of Mighty Heavenly

Sword Region—Xuanyuan Jue. Within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, the sword reigns supreme. If one has enough attainments with the sword, he would gain the right to enter Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. However, if one's descendants lacked affinity with the sword, he would be chased out... this was what happened to the founding ancestor of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. However, the bloodline of 'Xuanyuan' is completely different. As the bloodline of the founding ancestor, they are held with the highest regard within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and are the most supreme existence there. Even if one were

born as a cripple, he would never be chased out of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and would instead receive this best form of treatment and all its resources.”

Initially, when Yun Che had heard Qin Wushang mention that Xuanyuan Yufeng and the Sword Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Xuanyuan Wentian, possessed the same surname, he already knew that she was not so simple, but he never thought that her background would be that extraordinary. Zi Ji’s words were undoubtedly telling him

that if he touched Xuanyuan Yufeng... he would be offending the most core bloodline of the founding ancestor within Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

“Because the founding ancestor of Heavenly Sword Villa also came from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Heavenly Sword Villa has been trying to reestablish their relationship with Mighty Heavenly Sword Region for the past thousand years... No matter how small the connection may be, it would be like obtaining a huge backer. Although Heavenly Sword Villa is unrivalled within Blue Wind

Nation, they were not even worth consideration for Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. However, in the end, in order to obtain a source of information about Blue Wind Nation, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region stopped rejecting the offerings that Heavenly Sword Villa had sent and even gave back occasionally. This naturally made Heavenly Sword Villa ecstatic, and from then onwards, they prepared gifts wholeheartedly each year without fail.

“Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s actions initially were only so that they could make use

of Heavenly Sword Villa as their 'informant' in Blue Wind Nation. However, no one could have imagined that... thirty years back, when Ling Tianni brought along Ling Yuefeng to hand the offerings over, Xuanyuan Jue's sole daughter, Xuanyuan Yufeng, would fall in love with Ling Yuefeng at first sight.

“Although Xuanyuan Jue was already a thousand and seven hundred years old, his daughter was not even in her twenties yet. At an age where her love was blooming and given the fact that the young Ling Yuefeng was

handsome, gentlemanly, and charismatic, it was no surprise that Xuanyuan Yufeng would fall in love with him. However, as she was someone from the bloodline of the founding ancestor of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, she was of extremely high status, whereas Ling Yuefeng was the descendant of an expelled disciple. This meant that their status were far apart, and Xuanyuan Jue naturally would not agree to their relationship... However, Xuanyuan Yufeng's personality was headstrong and steadfast. She first threatened him with her death and eventually crippled her profound arts and left Mighty

Heavenly  
forever.”

Sword

Region

“Hah, she is indeed a passionate person.” Yun Che laughed coldly, “To catch the attention of a descendant of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s founding ancestor, Heavenly Sword Villa naturally would tightly grab onto this huge backing. Even if that Xuanyuan Yufeng were ugly like a sow, Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng would never reject it... But for Xuanyuan Yufeng to make such a headstrong decision, Ling Yufeng must have sweet talked her to the moon and back!”



“Hohohoho,” Zi Ji laughed plainly, his expression obviously showed his agreement with what Yun Che said. “After that, Xuanyuan Jue announced that he would sever his father-daughter relationship with Xuanyuan Yuefeng out of rage and chased them out of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, swearing to never meet them again.”

“Heh, even though he is called Xuanyuan Jue, he was not completely cruel to his daughter. Otherwise, he would have

already killed Ling Yuefeng,” Yun Che continued laughing coldly.

“After all, Xuanyuan Yufeng was his only daughter.” Zi Ji continued, “After some time passed, his rage faded. Furthermore, Xuanyuan Yufeng and Ling Yuefeng had brought two grandsons to him. Xuanyuan Jue had no choice but to accept Ling Yuefeng as his son-in-law. A few years ago, Xuanyuan Yufeng brought her two sons and Ling Yuefeng back to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region to visit... I heard that Xuanyuan Jue was very fond of

Xuanyuan Yuefeng's two children, particularly her younger son, Ling Jie, and even offered to teach him personally. Heavenly Sword Villa naturally became more assured of its backing because of this."

"If you're unable to let go of matters and still want to punish Xuanyuan Yufeng... please think carefully before you act." Zi Ji's gaze was distant and deep, and he possessed an elder's bearing. He was obviously trying to peacefully persuade Yun Che, who was exceptionally concerned with this matter.

“...Yun Che’s palm that was on the stone table retracted slightly. Compared to Xuanyuan Yufeng’s identity, he was more concerned with... the fact that she was Ling Jie’s birth mother!

“Senior Zi, I already know most of what you wanted to let me know.” Yun Che said as he looked up at Zi Ji, so calm that he sounded indifferent, “Indeed, I’m a man who seeks revenge for grievances. This matter regarding Xuanyuan Yufeng, even though I only figured it out many years later, I definitely will

not let it go so easily. The debts that need to be repaid must be repaid in full. As for the free information Senior Zi provided, I'm absolutely grateful. However, I would like to let Senior Zi know one thing...

“As a person, the thing I hate the most is being plotted against and being used... No matter who it is by!”

Yun Che's gaze concentrated as though it had become two sharp arrows, and this caused Zi Ji's breathing to stop for an

instant.

SummerRain: When Zi Ji says “even though he is called Xuanyuan Jue”, he is referring to the fact that Jue means cruel/heartless (绝情 = jue qing).

## Chapter 694 – We’re Gonna Be Rich

---

The sudden change in the tone caught Zi Ji off guard. Although he only looked like he was forty or fifty and there was not even a speck of white in his beard yet, his actual age had already surpassed the thousand mark. He possessed knowledge far beyond any normal human’s comprehension and had gone through a flow of time that a normal person would not be able to comprehend.

Hence, he was able to see

through a person's inner thoughts clearly which meant that it had been a long time since he had experienced any unexpected feelings... However, when facing this twenty-two year old youth who was standing in front of him, a youth who was several times younger than him, the intense gaze of this youth seemed to pierce through the depths of his heart.

Facing Yun Che's gaze, he uttered with a bitter smile after a moment of short hesitation, "Such unbelievably astute observational skills... no, rather than calling it observational



skills, it would be more fitting to call it... instincts?

“I admit, there was some personal agenda behind me telling you the information we had about Xuanyuan Yufeng. However, in what I’ve just said, there were no lies nor was there any ill intent directed at you. I only wished to do you a favor while simultaneously gifting Mighty Heavenly Sword Region an ‘unfathomable’ enemy.”

Yun Che laughed slightly, “I believe you. If I had really felt

that you had ill intent, I wouldn't be sitting in front of you so casually right now."

Three years ago when he initially met Zi Ji, he only felt that his status was extraordinary, but now, the more he spoke with him, the more he felt that this person's strength and status was probably unfathomable. He decided not to beat around the bush anymore as he took out his Profound Currency Card that was shining with a violet glow and slapped it in front of Zi Ji. "I have bothered Senior Zi for long enough today, let's get to the

main topic. I need forty five thousand kilograms of Purgatory Stone and a hundred fifty kilograms of Flaming Devil Vines that are at least ninety years old. If you do not have those that are ninety years or older, then those above sixty years will be fine as well, but I would require twice the amount. Also, I need six thousand Rakshasa Heart-destroying Fruits, twelve thousand Skull Seeds, six thousand blades of Soul Withering Grass...”

Without stopping, Yun Che eloquently listed forty-nine different types of ingredients. If

there were only a few, Zi Ji would not have thought much about it; however, all forty-nine ingredients that Yun Che had mentioned were all violent and explosive! Each one of them possessed a great amount of concentrated energy which also meant that they were extremely dangerous objects... For example, the erosive power in a ten centimeter long Flaming Devil Vine was sufficient to completely destroy a Sky Profound practitioner in a matter of seconds.

The reason why Purple Veined Divine Crystals were so precious

was because it not only possessed extremely concentrated energy, the energy was also very gentle; it could be easily controlled, guided, and changed into other forms to use for other purposes, and also because it could be absorbed directly. Although the things that Yun Che asked for possessed the same concentrated energy, they were on the other extreme as each one of them possessed different attributes and only had one common characteristic, which was that they were extremely violent and difficult to control.

However, due to the “violent” characteristics, several of the ingredients could occasionally be used to make pellets that were used to break through bottlenecks... However, the success rate was unbelievably low, and there were huge risks involved.

However, if it succeeded... a pellet that could break through bottlenecks would undoubtedly be a treasure that could be priced for an exorbitant amount!

Therefore, although the energy

within these forty-nine ingredients was extremely concentrated, their demand was very low which meant that they naturally did not cost much... After all, among all the top pellet refining masters within the entire Profound Sky Continent, not one of them would dare to say that they were able to perfectly handle any one of the listed ingredients.

If it were controlling several of them at the same time... they probably wouldn't succeed a single time even if they had decades.

Not only had Yun Che requested forty-nine items that were already frighteningly explosive on their own, the quantity that he had requested was absolutely shocking.

The three young girls behind him were dumbfounded by what they had heard.

Zi Ji closed his eyes as a small profound formation appeared on his slightly raised right hand. After a short while, the profound formation disappeared



and he opened his eyes. As he breathed out, he said, “Black Moon has all of these forty-nine ingredients. However, our storage is insufficient for your needs. To collect everything would require a little time.”

“How long would it take?” Yun Che asked calmly. He knew full well that the quantity that he had requested for was massive and he would not be able to obtain the full quantity at any other shop. He knew that Black Moon Merchant Guild would not disappoint him... as long as he paid them a sufficient sum.

“Purgatory Stones need to be collected from the depths of lava. For forty-five thousand kilograms, it will take approximately fifteen days. As for the other ingredients, five days would be sufficient,” Zi Ji replied.

“Good!” Yun Che nodded. “Then I’ll come back and retrieve them in fifteen days. Senior Zi please name a price. In order to reassure you, I shall pay half the cost in advance.”

Although he spoke with calmness, Yun Che was feeling restless within... thinking to himself, “I only have nine million purple profound coins, sufficient to buy a small city. These ingredients aren’t that expensive but the quantity is a bit much... but, I should have enough right?”

If I really cannot afford... I could consider obtaining some money from the Divine Phoenix Sect.

When talking about money, Zi

Ji was not verbose with Yun Che as he nodded and replied, “That would be the best. Although these aren’t extremely precious goods, it still isn’t cheap. I estimate it to be around eight million... purple profound coins! The deposit shall be as you said, half of the total.”

Eight million purple profound coins was undoubtedly an astronomical amount. Even for the Black Moon Merchant Guild, it was a huge sum. However, Yun Che secretly heaved a sigh of relief as he cleanly handed Zi Ji his Profound Currency Card to pay the sum of four million.

After paying the deposit, the millions of purple profound coins that he had extorted from the Xiao Sect had almost been completely spent...

Yun Che cried in his heart... I originally thought that this huge sum could last me for several lifetimes, but I didn't expect... Sigh! Now I'm going to be broke again.

After paying the deposit, Zi Ji had a short and deep internal struggle with himself before he

asked, “Yun Che, Black Moon Merchant Guild never asks their customers why they are purchasing goods, but I’m truly curious. All forty-nine ingredients that you have requested for are extremely violent and explosive. The amount is massive as well. What are you using them for? Heheh, if it’s possible, I hope you can kindly enlighten me on this mystery. However, if it isn’t possible, you can just laugh it off. The old man won’t pursue nor would he investigate in secret.”

Yun Che laughed, flipping over

his palm. He placed a dark red round pellet on the stone table. In an instant, the room was filled with a pungent medicinal smell that spread quickly, causing the face of the three girls to grimace.

“Can Senior Zi Ji please help junior inspect this? If this pellet were to be auctioned off by the Black Moon Merchant Guild, what kind of price can it command?”

“This is...” Zi Ji’s gaze immediately concentrated on

the pellet, and just based off the aura of the pellet, he could already conclude that this was no simple pellet. Using two fingers, he grabbed it off the table and placed it in front of his eyes. The pellet was clear and transparent. Looking through it, Zi Ji could see Yun Che's face clearly. What shocked Zi Ji the most, however, was the aura that the pellet emitted. After observing it for a short moment, Zi Ji started to gather his concentration and placed his profound energy into the pellet...

After just a very short moment,



Zi Ji looked up strongly, uttering in a deeply surprised voice, “This is a pellet that allows one to break through high level bottlenecks!!

“And anyone below the Tyrant Profound Realm... could break through directly!

“Below the Tyrant Profound Realm, break through directly!” Zi Ji shouted these words out with immense shock. Not just normal profound practitioners, even the masters of the Four Great Sacred Grounds would be

shocked to hear those words.

Because this meant that... with this pellet, there would not be anymore bottlenecks... below the Tyrant Profound Realm!

This pellet was the “Overlord Pellet” from Illusory Demon Realm that allowed a peak leveled Emperor Profound practitioner to break through the bottleneck and advance directly into the Tyrant Profound Realm. However, what was different was that the Overlord Pellet from Illusory

Demon Realm used thirty six different types of ingredients to make, whereas the one Yun Che took out used forty nine different ingredients and looked completely perfect and flawless. In terms of medicinal properties, the one made by the Illusory Demon Royal Family could not even be compared to the one Yun Che had made.

“Senior Zi obviously has a keen eye.” Yun Che sincerely said in admiration. Such a simple test and he was already able to determine the effects of the Overlord Pellet. This was not something a normal person

could do. “Senior Zi please let me know how much this pellet can be sold for?”

Zi Ji’s current attention was completely on the Overlord Pellet. The more in depth he examined using his profound energy, the more signs of shock appeared on his elderly and composed face. He remained silent for several breaths of time before putting the Overlord Pellet down. Then, he looked at Yun Che and shook his head. “This old man has handled numerous treasures and pellets over the years, and I can determine their authenticity and

value immediately for most of them... However, for this pellet, its value is something this old man cannot truly gauge.

“Pellets that are used to break through bottlenecks need to have extremely violent medicinal properties. Therefore, not only is it difficult to produce, there are huge risks in consuming it too... The higher the level the breakthrough the pellet is used for, the harder it is to make and the more dangerous it is as well. A middle risk pellet that could aid one in breaking through to the Sky Profound Realm is already a priceless

treasure even within the Four Great Sacred Grounds. They would only be used on the most core and youngest disciples. As for your pellet...”

As Zi Ji spoke, his agitated feelings could not be stopped. “The medicinal properties within the pellet is mysterious, complex, overbearing, and its aura contains several different types that combining them individually was already a tall order. What’s even more frightening is that when these overbearing medicinal properties are combined, its reactionary effect toward

external forces is exceptionally gentle. It is exceptionally easy to handle, and it can be easily controlled using profound energy of the Tyrant Profound Realm. A profound practitioner in the peak of the Emperor Profound Realm who consumes this pellet would be able to break through to the Tyrant Profound Realm within a day or two. Unless there is interference from the outside, there is no chance of failure at all! Furthermore, there are no risks in the entire process, and there is no need to be afraid of any backlash.

“What’s even more surprising is that the medicinal energy is extremely pure and practically has no flaws. I tried several times previously to examine it, but I still could not find any contamination! A high grade pellet that is this pure is something that this old man has never seen before despite living for thousands of years.”

Zi Ji’s unrestrained praise and shock was nothing much to Yun Che. After all, he did produce this Overlord Pellet and was clearer than anyone about its medicinal strength and purity. However, he was shocked at how



well versed Zi Ji was in pellets. Also, the three girls behind him stared widely with their mouths agape for a long time...

Because this was the first time they had heard such “exaggerated” praise coming out from Zi Ji’s mouth.

“Since this pellet received such praise from Senior Zi, if it were sold to the Four Great Sacred Grounds, could one pellet be exchanged for two hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals?” Yun Che asked

seriously.

Within the entire Profound Sky Continent, only the Four Great Sacred Grounds with their thousands of years of accumulation could offer a large amount of a legendary item like the Purple Veined Divine Crystal. Most normal sects did not even know what Purple Veined Divine Crystals looked like.

“Hehe,” Zi Ji merely laughed and shook his head before slowly stretching out his hand and

showing Yun Che one finger.

“Oh, only one hundred grams?” Yun Che slowly nodded. He was not completely disappointed. After all, Purple Veined Divine Crystals were too rare and precious. It was already exceptionally worth it if an Overlord Pellet that did not cost much to make could be traded for one hundred grams of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

“No!” Zi Ji continued shaking his head, “It’s one kilogram!”

“Huh?” Yun Che was instantly stunned.

“You’re completely underestimating the value and how prized a pellet that could be used to break through bottlenecks is.” Zi Ji exclaimed, “Although Purple Veined Divine Crystals are exceptionally precious and can be used to massively increase a profound practitioner’s profound strength in a short amount of time, if that person was stuck at a bottleneck, any amount of Purple Veined Divine Crystals would be useless. At places like the Four Great Sacred Grounds, profound

practitioners below the Emperor  
Profound Realm could rely on  
the strength of Monarchs to  
assist them in forcefully  
breaking through. However, if  
they were at the peak of the  
Emperor Profound Realm, on  
the brink to the Tyrant  
Profound Realm, even the  
assistance of a Monarch would  
not be able to help them break  
through the bottleneck. Within  
the past ten thousands of years,  
many disciples within the Four  
Great Sacred Grounds had  
frantically searched for pellets  
that could help them break  
through while they were  
training in order to not fall  
behind others. Pellets that could  
help break through the

bottleneck of the Emperor  
Profound Realm were a rarity in  
the world, and even if one  
managed to get hold of it, the  
pellet was usually left for the  
most core disciple of the sect...  
Also, these pellets usually  
brought along uncontrollable  
risks. Who knows how many  
disciples of high status and  
talent had consumed such  
pellets and suffered backlashes  
like meridians being damaged,  
severe injuries, or even the  
complete loss of profound  
cultivation. Also, there are many  
who dared to not rely on such  
pellets to break through and as a  
result remained in the  
bottleneck of the Emperor  
Profound Realm for several

years. After tens of years of being unable to break through... when they finally advanced to the Tyrant Profound Realm, they were so far behind others that they could only be considered as mediocre.

“Not only can this pellet in my hand allow one to break through the bottleneck of Emperor Profound Realm, there are no risks involved either... furthermore, it is exceptionally beneficial in aiding one in their attempt to break through the bottleneck of the Tyrant Profound Realm in the future.”

Despite all the praises he had already given it, Zi Ji eyes still glinted with curiosity. “If the Four Great Sacred Grounds were to find out about this pellet, it would undoubtedly cause a huge uproar and they would expend a large amount of resources to get this. One kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal is my safest estimate... after all, when one obtains this pellet, he would enable someone of the young generation to break through to the Tyrant Profound Realm in a short amount of time, letting them obtain another pillar for their sect.”



“Ohh...” Yun Che’s expression seemed to be uplifted... Oh baby, we’re gonna be rich!

“Yun Che, would you mind telling me the name of this pellet? And which master produced it?” Zi Ji asked earnestly. He was familiar with all the high leveled pellet masters within Profound Sky Continent. However, among all of them, not one of them should be able to produce such a pellet... otherwise, he would definitely know about it.

“Oh, this pellet was casually produced and does not have a name yet,” Yun Che replied indifferently. After all, he could not mention the name “Overlord Pellet.” If Profound Sky Continent had records about the “Overlord Pellet” from Illusory Demon Realm, it would be troublesome. Furthermore, the medicinal properties of this pellet was far stronger than the Overlord Pellet. Therefore, it did not have to be called Overlord Pellet.

“Heheh,” Zi Ji shook his head

and laughed, “This old one definitely does not believe that such a prized pellet that can shake the world can be causally produced. If it’s not convenient to let this old one know, then this old one shall not pursue it.”

Yun Che looked at him, grinned, and waved it off with his left hand...

“Clack clack clack.” There was an extended noise as Yun Che threw more than thirty Overlord Pellets onto the stone table. He threw it casually as though he

were throwing sweets away.

## Chapter 695 – Moon Slaughter Demon Nest?

---

Suddenly, an extremely rich medicinal fragrance diffused into the air. Although this was merely aura of a spiritual medicine, it was violent and tyrannical, as though it was profound energy being released by a profound expert in full force. Black Moon Merchant Guild's immensely large seventh floor, seemed to be completely filled in an instant by this aura.

An aura like this, was sufficient to let Zi Ji know just what these

medicine pellets were. However, after his long state of astonishment, he still picked up one of them disbelievingly, placed it on his palm, picked up another one, placed it in his palm once again, and then, the third, fourth...

A total of thirty-three dark red medicinal pellets... Every single one of them was exactly the same as the first one Yun Che revealed!

And the quality of all these medicinal pellets had all

achieved the most extreme hundred percent condition!

Effectiveness of this degree, medicinal pellets of this level, and they were even of perfect quality! Earlier, when he was chuckling while saying the words: “a single one of this medicinal pellet is enough to shock the entire world”, was definitely not the least bit exaggerated.

Yet Yun Che, actually threw out thirty or so of them... And Yun Che’s unmindful actions and

expression looked so casual, it was as though he was throwing out a bunch of sweets!

Zi Ji was completely stunned; shockingly large ocean waves were surging within his heart.

In regards to knowledge of medicinal pellets, and the authority to judge them, it could be said not a single person could compare to Zi Ji in the entire Profound Sky Continent. However, looking at the thirty-three dark red pellets placed in front of him, he actually felt as



though he was suddenly thrown into a dream. After a long while, he suddenly thought of someone, and immediately exclaimed. "Could it be, that these treasured pellets are all refined by your respected master?"

Yun Che gave a sidelong glance, and nodded without a single hesitation. "Of course."

"I... see..." Zi Ji was finally able to feel a little relieved, his face was filled with deep reverence and surprise. "This old one was

completely shocked... No wonder, it was refined by your revered master. In this world, only your revered master, a mighty existence who had transcended the mortal realm, could possibly possess such world-shocking ability.”

Rumors were after all, just rumors. But after personally witnessing such feats, and making contact with more than thirty of these treasured pellets, in this manner, he had personally experienced the level of strength which Yun Che’s “teacher” possessed.

“Oh, right.” Yun Che casually said. “Earlier, those ingredients which I entrusted your Black Moon Merchant Guild to gather, will all be handed over to teacher to refine medicine. Mn, that’s right, it for these types of pellets... I’m prepared to have teacher help me refine more than three thousand of them.”

“Three... Three... Three thousand!?” This old man who had stayed bland and calm for several hundred years, actually fiercely bit his own tongue.

“Mn.” Yun Che still nodded in a very calm manner, and leisurely said. “Currently, this junior is already the Asgard Master of Frozen Cloud Asgard, so naturally, I have to take responsibility of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Although not a single person in Blue Wind Nation dares to offend Frozen Cloud Asgard, in the range of the entire Profound Sky Continent, it is still too weak. Not only was it bullied all the way to its doorstep, Grand Asgard Mistress and the former Asgard Mistress both died under poisonous hands one after another. Hence, this junior has no choice but to

use some extraordinary methods to raise the strength of all Frozen Cloud disciples, to prevent them from being bullied by despicable people.”

“But, because their profound levels are too low, and are unable to withstand the medicinal powers that were of too high a level, my mentor said that for the time being, he could only refine these low-level medicinal pellets to help raise their strength, allowing me to similarly eat them whenever I want, and also use them to exchange for profound coins or purple crystals... Oh, I never

expected that I can actually exchange one for at least a kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, heheh!”

“Three thousand”... “Low-level medicine pellets”... “Eat them whenever I want”... The knowledge Zi Ji had adhered to for a thousand years was instantly shattered into smithereens, and every single of his nerves in his body was convulsing uncontrollably.

He had attentively inspected the medicinal power of the

Overlord Pellet earlier. He was incomparably sure that, if it's three thousand of them... No, forget about having three thousand of them, even if three hundred of these pellets were to flow into the Four Great Sacred Grounds, during the next generation, there would be an immense transformation to the structure of the Four Great Sacred Grounds! And if only one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds were to obtain them, then, the balance within the Four Great Sacred Grounds would be completely destroyed. The Sacred Ground which possess these treasured pellets, would be able to completely suppress the other three Sacred

Grounds, becoming a peak extraordinary existence of the time!

And three thousand pellets...

This extremely terrifying amount, brought about an incomparable impact on Zi Ji.

And, from Yun Che's description... As long as the ingredients were sufficient, that terrifying teacher of his was basically able to refine any number of them! And the



treasured pellet which he claimed “one being sufficient to shock the entire world”, was merely a “low-level pellet” in the hands of that teacher of his!

Yun Che had been observing Zi Ji, and he was incomparably satisfied with his reaction. With a smile, he said. “But, Senior Zi, please be at ease. Although to me, these pellets are as normal as they can be, I’m not that naive to not understand what these pellets mean to profound practitioners... especially to large and strong sects such as the Four Great Sacred Grounds. That’s why, most of them will

only be used for Frozen Cloud Asgard, while the rest will be used to exchange for Purple Veined Divine Crystals...”

Yun Che slowly raised out three fingers. “Only thirty of them! Not a single bit more! Because no matter how precious something is, if there’s too many of them, then it’s no fun.”

Zi Ji silently looked at the three fingers Yun Che raised. After a long while, he then let out a faint sigh, and gently nodded his head. “About the rumors of your

respected master, although it came from Sun Moon Divine Hall, this old man still had only believed seventy percent of it, while thirty percent of suspicion still existed... But now, not a single bit of that suspicion is left. The realm attained by your respected master, I'm afraid it's already the fortune from seizing the heavens and earth, and a profound mystery approaching the sun and moon. It's no longer something a mortal like me can possibly understand... Frozen Cloud Asgard of Blue Wind Nation was initially a very small sect comprised of women, but its luck is as high as the heavens. With the aid of your respected master, I'm afraid before long, it

will soon become the fifth Sacred Ground.”

“Senior Zi is taking this too seriously. My Frozen Cloud Asgard simply wishes for sufficient strength protect itself, and to not be bullied by others. We have never thought of becoming a Sacred Ground or whatever. And the two words ‘Sacred Ground’, heh...” Yun Che let out a mocking laugh. “They don’t seem to be that sacred. They might even be extremely dirty and unclean. It’s best that my Frozen Cloud Asgard stay forever untainted.”

“Haah...” Zi Ji unknowingly let out a short sigh, before he calmly said. “This old one was simply worried that a large amount of these treasured pellets would flow into the Profound Sky Continent earlier, afraid that it would cause an earthshaking shock and change to the profound world. If there’s only... thirty pellets, then that’s fine as well.”

An evident pause appeared in Zi Ji’s words. Because a treasured pellet of this level was sufficient enough to shake the Sacred

Grounds, and no matter one looked at it, the word “only” shouldn’t be used to refer to thirty of such pellets.

“Alright.” Yun Che immediately nodded, and then, with a wave of his hand, he had already returned all of the thirty-three Overlord Pellets on the table into the Sky Poison Pearl. “When the suitable time comes, I will naturally come again to discuss with Senior Zi about the matters of auctioning them. As for the pellets outside of the original thirty... I hope Senior Zi will keep them a secret.”

“Hoho.” Zi Ji smiled. “You’re definitely not someone who speaks thoughtlessly, yet, you were actually completely frank in front of this old one... This old man has lived for more than a thousand years, naturally, I’m not someone who does not know what’s good for me.”

“Black Moon Merchant Guild has been established under the name of ‘trust’ for several thousand years, and Senior Zi is even the core pillar of Black Moon Merchant Guild, so this junior can be completely at ease

when speaking ‘thoughtlessly’ in front of Senior Zi, and not be worried that this information would be leaked to others in the slightest. Oh right, I have yet to ask what’s the auctioning fee for Black Moon Merchant Guild?”

Just as Zi Ji was about to speak, he suddenly paused for a moment. After pondering for a while, he lightly smiled, and said. “The auctioning fee for Black Moon Merchant Guild is much higher than any regular merchant guild. But, if you’re willing to accept this old one’s request, then the fee for auctioning thirty of these



treasured pellets can be waived under this old one's authority."

"Oh? What 'request' could Senior Zi be referring to?"

"It's simple." A scorching fire could be faintly felt from within his calm gaze. "Sell ten of these treasured pellets to my Black Moon Merchant Guild. The price shall follow what this old one has determined before. Ten treasured pellets, and this old one will immediately give you ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals!"

Purple Veined Divine Crystals...  
ten kilograms of them!!

This was definitely a heavenly number shocking enough that even a powerful profound practitioner could pass out from.

Even if it was the Four Great Sacred Grounds—Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, Supreme Ocean Palace, Sun Moon Divine Hall and Heavenly Mighty Sword Region, it would still take them at least one or two hundred, or even three hundred

years, to accumulate ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

A single Overlord Pellet could be exchanged for a kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystals... this was an estimate given by Zi Ji. However, during an actual auction, there might be a possibility that it would be lower than a kilogram, or even higher than a kilogram... And with the extent of how precious Purple Veined Divine Crystals were, at the very least, Yun Che felt that the possibility of it being worth lower than a kilogram was higher. Yet, if the Black Moon

Merchant Guild were to immediately exchange ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals for ten of these pellets, not only could his auctioning fee be waived, the price being suggested was definitely not a loss for him either... And in regards to Zi Ji's words, he seemed to be giving him ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals right on the spot.

Waves slightly surged in Yun Che's heart, however, his expression was calm. He did not immediately give a reply. After pondering for a moment, he

lightly nodded. “Fine. But, Senior Zi must accept one of this junior’s requests as well.”

“Oh?” Zi Ji looked at him with lifted eyebrows.

“It’s simple...” Yun Che used the same tone as Zi Ji earlier. “Tell this junior... the location which the Netherworld Udumbara Flower appeared in a thousand and three years ago.”

“This...” Zi Ji was dumbfounded, shaking his head

immediately after. “It’s not that this old one isn’t willing. That place is no trivial matter. I’m simply unable to tell you.”

“Oh, in that case, then this junior will naturally not make it difficult for Senior Zi either.” Yun Che did not reveal a disappointed look. “Then there’s no need for Senior Zi to bring up the matter of waiving the fee either. Even if esteemed merchant guild wishes for up to twenty percent of the auctioned price’s fees, this junior will still be afford it.”

“...” Zi Ji was speechless. He opened his mouth, seemingly wanting to persuade Yun Che, however, looking at his calm expression and eyes that were as deep as a black hole, he swallowed the words which he had quickly thought of to persuade him, and in the end, turned them into a long sigh. “The Netherworld Udumbara Flower was extremely dark, sinister and evil, recorded as the most terrifying flower in existence. Simply by approaching this flower, one’s body would be invaded by a dark aura, damaging one’s soul. At best, they would fall into a long lasting coma. At worst, however, they would turn into the living

dead. If one's profound strength is low, then a life would be immediately lost. Other than this, from what this old one has seen and heard, I have never heard of any use of this flower. Why are you so persistent on searching for this flower?"

"This junior naturally has a use for it." After a short pause, Yun Che added. "And it's for an extremely important usage.. I must find a stalk of it at all costs! Even if I have to pay a huge price!"



“...” Zi Ji closed his eyes, and did not speak for a long while.

The seventh floor of Black Moon Merchant Guild momentarily turned silent.

“He’s sending profound energy sound transmissions.” Jasmine suddenly voiced out.

“Mn...” Yun Che lightly responded. “Could it be, he’s transmitting to that mysterious guild leader of Black Moon Merchant Guild...? Oh! He’s

sending profound energy sound transmissions, instead of using sound transmission talismans. In that case, that Black Moon Merchant Guild leader... is close by?”

The silence continued for nearly a hundred breaths, and only then did Zi Ji slowly open his eyes. Yun Che did not speak up to break the silence, and instead, calmly looked at him just like that.

“That place is... much more terrifying that you can ever

imagine.” Zi Ji slowly said. “It can only be entered once every five hundred years. And, even if it is a powerful Monarch, the amount of time one can stay there cannot surpass fifteen minutes, otherwise, that person will either die or become crippled!”

Zi Ji’s words, caused Yun Che to reveal a shocked expression. “Such a place still exists on Profound Sky Continent?”

“...To be precise, that place, is not located on Profound Sky

Continent.” Zi Ji said.

“...?” Yun Che was even more confused.

“And, since you’re searching for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower with such vigor, you should know that it will only bloom once every twenty-four years, and it will then wither three days after. If you truly wish to enter that place, the time you can stay there, is incomparably short as well... A stalk of Netherworld Udumbara Flower truly exists in that place,

and the possibility of it blooming at such a coincidental timing, is slim to the point of being close to none!”

“Then after, it can only be entered exactly after five hundred years.”

“Furthermore, an incomparably frightening existence lies in that place... With your current strength, if you were to enter that place, it’s completely no different from courting death.”

Zi Ji's words, sounded more terrifying with every subsequent sentence, but Yun Che could discern that, there wasn't a single bit of falsehood and exaggeration in his words. Zi Ji looked at Yun Che, revealing a persuasive gaze. "Even if that's the case, will you still insist on finding out the location of that place?"

Yun Che, however, unhesitantly said. "Senior Zi, please tell me."

Although he had guessed of this outcome, Zi Ji still let out a

helpless, bitter laugh. He slightly raised his head, and with a fleeting tone, said. “That place, is named ‘Moon Slaughter Demon Nest’.”

“Moon... Slaughter... Demon... Nest...” Yun Che softly muttered... He flipped through his memories, and even Ye Ziyi, Feng Huwei’s memories, yet, he had never heard of this from anywhere, nor had he seen such a name.

# Chapter 696 – Ocean Palace’s Secret

---

Zi Ji looked at Yun Che’s reaction and slowly continued, “It is completely normal that you have not heard of this name. Even if it is the other three Sacred Grounds aside from Supreme Ocean Palace, there are very few people who know about it.”

“Then where is it? Senior Zi mentioned just now that it is not located in Profound Sky Continent, what does that mean?” Yun Che tightened his



eyebrows and asked.

Zi Ji extended his finger and pointed directly to the south, “It is located to the south of Profound Sky Continent, above the endless Southern Ocean.”

“Southern Ocean?” Yun Che looked surprised.

“Have you ever been to Supreme Ocean Palace?” asked Zi Ji.

“No,” Yun Che said. “”But I know that Supreme Ocean Palace is located one thousand five hundred kilometers south of the southern edge of Profound Sky Continent, above the Southern Ocean”. That was where the name ‘Ocean Palace’ came from. Could the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest that Senior Zi said be related to Supreme Ocean Palace?”

“That’s right,” Zi Ji nodded his head slightly. “Everyone spread the news and all knew that the Four Great Sacred Grounds each have their guardian responsibility. They guarded the

safety of the Profound Sky Continent for tens of thousands of years, thus being bestowed with the divine name of ‘Sacred Grounds.’ However, out of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, only Supreme Ocean Palace have been upholding their guardian mission.”

“That place called ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’ is the place that Supreme Ocean Palace has been guarding for generations?” Yun Che asked.

Zi Ji nodded his head once

again. “Supreme Ocean Palace is one thousand five hundred kilometers away from the edge of the continent. Not only do they need to be prepared for oceanic disasters all the time, there are also a lot of inconveniences everyday. But Supreme Ocean Palace has existed for tens of thousands of years and have never moved onto land. The only reason behind that is the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.”

“What kind of existence is the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest exactly? Why would Supreme Ocean Palace do whatever it

takes to stay at Southern Ocean and guard it? And this name...” As he listened to Zi Ji’s description, more and more questions piled up in Yun Che’s mind.

Zi Ji closed his eyes slightly, organized his thoughts, and continued to say, “I can only give you the simplest description about Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. About more than ten thousand years ago, when seven ancestors of Supreme Ocean Palace were touring Southern Ocean, they suddenly found a large area of ocean water that was dyed black. The pitch-black

ocean region was very wide, and there were countless corpses of oceanic beasts of the same color. After that, they found the center of this pitch-black ocean region... which was an island that was completely dyed black.

“That island released an extremely thick yin energy, and it was the reason that a large ocean region such as that became a dead region. After that, the ancestors of Ocean Palace came to the pitch-black island and found a large cave on the island. That terrifying yin energy came from within that dark cave. When they entered

the cave, the deeper they went, the heavier the yin energy became, causing even their profound strength to be greatly suppressed. In the deepest recesses of this cave, they encountered an incomparably terrifying dark profound beast.”

“Dark profound beast?” Yun Che felt more bizarre the more he heard about it.

“That dark profound beast called itself the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. It hates light and is especially afraid of the

moonlight. Aside from that, nothing is known about it. The strength and aura of that dark profound beast isn't very strong; it should be around the early stage Tyrant Profound Realm. The profound strength of all seven of Supreme Ocean Palace's ancestors had reached great heights. Each of them were in the late stage Sovereign Profound Realm and stood at the summit. However, within that cavern's depths, their profound strength had been suppressed down to the Emperor Profound Realm. In front of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, they could not retaliate at all. Out of the seven ancestors, only one escaped. The other six ancestors



had all lost their lives in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

“After the sole survivor escaped out of the cave, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign didn’t give chase. It was afraid of the daylight’s radiance and the night’s moonlight. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign would perhaps never leave its nest. However, the dark yin energy the nest released was endless, and when that Ocean Palace ancestor finally managed to get out, he personally heard the roars of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. It said, ‘The time the entire world is

submerged in darkness is the day when it would come out.’”

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign... such a monster actually exists?” Yun Che grew more and more frightened. If it wasn’t Zi Ji telling him this personally, he would’ve just treated it as some story a random person fabricated. “After that, did the Ocean Palace ancestor use some kind of method to seal that nest to keep the dark yin energy from leaking?”

“Hehe, that is correct.” Zi Ji looked at Yun Che with admiration. “We don’t know whether that dark yin energy originated from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign or a terrifying unknown source that exists deep within the nest. However, if it continually spread without anything keeping it in check, there would be a day when it would reach the Profound Sky Continent, and the consequences would be unthinkable. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s roar also never allowed that Ocean Palace ancestor to be at ease. Thus, he combined the power of all the experts of the Ocean Palace and unhesitantly

sacrificed more than a dozen of Ocean Palace's strongest profound artifacts and a large amount of Purple Veined Divine Crystals to construct an enormous isolated barrier to seal the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, completely isolating the never ending leakage of dark yin energy.

“Because the barrier consumes a lot of energy, every three years they need at least a dozen Monarchs to input profound energy to maintain it. Because of this, the ancestors of the Ocean Palace moved their whole sect above the Southern Ocean and

changed their name to the  
‘Supreme Ocean Palace.’”

“...I see.”

Because of his hostility towards  
Mighty Heavenly Sword Region  
and how much he despised Sun  
Moon Divine Hall, Yun Che  
already didn't have any good  
feelings towards the Four Great  
Sacred Grounds and even  
thought of them as the tainted  
grounds. But hearing Zi Ji's  
description of Supreme Ocean  
Palace made him feel a decent  
amount of respect for them.

Compared to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and Sun Moon Divine Hall, a

Supreme Ocean Palace like this really didn't tarnish the reputation of the "Sacred Grounds"

Thinking back to that Ji Qianrou from Supreme Ocean Palace, even though he was enchantingly demonic, his conduct was overall upright. In the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, he was the first person who had spoken up for

him, a person he had never spoke to before. He ruthlessly mocked the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince, Feng Ximing, and because of a small favor, acted against Ye Xinghan in the Primordial Profound Ark. It could've even been said that he had saved his and Feng Xue'er's lives.

“Senior Zi mentioned just now that that place can only be entered once every five hundred years. It was discovered one thousand three hundred years ago and could still be found there... Could it be that the barrier was deliberately left

behind in a place where one could enter?" Yun Che asked.

"This was what I was about to say next," Zi Ji smiled faintly. Since everything had been revealed, he didn't really have any worries left. "The Ocean Palace ancestor guessed that the dark yin energy came from the very body of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, and no matter how powerful a profound beast, it would still one day reach the end of its lifespan. In that case, upon the death of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, the dark yin energy in the sealed Moon Slaughter Devil Nest



would naturally disperse. The guardian mission would then thereby be accomplished, and Supreme Ocean Palace could break away from the Southern Ocean from then on.

“In order to easily confirm whether the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was dead or alive, the Ocean Palace ancestor left a gap on the barrier, but set it so that it would open once every five hundred years. Moreover, in order to prevent the leakage of the massive yin energy, he also restricted the time it could be opened: only a hundred breaths! Since then,

every five hundred years, Supreme Ocean Palace would dispatch disciples of the worst aptitude to enter and confirm the life or death of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. Since the start of six thousand and five hundred years ago, the disciples that entered had all came out alive. In other words, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign is already dead now.”

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign is already dead, yet Supreme Ocean Palace is still standing guard... This means that although the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign has

died, the dark yin energy is still spreading... The dark yin energy isn't actually from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign?" Yun Che said with sunken brows.

"Correct," Zi Ji heavily nodded. "If the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign leaves the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, that is merely a Tyrant Profound beast. It's not that frightening. The true terror is the endless yin energy which is coming from an unknown source. Supreme Ocean Palace has no choice but to continue guarding that area and maintain that barrier once every three years. And to this

day, it has already been a full ten thousand years.

“In the several thousand years after confirming that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was already dead, Supreme Ocean Palace still makes disciples of the lowest aptitude enter once every five hundred years, so as to avoid an accident from happening. In the end, all of those disciples came out alive, thereby completely asserting the death of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. After that, the number of people entering had decreased, and no longer was it only disciples of the lowest

aptitude entering. A few elders, and even the Sovereign of the Seas, would join and go exploring. However, the yin energy within was just too heavy. Even though they were exceptionally strong practitioners, they would at most stay for tens of breaths before immediately coming out and sealing the barrier.

“As for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that you are interested in... it was one thousand three hundred years ago, when the barrier had reached a full five hundred years and could open, that a few newly

promoted curious elders who had never entered went in. After they quickly arrived at the end, they suddenly heard the eerie sound of a ghost wailing.”

“Ghost wailing... right!” Yun Che’s mind shook. Even though he had never seen the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, his master had once mentioned the Netherworld Udumbara Flower to him and said that it would let out the sound of an evil spirit’s crying and laughter.

“Hehe, following the sounds of

the ghost wailing, they saw a three meter tall demonic flower. Its stems and leaves were purple black but its blossomed flower was an alluring bright purple. Above its petals, a faintly purple mist that seemed as though it was from the Netherworld surrounded the flower. The mist danced around the flower even though there was no wind as it made the frightening noise that sounded like a devil's cries and laughter.

“From what all the Ocean Palace elders described, when they saw the purple demonic flower, they felt as though their

souls were instantly sucked away from their bodies... In their shock, they immediately retreated from that area and resealed the barrier. However, after that, all of them who were Monarchs became severely sick and only recovered after several months. They then investigated and found that was the legendary evil demonic flower... the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

“Since then, it has already been a thousand and three hundred years since someone entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.”



Yun Che's expression became slightly agitated as Zi Ji's description of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was completely the same as what his master described to him back then in Azure Cloud Continent!

“Yes, that must be the Netherworld Udumbara Flower for sure!” Yun Che nodded, “The Netherworld Udumbara Flower grows in places of extremely harsh yin energy, and the yin energy there is harsh to the extreme. Therefore, it is the most suitable place for the

Netherworld Udumbara Flower to grow. Furthermore, because the area is isolated by a barrier, not only does the yin energy not disperse, it only becomes even stronger. That means that the Netherworld Udumbara Flower from a thousand and three hundred years ago should still exist, and furthermore, the possibility of there being more flowers exists.”

Zi Ji shook his head and laughed bitterly, “Although what you said is true, this old one has already told you that the Netherworld Udumbara Flower only blossoms once every twenty

four years and it will wither within three days. The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest only opens once every five hundred years, and the longest you can stay in it is a hundred breaths. The probability that you encounter a blossomed flower within these hundred breaths... is like searching for a needle in the ocean.”

“However, I will still have to give it a try. After all, this is the only news regarding the Netherworld Udumbara Flower I’ve received so far.” Yun Che replied without hesitation, “Also... my luck has always been

pretty good! What if the flower just so happens to be blossoming at that time!”

Zi Ji shook his head once again. “The elders of Supreme Ocean Palace who were in the Sovereign Profound Realm had merely caught sight of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower and their souls were nearly stolen away. The consequences of approaching and touching it is unthinkable. Even if the flower blossomed when you entered, how are you going to pick it?”

“As for that... this junior has his own ideas,” Yun Che replied calmly and confidently. The reason for his confidence was naturally due to the Sky Poison Pearl.

Yun Che removed ten Overlord Pellets from the Sky Poison Pearl, placed them in front of Zi Ji and said sincerely, “I thank Senior Zi Ji for the detailed sharing. This matter is of utmost importance to this junior. According to the agreement, these ten pellets will be sold to your respected merchant guild at the price of ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

At the same time, the amount of pellets I put up for auctioning will be reduced to twenty, not one pellet more.”

Zi Ji put away the ten Overlord pellets and looked thoughtfully at Yun Che. He knew that this youth was smart and shrewd and must have figured out something from their conversation just now. He did not talk about it and merely flipped his palm. A profound formation appeared and a deep purple spatial ring was pushed towards Yun Che. “Inside this is ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals.”

Yun Che picked up the ring containing the purple crystals and scanned it quickly before depositing it into the Sky Poison Pearl. Then, he smiled at Zi Ji.

Ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals... Divine Crystal, you know! Obtaining it just like that... was just too easy!!

“Yun Che, after settling the matter with the Divine Phoenix Sect, are you going to pay a visit to Supreme Ocean Palace?” Zi Ji asked with thoughtful looking

eyes.

“Indeed I am.” Yun Che nodded, “This junior also roughly knows where the general location of Supreme Ocean Palace is.”

“Actually, you don’t have to be hasty.” Zi Ji smiled slightly, “In five months time, Supreme Ocean Palace will be hosting a ‘Devil Sword Conference’ and you are among those being invited. The invitation regarding this will be handed over to you in two months time.”



“Oh? Devil Sword Conference? What’s that?” Yun Che asked in shock. “And why invite me?”

“Hoho, about this matter, without permission, it is inconvenient for this old man to reveal. But when the time comes, you can ask the person who delivers the invitation, maybe he will resolve your confusion.”

“Oh...” Yun Che nodded his head slightly. His heart was filled with confusion, but he didn’t continue to ask. “If so,

then it would be inconvenient for Junior to continue this visit. I will wait for news from Supreme Ocean Palace quietly.”

Until now, even though he still had not found out any news regarding Chu Yuechan, all his other objectives had already been fulfilled. He had even surprisingly gained extra information regarding the “Netherworld Udumbara Flower” as well as confusing news with regards to the “Devil Sword Conference.” Yun Che stood up and cupped his fists together towards Zi Ji. “This junior has already troubled

Senior Zi for long enough, it's time for me to leave... Is my father-in-law Xia Hongyi... currently within the merchant guild?"

"Hoho..." Zi Ji seemed to have already known that he would ask about Xia Hongyi. He smiled lightly, flicked his fingers, and about six meters behind him, a yellow profound formation silently appeared there. "He's at the first level of the Merchant Guild and has already been waiting for you for quite some time. You'll be able to see him once you enter."

“Thank you Senior Zi,” Yun Che nodded his head with some gratitude, gave the three young girls on the side a smile, and then turned around and walked into the profound formation.

A yellow light flashed, and Yun Che disappeared into the profound formation.

Zi Ji was slightly stunned for a good while before slowly sitting down. His face revealed a deeply complicated expression. After a while, he reached out his arm

and carefully picked up an Overlord Pellet. His eyes expressed deep astonishment, and after he carefully examined it, he mumbled to himself in a low voice, “Such an overwhelming treasure of a pellet and yet it can be obtained so easily. This is indeed something earth-shattering... Furthermore, it has not even been named yet.

“This pellet emits six different type of auras, and each aura is different, varying in strength. The pellet helps one to become an Overlord, aids in the road to become a Monarch, and there

are no underlying risks. It can be called the Emperor Pellet of this generation, so let's call it...

“The Six Flavor Emperor Pellet.”

OverTheRainbow: The name of this pill is 六味帝皇丸, a reference to 六味地黄丸 (homophone) which is a cheap, common and widespread herbal medicine pill commonly advertised everywhere in China. This is an insider joke for Chinese readers.

# Chapter 697 – At The Gates Of Phoenix City

---

With a flash of profound light, Yun Che was teleported to the first level of the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

As the lowest level within the Black Moon Merchant Guild, the aura of this place was naturally not as thick or pervasive as it was on the seventh level. Yun Che took in his surroundings; this was a simple yet elegant single-room apartment, and it likely served as an ordinary guestroom. But he did not

manage to get a good look at the room because his gaze was fixed to a certain spot.

A middle-aged man with a refined appearance slowly stood up from a dark-red wooden study and smiled at him gently, “Che’er, you’ve come.”

Yun Che’s mouth opened as he felt his nose crinkle up. He quickly strode forward before falling heavily on his knees, “Uncle Xia....” He immediately paused before changing his mode of address, “Father-in-law,



I have finally been able to be reunited with you once more.”

“Haha, stand up please.” Xia Hongyi extended a hand and hoisted Yun Che up as he measured him with a warm gaze before cheerfully acknowledging him, “In a mere blink of an eye, more than six years have passed, and you have grown up as well. Even though your appearance remains unchanged, when you married Qingyue, you were only up to my forehead, but now you are already half a head taller than me.”

Indeed, since the day he had been kicked out of the Xiao Clan, he had not seen Xia Hongyi. Furthermore, when he had returned to Floating Cloud City and wanted to pay a visit to Xia Hongyi, he discovered that he had long ago left home and that his current whereabouts were unknown. Not only that, but when Yun Che had arrived at Phoenix City three years ago, he found out by chance that Xia Hongyi was actually residing with the Black Moon Merchant Guild, but at that time, he could not bring himself to face Xia Hongyi, so he did not meet him... and now, six years had passed since this meeting.

Yun Che did not detect any negative feelings such as gloominess or solitude from Xia Hongyi; instead, he seemed to be possessed of a certain simple and elegant calm. This cheered Yun Che up greatly, and he let out a laugh as he said, "If we are speaking of growing up, Yuanba is the one who has truly 'grown up.' If Father-in-law saw Yuanba right now, you might not be able to recognize him."

"Oh? So that is to say that you've seen Yuanba recently?" Xia Hongyi asked as his smile

became even warmer and his eyes shone with deep concern.

“Yes,” Yun Che nodded his head heavily. The Black Moon Merchant Guild had the most comprehensive information network in the Profound Sky Continent, so he was confident that Xia Hongyi had been kept abreast of the current state of affairs. “Yuanba has truly become a magnificent man. Right now he is keeping watch over our Blue Wind Nation’s final line of defence, and on his shoulders rests the heaviest and noblest burden of our Blue Wind Nation... As long as he is around,

even if the Divine Phoenix Empire throws entire armies at him, they won't even be able to take half a step into our Imperial City!"

"Good... that is truly good." Xia Hongyi lightly nodded his head, and a deep sense of pride and contentment shone through his calm smile.

"Once our Blue Wind Nation has escaped this calamity and recovered its glory, the two of you can reunite once more... That day definitely isn't far

away.”

“Yuanba....” Xia Hongyi murmured softly and let out a hushed sigh that carried far too many complex emotions within. No one would have thought that... including Xia Hongyi, his very own father, that the Xia Yuanba whose gifts could only be called ordinary in Floating Cloud City and who had been the laughingstock of the Blue Wind Profound Palace had, within the span of a few short years, risen up like a phoenix, now stood at the very peak of the Profound Sky Continent, and had even caused the Four

Sacred Grounds to go pale in shock and amazement.

Whereas others were shocked and left in disbelief at Xia Yuanba's transformation, Xia Hongyi's emotions seemed far more complex than that.

Both of them sat facing each other, and the two men were in high spirits; Yun Che had always held Xia Hongyi with the highest regard because, in the years he had lived in Floating Cloud City, he had only ever held two people of the older generation in

regard... the first was his grandfather, Xiao Lie, and the other was Xia Hongyi. The main reason was, besides his closest relatives, Xia Hongyi was the only person that showed 'genuine care and concern' to this 'cripple,' and this perpetually gentle person had never, ever said a single word to oppose the marriage between his genius daughter and this 'cripple.' In fact, he had arranged the majority of the wedding by himself.

And having been through two lives worth of grievances, Yun Che was clearer than anyone on



just how precious this kind of genuine warmth was in the face of universal ridicule and contempt.

When Xia Qingyue had entered Frozen Cloud Asgard and Xia Yuanba had gone missing... the blow dealt to Xia Hongyi at that time had been far too heavy. In order to track down Xia Yuanba, he had abandoned his family business, left Floating Cloud City, and had used the opportunity left behind by his ancestor to join the Black Moon Merchant Guild. Later, he had even seized a chance to enter the headquarters of the Black Moon

Merchant Guild itself.

During the past few years in the Black Moon Merchant Guild, he would repeat the same routine every day. He would meet different people, and every other day he would try to find some news regarding his children and Yun Che, and this caused his heart to become more and more at peace.

“Father-in-law, I have a question that I am trying to find the answer to. But as a junior, I am really not sure if I should be

asking this in the first place....” Facing Xia Hongyi, Yun Che really wanted to voice out the doubt that had been plaguing his heart for the longest time, but even though he had already decided that he was going to do it, he still hesitated when it came to actually asking the question... because, after all, it was extremely likely that it was the thing that Xia Hongyi was most sensitive about.

“You want to ask about... Yuanba and Qingyue’s mother, correct?” Xia Hongyi said gently as he looked at Yun Che

“....” A shocked expression appeared on Yun Che’s face.

“Haha, no matter who it is, they would definitely find it strange.” Xia Hongyi said as he gave a polite laugh, but after that, disappointment and frustration surfaced on his face as he continued, “Yuanba and Qingyue had clearly been born into a merchant family, and my Xia Family had been merchants for generations. My forefathers, my own departed father, and even myself, we had only dabbled in the profound way and

held no interest towards it. However, Qingyue had possessed an extremely high aptitude towards the profound way from young, and Yuanba... in the past few years has displayed a talent that far outstrips that of mere mortals.”

Yun Che lapsed into a short silence before giving a light nod of his head. “Because I knew a bit more about the personal affairs of your family, I have always had more questions than other people.

“I already know that Yuanba possesses a special power that is known as the ‘Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins.’ I am not sure what meaning the ‘Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins’ hold, but what I do know is that the number one profound practitioner within the Profound Sky Continent—Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s Saint Emperor thinks extremely highly of Yuanba. And three years ago, when his existence was finally exposed, it caused shockwaves that swept through the other three Sacred Grounds. During these three years, many people have tried to either openly or discreetly dig up my background as well,

investigating my history and my level of profound strength. But all of them returned empty-handed, haha....”

Xia Hongyi gave a faint shake of his head, and as he let out a dry chuckle, the expression on his face was not one of helplessness; it was instead a self-deprecatory expression that others would not understand.

Xia Hongyi’s various responses clearly showed that he was not shocked nor was he unable to accept the heaven-defying

aptitude that had been shown by both his son Xia Yuanba and his daughter Xia Qingyue. Instead, the general feeling Yun Che got from him was that of a deep-seated melancholy. He finally opened his mouth and replied, "I actually only have a passing curiosity in regards to these things, so if Father-in-law does not want to talk about it, it's really fine..."

"It happened during a cold winter twenty five years ago." Before Yun Che's voice could completely fall, Xia Hongyi's rose up immediately. He raised his head to look at the green



ceiling of the room, and his eyes swiftly grew hazy. “I had just secured a big deal outside the city, and it was already growing dark by the time I set off on my journey home. But it was then that I suddenly found myself in the middle of a blizzard. The bitter cold was hard to endure, and in order to make it back to Floating Cloud City before it got dark, I chose to take a shortcut and cut across some hills which were known to be inhabited by dangerous profound beasts. But we suddenly stopped in the middle of the journey, and my family servants reported to me that... they had discovered someone who had fainted in the snow in front of us.

“It was a young girl who looked to be about the same age as me. She was dressed all in white, but half of it had been stained red with blood. At that time, I was only just over twenty years of age, but being born into a merchant family, the principle that a merchant should never involve himself in the affairs of a profound practitioner had been deeply instilled into me since my childhood. Saving someone who was clearly being pursued by her enemies and whose background was completely unknown was an extremely big taboo for a merchant. But not only was that girl extremely beautiful, she also

possessed a unique disposition that was impossible to describe. As she lay unconscious amidst the snow, her breathing was as light as gossamer and she looked so frail that it gave me an uncontrollable urge to protect her. In the end, I decided to rescue her and bring her back with me to Floating Cloud City... even though at that time I was already very clear that my actions were very likely to cause great tragedy to fall upon me.”

“....” Yun Che listened silently, and he knew then that the girl that Xia Hongyi had rescued was actually Xia Yuanba, Xia

Qingyue's mother.

To think that they had met in such dramatic fashion.

But just who was she and what status did she have?

“After I had brought her home, she did not awaken for a very long time and her life force continued to weaken. So I searched all over for famous doctors, and I even made many trips to New Moon City to find doctors. But every single doctor

that came said that ‘her life force had been completely exhausted and they were unable to turn the desperate situation around.’ And after a whole seven days, when even I had begun to lose all hope, she suddenly managed to wake up... and after she had regained consciousness, not only was she extremely weak, but she had also lost all her memories.”

“Lost all her memories?” Yun Che said as his brows knit together fiercely.

“That is right, she did not know

why she was wounded nor did she know where she was from or even her own identity. It could be because she had suffered a memory loss induced by a head wound. But after that, she remained with the Xia Family, and because her physical condition was extremely weak, she rarely left the house at all. It was I who personally took care of her, and in order to nurse her back to health, I spared no expense in getting my hands on any valuable medicine that I could find... but what was odd was that no matter what tonic she took, in the end, she was still extremely weak. Even a light walk would leave her completely breathless. But what

was fortunate was that she did not exhibit signs of any other illness.”

Various tonics... and even major tonics, but she still remained weak? And at the same time, she did not show any signs of other illness?

The space between Yun Che’s brows tightened, and a puzzled grimace flashed across his face.

“And because I had met her amidst the snow of a cold winter

night, I gave her the name Dongyue. It was just nice that the summer of my family name (Xia) corresponded with the winter in hers (Dong). I was with her all through the day, and we became the light of each other's lives. Even though I never found out who she really was or where she really came from, I could not control my own feelings, and two years later, she and I became husband and wife. In addition, not long after that, she became pregnant, and because her body was too weak, those doctors advised her to abandon the child and that if she did not do so, the childbirth would be extremely dangerous. I also gave her the same advice, but she insisted on



giving birth to the child... and in only seven months time, she suddenly went into early labor and gave birth to Qingyue.

“Perhaps it was because it was a premature birth and her mother’s weak constitution, but when Qingyue was born, she neither moved nor cried, and her entire body was icy and cold. But just as the midwives and the doctors were about to declare her stillborn, we were extremely fortunate that your father, Xiao Ying, had rushed down and discovered that Qingyue still clung on to a thread of life, so he poured all of his profound

energy into Qingyue's body, protecting her heart and her last chance at life. It was because Xiao Ying poured all his effort into saving her that Qingyue made a miraculous recovery two hours later and began to let out a wail...."

"...." Yun Che's heart was deeply stirred; this story was very well-known amongst the residents of Floating Cloud City, and he had already heard of it from Xiao Lie when he was young. It was precisely because Xiao Ying saved Xia Qingyue's life when she was young that Xia Hongyi, in the midst of

boundless gratitude, had suggested that Xia Qingyue be married to Xiao Ying's son in order to repay the debt of gratitude they owed to him.

Xia Hongyi briefly closed his eyes before continuing, "At first, we thought that Qingyue, who had been struck by calamity just as she was born, was going to be a very sickly child. But what was amazing was that Qingyue was healthy and hale ever since and she grew up without trouble. Moreover, she was incomparably intelligent, and she possessed a wisdom that far exceeded her peers in terms of maturity. Her

mother also made a swift recovery after giving birth to her, and within a month's time, she was as healthy as any other person, and she no longer suffered from a weak constitution. One year after that, she gave birth to Yuanba as well....”

When he had reached this point, Xia Hongyi suddenly came to an abrupt halt. His gaze was still fixed on the ceiling, and his eyes had completely misted over; his hands had begun to steadily shake as well. Being able to walk hand in hand with the one he loved, having a son and a

daughter, seeing his wife completely recover from her previous ailment, and seeing their children grow up safe and sound while residing in relative luxury... in anyone's eyes, especially Xia Hongyi's own, he already had the most perfect life a man could ever ask for.

Xia Hongyi lapsed into silence for a long while, as if he had completely lost himself in the happiness and contentment that had filled that period of bliss in his life. It was only after a long time that Yun Che finally broke the silence by saying, "And... what happened after that?"

Grandfather had told me that Yuanba and Qingyue's mother had passed away due to illness... was that true?"

Before, he had never had any suspicions regarding the matter, because he had no reason to be suspicious.

But now that he had come to this conclusion, he no longer had any reason to not be suspicious anymore.

“When Qingyue was four years

old and Yuanba was three, she... left,” Xia Hongyi said in a dazed voice.

“She... left?” Those two words contained many meanings.

“She flew away... she flew away like a celestial maiden.”

Yun Che, “?!”

“On the day that she left, she suddenly regained the memories

that had been sleeping within her for many years, and at the same time, she recovered the powers that lay dormant within her as well.... She did not stay for a day, in fact, she did not even stay for an hour... she left just like that... and even though she was weeping, she was also determined and resolute... she said that the moment she regained her powers, her aura had already been discovered... and if she did not leave, she would bring a huge catastrophe down on me and our children as well... and before she left, she told me that... we would never ever see each other again in this lifetime... and she told me to never go looking for her as



well... and to treat her as if she had already....”

Xia Hongyi's voice was laced with immeasurable pain, and even though nearly twenty years had passed since then, his reaction proved that he had never been able to forget or find release from this agony. He had his enormous family holdings, and he was the head merchant of Floating Cloud City, but he had never married again nor did he take a concubine. So it could be imagined just how irreplaceable and important the girl that he had named “Dongxue” was to him and the

special place that she had in his heart.

“Then, did she... mention ... even briefly or fuzzily... the place that she was leaving to?” Yun Che asked in a small voice as he pondered deeply on how he would be able to console the present Xia Hongyi.

Xia Hongyi did not shake his head. He only let out a small sigh, and in a voice that was as fleeting as summer mist, he replied with five words that he had etched deeply into his

heart.Five words that had not amounted to any new information or lead to anything else....

“The Realm of the Gods.”

“!!” When he heard those words, Yun Che received a huge shock and did not recover for a long period of time.

When Yun Che finally strode out of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, it had already begun to approach midday.

He looked at the bright, dazzling sky and gave a heavy sigh that was filled with emotion. “Who would have thought that the situation with Qingyue and Yuanba’s mother... was actually so complicated and bizarre. No wonder they had such frightening innate gifts. One possessed the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins while the other had the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass and the Nine Profound Exquisite Body.... To think that their mother hailed from such a place.

“The first time I heard the name ‘Realm of the Gods’ was from the Dragon God. And this time, I actually heard it from Uncle Xia’s own mouth,” Yun Che said as he let out a long sigh, his heart troubled by aftershock of the revelation.

“To be able to give birth to children who possess the Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins and the Heart of Snow Glazed Glass, even if that woman is from the Realm of the Gods, she definitely has a very high status there,” Jasmine said blandly.

“There is no woman who would truly be willing to be part with her husband and her children forever... she definitely had her own difficulties that were hard to bring up.” Yun Che muttered to himself, “If there is a day that I am able to go to that place that is known as the ‘Realm of the Gods,’ then perhaps I can try to locate her whereabouts... even if it is just for Yuanba and Qingyue’s sake.”

Having felt Yun Che’s spirit ripple when he was muttering to himself, Jasmine, who was

inside the Sky Poison Pearl, raised a delicate eyebrow before suddenly asking, “Do you really have plans to travel to the Realm of the Gods?”

“Of course.” Yun Che nodded his head forthrightly. “After all, I personally made a promise to the Dragon God all those years ago that I would do my best to find and reach the place known as the Realm of the Gods. The only reason why I can possess such a strong body bloodline, and soul is because he destroyed himself in order to bestow his blessings upon me. So I will definitely give my all in trying to

accomplish what I promised him. However, if I use all my power... but I am unable to reach that level, then I will naturally be helpless to do anything.”

“I suggest that you rid yourself of such foolish notions right away,” Jasmine said in an icy and cold tone.

“Eh? Why is that so? Do you not want me to go there?” Yun Che asked in a rather stunned voice.



“Hmph, now is not the time for you to think of such things.” Jasmine forcefully changed the subject, “What you should be puzzling out is just what kind of relationship this Black Moon Merchant Guild has with Supreme Ocean Palace.”

“Ah, there is no real need to think about this.” Yun Che replied as he turned around and eyed the pitch-black crescent moon which soared into the clouds, “The power that is standing behind the Black Moon Merchant Guild is Supreme Ocean Palace... or perhaps you could say that the Black Moon

Merchant Guild was originally the other half of Supreme Ocean Palace.

“The other three Sacred Grounds have their own enormous supply chains and their own resource domains while Supreme Ocean Palace is located in an ocean domain that is surrounded by water. Yet their position amongst the Four Sacred Grounds has never waned, and they have even surpassed Sun Moon Divine Hall and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and are only second to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary in terms of power. If they did not

have a huge resource pool located on the main continent, how would they have been able to reach such a position. This enormous supply chain is naturally the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

“Zi Ji should have been able to guess that I would be able to deduce the relationship between the Black Moon Merchant Guild and Supreme Ocean Palace from his words. However, I do not think this is a secret when it comes to the Sacred Grounds. And in the end, Zi Ji forcefully bought ten Overlord Pellets from me and viciously scammed the

other three Sacred Grounds.” Yun Che stroked his chin and continued, “At present, his Supreme Ocean Palace are the sole possessors of ten Overlord Pellets while the other three Sacred Grounds will have to vye for the remaining twenty pellets.... No! Supreme Ocean Palace will definitely come in for the twenty pellets that still remain, or else, it will arouse the suspicions of the other three Sacred Grounds. In this situation, every Sacred Ground should be able to secure five pellets, leaving Supreme Ocean Palace with fifteen of them....”

“Yes, and then my Frozen Cloud Asgard will have three thousand pellets!”

“And so, the Sacred Grounds only amount to this in the end, hahahaha!” As Yun Che continued his ruminations, his spirits rose immediately and he began to swagger towards the west... in the direction of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

“Hmph, you used a Heavenly Profound Treasure, the Sky Poison Pearl, to refine such things, yet you use it to look

down on a bunch of inferior powers. You are practically profaning a sacred object! How dare you still be so conceited because of that!” Jasmine gave cold snort of extreme contempt.

“Now, just how should I go about settling my debt....” Yun Che looked in the direction of the Divine Phoenix Sect and his voice suddenly grew sinister.

Phoenix City was located at the north-western part of Divine Phoenix City, and it belonged to Divine Phoenix City and stood

alone at the same time; it was a unique city within a city. Phoenix City was the same as the Divine Phoenix Imperial Palace, they were both core pillars of the Divine Phoenix Sect. The difference was that one represented the seat of their power while the other represented the seat of their authority. It could be said that both places had incomparable prestige and military power within the Divine Phoenix Empire, and even if one included the rest of the Profound Sky Seven Nations, these two places would still have no equal.

As Yun Che approached Phoenix City, a pressure which caused one's heart to race and scorching air welcomed him.

This would be the second time Yun Che visited this place. But compared to three years ago, both his mission and his mood was drastically different this time around. As he looked at the phoenix sculpture which raised its head and spread its wings as it radiated a scorching hot brilliance, he no longer experienced the respect and awe that he had three years ago. Instead, what flashed in his mind was the desolated lands of



Blue Wind Nation, the cities which had been reduced to rubble, the citizens of his nation who had lost everything, and the battlefield filled with blood and littered with bones... Cang Wanhe's memorial tablet... Cang Yue's tears... the cheers of the Blue Wind soldiers... Sikong Du's wail of fury and despair....”

The fires of rage and hatred were lit in his chest, and they fiercely welled up... he could not forget the reason he had come to this place and the mission he had to accomplish, and he could definitely not forget the fifty million blood-drenched people...

and the hatred of a nation that had nearly been consigned to the oblivion of history.

“Who is it?! This is Phoenix City, not a place that commoners like you should approach, hurry up and leave!”

In front of the gates of Phoenix City, a Divine Phoenix disciple who was guarding the gate strode forth as he yelled at Yun Che with an arrogant tone.

“Eh? Why does this person

seem kind of familiar?" Another disciple who was on the right of the first disciple said as his mouth slanted.

Yun Che faintly narrowed his eyes faintly, and he gently said in the most even tone, "Go and report to your Sect Master, Feng Hengkong, that Yun Che has arrived to pay him a visit."

Even though his tone was gentle and slow, every single word spoken contained a killing intent that was beginning to froth over.

# Chapter 698 – Destroying The Phoenix God Sculpture

---

“Yun... Yun Che!?”

Even if it was the name of someone who had fallen three years ago, in the ears of the Divine Phoenix disciples, it resounded like a thunderclap. The disciple to the right instantly realized why the face in front of him seemed so familiar... Three years ago, during the Seven Nations Ranking Tournament, he was

one of the guards as well. In fact, he was on one side of the main gates during that event!

Even after the two disciples had gotten over their shock, the arrogance on their face did not decrease in the slightest... because this place was Divine Phoenix City, and they were Divine Phoenix disciples who possessed the bloodline of the Phoenix, the most noble existence within the Seven Nations. Not to mention one Yun Che, even if the emperors of the other six countries came, they might still not treat them with respect.

“Didn’t Yun Che die three years ago? Could this be an imposter?”

“Who cares if he’s an imposter, to think that he would have the audacity to request a meeting with our revered Sect Master the moment he arrived? Haha, how do you have the face to do such a thing?”

“Could it be that you have come to plead on behalf of the tiny Blue Wind Nation that is about to be extinguished? Hehe...” The

two disciples who were guarding the gate looked at each other and simultaneously let out a huge roar of laughter together.

“Hehe.” Yun Che joined in as well before continuing, “Forget it, I don’t need you to convey my message anymore, This has truly been a waste of my time. I’ll call him out myself.”

While he was coldly laughing, Yun Che strode a step forward as his entire body burned with a crimson red flame that was tinged with dull gold. The wild

laughter of the two disciples died the moment the Golden Crow Flames were ignited. Their phoenix robe began to suddenly smoulder as flames quickly spread to their entire body, causing them to frantically retreat while letting out wails of pain.

Boom!!

The Golden Crow Flames rushed forward and exploded with a loud bang as a pillar of fire shot hundreds of meters into the air; the sound reverberating



throughout the entire Phoenix City was loud enough to shock the heavens. The emblem of the Divine Phoenix Sect's might and prestige, the grand gate and the Phoenix God Sculpture, which had been standing for all five thousand years of Divine Phoenix City's existence, came crashing to the ground as they shattered into little pieces...

---

Gathered within the Phoenix Main Hall were all the core members of the current generation of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Among the fifty-six elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect,

besides the deceased original great elder, Feng Feiyan; the deceased Nineteenth elder, Feng Feiheng; the deceased Forty-Third elder, Feng Feiying; the deceased Fifty-Second elder, Feng Hengjiang; and the two other elders who were still supervising the invasion of Blue Wind Nation, the rest of the elders had taken their seats and not a single elder of them was missing.

Given the absolute power the Divine Phoenix Sect possessed over the rest of the seven nations, for the past few millennia, all their elders had

died from old age rather than falling in a battle against others. Feng Feiyan richly deserved the miserable death he earned for himself, and it brooked no discussion. But today, within the span of a single day, the soul crystals of three elders had shattered; they had all fallen in Blue Wind Nation. In the history of the Divine Phoenix Empire, this kind of thing had never happened before, and no one would have ever thought that the elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect, all of whom were at least mid stage Overlords and were invincible existences to the other six nations, would end up falling in Blue Wind Nation when they had just gone there as

supervisors.

The atmosphere of this grand meeting of the elders was oppressive right from the get go. But the surprising thing was that the main topic of discussion was not the death of three elders, but instead the return of one person from the dead...

Yun Che!!

The discussion ranged from the dramatic increase in Yun Che's profound strength that allowed

him to kill Feng Huwei, the words that he had conveyed using Feng Huwei's death imprint the day before... and the suspicion that he was the main culprit behind the disappearance of that Divine Phoenix Army that was several hundred thousand strong.

The name of Yun Che was naturally known to all the gathered elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect. The fact that he came back alive from the Primordial Profound Ark, which had suddenly disappeared, was enough to stun them all. However, as they gradually

realized that the main agenda for the elder meeting that Feng Hengkong had convened was to discuss how to deal with Yun Che, even suggested that they should invite one of the grand elders out of seclusion in order to personally make the journey towards Blue Wind Nation to kill Yun Che, the expressions of all the elders turned into ones of bewilderment and astonishment... Yun Che's return from the dead was indeed bizarre, and the fact that his profound strength had advanced to such a degree, wherein he was able to kill Feng Huwei, was indeed alarming. Given the fact that he was the Prince Consort of Blue Wind Nation, his

intention to avenge his country against the Divine Phoenix Empire was completely understandable... However, he was only a mere Yun Che; even if his present strength was ten times stronger than what was previously estimated, what threat did he possess to merit such a large-scale mobilization of the Divine Phoenix Empire... and what qualifications did he possess for them to consider requesting one of their grand elders to come out of seclusion to personally deal with him?

It was only when Feng Hengkong brought up the

matter with Feng Xue'er... that they all suddenly came to a realization

As Feng Xue'er was the future Phoenix God of the Divine Phoenix Sect, no matter how small the matter was, anything related to her would be a huge issue that the Divine Phoenix Sect could definitely not ignore! If she truly held Yun Che in such high regard... then given the fact that the die had already been cast in regards to the current situation between the Divine Phoenix Empire and Blue Wind Nation, in addition to the attitude Yun Che had displayed



since his return, Yun Che had to be eliminated in the shortest amount of time possible at all costs!!

Since this was the case, in order to ensure that there would be no accidents, even if mobilizing a grand elder was akin to using a cleaver to kill a chicken, as long as the matter concerned Princess Snow, then it was something that had to be done.

At this time, a huge explosion rang out from outside, and it was as if a thunderbolt had

descended from the heavens to strike the grand hall, causing the entire hall to tremble violently.

“What’s going on?!” Feng Hengkong and the gathered elders immediately shot to their feet. The light of fire shone on their faces as the Crown Prince of the Divine Phoenix Empire, Feng Ximing, rushed into the hall with blazing speed as he urgently yelled, “Father Emperor, we are under attack! The gate of Phoenix City and the Phoenix God Sculpture... have been destroyed by someone!!”

“What?!” Feng Hengkong’s complexion abruptly changed, and all the elders had also turned pale from shock. Even though the recent explosion had shaken the heavens, they still maintained their composure. Despite being caught off-guard, no one had panicked. They were the Divine Phoenix Sect, and no one would dare to act rashly against them when they were in the territory of the Divine Phoenix Sect. As such, it was most likely an accident, but even if someone was trying to pick a fight with them, that person would only be courting death... however, the city gate and the Phoenix God Sculpture, which represented the might of the

Divine Phoenix had been destroyed... so this was no longer just simply a rash act of violence against them; this was an action that had completely stepped beyond the bottomline of what the Divine Phoenix Sect could endure!

Feng Hengkong took the lead as he immediately rushed out of the Phoenix Main Hall; all the elders followed closely behind him. As they looked in the direction of the city gate, their faces immediately turned dark and grim...

The Divine Phoenix City gate had stood for an entire five thousand years, and the Phoenix God Sculpture above it was the symbol of their Divine Phoenix Sect. It was customary for an elder of the sect to personally come and imbue the sculpture with Phoenix fire once every seven days, so every corner of Divine Phoenix City would be able to bask in the eternal glory and firelight of the Phoenix flames exuded by the Phoenix God Sculpture. It was not only a simple Phoenix God Sculpture; rather, it was a representation of the Divine Phoenix Sect's five thousand years of pride and glory.

When normal people gazed at the Phoenix God Sculpture from afar, they would be overwhelmed by a sense of irresistible intimidation, and even their manner of walking would become more withdrawn and cautious. Even if members of the Four Sacred Grounds arrived, they would not dare to display a disrespectful attitude in front of the Phoenix God Sculpture...

But at this moment, all they saw was that the Phoenix God Sculpture, which had stood

hundreds of meters tall, had been toppled from the sky... it fragmented into many pieces before falling to the ground with a loud boom. Then, it was burned into a crimson red pile of slag along with the city gate.

The collapse of the Phoenix God Sculpture could clearly be seen even from the outskirts of Divine Phoenix City, and it undoubtedly caused a great commotion throughout the entire city as nearly everyone either stood rooted in place or rushed out of the buildings as they all stared dazedly in the direction of Divine Phoenix City.

“Who... who was the person who did this!?” Feng Hengkong’s hair exploded outwards as every strand of his hair stood on end. Molten rage poured out from his body in a manner that was akin to a volcanic eruption. To think that the Phoenix God Sculpture would be destroyed during his reign... this was an intolerable insult! No matter who the culprit was, just based on this action alone, that person and everything related to that person would become the mortal enemies of the Divine Phoenix Sect... and as long as neither of them died, there would be no end to matters!



“To think that someone would dare to profane our sect’s Divine Spirit... and touch our sect’s **reverse scale**! Unforgivable!” Feng Feiran, the Second Elder of the Divine Phoenix, said in a voice which trembled with anger.

The term, **reverse scale** originates from a Chinese saying, “Anyone who touches the reverse scales of a dragon will definitely die.” Legend has it that there is a portion of the scales on the dragon’s neck that are grown in reverse. In this case, it means something that is

extremely sensitive and anyone who dares touch it would invoke the wrath of the owner.

“I will personally rip him to shreds!”

Boom!!

Feng Hengkong morphed into a beam of fire as he rushed towards the city gate. He had actually left a sonic boom in his wake as he shot out into the air; anyone could tell just how volatile the fury in his heart

was.

All of the Divine Phoenix Sect elders followed suit. Fifty Divine Phoenix Sect elders mobilizing along with their Sect Master was something that had rarely ever been seen in the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Moreover, the destruction of the city gate and the Phoenix God Sculpture was akin to a thunderclap exploding within the Divine Phoenix Sect, and all of the princes, hall masters, palace masters, attendants, high-ranked disciples, and low-ranked disciples were all stunned into insensibility. No

matter how important the affairs they were attending to at the moment, without caring for any possible repercussions, they immediately ceased work as all of them rushed towards the city gate as well.

In one brief moment, the entire Phoenix City had been thrown into disarray as it was enveloped in an aura which was both scorching and furious. People began to congregate in the air like a swarm of locusts.

Divine Phoenix City gate... oh,

now, the gate did not exist anymore, and the only thing left was a tower of rubble. The Phoenix Flames within the Phoenix God Sculpture had also completely dissipated following the destruction of the sculpture. Although it had blazed out at first as a large conflagration of crimson red flames, it still quickly died out as well.

In front of the rubble lay the two lucky Divine Phoenix disciples who were responsible for guarding the gate. With their pupils dilated, they lay there paralyzed, their legs fiercely trembling and their faces

completely white with shock. The stark terror on their faces made it seem like they had just woken up from a nightmare, and they had even completely forgotten the pain inflicted upon them by the Golden Crow Flames.

Fire and sand quickly fell to the earth, revealing a figure that was standing atop the rubble. Feng Hengkong left a windstorm in his wake as he cleaved through the air. Once he had taken a look at the person who was on top of the rubble, his eyes immediately widened as crackling flames washed over his entire body.

“Yun Che... it’s... you!!!”

Even though Feng Hengkong was extremely furious, he did not lose his composure. In fact, during the time he had spent flying here, he had already made several guesses... but the only potential culprits he could think of were the Four Sacred Grounds! At the same time, he realized that there was a possibility that the death of the Phoenix God had already been completely exposed!

Because only the Four Sacred

Grounds, under the condition that they had confirmed the death of the Phoenix God, would dare to attack the Divine Phoenix Sect in such a blatant manner!

However, he had not even given any thought that it would be Yun Che. He had one reason which was sufficient to rule him out completely... and that was the fact that when Yun Che had used Feng Huwei's death soul imprint to communicate with him yesterday, he was still in Blue Wind Nation. Moreover, Floating Cloud City was fifty thousand kilometers away from



Divine Phoenix City, and without the high grade Profound Ark that only the Sacred Grounds possessed, it would be impossible for him to reach this place within a day.

Yet the person who was standing atop the heap was indeed Yun Che.

And while Feng Hengkong was still shocked and furious, he also let out a huge sigh of relief at the same time. Unless it was the Four Sacred Grounds, the Divine Phoenix Sect would not feel the

least bit intimidated. Furthermore, it was also clear that the death of the Phoenix God had not been exposed to the world, so the danger that had flashed through his mind did not materialize in reality.

In addition, the best part of it all was that, while they were busy discussing the matter of eliminating Yun Che, he had actually delivered himself to their doorstep... and he had done so when all the elders were gathered! He had even given them an extremely good reason to kill him... a reason so good that there would be no better

reason in existence! Originally, due to the fact that he had rescued Princess Snow three years ago, if they had killed Yun Che and news of it got out, they would undoubtedly face a lot of criticism. But today, he had personally destroyed the Phoenix God Sculpture, so even killing him ten thousand times would not be unreasonable!

So, no matter what, Yun Che should not think... that he would be leaving this place alive today! With that, Feng Hengkong could settle a matter that had been gnawing at his heart.

“Humph, you sure picked a great time to come, all of the people behind Feng Hengkong are in the mid to late stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm, so they should all be elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect. To think that they would all be gathered together in one place, they must have been in the middle of a grand meeting,” Jasmine said as she gloated at Yun Che’s misfortune.

Yun Che crossed both of his arms over his chest as his mouth slanted and crooked into a brash

and sinister cold smile. He was facing Feng Hengkong and all the gathered elders and disciples of the Divine Phoenix Sect, but his face was devoid of any fear. Instead, he faced them with that cold smile as he said, "Divine Phoenix Sect Master, we have not met in the past three years, so I hope that you are still in good health. Che, to think that all those years ago, Divine Phoenix Sect Master was fixated on getting rid of me, to the extent that you did not forget to arrange for someone to assassinate me when we were on the Primordial Profound Ark. Ah, but to think that in just the short span of three years you have become so courteous. I

have just arrived, but not only did Divine Phoenix Sect Master come to personally greet me, you even brought all the elders and disciples in the sect to welcome me as well... Ah, this truly makes this humble one feel rather embarrassed.”

# Chapter 699 – Rebuking Divine Phoenix

---

Even though Feng Hengkong inwardly sighed in relief while facing Yun Che's mocking taunts, he still couldn't suppress the fury that was welling up in his heart, causing his killing intent to multiply. He didn't have the ability to change the fact that the Phoenix God Sculpture had been reduced to rubble, and this insult had already been thrown at his face. As the current Divine Phoenix Emperor, his humiliation would be recorded in the records of the Divine Phoenix Nation, and he

would never be able to wipe it away.

“Yun Che... Good... you are very good indeed!” Feng Hengkong could no longer be bothered with what method Yun Che used to travel from Floating Cloud City to Divine Phoenix City within the span of a day. Instead, he rasped out these words in a low voice, “Three years ago, you somehow managed to survive by the skin of your teeth... but I would have never expected that you will be so eager to throw your life away!!”



The elders and princes of the Divine Phoenix Sect had all assembled, and the addition of all the other Phoenix disciples who were also rushing towards their location at the fastest speed possible formed a giant crowd of enemies that firmly surrounded Yun Che.

This was the first time in the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect that the entire sect had been put on full alert. It was also the first time they had assembled in such an enormous battle formation.

“It’s actually you!” The Divine Phoenix Empire’s Crown Prince, Feng Ximing, stared at Yun Che in disbelief as his eyes glowed with an intense hatred that practically exploded outwards. He was one of the first people to find out that Yun Che was still alive. Because of what had happened with Feng Xue’er, his hatred for Yun Che even surpassed that of Feng Hengkong... however, the majority of this hatred had nothing to do with the Divine Phoenix Sect. Instead, it was born of an insane jealousy which had given birth to this boundless killing intent!

“You presumptuous and insolent cur! Three years ago, our sect let bygones be bygones and showed you mercy, but to think that you would actually dare to... actually dare to destroy our sect’s great gate and our Phoenix God Sculpture!” The new great elder, Feng Feilie, pointed a finger at Yun Che as his whole body trembled in anger, “Even if you were to die tens of thousands of times, you would never be able to redeem yourself of this sin!!”

“Hahahaha!” Yun Che tilted his

head back as he roared in laughter, but subsequently, both his expression and his voice abruptly turned dark and cold, "You bunch of mangy old dogs from the Divine Phoenix Sect, do you still have any face to criticize me!? My Blue Wind Nation never had any quarrel with your Divine Phoenix Nation, and for a thousand years, we had also paid a tribute to your Divine Phoenix Nation. We had never failed to do this even once, so what crime did we commit against you!? Yet in the last three years, without cause or reason, you have trampled over my Blue Wind Nation, destroying its cities, killing its people, and causing mountains

of bodies and rivers of blood to appear in my nation. Countless of innocent people died in your hands, and even more of them were rendered homeless and destitute! Even the old, the women and the children were not spared. In three short years, you have turned a peaceful and harmonious nation into a hell that is filled with terror!

“Your actions are simply the ones which have infuriated both the gods and men, and your crimes are too innumerable to count!

“I have merely destroyed your decrepit old gate and your worn-down statue, yet even dying tens of thousands of times would not be enough to redeem myself? If that is so, then in order to make up for the crimes committed by you people which have infuriated both the gods and men, shouldn't your entire clan, down to its very roots, have its bones scattered to the winds hundreds of thousands of times?”

“How dare you!” Feng Feiran roared in anger, “This basic law of survival in this world has always been the survival of the

fittest! It is only just and proper for our Divine Phoenix Empire to swallow the weak and expand its territory! For five thousand years, our Divine Phoenix Empire has been under the protection of the Phoenix God. Since the time of our ancestor, our nation has been blessed by a divine spirit! It is not something your tiny and pitiful Blue Wind Nation can compare to! This Phoenix God Sculpture represented the prestige and the divine might of our ultimate ancestor, yet you dared to destroy it, profaning and trampling on the dignity of the divine spirit. Even if all the people in your tiny Blue Wind Nation died as compensation for

this heinous crime, it would still not be enough!”

“Divine spirit? Hah!” Yun Che gave a low and cold chuckle, “To think that you would still have the face to mention the Phoenix Divine Spirit? History has indeed been established by the law of the survival of the fittest, but the wars of humanity have always been governed by one basic principle: innocents should never be harmed!. Yet you have burned Blue Wind Nation to cinders and wantonly slaughtered its innocent people. To top it all off, you even used the Phoenix flames bestowed



upon you by the very same Phoenix Divine Spirit that you keep on talking about!

“The Phoenix is a sacred beast from the Primordial Era, and the Phoenix flames are a kind of profound fire that has been deemed ‘sacred flames’! Yet all of you, the inheritors of the Phoenix’s bloodline and power, have used the Phoenix flames to commit vicious acts of evil which even an animal would not stoop to! All of you have stained the originally pure and sacred flames of the divine spirit with the blood of countless innocents and your dirty deeds... So who

exactly has profaned and trampled on the dignity of the divine spirit!?”

Feng Feilie roared, “You!”

“The Phoenix bloodline within my body came from the other Phoenix Divine Spirit!!” Yun Che’s cold gaze landed upon every single face he saw with a mixture of hate, fury and contempt, “And it had also existed for at least as long as your ancestor’s Phoenix God! But do you know why no other Phoenix Sect emerged as well?”

That is because... many years ago, when someone who had inherited the flames was fighting with his enemies, he let his Phoenix flames go out of control, burning down an entire city, and causing the deaths of many innocent people. In its fury, the other Phoenix Divine Spirit inflicted the other clan who had inherited the Phoenix bloodline with a terrible curse; a curse that restricted their profound strength to the Elementary Profound Realm forever! Furthermore, this curse was inherited from one generation to the next, never dying out!”

Yun Che's words caused a huge change in the expressions of the disciples of the Divine Phoenix Sect who were present; some of them even displayed shock and fear on their faces.

“It was only that one incident in which the out of control Phoenix Flames burned down a city by mistake, yet that entire clan had to suffer a curse that lasted for a thousand years. That clan could only cower in a desolate corner of the land to repent for their sins for generations, without daring to show their faces again! And what about the lot of you!? The

sins you have committed are ten thousand times worse than theirs! Yet you still have the nerve to talk about how you are protected by the Phoenix Divine Spirit! Pah!

“I destroyed this Phoenix God Sculpture, but the lot of you have already lost the right to be called a Phoenix clan! Allowing the sacred sculpture of the Phoenix to reside in your sin-stained and dirty lands will only tarnish the prestige and holiness of the Phoenix!”

Yun Che extended a finger and pointed at the sect master of the Divine Phoenix Sect, “Feng Hengkong! If the Phoenix Divine Spirit is truly still in this world and witnessed the vicious, evil and extremely dirty deeds that you have committed, it would personally exterminate your entire clan... if not, it is unworthy to be called a spirit of the Phoenix!”

“Silence!” Feng Hengkong roared furiously as blood rushed to his head. Three years prior, he had already experienced the might of Yun Che’s tongue, and today, nearly the entire Divine

Phoenix Sect had mobilized and surrounded Yun Che, yet they were all still furiously rebuked by him; at this moment, they were losing the upper hand! Furthermore, Yun Che's voice was as loud as thunder, and he could be clearly heard throughout the entire Divine Phoenix City; every word he spoke had viciously besmirched the prestige and glory of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Feng Hengkong continued to roar in fury, "Yun Che, you have destroyed our Divine Phoenix Sculpture without any justifiable reason and offended our ancestor and the Phoenix God, yet you still dare to label us as unrighteous?! Every action

taken by my Divine Phoenix Sect has been done with the approval of our ancestor's Phoenix God! Do not even try to slander our good name and demonize us in public..."

"Hahahahaha!" Before Feng Hengkong could finish speaking, he was immediately cut off by the wild laughter that spilled out of Yun Che's mouth. At the same time, the look in Yun Che's eyes grew even more contemptuous and disdainful, "Feng Hengkong, even though I have nothing but loathing for you, I had always thought that the reason you were able to become



the Divine Phoenix Sect's Sect Master was because you were solemn and upright. I thought you are at least someone who would not besmirch the reputation of the Phoenix. But I would have never thought that you, the one who represents the bloodline, power, status and five thousand years of glory bestowed by the Phoenix Divine Spirit, would not only be unrepentant for your crimes which soar to the heavens, you would even throw this dirty water that is stained with the blood of countless innocents onto the head of the Phoenix Divine Spirit as well!!”

“You...” Feng Hengkong said as his body violently trembled.

“How can you face the bloodline that burns within your body!? How can you face the Phoenix Divine Spirit?! Is there even a shred of humanity or conscience left within your soul?! And after you have passed on... where will you find the nerve to face your ancestors?!”

“Xue’er’s heart is as pure as driven snow, and she has the soul of an angel! Yet she has you, a vicious, evil and ungrateful

person as a father, someone who is even lower than the lowest of animals! Not only are you unworthy to possess the bloodline of the Phoenix, you are not even worthy to be the Divine Phoenix Emperor, and you are even less worthy to be Xue'er's father!!”

Yun Che's every word caused Feng Hengkong to go completely berserk with anger, leaving his heart completely devoid of any feelings of mercy. Every single one of Yun Che's words were needle-sharp and laced with venom as they directly struck at Feng Hengkong's vulnerable

spots. Every muscle in Feng Hengkong's face twitched with fury, and due to his extreme rage, the profound energy in his body produced a backlash against him, causing blood to spurt out of his mouth.

“Even though your death is at hand, you still dare to slander us and speak so impudently!” At Feng Hengkong's side, Feng Ximing furiously yelled in response, “Royal father, this little animal has destroyed our Divine Phoenix Sculpture, and afterwards, he has even slandered our Divine Phoenix Sect. Even if he had saved

Xue'er's life before, there is still no reason for us to forgive him! Let us just proceed to capture and execute him right here and now!!”

“That is right! Royal father and the gathered elders do not need to waste their time talking to him! Just kill him... and rip his body to shreds!!”

The one who spoke was the Fourteenth Prince, Feng Xiluo! The moment he had seen Yun Che, both his eyes widened, his teeth ground together, and his

gaze became filled with hatred! Three years ago, he had fought a duel with Yun Che during the Seven Nations Ranking Tournament, and because he could not accept the humiliation of defeat, he burned his own blood essence in an effort to beat Yun Che. But not only was he still miserably defeated, the loss of blood essence caused his profound strength to plummet from the eighth stage of the Emperor Profound Realm to the seventh stage of the Emperor Profound Realm. And what made it even worse was that his innate talent had been irreparably damaged due to his actions.

Despite three years having gone by with him using countless amounts of spirit medicine and purple crystals, he had only managed to barely force his way back into the initial stages of the eighth stage of the Emperor Profound Realm. Even then, he had not regained the strength that he had three years prior. Furthermore, his talent was no longer ranked as the best amongst the young generation, and he no longer had the exalted status that he had once held amongst the princes; his fall had been dramatic and sudden.

Throughout the entire process, not once had Feng Xiluo blamed his own impulsive stupidity, instead his mind had conspired to shift all of the blame to Yun Che, causing him to hate Yun Che to the very bone. Now that he saw that Yun Che was in the pink of health, he was filled with so much anger and hatred that he had nearly shattered a tooth in rage. If not for the fact that he knew that he was definitely no match for the current Yun Che, he would have rushed towards him like a rabid dog in a bid to rip him to pieces.

Feng Hengkong's breath had



grown hot as his chest rose and fell urgently and dramatically; anyone could well imagine the damage Yun Che's scolding had inflicted on him. He extended a hand and said in a quavering voice, "Kill him at once!"

"Directly smash him to death... do not leave his corpse intact!!"

This was a direct order to kill personally given by Feng Hengkong in front the gates of Phoenix City! The words 'do not leave his corpse intact' evidently displayed the extreme wrath and

murderous intent that swelled in his heart.

After the elimination order had been given, Yun Che's front, back and sides were completely blocked off. One person shot out from each direction to confront Yun Che, and each and every single one of them was an elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect! In the great assembly that had just been held, Feng Hengkong stated that Feng Huwei had died in Yun Che's hands, so it clearly indicated that his power had already reached that of a mid stage Overlord... or perhaps even a late stage Overlord! As such,

the four elders that confronted Yun Che did not let their guards down; they took action together in order to destroy Yun Che in an instant!

Behind them, there were still many elders and disciples of the Divine Phoenix Sect waiting in the wings.... No matter what happened today, even if Yun Che had ten thousand lives, he could forget about leaving this place alive today.

# Chapter 700 – What Now?

---

Four Divine Phoenix Elders attacked at the same time. Due to the surging Phoenix flames, the air was instantly dyed scarlet and rumbled as though lava had just been spewed out from the depths of an erupting volcano.

A sneer still remained on Yun Che's face and when the four Phoenix Elders charged over, he also mobilized, releasing a similar scarlet fire type profound aura as he charged at the Phoenix Elders, not just

targeting one of them, but instead all of them!

The four Phoenix Elders all saw the figure of Yun Che approaching them with a violent and terrifying aura!

Upon witnessing this scene, nearly all the surrounding members of the Divine Phoenix Sect who were watching let out a small cry. As for the Phoenix Elders, they all had a calm expression, and some of them even snorted in disdain, “Hmph, playing with afterimages...”

During an intense and close battle, afterimages could cause an opponent to lose his concentration for an instant; as a result, the opponent would be forced to be passive, eventually losing the battle. However, as one's profound realm increased and their experience became increasingly vast, one would have the capability to differentiate the location of the actual body by spiritual perception. Therefore, at a high level such as the Tyrant Profound Realm, unless one used a special profound afterimage technique or specialized in using afterimages,

it would likely serve no help to the user... and it might even cause him harm.

But in the next moment, they simultaneously had a drastic change of facial expression...

Because when they used their spiritual perception, the aura emitted by the four Yun Ches... were exactly the same! And they were all extremely strong...

All of them seemed to be his real bodies!!

BOOM!!

The sounds of four Phoenix Flames explosions merged together, and the blinding light from the flames that surged into the air dyed the sky scarlet for a short moment. Some of the Divine Phoenix Sect disciples, who were relatively weaker in profound cultivation, hastily retreated. In the midst of the strong Phoenix flames, all four Yun Ches faded away... The four “Yun Ches” they had attacked were actually just afterimages!



At the same time the four Phoenix Elders attacked, another blinding light shot out from a peculiar blind spot, and the speed of which was as fast as stars shooting across the sky. When Feng Hengkong and the other Phoenix Elders had realized the existence of the fifth 'afterimage', it was already above their heads... It was so fast that they could not even react in time.

A miserable cry was followed by the eruption of Phoenix flames. Yun Che's right hand was now

tightly holding onto a person's throat; as Yun Che raised his arm, that person was lifted off the ground.

“Fo... Fourteenth Prince!”

The person being choked by Yun Che... was the Fourteenth Prince of the Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Xiluo!

From the moment the four Divine Phoenix Elders attacked, to the moment Feng Xiluo fell into Yun Che's hands, there was

only enough time for lightning to flash. When Yun Che had lifted Feng Xiluo off the ground, not even a tenth of a breath had passed since the four elders attacked with their Phoenix flames.

Feng Hengkong and the Phoenix Elders swiftly turned around and witnessed the sight of Yun Che clutching onto the throat of the Fourteenth Prince, Feng Xiluo, and lifting him off the ground. They were all stunned as their expressions turned extremely ugly. The pupils of the four elders who had just “exterminated” Yun Che

dilated as they could not believe their own eyes.

This was the territory of Divine Phoenix Sect, and the Sect Master, Feng Hengkong, had even personally come. There were also fifty Phoenix Elders present in addition to countless Divine Phoenix Sect disciples of different levels. On the other side, there was only a twenty odd years old youth who was not even hurt when the four elders had attacked him at the same time; on the contrary, he had even gained a hostage.

And the person he held hostage was a prince of the Divine Phoenix Sect!

Furthermore, this Fourteenth Prince was hiding behind all the elders, and it could be said that he was hiding at the safest place within the entire Divine Phoenix Sect... or perhaps even within the entire Sky Profound Seven Nations!!

More than a slap on the face, this humiliation suffered by all the members of the Divine Phoenix Sect present was like

being smacked in the face with feces.

This humiliation was at least a thousand worse than the one they suffered when Yun Che single handedly defeated the geniuses of their younger generation three years back. If this news spread, the Divine Phoenix Sect would be the laughingstock for generations.

“Royal father... Save... me... Ugh...”

Feng Xiluo uttered with a hoarse voice filled with pain. However, Yun Che immediately tightened his grip, disabling Feng Xiluo to utter another word as his originally handsome looking face was now ashen and contorting in pain.

Three years back, he could still force Yun Che into a tough battle, but now, although he was still higher in terms of profound strength, in terms of actual battle capabilities, Feng Xiluo could not even be considered worthy to face him. While he was in Yun Che's grasp, it was not that he did not want to

struggle, but Yun Che's strength was just too much for him to put up a struggle. He could not use one bit of his profound energy, and he could not even move his pinky one bit.

“Fourteenth Prince!!!”

“Release the Fourteenth Prince at once!!!”

“If you dare to hurt the Fourteenth Prince one bit... our Divine Phoenix Sect would ensure you that you won't have a



proper resting place when you die!!!” Crown Prince Feng Ximing roared in anger.

“Let go of him!” Feng Hengkong rushed to the front but dared not move another step. His expression was downcast while his heart was still shocked at the speed Yun Che had displayed just now. “Yun Che, you should know his identity! If you dare to harm him, not only will we not leave you with an intact corpse... we will also exterminate your entire bloodline!!”

“Oh? Is that so?” Yun Che smiled coldly. Not only had he not loosened his grip on Feng Xiluo, he had even tightened it.

Cr-ack! The sounds of bone being shattered rang clearly in the air.

“Fourteenth Prince!”

“Stop!”

“You!” Feng Hengkong was

instantly enraged as he ferociously stepped forward; he was no longer able to maintain the composure he initially had. It was widely known within the Divine Phoenix Empire that among his fourteen sons, Feng Xiluo was the one Feng Hengkong doted on the most. However, he was now being strangled like a dead dog in front of him

As the emperor of the Divine Phoenix Empire, this was definitely something that had never occurred to him, even in his dreams.

“Hahaha...” Facing Feng Hengkong, whose expression turned ten times more ferocious than before, Yun Che didn’t show the slightest hint of fear as he looked at him straight into the eye; only a cold mocking smile appeared on his face as he said, “Feng Hengkong, your son is in my hands. As long as I will it, I can instantly extinguish his life... yet you still have the guts to threaten me. Should I praise you for your foolishness or should I pity this so-called prince whom in your eyes, is only an unimportant and worthless trash?”

Feng Hengkong's chest rose with intensity; it looked like it could explode at any moment. He said with a sinister voice, "Yun Che! If you dare..."

CRRAACK!!

The sounds of bone shattering was once again emitted from the throat of the Fourteenth Prince, causing Feng Hengkong to fall into silence. Due to his extreme rage, Feng Hengkong's bones also let out cracking sounds. All the other elders, princes as well

as disciples were also shocked and angry.

“So what would happen if I dared?” Yun Che spoke as he narrowed his eyes into slits. Feng Xiluo, who was in his hands, was similar to a ghoulish as his ashen face contorted under his fear and pain.

At this time, Great Elder Feng Feilie immediately sent a sound transmission to Feng Hengkong, “Sect Master, for Yun Che to come alone, he obviously does not plan to go back alive. A

madman who has no regards for his life is capable of doing anything... Fourteenth Prince is currently in his hands, so we must not anger him! He's only holding the Fourteenth Prince hostage and hasn't committed a killing blow yet. It's obvious that he has some motive... You need to pacify him and save the Fourteenth Prince before doing anything."

Feng Hengkong took a deep breath as he tried his best to calm himself down, "Alright! Let him go, this emperor promises to let you go and no one is allowed to stop you."

“Oh?” Yun Che smiled cheekily, “Divine Phoenix Sect Master could cause my Blue Wind Empire to turn into a river of blood at one command, and yet you’re suddenly acting so magnanimous now? You’re even going to pardon me of the ‘heinous crime’ of destroying your Phoenix God Sculpture?”

“Hmph!” Feng Hengkong snorted, “Our son’s life is much more valuable than yours! Before this emperor changes his mind, you’d better let him go and scam from here!”



Yun Che still had a sneer on his face; it was evident that he did not have any intention of letting Feng Xiluo go. In a leisurely manner, Yun Che said, “Feng Hengkong, it seems like not only is your personality far more disgusting than I have imagined, you seem to be an idiot as well. Just how did a person like you become the Sect Master of the Divine Phoenix Sect... it seems like everyone in this world has overestimated the might of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Use your pig brain and think it through. For me to come all the way here, do you think that I would leave empty-handed!”

Yun Che's words had undoubtedly caused all of the Phoenix disciples to nearly explode in rage; their sharp and vicious gaze could almost tear Yun Che into the smallest shreds. With each and every insult Yun Che threw at Feng Hengkong, the principles and values of the latter as a ruler seemed to shatter into pieces in front of all the Phoenix disciples. Feng Feilie frantically rushed forward and gave the enraged Feng Hengkong, who looked like he was going to explode at any moment, a look, before directly asking Yun Che, "Alright... Yun Che, since you're

holding our Fourteenth Prince hostage, our Divine Phoenix Sect will accede to your demands! Just list down whatever conditions you have!”

“Very good.” Yun Che nodded in satisfaction as he leisurely continued, “Based on the heinous crimes that your Divine Phoenix Sect has committed, I had originally wanted to exterminate all of you, only leaving Xue’er behind. However, it’s a pity that I’m still a consort of the Blue Wind Imperial Family, and there are some matters that I have to consider for the sake of my empress. Also,

because Xue'er had saved my life before, I shall not kill anyone and give your Divine Phoenix Sect a chance."

A single person, standing in the territory of the Divine Phoenix Sect, saying that he wanted to exterminate the entire sect... was now giving them "a chance." The entire Divine Phoenix Sect did not know whether to laugh or to cry. However, their Fourteenth Prince's life was still in Yun Che's hands. hence, they did not dare to make any noise...

In this world, was there anything that would be more indignant than this?

In the next moment, they were going to find out... that there actually was!!

“If you want me to let your Divine Phoenix Sect off, you just have to agree to three conditions.” Yun Che, who was surrounded by the Divine Phoenix Sect, had imbued his voice with profound energy and spoke in a voice that every corner of Divine Phoenix City

could hear, “Firstly, within thirty days, the entire Divine Phoenix Army must get out of my Blue Wind Nation’s territory. Not one person or a strand of hair can be left behind!! Furthermore, you are not allowed to step foot into my Blue Wind Nation for the next hundred years!

“Secondly,” without waiting for the Divine Phoenix Sect’s reply, Yun Che had already continued, “You, Feng Hengkong, must personally pen a letter of apology towards my Blue Wind Nation! This must be announced to the world!!”

“Thirdly, you must compensate my Blue Wind Nation ten billion purple profound coins!!”

Calling back the Divine Phoenix Sect troops was not a surprising condition. They had all guessed that this was probably the reason why Yun Che had come. However, they did not expect that this was only the first of his conditions. When Yun Che had finished saying his second condition, all the Phoenix Elders nearly exploded with rage... For them to apologize to the lowly Blue Wind Nation? This was

undoubtedly an absolute joke.

When Yun Che had finished saying his third condition, even all of the disciples present nearly passed out in rage.

Compensation... Ten billion purple profound coins.

Exchanging it to yellow profound coins... that was a hundred trillion!



The first condition was to protect Blue Wind Nation, the second condition was to make the Divine Phoenix Nation lose all their face, and the third condition was to cause the Divine Phoenix Nation to suffer a huge loss... From Divine Phoenix Sect's perspective, this was the biggest joke in the world! Though Feng Xiluo was indeed a Divine Phoenix Prince, even if Yun Che was holding Crown Prince Feng Ximing hostage, the Divine Phoenix Sect would never apologize to the lowly Blue Wind Nation, let alone talk about the third condition.

Did Yun Che think that he was holding the Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix God hostage?!

Feng Hengkong's rage turned into laughter, "Yun Che, did you think that just by holding our son hostage that we would not dare to do anything to you! This emperor has already given you a chance to live, but you are stubbornly seeking death..."

"No, no, no!" Yun Che interrupted while laughing coldly, "I am the one giving you all a chance! In my entire life, I

have never offered such a magnanimous chance, yet you seem to be unwilling to accept it. Tch... On behalf of Xue'er, let me remind you one last time that you should take ahold of this chance. If you still fail to appreciate my kindness and choose to remain stubborn, I will not offer such 'discounted' terms anymore."

When Yun Che said his last sentence, his face was as vicious as a cobra, and his laugh was as sinister as the devil's.

“HAHAHAHA!”

Feng

Hengkong laughed loudly. However, the laughter was sinister and filled with anger. He swung his arms, stared at Yun Che like an eagle, and walked towards Yun Che step by step, “My Divine Phoenix Sect has reigned on top of Profound Sky for five thousand years, and we have never feared anyone, nor has anyone ever threatened us before! Those that dare to offend my Divine Phoenix, whether it be a person, clan, or nation can all be eliminated at the lift of my finger! This emperor really wants to see whether or not you have the guts to kill my son!”

BOOM!

The moment Feng Hengkong's sonorous voice stopped, a ball of fire also erupted from Yun Che's body.

Feng Hengkong stood rooted on the ground as his pupils contracted. His body first became stiff, then it trembled vigorously... several terrible shrieks that could nearly pierce the heavens rang beside his ears.

Within the flames, Feng Xiluo's

body turned into millions of pieces and dispersed. Before he died, he didn't even have the chance to make a sound; even the pieces of his corpse were quickly burnt into ashes by the flame. Yun Che pulled his arm back and swung his right hand strongly in front of his body. With a cold smile and a sinister expression, he calmly asked, "What now?"

# Chapter 701 – Divine Phoenix's Chaos

---

Feng Xiluo had died, died at the hands of Yun Che... Moreover, it was truly a death without an intact corpse. All of the Divine Phoenix elders and disciples were stunned. Even though Feng Xiluo's life was grasped within Yun Che's hands just a second ago, the elders and disciples still subconsciously refused to believe that Feng Xiluo would actually lose his life. He was a Divine Phoenix Prince, a person of the most revered status in Profound Sky Continent. In this world, who would really dare to

kill a Divine Phoenix Prince?

Feng Hengkong did not anticipate this as well; especially because Yun Che personally said that he had to “consider for the sake of Blue Wind”. When he provided three conditions, Feng Hengkong was even more certain that Yun Che would not dare to do anything too extreme. He had begun approaching step-by-step while speaking with a sharp tone, expecting that Yun Che would be frightened and even reveal an opening. However, he had never expected, no matter what... that by his second step, Yun Che had



actually dealt the killing blow then and there!

Making him, the Divine Phoenix Emperor and Divine Phoenix Sect Master, helplessly watch on as his most beloved son turned into ashes before his very eyes.

“You... you...” Scarlet colored flames shot out from every single strand of Feng Hengkong’s hair on his head, and even from those that were on his body. Both his pupils dyed red with blood; the baleful aura

coming from him was intense to the point that none of the Phoenix Elders had ever seen before. “You... die!!”

In his extreme rage, Feng Hengkong suddenly struck out, grasping toward Yun Che’s throat with his right hand. Without any restraint, the tremendous amount of profound energy that was released instantly formed into a enormous flood of flames which pounced toward Yun Che’s entire being as though it was a enormous beast that lost its mind from rage.

At the same time that Feng Hengkong attacked, Great Elder Feng Feilie, Second Elder Feng Feiran, and Crown Prince Feng Ximing also attacked. Feng Ximing laid out a huge Phoenix Domain that completely surrounded Yun Che while the profound energy of the other two elders formed into two similar profound formations... These profound formations discharged a huge amount of attraction which prevented Yun Che from escaping.

“Devilspawn... Meet your

end!!”

BOOM!!!

These were the Phoenix flames from a Phoenix Sect Master that was extremely furious. At the moment of its eruption, just the overflowing shockwaves alone violently threw thousands of Phoenix disciples into the air. In an instant, there were miserable cries all around.

Within the light of the flames that spread out to several

hundred meters away, one silhouette rose up into the sky, hovering tall in the air. Yun Che, completely untouched, with a face carrying a faint elation, sneered as he looked down below him, “Feng Hengkong, how does it feel to watch your son die in front of you? Is it so painful that you wish you can make mincemeat out of me? Haha... Then, do you know how many of my Blue Wind citizens endured a pain millions of times greater than yours?!”

“Yun... Che!!” Feng Hengkong’s voice was violently trembling. In his whole life, he had never been

so furious and so resentful.  
“Today... this emperor... will  
definitely... tear you apart with  
our own hands!!”

Whoosh!!

Amidst the chaotic of the  
explosion, thirteen Phoenix  
Elders surged into the sky  
together. Following them,  
Phoenix flames of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm also shot  
through the skies, engulfing the  
firmament and completely  
enveloped Yun Che in an  
instant... However, even when

the entire sky was engulfed with flames, what came through was not Yun Che's miserable screams; rather, it was his hysterical laughter.

“HAHAHAHA... Feng Hengkong, honestly speaking, I was really worried that you would've immediately agreed to those three conditions, or else I would've found it really difficult to actually kill your son. However, as expected, you did not let me down.

“Today, I'm only going to kill

one person from your Divine Phoenix Sect for now. Tomorrow, I'll still bestow your Divine Phoenix Sect another opportunity to redeem yourselves. However, the chance tomorrow won't be as benevolent as today. As for the consequences of being disobedient, that won't be as simple as merely one person dying either!"

Feng Feilie roared in a violent rage, "Your death is imminent but you still dare to speak insolent words. You, the devilspawn that destroyed the Phoenix God Sculpture and



killed our Fourteenth Prince, are still dreaming about leaving this place alive?!”

Profound energy erupted and Phoenix flames surged. Not only did more than a dozen elders attack at the same time while propelled by the anger and humiliation of their prince's death, all their attacks were also killing blows without the slightest bit of mercy, to the point of not even taking the surrounding disciples with relatively low cultivation into account.

Yun Che's body turned illusory before five carbon copy images of himself instantaneously dispersed to five different directions. The speed of these images were all extremely fast, as every single one of them shot out from the thirteen elders' encirclement. Even their afterimages was not touched by the elders.

As the afterimages dispersed, Yun Che's real body had long ago broke away from the Phoenix flames that rolled through the entire sky during the time the elders were dumbfounded. Appearing over a hundred meter

away, he went into the distance with an extremely quick speed amidst his wild laughter.

“Feng Hengkong! From now on, do your best to enjoy this splendid game I’ve especially bestowed upon you...  
HAHAHAHA!”

Even with thirteen Phoenix Sect Elders attacking at the same time, their target had actually escaped in an instant. Much more than shock, they were so angry that their chests were about to explode; they crazily

pursued him in the direction that he escaped towards, “You still want to run!! Today you will be...”

The roars of the elders slowly faded as their speed gradually slowed down as well. Soon, all of them stopped at the same time as they blankly stared in the direction where Yun Che had flown off, as though their souls had left their bodies.

That was because Yun Che’s speed was simply too fast.

While he flew, the profound aura that he released was only of the Emperor Profound Realm. Furthermore, it was only the early stages of the Emperor Profound Realm, yet his speed was so fast it could startle the heavens, earth, and even ghosts! The Phoenix Elders were all in the mid to late stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm, and their strong profound energy allowed them to travel extremely quickly. However, in only three breaths of time, Yun Che went from being less than fifteen meters away to nearly disappearing from their sight... and in the next breath, he had already completely disappeared from sight.

In addition, this had happened while the elders were pursuing him at full speed.

The thirteen Divine Phoenix Elders were all dumbstruck as they each took in deep breaths... Just what kind of speed did Yun Che possess?!

Such shocking speed, how could this be from a junior who only emitted the aura of the Emperor Profound Realm?

Fast to the point... that it made these powerful Phoenix Elders frankly give up in despair after merely chasing for three breaths of time. They could only look on helplessly as the person who destroyed their Phoenix God Sculpture and killed their prince left completely unscathed.

Not only were the thirteen elders that were in midair stunned, all those who had witnessed Yun Che's speed were all dumbstruck. When Feng Xiluo had landed into Yun Che's hands, they had all attributed it to their own carelessness, but now, they realized what put

Divine Phoenix Sect through such a disaster was obviously a godlike speed.

Feng Feilie's twitching eyelids suddenly tightened, as he remembered something and said in shock, "That is... Extreme Mirage Lightning?!"

"What?" Feng Feiran exclaimed as he turned around in surprise, "Extreme Mirage Lightning... isn't that Thief God Clan's ultimate skill? In addition, it's only passed down to the sons and no one else. Currently, the



only one who can use Extreme Mirage Lighting is the Ghost Mirage Sacred Hand, Hua Minghai. How is it possible that Yun Che...”

“What are you guys dawdling about for... Hurry up and give chase! Chase! Cut his corpse into a thousand pieces!!”

It was obvious that Feng Hengkong had lost control. Although he was the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, his son had just be killed in his presence right in front of his entire sect.

The impact of this was so big, that even he, as a sect master and an emperor of a nation could not calm himself in a short moment of time.

“Royal Father, you need to calm down... Yun Che cannot escape our Divine Phoenix Sect’s network of people.” Feng Ximing came forward and said consolingly.

“Sect Master... You must restrain your sorrow. Regarding the Fourteenth Prince’s death... We will definitely deliver justice

for him, ” All the elders gradually went forward with faces of rage and anguish.

“...” Feng Hengkong took a deep breath. After relaxing for a while, he finally calmed down a little. He turned and looked at the place where Feng Xiluo was obliterated by Yun Che. Even with the eyesight of someone in the pinnacle of the Tyrant Profound Realm, forget about the remnants of a corpse, he could not even find any shred of clothing left behind.

Feng Hengkong clenched his fists tightly, shaking to the point where it seemed as though all the bones in his hand were about to break. However, his voice was surprisingly calm, "Send out all the idling disciples within the sect... kill Yun Che at all costs... when he's found... kill him on sight!!"

"Understood! This son will go instruct them immediately." Feng Ximing nodded in acknowledgement before leaving hastily.

“Second brother,” Feng Hengkong shouted towards Great Elder Feng Feilie: “Please personally send a sound transmission to Xue’er and tell her that there will be a distinguished guest visiting the sect in the coming days. Therefore, I won’t be able to leave and it’s also not suitable for her to come over... Tell her to rest assured and stay at Phoenix Perching Valley for this period.

“In addition, for this period, you will personally monitor Phoenix Mountain Range’s Great Phoenix Formation!”

Feng Feilie understood the meaning behind Feng Hengkong's words and slowly nodded, "Don't worry, Sect Master."

Feng Hengkong closed his eyes. His body trembled in rage and his face filled with agony. He viewed Feng Xue'er to be more valuable than his life and always could not bear to hide anything from her. When she had awoken after being unconscious for three years, he was initially overjoyed. However, in the past few days, he had been forced to

deceive her time and time again.

However, his worry was completely unnecessary as Yun Che definitely would not go look for Feng Xue'er. After confirming that Feng Xue'er was not at the sect but probably at the Phoenix Perching Valley, Yun Che heaved a sigh of relief. He hoped that Feng Xue'er would not appear... if she did appear, he would really not know how he should face her.

---

The Phoenix God Sculpture was destroyed, the Fourteenth Prince was killed, the Divine Phoenix Sect was now in chaos, and an uproar started to spread within the entire Divine Phoenix City. Many Phoenix Sect disciples searched every corner of the city and even went as far as searching the outskirts. They seemed like a group of panicking headless flies as they searched for the whereabouts of Yun Che.

Within the region of Divine Phoenix City, the Divine Phoenix Sect naturally had a vast and intensive network of people and intelligence. Furthermore, by



sending out a large number of disciples, they thought that Yun Che would have nowhere to hide. However, from high noon until night had fallen, let alone capturing him, not a trace of Yun Che was to be found.

At the center of the Divine Phoenix City, standing at one end on the seventh level of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, Zi Ji stood in front of a transparent window that was filled up with various unique profound formations. As he looked down at the restless Divine Phoenix City, ripples constantly appeared in his eyes.

“Sigh, he really is someone who cannot be fathomed.” Zi Ji sighed as he said to himself, “Although I had guessed that he would probably kill to show that he was serious, I never imagined... that he would go ahead and kill a prince. This was obviously something that only a madman who has completely lost his sanity would do.

“However, just from the conversation I had with him previously, he probably doesn’t want to become complete mortal enemies with Divine Phoenix

Empire... After all, based on his character, he would definitely consider for the circumstances and future of Blue Wind Empire.

“However, his behavior and intent are so contradictory. What exactly is he trying to accomplish...”

Sss...

A soft noise that ordinary people would not be able to detect rang softly in Zi Ji's ear. He stretched out his fingers and

touched the air lightly. A profound formation that was only half an inch wide took form. From it, came a voice that had been deliberately suppressed: “Yun Che has been found.”

“Oh? Where is he now?” asked Zi Ji.

“A hundred kilometers southwest of the city, on a hill. His clothing did not change nor did he disguise himself.”

“...Without changing his clothes and looks, he actually managed to get out of Divine Phoenix City without being detected by Divine Phoenix Sect,” Zi Ji’s face revealed signs of puzzlement and shock. He had to admit, if he were to be placed in the same situation, he would not have been able to accomplish the same feat. He would even go so far to say that there was no one else that could probably do it as well, except for...

Escaping and escaping without leaving a trace were two entirely different concepts.

“If you all were about to discover his whereabouts, he would have most likely found out about you as well,” Zi Ji said.

“That is indeed the case. But as you said, once he saw that we had the Black Moon emblem, he did not attack us. He only seemed to barely open his eyes, before continuing to... to...”

“Oh? What was he doing outside of Divine Phoenix City?”

“...It seemed like he was sleeping.”

“ ... ”

“In addition, according to a source within Divine Phoenix Sect, the movement skill that he used to escape made him fast as lightning... seems as though it was the Thief God Clan’s Extreme Mirage Lightning!”

“Extreme Mirage Lightning?”  
Zi Ji’s eyebrows jumped fiercely.  
Even at the level he was in, the

words “Extreme Mirage Lightning” still reverberated like thunder in his ears. This was because the Extreme Mirage Lightning was a profound movement skill that even the Four Great Sacred Grounds regarded as being the best in the world. It could cover up one’s aura and the ability it granted to travel long distances could be said to be unparalleled in this world. If a Throne that possessed Extreme Mirage Lightning and used all his abilities to hide himself, even an Overlord who was within ten steps would not be able to detect him. If he used it to escape at full speed, the Overlord would only be able to eat the dust



behind the Throne.

There was only one successor left for the Thief God Clan! And that successor's profound cultivation has only reached the early stages of the Emperor Profound Realm. Yet, his name was something that even everyone from the Four Great Sacred Grounds knew... all of this was because of Extreme Mirage Lightning! While only being in the early stage of the Emperor Profound Realm, he could freely enter and leave the Divine Phoenix Sect unscathed. This displayed the might of the Extreme Mirage Lightning.

“Can you verify this news?” Zi Ji asked with a frown. In his knowledge, Extreme Mirage Lightning was something that has always been passed on to sons and never to anyone else... it was not even allowed to be taught to a daughter. Also, at the level of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, there had always been rumors: Sun Moon Divine Hall yearned for the Extreme Mirage Lightning, and had once secretly investigated the whereabouts of descendants of the Thief God Clan. They tried using coercing, enticements and even murder, but were still unable to obtain what they wanted.

Even when facing Sun Moon Divine Hall, the Thief God Clan still refused to hand over Extreme Mirage Lightning, so how could it appear on Yun Che?

“The successor of the Thief God Clan in this generation is someone named Hua Minghai. He has snuck into the Divine Phoenix Sect several times in the past few years. He was detected twice when he had triggered a profound formation, which then caused several Phoenix Sect Elders to chase him, only for him to escape using Extreme

Mirage Lightning. Therefore several of the Phoenix Sect Elders were very familiar with the profound fluctuations emitted when Extreme Mirage Lightning was used. The aura of the profound movement skill Yun Che used when he escaped was very similar... However these are all merely speculations and there's no concrete proof.”

“...” Zi Ji was silent for a long time. Then, he replied faintly, “Pay close attention to Yun Che’s movements, but don’t disturb him; furthermore, don’t reveal anything that concerns him to anyone else except for me. Also,

have those stationed in Blue Wind Nation focus on observing the events happening in Blue Wind Imperial City.”

“This subordinate understands.”

“Wait... the one called Fen Juechen, don’t lose track of him either.”

“Yes!”

# Chapter 702 – Soaring Into The Sky

---

Even though night had fallen, Divine Phoenix City had still yet to calm down; the Phoenix disciples still continued to persevere in their search for Yun Che as they swarmed the place like a bunch of headless houseflies. An entire day of fruitless labor had left them all sullen and angry, and not one of them had the face to go back to report their findings. As such, they grew even more frustrated and impatient, to the point where they began to forcefully barge into the various big

merchant guilds, sects, medical halls and even residential areas, practically turning all the places which could hide a person upside down.

The exception of course being the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

Despite all their efforts, they could not even catch a glimpse of Yun Che's shadow. What they did accomplish however was raising the ire of the residents of Divine Phoenix City, even though no one dared to voice it.

Only when midnight came did the search finally ended; however, the lights within the Divine Phoenix Sect were still brightly lit. The fact that they could not find any trace of Yun Che despite mobilizing nearly the entire Divine Phoenix Sect left them in a state of shock, causing the atmosphere to become especially tense and oppressive. Feng Hengkong and the various elders were no exception; not a single of them was able to sleep, so they all gathered in the Phoenix Main Hall to discuss on how to deal with the entire Yun Che affair... Given the incredulous boast that Yun Che had made before he ran away, he would definitely come



again tomorrow!

This time, they had to eliminate Yun Che no matter what. Yun Che's success in fleeing the first time could still be explained with them being left unprepared by his bizarre speed. If he truly delivered himself to their doorstep once again and they still failed to kill him the second time around, then the entire Profound Sky Continent would look down on their Divine Phoenix Sect as some kind of huge joke, and their five thousand years of prestige would go down the drain in one stroke

After that day of absolute chaos, Divine Phoenix City descended into a peculiar silence . It was especially so within the Divine Phoenix Sect; the atmosphere had become so oppressive, as if everyone there were being boiled in a pressure cooker, making it hard for anyone to breathe.

Within Divine Phoenix City, people kept on looking in the direction of Phoenix City, but whenever they did, they no longer saw the Phoenix God Sculpture which radiated might

and awe.

Within the Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Hengkong had not slept a wink nor had he taken a step outside the sect's doors. He stood at the entrance of the Phoenix Main Hall with his head raised, staring at the sky as his whole body released a vicious aura which struck fear into the hearts of anyone who was in the vicinity... The Phoenix God Sculpture had been destroyed, and his son had also been killed. However, not only had the culprit, Yun Che, managed to escape, they also failed to find a single trace of him despite

searching day and night. At this moment, they had no choice but to wait for the other party to appear once more. All of this made the wrath and resentment in Feng Hengkong's heart reach the boiling point.

“Sect Master.” Thirty-eighth Elder Feng Yunzhi, spoke as he strode towards him.

“Have you found out where Yun Che is hiding yet?” Feng Hengkong asked in an emotionless voice, indicative of the fact that he did not held

much hope in that regard.

Feng Yunzhi shook his head and said in a low voice, "It has already been a day and a night... so it is about time for us to hold... to hold the Fourteenth Prince's funeral ceremony...."

The center of Feng Hengkong's brow violently jerked, as if it had been stabbed by some kind of needle. Not only had Feng Xiluo died, not even a semblance of his corpse was left behind. Every time Feng Hengkong thought of this, he felt as if his heart was

being torn apart. He said in an extremely low and grim voice, "We have not caught Yun Che yet.... We need to use his life and his blood to comfort Luo'er's departed spirit!"

Feng Yunzhi bent his head and let out a soft sigh, "I understand. Yesterday, we were completely caught-off guard, that's why he has successfully escaped. But if he pays us a visit again, then we will definitely not let him slip through our net. We have been searching for day and night, but we still couldn't find and trace of Yun Che; he has clearly fled from Divine Phoenix City. As of

this moment, every corner of the city is being monitored, so the moment he steps into our territory, we will discover him right away. Once that happens, the sect will immediately be notified, and we will simply wait for him to fall into our hands.”

“Any movements so far?” Feng Hengkong asked.

“None at the moment.” Feng Yunzhi shook his head once more, “Today will be different from yesterday, because this time, he will definitely be

exceedingly cautious in his approach. It is extremely likely that he will only move under the cover of the darkness. Hmph... this time, if he does indeed make an appearance, the moment he steps into our imperial city, we will definitely be aware of it. So the moment he approaches Phoenix City, we will only need a moment to have him....”

“Ahhhhhhhh... Save me...  
Royal Father, save me!!”

Suddenly, a miserable wail that was filled with stark terror



pierced the air; it was akin to a thunderclap that landed in the midst of the artificially peaceful Phoenix City. Feng Hengkong and Feng Yunzhi's expressions underwent a drastic change as all the remaining elders and disciples swarmed out into the open to find the source of that scream.

Boom!!

A palace, which was half a kilometer away from the Phoenix Main Hall, was blown apart with a loud explosion...

Furthermore, that was the palace of one of the princes! The silhouette of a person holding another hundreds of meters above the ground could be seen within a pillar of smoke and flames that shot to the sky. The hoarse wails of terror was coming from the person who was being held.

Looking at the two figures hovering in the air, everyone of Phoenix City had expressions of unrelenting terror.

“Yun... Yun Che!!”

“Thirteenth Prince... it’s the Thirteenth Prince!!”

The one who was yelling in terror was actually the thirteenth prince of the Divine Phoenix Empire, Feng Xichen. As for the one who was holding him aloft, it was astonishingly Yun Che!! Yun Che’s eyes were narrowed into slits, and his face still held the same cold and mocking smile from yesterday as he arrogantly gazed down upon all the living creatures below him.

“This... isn’t possible! When did he... impossible!!” Feng Yunzhi’s pupils widened so much that his eyes nearly popped out; he had just reassured Feng Hengkong that if Yun Che took even a single step into Divine Phoenix City, they would immediately be aware of it, much less Yun Che being able to infiltrate Phoenix City.

However, just as he had finished speaking, Yun Che had actually appeared in the middle of Phoenix City, and he even held the Thirteenth Prince Feng

Xichen in his hands!!

From Divine Phoenix City to Phoenix City, to the Thirteenth Prince's private palace... and even to the point where the Thirteenth Prince had fallen into Yun Che's hand, all of this had happened without a single person noticing!!

The hegemon who lorded over the Profound Sky Seven Nations, the ones who were at the heart of the Divine Phoenix Empire, a sect that had lasted for five thousand years and had

approached the status of a Sacred Ground, was actually like a playground for Yun Che!!

With a trembling voice, Feng Yunzhi kept on muttering the words “impossible”... and all of the gathered Phoenix elders and disciples were also staring at the sky with sheer disbelief.

“Feng Hengkong, another day has passed and we meet yet again. I said that I would come again today, and I have upheld my end of the bargain.” Yun Che looked down at Feng Hengkong

as he continued to let Feng Xichen scream and writhe in the air. There was a good reason for choosing Feng Xichen as his target today. Yun Che was a person who would pay back every insult and injury; he would never forget the day when the Thirteenth Prince tried to wreck his wedding with Cang Yue, and how the Thirteenth Prince had arrogantly proclaimed that he was merely “tidying up family affairs” when asked to explain his actions.. However, because Yun Che was still too weak and also had to consider the bigger picture, he was not able to kill Feng Xichen that day. Today was a different story though. He continued,

“Too bad the people from your Divine Phoenix Sect lacks common courtesy. I had a grand old time walking all the way from the Divine Phoenix City to Phoenix City, but not a single person bothered to greet me. Ah, the manner in which your Divine Phoenix Sect treats its guests has truly disappointed me.”

In fact, it was not actually difficult for Yun Che to infiltrate Phoenix City without being discovered. Before entering Divine Phoenix City, he had used Hidden Flowing Lightning to hide his aura. Then, he had



killed one of the Divine Phoenix disciples who was loitering around alone, and used his Profound Handle to retrieve his memories before disguising himself as the person he had ambushed and swaggered into Phoenix City... his body was already naturally releasing the aura of the Phoenix, moreover, his appearance, memories and profound energy aura... were all completely and perfectly flawless. Even Feng Hengkong himself would not notice anything wrong if he walked past Yun Che, so it was only natural that no one else did either.

“Put down the Thirteenth Prince!!” The nearest Divine Phoenix Sect elder yelled at him through trembling lips.

Feng Hengkong’s face had turned completely green; the scene of Feng Xiluo being incinerated by Yun Che just one day prior to this flashed before his eyes. And today, yet another one of his sons had fallen into Yun Che’s hands. He pointed a finger at Yun Che and roared at him with such extreme fury that practically all the cells in his body trembled fiercely, “Yun Che... if you dare to harm a single hair on his head, we... we

will definitely make you a pay a price that is one millions times worse than this!!”

“Haha, you seem to have repeatedly said those words yesterday, but it doesn’t really have any bloody effect at all. When it was time for your son to die, he still died in the end.” Even if Feng Hengkong’s words were one hundred times more venomous, it would still fail to intimidate Yun Che in the slightest. He continued with a cheerful voice, “But you don’t need to be so agitated. After all, you are the emperor of the Divine Phoenix Nation, so no

matter what happens, you shouldn't leave behind the dignity that comes with your exalted status, right? Furthermore, this son of yours isn't dead yet. But of course, if you still insist on being stubborn, then I won't be able to assure his safety."

"Royal father... save me... save me...."

All of the strength in Feng Xichen's body had been sealed, and right now, he couldn't even struggle from Yun Che's grasp.

As such, the only thing he was able to do was let out miserable cries for help. During the time when he traveled to Blue Wind Nation, he had already been intimately acquainted with Yun Che's viciousness, and yesterday, Feng Xiluo had miserably lost his life in Yun Che's hands. Feng Xichen was very clear that the person before him was a true devil; Yun Che was certainly not bluffing when he said that he would take his life. The threats of the Divine Phoenix Sect, which was enough to cow all the other sects within the seven nations, had no effect on him at all.

“Silence! You are a Divine Phoenix Prince... when have we taught you to beg for your life in such a petty and low manner?! You have simply thrown away all the remaining dignity of our Divine Phoenix Sect!!” Feng Hengkong yelled in a furious voice, yet that voice had already begun to tremble. He had restrained his own anger for a day and a night, intending to wait for Yun Che to “deliver himself to their doorsteps”, before avenging his son by personally torturing Yun Che to death. But right now, Yun Che had once again appeared before him, and despite the energy swirling around him which contorted the space from where

he stood, he was unable to make a move.

Because yet another one of his sons had fallen into Yun Che's grasp!

Great Elder Feng Feilie swiftly sent a sound transmission to Feng Hengkong, "Sect Master, this Yun Che is clearly a madman, and he is capable of doing anything. Now that the Thirteenth Prince has fallen into his hands, you must definitely not do anything to agitate him... the only reason why he hasn't

harmed the Thirteenth Prince yet is so that he can coerce us into giving in to the demands he had imposed yesterday. We need to feign civility for now and agree to all his demands... until we are able to secure the Thirteenth Prince again! We have already lost the Fourteenth Prince, so we definitely cannot lose another prince again.”

Even though he was more than five kilometers away, he could clearly feel Feng Hengkong's wrath and killing intent. Tens of elders took to the sky from where they had been prior to this incident, and all of them



rose to Yun Che's location, forming an enormous circle around him. Feng Feilie took in a deep breath before speaking, "Yun Che, to think that you were not only able to infiltrate our Divine Phoenix Sect undetected, but you were also able to capture the Thirteenth Prince. Your actions have proven how extraordinary you are, and today, we have no choice but to admit defeat.. However, that is as long as you are willing to set the Thirteenth Prince free. In addition, the Divine Phoenix Sect is willing to comply with all the three conditions you have proposed yesterday."

The gathered Phoenix disciples were all stunned for a brief moment, before they were able to come back to their senses. Given the prestige and position of the Divine Phoenix Sect, they would definitely not agree to any of the three conditions Yun Che proposed yesterday; it was clear that the Great Elder was just stalling for time. Given Yun Che's viciousness, this was indeed the only option left to them.

Once they managed to rescue the Thirteenth Prince, anything that would happen after that would be completely out of Yun

Che's control.

“Oh? Those three conditions yesterday?” Yun Che questioningly spoke as his eyes flashed with a dangerous and cruel mirth, “What do the three conditions yesterday have to do today? The Great Elder’s memory seems to be slightly defective, because yesterday, I clearly stated that those three conditions that I proposed yesterday was the most magnanimous chance that I, Yun Che, had ever given in my entire life. It was the best chance I was willing to give you, yet all of you refused to behave

sensibly. Could it be that you are foolish enough to believe that the conditions that I will be proposing today will have anything to do with the conditions that I had proposed yesterday?”

“You!!” The profound energy within Feng Hengkong’s body exploded outwards, and two of the Phoenix Main Hall’s thick pillars behind him instantly crumbled due to the impact.

Feng Feilie swiftly shot Feng Hengkong a glance as he did his

best to suppress the fury in his heart. He replied, "Alright... then you can proceed to tell us the conditions that you are going to propose today!"

"You were indeed the right choice to replace Feng Feiyan as the Great Elder, it is truly refreshing." Yun Che said with an expression of admiration, before flipping his palm, lifting Feng Xichen even higher into the air, causing him gave a wail that was even more miserable than the previous ones. "Then all of you better pluck your ears up and listen.

“The first condition is that within twenty five days, the entire Divine Phoenix Army must get out of my Blue Wind Nation’s territory. Not one person or a strand of hair can be left behind!! Furthermore, you are not allowed to step foot into my Blue Wind Nation for the next two hundred years!

“The second condition is that Feng Hengkong should personally pen a letter of apology for the crimes that he has committed against our Blue Wind Nation, and this letter

should be shown to the world! Additionally, I would require all of the Phoenix Sect elders to personally write a letter of apology as well to be mailed to the Blue Wind Imperial Family, before personally coming down to apologize for your crimes!

“The third condition is to send twenty billion purple profound coins to our Blue Wind Nation as compensation!!”

The three conditions that Yun Che had proposed still had to do with the withdrawal of troops,

official apologies and compensation. But every single condition was far more severe than the ones proposed the day before, and the demand regarding compensation was exceptionally severe as the amount requested today was two times as much as the amount requested yesterday.

This time even the lowliest Phoenix disciples were so filled with anger that their bodies were trembling so one did not need to mention Feng Hengkong's reaction. But, Yun Che had not even finished speaking yet...



“The fourth condition is to cede the Red Jade City that is located to the northeastern part of the Divine Phoenix Nation to my Blue Wind Nation!”

# Chapter 703 – Hatred That Exceeds The Heavens

---

Maintaining an enormous amount of tolerance, Feng Feilie negotiated with Yun Che. With nearly every passing breath, he had to remind himself that he had to be calm, and must not be irritable. Despite that, once Yun Che's fourth condition was yelled out, both his eyes burned with rage, and he almost spat out blood from his throat.

To a nation, ceding a territory

was undoubtedly the greatest humiliation. How could his Divine Phoenix Empire suffer such humiliation?

“Yun Che, don’t you go too far!”

“Go too far?” Yun Che grimly answered, “Compared to your Divine Phoenix’s gargantuan offense of attacking Blue Wind, I’m simply more benevolent than the saints in legends!”

He shifted his gaze toward Feng Hengkong, then sneered at the

hideously warped face which had turned a greenish black, “Phoenix Sect Master, you should have heard these four conditions loud and clear. I’ll give you five breaths of time to consider. If you listen obediently, this son of yours can live and I won’t feel the need to come again tomorrow. However, if you’re still as ungrateful as yesterday... then I can only kill him right away!”

Since the very start, Yun Che only showed a dull expression, and he even wore a slightly gentle smile. It was as if he was talking about something that

couldn't be even more casual.

Even though he was angry to the point where all the veins in his body were about to burst, Feng Feilie still used the most determination he had in his entire life to stay calm, because at present, Feng Xichen's life was top priority. No matter what sorts of conditions Yun Che raised, he had to agree to them first. In fear that Feng Hengkong would explode, he quickly answered, "The life of my Divine Phoenix Prince is more important than anything else in this world... Okay! My Divine Phoenix Sect can agree to the

four conditions you have raised, however...”

“Then that’s just great!” Yun Che immediately turned around, beamed at Feng Feilie and cut off his later words with an arrogant voice, “A Phoenix Great Elder such as yourself is much more appreciative than that nauseating Phoenix Sect Master. Since you have already agreed, then there is no reason for me to kill your precious Thirteenth Prince. What happens next, is even more simple.”

He slightly loosened the left hand holding Feng Xichen as he slowly extended a finger from his raised right. “I’ll give you all ten breaths. Send a sound transmission to your troops stationed in my Blue Wind to all scramble back here. Your Divine Phoenix Sect possesses the highest quality Sound Transmission Jades so it probably won’t even need ten breaths.”

“You...”

“Then...” Yun Che extended a

second finger. “Make your Phoenix Sect Master pen a letter of apology immediately... Oh, it’s fine if you just write it here. After you finish it, remember to stamp it with the Phoenix Seal, then let your Phoenix Sect Master read it out loud in public. With the Phoenix Sect Master’s unrivaled profound strength, transmitting it beyond one hundred kilometers should be quite easy.”

“I’ll give you another thirty breaths of time to craft out the document about ceding Red Jade City. Stamp it with the Phoenix Seal and hand it over to me



directly. It's awfully easy.

“Lastly, I'll grant you another fifteen minutes to prepare the twenty billion purple profound coins. Similarly, you'll hand it over to me directly. Not one coin can be missing.

“After that, your Thirteenth Prince will be able to live on peacefully.

“Also, you don't have any right to bargain with me. Definitely don't exceed the amount of time

I have just given you as well...  
not even by a breath of time!”

How could Yun Che be ignorant of what exactly this bunch was planning? If it was so easy to trick him, then he would not have been able to survive until today.

Feng Feilie’s already ugly expression immediately turned even uglier, “Yun Che, you... you... don’t push things too far!!”

“Oh? And just what does the Great Elder mean? Yun Che said with a cold smile, “Just now, you personally agreed to the four conditions that I have proposed. What I just said completely tallies with the four conditions that I raised, and I did not attempt to exceed it in the slightest. So what is the expression that the Great Elder has on his face supposed to mean? Could it be that... the Great Elder’s unreserved promises to me just a moment ago was actually just a load of hot air?”

“Yun Che!! You....” Feng Feilie

roared angrily; his entire body quivered, but he was filled with so much anger that he could not speak any further.

“Feilie, don’t waste any more words on him!!”

Feng Hengkong finally spoke, and no matter whether it was his expression or his voice, they had become rather cold and calm. His gaze focused and intensified, but his eyes were not fixed on Yun Che. Instead, they fell on Feng Xichen, whose face was filled with fear and

pleading, “Chen’er, listen to me. You are a prince of our Divine Phoenix Empire, and in your body flows the most noble Phoenix bloodline. We can die but we must never submit! Nor should we throw shame onto the five thousand years of fame and prestige that belongs to our Divine Phoenix Empire!”

“Do not worry, we will definitely not let you die in vain! We will definitely... personally avenge you!!”

“Everyone, get ready to... kill

Yun Che!!”

As Feng Hengkong’s voice fell, the sound transmission that came from him exploded in the ears of the Phoenix elders like a thunderclap. However, not one of them moved immediately as their eyes were filled with deep conflict and hesitation... the person in Yun Che’s grasp was not just an ordinary Divine Phoenix disciple, but a prince.

But immediately, a pillar of Phoenix flames shot into the sky as Feng Hengkong directly

rushed towards Yun Che; the startling energy wave was clearly produced by all the profound energy in his body surging outwards. All the gathered elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect could no longer hesitate as well. All of them let out a faint cry as Phoenix flames ignited on their bodies while they lashed out simultaneously. In an instant, numerous pillars of fire swiftly converged on Yun Che's location as a terrifying pressure heavily engulfed the entire Phoenix City.

“AAAAAAHHHHHHHH!!”

The one who let out the wail was not Yun Che, but instead Feng Xichen who was in his grasp, “Royal Father... I don’t want to die... I don’t want to die!!”

“Hahahaha!” Yun Che, who had been surrounded on all sides and seemed to have reached the end of his tether, actually let out a wild laugh. “Feng Hengkong, you think that your lowly self is worthy of all the fame that you have accrued in this life? Do you think that your lowly self has the qualifications to have a



discussion about the ‘Phoenix bloodline’?”

“There is something that you better remind yourself about right now. I am not the one who killed both of your sons. The one who killed them is you, Feng Hengkong!! This is the karma you reap for all the evil acts that you have committed against my Blue Wind!”

“Furthermore... this is just the beginning!!”

“Attack!!” Feng Hengkong  
roared.

Boom!!!!

Whether it was Feng Hengkong or the various elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect, none of them dared to approach Yun Che, instead, the Phoenix flames on their body fiercely exploded outwards at the same time. In an instant, the air above all of Phoenix City was wreathed in a sea of fire. The Phoenix flames, which originated from tens of Overlords, were extremely hot,

thick and fierce, and they completely blocked out the light of the sun. Moreover, even the space in the area had been distorted out of shape.

None of them had forgotten the speed that Yun Che had displayed yesterday, so they did not wait for him to appear. Instead they intensified their Phoenix flames to their very limit and completely smothered the huge area with fire. Even if Yun Che's speed was ten times faster than what he had shown, he would definitely not be able to escape this conflagration.

The Phoenix Sect Master and all the Phoenix Sect elders who were present had attacked at the same time. This kind of battle formation had never been seen before in the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Even though Yun Che's profound strength was only at the Emperor Profound Realm, he was still the single most despised and hated nemesis the Divine Phoenix Sect had ever faced.

When this sea of Phoenix flames engulfed Yun Che, they also naturally engulfed Feng

Xichen at the same time. They were convinced that Yun Che would definitely not be able to escape from the sea of flames alive... therefore the death of Feng Xichen was even more so a forgone conclusion.

They had no choice but to sacrifice the life of yet another prince in their bid to kill Yun Che... and even if Yun Che had truly died, he would leave behind a stain of humiliation that could never be erased from the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

But in the end, the Divine Phoenix Sect did not, and in fact, would never have the chance to recognise that... simply relying on Phoenix flames would not be able to cause any bit of damage to Yun Che. Ironically, the extremely thick and fierce flames and aura provided the best cover for him to flee safely!

Feng Xichen had been casually flung aside by Yun Che and even if Feng Xichen was at full power, he would only survive within this conflagration for no more than three breaths. Thus, Feng Xichen, who had all his power

sealed by Yun Che, could only let out one last miserable scream before he was completely devoured by the flames. Just like Feng Xiluo before him, his body had been burned into tiny cinders and there was hardly anything of him remaining.

But the difference between the two cases was that Feng Xiluo was killed by Yun Che's Phoenix flames, while Feng Xichen was by the Phoenix flames of his own Divine Phoenix Sect.

By combining Star God's

Broken Shadow with Extreme Mirage Lightning, Yun Che shot up above the sea of flames and instantly escaped its confinement. At the same time, he also completely broke out of the blockade that had been set by the Phoenix Sect elders, and afterwards, he directly shot towards the east like an arrow.

“As expected of the Phoenix Sect Master; truly a human-faced beast whose heart is filled with wickedness. To think that you would even kill your very own son! Perhaps not even a trace of ash remained after the pitiful Thirteenth Prince was



personally burned by the flames  
of his own father...  
hahahahaha!!”

Yun Che, who was using Extreme Mirage Lightning, had achieved a speed that left all those who were present with despair. In the blink of an eye, he had completely disappeared from their line of sight. The only thing they could hear was the deep and wild mocking laughter that Yun Che left in his wake.

“This... isn’t possible... how could he escape from that...

impossible!!” All the Phoenix Elders were completely dumbfounded. This scene had left them so dazed and shocked, that its impact was no less than Yun Che appearing unannounced in the middle of Phoenix City. Just now, the Phoenix Sect Master and all the elders who were present had activated the Phoenix Flame Great Formation. Under this kind of might, even if it was someone who had reached the peak of the Tyrant Profound Realm, that person would still be reduced to ashes within a matter of seconds, and logically, there was no way for him to survive.

No matter how strong Yun Che was, even if he did not die, he should at the very least be severely injured... However, the speed he displayed in his escape was as fast as it was yesterday, and his voice was also as deafening and soul-shaking. Not to mention receiving heavy injuries, there was not even a hint that he had been injured at all.

Feng Xichen's aura, on the other hand, had completely disappeared within the sea of flames.

Feng Feilie descended from the sky and arrived at Feng Hengkong's side. As he spoke, every single muscle on his face twitched fiercely, "Sect Master, should we give chase?"

The peerless and dreadful speed that Yun Che had displayed was not something that any of them could keep up with. In fact, it had come to the point where Feng Feilie was not completely convinced that even the retired grand emperor, who had not shown himself for many years... and who was also the

previous Sect Master could keep up with the speed of Yun Che.

“Pfft....” Feng Hengkong’s body briefly swayed, before a large amount of blood wildly sprayed out from his mouth.

“Sect Master!!” Feng Feilie hurriedly caught Feng Hengkong; all the assembled elders and princes went pale as they tripped over themselves and scrambled to Feng Hengkong’s side.

Before his very own eyes, two of his sons had been killed in the past two days, and Feng Hengkong finally understood what it meant to have his heart burn with extreme rage. His face had gone completely pale white and his eyes had grown vague and dim as he gazed at the flames that were sputtering out in the sky. There was not a single trace of Feng Xichen, remaining, and in his sorrow, he hated that he could not break down in tears.

“Royal Father, please let your anger subside so as to not let it affect your health.... The deaths

of Thirteenth Brother and Fourteenth Brother, we will definitely make Yun Che pay them back one million times over.” Feng Ximing said in an anxious voice.

“We... we are fine... are fine...” Feng Hengkong brushed away the arm that was supporting him and slowly stood straight up. But he just stood there, staring off into the distance, as if his soul had left his body.

“Royal Father, should we...” Second Prince Feng Xikang said

in a cautious voice, “Should we go ask Grandfather to come out of seclusion...”

Feng Xikang’s words moved the nerves of everyone present, because this idea had just simultaneously emerged in everyone’s minds. Feng Feilie heavily sighed, stating, “In terms of profound strength, none of us are afraid of Yun Che. However, his speed is just... It is very likely that it is Thief God Clan’s Extreme Mirage Lightning. In the past, even though Hua Minghai was only at the late stage of the Sky Profound Realm, it was still



difficult for us to catch him. Regardless of Yun Che's strength, his speed is much greater than Hua Minghai. Furthermore, with how sinister his means are, they couldn't even be mentioned in the same breath. Even though this might annoy Grand Sect Master and cause him to feel disappointed and angry... if another prince still falls into Yun Che's hands again..."

"Sect Master, this matter can only be blamed on our incompetence," Feng Feilie said with embarrassment.

“Yun Che doesn’t dare to fight us head on. He only dares to capture my sons to blackmail me...” Feng Hengkong spoke very slowly, and the calmness of his voice caused everyone’s hearts to tremble, “Does he believe that I am not capable of using the same methods to deal with him?!!”

The audience of elders and princes suddenly became dazed, “Sect Master, you mean...”

“The army was annihilated by

the hands of Yun Che. However, as of right now, Yun Che is here. There is no way for him to protect Blue Wind Imperial City.” Feng Hengkong heavily grinded his teeth as bitter hatred poured out from within his eyes. “Transmit orders to the East and West armies still situated in Blue Wind. Tell them to dispatch at least two hundred thousand soldiers from the encampment closest to Blue Wind Imperial City and start a full speed assault! They must arrive before the sun rises tomorrow. It doesn’t matter what means they use, just capture Blue Wind Imperial City!

“Massacre all of the people living in the city!! Only that empress... must survive!!”

Feng Hengkong's words caused everyone's mind to shake; a large portion of the dark clouds in their chests instantly dissipated as well. It was clear that the reason Yun Che had come this time was for the sake of Blue Wind Nation. Although they couldn't catch him, they could indeed easily capture his achilles heel! Without Yun Che's protection, it would be a walk in the park for their Divine Phoenix Army to capture Blue Wind Imperial City... as well as

Empress Cang Yue, Yun Che's formally wedded wife!

“Royal Father is indeed wise, this son will send instructions immediately!!” Feng Ximing quickly left.

“Sect Master is indeed wise! Let's take over Blue Wind Imperial City and capture Empress Cang Yue. Afterwards, let's see if Yun Che can still be so arrogant!” Feng Feilie hatefully said.

# Chapter 704 – The Death-Seeking Divine Phoenix Army

---

Black Moon Merchant Guild.

“Another prince again?”

As he faced this special sound transmission formation, a faint look of astonishment appeared on Zi Ji’s face as he asked, “And how many from the Divine Phoenix Sect has he massacred?”

“Apart from Thirteenth Prince Feng Xichen, his palace’s nine bodyguard disciples were also killed; a total of ten people. However, quite a number of Phoenix Sect disciples were injured during the attack,” said a respectful voice through the profound formation.

“Ten people?” Zi Ji frowned slightly, “Within two days, he killed two princes from the Divine Phoenix Sect consecutively. This goes to show that his hatred towards the Divine Phoenix Sect must have

reached the extreme. He has no reason to show any mercy, but he has only killed Feng Xiluo yesterday, and another ten people today... He's not exactly a soft-hearted person, so it's quite puzzling."

"One person... ten people... Hmm?" Zi Ji ruminated upon this, before he asked, "When he threatened the Divine Phoenix Sect today, did he raise the same three conditions as yesterday?"

"No!" denied the voice from the profound formation, before



swiftly stating the four conditions raised by Yun Che today.

“...I see.” Zi Ji slowly nodded his head and exhaled deeply, “He’s only twenty two, yet he already possesses a fearsome shrewdness. It seems not only does he want the Divine Phoenix Sect to pay the price in blood, he also wants them to experience an abysmal nightmare and slowly crush their beliefs and dignity...”

“So fearsome...” Zi Ji bowed his

head as information regarding Yun Che passed through his mind. On his face weathered with thousands of years of vicissitudes, a flash of fear appeared, "The Divine Phoenix Sect is undoubtedly powerful, especially since the Phoenix God had offered its protection. Not even the Four Great Sacred Grounds would dare to challenge them. But this time, they have truly provoked a real demon. Speaking from another point of view, he is more fearsome than the Four Great Sacred Grounds."

Over the duration of his short

speech, Zi Ji repeated the word “fearsome” thrice. Ever since Yun Che left the Black Moon Merchant Guild yesterday, he had been monitoring all of Yun Che’s movements. A day had barely passed, yet his impression of Yun Che had drastically changed again.

Within the profound cultivating world, even if there was mutual hatred, as long as there was logic and reason, those who were more experienced would have known “not to burn all the bridges.” This was especially true during power struggles between the

sects. No matter how great the hatred was, some leeway should always be given. But as for Yun Che, it seemed that he had total disregard for this “leeway.”

Zi Ji's gaze swept towards the Divine Phoenix City below him as he uttered, “It is peaceful in Divine Phoenix City today. The Divine Phoenix Sect must have temporarily suspended the search operation in the town. If so, then those old monsters of the “Tian” generation should have mobilized by now.”

“No auras of the Sovereign Profound Realm have been detected yet, so it is unlikely,” replied the voice through the profound formation.

“A stately five thousand year old sect has actually been cornered into such a miserable state by a young man who is merely in the Emperor Profound Realm. If it was me, I wouldn’t have the cheek to bother those meditating old monsters. Yet they suffered the consecutive losses of two princes with the opponent was barely scratched. They should have realized that Yun Che’s speed is not

something which the profound strength of the Tyrant Profound Realm can handle by now. Could they have other devices?”

“If this subordinate has not made an error in judgment, they have gathered the strength of ten Phoenix elders some three hours ago to construct a gigantic Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation.”

“A Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation?” Zi Ji frowned slightly. Of course he knew what it was. The Phoenix

Sealing Imprisonment Formation only existed within the Divine Phoenix Sect, and was mainly used to punish disciples who had committed serious offenses. Once a disciple was struck with the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, his Phoenix profound strength would be sealed for a long time, or even nullified.

Any elder was able to utilize the “Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation,” so it was unprecedented to have ten elders constructing one together.

The Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was not as effective when used on other profound practitioners, but when used on a Phoenix disciple, he would lose all his profound strength.

Although Yun Che was not from the Divine Phoenix Sect, he still possessed the same Phoenix bloodline. The profound strength he obtained from the Phoenix bloodline was naturally Phoenix profound strength. Therefore, if he were to be struck by the Phoenix



Sealing Imprisonment Formation, he would also turn into a helpless lamb. In addition, this Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was to be constructed with the combined effort of ten Phoenix elders; it would definitely be out of the ordinary. The effective range would likely be greatly enhanced; it would be instantly triggered once anyone stepped in, immediately sealing the person's Phoenix profound strength.

With this, no matter how heaven defying Yun Che's speed was, he wouldn't have a chance

to use it.

“The Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation is incomparably tyrannical. Three years ago, there was a rumor that even Princess Snow, who possessed the body of the Divine Phoenix, was sealed within on the Primordial Profound Ark...” Zi Ji mumbled to himself. Naturally, he had no doubt Yun Che would be doomed if the latter stepped into the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation.

Even so, he had no intention to alert Yun Che... If Yun Che died, he would only feel pity, but at the same time, he would feel more assured.

“Apart from this, were there other movements from the Divine Phoenix Sect?” Zi Ji asked calmly.

“None at the moment. However, there are reports from both the eastern and western regions of Blue Wind. There is some movement from the Divine Phoenix Army stationed in the

east and west of Blue Wind Imperial City. About four hours ago, both forces deployed around two hundred thousand soldiers, and are rapidly advancing towards Blue Wind Imperial City. If nothing crops up, they will reach Blue Wind Imperial City by tomorrow's sunrise.

“Also, the supervising elders of the East and West armies are accompanying the troops.”

“As expected.” Zi Ji was not surprised at all with this

development. Within such a short period of time, the Divine Phoenix Sect wouldn't have discovered the existence of Xia Yuanba. His gaze shifted towards Phoenix City and sighed, "Yun Che, Xia Yuanba... Those two will soon shake the entire continent. It is unfortunate that they were not born in a Sacred Ground, but a deplorable territory like Blue Wind... What a waste."

"The Divine Phoenix Sect is going to suffer a big blow again."

“Yun Che will surely show up at the Divine Phoenix Sect again tomorrow. This time, you should personally observe and remember to bring along your Profound Shadow Stone!”

“...Understood!!”

Blue Wind Nation continued to be shrouded in the shadow of the Divine Phoenix Empire, with more than seventy percent of its territory under its control. However, as the capital was still standing, it became a final testimony proving that Blue

Wind had yet to fall.

The Blue Wind Imperial City, guardian of the remaining dignity of the Blue Wind Nation, experienced yet another peaceful night.

But at dawn, the peace was shattered with the scream of a warning siren.

“...Two armies are rapidly approaching from the east and west. They are showing no signs of making camp, and their

number is estimated to be around two hundred thousand soldiers. I implore Your Majesty to give an order and engage the enemies!!”

“How far are they from the Imperial City?” Cang Yue asked. She had learned to always be on her guard, so that whenever the warning siren sounded, she would immediately show up at the imperial hall.

“About fifteen kilometers for the army in the west, and ten kilometers for the troops in the



east.”

“Let our soldiers know that there is no cause for panic, and we do not need to engage the enemy.” Cang Yue appeared serene, and she looked much better than before. She radiated peace from within, different from before, where she struggled to keep calm.

“Yuanba, Brother Under Heaven, my husband said that the Divine Phoenix Army would invade within three days of his departure. My husband was

right indeed.” Cang Yue got up and turned towards Xia Yuanba and Number One Under Heaven who had arrived a while ago, “Our Blue Wind’s defense is weak, and we don’t have the capability to suppress the Divine Phoenix Army. We are counting on both of you to help resolve our city’s crisis.”

Cang Yue was truthful about the matter and instructed Xia Yuanba and Number One Under Heaven accordingly. She was not the same Princess Cang Yue who was always unsure and hesitant.

“Hehe...” Xia Yuanba scratched his head in embarrassment, “Don’t mention it, Sister Senior. I’ll blast this bunch of Divine Phoenix bastards away!”

“Brother Xia, how about you take the west and I take the east?” said Number One Under Heaven.

“Sounds good!!”

As soon as they ended their conversation, they transformed into blasts of storm and

disappeared from the main hall.

The elven race was naturally gifted with the ability to sense the world around them, thus they possessed far stronger senses than an ordinary human. As soon as Number One Under Heaven left Blue Wind Imperial City, regardless whether it was the size or distribution of the Divine Phoenix Army marching from the east, he already had a clear image inside his mind.

The Divine Phoenix Army was marching from ten kilometers

away, but at the seven and a half kilometer mark, an overpowering aura surged forward at breakneck speed.

The profound strength aura of one at the sixth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm.

Number One Under Heaven frowned. He summoned a violent wind and blasted forward to meet the person.

Feng Leiming, ranked forty-first out of the fifty-six Phoenix

elders, was the supervising elder of the east army. He was commissioned to a special mission besides leading the troops to battle... which was to capture Empress Cang Yue!

The troops would soon descend upon the imperial city. He sped up in an attempt to reach the imperial city ahead of the army and capture Empress Cang Yue. With the Blue Wind Imperial City as the capital of Blue Wind Nation, even if they had ten times more soldiers to defend the city, it wouldn't have made a difference to him.

At about two and a half kilometers away from Blue Wind Imperial City, he experienced a ripple of profound energy in front of him. A tall silhouette suddenly blocked his path, and the violent gust of wind that followed suffocated him. The figure came to a halt.

The figure before him appeared youthful, and he possessed a seemingly weak aura. Feng Leiming smiled scornfully, "Within this tiny Blue Wind Nation, there can only be a pitiful few who would be versed

in the Profound Floating Technique. Looks like you must be a bigger fry. If you had encountered my troops first, it would have caused some minor inconveniences to us. Unfortunately, you met me, a Phoenix elder, first.”

Feng Leiming raised his voice and emphasized the words “Phoenix elder”, but there was no shock or fear reflected on the other party’s face as expected. Number One Under Heaven glanced at the blazing insignia on the other’s chest as he said, “It looks like you are the supervising elder. Then, once I



kill you, it will make things easier later.”

“Kill me? Haha...”

Thunderous laughter had barely erupted from Feng Leiming’s mouth when a murderous aura suddenly wrapped around his entire body as a jade-green profound energy storm exploded towards his chest.

Despite having lived for a few hundred years and exchanging

blows with countless other practitioners who cultivated wind profound energy, the strength of the incoming violent wind profound energy was something he had never experienced before.

Based on the level of profound strength, Feng Leming was weaker than Number One Under Heaven. Because he had underestimated his opponent, he was left unprepared. The assault from Number One Under Heaven was a sudden close range attack; it was virtually impossible for Feng Leiming to react and defend himself. He

hastily retreated and managed to at least recompose himself with barely sixty percent of his full strength.

Within the cacophony of the storm, Feng Leiming screamed as his entire chest was forcibly depressed by nearly three inches in a split second. His face was bloodied beyond recognition, and his body was littered with hundreds of tiny cuts.

Feng Leiming retreated with one hand clutching his chest and the other shielding his eyes. He

shrieked in pain, “You... you beast! I’m going to kill you!!”

While he was shrieking, Number One Under Heaven exploited the moment and rushed forward with roaring winds surrounding his body. Each strike he exerted stirred up a tempest with a powerful killing aura. Feng Leiming used his Phoenix flames to defend himself with all his might, but he was slowly pressured to retreat. The tempest cut open more and more wounds on his body, and he was quickly drenched in his own blood.

When juxtaposed, Feng Leiming should not have been defeated so quickly and easily since the gap between their profound strengths weren't much to begin with, not to mention that he had an added advantage with his Phoenix flames. It was the infamous arrogance of the Divine Phoenix Sect that costed him dearly.

Boom!!

A loud bang echoed out as Feng Leiming was tossed a kilometer

away by a profound energy storm. He slammed onto the ground, forcing him to cough out blood. His whole body was bloodied as if he had just climbed out from a pond of blood. He stood up with great difficulty and stared at the approaching Number One Under Heaven with clouded eyes. He could not believe that a stately Phoenix elder like himself would be defeated by a young man in such a lowly place like Blue Wind.

“This damned Blue Wind bastard...” Feng Leiming murmured in pain and fear. The

reflection within the pupil of his eyes grew larger as he sensed that death was looming over. Suddenly, his eyes turned ferocious as ten feet of scarlet flames blazed from his body... Even his hair and blood were all burning.

“I was only interested in capturing that empress and wasn’t intending to show any of my moves... But you, a Blue Wind trash... dared to hurt me...” Feng Leiming glared, expressing all his hatred and fear... as well as a vestige of glee. The intensity of flames on his body surged, almost covering

the entire sky, “All of you including that empress... burn into ashes!! This is the price to pay for offending this elder... Hahahahaha!”

The Phoenix flames, which obfuscated the sky, blasted toward the direction of Blue Wind Imperial City with a thunderous clap. This was a flame cast by a berserk Overlord whose profound energy released raging flames that burned everything with a vengeance... Furthermore, these were Phoenix flames! Should this flame land at the heart of Blue Wind Imperial City, it would



raze a large half of the city.

Number One Under Heaven frowned tightly. He quickly backed away using the wind surrounding his body. Even if he used all of his strength, it would be difficult to dissipate all of the Phoenix flames. At this point in time, the silhouette of the Divine Phoenix Army could be seen in the distance. An idea formed in his mind as he bellowed, spreading open the elvish wings hidden behind him in a blink of an eye. A heaven-shrouding typhoon swiftly formed, shifting the clouds in the sky, violently lifting the

ground within a several-kilometer radius...

With a loud roar, the apocalyptic typhoon raged towards the wall of flames.

The collision of wind and flame did not cause any explosion of profound energy, but instead an integration. Under the battering storm, the originally complete Phoenix flames were shredded into countless smaller pieces. The speed with which it was traversing towards Blue Wind Imperial City decreased, stopped

and reversed. With the momentum of the typhoon, it gradually accelerated towards the east...

Feng Leiming's eyes bulged as he roared in despair. But louder than his roar was the thundering of the Divine Phoenix Army behind him.

The shredded Phoenix flames were ruthlessly hurtled towards the Divine Phoenix Army as if they were falling meteors. The Divine Phoenix Army, which had desperately marched day and

night, barely saw the outline of Blue Wind Imperial City before encountering this massive firestorm... In mere seconds, the vast Divine Phoenix Army was torn apart and decimated.

This was not any ordinary profound flame; it originated from the supervising elder's Phoenix flames. Once there was contact, even if it was a tiny flame, it would quickly incinerate everything on its path; it was beyond the soldiers' means to extinguish the flames.

The Phoenix flames unleashed by Feng Leiming was already very powerful by itself, but coupled with Number One Under Heaven's typhoon which shredded the flame, the flames rained down over an extensive area, covering almost the entire Divine Phoenix Army. In just a short span of time, almost seventy percent of the Divine Phoenix Army was burned alive. Those fortunate enough to not come into contact with the flames did not dare to advance a single step further. They screamed in fear and withdrew, completely terrified of the flames.

“You... You...” Bearing witness to the downfall of his army, Feng Leiming trembled as he pointed his finger at Number One Under Heaven. Suddenly, he coughed out a mouthful of blood and his eyes rolled backwards; in the next moment, he eventually collapsed.

Number One Under Heaven flipped over his palm and three emerald green profound arrows shot from his fingertips. The first drove into Feng Leiming’s throat, and the other two into his heart... Only until Feng Leiming ceased breathing did Number One Under Heaven

passively turned his gaze away.

“Bring along your companions’ bodies before you leave.” Number One Under Heaven said softly. He waved his arm, summoning a gust of strong wind which lifted Feng Leiming’s and numerous other soldiers’ corpses, throwing them several kilometers to the east. The bodies crushed the remaining Divine Phoenix soldiers who were attempting to flee.

Throughout the whole process,

Number One Under Heaven did not notice that he was secretly being watched by someone hidden from afar.

“Transparent wings...” the shadowy figure was shocked as he softly exclaimed, seemingly racking his brain. Just then, a fierce aura seeped in from the west. The figure was startled and quickly drew in all his aura. He held his breath and even closed his eyes... From his body, forget about his aura, not even a hint of his life force leaked out.



“As expected of you, Brother Xia, it looks like you’ve finished with the Divine Phoenix Army in the west.” Number One Under Heaven smiled as he turned towards the approaching Xia Yuanba.

“Heh, Brother Under Heaven is fast too... There’s a huge fire over there. Oh? Looks like there are quite a few escaping, let me go settle them!”

“No need. “ Number One Under Heaven stretched a hand out to stop Xia Yuanba from giving

chase. He shook his head and said, "They are merely soldiers acting upon orders. They are not aggressive and will pose no threat to us, so there is no need to kill all of them."

"Alright." Xia Yuanba agreed immediately, before he casually added, "But if it was my brother-in-law, he would have annihilated them. In the past, when I was much weaker, my brother-in-law said that the most foolish thing to do in this world was to show mercy to your enemy... But that was when I was still immature and did not understand things."

“Heh, that sounds like him indeed. But it doesn’t matter if you kill them all or show them mercy. It’s just a matter of principle, and there is no right or wrong.” Number One Under Heaven said with a laugh. “Those flames over there were released by the supervising elder, and I pushed it to the army. Otherwise, based on my ability, I would have been unable to eliminate such a huge army so quickly. Brother Xia, was there a supervising elder at your side?”

“This... I don’t know. I just

casually did a few moves and then there was no one left. I thought the corpses might be unsightly, so I buried them all... so I wouldn't have been able to spot any elder." Xia Yuanba said, blinking.

"..." Number One Under Heaven was slightly surprised and laughed, "Hahahaha, based on Brother Xia's capability, it was an inevitable outcome. It'll be dawn soon, so let's go back. The Divine Phoenix Army shouldn't be attempting another invasion in the near future. We shall wait patiently in the city for Brother Yun's good news."

“Of course! With brother-in-law’s amazing ability, he will only bring us good news!” Xia Yuanba said confidently.

As the two of them turned to return to Blue Wind Imperial City, Xia Yuanba suddenly paused his steps and gazed towards the south. Aside from the random distribution of rocks, the south was empty as far as the eye could see.

“What’s wrong?” Number One Under Heaven cautiously asked.

“Oh, it’s nothing.” Xia Yuanba turned back as he said, “It might have been a small, frightened creature that hid under the rocks. Let’s hurry back. Brother-in-law specifically told us not to leave Senior Sister too far away from us.”

As the sky brightened, Xia Yuanba and Number One Under Heaven flew back to Blue Wind Imperial City. After some time, a skinny figure dressed completely in black emerged and collapsed from the huge rock which caught Xia Yuanba’s attention.

The figure fiercely breathed in a couple of deep breaths. After a long rest, it stood up, and like a ghost, it swiftly and quietly left.

# Chapter 705 – Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation?

---

To the south of Divine Phoenix City, Yun Che was meditating in a cave located in some remote mountain. Both his eyes were closed shut as all the profound energy in his body faintly vibrated. A hazy small pagoda slowly rotated above his head while letting out intermittent flashes of dull golden light.

When he opened his eyes, the sky had already grown bright.



Yun Che stood up, feeling completely clear-headed and invigorated; the profound energy within his profound veins were extremely abundant as well. Now that the Great Way of the Buddha had reached this stage, he did not need to sleep anymore. Whenever he concentrated on cultivating the Great Way of the Buddha, spending a few minutes in absorbing the nourishment provided by the energy of heaven and earth would be equivalent to several hours of sleep for a normal profound practitioner.

Or perhaps one could put it this way instead, he no longer needed to intentionally cultivate the Great Way of Buddha, for even normal sleep counted as cultivation for him.

“To think that this night went by so peacefully, it looks like the Divine Phoenix Sect has already given up on trying to find me?” Yun Che muttered to himself as he looked in the direction of Divine Phoenix City, “So that is to say that... those old freaks who are in the Sovereign Profound Realm have finally decided to make an appearance.”

“Do not underestimate the Divine Phoenix Sect just because you have gained the upperhand in the past few exchanges.” Jasmine warned him in a cold voice, “I have already sensed the aura of someone who is in the late stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm... and there is more than one of them!”

“Don’t worry, if I was the kind of person who routinely underestimated his enemies, I would have already died a thousand times over.”

“Hmph, haven’t you ‘died’ enough times already!?”

“ ... ”

“Are you still going to try to infiltrate the city today?”  
Jasmine asked.

“There’s no need.” Yun Che floated into the air, before taking off in the direction of the Divine Phoenix Sect, “When it comes to things like surprises,

once is enough. If you do it again, it loses its flavor.”

At this moment, an extremely cold and sinister smile lit up on Yun Che's face, “I have already given several chances to the Divine Phoenix Sect. The benevolence I have shown them the past two days could be counted as me repaying the favor to Xue'er... from today onwards, I will let them understand... what a true nightmare is!”

Yun Che was flying at such an

extreme speed that he left a howling gale blustering in his wake. Soon, the silhouette of Divine Phoenix City quickly grew clearer and clearer. What he planned to do today was going to be the same as yesterday. Bright and early in the morning, he would directly go knock on the doors of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

Yun Che approached boldly as he swept across the skies above Divine Phoenix City and rushed towards Phoenix City itself. As Yun Che was using Extreme Mirage Lightning ability, all the people in the area could only

hear an incomparably sharp cry above their heads, and when they raised their heads to look for the origin of the noise, they could only barely make out a black dot that was swiftly disappearing from their vision.

When Yun Che had slowed down, Divine Phoenix City was already right in front of him.

“Divine Phoenix City sure is peaceful today. It seems that all the Divine Phoenix disciples who were looking for me have ceased all their activities and

have been ordered to return. It looks like today, I will be going up against several old freaks who are in the Sovereign Profound Realm.” Even though he said this, Yun Che’s face didn’t show any hint of concern. Although he might be incapable of defeating the Monarchs of the Divine Phoenix Sect, given his extreme speed, only the Little Demon Empress could catch up to him under the blue sky. Even if the Rulers of the Four Sacred Grounds were to try, they would not find it an easy task to catch up to him.

And for the time being, the



Divine Phoenix Sect had not produced an individual that was as strong as a Ruler of one of the Sacred Grounds.

“Looks like you’re going to be disappointed. The aura of those dozen-odd Monarchs are still at their original location.” Jasmine said blandly.

“Ah?” Yun Che had an astonished look on his face, “That shouldn’t be the case. I killed two of their princes, but they did not even manage to put a scratch on me. And today, they

even directly called off their search. Even if that Feng Hengkong was a teenage mutant ninja turtle, he shouldn't be unwilling to call those old monsters out of seclusion. Could it be that... he has prepared some other scheme?"

“There is a very well hidden profound formation that is centered within a one kilometer radius around the heart of Phoenix City.” Jasmine had discovered this hidden profound formation which required sixteen hours and the effort of nearly all the Divine Phoenix elders to set up with a glance,

and her tone even clearly carried a note of disdain, "This profound formation should have been specially prepared for you, and the aura of the profound formation is very similar to the sealing profound formation that was used on Princess Snow in the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago."

"Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation?" Yun Che said as his brows sank. Three years ago, Feng Feilie had hit Feng Xue'er with the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, and even though his bloodline and profound strength

was inferior to her, all the profound energy in her body had still been sealed for twenty-four hours; it was clear just how tyrannical this profound formation was.

“No wonder they did not ask those old monsters to come out of seclusion. They have actually prepared such a large present for me.” Yun Che gave a cold laugh, “Such a gigantic Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation... they are really willing to go all out. But it looks like I have to be a little bit more careful now....”

“Careful? Hmph, this is simply laughable!” Jasmine said with a contemptuous little laugh, “Your profound veins have been cast by the indestructible blood of the Evil God; they are the Evil God’s Profound Veins! In this world, unless it’s power that is on the same level as the gods, then there is simply no power capable of sealing or suppressing your profound veins! This pitiful Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation is only a mere joke in front of the Evil God’s Profound Veins.”

“...Oh, so it’s like that, huh.” Yun Che said with wide open

eyes before he subtly nodded his head and murmured in a hushed voice, “Yeah, I recall that it was something like this...”

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region’s “Heaven’s Might Soul Suppressing Formation,” which could even forcibly suppress the power of his grandfather, Yun Canghai, who was in the late stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm, did not even have any effect on him who was only at the Earth Profound Realm at that time. So no matter how powerful this Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was, it could not possibly be stronger

than the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation, right?

Yun Che had all his fears put to rest and with a flicker, he had already rushed into Phoenix City.

“What? All of our forces were obliterated?”

The news that came from Blue Wind Nation sent Feng Hengkong into a complete rage. Because of Yun Che, his mood was already as low as it could

get, but just as day broke, he received yet another piece of completely unexpected and calamitous news.

“This isn’t possible!” Feng Hengkong said gravely, “Yun Che is clearly in our Divine Phoenix Empire right now! With Yun Che gone, how can a mere Blue Wind Nation withstand the might of our Divine Phoenix Army!? Just what is going on!? Could it be that Yun Che actually made his way back to the Blue Wind Imperial City in the span of a single night!!”



“The Western Army and the Eastern Army each had two hundred thousand troops, and they rushed towards Blue Wind Imperial City through the night so they roughly arrived at their destination sometime this morning. After Western Army had sent news that they were approaching Blue Wind Imperial City, there was no further news from them, even from the supervising elder who was with them. It was exactly the same as the Middle Army who had disappeared before! The elder supervising the Eastern Army, Feng Leiming, also fought with someone, and he met a crushing defeat. In his despair, Feng Leiming most likely ignited all

of the profound energy in his body in a bid to incinerate Blue Wind Imperial City but it was rebounded back on our army by his opponent's exceedingly strong wind profound energy, causing the Eastern Army to suffer terrible casualties and in the end, only forty thousand troops were able to get out of that bloodbath alive." Feng Feiran said solemnly.

"Wind profound energy? Could it be that there is another powerhouse besides Yun Che in Blue Wind Nation who exceeds our Divine Phoenix Elders?" Feng Hengkong's face grew

darker and darker by the second. Yun Che had never used wind profound energy before, so this person was naturally not Yun Che... but an elder of his Divine Phoenix Sect was an invincible existence who could do as they pleased within the Profound Sky Seven Nations. For Blue Wind Nation to produce one Yun Che was already shocking enough, and this had even sent shockwaves throughout the entire Profound Sky Continent, so how could there be someone else like him!?

“That person is indeed not Yun Che. As for his identity, I will

dispatch people to swiftly investigate it for us. It's just that the Middle Army has completely fallen, and the Western and Eastern Army have also suffered heavy casualties, so the morale of the troops garrisoned in the Blue Wind Nation has severely plummeted.... Ah." Feng Feiran let out a long sigh after speaking.

"That doesn't really matter anymore." The Crown Prince Feng Ximing spoke of words that would cause any outsider to have serious misgivings over the whole affair, "In any case, we have practically already gotten

what we wanted to obtain, so even if we pull out our troops now....”

“But Yun Che must definitely die!” Feng Hengkong said in a voice filled with hatred.

At that very moment, a nightmarish voice that came from the outside swiftly followed Feng Hengkong’s furious outburst, “All you old dogs of the Divine Phoenix Sect, your granddaddy Yun Che has come to pay you a visit, so what are you waiting for!? Hurry up

and welcome me!!”

“Yun... Che!” The rage-filled Feng Hengkong immediately located where the source of the voice came from; all the hair on his head nearly instantly stood on end, and the phoenix mark on his forehead appeared as it began to burn violently. This time, Yun Che’s voice had not come from the middle of Phoenix City, but he was at its gates. This clearly showed that he could not be bothered to silently infiltrate the city the way he did yesterday. Instead, he brazenly swaggered up to the city gates and even announced

his arrival with a shout, as if he was scared that the Divine Phoenix Sect would not discover his presence.

This was clearly and undoubtedly the naked contempt that Yun Che had for the Divine Phoenix Sect!!

We... will definitely personally rip him to pieces this very day!!” Feng Hengkong had already said those words far too many times, and every time he uttered them, his hatred for Yun Che would grow by leaps and bounds. Just

as he was about to rush out, Feng Feiran swiftly held out a hand to restrain him, "Sect Master, please keep your cool for the moment. We have completely relaxed our guard and recalled all the disciples back from their search efforts. We did all of this in order to tempt him to infiltrate our city in the same manner he did yesterday, so we could trap him in the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation. But it seems like our plan has come to naught as his voice is clearly coming from the city gates.... And no matter whether the profound technique he is using is Extreme Mirage Lightning or not, his speed is definitely not



something we can catch up to, so the most dependable method we can rely on to capture him is to lure him into the midst of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation.”

Feng Hengkong stopped in his tracks as his gaze swept across every single person who was present before it finally fell on Ninth Prince Feng Xilin, “Xi’er, among all of our sons, besides Feng Ximing, you are the one who is the steadiest and also the one who has the most leadership qualities. If we were to hand over this heavy duty to you, would you dare to take it?”

Feng Xilin strode forward and said without a hint of hesitation, "This son will definitely not disappoint our Royal Father."

"Good!" Feng Hengkong heavily nodded his head and said, "With just these words of yours alone, you have already fully lived up to our expectations. Do not worry, Xichen and Xiluo have already suffered at the vicious hands of Yun Che, so we will definitely not allow anymore of you to meet the same end. The Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment

Formation was constructed using the strength of thirty-six of our elders; so even your grandfather would have a hard time resisting it if he was ensnared by it. If you can lure Yun Che can be lured inside of it, even if he has the ability to traverse the heavens... he can still forget about escaping again!!”

Boom!!!

Feng Hengkong shot into the air with a furious conflagration trailing behind him; several

thick roofs of the main hall instantly crumbled in his wake. Yun Che floated in the air directly above the gates of Phoenix City; both his arms were crossed over his chest, and his face was still calm and disdainful. The expression on his face was the one that made all the Divine Phoenix disciples enter a frenzy, inducing their desire to directly rip that smirk off his face. All of the Divine Phoenix Elders took action at the same time as well, but they did not surround him like they did yesterday, instead they scattered across the air above Phoenix City while they locked onto him using their eyes and their auras.

Behind each wave of elders was a prince that they were protecting. It was clear that after two princes had died one after the other at the hands of Yun Che, the Divine Phoenix Sect had now become exceedingly cautious. Every prince had several elders by his side protecting him, as their only fear was that Yun Che would once again move against one of the princes. They had even thought of hiding all the princes in another location, but the safest and most secure place in the entire Divine Phoenix Empire also happened to be this Phoenix City....

Compared to the past two days, when Yun Che once again appeared today, all the Divine Phoenix Sect members, from the elders to the lowliest disciples, felt a deep spike of fear and apprehension lodged in their guts. When he had arrived on the first day, the only thought that flitted through their minds was that he was seeking his own death. But within the span of two days, he had been able to kill two princes of the Divine Phoenix Sect consecutively despite nearly all the elders being present. Not only did he not lose his life in the process, he had hardly even received a

single scratch.

This was the first time someone had trampled upon the dignity and might of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

When he saw Feng Hengkong arrive, Yun Che's gaze immediately turned towards him, "Feng Hengkong, it is a beautiful day once again, and we have also met once more. So why don't you take a guess as to whether you will be losing another one of your sons today?"

This kind of greeting would cause even a normal person to instantly go up in flames, much less the Divine Phoenix Sect Master. Feng Hengkong gritted his teeth so hard that they bled. Only when he had forcibly suppressed the urge to recklessly rush towards Yun Che so that he could rip him to pieces that he spoke to him in an extremely low voice, “Yun Che... you killed two of our sons... and as for this debt of vengeance and hatred that we owe you, we will definitely make you pay ten thousand, no, one hundred thousand times for it!!!”



“Hehe.” Yun Che gave a bland and cold smile, “Whether you even have the ability to avenge your sons’ deaths is something that I do not know. But the debt of vengeance and hatred that your Divine Phoenix Sect owes my Blue Wind Nation for killing my royal father and trampling all over our citizens is something that I will make you pay off with the blood of every single one of the princes of your Divine Phoenix Sect!”

# Chapter 706 – Atrocious Performance

---

“However, I, Yun Che, am not a person who revels in killing other people. At least not to the point where I would be a human-faced beast like you, Divine Phoenix Sect Master, not to the point where I would be willing to harm the thousands of people in my Blue Wind Nation in order to fulfill my own selfish desires! I came from many miles away to your Divine Phoenix Empire just so that I could take back something that is owed to my Blue Wind Nation. As long as all of you sincerely and honestly

agree to implement all of the conditions that I had proposed, I would not even be bothered to take a step into your Divine Phoenix Sect. So if you still refuse to repent until you see a coffin...”

Yun Che’s mouth curled up into a cold smile filled with killing intent. “I will not be able to guarantee which son of yours will die today!”

Every single one of the four conditions proposed by Yun Che yesterday was designed to

humiliate the Divine Phoenix Sect and cause the dignity of the nation to hit rock bottom. And let us not talk about Feng Hengkong agreeing to it because just even thinking about it caused him to nearly go into rage-induced frenzy. This added to the bone-piercing hatred he had for Yun Che because he had killed two of his sons, resulted in Feng Hengkong being unable to maintain his cool when he faced Yun Che now even if he used all his willpower to do so.

Moreover, in the past two days, a prince had been taken captive by Yun Che each day. But today,

he had come alone, without any captives while all the elders, pavilion lords, hall masters, protectorates, and high-level disciples had moved at first notice, and everyone was on their highest guard—Today's situation was completely different to how it was for the previous two days; how could they let Yun Che do whatever he wanted yet again?

Feng Hengkong's eyes burned with the fire of hatred and he yelled in a low voice, "Feilie, Feiran... regardless of the cost, use all your power to capture him!!"

The instant Feng Hengkong's voice fell, both Feng Feilie and Feng Feiran, who were behind him, shot into the air as they zoomed in on where Yun Che was. As the new great elder and second elder of the Divine Phoenix Sect, they had the greatest profound strength among all the current elders of the Divine Phoenix Sect, and they were both at the peak of the Tyrant Profound Realm. If they had met with enough fortunate circumstances, it was possible that they would step into the Sovereign Profound Realm within the next century or so.

“Yun Che, you brat! Prepare to die!!”

The instant the both of them shot into the sky, all the profound energy in their bodies exploded outwards without reserve. The Phoenix flame that filled the air as a result bathed more than half of the Divine Phoenix Sect in a crimson red light, and their speed had also reached the very limits of what they were capable of. Their profound energy and mental energy had doggedly locked onto Yun Che.

But what they were unaware of was that even though Yun Che's profound strength was only in the Emperor Profound Realm, the suppressive aura of the Tyrant Profound Realm did not work on him at all. So the moment Feng Feilie and Feng Feiran took to the air, Yun Che also made his move...

The instant right before this, he was still crossing his arms over his chest with a cold smile playing on his face while no profound energy rippled across his body



But the very next instant, without seeing him make any moves at all, his whole body suddenly become illusory as another figure immediately appeared a dozen or so meters away...

His movement was so fast that it practically seemed like teleportation/it was practically teleportation!!

This kind of speed even exceeded the limits of what a practitioner of the Tyrant

Profound Realm could capture with his eyes. In addition, before the yells of the onrushing Feng Feiran and Feng Feilie had receded, the scene blurred before their very eyes. They completely lost the target that was previously in their sights, and even the aura lock that they had targeted Yun Che with had been completely shaken off.

As the strongest among all the elders within the Divine Phoenix Sect, both of them had been through many battles, yet at this moment, they both had identical blank stares on their faces. When they had locked onto Yun

Che's location once again, he was already more than one hundred and fifty meters away from where he used to be. Furthermore, before the two of them fell into shock because of that lightning speed, their expressions abruptly changed as they roared anxiously, "Protect the Eleventh Prince!!"

The direction Yun Che was heading in was where the Eleventh Prince, Feng Ximin, was located. The six Divine Phoenix elders in front of him formed a tight barrier, and behind them, there were still many hall masters and the

hundreds of disciples who were under the tutelage of these six elders.

Yun Che was so fast that his speed was nearly unfathomable, and the people who were in other locations were not fast enough to rush over and provide support. The six elders, who were put on the highest alert the moment Yun Che suddenly started rushing in their direction, simultaneously took action with flawless teamwork even before he drew near. They attacked him from six different angles as they tried to ensure that he could not even advance

an inch towards them.

As Yun Che approached with lightning speed, he hardly slowed down in the face of the six elders' attacks. The moment he was within fifteen meters of them, five afterimages immediately appeared, causing the six elders to instantly lose track of their target. Regardless of their stance, an instance of stagnation and disorder appeared in their attack patterns.

Boom!!

Phoenix flames blew apart and covered the entire sky with scattered flames. Amidst the firelight, Yun Che's afterimages disappeared simultaneously and a scream of terror rang out from behind the six elders.

“Aaaaaaahhhhhh!!”

The six elders turned around at lightning speed, their eyeballs protruding and their entire bodies shaking. The greatest expression of alarm and incredulity they ever had in

their lives appeared on their faces...

“Eleve... Eleventh Prince!!”

“This... this isn’t possible! Just when did he... how... how is this possible!?”

Eleventh Prince Feng Ximin, whom they had securely protected, had, at this very moment, fallen into the hands of the enemy. His actions, state... and even the look on his face was exactly the same as Feng

Xichen's yesterday. And the person who stood at his side was Yun Che himself.

The moment Yun Che had rushed in his direction, Feng Ximin immediately grew ashen-faced, and he anxiously circulated all the profound energy in his body. But his profound strength, which was only at the fourth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, amounted to nothing in the face of Yun Che's might. Not only that, but given Yun Che's lightning speed, he was not even given the opportunity to release it as Yun Che's blow smashed



against his dantian and instantly suppressed his profound energy, causing him to become completely helpless and weak; he did not even have the strength to stand straight anymore.

All the six Divine Phoenix elders, who were in the mid to late stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm, were unable to see or feel how Yun Che had suddenly appeared behind them. The six of them had banded together to protect the Eleventh Prince, but in one instant, the other party had... in just a single instant, captured the Eleventh

Prince; the six of them had combined all their power to attack Yun Che, but they had not even singed the corner of his robe.

“Eleventh Prince!!”

“Min’er!!”

The exact same scene, the exact same circumstances, and the exact same nightmare played itself out for the third time before the eyes of the entire Divine Phoenix Sect.

The first time it happened they could console themselves by telling themselves they had been caught unaware by Yun Che's sudden and explosive speed. The second time they could console themselves by saying that it was all down to Yun Che's insidiousness and ingenuity as he used a special method to avoid all detection while he infiltrated deep into the sect in order to take Feng Xichen captive.

But this time, Yun Che had made a brazen appearance, and

not only had he not launched a surprise attack on the Divine Phoenix Sect, he had even loudly announced his presence to everybody. After that, he was basically surrounded by all the people within the Divine Phoenix Sect while they had also made every preparation possible and taken every precaution, giving the various princes the highest degree of protection that could be afforded...

Yet, Yun Che had in the span of three breaths of time... just merely three breaths of time, easily capture his third prince!!

Every single hair on Feng Hengkong's body trembled, and the spirits of every single Divine Phoenix elders and disciples had been severely shaken. Their present mood at the time was unable to be described with any words.

They were the Divine Phoenix Sect, an existence that was second only to the Four Sacred Grounds, the strongest of the Profound Sky Seven Nations, and the only power within the Profound Sky Continent that possessed the bloodline of a

Divine Spirit. They had the ability to cover the sky with one hand, had accrued five thousand years of glory and fame, and not a single person within the Profound Sky Seven Nations dared to disobey them...

But today, all the glory and might that they had was turned into a complete and utter joke by a young man of only twenty-two, a young man who had come from the lowliest Blue Wind Nation.

At this time, the Blue Wind

Nation had already given birth to three Monarch-level powerhouses. The first was Yun Che, and the other two were Xia Yuanba and Fen Juechen. Given their current strength, Yun Che was weaker than both Fen Juechen and Xia Yuanba. But if either Fen Juechen or Xia Yuanba had come to confront the Divine Phoenix Sect, neither of them would have caused the sect to become so dejected and depressed. It was even possible that the both of them would have been heavily wounded or even lose their lives when the Divine Phoenix Sect began to box them in.

The difference between them and Yun Che was that Yun Che had the Extreme Mirage Lightning and the Star God's Broken Shadow techniques to protect him, and the agility and speed afforded to him by combining both techniques was something that even Xia Yuanba and Fen Juechen put together were not able to compare with. At this point, he had not yet directly faced off with a single Divine Phoenix Elder in battle, but he had already caused the Divine Phoenix Sect to plunge into a crisis while causing Feng Hengkong to collapse multiple times.



Only speed could not be broken, and no matter what plane one was on, it was an unalterable truth.

“Yun... Che...” Feng Hengkong’s voice was trembling, and his whole body was shaking so vigorously it was as if he was caught in a bone-piercingly cold wind. The hatred in his heart had practically caused his entire body to ignite. He mumbled that name as if he wanted to grind it to bits with his own teeth.

The Divine Phoenix elders had once again formed a circle around Yun Che, but they kept looking at each other as they shot glances at Feng Hengkong, their twisted faces filled with helplessness. Facing Yun Che, who held the life of the Eleventh Prince in his hands, they did not even dare utter a single threat.

“Royal father... Master... save me... save me!!”

Just like Feng Xichen yesterday, Feng Ximin’s face was as white as a sheet as he yelled in despair.

The Divine Phoenix princes, who were accustomed to a life of luxury and receiving the admiration and respect of all those around them, were far more cowardly in the face of death compared to the average person.

The great elder Feng Feiran stepped forward as he strove to stay completely calm. “Yun Che, you...”

As he had just opened his mouth, a voice that was like thunder pealed through the air,

“Yun Che! You son of a bitch, let go of my Eleventh Brother!!”

The miserable deaths of two princes was sufficient to let the Divine Phoenix Sect clearly see just what kind of temperament Yun Che had. So this angry curse that had come out of nowhere did not ease their frustration in the slightest; on the contrary, all of their hearts started racing faster out of shock, and they all turned towards the west... This furious curse had come from the center of Phoenix City, and the one who had yelled was shockingly the Ninth Prince, Feng Xilin, who stood there by

himself.

The moment Yun Che had come, all the attention had been solely focused on him, so no one really noticed where Feng Xilin had disappeared to. So his sudden and furious rebuke had given all the gathered elders a huge shock, and the nearest Divine Phoenix Elder swiftly said in a serious voice, “Ninth Prince, do not agitate him! He is a madman who is capable of doing anything!”

The scenario that they were

most afraid of had come to pass, and as Feng Xilin's yell began to recede, Yun Che's gaze shot past everyone to land squarely on Feng Xilin's body. Everyone present could instantly feel a bone-chilling and heart-piercing murderous intent fill the air.

“In this world, there were many people who dared to insult me in such a manner, but no matter who they were, in the end, the one common point that they had...” Yun Che said in a merry/cheerful voice, “was that they all died miserable deaths, and those who didn't die suffered fates even worse than

death.”

Yun Che's mental strength was so many times stronger than Feng Xilin's that it did not even merit a comparison, so how could a mere Feng Xilin endure his gaze. Under Yun Che's cold gaze, his body froze up completely and his back instantly became drenched with cold sweat while his eyes even grew dazed for a moment. But he fiercely fought back against the shock and the instinctive fear that he felt spreading through his body, and once he was able to force himself to look calm, he roared, "Is this prince

wrong in scolding you!? Not only are you a bastard who has muddied the glorious bloodline of our Divine Phoenix, you are also a vile villain who only knows how to launch surprise attacks and run away! Besides launching surprise attacks and running away, you basically have nothing else of merit, so to think that you would still have the gall to be so arrogant in front of our Divine Phoenix Sect!”

“Ninth Prince, do not anger him!!” the previous elder desperately exclaimed once more in an anxious voice.



“Oh?” Yun Che looked at him.  
“So what?”

Feng Xilin fought to keep his calm, and a cold and contemptuous smile appeared on his face. “The day before yesterday you killed my Fourteenth Brother. Yesterday, you killed my Thirteenth Brother. And today, you have once again made a move against my Eleventh Brother! Amongst all the Divine Phoenix princes, these three brothers of mine are the weakest in terms of cultivation, and they are all only

at the Emperor Profound Realm. Hahahahaha, so in the end, you really only do have the capability of dealing with those who are in the Emperor Profound Realm! So why don't you try to capture this prince instead, huh!?"

After he said this, Feng Xilin's profound energy flared up and the profound energy aura of the first stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm immediately began to swell up and spill out.

Feng Xilin's words caused all the Divine Phoenix elders and

disciples present to be greatly shocked, and very quickly, some Divine Phoenix elders noticed where exactly Feng Xilin was standing on. They immediately reacted to it, but they still strove to maintain an expression of worry and fear on their face.”

“Ninth Prince, stop wasting your words on him!” a Divine Phoenix Elder roared.

“Huh? Why would this prince be scared of him!” Feng Xiling gave a haughty cold laugh, “This bastard from Blue Wind Nation

is only at the third stage of the Emperor Profound Realm. Furthermore, the only thing he can be arrogant about is his speed. From the very beginning of this whole ridiculous affair up till now, the only thing he has done is run. He has not even had the guts to exchange blows with any of the elders who are present. But it is truly a pity that no matter how fast he is, he will only forever be a defeated dog who is chased around by his enemies. No matter how fast a defeated dog can run, there will definitely come a time when his legs break. And once his legs are broken, heh, then he will die as unsightly a death as his enemies want him to die!

Feng Xilin insolently stretched a finger out towards Yun Che as he made an extremely disdainful hooking gesture. “Yun Che, you are merely some Emperor Profound Realm trash, and even if you were ten thousand times faster than you already are, as this prince is in the Tyrant Profound Realm, you are only a pitiful dancing clown in this prince’s eyes. The only reason this prince’s three brothers fell into your hands was because they were useless pieces of trash as well. So if they die, so be it. As for this prince... heh, I want to see if you can do to me the same thing you did to my three useless

royal brothers. Do you believe that as long as you come within ten meters of this prince, this prince will have tens of methods to rip you to bits and pieces!

“However, this prince understands that you will not dare to do so. Because for a defeated dog that only knows how to run, even if you give him ten thousand times the courage that he has right now, he will never ever dare to make a move against this prince! Hahahahahaha!”

Hehehe... Feng Xilin was laughing wildly while Yun Che was chuckling coldly. Ever since he had arrived, he had been silently mulling over what trick the Divine Phoenix Sect would pull to induce him to venture into the radius of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation.

However Feng Xilin's botched attempt at psychological warfare made him feel as if they were trying to insult his own intelligence!!

# Chapter 707 – Beliefs Collapsed

---

“Since you are so eager to die, I shall grant your wish.” Yun Che had almost burst into laughter due to excessive anger. If he did not know about the existence of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation beforehand, it was possible that he would actually enter the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation’s domain by accident. However, with Feng Xiling making such a ruckus, even if he was half as intelligent, he would become suspicious immediately and would absolutely not go near



there... unless his brain had been kicked by a donkey.

As for now, he obviously needed to lower his intelligence to match this level of performance.

Yun Che's body shook, and he had already rushed towards where Feng Xilin was. Even though he was still holding onto Feng Ximin, his speed was still extremely fast. His silhouette produced a shadow-like a shooting star across Phoenix City.

“Protect Ninth Prince!!”

All of the Phoenix Elders hastily rushed forward in a bid to obstruct Yun Che... Of course, this was only for show. After they understood Feng Xilin's intention, they couldn't wait for Yun Che to immediately rush over. Seeing Yun Che was heading into their trap, all of them were delighted in their hearts, and their speed of rushing over was naturally half a beat slower.

Yun Che was already extremely fast, and his speed was still increasing. He passed the crowd of people like lightning, leaving behind all of the Phoenix Elders who were pretending to rush up behind him...

Sssss!

Yun Che's abrupt halt from an extremely fast speed caused the air to produce a very sharp tearing sound. Feng Xilin quickly backed away as his whole body shuddered multiple times over and over... With a

person in hand, Yun Che, who was a few miles away just a moment ago, was actually just ten steps away from him in the blink of an eye. Feng Xilin had never seen this kind of shocking speed even in his dreams.

The shock and fear in his heart was tantamount to suddenly seeing a ghost land from the sky in broad daylight.

But within the fear, there was endless joy, because the location of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was

just hidden right below. In addition, the place where Yun Che stood was the core of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation.

Feng Hengkong and the others watched Yun Che enter the domain of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, and all of them were overjoyed. Feng Hengkong roared loudly, “Activate the formation!!”

To awaken the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, only the strength of a single Phoenix

elder was required. But under Feng Hengkong's loud roar, more than thirty Phoenix elders who were present casted at the same time. At that moment, the slumbering Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was wholly released in an instant. A scarlet profound formation with an area of three hundred meters appeared, and the area below Yun Che's feet was exactly its center. It released a bloody blaze of light, and within it, an extremely powerful sealing power rushed towards Yun Che and Feng Xilin who were inside the formation, ready to swallow them like a hungry wolf that had just been woken up.

A feeling of suppression suddenly came from Yun Che's profound veins... but this feeling only lasted for a second, before it disappeared without a trace. Across him, Feng Xilin showed a pained expression on his face; the color of blood on his face faded, and the aura of profound energy on his body disappeared like the falling tide. But not only did he not lose his head in panic, he had even reverted expression from before as he released a loud laughter, "Hahahaha... Yun Che! Even if you have an exceptional ability, you are still in this prince's hands! This is the strongest sealing formation of

my Divine Phoenix Sect. Not to mention that you are merely in the Emperor Profound Realm, even if you are a Monarch... you can only await for your death!”

Laughing maniacally, Feng Xilin’s body swayed, and he fell on one knee because of the serious loss of strength. However, the maniacal laughter he was letting out didn’t fade in the slightest.

“Lin’er, good work!!” Feng Hengkong vented his frustrations through his



empathic shout, even causing the ground to slightly tremble. For two whole days, his extreme anger, hatred, humiliation, and grievances almost shattered his internal organs. Now seeing the culprit of everything being engulfed by the sealing power of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, his satisfaction was so deep that it could not be described with words.

“Yun Che, I’ll see where you can still run to this time!” Feng Ximing harshly roared as he also quickly approached.

“Sect Master, wait till I capture him before you... this bastard will be personally punished by Sect Master to comfort the souls of Thirteenth and Fourteenth Prince in heaven!!”

Eighteenth Elder Feng Yunzhi was the closest to Yun Che, and he had already released his profound energy as he pounced towards Yun Che like a big bird. He was also one of the casters of this giant Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, and because of that, he could control the power of the formation to a

large degree. Due to that, the sealing power of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation wouldn't work on him.

At this moment, Yun Che was still quietly standing there. There didn't seem to be much difference, but the people of the Divine Phoenix Sect now viewed him as a lamb to the slaughter . Because that was the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation! It was passed down by Divine Phoenix Sect for thousands of years and was an extremely powerful sealing profound formation! Once

disciples of Divine Phoenix Sect were trapped in the formation, their profound energy would be sealed for sure, and there was absolutely no exception... Even Princess Snow who possessed the power of the Phoenix God couldn't escape this.

Even though it wouldn't be as effective on the profound practitioners outside of the Divine Phoenix Sect, it would still cause an extremely strong sealing effect... At least, it would be a lot stronger than those regular sealing profound formations.

Furthermore, below Yun Che's feet was not just any Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation; it was a formation casted by more than thirty Phoenix Elders. The sealing power was so forceful that it could perhaps even seal a mid-stage Monarch... In terms of power alone, it wouldn't be too different than the Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.

“Yun Che... Accept your death!”  
Feng Yunzhi roared in a deep

voice.

Pfft... Yun Che loosened his fingers, making Feng Ximin, who was held in his hand, fall to the ground. Originally, his profound energy was already suppressed severely by Yun Che, and in addition to the effect of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, he laid on the ground, motionless, only capable of releasing feeble moans from his mouth.

“Hahahaha, not just profound strength, you can also forget

about using your physical strength.” Looking at Yun Che who has completely “lost his strength”, Feng Yunzhi laughed loudly, “A devilspawn like you destroyed my sect’s Phoenix God Sculpture and killed two of our Divine Phoenix Princes, so even if you die ten thousand times, you wouldn’t be able to make up for your sins! Now that you are in our hands... even if you died, you shall always remember the consequences of violating our Divine Phoenix Sect and killing our Divine Phoenix Princes!!”

“Eighteenth Elder, don’t kill him! That would be being too

lenient on him,” Feng Xilin yelled excitedly.

“Of course We must make his life a living hell!” While roaring in anger, Feng Yunzhi’s right hand grabbed directly towards Yun Che’s throat.

Just when his palm was not even ten meters away from Yun Che, the Yun Che who was in his sight slowly turned around and revealed a soft smile towards him.



At that moment, Feng Yunzhi's whole body turned cold as a ghastly feeling came down from his spine and spread to his whole body... In the next moment, he seemed to have seen Yun Che's silhouette move a little...

**BOOM!!!!**

Without any warning, Feng Yunzhi felt like his chest was hit by a ten thousand ton giant hammer that came down from the sky. In his ears, a loud booming sound comparable to a

landslide or even thunder came from inside his body... his originally dilated pupils could still see Yun Che's soft smile, but it was somehow very close to him already.

Yun Che slowly pulled back his right fist from Feng Yunzhi's chest, before he casually shook his wrist. When his fist landed onto Feng Yunzhi's chest, the sound it made was so loud that it could be heard by nearly half of Divine Phoenix City. It could be easily imagined just how frighteningly strong that blow was. Even if it were a huge boulder, it would have been sent

flying several kilometers away.

However, Feng Yunzhi had not been sent flying. He did not even retreat a single step. Even when Yun Che had pulled his arm back, Feng Yunzhi still stood there, motionless... However, the profound energy aura on his body had completely dissipated, and not even the slightest trace of profound energy could be detected.

A cool breeze blew past, and Feng Yunzhi's body started reclining. He stiffly fell

backwards as though he was a wooden pole that had been knocked down... There was no other movement, no aura, and not even any sign of blood. There was only his frighteningly pale face, his bulging eyes, and his enlarged pupils that seemed to have taken up his entire eyeball.

The originally scorching atmosphere had turned eerily cold and silent. The relieved and excited expressions that the members of the Divine Phoenix Sect initially had now remained stiffly plastered on their faces. Feng Hengkong, the various

Phoenix elders and princes who had originally come in order to deliver judgement to Yun Che, all stood dumbfounded as though they had been struck by lightning. They stared dumbly, as though they were stone statues, at an scene that should not even exist.

When Feng Yunzhi directly fell down, it was as if they had just woken up from a dream. Feng Feilie yelled in despair, “Yunzhi!!”

“Eighteenth Elder!!”

“Heh!” Yun Che swung his leg out and kicked Feng Yunzhi towards Feng Hengkong. Feng Feilie swiftly moved forward, catching Feng Yunzhi in his arms. The moment he caught Feng Yunzhi, his hands trembled as he sent his profound energy to examine the latter’s condition; after that, his whole body started trembling.

“How is Yunzhi?” Feng Hengkong swiftly approached. As he spoke, he put his palm onto Feng Yunzhi’s chest as well... After a short moment of

contact, he hastily retracted his palm. The shock that appeared on his face was far more intense than Feng Feilie's expression.

Feng Yunzhi's internal organs were all mashed, his profound veins shattered, his meridians all severed, and the bones in his whole body were all turned into dust...

The outside of his body had no apparent damage, but the inside was destroyed into paste.

And Yun Che merely punched him once on his chest.

Feng Yunzhi was currently the eighteenth ranked member within the Phoenix elders, and his profound energy was as high as the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm!! But he had actually died so thoroughly with merely a single punch from Yun Che!

“Yun Che... you... you... you!!!”  
Feng Hengkong’s previous howls, which seemed to vent his frustrations, had only left his



mouth for a few breaths of time, before he had already started to think how he should handle Yun Che in order to quell the deep hatred in his heart. However, in the blink of an eye, not only did Feng Yunzhi fail to take down Yun Che, the former had even died miserably in the hands of the latter.

Below Yun Che's feet, the profound glow of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation was still shining brightly. The glows of a near blood-colored seal was still enveloping his entire body. Feng Hengkong did not doubt that if

it was him trapped under the profound glow of the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, his Phoenix profound energy would be completely sealed, and he would not be able to use it one bit.

But Yun Che...

“Keep laughing, keep yelling, I enjoy hearing these sounds,” Yun Che’s gaze glanced around as a smile appeared on his face; he was enjoying the stunned expressions of everyone before him.

“Impossible... impossible...”  
The pupils of one of the Phoenix elders who participated in casting the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation shrunk. Unable to believe his very eyes, he mumbled in a panicked and trembling voice, “That’s the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation... it’s the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation...”

While standing inside a Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment formation created by more than thirty Phoenix elders, Yun Che

had casually killed a Phoenix Elder with one punch... What this brought to the members of the Divine Phoenix Sect wasn't anger and humiliation, but almost a collapse in belief.

Behind Yun Che, Feng Xilin's hysterical laughter came to a halt as his expression turned hideous. With his body trembling, he fell to the ground as his strength left his body. Then, Yun Che stretched both his arms out, and a wave of profound aura stirred. With frightened and miserable cries, both Feng Xilin and Feng Ximin were sucked into Yun Che's

hands at the same time. Yun Che did not even bother glancing at Feng Xilin, he just looked straight at Feng Hengkong and slowly raised up the two choked sons, "Feng Hengkong, today, I originally planned to only kill one of your sons if you're still disobedient. After all, you only have fourteen sons, and killing all of them too early will spoil my fun. However, it cannot be helped if your ninth son is so courteous and cannot wait for his turn to die. Therefore, I can only fulfill his wishes."

"Royal Father..." Feng Xilin made a weak sound. His voice

was wheezy and desperate, because he knew that Feng Xiluo and Feng Xichen died in the hands of the one grabbing him right now.

“Two noble Divine Phoenix Princes, you don’t need to be nervous, I didn’t say that I will definitely kill both of you.” Yun Che said with a sneer, “You two should be clear enough that the one deciding your life and death isn’t me, but your royal father. Feng Hengkong are you preparing to still be like before and watch them die helplessly, or will you comply obediently? No matter which one you

choose, I will satisfy you immediately.”

Feng Ximin, Feng Xilin... This time, the lives of two princes were being held in Yun Che’s hands.

Not only did the Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation, which they spent a lot of energy and time to set up, fail to affect Yun Che in the slightest, it had even delivered Feng Xilin right into his hands... and Feng Yunzhi also died horribly because of it.

Before Feng Hengkong's eyes were two of his sons that might die anytime in the hands of Yun Che; in his mind, the figures of Feng Xiluo and Feng Xichen, who had already died in the hands of Yun Che, appeared... Not even three days had passed since Yun Che had arrived, yet he had already brought forth a nightmare that was even darker than the abyss.

Feng Hengkong reached out his hands... In front of Yun Che, his royal prestige, dignity, glory, pride... were all completely



shattered. Only anger, humiliation, hatred along with deep sorrow and helplessness were left.

“Let them go... I promise... all of your conditions from yesterday.”

After saying this sentence, Feng Hengkong closed his eyes; the corners of his eyes were twitching in suffering. His decisions had already caused the horrible deaths of his two sons, and he already couldn't watch more of his sons die in Yun Che's

hands no matter what.

Feng Hengkong's words made all of the Phoenix Elders reveal an extremely aggrieved expression, but none of them spoke up to stop him... For three days, the Yun Che that they saw had become even scarier one day after another. It would be good to compensate under humiliation... keep the lives of the two princes, and immediately let this nightmare end.

“All the conditions from

yesterday?” Yun Che didn’t laugh proudly because of Feng Hengkong’s answer, instead his face showed confusion, “I don’t remember telling you the conditions in order to keep the lives of these two sons of yours yet. What do the conditions from yesterday... have to do with the ones today?”

## Chapter 708 – Drawing Closer With Every Step

---

“You... what do you mean?”

“What do I mean? Could it be that you, the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, actually don’t understand?” Yun Che gave a cold smile as he continued to speak, “I had originally come with a benevolent heart, yet you stubbornly refused to recognize what was good for you. I gave you chance after chance, but you would rather destroy these chances even at the expense of your own sons’ life. Could you

actually be so naive to believe that the me today would still be as compassionate as the me yesterday!?”

“You!!”

“Sect Master!” Feng Feilie swiftly spoke, “He has the lives of two princes in his hands right now! Thirteenth Prince and Fourteenth Prince have already lost their lives to his viciousness, so no matter what happens next, Ninth Prince and Eleventh Prince must definitely not come to any harm. Furthermore, his

speed is something that even gods and demons cannot fathom. If we still continue to force the issue with him, not only will the lives of Ninth Prince and Eleventh Prince be forfeited, there might still be other princes who....”

The veins on Feng Hengkong’s forehead and arms throbbed so hard that they nearly burst as a low bone-piercing voice came from his mouth, “Then today... what must we do in order for you to let them go!!?”

“Oh?” Feng Hengkong’s response seemed to have caught Yun Che by surprise, but in the next moment, he immediately sneered, “It looks like our Divine Phoenix Sect Master is finally becoming a little smarter. But truth be told, even though our Divine Phoenix Sect Master is lower than a beast, in the end, he is still a human. So there has to be something that distinguishes him from a mad dog or a stupid pig.”

The compromise that Feng Hengkong had shown through his gnashing teeth was instead greeted with an extremely

venomous insult from Yun Che, and just those few words would have caused the most common Divine Phoenix disciple to become so angry that their spleen would burst, much less their exalted Divine Phoenix Sect Master, Feng Hengkong. Yun Che casually extended his fingers and said with a face that was filled with benevolence, "Then let me give your Divine Phoenix Sect a third chance. If you can comply to my conditions, then the princes will get to live. Moreover, I would hardly want to stay in this disgusting place once my demands are met. Of course, you can refuse once again, I do not mind it at all. And honestly



speaking, you caused my Blue Wind Nation to be filled with rivers of blood and mountains of corpses, yet I have only killed a mere ten over people from your side; I am truly letting you off far too lightly.

“The first condition.” The cold smile on Yun Che’s face turned colder still and his gaze pierced through Feng Hengkong like an icy dagger, “Within twenty days, get your entire Divine Phoenix Army to get the hell out of my Blue Wind Nation! No one is allowed to remain or violate our borders for the next three hundred years!

“The second condition is that you, Feng Hengkong, will personally issue an edict expressing your regret and remorse for your actions against my Blue Wind Nation and after that, you will announce it to the world! And once you do that, you will hang this edict on the gate of your Phoenix City for at least ten years!

“The third condition is to send thirty billion purple profound coins to our Blue Wind Nation as compensation!!

“The fourth condition is that you will cede the Red Jade Region that is located in the northeastern part of Divine Phoenix Nation to my Blue Wind Nation!”

“Yun Che!! Don’t take things too far!!” After Yun Che had stated each condition, Feng Hengkong’s face would grow a shade darker and the moment Yun Che had uttered his fourth condition, his chest had already exploded with anger and he began roaring furiously. The time he had to withdraw his

troops was shorter while the time they were prohibited from entering had increased yet again. Not only did he have to make an edict and declare it to the entire world, now he even had to hang it on his city gate for a whole ten years! The amount of compensation had explosively increased yet again. And what was utterly intolerable was that... yesterday, he had only requested for his Divine Phoenix Empire's Red Jade City, but today, he actually dared to say that he wanted the entire Red Jade Region!!

Even though the Red Jade

Region was at the borders of Divine Phoenix Empire, it was one of the largest mass of land within their empire and just in terms of size alone, it was already a quarter of Blue Wind Nation!

“The fifth condition!” Yun Che disregarded Feng Hengkong’s howls of anger as he coldly shouted out yet another condition. He extended one finger and pointed towards Feng Ximing, who was at Feng Hengkong’s side, before continuing, “Your Divine Phoenix Empire’s Crown Prince... if I recall correctly, his

name is Feng Ximing, right? Then the last condition will be much more simpler —— cripple his profound arts and let him follow me back to Blue Wind Imperial City as a guest for fifty years..”

“!!!”

The very last sentence that Yun Che had uttered caused all of the members of Divine Phoenix Sect to go insane with rage.

Withdrawing the troops,

apologising for their actions, making reparations, ceding away territory... and now he even wanted a hostage! And to top it all off, he wanted the Crown Prince of their Divine Phoenix Empire as the hostage!

Furthermore, Yun Che wanted to destroy the profound arts that Feng Ximing had trained for a hundred years... and even wanted him to stay as a hostage for fifty long years!

If their Divine Phoenix Empire truly agreed to this, it would

definitely cause all the previous Divine Phoenix ancestors and the five thousand year legacy of Divine Phoenix Sect to suffer the greatest disgrace and humiliation!

“Yun Che, cease your insanity!!” Feng Ximing had never expected to be suddenly targeted by Yun Che. As he originally already hated Yun Che to the very bone, this caused his entire body to shake in anger.

“Royal Father, this humble son is the scion of my royal father,



and even if I were to die ten thousand times, I would definitely not be willing to suffer such disgrace! Because it is not merely this humble son's disgrace, it would also be the disgrace of my royal father as well as our entire Divine Phoenix Empire! The Red Jade Region is not only an important territory to our Divine Phoenix Empire, it is also where our Divine Phoenix ancestor was born. So even if our Divine Phoenix Empire were to perish, we must definitely not cede it to another!!" Feng Ximing's emotions grew more and more agitated as he spoke and he yelled the last few words out with all his strength.

“Sect Master, we must definitely never surrender our territory in such a humiliating and embarrassing manner!”

“But the two princes....”

“This Yun Che is clearly trying to humiliate our Divine Phoenix Empire! No matter what happens, we must definitely not reach a compromise with this person!”

Feng Hengkong's face had turned completely red, his breathing had become extremely rough and heavy and the utmost limits of his patience were being tested like they had never been before. Two days ago, when Yun Che had first kidnapped a prince and stated his demands, he had nearly blown a gasket there and then.

But compared to today, the Yun Che of two days ago practically seemed to be Buddha reincarnate!

Yun Che's face did not even twitch in the face of the full hatred and anger of the Divine Phoenix Sect. He instead continued in a slow and hurried manner, "Feng Hengkong, I will give you five breaths of time to consider my conditions. Either you obediently listen to me and immediately begin to honour these condition or the princes die. Do not even think about trying to haggle over the terms and definitely don't try to buy more time, you only have five breaths of time... I will not wait an instant longer."

"Five!" Once he had finished

speaking, Yun Che immediately began his countdown.

“Four....

“Three....”

On one hand were the lives of the two princes, on the other hand was extraordinary shame and humiliation that they definitely could not assent to. And the time given to them to decide was only an incomparably short five breaths. This entire affair had

undoubtedly thrown the entire Divine Phoenix Sect into the fire.

“Sect Master....” All eyes were focused on Feng Hengkong right now. On one hand were the lives of the princes, on the other was the complete and utter humiliation of their Divine Phoenix Empire. So not a single one of them dared to make the decisions and they did not even dare to utter any unnecessary words as well.

“Two....” Yun Che once more

withdrew one of his extended fingers.

“Royal father... royal father!!”  
Feng Xilin and Feng Ximin  
futilely struggled as they let out  
wails of despair and terror.

“One....”

Blood was seeping out between  
Feng Hengkong’s fingers and his  
body had not stopped trembling  
since the start. Yesterday, Yun  
Che had already showed them to  
complete futility of making false

promises and putting up pretences, but if he agreed to the five conditions that Yun Che had made, he would definitely be condemned as a great sinner in the history of Divine Phoenix Empire. Furthermore, Divine Phoenix Empire whose might shocked the world, would be reduced to the laughingstock of the seven nations... and after he died, he definitely would not be able to face the ancestors who had gone before him.

However if he did not agree, both his sons would definitely die... and Yun Che would return yet again. And given Yun Che's



speed that even the gods and demons could not fathom, he would kill even more people and there was a good possibility conditions that he would propose after this would become more and more cruel....

Three years ago, when he had sent troops to invade Blue Wind, he had considered the entire affair of annexing Blue Wind Nation to be a small and trifling one and he never dreamed that he would receive such retribution in return.

“Yun Che....” Feng Hengkong growled in a low voice, “If you dare to....”

At this time, Yun Che withdrew his last finger and a cruel and merciless smile appeared on his face, “Five breaths of time have passed. And to be completely honest, Divine Phoenix Sect Master, I am extremely overjoyed at your answer.... My two esteemed princes, it looks like your royal father does not regard your lives as much after all. I have given such kind and generous terms, but he still chose to send you to your deaths.... And since that is the

case, then there is no longer any need to keep you two alive.”

Feng Hengkong and all the gathered Divine Phoenix elders went pale with shock as they shouted simultaneously, “Stop!!”

Boom!!

The only thing they received in response to their shouts were two eye-piercing pillars of fire. The Divine Phoenix princes, who were of most noble birth and lineage, were nothing more

than lowly ants in the hands of Yun Che and he did not hesitate in the least when it came to squashing them to death. In the midst of fierce conflagration, Feng Xilin and Feng Ximin's bodies were instantly disintegrated and not even a trace of their ashes was left behind.

“Lin’er... Min’er!!!” Feng Hengkong let out a heart-rending wail and his entire body propelled towards Yun Che in a crazed rage, “Yun Che!! I, Feng Hengkong, and you... are absolutely irreconcilable!!!!”

“Hah, you aren’t even worthy!!” Yun Che said with a low and cold chuckle before he began to laugh wildly while soaring into the sky, “Feng Hengkong, even though four of them have died, you still have ten sons left... so do not worry, I will send each and every one of them to meet King Yama until you pay the required price! So just sit there patiently and wait!!”

Yun Che turned around and his entire figure flew towards the west as he shot out like an arrow

that left its bowstring.

“Kill him!! No matter what, you have to kill him!!” Feng Feilie howled.

Amidst chaotic explosions of energy, three Divine Phoenix Elders, who were nearest to the direction that Yun Che fled towards, took to the air and met Yun Che head on. With three longswords blazing with Phoenix flames they fiercely stabbed towards Yun Che's vitals....

Yun Che's eyes faintly narrowed as a dangerous cold light shone out of them. As he met the three onrushing Divine Phoenix elders, his speed did not slow down in the slightest. Instead, he abruptly accelerated as a scarlet light flashed in his hand. All the profound energy in his body wildly erupted and the Heaven Smiting sword swept forward to meet his enemies.

Previously when Yun Che had been surrounded and attacked by Divine Phoenix Sect, the only thing that he had done was evade and flee. So this time, when three Divine Phoenix

elders attacked at full strength, they unconsciously expected Yun Che to use his monstrous profound movement skill to evade their attacks before fleeing away rapidly....

However what they saw instead was a scarlet sword beam which swept towards them.

At first, the three Divine Phoenix elders were shocked, but this shock quickly turned into elation as all the profound energy in their body swelled up even more and many long trails



of fire began to snake along their swords... if Yun Che wanted to escape, given his speed, they would be helpless to stop him. However if he wanted to directly clash with them, then as long as the three of them combined their strength, there was no reason why they could not heavily injured Yun Che... or perhaps even kill him on the spot.

But the joy on their face only remained for an instant before it was replaced by shock and fear that only grew deeper by the second... because the strength of the profound energy storm that

was rushing towards them had exceeded their initial expectations by far too much. And when that huge, scarlet sword approached them, the Phoenix flames that were burning on their bodies were actually completely suppressed and extinguished akin to a lone candle that had been blown out by the wind and not even a single spark of flame remained. It was as if their bodies were being pushed down by a power that could cause the heavens to collapse and in the face of this power, they felt like their bodies, which were harder than the strongest steel, were as weak and frail as an ants....

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!!”

Boom!!!

As though a mountain had been split apart, a huge explosive shockwave caused the earth below them to burst open. All the people who were in hot pursuit of Yun Che could clearly see the swords of the three Divine Phoenix elders snap at the same time, and following that, at the moment the huge sword swept past, their bodies... had also been severed as well.

# Chapter 709 – Trembling Divine Phoenix Sect

---

When Yun Che made a huge ruckus in Divine Phoenix Sect these past few days, he had always relied on his peerless and absolute speed, so naturally, the Divine Phoenix Sect unconsciously believed that Yun Che's strength was merely speed itself; he would not have the guts, nor even the qualifications to directly confront them. But today, Feng Yunzhi was blasted to death with a single punch, and now, they could only stare blankly as the combined attacks

of three great elders were... directly smashed into six pieces with a single slash by Yun Che!

As though they were being swept away by strong winds, the dilapidated corpses flew off to the distance, drawing six trails of blood that were several tens of meters long in the air.

At that moment, all of the Phoenix disciples' eyes were seemingly close to fragmenting out of shock, while the Phoenix Elders, whom had come together at full speed to surround him,

were even more astonished, as though their souls had left their bodies... They were not just some run-of-the-mill cats and dogs, nor were they regular disciples of the Divine Phoenix Sect. They were Phoenix Elders who held great authority in the entire sect, standing at the peak of the seven nations in the Sky Profound Continent; the might of one of them alone was enough to shake the world!

Yet, with just a single exchange, under a single swing of Yun Che's sword, they were slashed apart like they were three pieces of decayed deadwood...

No matter how absurd their dreams could be, this was a scene that would have never possibly occurred in their mind... But currently, it was being vividly displayed right before their eyes.

While everyone was shrinking back from the shock, only Feng Hengkong, who seemed to have lost his rationality, did not reduce his speed in the slightest as he charged straight towards Yun Che. When Yun Che's figure reflected in his scarlet red eyes, he let out an incomparably

resentful roar as the flames surrounding his entire body gathered in his right arm, carrying matchless might that could twist space itself. He struck towards Yun Che's head as he roared, "Yun Che!! We want you dead!!"

"Sect Master, watch out!!"

The crowd of Phoenix Elders were greatly astonished. The scene of three Phoenix Elders being smashed to death with just one of Yun Che's slash was demonstrated before their eyes,



and even if they could not believe what they had just witnessed, they still understood the terrifying strength one had to possess to achieve such a feat. Although Feng Hengkong's profound strength was at the tenth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, stronger than any single one of the three Phoenix Elders whom Yun Che had killed, his strength was definitely still incomparable to the combined strength of the three Phoenix Elders. With the terrifying strength that Yun Che exploded forth earlier, if he was determined to deal a ruthless blow, then the outcome would certainly be disastrous.

Facing Feng Hengkong's Phoenix flames, Yun Che revealed a cold smile... Three years ago, Feng Hengkong's strength was an existence which he could not even hope to look up to. But as of today, the level of strength between the two of them... could be said to have completely flipped.

Yun Che traversed his heavy sword to the back with his left hand. As Phoenix flames burned on his right arm, he smashed straight towards Feng Hengkong... with the exact same

movement as Feng Hengkong's, and the exact same Phoenix flames as Feng Hengkong's. However, his expression was much more relaxed than Feng Hengkong's, and even the corner of his lips revealed a touch of heartless contempt. "With just you alone... you're still unqualified."

With a loud explosion, the surrounding space violently collapsed within the fumbling waves of flames, as though a volcano had erupted in midair. At the very center where the ocean of fire exploded forth, an incomparably clear crackling

sound rang. The arm that Feng Hengkong threw out, under the intense charging force, instantly twisted to the back. In the next instant, his bones shattered directly from the center. An even stronger aftershock followed after, striking straight at his chest. Feng Hengkong's Phoenix Armor was instantly disintegrated into dust, and his entire body was sent flying away like a cannon ball.

“Sect Master!!”

Several                      Phoenix                      Elders

hurriedly charged forward to receive Feng Hengkong. In the moment the arms of the person who caught Feng Hengkong upfront made contact with him, before he could even heave a sigh of relief, his expression gravely changed... The immense force that was transmitted to his arms had completely surpassed his expectations. In an instant, his arms were blown away as Feng Hengkong's body ruthlessly smashed into his chest... A crackling sound echoed out as a large portion of his breastbone shattered and sank, and a large mist of blood sprayed onto Feng Hengkong's body. The two people stuck together and ruthlessly crashed onto the

ground. Under the earth-shattering exploding noise, a large crater thirty meters deep was formed.

This scene made all of the rushing Phoenix Elders to vehemently suck in a cold breath.

Yun Che had already grabbed onto the Heaven Smiting Sword and descended from the skies, aiming straight at Feng Hengkong. At this moment, a loud roar came from the right, “Don’t even think about

harming my Sect Master!!”

Second Elder Feng Feiran wielded his Phoenix Sword, and with a speed that transcended his limits, he charged towards Yun Che. Under his great astonishment and fear, the Phoenix flames burning from his entire body surged to the extreme... He wasn't charging towards Yun Che, but to where Feng Hengkong was. He desperately charged to arrive in front of Feng Hengkong before Yun Che could. But at this moment, the trajectory of Yun Che's figure suddenly twisted. Yun Che, who was charging

towards Feng Hengkong earlier, with twice his former speed, was now suddenly charging towards Feng Feiran.

Feng Feiran, who simply wanted to protect Feng Hengkong with all his heart, had never expected that Yun Che would drop the opportunity to heavily injure or kidnap Feng Hengkong and suddenly change the target of his attack. In addition to his lightning-like speed... the instant Feng Feiran's pupils shrank, the only action he was able to make in time was to move the Phoenix sword in his hands a centimeter towards his



chest...

Poosh!!

The sound of a physical body being torn apart reverberated in the skies above Divine Phoenix Sect. With the Heaven Smiting Sword, Feng Feiran's body, which possessed the protection of profound energy of the Ninth Level of Tyrant Profound Realm, was instantly pierced through like a fragile piece of leather. Under the terrifying force brought by the Heaven Smiting Sword, the blood that splurged

out of his body scattered several kilometers away.

“Uugh...”

Feng Feiran made his final sound; his fading vision was fixated on Yun Che's cold expression and the gigantic crimson red sword which penetrated his body. His eyes did not carry any hatred, but only exceedingly deep astonishment and disbelief, as though he was residing within a dream... He could not believe, that he, the number two elder of Divine

Phoenix Sect, would actually die just like this... And the person who killed him... was actually just a youth who was merely twenty-two years old...

Furthermore, he couldn't believe that, the strength Yun Che had unleashed, which instantly pierced his body... was actually powerful to the point where... it had completely broken through the limits of the Tyrant Profound Realm!!

“Second... Second Elder...” The eyes of all who had witnessed

everything were all shrinking tremendously. Even their shouts were trembling as though they were within a cold gust of wind.

“Heh...” Looking at the many faces that looked as though they had seen a ghost or a god, Yun Che let out a bland, cold laugh. The Golden Crow flames blazed on his body as the Heaven Smiting Sword was swung fiercely downwards...

“Burning Sun Rupture!!”

A fireball, not even three meters long, blazed above the Heaven Smiting Sword, and with a light swing, Yun Che threw it downwards along with Feng Feiran's corpse.

Boom!!

The fireball, which looked inconspicuous even to the eyes of the most regular Phoenix disciples, had, however, burst into a catastrophic sea of flames the instant it landed, engulfing several tens of Phoenix disciples within it. In an instant... In a

mere instant, these Phoenix disciples were burnt off with no traces left behind, unable to even utter a single sound or scream before their deaths.

Nightmarish scenes followed one after another... This was truly a nightmare. Back then, they were exasperated at how Yun Che escaped with his extreme speed. But today, they finally understood that him running away... was simply his bestowal of heavenly grace and mercy. After witnessing Yun Che's heaven-defying speed, they finally experienced Yun Che's current strength... which

was completely no less terrifying than his speed.

The present Phoenix Elders had all charged to Feng Hengkong's side. Several tens of elders were gathered in a single place, yet it did not give them the slightest sense of security. Every single one of their pupils were intensely shrinking and enlarging, and not even a single one of them dared to charge towards Yun Che.

Yun Che's gaze turned around at this moment, and the bodies

of the Phoenix Elders trembled intensely at the same instant. However, Yun Che did not charge down once again. He lightly furrowed his brows, and coldly looked at Feng Hengkong who was at the center of the large crater. Feng Hengkong's face had already distorted to an incomparable extent, "Feng Hengkong, you truly have to thank the heavens for bestowing you with a good daughter... You're simply unfit to be her father though. If it weren't for Xue'er, I would have crippled all of your limbs even if I spared your life today.



“Though you have already foolishly wasted the three opportunities that I have bestowed you, on Xue’er’s behalf, I will still continue to give you chances. Of course you can still continue to waste them. However, the consequences of wasting chances, will only become more severe... Allow me to look forward to tomorrow with great expectations, hahahahaha!!”

Amidst the loud laughter, Yun Che rose into the sky, and in a blink of an eye, his figure was enveloped by the clouds.

Following Yun Che's departure, the nightmare seemed to have ceased for the time being. However, the tremor felt by the Divine Phoenix Sect was still unable to stop even after a long time.

“Royal Father, are you alright?”

“Sect Master...”

Feng Hengkong's arm was shattered and blood flowed from

the corner of his lips, but the damage he suffered on his entire body was not severe. Instead, it was the Phoenix Elder who caught him that was unconscious from heavy injuries. Everyone present could see that this was clearly Yun Che showing mercy, otherwise, he could have possibly taken Feng Hengkong's life immediately.

With listless eyes, Feng Hengkong gazed towards the sky as his lips severely trembled, "Impossible... How could this possibly be his strength... Impossible... This is impossible..."

Feng Hengkong's words were everyone's sorrowful chant as well. Three years ago, even though Yun Che's performance had shocked the seven nations, but at the utmost limit, it was merely at the late levels of the Emperor Profound Realm. Though he was a peerless-like existence among the young generation, in front of the almighty Phoenix Elders, he was merely an ant that could be killed with a casual flick of a finger.

Since then, a total of three

years had passed... Merely three years had passed!!

Blasting Feng Yunzhi to death with a single fist, smashing apart three Phoenix Elders with a single swing of his sword, heavily injuring Feng Hengkong and a Phoenix Elder with a single strike, and even slaughtering Feng Feiran, ranked number two among the Phoenix Elders, with a single sword strike. This was strength that required at least the power of a half-step Monarch... or even possibly an existence who had already stepped into the Sovereign Profound Realm!

With three years worth of time, how could there possibly be... a heaven-defying growth that completely went against all logic!?

“Impossible... Impossible!!!”

Feng Hengkong lamented, and then he fiercely puked out a large mouthful of fresh blood. His face turned deathly pale as he fell to the ground.

“Sect Master!!”

“Royal Father!!!”

In response to Feng Hengkong were merely mournful cries.

---

Several hundred meters below Phoenix City, in an absolute forbidden ground that even princes and Phoenix Elders could not casually approach.

The place was surrounded by flames, forming what seemed to be a boundless blazing sea. Furthermore, all the flames were not ordinary profound flames, but incomparably hot Phoenix flames.

At this moment, footsteps, which sounded a little heavy, reverberated within this Phoenix flames-filled forbidden ground. Following after, the light from the swaying flames revealed Feng Hengkong's face. As the Divine Phoenix Emperor, he, who would usually hold his



head up high, did not dare to let out even the slightest bit of his prideful demeanor and emperor's aura at this moment. As he moved, he was even making an effort to have his head lowered.

His footsteps gradually slowed down, and finally, in the deepest part of the flames, he stopped on his tracks. Then, he heavily knelt down and drooped his head even more deeply.

Amidst the light swaying of the blazing Phoenix flames, a blurry

figure appeared faintly. A calm yet heavy voice sounded from this figure, “Hengkong, the Phoenix’s aura has been in turmoil the past few days, what’s the problem?”

In front of this figure, Feng Hengkong deeply prostrated his body, “This child is incapable, Royal Father, please bestow punishment upon me.”

“Your energy and blood are in chaos, and even your mind and soul are in devastated states. Just who had pushed you to

such lengths?” The voice sounded from the flames turned a little heavier, “Is it a certain Sacred Ground?”

“No.” Feng Hengkong did not dare to rise from his prostrating posture, “It’s... It’s Yun Che.”

“That youth of three years ago, the one who defeated our sect’s young generation, and even saved Xue’er?” His voice carried slight astonishment.

“Yes... But he did not die in the

Primordial Profound Ark three years ago, and now he has returned alive... Because of the matter concerning Blue Wind Empire, he has arrived to exact revenge.”

“I see... The expert aiding him, who is it?” The voice within the flames was still solemn and calm.

Feng Hengkong took a deep breath, “He’s... the only one.”

The Phoenix flames quietly

burned, swayed, and seethed. However, within the entire fiery space, not a single sound was made for a long while. Feng Hengkong's upper body had completely laid on the ground, not daring to make a single move.

Only after exactly ten breaths had passed did the voice once again sounded. "Tianyu, Tianqing, the both of you provide Feng Hengkong with support. After the task is finished, return immediately."

“Yes.”

Several tens of kilometers within the sea of flames, two old and solemn responses echoed out.

# Chapter 710 – Weak Point?

---

“The flaming aura over at Divine Phoenix Sect is in disarray, it seems Yun Che has made a huge move this time.”

ZI Ji gazed into the distance, looking towards Divine Phoenix Sect’s direction. At his side, a middle-aged man, dressed entirely in blue, was currently kneeling on the ground; the man’s cold expression carried deep awe as he respectfully said, “Yun Che has indeed done something beyond expectations

today.”

“Did you bring the Profound Imagery Stone?”

With his two hands, the blue-clothed man raised a strange jade stone that was flashing a water blue glow in its surroundings. “Fortunately, the situation wasn’t life-threatening. Master, please look over it.”

Picking up the water blue jade stone, Zi Ji brushed his palm



against it, and a mystical profound formation quickly formed above the Profound Imagery Stone. Following after Zi Ji's light changes in his hand movements, scenes after scenes of images were clearly displayed within the profound formation.

And what the images were displaying, were clearly scenes of Yun Che when he arrived at Divine Phoenix Sect today, till his departure, and they were incomparably complete. It had impressively displayed to Zi Ji everything that had happened today in Divine Phoenix Sect clearly, without leaving

anything out, with a mystical and strange method.

Zi Ji's demeanor was calm in the beginning, but soon after, his brows began to sink. When Yun Che smashed three Phoenix Elders to death with a single slash, the blue-clothed man clearly saw his two brows intensely twitched for a moment.

Zi Ji quietly watched the scenes within the Profound Imagery Stone, there wasn't a single moment where he shifted his

gaze. When the final image disappeared, he turned around, and let out a long sigh. “It seems, when Sun Moon Divine Hall said he possessed strength comparable to an early-stage Monarch, they weren’t making empty claims at all.”

“At the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, it’s completely incomprehensible to be comparable to an early-stage Sovereign Profound Realm. This is simply not talent that a human can possibly achieve.” A trace of deep astonishment could be heard from Zi Ji’s voice. With his incomparably

broad knowledge, and experience surpassing a thousand years, let alone the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, he had never even heard of someone possessing the third level of the Tyrant Profound Realm standing toe-to-toe with someone at the Sovereign Profound Realm. He was incomparably certain that in the history of Profound Sky Continent, such a case had never appeared either.

In regards to Zi Ji's evaluation, the blue-clothed man at his side was not the least bit shocked.

After all, he was present at the scene witnessing everything that had happened today, the astonishment that arose in his heart because of Yun Che far surpassed Zi Ji's. Calling him a freak, would not be the least bit exaggerated. Stepping across power of exactly two large realms, and two of the most top-tier realms especially, there's definitely not a single precedent in Profound Sky Continent, and it would most likely be impossible for such a person to appear in the future either. It was hard to imagine how powerful Yun Che would be if his profound strength were to achieve the Sovereign Profound Realm.

Zi Ji's words were said out of surprise, yet, he did not know that his own words coincidentally carried a fact. Because Yun Che's profound arts, bloodline, physical body, and even his soil, had all indeed surpassed the boundaries of a 'human'.

“His profound movement skill, is undoubtedly the Extreme Mirage Lightning.” Zi Ji kept the Profound Imagery Stone, furrowed his brows, and sank into deep thoughts.

The blue-clothed man once again took out another Profound Imagery Stone, and said. “Master, this subordinate has another matter to report. Our people over at Blue Wind Empire did not hesitate to activate their one and only teleportation formation, and sent over a Profound Imagery Stone. They wanted this subordinate to personally hand this over to master’s hands at all costs, in order to have master look over it.”

“Oh?”

The further the transfer distance of the teleportation formation, the expenses required to construct it would be more immense. Hence, if not absolutely necessary, a teleportation formation of this scale could not be activated easily. The Black Moon Merchant Guild in Blue Wind Empire only had a single piece of profound stone that could activate the teleportation formation once, and it had never been used for several hundred years. Yet, it was suddenly used this time, evidently a irregular case.



Zi Ji picked up the second piece of Profound Imagery Stone from the blue-clothed man's hands. The profound formation built up, and the scenes showed by the profound images this time, were the front of Blue Wind Imperial City of Blue Wind Empire.

“This is...” Looking at the images in front of him, Zi Ji's brows fiercely twitched, his two eyes were as sharp as swords, as he stared deadly at that seemingly blurry figure within the image. A violent gale of wind

surrounded the human figure's body, and on his back, there seemed to be a pair of translucent wings? And the profound light emitted from his body was a very unique jade-green color.

Bang!!

The images disappeared, and the Profound Imagery Stone was suddenly shattered by Zi Ji as well.

The blue-clothed man raised

his head. “Master?”

“Tell the men over at Blue Wind Empire, they are not allowed to bring up even the slightest word about the matter regarding this Profound Imagery Stone to anyone. Not to anyone, is that clear!?” Zi Ji’s expression was heavy, and his words, even more so, carried supreme weight.

The entire body of the blue-clothed man turned cold, as he hurriedly said. “Yes, this subordinate shall pass it down

now.”

Standing in front of the window, Zi Ji's brows were tightly locked, as he sank into deep thoughts for a long while. It was unknown what his thoughts were.

His stillness this time, had lasted for exactly two hours. Unknowingly, the blazing sun was already hovering in the center of the sky when Zi Ji finally moved. He lightly raised his head, and looked towards the illuminated blue and white

horizon, and softly said. “The person mentioned in the report sent from Demon Illusory Realm, could he actually be...”

After Yun Che flew away from the Divine Phoenix Sect, he had headed south the entire time, the cold smile on his face gradually sank down as well.

In these few days, he had been causing uproars in the Divine Phoenix Sect, which each subsequent one larger than the last. However, in this entire process, he had been

purposefully controlling his voice, preventing it from being sent to where the Phoenix Perching Valley was and startling Feng Xue'er.

“I killed four of her elder brothers.” Yun Che let out a faint sigh, and muttered to himself. “No matter who the person is, it cannot possibly be forgiven, right...”

“Do you know what’s a Profound Imagery Stone?” Jasmine coldly voiced out.

“Profound Imagery Stone?” Yun Che said. “I have indeed heard of it before. From what I have heard, it’s a profound jade with a certain mystical formation engraved in it. After releasing the profound formation within, it can record the scenes within a certain range, for a certain amount of time. And then, with another profound formation as a guide, the images recorded within the Profound Imagery Stone can be released. But, according to what I heard, the requirements for the profound jade used for Profound Imagery Stones are extremely high, and the profound formations that could record images are incomparably

complicated, so it's extremely hard to succeed. The forces capable of producing Profound Imagery Stones in the entire continent can be counted on one's hand. So, even though I have heard of it before, I have never seen one. Why did you suddenly bring this up?"

"Everything that you did in the Divine Phoenix Sect today, was recorded by someone using a Profound Imagery Stone. And that person's aura reveals that he's not someone from the Divine Phoenix Sect." Jasmine lightly said.



“Oh?” Yun Che was slightly startled, but soon after, he said without a care. “Then it’s undoubtedly the Black Moon Merchant Guild. They actually wasted a Profound Imagery Stone on me, they sure are willing to spend.”

Even until now, Yun Che had not seen how a Profound Imagery Stone looked like, and had only heard of it every now and then. Even the dumbest of person could imagine how precious and rare an item like that was. Most probably, in the

entire Profound Sky Continent, only the Black Moon Merchant Guild and the Four Great Sacred Grounds would be able use them.

“Hmph, it’s best that you watch out. If you reveal any weak points, before you can even finish exacting revenge on Divine Phoenix Sect, Sun Moon Divine Hall will come over to kill you the first opportunity they get!” Jasmine said snappily, following after, her tone turned lighter. “At the very least, in the next three months or so, don’t do anything that court your own death. Once the devilish poison

in my body is completely detoxed three months later, you can do whatever you want. When that time comes, unless I want you to die, you can't die even if you want to."

Yun Che chuckled. "You can't possibly bear to see me dead."

Jasmine's voice sank, and she said with cold smile. "Do you want to try?"

"Alright then!" Yun Che answered without the slightest

of hesitation, as he said while grinning. “Then why don’t we make a bet? If you bear to kill me after you’re fully recovered, then let me meet you again in my next life. If you don’t bear to kill me, then let me kiss you. Do you dare?”

“You courting death! Hmph!!”

Jasmine heavily snorted, and no longer paid him any heed.

Yun Che tore through the skies.  
With Extreme Mirage Lightning,

he quickly left the boundaries of Divine Phoenix City. At this moment, a sharp whistle suddenly sounded from the bottom. A figure was chasing after him at astonishing speed. Just when Yun Che was about to respond, after he felt the person's aura, the corner of his brows twitched, and very quickly, his speed slowed to a complete halt.

Yun Che turned around, and smiled as he looked at the skinny figure approaching him. He was dressed in common attire, and his hair was oily and scruffed. However, Yun Che was able to

discern that he was in a disguised state with a glance, and it was even a double-layered disguise. His identity, had even more so, appeared incomparably vividly in Yun Che's mind. "Hua Minghai, long time no see."

The person chasing after him stopped in front of Yun Che, and his breath was in a slight disorder from excitement. "Big bro, I finally get to see you again! As expected, I did not wait here for nothing! Phew! I just knew that big bro, being such a nice person, will definitely not die just like that! The heavens are protecting you!"

In these few days, not just Divine Phoenix City, basically the entire continent knew that Yun Che had returned alive. And in a span of a few days, he had single-handedly playing Divine Phoenix Sect like they were chickens and dogs. In the beginning, Hua Minghai was not in Divine Phoenix City. When he heard that Yun Che wasn't dead, and had even went to Divine Phoenix City, he came rushing over throughout the night, in order to meet the person he was extremely indebted to. The great kindness he gave three years ago was hard to forget even in death.

“It has indeed been a long time.” Looking at the lively colors on Hua Minghai’s forehead, Yun Che said with a smile. “When I first met you three years ago, your face was filled with a depressed look, but now it’s completely gone. It seems your wife has been recovering pretty well in these few years.”

Hua Minghai nodded strongly. “The cold poison in Xiaoya has been completely detoxed, and not even a single hint of it had appeared again these three



years. Also, with the dragon blood bestowed by big bro, in a short span of a year, she had already completely recovered. Now, not only has Xiaoya fully recovered, her physique and energy has been completely restored as well, and her profound strength has even recovered by about seventy to eighty percent. These were all gifted by big bro. Big bro's kindness, even if I..."

"Alright, alright." Yun Che hurriedly interrupted his words. "There's no need for so many words of thanks, back then, it was simply a small effort on my

part. In fact, to me, your Extreme Mirage Lightning had repaid my small effort by several times. If not for borrowing the use of the Extreme Mirage Lightning, I definitely would not have the ability to enter and leave Divine Phoenix Sect as I please.”

“Ah? My Extreme Mirage Lightning? What do you mean? Why do I not understand at all??? Oh right, big bro, your profound movement skill is incredible! And it looks similar to my clan’s Extreme Mirage Lightning. It sure is a great coincidence. Yes, such a

coincidence! It might be possible that long ago, it came from the same school of profound movement skills. Hahaha! Coincidental, so coincidental! This is definitely fate between big bro and I. Hahahaha!”

Hua Minghai raised his head and looked towards the sky, as he laughed sillily with a crazy look on his face.

“Hahahaha.” Yun Che laughed out loud as well. “It’s of great help to me, far surpassing my expectations from back then.

Don't worry, I will definitely not let you go against your clan rules for nothing. Speaking of which, the reason I nearly died on the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago, was because of Sun Moon Divine Hall's Ye Xinghan. When I finally made my return, they even travelled several tens of thousands of kilometers to welcome me. The grudge between me and Sun Moon Divine Hall can be said to have completely formed. Although currently, there's still no conflict between us, there will definitely be a day where we will completely break into conflict, and that day isn't that far away."

Yun Che looked at Hua Minghai, and slowly said. "Within Sun Moon Divine Hall, who do you want dead the most?"

Hua Minghai's eyes evidently trembled. "Big bro, can you really..." His face momentarily changed, and then, he fiercely clenched his teeth. "The one who killed my parents, and struck Xiaoya with the cold poison, is the same person! Ye Xuange, Sun Moon Divine Hall's tenth elder! And the culprit behind everything, is the Heavenly Monarch Ye Meixie of Sun Moon Divine Hall! Since

several hundred years ago, he had wanted to obtain our clan's Extreme Mirage Lightning, and had searched for the traces of our clan in secret countless times. Back then, I mentioned that a former ancestor of mine once entered Sun Moon Divine Hall, and stole one of their Tyrant blades. This was in order to exact revenge on Sun Moon Divine Hall for their countless sabotages. Till today, our clan has withered down to merely me alone. So, so..."

"I understand." Yun Che nodded. "Ye Meixie is coincidentally one of the people

I must kill.”

“Ah?” Hua Minghai was stunned.

“Because Ye Xinghan must die.” Recalling what Ye Xinghan had done, Yun Che’s voice suddenly turned cold. “And Ye Xinghan is Ye Meixie’s only son. After killing Ye Xinghan, there’s naturally a need to kill Ye Meixie as well, else there will be countless troubles in the future.”

The reason why Yun Che had to

kill them, or to say the more important reason, was naturally to exact revenge for his parents!

Yun Che's profound energy surged, and Extreme Mirage Lightning enveloped his body. "Although I do not carry your clan's bloodline, I possess your clan's core inheritance. Hence, I'm still barely considered as a half-successor of your clan. Since that's the case, there's a need to do a little something for your clan, even if it's done in passing."



“Big bro...” The gratitude within Hua Minghai’s heart, was inexpressible.

“I’m leaving now. I don’t mind staying for too long, but it’s still a little dangerous for you. You’d best hurry and leave Divine Phoenix City. With the cruel acts the Divine Phoenix Sect has done to my Blue Wind Empire, in the next following days, I’m unable to guarantee that I won’t do something that would involve the entire Divine Phoenix City.”

After leaving these final words,

Yun Che waved his hands at Hua Minghai as his body turned into lightning and left far, far away.

“Big bro, my sound transmission imprint hasn’t changed, if there’s anything that I can do, call me whenever!” Hua Minghai shouted loudly, his gaze continued to chase after Yun Che’s leaving figure, until he completely disappeared from his line of sight.

# Chapter 711 – Born Arrogant

---

Today was the fourth day since Yun Che came to the Divine Phoenix City.

In the span of four days, not only had he thrown Divine Phoenix City in disarray, he had also caused news of this incident to spread to every corner of Sky Profound Continent. In the first place, the news of Yun Che returning alive was enough to stir the entire continent, but the things he had done in Divine Phoenix City in these past few

days... especially the incident of him killing two princes and five Phoenix Elders yesterday, swept towards the seven nations of the continent like a storm in merely a single night.

Whether it was Divine Phoenix Empire or the other six nations, to all of them, this was the most shocking incident since the founding of their own nations. The first response when anyone heard the news, was that they could not believe it no matter what.

This was the first time in history that the dignity of the unrivalled Divine Phoenix Empire was being stepped on... and it was even being stepped on to such an extent. Furthermore, their opponent, was merely a single person.

Even the Four Sacred Grounds themselves had long known about this matter, and were also paying great attention to it.

The night passed, and when Yun Che opened his eyes, the sky was already bright. However, he

did not choose what time he wanted to wake up. Rather, he was awakened by the activity of his voice transmission jade.

As soon as he took out the voice transmission jade, the voice of a calm middle-aged man sounded from within, "There are two additional Monarch auras in the Divine Phoenix Sect this morning. One of them is at late-stage Second Level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, while the other is at middle-stage Third Level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Do take care."

The one who sent the voice transmission was actually Zi Ji of the Black Moon Merchant Guild.

“Not only did he take the initiative to inform you, the old man had even personally sent the voice transmission himself. Hmph, it seems like he really cares about you a lot, huh.” Jasmine coldly said.

“Care?” Yun Che curled his lips, “That’s because I have a ‘teacher’ behind my back who is

strong to the point of being unprecedented and catastrophic; a 'teacher' who should definitely not be offended. That is what made him feel that it's best to display his goodwill. If this layer of illusion is broken, with his shrewdness, there's a huge possibility... no, he will definitely want me dead more than anyone else. In regards to a large power that had been established and had dominated an entire continent for ten thousand years, something that could possibly become a threatening force, definitely cannot be allowed to exist... With my irregular talent and speed of growth that had already been exposed right in their eyes,



I'm naturally one of those people that can possibly put them in a threatened position."

"It's good that you know." Jasmine arrogantly said.

"Divine Phoenix Sect is the same as well." Yun Che flew into the air and looked in the direction of Divine Phoenix City, "In just five thousand years, the Divine Phoenix Sect had already approached the degree of strength possessed by the Sacred Grounds by simply borrowing the Phoenix bloodline. In

another five thousand years, with the advantage of borrowing a divine spirit's bloodline, there's a huge possibility that they would surpass the Four Sacred Grounds. The reason why the Divine Phoenix Sect had been stable and peaceful these five thousand years was due to the existence of the Divine Phoenix. If the illusion of the Divine Phoenix still being alive is destroyed, even the dumbest of person can predict what would happen to the Divine Phoenix Sect."

Speaking up to this point, Yun Che's brows slightly moved...

Could the absurd actions Divine Phoenix Empire had done to the Blue Wind Empire be preparation for the crisis that might happen in the future? After all, there would also be a time where wind could even seep through the thickest of walls.

Even if that was the case... No matter what the reason was, considering the sins Divine Phoenix Empire committed against Blue Wind Nation, they would have to suffer ten times the costs no matter what!

---

Feng Hengkong had not slept a wink for four days. In the first place, he had not suffered any severe injuries, and as of this moment, even the injury on his arm was no longer serious. However, the impact his inner heart suffered had no possibility to subside in such a short span of time... In just three short days, four of his sons had died, and all of them died in right in front of his eyes. Furthermore, every single one of them was completely burnt away; forget about having a corpse, even a trace of ash was not left behind.

A heavy impact like this was something any regular person wouldn't be able to take, let alone he, the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, as well as the Emperor of Divine Phoenix Empire.

Within the half-destroyed and messy Phoenix Main Hall, all of the various Phoenix Elders and princes were lined up. However, their faces carried not anxiety nor hatred, but instead joy and excitement. At the very end of the hall, there were two others sitting on both sides of Feng Hengkong... their seats were actually positioned at the same

level as Feng Hengkong's.

These two were elders with heavy vicissitudes imprinted on their faces. Their beards were snow-white, yet their hair had a rich dark crimson color. Around their bodies, fire spirits occasionally danced about, and an incomparably heavy pressure was being released from their bodies. Currently, their slightly sunken brows and eyes, which were emitting out cold lights, had greatly caused everyone to hold their breaths.

“Four princes of our Divine Phoenix Sect have actually been consecutively killed... Outrageous!” The voice of the elder on the right was as heavy as a gong, and due to his anger, the temperature of the entire hall suddenly rose.

“Why did you not mention this matter to the Grand Sect Master?” The elder on the left said.

“Royal Father’s personality is as violent as flames. We were momentarily timid, and did not

dare to clearly speak of it. We wanted to inform Royal Father after we took down that bastard Yun Che.” Feng Hengkong closed his eyes, his constantly twitching face and neck highlighted the unsuppressable hatred and pain in his heart.

“All of us are incapable. To actually have to involve two Grand Elders to personally come out of seclusion, we are truly ashamed.” Great Elder Feng Feilie uttered shamefully.

“With two Grand Elders here, if



Yun Che still dares to come, then today will be his funeral!” Feng Ximing gritted his teeth and said.

For the two elders sitting next to Feng Hengkong, their ages both exceeded five hundred years respectively. Not only were they from the generation of Grand Elders in the Divine Phoenix Sect, they were also two out of the nine Grand Elders who had broken through the Sovereign Profound Realm.

The one seated on the left was

named Feng Tianyu, while the one seated on the right was named Feng Tianqing. They both belonged to the same vein as the Grand Sect Master of Divine Phoenix Sect, carrying the first name “Tian”. Currently, they had already become the cornerstone-like existences of Divine Phoenix Sect.

“The sin of this person, cannot simply be repaid with ‘death’!” Feng Tianyu furiously said.

“Other than the four princes, how many people from within

the sect have died because of that Yun Che?” Compared to Feng Tianyu, Feng Tianqing was much calmer, however, he similarly had pupils which had completely turned crimson red, highlighting that the astonishment and anger in his heart was definitely not any weaker than Feng Tianyu’s. Because within Divine Phoenix Sect’s five thousand years of history, they had never received such humiliation before.

Feng Ximing respectfully said, “On the first day, only Fourteenth Little Brother died under his hands. On the second

day, Thirteenth Little Brother and nine guardian disciples, a total of ten, died. Yesterday, two Royal Little Brothers and five elders died under his hands... And ninety-three others were burnt to ashes. There's also three hundred or so people who had suffered injuries of different degrees. In order to save royal father, twenty-first elder has suffered severe injuries, and until now, he has yet to wake from his coma.”

“One hundred and eleven people... Heh. It seems that he must suffer one hundred and eleven times of pain worse than

death, before he can fully repay his debt.” Feng Tianyu’s expression turned cold and sinister.

At this moment, an uproar suddenly echoed from outside. Following after, an evidently panicky voice rang, “Yun Che... Yun Che is here!!”

Huuu!!

All of the people present in the entire Phoenix Main Hall, other than the two Grand Elders,

suddenly stood up at exactly the same instant. And a single moment like this showed that Yun Che had already planted a terrifying shadow in their hearts.

“Yun Che...” Feng Hengkong tightly clenched both of his fists; with a low voice, he chanted the name of whom he hated the most in his entire life, “It’s time for you... to repay your debt!!”

Boom!!

Flames erupted, and Feng Hengkong instantly charged towards the skies, once again forming another humongous hole in the roof of the hall, which was already dilapidated in the first place. The crowd of Phoenix Elders loudly shouted "Sect Master", before quickly flying into the air, and followed him closely from behind.

In the direction of the gate to Divine Phoenix City, Yun Che was still floating in the same position as yesterday. His arms were crossed in front of his chest, and his face carried a cold smile... His actions and

expression were exactly the same as yesterday.

Compared to Yun Che, however, the reactions of the people from Divine Phoenix Sect were greatly different from yesterday. Their expressions looked especially assured, and their gazes on Yun Che were as though they were looking at a dead man. Some of their faces even revealed a joyful, cold smile... as though they could already see the scene of Yun Che falling in their hands, allowing them to wantonly vent out their hatred and frustration.



“Feng Hengkong, you sure came here to welcome me rather quickly today.” Yun Che’s gaze still locked onto Feng Hengkong alone, and his tone was even more scornful than the day before. “Today, have you thought it through and prepared to obediently listen to me, or... are you going to continue watching your sons and disciples suffer miserable deaths one after another in front of your eyes, hmm?”

“Oh, of course. I still have to very kindly remind you that it’s

best that you listen to me obediently, otherwise, if all of your sons were to die off, your Sect Master and emperor's seat, will no longer have a single successor."

"Yun Che, your death is already imminent, yet you're still being arrogant." Feng Feilie said with a cold smile, "Do you think you can still leave this place alive today!?"

"Oh?" Yun Che slightly narrowed his eyes, "My death is imminent? In these few days, I

seemed to have heard these four words from you people more than ten times. Unfortunately, even now, not a single strand of my hair has been damaged. As for your Divine Phoenix Sect... Heh. So pitiful, sad, and laughable.”

“Heheheheh... He really is as arrogant as the rumors say.”

Responding to Yun Che was an old and mighty voice. Following this voice, two crimson red figures slowly floated into the air from the Phoenix Main Hall,

carrying peerless pressure that was as heavy as a mountain, enveloping the entire Divine Phoenix Sect. They coldly watched Yun Che; the intense aura and pressure they carried had even brought the surrounding winds of several dozen kilometers into stillness.

It was as though in this space, they were the dictators between heaven and earth.

Yun Che put down his arms from his chest and unhurriedly shifted them behind his back.

He gave the two elders a glance and said with a light, cold smile. “Looking at how the confidence of you people had inflated several hundred times, I was wondering which deity had been invited over. However, you people have only called out two old undead farts. You people should at least call out Feng Tianwei as well. Merely Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing... Are you telling me that among the generation of Grand Elders of Divine Phoenix Sect, only a bunch of trash remained?”

Feng Huwei’s soul carried memories about the generation

of Grand Elders, so when Yun Che saw Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqiang, it was only natural that he could fluently call out their names.

Feng Tianyu's and Feng Tianqing's expression changed at the same time... They had appeared carrying a majestic aura, and they had even locked their Phoenix Spiritual Pressure on Yun Che the first opportunity they had. Initially, they had thought that with just their spiritual pressure, it would be sufficient to make Yun Che quiver in fear, and even cause his mind collapse.

However, the scene before them was totally out of their expectations. After their appearance, not only did Yun Che not reveal any fear or anxiety, there wasn't even a single change to his expression. The aura from his body did not stir in the slightest either; his calmness looked as though he was looking at two ants jumping out from the ground.

Not only was he not suppressed by their aura, he had even fluently called out their names... And then, not only was he not

afraid of their names, his every word, and every expression, was all filled with scorn and disdain.

He was actually scorning and mocking the Grand Elders of Divine Phoenix Sect... Two figures who had achieved the Sovereign Profound Realm, who had become the gods among people who practice the profound cultivation, and two figures who could truly look down on the entire world!!



# Chapter 712 – Battling A Monarch

---

“Hoho. After not seeing the sun and moon for a hundred years, I would have never expected that the current fledglings would actually become this unaware of the difference between heaven and earth.” His slightly changed expression quickly calmed down; Feng Tianyu was not angered because of Yun Che words, instead, he slowly shook his head as he let out a pitiful sigh.

“Ignorant junior, how are you

worthy of calling out the name of our Divine Phoenix Grand Sect Master?" Feng Tianqing asked with a solemn voice.

Their two faces looked as calm as before, but deep inside, both of their hearts were surging with waves of emotions... They had already repeatedly confirmed that the profound aura emitted from Yun Che's body was indeed merely at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm.

Although they had long

discovered his strength through Feng Hengkong's description, they were still shocked in their hearts after personally witnessing him themselves. With just the strength of the Emperor Profound, he had actually consecutively killed several princes and elders, forcing the Divine Phoenix Sect to have no choice but to call upon the grand generation for help. Just how incredible was this?

In this world, such a person actually existed!?

“Oh? I can’t understand those words.” Yun Che said with a cold smile, “Even I feel ashamed and saddened in place of your Grand Sect Master Feng Tianwei for bearing a son like Feng Hengkong whom cannot even be compared to pigs and dogs, does not carry any conscience, and should be struck by lightning from the heavens themselves. I’m not worthy of calling out his name? Heh. Even by calling out his full name, I feel that my mouth has been dirtied a little, pooh!”

“Impudent!!”

Ever since the establishment of the Divine Phoenix Sect five thousand years ago, who dared to humiliate the name of the Grand Sect Master in such a manner!? Even the Four Great Sacred Grounds definitely wouldn't dare to do so! Even Feng Tianyu's and Feng Tianwei's states of mind and soul, which had been refined for several hundred years, were completely enraged from Yun Che's words... They had already seen Yun Che's arrogance for themselves when they first met, but they never expected that he would be arrogant and impudent to such an extent!!

“Fledgling, you sure have huge guts to actually dare humiliate my divine sect’s Grand Sect Master!!” Feng Tianyu said with great anger.

“Grand Elder, no need to be agitated by him.” Feng Hengkong suddenly said with a solemn voice. “This devilspawn’s state of mind is irregular. Three years ago, his profound strength was merely at the Earth Profound Realm, yet when he was facing our divine sect alone, he was incomparably calm. Currently, although he’s

calm, it's definitely impossible for him not to fear you two Grand Elders. Evidently, his words are used to purposefully anger you, Grand Elders, in order to seek for the opportunity to flee while you two Grand Elders are in great fury!"

"This boy is incomparably sly and possesses various deceptive tricks, making it hard to come up with preventive measures against him. Grand Elders, there's completely no need to waste any of your saliva with him... Simply kill him this instant!!"

When Feng Hengkong's words fell, Feng Tianyu had already risen with wind-breaking speed. A flaming long halberd appeared horizontally in the air, and it pierced straight towards Yun Che. "Arrogant devilspawn, die!!"

When the Monarch made a move, the instant eruption of aura caused several tens of thousands of Phoenix disciples to tumble onto the ground from the blast of force; at the same time, several kilometers of wind and sand violently rose.



Yun Che's figure blurred; in one Star God's Broken Shadow, he lightly dodged, causing Feng Tianyu's attack to simply strike air and pierce through a blurred image. Suddenly, a profound glow appeared on Yun Che's body, and with the Extreme Mirage Lightning, he headed towards the southeastern direction like a bolt of lightning.

“Feng Hengkong, it seems like you're still not prepared to listen to me obediently today and you have even called out two old undead farts. Hahahaha... You'd

best not regret it!!”

As a level three Monarch, the attack he struck towards a Throne was actually completely dodged, and the flaming halberd, which was created through his Monarch fire energy, had merely pierced a blurred image. Because of this, Feng Tianyu was both astonished and enraged in an instant. He quickly raised his body as phoenix flames surged forth from his entire body and immediately chased after Yun Che. “Let me see where you’re thinking of fleeing to! Today, this old man will personally

burn you into ashes!!”

Feng Tianqing rose into the sky, but just as he was about give chase as well, Feng Tianyu’s voice sounded from afar, “Tianqing, stay within the sect. This devilspawn does not have the qualifications to have both of us attack at the same time!”

Feng Tianqing’s profound energy instantly retracted. He looked towards the direction where Yun Che and Feng Tianyu was heading to, and his face was filled with astonishment, “It

seems that what you have said wasn't an exaggeration. A mere Throne is actually capable of displaying such speed! It's seemingly comparable to Tianyu's!"

“There's an extremely high possibility that the profound movement skill he's executing is the Thief God Clan's Extreme Mirage Lightning. Extreme Mirage Lightning is, after all, the officially recognized number one profound movement skill of the Profound Sky Continent.” Feng Hengkong hatefully stated.

“But it’s definitely impossible for him to escape from Tianyu’s grasp.” Feng Tianqing plainly said, “Although his speed is sufficient to compete with Tianyu’s, when it comes to the depth of profound energy, the difference between him and Tianyu can be said to be of heaven and earth. It might be hard for Tianyu to catch up to him within a short amount of time, but as time progresses, Yun Che’s profound energy will definitely quickly deplete, and when that time comes, hmph, I wonder if he will still be as arrogant.”

Yun Che, with Extreme Mirage Lightning enveloping his body, moved at wind-breaking speed, as Divine Phoenix City passed by below him at an extreme speed. In a distance of two kilometers behind him, Feng Tianyu's Phoenix flames burned from his body; wherever he went, blazing waves of wind would start to swirl. His eyes stared deeply at Yun Che's figure, yet, his heart was growing more and more astonished... Although he was not losing his target from his line of sight the entire time, he was still unable to close the distance between him and Yun Che even after using his full strength. He had chased him for a long time, yet, he was still two

kilometers apart from Yun Che.

He, a mighty level three Monarch, with his full speed, was actually unable to catch up to a level three Throne!!

If someone were to bring up this matter to him, he would definitely take it as a huge joke. But as of this moment, this situation was happening on himself!

With speed like that, it was no wonder Feng Hengkong would

be forced to such an extent.

The clouds in the sky above were brutally blasted away by two violent waves of air. Not long after, two people, one behind the other, had flown away from the boundaries of Divine Phoenix City as they charged towards the southeast.

After traversing a hundred kilometers away from Divine Phoenix City, Feng Tianyu's expression fiercely focused all of a sudden. In his line of sight, Yun Che's figure was gradually



enlarging... The distance between the two had begun to shorten, closing in at a considerably quick pace.

Feng Tianyu's brows twitched as his face revealed a color of joy... Although Yun Che's speed was astonishing, when it came to endurance, how could it possibly compare to his? The flames on his body surged, and his speed faintly increased a notch again. Just as he was about to shout out, he suddenly saw that Yun Che's figure which was in front of him, quickly closed in...

He actually stopped in midair and even turned to face him.

“Heh, have you finally given up!?” Feng Tianyu coldly laughed. He did not ignore the words spoken by Feng Hengkong back then, and he did not have the slightest plan to stop and play with his prey. Reaching out his right arm, the flames on his body instantly expanded, forming eight bulky flaming pillars that blasted straight towards Yun Che.

They were engulfing flames coming from a Monarch. The moment eight blasts of Phoenix flames came charging forth, the space surrounding Yun Che had already twisted into countless spirals. All of the elements, sound, and even rays of light were being completely engulfed by the Monarch's flames.

Yun Che's complexion sank, and his gaze became cold and calm. His body was suspended in midair, yet he did not have the slightest of intention to dodge. On his body, Phoenix flames were similarly set ablaze, and his two arms, which were crossed in

front of his chest, were suddenly swung apart.

In an instant, eight similar pillars of Phoenix flames whizzed out from his body, carrying fiery radiance that was even deeper and hotter than Feng Tianyu's, as they charged towards the incoming eight blasts of Phoenix flames.

Sixteen blasts of Phoenix flames, like sixteen hideous-looking dancing fire pythons, struck against each other in midair.

With a loud bang, the earth instantly split opened into several dozens of giant cracks. Soil and dirt burst into the air like a fountain, reaching up to three hundred meters in height. The flaming light, which soared to the skies, actually reached up to several hundred meters in height; a crimson red radiance had even illuminated the entire sky for several seconds.

When the red light dispersed, the originally considerably flat ground below Yun Che and Feng Tianyu had already turned into a

gigantic, deep crater, and fiery stars scattered about in the air. Looking at the completely unharmed Yun Che, Feng Tianyu's expression finally had a slight change... Although these were Phoenix flames which he had merely casually thrown out, they were still profound energy of the Monarch level! Even if Yun Che was really as strong as Feng Hengkong had described, at the very least, he should have been heavily injured by the flames.

However, even in his dreams would he not expect that the Phoenix flames that he dished

out, would actually be completely nullified by Yun Che!

Feng Tianyu did not continue attacking. With eagle-like eyes, he stared straight at Yun Che, "Sect Master had told this old man that even though your profound strength is merely at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, in terms of ability, you're comparable to a half-step Monarch! At first, this old man did not believe it, but seeing it now, Sect Master's evaluation wasn't the least bit exaggerated.

“To be capable of unleashing might comparable to that of a half-step Monarch with profound energy of the Emperor Profound, forget about this old man, even in the history of Profound Sky Continent, there had never been an appearance of someone with talent that had reached such heights. Just by this level of talent alone, it isn’t an exaggeration to call you number one throughout the ages of Profound Sky Continent,” Feng Tianyu’s words were filled with praise, but the killing intent in his gaze had turned even heavier, “But, you just had to court death by coming to our Divine Phoenix Sect!! It seems this old man will have no choice



but to kill a true genius today!”

“Oh, then I really have to trouble you to personally make a move.” Yun Che said with a sarcastic look.

“Since you know of this old man’s name, then you should most likely know of this old man’s strength. It seems like you’re not that stupid, being aware that no matter how you run, it’s merely a meaningless struggle!” Feng Tianyu raised his hand, and an extremely dense amount of Phoenix flames

gathered above his palm, “Ever since this old man stepped into the realm of Monarchs, this old man has never made a move against anyone whose age is below three hundred years. With your talent, dying under this old man’s hands wouldn’t be considered as an injustice either!”

“Unfortunately, you’re more stupid than I thought.” Yun Che began to lightly laugh, “Do you really think I was running? Heh, I merely lured you into a place that will become a suitable grave for you! If I really wanted to flee, with your speed, you don’t even

have the qualifications to eat the dust behind my butt.”

“Even till the end, you still spout off such arrogant words. Die!!”

Feng Tianyu roared out violently; with a flip of his hand, a “phoenix arrow” smashed towards Yun Che. This time, he used a total of fifty percent of his profound strength. The phoenix arrow he threw swirled up a flaming tornado, carrying a thundering roar.

Yun Che's expression was completely stern... Jasmine had already informed him that Feng Tianyu's profound strength was at the mid-stage third level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Other than repelling Duke Huai once, and the occasional spars with Yun Qinghong in the Illusory Demon Realm, this was the first time he was facing a Monarch in its truest sense! And he was even a mortal enemy who wished to put him to death!

Before, Jasmine had told him that if he unleashed his full strength, he could roughly reach the power level of a level three

Monarch. But because his bloodline, physique, profound arts, and even killing moves cannot be compared to any profound practitioner in the Profound Sky Continent, in the same level of strength, he could be said to be an invincible existence... In other words, his profound strength could reach that belonging to a level three Monarch's, but anyone with the same profound strength of a level three Monarch could never be his match.

And Feng Tianyu was even using Phoenix flames as well, largely reducing the threat

towards him!

Hence, he was confident that there was no reason that he would lose to Feng Tianyu!

“Purgatory!!”

With a growl, Yun Che’s Purgatory gate was opened. The profound glow on his body and even the pupils in his eyes were instantly dyed with a crimson red color. In an instant, the aura of profound energy emitted from his entire body had even

more so wildly expanded in an explosive manner.

A violent torrent of profound energy came rushing forward, as though a large hammer was smashed forward. Sensing the change in profound aura from Yun Che's body, Feng Tianyu's expression suddenly underwent a great change; his pair of pupils shrank to the size of a needle width, "Wh... What!?"

Because, this was a profound aura which seemed to carry a power level not any less than

his!!



## Chapter 713 – Heavy Sword Suppression

---

Yun Che, whose strength was fully unleashed, actually reached out his arm and directly grabbed the incoming phoenix arrow that was shot at him. Following his growl, the phoenix arrow, which was condensed with an extremely powerful phoenix fire energy, was ruthlessly shattered in Yun Che's palm. It turned into two distorted lumps of residual flames, which Yun Che swept to the back.

“Ooo!!” Feng Tianyu’s pupils enlarged, and under his shock-filled expression, even a hint of fear could be discerned.

“The one who’s going to die is you!” Yun Che ignited the Phoenix blood within his body. Behind him, a clear image of a phoenix appeared in a flash, and in an instant, the pressure of a phoenix superimposed with his profound aura; the power it unleashed had even faintly suppressed Feng Tianyu.

Yun Che’s arm blasted out, and

in a split second, the Phoenix flames that erupted diffused into the entire space. Between heaven and earth, what remained was only an extremely pure crimson red color. With the Evil God's Fire Seed within his body, his speed of circulating fire energy was something that even Feng Tianyu, who had cultivated Phoenix flame energy for six hundred odd years could not compare with.

The flames, which instantly filled his entire vision, escalated the astonishment within Feng Tianyu's heart even more. The approaching Phoenix flames

caused his protective profound energy to tremble intensely, and because of that, he no longer dared to be careless or belittle his opponent. With the fastest speed possible, he circulated his profound energy to eighty percent, causing a gigantic torrent of flames to erupt from his entire body.

“Phoenix      Flames      Searing  
Heaven!!”

Boom!!

Like a gigantic rock of three kilometers in length being thrown into a calm sea, the air within a radius of several dozen kilometers was violently expelled, bringing about a strikingly terrifying ripple. The entire sky completely changed in color, and under the searing red light, two balls of phoenix flames that were capable of scorching the earth, intensely clashed into one another, burning, tearing, and engulfing each other.

And this, was merely the beginning. Under the collision and engulfing of the two spheres

of explosive phoenix flames, not only did they not gradually extinguish and disperse away, rather, they were expanding at an astonishing speed. The crimson red color grew even deeper, and within several dozen kilometers, all plant life were set ablaze. Under the enveloping flames, even rocks began to quickly melt.

Boom boom boom boom boom boom...

When it came to the richness of profound energy, Yun Che

naturally could not be compared with Feng Tianyu. However, when it came to using the same Phoenix flames, Yun Che's realm of profound arts, his understanding of the laws, and his control over fire energy, all suppressed Feng Tianyu, even if the latter was an almighty Monarch!

Although Yun Che's sudden increase of profound energy shocked Feng Tianyu, subconsciously, he still did not think that Yun Che possessed the necessary strength to fight him. However against this simple blast of flames, he had

already used a total of eighty percent of his profound strength. Yet, not only was he unable to suppress Yun Che's Phoenix flames, he even began to feel an increasing pressure after a short stalemate.

“Ha!!”

A gigantic image of a phoenix appeared behind Feng Tianyu. As he raised his profound strength to ninety percent, the Phoenix flames on his body once again erupted, stirring a gigantic fire whirlpool, and forcefully



suppressing Yun Che's phoenix flames in an instant.

“Break it!!”

The Phoenix flames blasted apart, causing the space to shatter. Countless spatial fragments shot out like needles, penetrating the blue skies and the earth. Under the torrent of flames, Yun Che and Feng Tianyu were separated far apart. Feng Tianyu's pupils shrank as he stared deeply at Yun Che... From what he saw, even though Yun Che was blasted further

away, his expression was still calm and did not look one bit pale. Only his clothes showed signs of damage, but there wasn't any hint of injury on his body.

Twenty-two years old... Third Level of the Emperor Profound Realm... Yet, just from the collision of pure Profound Energy, he was forced to use ninety percent of his strength. This was a situation where he never would have even dreamt of in the past.

“This child... definitely cannot be left alive!”

Only after exchanging blows with Yun Che, did Feng Tianyu, who did not even place Yun Che in his eyes in the beginning, truly realize the terror that was Yun Che. At the age of twenty-two, Yun Che already possessed such power; Feng Tianyu couldn't imagine just what kind of terrifying realm he would achieve if he reached his own age. And this person was even Divine Phoenix Sect's mortal enemy...

No matter what, at all costs, he must die!!

“Who is... your teacher?” The muscles and blood veins in Feng Tianyu’s entire body tensed up, and around his body, an increasingly concentrated amount of fire spirits began to appear. Realizing how terrifying Yun Che was, he had decided to send this junior to his grave within the shortest time possible; he was no longer hesitant to use his full strength. If he was kept alive... in the future, he will definitely be the nightmare of Divine Phoenix Sect.

And like everyone else, he wanted to know who could actually bring up such a disciple that could even shock a Monarch like him to the core!

“You’re still not qualified to know.” Yun Che coldly said.

“Then you can die now.” Feng Tianyu never hoped to receive an answer from Yun Che’s own mouth either. With his arms spread open, his hair straightened up amidst the flames, and the phoenix image

behind him released a  
resounding and ear-piercing  
phoenix cry.

He wasn't releasing any  
phoenix flames from his body,  
but the temperature of the air  
was rising at a terrifying speed.  
The space was also quickly  
turning crimson red amidst the  
distortion. The shattered stones  
and sand particles on the ground  
were trembling, and even a large  
number of them began to float in  
the air.

“Phoenix Domain!!” After the

sudden flash in Feng Tianyu's eyes, the surrounding area of a few dozen kilometers instantly turned into a gigantic sea of flames. Within the burning sea, countless Phoenix Flame Silhouettes were dancing willfully and letting out long cries, releasing a destructive force that could potentially burn everything away.

In the large flaming domain, Feng Tianyu and Yun Che were situated exactly at the center. Feng Tianyu raised both of his hands. In his domain, he was naturally its dictator. He could change the domain and circulate

every corner of its power as he pleased. Everything within the domain would become his advantage, “Fledgeling, before you die, use your life to properly witness what a domain at the Monarch level is! In this phoenix domain, even if you use all the strength in your body to defend, you will still turn into ashes within ten breaths of time!”

Domains at the Monarch level were definitely unmatched and powerful. They could be called the highest level of power in the Sky Profound Continent.



However, never in his dreams would Feng Tianyu have possibly thought that, when it came to pure fire energy, even if it was ten times stronger, it was impossible to harm Yun Che, who possessed the Fire Spirit Evil Body, in any way.

Standing at the center of this domain of destruction, Yun Che lightly glanced at his surroundings. What appeared on his face was not shock and fear, but a cold smile which Feng Tianyu could not comprehend, “If you didn’t activate this phoenix domain, your death would have been a little slower.”

“Hong’er, it’s time to come out and work!!”

“Ah... Ou!”

With a flash of scarlet red light, the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword had already been grasped in Yun Che’s hands. At that moment, all of the erupting flames in the entire phoenix domain seemed to have stopped, while Feng Tianyu’s pupils suddenly spasmed, as though they had been pierced by metal needles.

Feng Tianyu had lived for several hundred years, but this was the first time he had seen such a gigantic sword. From this gigantic sword, he was seemingly unable to sense any presence. However, merely by making eye contact with it, his heart and soul, actually appeared to have convulsed from fear.

Ha!!

With a swing of his arms, the Heaven Smiting Sword threw

out a scarlet red arc. Even though it was just a single and simple swing, it carried a shocking and thundering tearing sound... At the front trajectory of the gigantic sword's swing, a rift of about thirteen meters long and fifteen centimeters wide was actually torn within this Monarch-level phoenix domain – Feng Tianyu's strongest ability.

No matter how rampant the surrounding Phoenix flames were, or how the Phoenix Silhouette danced, the rift still did not close even after a long time.

“What is... that sword?” Feng Tianyu’s voice was trembling.

Yun Che did not answer, the bones of his entire body cracked and popped ... After his marriage with Little Demon Empress, he received a large number of peerless famed swords. With Hong’er madly consuming them everyday, the amount of energy stored within the Heaven Smiting Sword grew increasingly terrifying. Simply based on mass alone, it had already reached about three hundred thousand kilograms.

If it was the past Yun Che who had just arrived in the Illusory Demon Realm, it would be seemingly impossible for him to wield it. But for the current Yun Che, he could easily control it as though it was his own body!

From witnessing Feng Tianyu's Phoenix Domain, Yun Che also saw the limits of Feng Tianyu's strength, which also allowed him to confirm that there was definitely no reason he would lose to Feng Tianyu. Even the possibility of killing him today, was above seventy percent!

Yun Che flew into the air, cruising straight through the Phoenix Domain as the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword swept horizontally towards Feng Tianyu.

Wherever the Heaven Smiting Sword went, the Phoenix Domain would collapse in layers. The Phoenix flames, which were initially running rampant, were suppressed to the point of being completely extinguished. Within the phoenix domain, which was several hundred kilometers in size, a gully of three hundred

meters in length was created from the blast in the blink of an eye. Feng Tianyu's face was distorted, the phoenix image behind his back was struggling, and the protective profound energy surrounding his body seemed as though it had been pierced by countless metal needles as it produced sizzling noises. He grabbed onto a flaming halberd, and all of the flames within the surrounding three hundred meters of space gathered onto the halberd itself, forming a gigantic flaming python that was sent smashing straight at Yun Che.



Boom!!

Red lights burst out, and the sky once again changed in color. Under the torrent of energy from the Heaven Smiting Sword, Feng Tianyu's flaming python merely lasted for half a breath, before it was minced apart. Feng Tianyu's vision whitened as he felt as though his chest was struck by a huge mountain. In an instant, his flesh turned into mash, and afterwards, through his ribcage and a newly donned protective profound energy, he was able to barely resist the attack.

Wind whistled past his ears as Feng Tianyu was sent flying in a straight line. Only after traversing two or three kilometers did he finally stop. The energy and blood in his entire body seethed, and blood profusely flowed out of his abdomen. He reached out his arm, only to realize that on both his arms, several long wounds had been ripped open.

The surrounding flames were dispersing, and the temperature quickly dropped as well. Losing control of his ability, the

Phoenix Domain instantly collapsed.

Earlier, he proclaimed that Yun Che would definitely be burnt away in the Phoenix Domain within ten breaths of time, but after ten breaths of time... it was instead the Phoenix Domain which met a tragic end of collapsing in an instant.

“Impossible...” Feng Tianyu held his abdomen with his hand, but he had forgotten to suppress the injuries that were not as severe. He looked at Yun Che

who was right in front of him, and the distorted expression on his face was as though he was having a terrifying nightmare. “Impossible... How could something like this happen...”

He had used a hundred percent of his profound strength, only to be heavily injured by his opponent with a single strike... The domain, which he had gathered with the highest level of his power, actually collapsed just like that in a short ten breaths of time.

The strength behind the attack that struck his body earlier... How could it possibly have come from the hands of this twenty two year old in front of him!?

“I have already told you. If you didn’t use your domain, and had instead saved your energy, you could have possibly died a little slower!” A cold killing intent flashed past Yun Che’s eyes. He did not give Feng Tianyu the opportunity to catch his breath. The Heaven Smiting Sword once again smashed out, causing the several dozen meters of space in front of him to curve to a great degree from the extremely

tyrannical power of his heavy sword.

The attack he endured earlier was as terrifying as a nightmare, so how would Feng Tianyu dare to block it head on? With his contracted pupils, a flaming shadow swept out of his body as he quickly retreated several dozen meters back... But the width of the range of the heavy sword's attack could definitely not be compared to any regular weapons. Even though Feng Tianyu had retreated to a very far distance with extreme speed, he was still swept by the shockwave of the Heaven

Smiting Sword's force. Although it was merely a shockwave, it caused his entire body to ruthlessly tumble and turn, almost making him fall to the ground.

Feng Tianyu was both shocked and furious. With his two hands raised together, two spheres of Phoenix flames that were several meters thick fiercely shot out before merging into one and shooting straight at Yun Che.

Boom!!

With a loud boom, the Phoenix flames, which Feng Tianyu shot out with his full strength was dispersed with a smash of the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword. After the dispersal of flames, the gigantic sword approached at high speed. Feng Tianyu's face turned ashen from shock as he once again retreated with all his might. Using all of his profound energy, he concentrated on protecting the front of his body. Amidst his fear, he actually did not dare to once again throw a counterattack.

---



Within Phoenix City, the constant flashes of red light in the southeastern sky could be clearly seen. Although the roars came from extremely far away, they still rang in everyone's ears.

“Heheh, as expected, it's impossible for Yun Che to escape from Grand Elder's clutches.” Feng Ximing coldly laughed, “For Grand Elder to personally make a move... it's simply too easy on him!!”

“It's already been a good long

while since Grand Elder made his move, yet it's actually isn't over yet... Could it be that Grand Elder is playing a game of catching the mouse?" Feng Feilie said with a faint smile. Every single one of them had no doubt that it was just an easy feat for Feng Tianyu if he wanted to kill Yun Che.

Feng Tianqing's expression was very calm in the beginning, but as the glow in the southeastern sky grew even more intense, and as the sounds grew even heavier, his brows began to sink bit by bit.

Noticing the changes in his expression, Feng Hengkong asked, “Grand Elder, could there have been some unforeseen events over at Elder Tianyu’s side?”

Feng Tianyu said with a low voice, “Initially, Tianyu only used half of his profound strength... then, eighty percent of it... but now, he has actually raised it to a hundred percent! What’s going on? No matter how exaggerated Yun Che’s strength was, it can’t possibly force Elder Tianyu to use all his strength...

Could, someone else have appeared? Or perhaps there's a certain powerful helper on Yun Che's side?"

At this moment, in Feng Tianqing's ears, a pressing, anxious Phoenix Spirit sound transmission was suddenly sent by Feng Tianyu.

"Come quick... I'm not his match!!"

Feng Tianqing's expression gravely changed; he was simply

unable to believe the words he just heard. He raised his head and looked towards the southeastern sky and took a deep, heavy breath. Not having the time to explain to Feng Hengkong and the rest, he had already rose into the air and charged straight over with his fastest speed.

# Chapter 714 – Quick End To The Battle

---

With the Heaven Smiting Sword's wild and violent attacks complementing the Star God's Broken Shadow, the moment Yun Che had suppressed his opponent, a reversal was bound to never happen. At this time, Feng Tianyu was in this sort of predicament. He had lived for several hundred years, and had exchanged blows with countless experts, but even if he was facing an opponent who was several times stronger than himself, he had never been completely suppressed to this

extent.

Under Yun Che's hurricane-like strikes, Feng Tianyu could only guard and retreat desperately. In a blink of an eye, he was consecutively struck several dozen kilometers away. During the entire process, forget about counter-attacking or fleeing, even catching his breath had become an extravagant wish. He was unable to get on his feet as he felt as though his entire being was firmly pressed under several huge mountains.

In the earlier clash of phoenix flames, he was able to slightly take the upper hand, but the moment Yun Che pulled out the Heaven Smiting Sword and made a single slash, he was suppressed to the point of not being able to catch his breath at all. But because of his incomparably rich amount of profound energy, he had yet to fall or receive serious injuries. Under Yun Che's several dozen strikes, the energy and blood in his entire body had long been in a state of turmoil, as though they were boiling from within.

At this moment, a surging wave



of air came from the northwestern direction at a breakneck speed. As soon as it appeared, Feng Tianyu's unbearably painful expression finally revealed a hint of ease. While that wave of air had yet to approach, a gigantic sphere of phoenix flames had already enveloped the sky and earth, blasting towards Yun Che.

Yun Che forced open his distance with Feng Tianyu with a slash, and with another fierce swing, under the gigantic torrent of profound energy, the phoenix flames that was blasting towards him were instantly

distorted into another direction, straight towards his back. The moment it made contact with the ground, it loudly exploded into several sky-piercing fire pillars of up to several hundred meters tall.

Under the radiance of the fiery light, another person stood next to Feng Tianyu who had finally caught his breath after escaping Yun Che's heavy sword strikes . He was of similar age with Feng Tianyu, and he was dressed in the same apparel; naturally, it was Feng Tianqing who rushed over in full speed. However, his expression looked extremely

hideous, because like Feng Tianyu, he could clearly feel that heart wrenching aura from Yun Che's body. In his heart, he was even more so filled with extreme shock and disbelief.

Feng Tianyu's arms were bleeding profusely. He hurriedly gathered his energy to suppress all of the injuries on his body as he solemnly said, "Tianqing, this boy is simply a monster. He's ten, hundred times stronger than we imagined... Tch, we have to unleash our full strength together... If this boy doesn't die... Our divine sect will never be at ease!!"

There wasn't a need for Feng Tianyu to explain. His condition and the aura emitted from Yun Che's body were already sufficient enough to allow Feng Tianqing to understand that they had completely wrongly estimated Yun Che's strength. In regards to Feng Tianyu's final words, he incomparably agreed to them as well. Feng Tianqing took a deep breath and said, "There's no longer a need to capture him alive... Just deal the killing blow, do not give him any chance to breathe."

“Strike!!”

Feng Tianqing took half a step forward... and within this half a step worth of time, the phoenix flames on his body had already expanded by several dozen meters. In his hands, an additional flaming heavy blade that was about five inches in length appeared. With Feng Tianyu following closely behind, both of their phoenix flames blended together, and looking from afar, it was as though there was another crimson red sun in the sky.

And under the “sun”, the boundless earth’s surface quickly turned into tumbling lava.

“With these two working together, the longer this battle drags on, the more disadvantageous it will become. If there’s any other unforeseen events, then it will be even harder for you to deal with it... End the battle quickly!” Jasmine said with a solemn voice.

“I know!” Yun Che tightly grasped the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword with both of

his hands. Before the sword moved, a catastrophic aura had already enveloped the great earth. Facing the tag-team of two great Phoenix Monarchs, he did not prepare to cautiously make his retreat, instead, he took the initiative to step forward. Smashing his sword out, the most intense of phoenix flames were set ablaze on both his body and sword as a near substantial phoenix image spread out its wings behind his back, roaring out.

“Destroying Sky Decimating Earth!!”

At the same time, Feng Tianqing's and Feng Tianyu's phoenix flames smashed towards Yun Che in an overwhelming manner as well.

“Phoenix Fire Burning Heaven!!”

The two Phoenix Fire Burning Heaven carried a destructive force that an ordinary person couldn't possibly imagine. The enormous, blinding fiery radiance covered every other light, like a devil originating



from the deep pits of hell, as it engulfed the approaching Yun Che.

Three Monarch-level powers unfancily clashed with each other, and for a moment, even all sounds had been engulfed. The surging flames charged straight above the skies, completely swallowing the surrounding area of several dozen kilometers. In that short moment, all of the living beings and inanimate objects within turned into ashes. Space wildly collapsed, and several strips of gigantic space fissures ferociously swallowed the

explosive power and flames.

One was simply unable to open their eyes due to the extremely bright light, and under the enveloping fiery radiance, Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing were ruthlessly sent flying away by the violent energy. In midair, they supported each other with their strength, only stopping after all the energy in their bodies were depleted. Both of their faces were as red as blood, and the profound energy within their entire bodies were wantonly clashing in their meridians; it was chaotic to the point of being unsuppressable. A

trickle of blood was present on Feng Tianqing's lips, but his condition was a little better, since only his arms suffered heavier injuries. Feng Tianyu's chest, however, was already badly mutilated, and his two hands, which were grabbing onto the blade, had even revealed ghastly white bones; at least half of the meridians in his two arms were even destroyed. He seemed to be no longer able to grasp the hilt of the blade tightly from the intense pain and serious injuries.

Ding...

With a light ring, the flaming heavy blade in Feng Tianqing's hands suddenly shattered. From the hilt of the blade to the blade's body itself, the finely scattered fragments dispersed onto the ground.

Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing were both startled at the same time. Feng Tianqing let out a long sigh; he did not mourn for his shattered precious blade, instead, he solemnly said, "Forget it. With my hands seriously injured to this extent, I'm afraid even ten years

wouldn't be enough for them to fully recover. Ten years should be enough to find another suitable blade... Tianyu, how's your injuries?"

"I'm fine." Although Feng Tianyu had already exchanged blows with Yun Che earlier, his profound strength has, after all, surpassed Feng Tianqing by a small realm, so his injuries weren't much heavier than Feng Tianqing's. With his gaze fixated on the overbearing flames in front of him that were unceasingly engulfing everything, he said with a hoarse voice, "For that attack

earlier, both of us had used our entire strength. Although we both suffered some injuries, that devilspawn... should have already turned into ashes.”

Feng Tianqing slowly nodded, “Although his abilities are irregularly strong, he merely possesses an Emperor Profound physique after all, so there’s absolutely no reason for him to survive. Haah, even in my dreams, I would have never thought that it the small Blue Wind Nation, an impossible freak like him would actually appear. He actually needed the both of us to join hands...”

Boom boom boom...

Extremely oppressive booms suddenly echoed out. Irregular sways suddenly occurred to the boundless phoenix flames in front of them, and in the next moment, they were violently split apart. Yun Che, along with that Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword which was even larger than his own physique, suddenly came assaulting forward with a terrifying wave of air that was not any weaker than the one he had before.

“Wh... What!?”

Feng Tianyu's and Feng Tianqing's eyes widened at the same time. At this single moment, for the first time in their lives, they experienced what was known as true terror.

Even if Yun Che did not die, they would have been still able to accept it a little if he appeared while bloodsoaked. However, Yun Che's gaze was still as cold as a sharp blade, and his aura had not even weakened in the



slightest bit. From what they saw, they were seemingly unable to see any scars on his body. Even if they were to die a hundred times, this was an outcome that they could never accept or believe.

Under their extreme shock and disbelief, their bodies instinctively reacted in tacit agreement. With one facing the left and the other facing the right, they fled off at extreme speeds. Earlier, Yun Che had instantly smashed out his immensely exhaustive “Destroying Sky Decimating Earth”, evidently wanting to

follow Jasmine's advice of ending the battle quickly. Even though he had the absolute advantage the entire time, his opponents were still two mighty Monarchs; they definitely wouldn't be easy to take down.

Since he wanted to end this battle quickly, how could he possibly allow them to flee?

Yun Che did not chase any one of them. Instead, after slightly pausing at their original position before charging away, a rising glow instantly flashed within his

pupils, and above his head, an image of a gigantic azure dragon appeared in a flash.

“Dragon Soul Domain!!”

Spiritual pressure originating from the Primordial Azure Dragon descended from the skies, enveloping Feng Tianyu’s and Feng Tianqing’s souls. With the duo’s Monarch-level souls, they shouldn’t have suffered too greatly under the Dragon Soul Domain. But in the first place, their souls were already this close to flying out of their bodies

due to the shock they received from Yun Che, thus, under the pressure of the Dragon Soul, they instantly sank into the deep abyss of fear. Their bodies instantly turned limp from extreme terror as they fell straight to the ground; their protective profound energy was also greatly affected as it quickly dispersed like tidal waters.

Pfft!!

Amidst the leather breaking sound, the Heaven Smiting Devil Sword easily pierced Feng

Tianyu from his back. The surging energy flooded inside his body, instantly mincing his meridians, profound veins and organs inside his entire body.

Because of the protective layer made from a Monarch's powers, when Yun Che smashed out the Destroying Sky Decimating Earth earlier, it merely caused them to suffer slightly heavy injuries. But, under the Dragon Soul Domain, with a casual swing of his sword, Yun Che could easily take their lives, as though they were mere commoners.

This was the terrifying nature of the Dragon Soul Domain.

Feng Tianyu's face froze as his senses, which had yet to completely disappear, had already clearly seen his own death. With the last of his willpower, he turned his head to the back bit by bit, seemingly wanting to clearly see Yun Che's face again before his death...

“You... mon... ster...”

His head had only turned halfway through, before it heavily drooped down, no longer making a single sound. The two words, which had costed him all of his willpower to shout out, carried neither hatred nor unwillingness, but instead astonishment and disbelief that could not be dispelled even in death.

“Hmph, thank you for your praise.” Yun Che let out a cold laugh. With a swing of his sword, Feng Tianyu’s corpse was swung far away, falling into the sea of phoenix flames. In a blink of an eye, it had already turned

into ashes.

In the several hundred years Feng Tianyu had lived for, not even in his dreams would he expect that he would actually fall under the hands of someone who was merely around twenty years old.

Yun Che coldly turned around and gazed at Feng Tianqing. The Dragon Soul Domain earlier had only lasted for two breaths of time before it was recalled by Yun Che. Feng Tianqing was still sitting limply on the ground, but



it was unknown whether his condition was due to the shock of the Dragon Soul which had yet to completely disperse or the fact that his spirit had completely collapsed. He did not take the opportunity to flee, and his eyes, which were staring at Yun Che, had already turned hollow.

“You... Just who... are you?” Feng Tianqing’s lips shivered, and his every word was similarly trembling as well. Both Feng Tianyu and him had joined forces, yet they were still defeated by Yun Che to such an extent. He was now the only one

left, and he was even bearing serious injuries. In addition to the collapse of his spirit from the force of pressure brought by the Dragon Soul, he had already completely lost the will to resist.

“I am Yun Che, Prince Consort of the Blue Wind Imperial Family, husband of the current Blue Wind Empress, and the son-in-law of the former Blue Wind Emperor who was killed by your people! A citizen of Blue Wind Nation which had been violated and trampled into hell by you people for no reason! Do you understand now!?” Yun Che coldly said.

“...” Feng Tianqing’s hands had sunk into the ground below him as he muttered, “Is this heaven’s will...”

“Heaven’s will?” Yun Che solemnly let out a cold snort, “Heh, this is retribution which your Divine Phoenix Sect deserves!! And this retribution... has only just begun!!”

“Heheh...” Feng Tianqing listlessly laughed, “Although I was useless and failed to kill you, the foundation of five

thousand years behind our Divine Phoenix Sect isn't something the likes of you can possibly move... With the two of us dead, you... will definitely not be able to live past today either."

Boom!!

A dull bursting sound rang out. With his eyes closed, his entire body shook as blood gushed out from his seven orifices. After which, he slowly collapsed onto the ground.

As a Phoenix Grand Elder, he was unwilling to be killed by Yun Che. However, he knew that he wouldn't be able to escape from Yun Che's grasp, hence, he killed himself by self-destructing his own profound meridians and organs... After the collapse of his body, the sparse Phoenix blood on his body were also set ablaze, burning his corpse within the Phoenix flames.

Yun Che turned his head away, kept the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword, and let out a soft, cold laugh, "Whether I'm able to move it or not, is not something you can decide!"

When his voice fell, he had already risen into the air, charging straight towards the direction of Divine Phoenix City.

---

Bang!!

Feng Hengkong's body suddenly shook, as though his entire being was struck by a bolt of heavenly lightning; his four limbs and facial features had

intensely contorted as his body swayed, staggered, and then fell backwards.

“Sect Master!!”

“Royal father!!”

The surrounding elders and princes were instantly in great shock. They held him up in a fluster as they anxiously asked, “Sect Master, what happened to you?”

Feng Hengkong's lips were still trembling, and his pair of pupils were in enlarged states the entire time, unable to revert back to normal. That was an extremely intense form of fear and astonishment.

“Elder Tianyu... is dead.”



# Chapter 715 – Divine Phoenix's Nightmare

---

Aside from the Four Great Sacred Grounds, the only place within Profound Sky Seven Nations which possessed Monarchs was the Divine Phoenix Sect. The birth of the first Monarch in the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect signified that the strength of the sect was now on an entirely different level. The most telltale sign that a sect's strength was constantly growing would be the number of Monarchs within the sect increasing.

A thousand years ago, the number of Monarchs within Divine Phoenix Sect exceeded ten. This shocked everyone within the Profound Sky Continent, including the Four Great Sacred Grounds. It also meant that Divine Phoenix Sect had gained the right to truly speak on the same level as the Four Great Sacred Grounds.

Within this five thousand years, the Monarchs of Divine Phoenix Sect had always died of old age, and the Monarchs who filled in the opened positions

would only be even stronger. And, a Monarch falling in battle had never once happened in the history of Divine Phoenix Sect. Currently, the Divine Phoenix Sect had a total of thirteen Monarchs, and within the sect, there might be even stronger trump cards lying hidden, but it would not surpass the number of thirteen by too huge a margin. Thus, the fall of a Monarch's direct effect would be an instant reduction in terms of the deterrence level of the Divine Phoenix Sect by a large degree. And to the entire sect, it definitely couldn't be considered as an outcome of merely having one of their fingers broken... instead, it would be seemingly

equivalent to having one of their hands chopped off!!

It would be shattering one of the only few tens of cornerstones which the Divine Phoenix Sect possessed!

Hence, Feng Hengkong's words were undoubtedly a thunderbolt under a blue sky that rang in the ears of all the Phoenix clansmen.

Among the crowd of Phoenix Elders and princes, all of their expressions changed greatly to

one of astonishment. Although these were words personally conveyed by the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, no matter how, they simply could not believe them.

“Impossible, after all, Elder Tianyu is a Monarch, the strongest being in this world! How could he possibly die... Impossible...”

“Could Yun Che... No, impossible... With Elder Tianyu’s strength, how could he possibly lose to Yun Che... Even

if he encountered someone from the Sacred Grounds, he shouldn't have met with an incident in such a short amount of time... Sect Master, there must be some kind of mistake."

"Tianqing... What about Grand Elder Tianqing..."

The crowd of Phoenix Elders were in a fluster. The fall of a Phoenix Monarch was a loss and blow countless times heavier than the deaths of four princes and five elders. Feng Hengkong's expression was deathly pale; he

had already faintly guessed that it might really be Yun Che's doing... Before his soul and expression could even ease up a little, the shattering sound of the other soul imprint reverberated in his mind, causing his pupils to widen once again. His chest, which was already feeling extreme discomfort to begin with, felt like it had been ruthlessly pierced by another poisonous blade...

“Elder Tianqing... has also died...”

Feng Hengkong softly said. With hollow eyes and a limp body, under this extremely heavy shock, he was no longer able to gather the least bit of strength.

Another bolt of heavenly lightning ruthlessly struck into everyone's souls, causing the world in front of their eyes to spin.

The soul imprints of all core members of the sect were carved into the soul of every generation of Divine Phoenix Sect Masters,



and these soul imprints were connected to the lives of every corresponding person. At the moment of their deaths, the soul imprints would shatter, and the Phoenix Sect Masters would be the first to know of them.

These words, which were personally spoken by Feng Hengkong, could never be jokes. His tone and reaction clearly indicated that both Feng Tianyu's and Feng Tianqing's soul imprints... had shattered and disappeared.

“Just... Just who is it?” Feng Feilie said with a trembling voice.

“It definitely cannot be Yun Che... Even if Yun Che has the greatest of talent, it’s impossible for him to be a match for two Grand Elders... nor is it possible for him to kill two Grand Elders in such a short amount of time... Just who is it!?” Feng Ximing growled.

“In this world, the ones capable of causing the deaths of two Grand Elders can only possibly

be people from the Sacred Grounds... Are they preparing to breach decorum with us?" A Phoenix Elder said while gnashing his teeth. Among them, not a single one of them believed that Yun Che was the culprit behind Feng Tianyu's and Feng Tianqing's deaths. Feng Tianyu was a level three Monarch, and Feng Tianqing was a level two Monarch. Felling a Monarch could be considered as the most difficult task in the Profound Sky Continent.

To consecutively kill Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing in just a short seven to eight

minutes... It was definitely impossible even for a level five Monarch.

“Sect Master, I shall investigate this matter with haste!” Feng Feilie said as he prepared to ascend into the skies.

“Even Elder Tianyu and Elder Tianqing lost their lives together... Are you preparing to send yourself to death!?”

His sunken voice stopped Feng Feilie’s body in the air. Feng

Hengkong finally stood up, but his face was still miserably pale. Every single one of the muscles in his face was twitching uncontrollably, and the profound aura emitting from his body was even more chaotic. The developments every single day had far surpassed his predictions, and the consequences grew even more terrifying as each day went by...

In the beginning, Yun Che's arrival had even delighted him, seeing it as the former walking right into their trap... However, in just short four days, Yun Che had destroyed the Phoenix God

Sculpture, killed four of his sons, five elders, and more than a hundred disciples... And now, he had actually killed two Grand Elders who were at the Sovereign Profound Realm!

He had truly shaken the cornerstones of his Divine Phoenix Sect!!

In these four days, he felt as though he had been dreaming. An surreal, yet extremely terrifying nightmare.

He was already beginning to realize that what he had offended was not just a small figure whom he could toy around with, but a true devil.

“Ming’er...” Feng Hengkong absentmindedly mumbled.

“This son is present.” Feng Ximing hurriedly stepped forward.

Feng Hengkong reached out his hand and passed a mysterious jade, which was emitting out a

blazing red light, into Feng Ximing's hands. "This is the Phoenix God Jade... take it and enter the Phoenix Fire Divine Realm... Find your grandfather... Tell him... Elder Tianyu and Elder Tianqing had already fallen... and your four royal brothers..."

"B... But..." Feng Ximing held onto the Phoenix God Jade and was at a loss for a moment. The Phoenix Fire Divine Realm was the absolute forbidden grounds of Divine Phoenix Sect. He was the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince, however, ever since he had been born a hundred odd



years ago, he had never been allowed to enter.

“Hurry and go!”

“Yes!” Feng Ximing could only agree as he hastily flew in the direction of the Phoenix God Great Hall. The only entrance to the Phoenix Fire Divine Realm, was the Phoenix God Great Hall.

Feng Hengkong did not choose to personally head there himself because he felt that he did not have the face to meet his own

father. As the Divine Phoenix Sect Master, the consequences of losing two Monarchs was something he knew more clearly than anyone else. It was an immense loss that could only be remedied by spending immeasurable resources and effort.

“Haah, no matter.” Feng Feilie let out a long sigh, “Our sect’s strength grows gradually with every passing year, and has long caused the Four Great Sacred Grounds to feel restless. They must have long devised a scheme... With the presence of Ancestral Phoenix God as a

deterrent, they do not dare to act rashly in Phoenix City. And this time, Elder Tianyu and Elder Tianqing had left the boundaries of Phoenix City, and hence were plotted against...”

This was the only explanation which Feng Feilie could think of with his own knowledge and experience. Because in this world, only the Four Sacred Grounds were capable of killing Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing. Although this explanation was a little forced, other than this, he could not think of any other possibilities.

“No,” Feng Hengkong, however, slowly shook his head, “People from the Four Great Sacred Grounds, even if a master of the Four Great Sacred Grounds personally make an appearance, he would still not easily make a move against the Monarchs of our Divine Sect... The person who killed Elder Tianyu and Elder Tianqing, was Yun Che.”

“What?” The surrounding people was thrown into a great shock, and afterwards, what their faces showed were

expressions of complete and utter disbelief, “That’s impossible... That’s definitely impossible! No matter how strong Yun Che is, how can he possibly be a match against two Grand Elders who have stepped into the Sovereign Profound Realm... And earlier, when facing an attack from the Grand Elders, Yun Che’s first reaction was clearly turning tail to flee! No matter how, Yun Che was surely not the one who did it!”

“It’s not impossible... just because you think it’s impossible. We are simply unable to believe it either...”

Feng Hengkong's breathing was incomparably coarse, "Elder Tianyu did not leave behind any soul messages before he died. Evidently, his life was taken by surprise... Elder Tianqing, however, died by destroying his own lifeline and profound veins... The soul transmission he left behind before he died were only two words..."

"Yun Che..."

At this moment, every member of Divine Phoenix Sect held their breaths.

“There... There must be some other circumstances in this! Three years ago, Yun Che’s strength had only slightly surpassed Fourteenth Prince’s, no matter how heaven-defying the speed of his growth is, he can’t possibly...” Feng Feilie still could not believe it, and similarly, everyone else could not believe it either.

“Let’s not panic for now. Once Grand Sect Master makes his way out of the Divine Realm, any kind of menace will be removed.” With the calmest tone

he could muster, Fourth Elder consolingly said. At the moment, they could only wait for Grand Sect Master to take charge of the entire situation.

When the three words “Grand Sect Master” were brought up, the sunken atmosphere had evidently lifted. Although Feng Hengkong was the present Sect Master, at his current age, he was still in his growth phase. In the hearts of this generation of elders, the three words “Grand Sect Master” carried countless times more weight than “Sect Master”.



However, this lifting atmosphere did not last for long. The expressions of all Phoenix Elders suddenly changed as they simultaneously looked towards the southeastern direction. Over there, a violent torrent of air was charging towards their location at breakneck speed.

This time, Yun Che did not have the slightest of intention of concealing his presence. Even though there was still a distance of close to fifty kilometers between them, the terror behind his profound aura had caused

the faces of all Phoenix Elders to lose their color.

“Hurry and activate the Phoenix Fire Barrier!!” Feng Hengkong roared out.

Such a terrifying aura... Yun Che was clearly approaching while carrying anger and killing intent! With his abilities to kill Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing, if he were to immediately start a massacre the moment he arrived, no one could stop him then! Under his hands, countless of Phoenix Elders and disciples

would lose their lives!.

Before Grand Sect Master Feng Tianwei could make his way here, they definitely could not afford to suffer another immense loss.

Yun Che's speed was fully unleashed and his profound strength was maintained at the Burning Heart state as his gaze locked onto where Phoenix City was situated. Before closing in on Phoenix City, an irregular profound energy fluctuation suddenly appeared. Yun Che

hurriedly slowed down, yet his body still ruthlessly struck onto a layer of transparent screen.

With a “bang”, Yun Che was knocked far back. In front of him, a crimson red glow flashed for a moment, before disappearing in the next instant.

“A protective barrier?” Yun Che’s eyes narrowed as he let out a cold laugh. Summoning the Heaven Smiting Sword, he smashed forward.

Boom!!!!

A loud explosion had seemingly shattered the skies. The entire barrier, and even the entire Divine Phoenix Sect, trembled. Within the barrier, a large number of Phoenix disciples whose strength were on the low side instantly turned deaf from that explosive roar, and their visions darkened then after.

Within Phoenix City, countless of people rolled onto the ground, screaming in pain as they covered their ears.

Boom!!!!

Boom!!!!

Boom!!!!

With one strike after another, like a hammer of the heavens, his sword ruthlessly smashed onto the Phoenix Fire Barrier. Every single one of the strikes was earth-shattering, shaking every inch of space within Phoenix City.

Boom!!!!

Upon the thirteenth strike, on this barrier which was protecting the entire Divine Phoenix Sect... this thousand year old barrier which was protecting the number one sect of the Profound Sky Seven Nations, a quickly spreading crimson red crack appeared in front of Yun Che.

Within the barrier, the expressions of all those Phoenix Elders, who firmly believed that

Yun Che could not kill Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing, changed. Their faces were filled with fear and aghast, as though they had seen the demon god of legends...

West of Phoenix City, Phoenix Perching Valley.

Dull explosive roars reverberated from the direction of Phoenix City, sweeping layers of shockwaves even to the quiet jade-green lake. On the shore of the jade-green lake, Feng Xue'er, who was lying on the Snow



Phoenix and having a light nap, opened her dream-like beautiful eyes and looked in the direction of Phoenix City.

“There are sounds coming from the city...” She stood up and muttered softly to herself, “Did something big happen...”

An explosive roar that could reverberate all the way here definitely could not be normal. Feng Xue'er hesitated for a short moment, and finally, because she couldn't put her heart at ease, her two snow-white hands

gently touched on the Snow Phoenix's feathers, "Something big must have happened in the sect... Little White, we have to head back quickly!"

# Chapter 716 – Feng Tianwei

---

“The Phoenix Fire Barrier has only been reinforced two months ago... even if it were the elders Tianyu and Tianqing who are in the Sovereign Profound Realm, it’s impossible to breach it! Yun Che, he... he...”

Everyone’s eyes widened as they stared blankly at the sky. They were so shocked that they were utterly dumbfounded. Their Phoenix Sect’s Phoenix Fire Barrier was undoubtedly the strongest protective barrier

within the Profound Sky Seven Nations. Even if a mid stage Monarch were to attack it, it was not possible to destroy it in a short amount of time. However, Yun Che had only swung his sword for a dozen odd times, yet a huge crack had already appeared in the transparent Phoenix Fire Barrier. Moreover, ear-splitting cracking noises had also echoed out.

Although the cracks in the barrier quickly mended itself, under the overbearing and peerless strikes of the Heaven Smiting Sword, the swift regeneration speed of the

barrier could only be described as fighting a losing battle. Every time Yun Che smashed his sword down, Phoenix City would start shaking; Divine Phoenix City would also tremble as the cracks that appeared on the barrier spread quickly like wildfire.

“How can he possess such monstrous strength... impossible... impossible!!!” Feng Feilie roared while shivering in terror. Within the last hour, he could no longer clearly remember how many times he had said the word “impossible”. However, he was certain that

even if all the shock that he had experienced in his entire life were put together, it would not be as shocking as what had happened within the last hour.

BOOM!!

When Yun Che's twenty-ninth strike landed, in the midst of the thunderous noise, cracks that looked like a huge spider web formed on the barrier in front of him. The barrier was no longer transparent, and a chaotic red glow also appeared. At the center of the red glow laid an

eye-catching gap that was approximately fifteen centimeters wide.

The corners of Yun Che's mouth moved. This movement was followed by a cold laughter as the Heaven Smiting Sword stabbed straight forward... This was no longer a strike but a stab at full force.

“Falling Moon Sinking Star!”

The sword light sliced through the air, easily stabbing through

the Phoenix Fire Barrier. Following the explosive power of the Heaven Smiting Sword, the original opening that was only a dozen or so centimeters wide had expanded until it was more than one and a half meters wide. From the opening, the energy within the Phoenix Fire Barrier surged out like water that broke the floodgates, escaping furiously from the opening of the barrier.

“The barrier... has broken!!!”

No matter how unbelievable



the scene was, it had clearly happened right before their eyes. Thirty swings... each one of them knew fully well that a total of thirty swings... was used to break the sect protective barrier of the number one sect in Profound Sky Seven Nation!

Yun Che's body passed through the opening of the barrier, then he flew down from the skies. Everyone suddenly felt a bone chilling aura engulfing their mind and soul.

Before today, they hated Yun

Che's extreme speed. Each one of them had hoped to catch Yun Che and personally chop him to pieces. However, now that Yun Che was descending from midair, regardless of whether it was the Phoenix Sect disciples or the mighty Phoenix elders, all of their hearts felt a chill as they subconsciously retreated several steps; no one dared to take even half a step forward.

The Phoenix Fire Barrier which had been broken under thirty strikes allowed them to understand with fear that the Overlord strength that they were so proud of, in front of Yun

He whom they viewed with contempt just a day ago, was insufficient for him to even bother with!

There was no longer anyone who suspected that Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing were actually not killed by him!

“Protect the Sect Master!!!”

All the Phoenix elders hastily stood in front of Feng Hengkong and the various princes to protect them. However, their

hands, which were wielding their weapons, trembled as the Phoenix flames on their body messily shook. For the previous three days, Yun Che had taken their prince as hostage, but today, Yun Che had finally revealed his true strength in front of the Divine Phoenix Sect and also gave the arrogant Divine Phoenix Sect a deterrent using his absolute strength.

“Feng Hengkong, even though I wished that I could kill you ten thousand times and exterminate your entire clan, for the sake of my Blue Wind Nation and Xue’er, I had already given you

all full four chances... yet, you refuse to grasp the opportunity each time!”

Yun Che swung his arm casually. As the Heaven Smiting Sword swung downwards, the almighty sword's force spread forward like a crashing tsunami.

Below, hundreds of Divine Phoenix disciples attempted to escape using all of their strength, distancing themselves from this devil that was descending from the skies. However, the moment the swing

of the Heaven Smiting Sword was completed, all their bodies shuddered strongly. Then, their bones disintegrated, blood vessels burst, and meridians severed... they fell on the ground like a pool of mud.

At the same time, the large plot of land dyed with the crimson color of blood had also sunk by a meter.

This sudden scene had caused the already frightened Divine Phoenix Clan members to be scared out of their wits. Yun Che

had not made his move; he had merely swung the sword in his hands...

The cause of death for the hundreds of Divine Phoenix Disciples had merely been the enormous scarlet greatsword's force!

For the disciples who had lost their lives, even the weakest of them was still in the Sky Profound Realm!

“Who... who... who... who

exactly are you!? You cannot possibly be Yun Che!” Feng Feilie stood at the very front and pointed towards Yun Che as he spoke with a trembling voice. Even though Yun Che was right in front of his very eyes, he still could not relate him to the Yun Che who was only in the Earth Profound Realm three years ago... The difference in strength of the two were on two entirely different levels. How was it possible that they were the same person!?

Seeing the various Divine Phoenix elders who grouped up in front of Feng Hengkong, Yun



Che coldly and heartless insulted, “Pack of Divine Phoenix old dogs, don’t each of you usually act crazily above the law without regard for anyone else? Didn’t each of you want to tear my corpses to pieces? Now that I’m standing here, why are all of you shaking like sieves? Such a pitiful sight.”

“Yun Che...” Feng Feilie’s eyes had turned bloodshot while the tip of the sword in his hands had turned into a jade-like scarlet crystal under the effects of the Phoenix flames. “You... My dignified Divine Phoenix Sect... would never fear a wild brat like

you!”

“Die!!”

Feng Feilie’s eyes stared widely as he roared and stabbed straight at Yun Che. Being the strongest among this current generation of elders within Divine Phoenix Sect, Feng Feilie’s profound strength was at the tenth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, approaching its peak. The sword in his hands turning into scarlet crystal, which signified that his strength had reached a pinnacle level, and just a swing of his

sword could burn the heavens and crack the earth.

Facing the Divine Phoenix's strongest elder's strike at full strength, Yun Che remained unfazed as he just casually swung the Heaven Smiting Sword in his hands.

Bang!!

The heavy sword produced an extremely violent storm, bringing along Phoenix flames that were at least a hundred

times hotter than those released by Feng Feilie. The space shattered as though it was glass, and at the same time, Feng Feilie's long sword, which had already turned into red crystals, shattered as well. The pieces of the barrier, together with the red crystal pieces, had flown everywhere during the extremely frightening profound energy explosion like torrential rain.

“AHHHHH——”

Feng Feilie cried miserably as

he was sent flying far away; it was as though he was a soaring kite whose string had been cut. The red trail of blood was several dozen meters long in the air, and the right arm, which he was tightly grabbing onto before, had now completely disappeared from his body.

“Great Elder!!!”

“Feilie!!!”

“Master!!!”

Although Yun Che had already displayed how frightening he was when he destroyed the Phoenix Fire Barrier with his sword, this scene still caused everyone present to feel an inexplicable horror. The strongest person among this generation of Divine Phoenix Sect elders, while using his full strength, in one mere round of exchange with Yun Che... lost miserably and had been severely injured. Especially for the younger disciples, when the Great Elder, whom they usually viewed as a deity, had been so miserably defeated in one blow by someone who was much

younger than them... they felt extremely shocked and their beliefs had collapsed just like that.

Although Feng Feilie lost an arm and was severely injured, he had still yet to lose his life. However, Yun Che would never be so benevolent as to let him off. Even before Feng Feilie's body had hit the ground, Yun Che swung the Heaven Smiting Sword once again, releasing a Phoenix arrow that split the air and pursued after Feng Feilie.

“Stop it!!!”

BOOM!!

The Phoenix arrow struck right onto Feng Feilie’s chest the exact moment he landed onto the ground. Phoenix flames mercilessly ignited, turning his body into ashes that scattered in the air.

“Great Elder!!!”



Back then, the Divine Phoenix Sect Grand Elder, Feng Feiyan, perished under an enraged Xia Yuanba's hands. Today, their newly promoted Great Elder had passed on once again... and this time, it happened right in front of their eyes.

“Yun Che... My Divine Phoenix Sect swears that we would not rest until you die! My sect has the Ancestral Phoenix God's protection. The Ancestral Phoenix God will surely deliver divine retribution upon you!!” Divine Phoenix Sect's tenth elder, Feng Lingshan, roared. He tried to use his every word to

intimidate Yun Che, but his words evidently carried tremor and fear... and even a shred of despair.

“Heh, you still have the face to bring up the Ancestral Phoenix God?” Yun Che’s body shifted as he instantly appeared a few hundred meters away from where he last stood. His aura was fixated on Feng Hengkong and all the Phoenix elders who were standing in front of him. This caused all of their faces to immediately turn ashen as cold sweat dripped on their bodies. The pressure Yun Che emitted when he wielded the heavy

sword and when he did not were simply on two entirely different levels. All the mighty Phoenix elders felt as though they were about to face a frightening demon god that came from the abyss.

“Attack!!”

Feng Lingshan, who spoke previously, could no longer withstand the frightening pressure and roared before rushing forward. Behind him, there were also four stunned Phoenix Elders, but they gritted

their teeth and forced  
themselves to attack.

Even though they attacked with  
five people, they didn't dare to  
hold back one bit. Each one of  
them attacked with their most  
fearsome killing move.

“Burning Mountain Blade!”

“Phoenix Flame Burning  
Heaven!”

“Phoenix Flame Sky Piercing Sword!”

Five Phoenix Elders attacked at the same time. They had used the strongest set of Profound arts from their respective sub-sects. The might of their attacks could be said to shake the heavens and earth. This was perhaps the first time in their entire lifetime that the five of them attacked without holding anything back.

Truth be told, even though Yun Che's current strength could

overwhelm any single one of the Divine Phoenix Sect elders, he definitely could not do it against a combined attack from everyone. If the various Phoenix elders were to face him calmly and set up profound formations, even though they wouldn't be able to kill Yun Che, they could still definitely force him to retreat or even severely injure him.

However, the emotional trauma they suffered when Yun Che killed two Divine Phoenix Monarchs and broke through the barrier in thirty moves proved to be far too intense... A

pack of bloodthirsty and fearsome wolves might be able to force a group of tigers back, but if the pack of wolves were scared out of their wits, even if they were only facing a single tiger, they would all turn tail and run.

The group of Phoenix Elders in front of Yun Che all belonged to the latter group. This time, only a mere five people attacked Yun Che. As for the remaining Phoenix Elders, not one of them moved, and they only stayed around Feng Hengkong... They all subconsciously thought that even if they went up against Yun

Che who had already exterminated two Divine Phoenix Monarchs, they would only be giving up their lives for nothing.

The five incoming attacks brought along currents of air that hit Yun Che and caused his clothes to lift. If there were ten people attacking, perhaps Yun Che might have to consider whether he should avoid the air waves. However, with only five people... there was absolutely no need for him to do so.



The Heaven Smiting Sword was ignited with Phoenix flames. Behind it, a silhouette of a wolf that was made from fire appeared. The Heaven Smiting Sword smashed out with intensity, ripping apart a black gully in the air.

“Phoenix Sky Wolf Slash!!!”

The gigantic sky wolf silhouette carried along scorching Phoenix flames and shot out, flying towards the five Phoenix elders with a soul shocking whistle. It rushed towards the sword glow

and flames that came from the five elders... and in an instant, regardless whether it was flames, sword glow or blade shadow, all of them were easily shattered from the impact.

The surging Phoenix flames dispersed into scattering fireworks in the air. Three Phoenix swords and two Phoenix blades were also shattered, and the sharp and tiny pieces were sent flying far away. The chests of the five Phoenix elders seemed as though it had been struck by lightning. They miserably screamed like wailing ghouls as

their bodies were sent flying in different directions making them seem like they were merely ruptured bags of blood.

“Die, all of you!!!”

Yun Che flew closer as his ice cold killing intent locked onto the five Phoenix elders who had been severely injured by the swing of his sword. He once again swung his sword towards Feng Lingshan who was the closest to him... If this strike landed, Feng Lingshan would have definitely been obliterated.

“Devilspawn, you dare!!!”

Right at this time, a thunderous roar came over. The roar seemed to bring with it pressure that could overturn mountains, and this caused Yun Che to be stunned as his movements slowed in an instant. With an explosive noise, the ground within a hundred and fifty meters in front of Yun Che suddenly burst apart and a thick and dense flame shot straight at Yun Che.

After the glow of the flames disappeared, an elder, whose eyes were filled with rage and whose face was like scarlet jade, appeared. He wore a red robe, and his hair, beard and even eyes were dark red in color. In the middle of his forehead, a flame imprint was emitting a blood like dense glow.

Although Yun Che was not afraid of the Phoenix flames, the profound strength of the person controlling these Phoenix flames were extremely overbearing; it was several times stronger than Feng Tianyu's! Yun Che eyebrows immediately knitted

together tightly. Not bothering to care about Feng Lingshan any longer, he instead quickly drew back his Heaven Smiting Sword and blocked his front.

BOOM!!!

With a loud explosion, in the midst of the light of flames, the Heaven Smiting Sword smashed heavily onto Yun Che's chest, violently sending him flying out. The blood within Yun Che's body was agitated as he spat out a large mist of blood. With eyes filled with killing intent, he

angrily howled before forcefully activating the Evil God's barrier.

“Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!!!”

Yun Che was sent flipping in midair several dozens of times as the Evil God's barrier shattered quickly. With that, he finally managed to defend against the red-robed elder's profound energy. The red-robed elder appeared shocked, but his palm swiftly flipped over. This caused six scattered pieces of weapon to turn into sharp flaming scarlet crystals which pierced through

the air, shooting straight at Yun Che who had just managed to balance himself.

Pu pu pu pu pu pu...

Ordinary remnants of weapon had turned into the most frightening sharp blades in the hands of this red-robed elder, and the speed at which it approached was so fast that it seemed as though it transcended dimensions. By the time Yun Che had realized that danger was approaching, the six pieces of the weapon which were



glowing with a scarlet glow had already shot into his body, causing six fountains of blood to burst out.

Yun Che grunted as the Heaven Smiting Sword in his hands disappeared. Using Extreme Mirage Lightning, he shot to the east as though he was a passing storm.

The eyes of the red-robed elder revealed shock once again... he was naturally fully aware of how powerful the six edges were. Furthermore, Yun Che had his

barrier broken by the impact of his Phoenix flames. Under such conditions, even if it was a level four Monarch, six obvious holes would have definitely been directly torn apart on his body. However, on Yun Che's body, only six scatters of blood appeared, and it did not even pierce through his body!

In addition, Yun Che only had a lowly profound aura, yet the level of his speed was extremely overwhelming.

“Grand Sect Master...”

“Grand Sect Master!!!”

Witnessing the red-robed elder who appeared in the skies as though he was a deity, and also forcing Yun Che to escape while being severely injured the moment he took action, all the various Phoenix elders and disciples had tears welling up in their eyes. They gazed at him like he was a god who had just answered their prayers.

“Royal Father...” “Feng Hengkong looked up as he

slowly moved forward. In front of this red-robed elder, the pupils of the emperor of the Divine Phoenix Empire that reigned the world shrank. He even tried his best to maintain a humble demeanor.

“Grandfather!” All the princes present appeared both shocked and agitated as they knelt on the ground.

This red-robed elder who had just appeared was the Grand Sect Master of Divine Phoenix Sect, and also the Grand

## Emperor of Divine Phoenix Empire... Feng Tianwei!

Since entering Phoenix Fire Divine Realm a hundred and ninety years ago, he almost completely stopped asking about matters relating to the country and sect, and solely focused on his cultivation. For him who had already stepped into the Sovereign Profound Realm, his cultivation sped up by leaps and bounds. In all these years, the only reason he had to leave Phoenix Fire Divine Realm a few times was essentially all because of Feng Xue'er.

In the air, there was the quickly scattering and fragmenting protective barrier, and on the grounds of Phoenix City which carried the five thousand year history of the entire sect, there was only great devastation. The entire ground was covered in red Phoenix blood and countless shattered corpses. As Feng Tianwei looked up, the shock that was in his eyes was replaced by extreme rage.

“Absolutely incorrigible!!”

Muttering softly, Feng Tianwei did not bother himself with anyone else. His body shook, and in a flash, he was already more than three hundred meters away as he chased in the direction where Yun Che escaped. When he moved, the wind he kicked up caused an entire row of pavilions to cave in.

**BANGGG!!!**

Yun Che punched his own chest, causing the six weapons fragments that had stabbed into his body to fall out. At the same

time, six bursts of blood appeared from the shock. Clenching his teeth, Yun Che did not make a sound as he quickly sealed his external injuries before taking two snow-colored pellet out from within the Sky Poison Pearl. He directly consumed one while crushing the other and applying the powder on the deep wounds on his body.

“Ugh...” Both his internal and external injuries were not light. Eventually, Yun Che still let out a painful groan. If it was not for his Dragon God Marrow, which made all the bones in his body as



tough as Profound Gold, forcefully stopping the six weapon remnants, he wouldn't only end up with just six wounds, but instead six vivid and see through holes.

“He's chasing over.” Jasmine said.

“I know.” Yun Che did not turn back as his brows tightly knitted together.

“There actually came a time when you're at such a

disadvantage, “ Jasmine laughed coldly, “This is such a rare sight.”

“Who would have known that he would appear from under the ground!” Yun Che gritted his teeth tightly, “All the Sovereigns in Divine Phoenix Sect stayed at a place called Phoenix Fire Divine Realm. The only entrance and exit to that place is the Phoenix God Main Hall located at the northwestern corner. If the aura of someone I cannot defeat appears at that position, I would have sufficient distance to insult him before I escape. However, this red-robed old

fogey actually didn't play by the rules... Cough... Cough, cough..."

Yun Che constantly spat out large clots of blood; his internal injury was evidently much more severe than his external one.

With the Great Way of the Buddha and the Body of the Dragon God, the recovery speed of Yun Che's profound energy and injuries were extremely quick. However, no matter how fast it was, he could not recover instantaneously. Such injuries

undoubtedly caused some impact to Yun Che's speed, and if he forcefully used all his profound energy, he would only aggravate his injuries.

Even so, Yun Che's speed still seemed as fast as lightning. At least, it was much faster than when he was "escaping" from Feng Tianyu's chase.

However, Feng Tianwei was not Feng Tianyu. Not only was he not shrugged off, his dangerous aura was even approaching more and more closely.

“This old fogey should be Feng Tianwei... What is his profound cultivation level?” Yun Che asked with a frown as he quickly calculated the his current situation in his heart.

“Middle stage of the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm,” Jasmine casually replied.

“Sovereign Profound Realm... Sixth level?” Yun Che was deeply shocked. Such strength was far beyond what he had

expected. Being the same generation as Feng Tianqing and Feng Tianyu, Yun Che had originally estimated that Feng Tianwei's profound strength was probably only in the third level or, at most, not exceeding the fourth level.

However, he would have never imagined that Feng Tianwei's strength would actually be three entire levels above Feng Tianyu!

And this was three levels in the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Even though Feng Hengkong was the Divine Phoenix Sect Master of the current generation and his profound cultivation was also the highest, there were still several elders of the same generation that held similar strength to him; even the others were not that far behind him. But for Feng Tianwei... perhaps it was because his talent was exceptional; he had completely crushed the people within the same generation in terms of strength.

“No wonder two of his attacks could injure me both internally and externally...” Yun Che

muttered. However, what appeared in his eyes was not relief, but instead, rage... even a sense of insanity ignited inside him.

Making me, Yun Che, turn from almighty and majestic to such a pitiful state....

Huuu... Yun Che heavily breathed as his chest rose and fell with intensity. The fierce look in his eyes was turning more and more irritated. Even Jasmine, who was within the Sky Poison Pearl, could sense a



hint of extreme danger.

# Chapter 717 – Insane Retaliation

---

“WHAT? Yun Che killed Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing?”

When Zi Ji receive this news, he was utterly shocked.

He was shocked that Yun Che's strength was so overwhelming; it far exceeded his expectations yet again. More than that, he was shocked that Yun Che would do something like killing Divine Monarchs... two of them in fact!

No matter which Sacred Ground it was, the fall of a Monarch was a huge news that would even alert the other Sacred Grounds. For Divine Phoenix Sect whose number of Monarchs were considered sparse compared to the Sacred Grounds, this was a huge matter that shook the world.

Furthermore, it was the passing of two Monarchs!

This was as though the foundations of Divine Phoenix

Sect had been uprooted!

“Truly a mad man that is capable of doing anything.” Zi Ji uttered this line which completely did not match his calm temperament, “Exterminating two Divine Phoenix Sect Sovereigns. This will cause Feng Tianwei... and all the Divine Phoenix Sovereigns in seclusion to act. What’s worse is that this might even anger the Ancestral Phoenix God, causing it to act personally.”

“Do we have to remind Yun Che?” the person beside Zi Ji asked.

“No,” Zi Ji shook his head slowly, “The development of this matter can no longer be controlled. Divine Phoenix Sect would most likely attack in full force. Even if it’s us, we can no longer meddle in this matter.”

“Judging from the development of the situation, it’s probably time for Yun Che’s backer, Old Man Duotian, to appear. Otherwise, when the enraged

Divine Phoenix Sect send all their Monarchs out, even if Yun Che had a hundred lives, it still wouldn't be enough."

"If Old Man Duotian were to face the Divine Phoenix Sect's Phoenix Spirit... who would come out ahead?" the green-robed man standing beside Zi Ji could not help but ask.

Zi Ji silently thought for a while before saying, "If the description of Old Man Duotian's strength that Sun Moon Divine Hall provided was

no exaggeration, Old Man Duotian would most likely win... he would even beat the Divine Phoenix Sect's Ancestral Phoenix God in an overwhelming manner. This is probably also the biggest reason why Yun Che dared to kill two Divine Phoenix Sect Monarchs.”

“Having absolute strength, unlimited potential and a backing that is overbearing. His personality is even cruel and resolute...” Zi Ji let out a long sigh as he uttered, “This kind of person, unless we are certain that we can kill him, we must not offend him.

“And if we have absolute confidence in killing him... we must not waste one moment in killing him! The sooner he dies, the better. We cannot have any bit of sympathy towards him!”

“What shall this subordinate do next? Feng Tianwei has already appeared, and all the other Divine Phoenix Monarchs would probably leave Phoenix Fire Divine Realm. This subordinate is afraid that it's already too difficult to blend among them.”



“There is already too much of a commotion, so we no longer need to observe from up close. Swiftly inform Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, Sun Moon Divine Hall and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region that Yun Che has killed Feng Tianyu and Feng Tianqing. Two Monarchs falling in the hands of a twenty-two year old; this is no longer a simple matter of grudge between Yun Che and Divine Phoenix Sect.”

“Understood!”

---

The wind howled as Yun Che flew out of the boundaries of Divine Phoenix City towards the south. Behind him, an enormous red figure was chasing him. This figure seemed to be slowly approaching him as time passed.

“What are you planning to do?” Sensing Yun Che’s chaotic wave of emotion, Jasmine asked, “What you’re considering now doesn’t seem to be how to shake the old man behind you off.”

Yun Che did not reply at all; only his eyes constantly twitched. No one seemed to know what he was thinking about.

“In fifteen minutes at most, he’ll be able to catch up to you. However, if you activated your Purgatory gate now, it would only take you fifteen minutes to completely shake him off as well,” Jasmine said in a low voice.

“...Jasmine, what might be the consequences if I were to

destroy Phoenix City?” Yun Che placed his right hand on his chest as he took in the essence of heaven and earth to swiftly recuperate his injuries. His voice was exceptionally calm, without even a hint of nervousness from being chased by a level six Monarch.

“Hmph, it sure matches your personality.” Jasmine did not give a straightforward reply, but instead laughed coldly, “You killed four Divine Phoenix Princes, numerous elders, two Monarchs and sent their entire sect into a sea of chaos. All that’s missing is digging out their

ancestors' graves. You've only suffered some moderate injuries currently, yet you have so much hatred and killing intent towards them."

"All of those were what they deserved. I have already been magnanimous enough with them." Yun Che replied softly. He continued to speed up though. At his current speed, he could prevent himself from being caught by Feng Tianwei in a short amount of time, while at the same time, he could also stabilize his injuries at a relatively swift pace.

“I never wanted to act so cruelly at the start, but since even Feng Tianwei has appeared, and he is much stronger than expected, I have no choice but to deliver the final big gift earlier!”

Jasmine, “...”

Unknowingly, they had already traveled for hundreds of kilometers, and Feng Tianwei, who was originally kilometers behind Yun Che, was now less than six hundred meters away

from him.

Divine Phoenix City had also long vanished from their sight.

Contrary to the composed Yun Che, Feng Tianwei, the chasing party who also possessed overwhelming strength, was actually the one who was completely shocked instead. He had already used his full strength and pushed his speed to the very limits, yet in the few hundred kilometers of chase, not to mention catching up to Yun Che, he had only closed the

distance between them by about one and a half kilometers only..

Previously in Phoenix City, after he had injured Yun Che, he did not give chase immediately. Instead, he examined Phoenix City's condition first. As a level six Monarch, Feng Tianwei felt that chasing Yun Che, who was severely injured and whose strength was far below his, would undoubtedly be an easy task.

However, in all actuality, he was constantly shocked along



the chase.

The profound energy fluctuations Yun Che emitted while escaping was indeed only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm. However, his speed while being injured only paled slightly in comparison. Furthermore, when Yun Che was flying, his aura was extremely stable; it didn't have any disruptions in the slightest. Obviously, the injuries Yun Che received were not as severe as he originally thought.

Someone in the Emperor  
Profound Realm would actually  
possess such speed!

When he appeared, his rage  
lead him to use at least seventy  
percent of his profound  
strength... Yet, this only caused  
Yun Che to receive injuries that  
was insufficient to disrupt his  
breathing?!

Feng Tianwei was both shocked  
and doubtful at the same time.  
Like Feng Tianyu before, the  
killing intent in his heart grew  
ten times greater than he

previously had.

This person... absolutely cannot be spared!!!

At present, Yun Che no longer had anywhere to escape. Although Yun Che's speed was extremely abnormal, Feng Tianwei had finally caught up to him within six hundred meters. If Feng Tianwei could get a little bit closer, he could directly attack Yun Che and knock him down from the sky.

And this time, he was going to use all his might to ensure Yun Che's death in the shortest time possible!

Feng Tianwei's scarlet eyes had a bone chilling gaze. As the Phoenix Grand Sect Master, he originally could not be bothered to personally go after a junior. However, this junior had made him feel an extreme sense of danger... Although Yun Che had saved Feng Xue'er, the most important person within Divine Phoenix Sect, without regard for his life three years ago, now that he had become a massive threat and the sect's mortal enemy, he

definitely had to die!

As a cold sheen flashed, both of Feng Tianwei's arms ignited with Phoenix Flames. He started to concentrate his profound energy, waiting until he got close enough before mercilessly attacking. At this time, he noticed that Yun Che suddenly slowed down, massively reducing the gap between them.

“Finally running out of steam!” Feng Tianwei muttered as he lifted his arms that were concentrated with phoenix

energy... right at the moment when he was about to strike, Yun Che, who had been standing right there, had suddenly disappeared from his sight.

Feng Tianwei's brows tightly knitted together as he rushed swiftly to the spot where Yun Che was and scanned the surrounding area... Yun Che's figure had disappeared, but what truly shocked Feng Tianwei was that even his aura had completely disappeared as well!

Profound

concealing

techniques were nothing new, but for Monarchs, profound concealing techniques were nothing but a joke. Because no matter how perfectly the body was hidden, it was still impossible to hide the profound aura from the all powerful senses of a Monarch.

Therefore, when Feng Tianwei saw that Yun Che had disappeared, his brows shifted slightly... and in the next instant, his expression changed drastically.

Not only had Yun Che's body disappeared, even his aura had completely vanished... Furthermore, Yun Che had completely vanished while Feng Tianwei was staring at him and had his senses locked onto him.

In his hundreds of years of life, he had neither encountered nor heard of such a thing before.

He released his profound aura to its very limits, and within a radius of several dozens of kilometers, not to mention living beings, even the



movement of a blade of grass could not escape from his senses. However, even though after searching with all his strength for some time, within the radius of his senses, he could not detect any trace of Yun Che.

“Yun Che, show yourself!!!” Feng Tianwei scanned the area as he shouted with a thunderous voice. Due to his intense rage, the Phoenix Flames within his body surged and blasted out viciously!

BOOM! Several dozens of

kilometers had instantly turned into a sea of flames...

Riiip!!

Following the shrieks of the space, Yun Che reappeared in the skies above Phoenix City and floated at an altitude of ten kilometers above the ground. On his body, a scarlet flame burned, releasing a glow that was not too strong... This time, he was not using Phoenix Flames, but instead the Golden Crow Flames which were much hotter, violent and heartless.

In his hands, he kept the palm-sized Primordial Profound Ark. Gradually, he opened his arms, causing the flames on the surface of his body to become denser. But although the glow wasn't too eye-catching, it still creepily turned the sky redder and redder.

Before long, the sky above Yun Che had turned into a ferocious scarlet golden color. The scarlet golden area was constantly moving, as though it was flowing lava. Yun Che's body also gradually descended, and

each time he descended, the scarlet golden area would spread. At the same time, a terrifying scorching heat started to envelop the ground below.

“Destruction Domain... Yellow Spring Ashes...” Yun Che’s entire body was now shining in a scarlet golden color. Especially his eyes, which were so eye catching that they already seem to be burning, and his mouth, which seemed to be uttering the curses of a devil.

Yun Che’s previous attacks had

killed the Divine Phoenix Sect Great Elder, had severely injured five other elders, and had taken the lives of hundreds of disciples. The five severely injured Phoenix elders had all been sent to the Medicinal Hall, while a group of Phoenix Sect Disciples stayed behind to clear up the mess. Although the Grand Sect Master, Feng Tianwei had personally come out of seclusion and this disaster could also finally come to an end since Yun Che could not possibly escape from Feng Tianwei's clutches, no matter how miserably Yun Che died in the hands of Feng Tianwei, there was no way of recovering Divine Phoenix Sect's losses.

Especially the fall of two Monarchs.

That was why Phoenix City was in such a gloomy state, to point where not even a single person could manage to laugh.

Feng Hengkong, along with the other Phoenix elders, had also gone to the Medicinal Hall to help stabilize the injuries of the five severely injured Elders.

“Royal Father, I have already sent personnel out of the city to search for the remains of the two Grand Elders.” Seeing Feng Hengkong’s dark expression, Feng Ximing touched his lips and stopped speaking.

“Haah.” Feng Hengkong let out a long sigh. With a sorrowful expression, he regretfully said, “If only yesterday, we... had directly begged Royal Father to take action...”

“This is not Sect Master’s fault.” Fourth elder shook his

head and continued, “No one could have expected that Yun Che’ strength would be at such a level. On the first few days, Yun Che would always try to escape after making his kill. He must have intended to hide his true strength in order to make us careless.”

Two Monarchs, four princes, six elders... Such severe damage had never happened in the history of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

This was a disaster and shame



that the sect could never ever forget.

Feng Hengkong closed his eyes and uttered in misery, "All has already been lost. Now I can only hope that Xue'er has not been alerted..." Thinking about the shattering of the Phoenix Fire Barrier, he could only shake his head in grief, "I'm afraid this can no longer be kept from Xue'er..."

But before he could finish speaking, Feng Hengkong's expression suddenly darkened.

At the same time, the various elders, who were treating the five severely injured elders, looked up as their expressions darkened as well.

Because, the temperature of the air suddenly rose at a frightening rate. A frightening pressure, which was was not too strong but still felt like a demon had just descended from the sky, was growing and approaching at a significant pace.

**BOOM!!!**

Feng Hengkong broke through the roof and flew up. As he looked up, he could see a circular scarlet golden area in the skies in the distance, which caused the surrounding skies to turn red from its brilliance. Below the scarlet golden glow, there was a figure that should have never been there.

“Yun... Che?!!”

Feng Hengkong's eyes seemed as though they have been stabbed by a million needles and shrunk to the smallest they had

ever been in his entire life.

# Chapter 718 – Yellow Spring Ashes

---

The scorching radiance shone down from the skies, illuminating every corner of Phoenix City with a scarlet golden glow. The source of the glow that was gradually descending like a purgatory of flames was currently consuming the heavens. It was so big that it nearly covered up a third of Phoenix City... and it was still continuously expanding.

All the profound practitioners within Divine Phoenix Sect

stopped what they were currently doing and looked towards the sky in a daze. They were so shocked that they were completely speechless.

“What... is that?”

Not just in Phoenix City, but also in Divine Phoenix City... and even its borders, everyone walked out of their homes and training grounds and stared dumbfoundedly at the dazzling blood-colored sun that was slowly approaching Phoenix City.

Feng Hengkong's eyes and the entirety of his face had all been illuminated till they were scarlet gold. Accompanying the scarlet golden glow, the temperature was rising at a frightening rate, but what was even more alarming was how unbelievably overbearing the pressure was...

The pressure was as though doomsday had arrived!! It was many times more frightening than when Yun Che had previously used all his profound strength. In fact, he had never even felt such a frightening and

overbearing pressure come from his father, Feng Tianwei... Under such intense pressure, his heart palpitated as each and every single cell and nerve within his body trembled violently.

“What’s going on?” A Phoenix elder asked while trembling in shock.

“Didn’t Grandfather leave to chase after Yun Che... How could Yun Che appear here? Where’s Grandfather?” Feng Ximing could not believe the



scene before him. Less than fifteen minutes ago, Yun Che had been forced to escape within two moves of Feng Tianwei... Feng Tianwei's attacks had all hit Yun Che cleanly. The fact that he did not die and still had the strength to escape could be considered a miracle already. At the very least, he should be suffering severe injuries, and there was no way he could escape from the clutches of Feng Tianwei.

However, Yun Che had suddenly appeared here, and there was also no sign of Feng Tianwei.

“Send a sound transmission to your grandfather immediately!” Feng Hengkong looked up in the sky, gritted his teeth and said, “Yun Che has many tricks up his sleeve, he must have used some unique method to escape your grandfather’s pursuit... Perhaps, he had intentionally lured your grandfather away!

“Get your grandfather to swiftly return!” The soul shocking pressure had already caused Feng Hengkong to feel an immense sense of danger.

“Yes, royal father!” Feng Ximing quickly took out a sound transmission jade with a Phoenix flame imprint.

“Yun Che... what are you going to do!” Feng Hengkong howled in a low voice.

Every member of Divine Phoenix Sect possessed the Phoenix bloodline, moreover, the Phoenix profound energy within them provided them strong resistance towards heat. But this time, the temperature

of the air was already like scorching flames, and even someone as strong as Feng Hengkong started to swelter. For the lower level disciples whose profound strength was weaker, they could not help but use their profound energy in order to resist the heat.

An increasing amount of water vapor started to rise up from every direction as the air in front of them visibly distorted.

Following the expansion of the flaming hell, the surrounding

temperature continued to rise.

Yun Che stood about one kilometer in midair and stopped descending; his face was still slightly pale... because this “Yellow Spring Ashes Domain” had used up all of his profound strength, and he had almost unleashed every bit of strength he had.

It was several times stronger than the “Yellow Spring Ashes Domain” that exterminated the seven hundred thousand Divine Phoenix Army previously!!

“Feng Hengkong, look carefully. This place, which bore the will of a divine spirit but has since turned exceptionally dirty and vicious, will soon be eradicated forever!” Yun Che laughed coldly, his voice sounded like the howl of a devil.

In Illusory Demon Realm, the Illusory Demon Royal Family relied on the first four realms of the 《Golden Crow's Records of the Burning World》 to make all the living beings within Illusory Demon Realm serve under them. In Profound Sky Continent,

Divine Phoenix Sect relied on the first four realms of the 《World Ode of the Phoenix》 to dominate the Seven Nations. In fact, their short five thousand years of progress was catching up to the Sacred Grounds which had tens of thousands of years of history.

Within Illusory Demon Realm, the strongest profound art was without a doubt the Golden Crow's Records of the Burning World. Within Profound Sky Continent, the World Ode of the Phoenix was also widely recognized as the strongest profound art.

As for Yun Che, not only did he possess a Golden Crow bloodline purer than the Little Demon Empress and all the past Demon Emperors, the current “Yellow Spring Ashes Domain” that he was using was also the power of the seventh realm of the 《Golden Crow’s Records of the Burning World》 !

In terms of profound strength, Yun Che definitely was not one of the best.

However, the “Yellow Spring



Ashes” that he had release this time was without a doubt the highest level and strongest profound skill.

That was indisputable!

Not just Feng Hengkong, even if all the previous ancestors of Divine Phoenix Sect were present, their hearts would also tremble uncontrollably in front of such an immense level of pressure.

Yun Che’s words were not just

empty threats.

Once this domain had completely formed and came down to envelop them...

It was enough to cover the entire Phoenix City and turn this sect, which had five thousand years of history, into ashes!

Feng Hengkong's entire body shuddered. The fear in his heart gave him the feeling that Yun Che was not just making empty

threats...

“Devilspawn. Even in facing death, you still speak so arrogantly!” Phoenix elder Feng Zhishui roared before muttering to Feng Hengkong, “Sect Master, he is currently staying in midair and doesn’t dare to come down. From the profound aura fluctuations on his body, he is clearly accumulating energy. Adding this to the fact that he was definitely severely injured by Grand Sect Master before, even though his presence is shocking at the moment, it’s likely that he no longer has the strength to defend himself... It’s

the best time to attack him!

“Let me reveal his true colors!”

Feng Zhishui was extremely confident in his judgment. By the time he finished his statement, he had already jumped into the air and clawed at Yun Che.

The truth was indeed not too far from his deduction... Although Yun Che was not heavily injured, at the current moment, all his strength was

still being used on the Golden Crow Domain and he did not have one bit of strength to defend himself.

Even so, how could a Phoenix elder possibly get close to Golden Crow flames emitted at full strength?!

Feng Zhishui instantly soared several hundred of meters in the air as he shot straight at Yun Che. However, when he was about three hundred meters away from Yun Che, Feng Shuizhi's expression drastically

changed. His originally sprinting figure suddenly stopped at its fastest speed before plummeting to the ground. The moment he landed onto the ground, he laid on the ground and rolled several times as he let out continuous howls of pain.

“Elder Zhishui!”

All the present Phoenix profound practitioners were in deep shock. Feng Hengkong and all the other elders swiftly rushed forward, and when they

got closer, a pungent charred smell wafted to their nose. As Feng Zhishui rolled around, all of his Phoenix robe, hair and beard had turned into ashes and fell off. His exposed body was half red, and the other half was black as charcoal!

The most eye-catching were his hands... Everything below his arms disappeared, and all that remained were two segments of charred bones.

“Sect Master... don’t get... close...” Feng Zhishui stretched

out his right arm that was missing a hand. His face violently contorted in pain as he swallowed his words before eventually losing his life.

The faces of Feng Hengkong and the various Phoenix elders had turned pale as a bone-piercing chill went down their spine.

Feng Hengkong's body trembled slightly as he weakly took two steps back. As he concentrated his gaze, he gritted his teeth before flying into the



air and rushing straight at Yun Che.

“Sect Master!”

Feng Zhishui's miserable state was right in front of their eyes. All the Phoenix elders, who were still frightened out of their wits, quickly flew up as they attempted to stop Feng Hengkong.

However, Feng Hengkong was not as rash as Feng Zhishui. Immediately after getting into

the air, he slowed down tremendously. His eyebrows tightly knitted together as he slowly but gradually approached Yun Che... With each step closer, the temperature would increase by a terrifying degree. When he was about three hundred meters high, he already felt uncomfortable to the heat despite being protected by phoenix profound energy that was in the tenth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm. As he neared another three hundred or so meters, his chest began to suffocate, and he felt as though he was standing at the edge of a volcano.

Feng Hengkong gritted his teeth as his body ferociously climbed another thirty meters. However, his body immediately felt as though it had been wrapped by a layer of burning metal, causing his face to contort in pain.

At this point, he was still at least four hundred meters away from Yun Che!

Even though he was experiencing it for himself, Feng Hengkong still could not believe that just the temperature alone

of the scarlet golden flames Yun Che released prevented him from getting within three hundred meters of him!

Even his father, Feng Tianwei, could never do this!!

Such a temperature from more than three hundred meters away. Just how frightening... was that flame?!

“Sect Master, don’t get closer anymore!”

The expressions of all the elders that followed behind turned pale from shock. Experiencing it for themselves, they finally understood why Feng Zhishui would end up in such a state. As they looked at Yun Che, their hearts madly trembled and what they felt could no longer be simply described as fear anymore.

“Phoenix            Fire            Burning  
Heaven!!!”

A Phoenix elder carefully

retreated a few steps before concentrating all the profound energy within him to release the strongest flames he could muster. A massive pillar of Phoenix flames, carrying along the cries of the Phoenix, shot straight into the sky towards Yun Che... However, these flames had only managed to go on for a hundred meters before it shattered and dispersed into tiny balls of fire that disappeared in the sky.

“Wha... whattt?!” That elder was completely stunned.

“Sect Master, hurry and retreat!!”

They had only stayed for several breaths of time, yet they already felt as though their bodies were being grilled above the flames of purgatory. If they were already facing this with their strength, any one of the guards or disciples would instantly combust in flames.

Without waiting for Feng Hengkong's reply, two elders grabbed onto his arms and forcefully brought him down

from the air. Only when they had landed back on the ground did their breathing become a bit smoother.

After personally experiencing how frightening Yun Che's flame domain was, Feng Hengkong's face was as pale as a sheet. The words Yun Che had said just now became much clearer in his head. It was as though a devil had imprinted a seal in his heart, causing him to tremble in fear, "Yun Che... What exactly do you want?!"



“What do I want? Didn’t I already say it clearly just now?” Yun Che sneered with a dark face as the Golden Crow Domain in the sky continued to expand. It was now nearly big enough to cover half of Phoenix City, “The moment this flame domain descends... will also be very moment your Phoenix City forever disappears from the face of this earth!”

“You dare!!!” Feng Hengkong’s eyes turned bloodshot and his tone completely changed, “If you dare to harm one bit of my Phoenix City, we... we swear to eradicate every inch of your Blue

Wind Nation!!”

“HAHAHAHAHA!” Yun Che laughed hysterically, “Feng Hengkong, you really don’t know how to repent even when you’re completely defeated. I killed your sons as easily as I killed chickens without even bothering to blink... Tell me, do you think I dare?!”

# Chapter 719 – The Threat Of Annihilation

---

As the Golden Crow Domain continued to expand, not only did its scarlet gold glow cover Phoenix City, it even covered the entire Divine Phoenix City.

The towering Black Moon Headquarters which soared into the clouds was also dyed a crimson-red. Zi Ji stood in front of his window and gazed towards Phoenix City. While doing so, his expression kept on changing, and every single change was incomparably

dramatic.

“Hurry up and go underground! Fully activate the protective barrier!”

Zi Ji’s sudden command caught the blue-clothed person beside him completely off-guard, as the person responded in a rather dazed and soft voice, “Activa... activate the barrier?”

Not even once had the Black Moon Headquarters activated their profound barrier in the

past four thousand years!

“The flame domain that appeared in the sky above Phoenix City...” Zi Ji heavily sucked in a deep breath, “It is definitely more than capable of destroying the entire Phoenix City! Its aftermath may even reach this place!”

“But the Divine Phoenix Sect has more than ten Monarchs, how could they not defend against the flame domain of merely one Yun Che?” The blue-clothed person asked in a

completely puzzled manner.

Zi Ji's gaze turned extremely cold before he slowly continued, "The strength of the flame domain that Yun Che opened actually isn't too ridiculous at all, but the law of fire behind it is profound to the point of absurdity. Even with my high attainments in the profound way, I am still unable to grasp even a little bit of it! My spirit perception has not even come into contact with those flames, yet just coming into contact with the energy waves being released by those flames is enough to cause my soul to shake

uncontrollably.”

Blue-clothed person, “...”

“The Monarchs of the Divine Phoenix Sect all have sufficient power to protect themselves in the face of this terrifying flame domain. However, in my opinion, even if all of them join hands and give it their all, the chance for them to completely cancel out this domain before it falls on Phoenix City is at most just twenty percent!

“And it is eighty percent likely that this attack will end in the destruction of Phoenix City!! If the people inside the city do not evacuate immediately, everyone who is not a Monarch will be completely incinerated!

“Even if all the people within the city can escape with their lives before the domain falls on them.... With the destruction of Phoenix City, the Divine Phoenix Sect’s medicine gardens, crystals, wealth and profound formations... the accumulation and foundation of thousands of years, will be destroyed in one fell swoop. Even though the



entire Divine Phoenix Sect will survive and won't be thrown into chaos, they will need at least a thousand years to recover their former glory."

Zi Ji's words caused the blue-clothed man to be seized by shock. Yun Che killing two Monarchs at the Emperor Profound Realm had completely exceeded his comprehension. But right now, Yun Che was actually about to destroy the entirety of Phoenix City... and not even all of the Monarch of the Divine Phoenix Sect together were able to prevent it!! If not for Zi Ji personally stating it, he

would have completely been unable to believe it.

“Just what kind of... fire is that? Could it be that it is actually stronger than the Phoenix flames?” The Phoenix flames were the flames of a Divine Spirit, and it was publicly acknowledged as the strongest profound fire in this world. But given Zi Ji’s words, it was clear that the flames that Yun Che released were even more frightening than the Phoenix flames.

“It is indeed a flame that is stronger than the Phoenix flames, and it is also far more terrifying than the Phoenix flames....” Zi Ji let out a deep sigh, but after which, the look in his eyes underwent the most imperceptible of changes before he mumbled softly, “Or perhaps it is just as the Sun Moon Divine Hall described, maybe this mysterious profound fire that Yun Che is using is the one his master, Old Man Duotian, used to incinerate a Monarch in the matter of seconds?”

A profound energy vibration came from the blue-clothed

person's Sound Transmission Jade. The blue-clothed person immediately snatched it up before speaking to Zi Ji, "Master, Feng Tianwei has already entered the boundary of the Divine Phoenix City at full speed, and he will arrive at Phoenix City in another hundred seconds."

"Even if he returns, there is nothing that he can do. Once he sees Yun Che's flame domain, he will immediately recognize that he doesn't have the ability to cancel out this flame domain which contains such bizarre and profound laws of fire. It seems

like this time, even though Feng Tianwei personally went to battle, he will have no choice but to admit defeat.”

“The Divine Phoenix Sect can still afford to gamble when it comes to the lives of their princes, but the destruction of Phoenix City is definitely not something that they can afford to risk,” Zi Ji said while closing his eyes.

“What are you waiting for?! Go, hurry up and activate the protective barrier! If the

shockwave reaches our Merchant Guild, even if I personally intervene, I will not be able to guarantee that nothing will be lost!”

The blue-clothed person ran off as if his tail had been lit on fire. Zi Ji opened both of his eyes and once more fixed his gaze on Phoenix City. His spirit perception could already detect the aura of Feng Tianwei who was moving at the fastest speed possible.

“Strange, it has already reached

this point, yet why hasn't their Phoenix God made an appearance yet?" Zi Ji faintly narrowed his eyes as he softly muttered to himself with a pensive expression.

"Destroy Phoenix City? Just by yourself?" Feng Ximing roared, "My grandfather will arrive at any moment, and he will be able to extinguish that tiny bit of power with just a wave of his hand!"

"His Highness is right!" stated the third elder of the Divine

Phoenix Sect with his entire face a bright red and a body drenched in sweat. However, he still forced himself to remain calm. “Yun Che, I can tell from your current state that you are clearly an arrow which has reached the end of it’s flight and completely spent. Once Grand Sect Master returns, it will be your end! Grand Sect Master is a supreme Monarch and will not allow you to behave so arrogantly anymore!”

“Heh,” Yun Che gave a mocking sneer. “To think that a ridiculously stupid piece of trash who was misdirected several



hundred kilometers away because of a simple trick that I played is actually the Grand Sect Master of your Divine Phoenix Sect. That you all are not ashamed of him, that I can understand. But to think that you would actually use him to bluster in front of me, this is simply far too funny, hahahahaha!”

“You... you dare to insult our Grand Sect Master!!”

Yun Che’s words caused the faces of all the Divine Phoenix

elders to go completely red as they boiled with fury.

At this time, a frenzied aura could be felt barrelling its way over from the east, causing all of the Divine Phoenix Sect members to crow with joy, “It is the Grand Sect Master... Grand Sect Master has returned!!”

Once the Divine Phoenix Sect members felt Feng Tianwei’s aura, their shock completely turned into joy. Previously, they had all been extremely worried that Yun Che would send the

scarlet gold sea of fire that floated in the sky hurtling down towards them before Feng Tianwei returned. But now that Feng Tianwei had returned, the heavy boulder which was weighing down on their hearts had disappeared.

Just as the cheers began to ring out, a beam of fire shot through the air, and following that, a fire-red silhouette appeared in front of Feng Hengkong and Feng Ximing.

“Grand Sect Master!!”

All the Divine Phoenix elders who were present excitedly surged forward as they all hurried to fall to their knees in greeting.

“Grandfather, you came back at just the right time!” Feng Ximing strode forward as he respectfully greeted his grandfather, “This Yun Che punk used a ruse to escape Grandfather and come back here, then even arrogantly boasted that he would destroy our Phoenix City and spoke disrespectfully about

Grandfather.... This devilspawn's sins, even dying ten thousands times would not expiate them! Grandfather, you definitely must not show him any mercy."

"..." Feng Tianwei raised his head to look at the sky, not giving even the slightest response. When all the Divine Phoenix Sect members quietly raised their heads to look at him, they were shocked to find that Feng Tianwei's face had become frighteningly grim. Not only were both his fists tightly clenched, they were even faintly trembling... rivulets of sweat

could be seen running down his fingers, but before the drops of sweat could leave his body, the sweat directly evaporated into steam.

“ ... ”

An extremely stifling and heavy aura radiated from Feng Tianwei's body, one which was so oppressive that Feng Hengkong, the person standing nearest to him, found it hard to even breathe. And Feng Hengkong, who had finally just been able to loosen a bit of his

tension, found his nerves stretched taut once more. He spoke to Feng Tianwei in a low voice, "Royal father...."

Feng Tianwei did not pay attention to anyone else as he directly stared at Yun Che. His chest rose imperceptibly before he finally spoke, speaking slowly, "I, Feng Tianwei, have boasted of my wisdom and martial prowess for my entire life, yet I actually fell for your ruse so easily, it looks like for these last few centuries or so, I've really lived a dog's life."

Whether it was his words or his disposition, Feng Tianwei was nothing if not calm. Because as the Grand Sect Master of the Divine Phoenix Sect, anyone else could descend into panic, but he alone had to remain strong.

As to whether his heart was as calm as his expression, it was something that was known only by him.

“It seems as if the Divine Phoenix Grand Sect Master is someone with a lot of self-awareness.” In the face of Feng



Tianwei's self-deprecation, Yun Che did not hesitate to twist the knife even further as he said, "In the end, you are still a Phoenix Monarch whose might and fame shakes the heavens, but the speed that you possess is simply too disappointing. I had originally thought that I would only be able to complete half of my destruction domain by the time you returned, but alas, who would have thought that you would be so slow that I have already completed eighty percent of it."

"You used some kind of dimensional displacement!"

Feng Tianwei said coldly, “You purposely drew me two hundred kilometers from this place before using that dimensional displacement ability to return here and completing that destruction domain before I could return... it was a good trick indeed.”

“Ah, I wouldn’t even call it a trick, it was merely something that I thought of on the fly.” Yun Che gave a sedate and cold chuckle, “This should have been the greatest and final gift that I was going to give your Divine Phoenix Sect. It is a pity that you actually dared to injure me as it

leaves me with no choice but to deliver this present in advance!”

“If I wanted to kill you now, it would be as easy as swatting a fly!!” Feng Tianwei raised his arm and flames suddenly burst into life in the center of his palm.

“Hahahaha, then go ahead and do it!” Yun Che let out a wild laugh, “However, I have utmost confidence that I will be able to send this destruction domain hurtling downwards before you are even able to touch me. At

that time, my one life will be exchanged with the lives of all the disciples within your Divine Phoenix Sect and the destruction of Phoenix City. No matter how you look at it, it's simply too worth it."

"You..." Feng Tianwei's arm trembled and even though his expression remained calm, he gritted his teeth so hard that he came close to breaking them.

Although the rest of the Divine Phoenix Sect were unable to completely understand just how

terrifying the flame domain Yun Che had created was, Feng Tianwei, even when he had been fifty kilometers away from it, could already feel his heart fill with fear and alarm. Now that he was just below the domain, he was even more shocked as he was now extremely clear on just how terrifying it was.

If Yun Che truly sent this flame domain smashing downwards, he could preserve his own life, but even if he used all his strength, he would not be able to cause the domain to dissipate... and so, he would be unable to protect Phoenix City.

And it was not only him, even if all the Monarchs within the sect came out of seclusion and joined together to try and stop this domain, they would not be able to do it either.

Even though he could scarcely believe it and did not want to admit it, the aura, might, and principles of fire encompassed within the fire domain... was something that had clearly far surpassed the fourth stage of their Divine Phoenix Sect's profound art, which was also the highest level their Phoenix

flames could attain!!

“You... just who are you!? And right now, just what kind of profound fire... are you using!?” Feng Tianwei strove with all his might to keep his cool. He knew extremely clearly that he would not receive a genuine reply to his questions, but in the hundreds of years that he had lived, this was the first time he truly wanted to know the answer to his question.

Yun Che was only just over the age of twenty, with his profound

strength being only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm, yet he was able to kill two Monarchs of his Divine Phoenix Sect and his speed was not any less than his own... just what kind of monster was he!? And who exactly was capable of breeding such a monster!?

Just what kind of flame was he using!? To think that it would cause the body and soul of a level six Monarch who possessed the Phoenix fire to tremble with such fear.



“Do you still need to ask? Naturally they are the flames that will punish your Divine Phoenix Sect and all of the people within it!” Yun Che said coldly.

“You... if you truly sent that destruction domain hurtling downwards, the moment it engulfs my Phoenix City, it will also send shockwaves through most of the Divine Phoenix City as well. Hundred of thousands, perhaps even a million, of innocent lives will be lost! Do you not fear the wrath of heaven!?” Feng Tianwei said as he silently gritted his teeth, his

mind was filled with racing thoughts as he sought to find a chink in Yun Che's armor.

“The wrath of heaven? Right now, I am the wrath of heaven that has been sent to administer your punishment!” Yun Che yelled in a dispassionate tone, “From the moment I have arrived at this Divine Phoenix City, everything that I have done to your Divine Phoenix Sect is due to your own folly, and something that all of you richly deserve! Today, even if the entire Divine Phoenix City is incinerated by this domain, the main culprit behind this event

will still be your Divine Phoenix Sect!”

As Feng Tianwei and Yun Che spoke, the aura within Phoenix City had grown extremely hot and oppressive. Moreover, their exchange had caused all those who were present to take notice of something—that even Feng Tianwei was unable to deal with the flame domain which was hanging in the sky!

Feng Ximing took a huge gulp of air before moving forward to speak softly to Feng Tianwei,

“Grandfather, don’t waste your words on him, I... I will immediately go to Phoenix Fire Divine Realm and get the other...”

Feng Tianwei violently thrust out a hand as he made a move to obstruct him. This movement caused Feng Ximing and Feng Hengkong’s pupils to violently contract as the shock on their faces instantly grew by an immeasurable amount.

“Royal father, is that domain... truly so terrifying?” Feng

Hengkong's voice was very soft but it was still accompanied by heavy trembling.

Feng Tianwei slowly nodded his head and said in an extremely grave voice, "If it truly does descend, then not only will all of you die, Phoenix City will also be destroyed as well. And even if all the Monarchs within our sect join hands, we will only be able to watch it happen!"

Feng Hengkong. "!!!"

“How... how is this possible? How could Yun Che...” The already scorching air seemed like it would catch fire at any moment, but Feng Hengkong could only feel his entire body go completely cold. He suddenly quivered before anxiously speaking, “This Yun Che’s personality is most extreme, it is as if he is a literal madman. There is nothing that he won’t do... We need to immediately send out sound transmissions to get all of the people to evacuate Phoenix City, at least...”

“No!” Feng Tianwei shouted sternly, “If Phoenix City is

destroyed, it will not merely be our foundation that will be razed with it. What's even more calamitous is the fact that the Phoenix God's passing will also be completely exposed. At that time, the fate of a Divine Phoenix Sect with no guardian divine spirit or foundation will be... can't you predict it!?"

Feng Hengkong's entire body shook fiercely and his face instantly became as pale as a sheet.

As the Ancestral Phoenix God

of Divine Phoenix Sect, the Phoenix Divine Spirit very rarely made an appearance. But during events which concerned the life and threatened the existence of the Divine Phoenix Sect, it was definitely bound to show up! Even though it was suspicious that the Phoenix Divine Spirit still had not made an appearance yet, in the end it would just remain a suspicion, and no matter how much the onlookers doubted, their doubt would be easily negated by the fact that the figure of the Phoenix God had just made an appearance three years prior.



But if Phoenix City was truly destroyed and the Phoenix God still did not make an appearance... then, the truth of the Phoenix God's passing would be completely exposed to the world.

At that time, Divine Phoenix Sect would truly meet with the risk of being exterminated!

Feng Tianwei raised a finger behind his back to tell Feng Hengkong to remain silent before he raised his head to stare directly at Yun Che and

solemnly continued, “Yun Che, the invasion of the Blue Wind Nation was indeed the fault of our Divine Phoenix Empire. Originally, we had felt that conquering the Blue Wind Nation would be no harder than lifting our hands, but we never expected someone like you to ever appear from Blue Wind Nation!

“Our sect has the protection of our Ancestral Phoenix God and even if your flame domain was ten times stronger, it still wouldn’t be able to touch even an inch of our Phoenix City. But my sect has sworn for

generations that unless it is matter of life and death, we will definitely not borrow the power of our Ancestral Phoenix God. So now that this matter has come to a head, my sect is willing to admit defeat.”

“Heh...” Yun Che’s brows sunk and a mocking grin hung on his face. However he did not expose Feng Tianwei’s blatant lie.

And the only reason for that was naturally Feng Xue’er.

If not for Feng Xue'er, he would have been more than eager to see Divine Phoenix Sect being completely clobbered into the ground by the Four Great Sacred Grounds who had long viewed them as a threat!

“Yun Che, if you truly wished to destroy our Phoenix City, you would have long ago sent that destructive domain hurtling downwards. You tricked me into leaving this place in order to be able to complete this destruction domain, yet you intentionally waited for me to return, so it is clear that you do not want to go too far. Even though you have

killed many princes and elders from our Divine Phoenix Sect, but in the end, you did save the life of Xue'er three years ago. In the eyes of my sect, Xue'er's life is far more important than the lives of all the people that you have killed, so my sect also does not feel the need to take things too far with you as well."

In any other power or family, Feng Tianwei's words would have caused discomfort and unrest but in Divine Phoenix Sect, no one thought that it was inappropriate.

Because in the eyes of the entire sect, the life of Feng Xue'er was indeed more valuable and important than all the disciples, princes, elders and even the two grand elders who had died!

She was much more important by far!

And it was not the least bit exaggerated to say so!!

“State your terms.” Feng Tianwei's eyes were like those of a starving eagle but his tone was

cold and crisp and there was no sign of panic in it, it was as if nothing had deviated from his plans, “As long as they are not too unreasonable, in order to protect Phoenix City, our sect is willing to accept all the terms and let you leave with your life.”

“My sect has been established for thousands of years and in all this time, we have never made a single concession before! But, if you fail to see the kindness that is being shown to you, make unreasonable demands of us and cross the bottomline of my divine sect, hmph, then even though we will have to endure

our Ancestral Phoenix God's wrath, we will have no choice but to borrow its power. At that time, our Phoenix City will remain safe and sound, but not only will you die a miserable death, we will ensure that Blue Wind Nation forever disappears from the face of Profound Sky Continent and not a single root remains!"

"The words of I, Feng Tianwei, are worth their weight in gold!"

Feng Tianwei's voice resounded throughout the entire Divine



Phoenix City and each of his words were ear-splitting and shocking.

If it was someone else, they would truly be stunned into insensibility by Feng Tianwei's words.

However, for Yun Che who had known long ago that the Phoenix God had already passed on, the latter half of Feng Tianwei's words were not the least bit intimidating, and it almost caused him to burst out in laughter.

# Chapter 720 – Excessive Extent

---

In comparison to Feng Hengkong's frame of mind and shrewdness, Feng Tianwei was naturally far superior.

However, the precondition of a psychological warfare was that the opposing party couldn't know one's secrets. Otherwise, one would have lost before even starting.

Although he didn't know, it was

even more so the case for Feng Tianwei, as even within the Divine Phoenix Sect, only small number of people knew that the Phoenix God was dead.

“Conditions? Heh heh, as expected of the Grand Phoenix Sect Master, how sharp and straightforward you are. Truly so much better than your wastrel of a son who inherited the position of Sect Master. Previously, I did not immediately act and instead gave you multiple opportunities. Every time I appeared, the first thing I would always do was initiate negotiations with your

Divine Phoenix Sect and clearly list my terms. What a shame, even when I gave you people face you continued to throw it away!”

“Yet now, you are the ones seeking to negotiate with me.” Yun Che squinted, his sarcastic gaze like a sharp blade as he looked straight at Feng Hengkong. “Feng Hengkong, I’m really lamenting on the behalf of the Phoenix disciples, princes, elders, and grand elders for the injustices they suffered as it was your foolishness which sent them to their deaths.”

“You!” Feng Hengkong clenched his teeth as he almost spit out blood. As of this moment, he already could not help but acknowledge the bitter fact that he, the dignified Phoenix Sect Master, the Divine Phoenix Emperor, had suffered an utter and complete defeat before Yun Che.

Starting from the first day, Yun Che had shown weakness as he knowingly proposed conditions that were impossible for the opposite party to agree to; conditions which would be viewed as jokes... Then he had gradually revealed his own

strength. Every time, he would reveal a little more, and then he would propose another condition that they were even more so unable to accept. Each time, he made them think that it was already the limit of his strength...

He had indeed come to negotiate and propose terms every day. However, every time, he had purposely proposed ones that they could not accept! Now that the time had come where they couldn't reject the conditions, the conditions that he proposed were ones that they were even more unable to

accept...

The purpose of his revenge was not merely to kill and or injure them, but to also cause them to tremble in fear and to feel humiliation and regret...

Just as Yun Che had desired, all of these feelings had been ruthlessly imprinted upon Feng Hengkong's soul.

Although they had been deliberately lead on by Yun Che, the loss of dignity, the collapse

of Phoenix City, the deaths of the four princes, the five elders, and Feng Tianqing and Feng Tianyu... they had all happened because he refused to comply with the requests set by Yun Che time after time!!

Now, faced with the crisis of extermination of their clan, they were the ones that had to take the initiative to seek out negotiations.

All the deaths from before had been in vain!



Such hatred, remorse, and fear had made Feng Hengkong's heart twitch with pain to the point where no one knew just how many times it nearly shattered.

Feng Hengkong knew that this was Yun Che's cruel retaliation towards him, and that Yun Che had completely succeeded. At least, the present feeling of humiliation that Feng Hengkong felt was ten million times more painful than death.

In front of Yun Che, he had

suffered a crushing defeat. His profound strength was far weaker as well. As even Feng Tianwei's back had become completely drenched in sweat when he personally faced Yun Che, it was clear that he, even though he was the Phoenix Sect Master... simply didn't have the qualifications to go against Yun Che.

“What conditions have Yun Che previously set?” Feng Tianwei turned to the side, asking Feng Hengkong with a sinking tone.

Feng Hengkong pressed his palm against his chest and fully calmed his voice before he said, "He wants us to withdraw our troops by a set time, pay thirty billion purple profound coins as compensation, apologize to the Blue Wind Nation, and hang the imperial edict stating our apology on our city walls for at least ten years. Furthermore...." Feng Hengkong clenched his teeth: "Furthermore, he wants us to cede the entire Red Jade Region to Blue Wind and for Ximing to cripple his profound arts so that they can hold him as a hostage in Blue Wind Imperial City for a full fifty years!!"

“...” Feng Tianwei’s brows were fiercely locked. To compensate, apologize, cede territory, and give away the crown prince as hostage... every condition along brought shame that had never before been seen in the history of the Divine Phoenix Nation, every condition trampled upon the five thousand years of dignity of his Divine Phoenix!

“Grandfather, although Ximing is not powerful, I still have the identity of the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince! Even if I were to die ten thousand times, I still would never accept this humiliation! My Divine Phoenix

also cannot suffer this humiliation!" Feng Ximing shouted with a trembling voice. Undoubtedly, he feared that under this kind of pressure, Feng Tianwei might actually accept Yun Che's conditions. He was the Divine Phoenix Empire's Crown Prince but if he were to cripple his profound arts and go to Blue Wind Imperial City, he would inevitably pass every second within the next fifty years in unimaginable humiliation.

If he was still alive and able to return to the Divine Phoenix Empire after fifty years, it would

be impossible for his crippled self to still be the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince. When people saw him, they would only think of the history of humiliation that he carried on his back.

“Yun Che, if these are the conditions you put forward...” Feng Tianwei’s eyebrows slanted into a V-shape, “Did you think there was a possibility that my Divine Phoenix Sect would accept these!!”

“No, no, that’s not the case.” The anger and coercion Feng

Tianwei had been secretly storing was just about to be surface until he heard the denial Yun Che gave while smiling, which left him stunned. Contrary to the chilling expression Feng Tianwei had, Yun Che's expression was actually that of happiness, "Those were only just yesterday's conditions. Your son should already clearly know. How could today's conditions possibly be the same as yesterday's?!"

"Sss..." Feng Hengkong's lip trembled, the nightmares he had experienced in the past three

days hovered over his mind and soul. Each one had been more frightful than the one before and the pain, resentment, rage, regret, and humiliation accumulated one after the other...

Thinking back to the Yun Che from the first day... he had seemed like the reincarnation of the benevolent Buddha from legends.

“What do you mean?” Feng Tianwei’s brow sunk even deeper.



“Royal father.....” Feng Hengkong opened his mouth, however, he was not able to utter a sound for a long time. Finally, he lifted his finger, gathered the memories of the past days into profound strength, and passed it to Feng Tianwei’s soul.

Suddenly, what Feng Hengkong had experienced when facing Yun Che in the past couple days was completely displayed within Feng Tianwei’s mind. His face did not change, but yet a quick glance revealed his fierce

shock...

He was not shocked by Yun Che's schemes.

Rather, he was shocked by the plans and methods he used which were more murderous than a devil and more venomous than a poisonous snake.

Is he... really only twenty-two years old!?!

“Hehe, Grand Sect Master need not worry. Although I, Yun Che, am not a good man, when facing your Divine Phoenix Sect, I believe that I have already offered the greatest amount of kindness of my life.” Yun Che gave a light chuckle; to anyone in the Divine Phoenix Sect, his words all seemed like jokes, only he himself knew that his words were true to the utmost extent: “These opportunities have been wasted by your arrogance and stupidity, you have no one to blame but yourselves. However the Grand Sect Master came personally and moreover, conceded on his own initiative, I naturally must give him some face as I am from the younger

generation. Therefore compared to yesterday, today I will only slightly modify the three conditions.”

After he read the memory fragment that Feng Hengkong had passed over, Feng Tianwei understood that Yun Che was more than just difficult to deal with... right now, it could be said that he was negotiating with a real devil. He raised his head slightly and with a calm and tranquil tone, “Say it then, those three conditions.”

“First, the compensation amount will be changed to fifty billion purple profound coins! Deliver it to the Blue Wind Imperial Family, not a single coin less!!”

“Fifty... fifty billion!” The face of the Phoenix elders who were unable to accept the ten billion originally proposed by Yun Che twitched. Feng Ximing clenched his teeth, “Yun Che, quit daydreaming already!”

“...Continue.” Feng Tianwei said in a deep voice.

“As for the second...” Yun Che’s gaze fell on Feng Ximing, making his whole body tighten, “Yesterday I mentioned that your Divine Phoenix Crown Prince must come to the Blue Wind Imperial Family to be a guest. Who knew that the distinguished Crown Prince would unexpectedly be scared shitless, making it so that people pitied him just by looking at him. If he came to my Blue Wind Imperial City and became insane after being terrified, that would be too awful to see.”

“Yun Che, you!!” Feng Ximing’s face turned jet black, he hated that he couldn’t use his mouth to bite Yun Che into pieces.

“Therefore it would be better for this Divine Phoenix Crown Prince to not go to my Blue Wind Nation’s land. However there must be someone who will become a guest of my Blue Wind Imperial Family...” In front of everyone’s startled eyes, Yun Che’s gaze fell upon Feng Hengkong body, “Then the current Phoenix Sect Master will do.

“Completely cripple Feng Hengkong’s profound arts, have him return to the Blue Wind Imperial City with me, and kneel in front of my royal father Cang Wanhe’s grave for one hundred years!

“Not a single day less!!”

~ ! @# ¥ %.....

These words from Yun Che hit the minds of everyone in the Divine Phoenix Sect like thunder, causing all their faces



to drastically change color, angering them to the point their chests were about crack. A sound that resembled the the dislocating of bones could be heard from Feng Tianwei.

Without waiting for their angry roar, Yun Che voice continued to ring, “Thirdly, within two hundred years from today, your Divine Phoenix Empire must present at least one billion purple profound coins, fifteen thousand kilograms of purple crystals, twenty five hundred thousand kilograms of profound iron and stones, and five thousand sets of phoenix fire

weapons and armor as tributes to my Blue Wind Imperial Family!”

“And every ten years, the quantity will increase by twenty percent.”

“There can only be more, not less!!”

Even if Feng Tianwei had several thousand years more of mentality and self-control, he would still wish that he could curse out loud at Yun Che while

pointing at his face this instant.

The faces of all the people in the Divine Phoenix Sect darkened, their expression uglier than if they had swallowed five tonnes of dog turd. Even if Feng Tianwei exhausted all his energy into constraining his anger, he was not able to keep a calm tone, and instead it trembled fiercely, “Yun... Che! I saw that you rescued Xue’er before and yielded to you on my own initiative, do not... go too far...”

He could not find any words to describe his own emotions at the moment... The words “go too far” were simply not enough to express his anger towards Yun Che!

“Go too far?” Yun Che’s eyebrows sank, his happy expression becoming incomparably cold, “Because of you, the lives of fifty million citizens of my Blue Wind Nation were lost. Countless people are destitute and homeless. For them, to mention a mere fifty billion purple profound coins; five hundred billion, even five trillion are not enough to return

the lives of even one of their lives!!

“Fifty billion in compensation, how is that excessive in the slightest!!”

“The late emperor of Blue Wind and the royal father of my wife Cang Yue and I, Cang Wanhe, had always revered your Divine Phoenix and had not even a shred of enmity or disrespect for it. Yet you set a death trap for him... he who was also the emperor of a nation. My royal father was cruelly murdered by

you, yet I have not said I wanted the life of Feng Hengkong, who should have died a thousand deaths, and instead wanted him to just redeem his sins for just a short hundred years, how is that excessive in the slightest!”

“Since the founding of Blue Wind a thousand years ago, we have given your Divine Phoenix Empire generations of tribute for a total of a thousand years, never having a missed year! Now that your Divine Phoenix trampled upon my Blue Wind, all I’m making you do is a trivial two hundred years of tribute to my Blue Wind, is that also too

excessive?!”

“Feng Tianwei, you explain to me, was it I who bullied your Divine Phoenix, or was it your Divine Phoenix who bullied my Blue Wind?!”

The last few words fell and Yun Che’s voice caused sand to surge through all directions throughout the entire Phoenix City, making every soul tremble.

“Yun Che, there is no need to chew words with me.” Feng

Tianwei looked sternly, the veins on his forehead looking ready to burst, “My Divine Phoenix can completely give the compensation of fifty billion purple profound coins to the Blue Wind Imperial Family, we can even cede the Red Jade Region to your Blue Wind! However, this is the bottom line that my Divine Phoenix can tolerate, as for the others...”

“There is no need for you to waste your time talking rubbish with me, either.” Yun Che sneered without leaving any ground, “You only need to say whether you accept or do not



accept, you do not have the qualifications to bargain back and forth.

“Not even in the slightest!!”

Every single one of Yun Che’s words were like thunder, and not the slightest room was left.

“Grand Sect Master, regardless of my Divine Phoenix Empire or the Divine Phoenix Sect, none of them may be trampled and humiliated like this!” the four Phoenix elders shouted out.

“We have the protection of the Lord Phoenix God. If he really is prepared to destroy Phoenix City at this moment, Lord Phoenix God will definitely appear. Each of this devilspawn’s words are just wishful thinking!!

“Yun Che, you just wait to receive Lord Phoenix God’s anger and sanction!!”

“Silence!” Feng Tianwei waved suddenly, bringing about a blast of turbulent wind. To the knowledge of the Phoenix elders

and disciples, the Phoenix God still lived in this world, therefore, even though they were angry, their hearts were assured because they believed in the existence of the Ancestral Phoenix God. But the pressure that was put in the hearts of Feng Tianwei, Feng Hengkong, and Feng Ximing undoubtedly surpassed theirs by many times.

Only they clearly knew that what they faced may be complete extinction.

If it really reached that point,

then Phoenix City would only be the starting point. The chain reaction from discovering that the Phoenix God was dead would be the scariest.

Therefore, no matter what, they could not let Yun Che choose to sink the destruction domain.

However the conditions he put forward..... how could they accept them?!

“Good, very good.” Feng

Tianwei looked angrily at Yun Che, his whole body trembling slightly. At this moment, the only thing he could take rely on was to use the Ancestral Phoenix God to frighten Yun Che, “What if I don’t comply?”

“Then that’s great!!” There was no hesitation or disappointment. Instead, Yun Che’s face had a look of excitement as if he couldn’t wait to reply to Feng Tianwei, “Then let this Phoenix City forever vanish from this world!!”

“Hahahaha!” Feng Tianwei raised his head and laughed wildly, “Indeed, I do not have the ability to offset your flame domain. But do you really think that with that much strength you can destroy this Phoenix City? I have said before, although my Ancestral Phoenix God rarely comes to this mortal world, if you dare sink that domain and threaten this Phoenix City’s safety, Lord Phoenix God will appear! With Lord Phoenix God’s strength, only a moment would be necessary to destroy this destruction domain and completely eliminate you from this world!”

“Alright! Then I will throw this destruction domain down and see what your Divine Phoenix Sect’s so-called Ancestral Phoenix God looks like!!”

Even in Feng Tianwei’s dream he never would have imagined that Yun Che did not show the slightest hint of being intimidated or turn hesitant after he had shouted out “Ancestral Phoenix God”.; instead, Yun Che’s aura acutely shifted about, as his entire body burned with flames, striking a posture of immediately hurling

the destruction domain down.

“S... Stop!!!!” Feng Hengkong roared, his voice hoarse and fierce. Yun Che’s movements had startled the three of them almost to the extent of their souls leaving their bodies.

Rrrmb...

The sounds of profound strength rolled down from the skies above like thunder. The scarlet gold domain covered the entire sky like a slow moving sea



of magma. The originally scorching hot temperature of the air surged again, and a judgement day-like aura covered all of Phoenix City.

Under Feng Hengkong's panic-stricken roar, Yun Che's arm suddenly stopped. Despite the turmoil of the appearance of the destruction domain, he had at least not thrown it down. Yun Che overlooked them with a smile, "What happened Phoenix Sect Master? You have the protection of the great Phoenix God. I cannot possibly damage the Phoenix City if I throw this down, it would be suicide. Could

it be that the Phoenix Sect Master was actually worried about my life?”

Yun Che’s voice, eyes, and aura clearly radiated confidence. Hence, Feng Tianwei began to feel that Yun Che already knew the truth that the Phoenix God was dead...

Otherwise, how could he be so calm and resolute when faced against the “Ancestral Phoenix God”, which could even deter the Four Great Sacred Grounds!

If it was really like this, then his final bargaining chip against Yun Che was useless.

“Yun Che,” Feng Tianwei opened his eyes, his voice becoming low and drawn out, “Must you do it to such an excessive extent!”

“Excessive extent?” Yun Che replied to him with an ice-cold sneer, “If I had returned one day later, than this Profound Sky Continent would never have a Blue Wind Nation again! In this world, anyone can tell me these

words. Only your Divine  
Phoenix Empire... is not  
worthy!”

Feng Tianwei: “...”

Rrmmb.....

The purgatory in the sky began to churn more and more violently. Hot and chaotic blasts continued to strike down from the air, especially around the edges of the domain. The scarlet gold boiling flames had already begun its slow downward

descent. Yun Che lifted his head to take a glance. Then, he narrowed his eyes and said with a sinking voice, "This is only the second time in my life that I have used this destruction domain. Both times were given to your Divine Phoenix Sect. Feng Tianwei, you should have already felt that I currently do not have the strength to maintain its condition any longer. In roughly sixty breaths of time, it will completely break away from my control and even if I wanted it to return, it would be impossible.

"In other words, I can grant

you at most sixty breaths of time... to choose either survival or destruction!”

The heat of the air had reached the extent where an average man would burn if he touched it, yet Feng Tianwei, Feng Hengkong, and Feng Ximing felt as cold as ice. The Phoenix elders had also begun to notice that something felt wrong and all of their gazes focused upon Feng Tianwei, not daring to say a single word more.

“Grandfather...” Feng Ximing

watched Feng Tianwei's back, his face pale. He never could have imagined that Yun Che, who he had not paid any attention to back then, would in three short years, return and control the life and death of his Divine Phoenix Sect.

“Royal father...” Feng Hengkong powerlessly uttered, then slowly stretched his right palm, silently pressing it to the position of the profound vein's core position...

His profound strength had just

started to dissipate when a familiar aura touched heavily upon his soul, causing him to instantly lift his head, as though he had been electrocuted.

In almost the same instant, Feng Tianwei, Feng Ximing... and everyone else's gaze gathered at the same place.

At this time, Yun Che's facial expression suddenly froze as well...

“Big Brother Yun... is that...



you?”

A young girl’s dream-like voice escaped from behind him, sounding like soft clouds, yet also reminiscent of the gentle weeping of the wind.

# Chapter 721 – Finally Meeting

---

Yun Che did not turn around.

Ever since he had entered Divine Phoenix Empire, the person he had feared seeing the most had been Feng Xue'er.

It wasn't that he didn't want to, but rather he couldn't... nor did he dare to.

Furthermore, with every time he stepped in Phoenix City and every additional member of Divine Phoenix Sect he killed, the more unable he became to face Feng Xue'er.

Not only was she a member of Divine Phoenix Sect, she was also the daughter of Feng Hengkong. Furthermore, she was of the apple of the eye of the entire Divine Phoenix Empire... At the same time, she also existed in the softest spot within his heart. During his current trip to Divine Phoenix Empire... she had been the biggest "obstacle" in his heart.

“Xue’er...” Yun Che muttered softly. His heart which had not fluttered or felt fear in the face of the Divine Phoenix Sect was now an utter mess.

The snow garments that Feng Xue’er wore fluttered due to the waves created by the scorching heat as her snow white hands intensely covered her mouth. Her absolute beauty which could cause even the fairies in heaven to pale in comparison was now being completely stifled by her gushing tears.

Yun Che's utter was as soft as the blowing wind as he failed to suppress his emotions any longer. However, this had caused all of the pent up emotions within Feng Xue'er to simultaneously erupt as she sobbed loudly and rushed towards Yun Che, her tears continuing to flow like the shining stars within the night sky.

At this moment, the flaming purgatory in the skies, the abnormalities within Phoenix City, and the looming threat that

shadowed over the entire city... had all been forgotten by her. Within her eyes which were flooded with tears, everything vanished except for the figure of Yun Che..

“Princess Snow...”

“Xue’er, don’t get near him!!”

Feng Xue’er’s arrival had taken everyone by surprise. However, her incomprehensible actions caused them to feel even more shock and confusion which

made them turn pale in horror.

Below, at least several thousand shocked cries simultaneously erupted, but they were unable to even slightly stop Feng Xue'er's movements. As her snow garments fluttered, she rushed towards Yun Che like a firefly approaching light and hugged him tightly from behind, tightly pressing her crying face into Yun Che's shoulders. She closed her eyes as she immersed herself in the scent and aura that only Yun Che possessed and dreamily muttered, "Big Brother Yun... Am I really not... dreaming... Big Brother Yun..."

“...” Yun Che’s entire body tightened. The fiendish aura that had been pressing down upon the entire Divine Phoenix City disappeared as the cry rang out. It had burst uncontrollably like a bubble. Even his anger, resent, hatred and desire for revenge had been wrapped up by this feeling of warmth and softness.

“Princess... Princess Snow...”

“What... Whatwhatwhat...”



“What... What is going on? Just what had happened?”

.....

Everyone within Divine Phoenix Sect was shocked. Stunned, they raised their heads and blankly gazed at the image of Yun Che and Feng Xue'er tightly hugging each other. Their mouths were completely agape and their eyes were opened so wide that it seemed as if their eyeballs were about to pop out.

Feng Xue'er. She was the apple of the eye of Divine Phoenix Sect, the sacred treasure and only princess bestowed upon Divine Phoenix Empire. Moreover, she was the sole remaining true successor of the Divine Phoenix Spirit and Divine Phoenix Sect's second Phoenix God!

Her talent, status, elegance, bloodline, and beauty... were all unparalleled beneath the heavens. Such a character was Princess Snow, a fairytale like existence within Divine Phoenix

Empire who had received the utmost care and protection from the entire sect. Before she turned thirteen, she had been personally guarded by the Ancestral Phoenix God itself. It had been difficult even for Feng Hengkong to meet her. After she turned thirteen, even the precious princes and elders still could not get close to her.

However, right now... that Princess Snow who was like the world to them was tightly embracing a man from outside of their sect. Furthermore, she had taken the initiative to hug him, and had even cried a river

because of him.

“Xue’er, get away from him now!!” Feng Ximing’s eyes went bloodshot as his chest began to heave so much that it seemed like it was about to explode. Feng Xue’er’s sudden return had not come as much of a surprise to him. After all, such a large commotion was definitely sufficient to reach Phoenix Perching Valley. However, never in his wildest dreams had he thought that the first thing she would do upon returning would be to embrace Yun Che.

Feng Ximing felt as if every part of his body was about to explode. A sense of indescribable rage... as well as jealousy had seemingly overtaken his brain. Not even when Yun Che had previously forced him into a perilous situation, had his hatred towards Yun Che been so extreme...

Because even he, the Divine Phoenix Crown Prince and Xue'er's oldest brother... had not managed to touch so much as her pinky before.

As Feng Ximing's extreme rage took over, he let out a guttural, savage growl and then he suddenly rose into the air, roaring as he charged forward.

Feng Tianwei's gaze sunk as he suddenly waved his arm downwards and a strong profound energy caused Feng Ximing to heavily crash into the ground, "Do you really want to die so badly!!"

"Ming'er, don't be an embarrassment!" growled Feng Hengkong as he glared at Feng

Ximing, who was climbing up from the ground with a contorted face. However, his fists were also tightly clenched and his face painfully contorted as well. It did not pale in comparison to Feng Ximing.

When Feng Xue'er woke up, the tears she shed for Yun Che had caused Feng Hengkong's emotions to be thrown into confusion. Thus, when he suddenly found out that Yun Che had not died, his killing intent had tremendously surged in an instant.

Today, the matter he was worried and most afraid of had finally happened... Furthermore, it was worse and more shocking than what he had expected.

“Just what the heck... is going on?” Feng Tianwei’s face was frighteningly dark. As someone who had lived hundred of years and had once been the emperor of the nation and the sect master of the sect, how would he not realise that... Feng Xue’er’s current actions towards Yun Che were far beyond just simply “repaying his kindness”!



He could simply not believe that she would shed tears for a man and take initiative to hug a man herself.

She was Xue'er... the future “god” of Divine Phoenix Sect!!

“...” Feng Hengkong’s twisted fingers tightly clawed at his head as he painfully replied , “This was the reason... why I had to kill Yun Che...”

“Xue’er must have been bewitched by him... Kill him... Grandfather, you must kill that bastard Yun Che. Kill him!!!” Feng Ximing reached out and grabbed the corners of Feng Tianwei’s clothes. Both the sound of his voice and his expression were as if he had been stabbed thousands of times.

“...” Feng Tianwei’s eyebrows strongly twitched as he deeply exhaled. Looking up into the sky, his eyebrows sank slightly and he muttered, “Xue’er’s aura... Why is there such a big change...”

Within this world, there was not a single person that could bear seeing Feng Xue'er shed tears. As she sobbed, her tears constantly dripped onto Yun Che's shoulders, dampening his outer garment as they seeped through and landed on his skin, deeply touching the depths of his heart.

After being frozen for a long time, Yun Che finally decided to turn around. Stretching out his hand, he lifted Feng Xue'er's sobbing face and gently wiped her falling tears... the Feng

Xue'er who was currently right by him looked exactly the same as she had three years ago. Her appearance had not changed a single bit, and her radiant snow beauty was still as dreamy as before.

“Xue'er... Have you and Chan'er been well the past three years?”

Tears muddled Feng Xue'er's eyes as she blankly stared at Yun Che. She wanted to laugh heartily, but at the same, she also wanted to tightly hug him and cry, “As long as I can see Big

Brother Yun... I'll be fine forever... I... I had thought... that I would never get to see you again..."

"I have still yet to fulfill my promise with Xue'er, why wouldn't you be unable to see me again? These three years, I was just taken on a sightseeing journey by the Great Primordial Ark." Yun Che gently smiled.

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er smiled, tears still in her eyes. Her smile seemed to instantly cause all the things in the world lose their

glow.

The flaming purgatory continued to hang in the sky over Phoenix City as the hearts of all the members of Divine Phoenix Clan continued to tighten below. However, the melancholic feelings they felt from Yun Che and Feng Xue'er's heated passion in mid-air had completely overshadowed all of the heat. All of the Phoenix elders and disciples were dumbfounded. As for Feng Ximing, he grit his teeth so tightly that he bled as he tried his best to prevent himself from breaking down completely.

However, he could not help but let out a beast like roar as he wildly shouted, “Yun Che... LET GO OF MY ROYAL SISTER!

“Xue’er, get away from him, hurry up and get away from him! He’ll kill you!” Feng Ximing looked as though he had completely lost all sanity.

Feng Ximing’s roar also seemed to have caused the dazed Divine Phoenix profound practitioners back to snap back to reality as Feng Tianwei also sternly shouted, “Xue’er, hurry up and

get away from that person. Come to Grandfather's side! He's too dangerous!!!”

Feng Xue'er's snowy hands gently wiped away the trails of tears on her face as she revealed a smile which came from the depths of her heart and said, “Grandfather, royal brother, you all don't have to worry. Big Brother Yun will never harm Xue'er.”

“No! Xue'er, you don't understand!” Feng Hengkong raised both his arms and



shouted in a trembling voice, “He’s not the Yun Che from three years ago! He’s now a lunatic, a scary demon! Do you know, in just the past few days, he’s killed your fourteenth brother, your thirteenth brother, as well as your ninth and eleventh brother... They were all killed by Yun Che!

“And their deaths were unbelievably tragic as not even their corpse was left behind!”

“Also, the Great elder and second elder... even Tianqi and

Tianyu, two of our grand elders, were all killed by him!” bellowed Feng Ximing with all his might as he followed after Feng Hengkong’s words, “Even royal father was severely injured by him! He even wanted to destroy our entire Phoenix City... That flame domain in the sky is what he was going to use to destroy our Phoenix City! Xue’er, hurry up and get away from him! He is truly a devil and the mortal enemy of our entire sect!”

Feng Xue’er had never seen Feng Hengkong and Feng Ximing scream so intensely before. With her unparalleled

intelligence, how could she have failed to notice what had happened here? However, all of this had been pushed out of her mind with the appearance of Yun Che. Now, as she heard the cries and screams of her royal father and royal brother, her eyes became clouded as she shook her head in refusal, “It... It can’t be. Big Brother Yun wouldn’t have done such things.”

Yun Che, “...”

## Chapter 722 – Cruel

---

“Xue’er, could it be that you cannot see what he’s currently doing?!” Feng Tianwei face turned green. When he faced the threat that Yun Che brought before, there was no change in his expression. However, after Feng Xue’er’s arrival, each scene that he saw caused his entire body to shiver. He stretched out his finger and pointed at Yun Che, “If you don’t believe, you can ask him for yourself!”

“They did not lie to you.”  
Immediately after Feng Tianwei

finished speaking, Yun Che's calm voice had already resounded, "In the past few days, I've already killed four of your royal brothers, many of your clan members... and the flame domain in the sky was also meant to destroy Phoenix City."

"No, I still won't believe it." Feng Xue'er continued to shake her head as she suddenly turned to Feng Hengkong, "Royal father, what happened? Have you all done something that harmed Big Brother Yun!"

Feng Xue'er's words caused Feng Hengkong's chest to turn heavy as he replied in a panicked and pained voice, "Xue'er... What... what kind of psychedelic soup did he feed you... He killed your brothers and even wants to destroy our entire sect. He has long since become mortal enemies with our sect... He has even admitted it himself! Why do you... insist on defending him!!

"Would you rather believe someone who has killed your brothers and wants to destroy your entire sect over your royal father?!"

Hearing Yun Che's own confession, Feng Xue'er did not have the shock that she was supposed to have nor did she move away from Yun Che. Her first reaction was instead to question her own birth father. This was undoubtedly a huge blow to Feng Hengkong... to everyone within Divine Phoenix Sect, it was a huge blow that they could not believe or comprehend.

“Royal father is Xue'er's closest person. Xue'er would definitely believe every single word royal

father says.” She then shook her head in a hurt manner, “However, Xue’er similarly believes that Big Brother Yun is definitely not the ‘lunatic’ and ‘devil’ that royal father speaks of. Has royal father forgotten that back then, it was Big Brother Yun who saved Xue’er’s life and even sacrificed himself and stayed within the Primordial Ark? Such a kind Big Brother Yun who loved and cherished Xue’er so deeply definitely wouldn’t kill Xue’er’s brothers and clan members without reason.

“Furthermore, Big Brother Yun



was the same as Xue'er. Not only had he inherited the Phoenix God's bloodline, he had also inherited the Phoenix God's soul. Someone with an evil soul would never be able to receive the inheritance of the Phoenix Soul. For Big Brother Yun to do something like that, he must have a very strong reason... Otherwise, Big Brother Yun would never... would definitely never do such a thing!"

"..." Feng Hengkong opened his mouth but could not speak for a very long time. The reason Yun Che acted this way towards the Divine Phoenix Sect was

something that he knew far clearer than anyone else.

Everyone present from Divine Phoenix Sect, and even all the citizens of Divine Phoenix City also knew it fully well.

Perhaps within the entire Divine Phoenix Nation, Feng Xue'er was the only person who still did not know.

Yun Che's confession did not shock Feng Xue'er. However, the sudden silence had caused her

emotions to go into turmoil. Her two hands tightly gripped onto Yun Che's arm, and her eyes glinted with the helpless shine of a star, "Big Brother Yun, Xue'er would choose to believe that the entire world is lying than believe that you're an evil person. I know that there must be some reason behind this... Big Brother Yun, just what had happened? Can you tell Xue'er...."

Yun Che looked at Feng Xue'er. When he faced her, his expression seemed to soften subconsciously. He let out a deep sigh as he gently said, "In the

end... I can never defeat my own heart.”

Muttering to himself, Yun Che lifted his finger and tapped Feng Xue’er’s forehead. This action of his also caused Feng Hengkong to become shocked as he lost his composure and shouted, “Yun Che, what are you doing!!”

When Yun Che’s finger landed in the middle of Feng Xue’er’s forehead, a large portion of his memories from the moment he arrived in Profound Sky Continent was directly

transmitted into Feng Xue'er's mind.

Yun Che pulled back his hand and Feng Xue'er was already standing there with a dumbfounded expression. All the scenes that Yun Che saw as well as all the things that Yun Che heard upon his return entered her brain. The endless emptiness and loneliness, the ponds that had been burnt dry, the Divine Phoenix Army that marched like flooding waters towards Blue Wind Imperial City, the rivers that flowed with fresh blood, and the seemingly endless amount of corpses... She

had also felt all of Yun Che's emotions at that time... his shock, fear, anger, hatred and desire for revenge...

Feng Xue'er's petite figure started to tremble, her eyes lost its focus, and she also seemed to lose all her strength as tears rolled down her cheeks... It was as though she had lost her soul.

The moment Yun Che's finger touched Feng Xue'er's forehead, Feng Hengkong's heart was extremely unsettled. As he looked at Xue'er's reaction now,

his heart began to feel fear,  
“Xue’er, what’s wrong...”

“Why did you do that! Why...  
Why... WHY!!!”

Even before Feng Hengkong could finish speaking, Feng Xue’er’s voice pierced through his heart like needles. Her voice was exceptionally miserable, and there was even an unprecedented and uncontrollable emotion. Her face that was usually all smiles was currently filled with streaks of tears... However, the tears

were different from the excited and surprised tears when she saw Yun Che. Each bead of her current tears were filled with heart wrenching pain and suffering.

“Xue’er, don’t be angry and upset. Royal father had his reasons. All that he has done is for our Divine Phoenix Empire and our entire clan!” Feng Ximing hurriedly explained.

“Why did you do such a thing... WHY!!!”



Five consecutive “why”, each of them bearing a soul-ripping pain. She firmly believed that there must have been a reason why Yun Che attacked Divine Phoenix Sect, but she had never expected that the actual reason would actually be so cruel. In addition, she could not believe that her closest, most respected and most relied on father would carry out such actions.

On one side, it was her father, and on the other, it was her Big Brother Yun... Since she was young, she had always lived in a fairytale-like environment, and she had never experienced such

a harsh reality in her life.

“Xue’er, I...”

“Big Brother Yun used his life to save my life... Why did you do such things!” Feng Xue’er continued shouting while crying, “You previously promised me that... you’ll treat Blue Wind Nation kindly, treat and repay everyone related to Big Brother Yun... But why is the truth like this... Why did you kill so many citizens of Blue Wind Nation... Why did you kill Big Brother Yun’s royal father...”

Why... Why...”

Feng Xue'er's words became more and more sorrowful. Her trembling voice and the pain associated with it caused everyone's hearts to tightly clench, making it hard for them to breathe.

Feng Hengkong's entire body trembled; his heart was aching as though it had been stabbed by millions of blades. When he was finally able to lift his head, he did not dare to meet Feng Xue'er's gaze. Just as he was

about to speak, he suddenly saw... by the side of Feng Xue'er's lips, a streak of blood had trickled down, and it appeared exceptionally eye-catching and shocking on her jade-like face.

Feng Hengkong lost all his composure, "Xue'er, what's wrong!!"

Feng Tianwei, Feng Ximing... as well as Yun Che also spotted the streak of blood on Feng Xue'er's mouth at the same time. All of them were deeply shocked. Yun

Che frantically grabbed onto Feng Xue'er's waist and anxiously said, "Xue'er..."

The moment he touched Feng Xue'er's body, he could sense that the aura inside her body had become chaotic, and her breathing was also a mess... Numerous profound waves were attacking her heart veins in the chaos.

"Xue'er!!!" In his shock, Feng Hengkong could not care about anything else and shot into the sky. At the same time, the space

seemed to have suddenly trembled abnormally as numerous accumulated roars reverberated from the air and the surroundings. The originally highly pressured air started to twirl in chaos, and a large number of weaker Phoenix disciples were knocked onto the ground,

“Don’t get near!!!” Feng Tianwei quickly took action and grabbed Feng Hengkong down from midair. As he looked into the sky, all the veins on his body seemed to bulge...

“Shit!!” Feng Ximing revealed a frightened expression, “Grandfather, what should we do now...”

The destruction domain in the air was trembling, the bordering areas were quickly falling... obviously, the entire domain had lost control of its perimeter.

If it fell, it would signify the beginning of Divine Phoenix Sect’s annihilation.

“Big Brother Yun...” For the

current Feng Xue'er, there was no place other than Yun Che's arm that provided her with more warmth and assurance. However, her panic-stricken heart made her unable to look at Yun Che directly. She rested on Yun Che's shoulder, closed her eyes and softly said, "Can you let go of my royal father and the rest just this once... please... Xue'er knows that she does not have the face to request this from Big Brother Yun... but they are still my royal father and clan members... and this is still the place that I'll need to protect in the future..."



“Xue’er assures Big Brother Yun, I will definitely personally repay Big Brother Yun as well as Blue Wind Nation... alright...”

“Alright!!” Yun Che replied without even the slightest hint of hesitation.

Feng Xue’er looked up, the beads of tears shone the most beautifully in her eyes.

Yun Che released Feng Xue’er and raised both of his hands. His already lacking profound energy

had been pushed to its limits following his control over the Golden Crow's Records of the Burning World... In the air, the expansion of Yellow Spring Ashes continued, but it was gradually being contained at its center.

Same situation, same conditions, if it were anyone else, even if that person held the same Golden Crow bloodline and profound arts as Yun Che, he would definitely not be able to use his remaining profound energy to completely support and withdraw the massive destruction domain. However,

Yun Che, who possessed Evil God's Fire Seed, had unparalleled control over fire. With his control, the activation of the destruction domain was slowly receding, and the world-destroying and frightening pressure was being reduced at a swift pace.

At the same time, the temperature of the surroundings had also been greatly reduced.

The Divine Phoenix profound practitioners, whose heart had originally sunk into despair,

were now letting out a long sigh of relief. Undoubtedly, when the domain had been retracted, there was no way Yun Che could release it for a second time. At the same time, after using this domain, he had already spent all his energy and was no longer a threat... This meant that the dangers that Divine Phoenix Sect experienced today was completely gone.

At the same time... this was also the best opportunity to eliminate Yun Che!!

Because the current Yun Che did not even possess the strength to run!

As the flame domain shrunk more and more, the temperature of the air also fell at a much quicker pace. Unknowingly, the wind that was blowing due to the ripples in the air made them feel a little cold... It was then that everyone realized that their bodies had long since been drenched in sweat, from head to toe, and every part of their clothes were equally drenched.

Feng Tianwei continued looking at the sky without moving as he let out a huge sigh of relief. He had never felt as much relief in his entire life before. Because for the Divine Phoenix Sect, this was really akin to escaping through the skin of the teeth.

Following the flame domain receding to within three hundred meters, Feng Tianwei finally shifted his gaze onto Yun Che as an eerie killing intent flashed in his eyes.

“Grandfather!” Feng Ximing’s suppressed voice rang from behind Feng Tianwei.

“You don’t have to speak!” Feng Tianwei snorted coldly; his arm vehemently waved out, and a flaming profound light shot out from the tips of his fingers. Its extreme sharpness ripped apart the air and shot straight at Yun Che who was still retracting the flame domain.

He firmly believed that the current Yun Che could never avoid his attack, not to mention

that the latter was even using all his powers to completely control that domain... This profound light was sufficient to separate Yun Che's brain from his body.



## Chapter 723 – Reason

---

Facing the “pardon” Feng Xue’er exchanged using her tears, Feng Tianwei’s actions were considered extremely shameless and despicable. Especially since he was the Phoenix Grand Sect Master, the exceptionally strong level six Monarch. He lost all his dignity and pride. However, everyone who witnessed this, except for Feng Xue’er, did not feel shock nor did anyone feel that it was inappropriate.

This of course included Yun

Che.

The blood debt he owed after bringing chaos to the Divine Phoenix Sect, his incomparably terrifying strength, ruthless and venomous personality, and his evident irregular feelings for Feng Xue'er... Every single one of these points was enough to spur Divine Phoenix Sect to kill him, regardless of the costs!

And this, was the best opportunity to kill Yun Che!

Even if they were to be labeled by the entire world as despicable and shameless, they definitely could not allow Yun Che, who had retracted his domain, to leave here alive. Even Feng Tianwei himself was the first person to take action.

This profound light that originated from Feng Tianwei was swift and ferocious. Just the sound of the shattering space transmitted to every corner of Divine Phoenix City. However, even before everyone managed to hear the sound of the shattering space, the fatal profound light had already

reached Yun Che and stabbed straight at his vitals.

As for Yun Che, he was still using his full strength to retract the Golden Crow Domain and did not react even slightly... or perhaps, in his current condition, Yun Che was no longer able to react to this swift and suddenly profound light attack.

“Yun Che... die!!” Feng Ximing stared intensely at the air as his eyes revealed a hideously ecstatic look.

Boom!!

A deafening exploding noise rang in the sky, but it was not the sound of the profound light hitting Yun Che.

Right when Feng Tianwei's flaming profound light was within fifteen meters of Yun Che, another eye catching flaming light suddenly appeared and knocked against the flaming profound light... Instantly, the course the flaming profound light was flying largely changed.

The profound light that was originally aiming straight at Yun Che had hit the space behind him and disappeared into the sky.

Yun Che had not been harmed in the slightest. Only the back of his clothes tore apart due to the violent ripples of air.

Feng Tianwei's face instantly darkened. Feng Ximing's expression that had distorted in ecstasy was also stuck plastered on his face.

Beside Yun Che, Feng Xue'er had moved from Yun Che's side to his front and her back stuck closely onto Yun Che's chest. Her snow hands stretched out and a ball of scarlet flames ignited on her palm... Before this, the flames that Feng Xue'er ignited had always been warm and gentle, but now, the mediocre sized flame was shaking exceptionally vigorously.

The streaks of tears of Feng Xue'er had not dried up. She wore an expression of pain, heart ache, disbelief... and even a tinge of despair.

Vicious, shameless, evil, despicable... in her entire life, these were words that she had only used in the Primordial Profound Ark on Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan. These two people were the first two people that she had ever had the emotion of “hatred” in her entire life.

However, this time... it was brought to her by her loved ones.

“Why...” She muttered, uncertain whether she was



question her own loved ones or whether she was questioning the world, “Grandfather... Why did you do this!!!”

“...” Feng Tianwei remained speechless as his heart was in a deep shock.

Although the fire profound light was a sudden action, it had not been rushed. He had patiently accumulated energy for countless breaths of time. Therefore, that profound energy was Feng Tianwei’s unrestrained full strength. He strongly

believed that even if it were not an exhausted Yun Che but an Yun Che at full strength, there was no way he could avoid it and he would definitely die upon being hit.

With Feng Xue'er innocence, she would not have expected that Yun Che would be suddenly attacked. Therefore, she must have reacted the instant after the attack went out, before it managed to hit Yun Che...

An action made with such haste, if she were able to use

thirty percent of her powers, it would have already been the limit. Yet, she manage to deflect the fire profound light that he had sent at full strength!

“Xue’er, you’re still young, you definitely won’t be able to understand...” Feng Hengkong replied in pain, “However, doing this is really for the sake of our entire clan! When you grow up and understand the laws of the world, you’ll be able to understand.”

“I indeed do not understand...”

and will never be able to understand!” Feng Xue’er snow white face was filled with sadness. The Phoenix flame in her hand did not extinguish as her other hand held onto Yun Che’s arm tightly. She used her entire body and flame to protect him, “I only know you have murdered countless Blue Wind citizens... I only see that Big Brother Yun chose to forgive, yet you all want to kill him and you use such... such despicable means!

“Royal Father... Grandfather... You aren’t suppose to be such people!”

Upon saying her last sentence, the tears that she had fought so hard to resist fell once again. This had also caused Feng Hengkong as well as the other Divine Phoenix Sect members' hearts to wince.

“No need to speak much more,” Feng Hengkong coldly said, “Xue’er won’t be able to grow up in an instant and Yun Che must die today no matter what. Especially since we have already acted this way against him... With his cruel personality, if he does get to leave, he’ll definitely

take revenge in the future...”

Feng Hengkong's words were something that everyone knew clearly. He chose to retract his domain when he had full advantage, allowing Divine Phoenix Sect to escape from the verge of extinction. However, they had acted viciously after he had pardoned them. No matter how magnanimous a person was, he would undoubtedly bear extreme hatred... needless to say Yun Che!!

If he did not die, his revenge in

the future... was something that made everyone shudder simply by thinking about it.

Feng Hengkong gritted his teeth as his crushed heart held a slight hesitation. He chose not to look Feng Xue'er in the eye again and coldly ordered, "All elders listen up, seal off all of Yun Che's escape routes. Kill him at all cost!!"

Feng Xue'er, "..."

Upon receiving Feng

Hengkong's orders, all the elders rose into the air and formed a large circle which trapped Yun Che in the center... However, Feng Xue'er stood firmly in front of Yun Che, their bodies stuck closely together. All the elders looked on but none of them dared to act rashly.

“Xue'er, come to royal father's side.” Feng Hengkong slowly rose into midair and stretched his hand out towards Xue'er, “Even if you were to blame me, hate me, it's fine... We definitely must kill Yun Che today. When you get older, you'll understand royal father's pains.”



Feng Xue'er did not shake her head but also did not move away from Yun Che. Even her tears had stopped falling. Surrounding her, all the familiar faces that usually gave her warmth and kindness now became exceptionally frightening. All the usually gentle and caring faces and gazes were now unusually foreign and disgusting...

She finally started to understand the meaning of the words Yun Che told her three years ago in Phoenix Perching

Valley...

“Big Brother Yun, I want to grow up more quickly. When I’m twenty, I’ll be able to leave Divine Phoenix Nation and travel anywhere I want.”

“...Xue’er, I’d rather you never grow up.”

“Ah? Why?”

“Because as you get older, you

will begin to understand more. However, as you understand more, you will lose even more, and these things that you lose can never be recovered... Although you'll be able to expand your horizon, the things you'll see will not be the good of the world, but instead its darkness and ugliness... Especially since you're the Divine Phoenix Princess, you'll be forced to shoulder the future of Divine Phoenix Sect."

"Hmm...?"

.....

“Royal father, can you give Xue’er a reason?” Feng Xue’er’s voice sounded rather uncertain.

“Xue’er, he killed four of your royal brothers... and so many of our clansmen! Is this not reason enough!” Feng Hengkong shouted agitatedly.

Feng Xue’er slowly shook her head and replied softly, “There are many things that I do not comprehend. But, regarding this

matter, I understand completely... the person that killed them was not Big Brother Yun but you, royal father!

“It was precisely because royal father issued orders to invade Blue Wind Nation, trampled over the peace of the citizens of Blue Wind Nation, dyed their rivers with blood, causing even the death of Big Brother Yun’s royal father... which made Big Brother Yun come to take revenge and stop the fighting! This was the reason why they’d die... royal father, do you really not understand that you’re the reason behind all these?! These

are all retribution for the mistakes that you have committed... They did not die because of Big Brother Yun, they died because of you, royal father.”

“...” Feng Hengkong’s body shuddered as his face turned completely pale. Similar voices had attacked his heart more than once in recent times. It had nearly turned into a nightmare that he could not escape from. For Feng Xue’er to say such words, it was simply more heartbreaking than a nightmare. He hissed, “Xue’er... you don’t understand... you really don’t!

The reason why royal father did all of this was for the future of our Divine Phoenix Sect... it concerns the life and death of our entire clan!”

“For the sake of our own survival, you can willfully trample and destroy other nations and their citizens!” Feng Xue’er shouted.

“Xue’er can’t you be obedient?” Feng Ximing uttered with a pleading look, “The strong feasts on the weak. This is the most basic law of the world. The

progression of Profound Sky Continent, the rise and prosperity of empires were all brought about by battles...”

“But is what we did actual battles?!” Feng Xue’er angrily cut off Feng Ximing’s words, her gaze and voice trembling, “The prerequisite of battles is to ensure the safety of innocent civilians. This is something even an infant would know. The creation and prosperity of an empire’s most basic and fundamental rule is stability and winning the hearts of people. However, what did the Divine Phoenix Sect do in Blue Wind...



slaughter innocent lives, burn down cities, destroy land... This is simply massacre... an act devoid of any human nature!”

Feng Hengkong’s lips trembled as he was rendered speechless.

Feng Xue’er placed her hand on her heart. The pain she felt there was simply heart wrenching, “I, Feng Xue’er, was born in Divine Phoenix City, and received the grace of Lord Phoenix God upon birth. Received the care of grandfather, royal father and the

entire clan. I saw that no one within Divine Phoenix Nation oppressed others who were weaker than them... All these years, I had felt lucky and proud to be royal father's daughter and a citizen of Divine Phoenix Nation. I relied on royal father and respected every single clan member and even believed that royal father was the most noble person in the world and that the Divine Phoenix Sect that I was born in was the most noble sect and family. Everyday, I reminded myself that I must use all my abilities to inherit the Lord Phoenix God's will and carry Divine Phoenix Sect's future on my shoulders..."

“...Xue’er...” Feng Hengkong closed his eyes slowly.

“However, is all this... simply just a facade? For the sake of our own survival and prosperity, we kill innocent citizens like devils.... Millions of lives were lost and we turned a nation into a living hell... Even if the Divine Phoenix was able to become the world’s strongest by dyeing itself with the blood of countless innocent people and carried numerous sins... It would only make me feel fear and disgust. Even Lord Phoenix God would

not be able to accept or pardon this.”

“...” Feng Hengkong’s chest suffocated as he felt as though he had been suppressed by a heavy steel board. His mixed feelings even caused his consciousness to feel fuzzy.

At this moment, an extremely violent torrent of profound energy suddenly exploded forth from within the heavy and suppressed space. Feng Tianwei, who had stayed silent the entire time, suddenly made a move.

His hand, which was burning with scarlet flames, was like a devil's blood-drenched claw as it struck straight towards Yun Che's heart.

Everyone, including Feng Hengkong and Feng Ximing who were closest to him, were caught off guard as well.

When Feng Tianwei made his move, he was merely less than a hundred meters away from Yun Che. Suddenly making a move at such a distance, forget about Yun Che, even if it was an expert at

the same level, without any defenses prepared, it was still extremely possible to be severely injured with a single strike.

To Feng Tianwei, Yun Che had to die today no matter what... With him dead, future troubles could be prevented, and Feng Xue'er's feelings could be severed as well. As for other matters, they could be slowly alleviated in the future. After all, the phoenix bloodline flowed in Feng Xue'er's body. After all, she was the daughter of the Divine Phoenix Imperial Family.

At such a close distance, a level six Monarch unleashed his full strength while everyone was caught unawares. Feng Tianwei had absolute confidence that in the next instant, he could slice Yun Che into ribbons, and then burn his corpse and bones into nothingness.

However, when his hand had just reached a distance thirty meters away from Yun Che, a pressure, heavy to the point where the blood in his entire body had seemingly frozen up instantly, suddenly descended from the sky. His movements abruptly turned sluggish, and

following after, his line of sight was completely shrouded by a scarlet red light that had suddenly appeared...



# Chapter 724 – The Awakened Phoenix Soul Within Feng Xue'er

---

The flames directly struck against Feng Tianwei's chest, causing him to suffocate in an instant. At the same time, all the profound energy that welled-up within his body receded back like a tide.... This brought him great shock as he swiftly congealed all of his energy, but no matter how he tried to circulate his profound energy, he was still unable to release any of it. In the span of a single breath, even the Phoenix flames burning on his body had been

completely extinguished.

This bizarre occurrence, which had never occurred before, caused him to become pale in shock and horrified as his body was swiftly and forcefully shoved away by the crushing scarlet light... Within his ears rang the sounds of Feng Hengkong and the others shouting in alarm. It was not only him who had been shoved aside by this ring of flames, but instead all the Divine Phoenix Sect members in the vicinity as well. When the ring of flames burst out, everyone else were pushed as far as where the

flames went.

Not to mention the surrounding people, even Feng Tianwei himself didn't have the strength to muster a resistance against it.

A bewitchingly beautiful giant flame lotus had bloomed in the air above Phoenix City as layer upon layer of fire petals unfurled themselves. The moment a hundred layers of these flame petals had unfurled themselves, all of the Divine Phoenix Sect members who had previously

been surrounding Yun Che had been pushed several kilometers away. At the center of this gigantic flame lotus stood Feng Xue'er and Yun Che.

Once the overly-rich and effusive fire light finally stopped filling his vision, Feng Tianwei quickly raised his head to look towards Feng Xue'er... And once his gaze came into contact with the all-too-real image of the Phoenix behind Feng Xue'er, his entire body froze in place as his soul began to violently tremble uncontrollably; he almost couldn't prevent himself from collapsing to his knees in order

to pay obeisance to that sacred figure.

“The Phoenix... Phoenix soul... has awakened?”

The bewitchingly beautiful fire lotus did not continue to blossom, and it did not hurt anyone either, it had merely forcefully pushed everyone else aside.

Outside of the fire lotus, the gazes of everyone present seemed to have caught fire as

shock was written all over their faces... but aside from the shock, there was also a deep excitement, elation and incredulity that was contained within....

---

Black Moon Merchant Guild.

Bang!

The cyan jade teacup in Zi Ji's

fingers had broken into tiny fragments.

“Master?” The three young girls behind him quickly moved forward, their faces filled with both doubt and anxiety at the same time.

“The Phoenix God’s aura... has finally appeared?” Zi Ji muttered to himself. Immediately, his eyes flickered as he said, “That’s not right! This is... the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm?”

“Could it be....”

The profound energy surrounding Zi Ji faintly vibrated. His body flickered, and in an instant, his body had suddenly appeared in front of his window in a ghostly manner. He focused his gaze in the direction of the Divine Phoenix Sect before continuing, “Quickly go and verify the source of that aura!”

“Understood!” A deep and low voice that was not more than a hundred meters to his right rang



out in response.

---

The fire lotus, which had pushed everyone aside, had already begun to recede, but at this moment, everyone else's attention was no longer focused on Yun Che, instead it was directed at Feng Xue'er and the image of the Phoenix behind her. All of them could feel that the aura radiating from her body... which was clearly similar to that of their Ancestral Phoenix God!!

“Xue’er, has your Phoenix soul... been awakened!?” Feng Hengkong said excitedly as he stretched out both of his hands. Every single one of the gathered Divine Phoenix elders became so emotional that they couldn’t even utter a single word while some had even begun to weep.

The significance of the Phoenix Soul awakening was something that outsiders would never understand. But for the Divine Phoenix Sect, it was akin to a heavenly order!

Both Feng Hengkong and Feng Tianwei clearly remembered the words the Phoenix God had personally left them before it passed away. Given the innate talent of Feng Xue'er, the Phoenix Soul which it had passed onto Feng Xue'er would awaken after a century had gone by. The moment the Phoenix Soul within Feng Xue'er awakened and completely fused with her body of the Divine Phoenix, it would cause her Phoenix profound energy to grow by leaps and bounds. Furthermore, in the ten years that followed, her strength would swiftly grow at a rate that

could not be comprehended by any normal means... In the end, it was possible that she could even reach the height where the Phoenix God once stood!

From then on, she would become the Divine Phoenix Sect's second Phoenix God!

And if she continued her cultivation, it was even possible for her to surpass the previous Phoenix God!

Because of that, after the

passing of the Phoenix Divine Spirit, Feng Xue'er became the future of the Divine Phoenix Sect.

And they could definitely never allow the news of the Phoenix God's death to be exposed to the world before Feng Xue'er had finished growing. As such, no matter what method Feng Hengkong had to use, he had to protect the Divine Phoenix Sect. Once a century had passed, when Feng Xue'er's Phoenix Soul and Phoenix Body both underwent their respective awakenings, she would become the second Phoenix God, and the

Divine Phoenix Sect would not have to fear any other power anymore... not even the Four Sacred Grounds.

But Feng Hengkong and Feng Tianwei had never thought nor had dared to even dream that... Feng Xue'er's Phoenix Soul had actually already awakened!!

That oppressive might that should only belong to their Ancestral Phoenix God and the image of the Phoenix that seemed to be completely real were the best pieces of evidence

to prove this!!

And it was also clear that her Phoenix profound strength had undergone an incredible growth! Feng Tianwei was a level six Monarch, but even he could barely muster any resistance in the face of the flames that she had released!! And it was definitely not purely because of the suppressive effect of the Phoenix God's might, instead it was a suppression born of absolute strength!!

To the Divine Phoenix Sect,

this was a wonderful surprise that bordered on pure fantasy.

In this case, they did not need to hold on for a century anymore... within the short span of a decade, Feng Xue'er's Phoenix profound strength would rapidly increase due to the fusion between her soul and her bloodline. Once this process was completed, she would possess power that would rival the Ancestral Phoenix God's divine strength, and their Divine Phoenix Sect would no longer have to worry about any future threats!



A century versus a decade, for the Divine Phoenix Sect, this was definitely not as simple as just having to wait ten times the amount of time; more than that, it made a huge difference in the fate of the entire clan!!

“Xue’er... the three years that you had been in comatose... was it because your Phoenix Soul was undergoing its awakening?” Feng Tianwei asked in a trembling voice, and even though he was normally an unwavering and ferocious person, he had already forgotten

about his murderous intent towards Yun Che. Feng Xue'er had lain unconscious for three years, and all this while, her body had been shrouded in a peculiar Phoenix flame that even he could not approach. During this period, they had discussed innumerable conjectures and suspicions, but they had never once come to the conclusion that the Phoenix Soul was awakening.

“Yes....” Feng Xue'er, who bathed in the light of the Phoenix image while standing in the heart of the Burning Star Fire Lotus, seemed to be a fairy

of divine flames who stepped right out of heavenly sacred text; her exquisite beauty was unmatched in the world, and her hair, which was releasing the power of the Phoenix Soul, had become as crimson as flames; her eyes, manner and aura had all undergone massive changes. She paused before continuing, “Do all of you know... why my Phoenix Soul would awaken in such a short period of time?”

Why did it awaken so quickly? It was undoubtedly an answer which everyone within the Divine Phoenix Sect wanted to

know. And even if this was a miracle granted to them by heaven... then there should still be a reason for the miracle to happen in the first place.

“It was because of Big Brother Yun.” Feng Xue’er’s gaze fell on Yun Che as she spoke softly, “Three years ago, not only did Big Brother Yun save my life, but he also bestowed the fifth and the sixth levels of the World Ode of the Phoenix to me. This not only pushed the Phoenix profound strength within my body to a whole new level, it also allowed me to completely master it while completing the laws of

Phoenix flames which supported the Phoenix Soul. All of this allowed the Phoenix Soul that the great Phoenix God bestowed upon me to awaken before a century had passed....”

“Xue’er’s life was saved by Big Brother Yun, Xue’er’s awakened Phoenix Soul was also due to the efforts of Big Brother Yun. And the grand favor that Big Brother Yun has done for Xue’er, no, for our entire clan is so huge that we will never be able to repay him... but all of you keep on trying to harm and even kill Big Brother Yun!”

Feng Xue'er was furious, and this was the first time in their lives that everyone present had seen Feng Xue'er filled with so much anger. She slowly extended a hand and the Phoenix image behind her also spread its beautiful wings. The oppressive might of the Phoenix, which was enough to flip the world on its head, descended from the sky, enveloping the entire Phoenix City as well as all of the people within it. Facing the awakened soul of the Phoenix, even if one's profound strength was far greater than Feng Xue'er, they would also tremble and bow before the

might of the Phoenix God. So there was no need to think about whether one even had the strength to resist, because no one could even form the notion of resistance in the first place. Once she had completed her transformation into the Phoenix God, then at that time, if she wanted to completely seal someone's Phoenix profound energy, or if she wanted to purge anyone's bloodline or life, she only needed to think about it, and it would happen.

“I swear in the name of the Phoenix God....” This girl, whose heart was as pure as driven

snow, spoke in a grave and solemn tone that could have never possibly come from her mouth, “Within the sect, if anyone dares to try to harm Big Brother Yun again... no matter who it is, I will never forgive that person. And if Big Brother Yun dies... then I will immediately purge my own Phoenix Soul and Phoenix blood!”

“Xue’er!!” Feng Xue’er’s words caused Feng Hengkong to become pale in shock and fear. He was clear, very clear indeed, that if Feng Xue’er died, then the Divine Phoenix Sect was done



for as well. Furthermore, they would not even have a future to hope towards. At the same time, she was his only and most adored daughter, the greatest pride and joy of his life, and he would rather die a hundred thousand times than to see her get hurt in the slightest.

Feng Xue'er's voice was extremely crisp and clear. And with these words that she had said, Feng Tianwei would definitely, under no circumstances whatsoever, dare to move against Yun Che any longer. Especially now that her Phoenix Soul had already

awakened, to everyone within the Divine Phoenix Sect, her every word was like a sacred law that could not be violated.

“Okay... Grandfather will promise Xue’er, as long as Yun Che no longer bothers us from today onwards, not a single person within our clan will act against him... or against the people dear to him!” Feng Tianwei calmed his heart and spoke in an extremely sincere manner, “He destroyed the Phoenix God Statue, killed Xichen and Xiluo... and everything else he did can be written off and we will not

pursue it any further. And over at Blue Wind Nation, we will immediately order our troops to withdraw... and we are even willing to compensate and appease the Blue Wind Nation up to a certain point. Is this... fine with you?"

The Golden Crow Domain had already been completely withdrawn by Yun Che. He stood in the middle of the fire lotus with Feng Xue'er as he silently attempted to perceive the aura that was being released by Feng Xue'er. Even though both of them had inherited the purest Phoenix blood and Phoenix Soul,

he could still feel that the purity of the Feng Xue'er's Phoenix bloodline was at least several hundred times more than his own. Moreover, even if everyone within the Divine Phoenix Sect were to combine their bloodline together, it would never be comparable to Feng Xue'er's. As for the difference between Yun Che's and Feng Xue'er's Phoenix Soul, it was not as exaggerated; it was only two times more than the one he inherited. However, in the face of the oppressive might of the Phoenix which was produced by a Phoenix bloodline that was hundreds of times purer than his, he could feel that it was on a completely different level compared to his own.

If he did not have the Dragon God's Soul within him, even he would not be able to control the urge to kneel in the face of the Phoenix's oppressive might.

So it was exceedingly clear how much regard and love the Divine Phoenix Sect's Ancestral Phoenix God had for Feng Xue'er. It had, without any reservation, completely poured its entire being into her.

After Yun Che, who had been fixated on Feng Xue'er, heard the

words spoken by Feng Tianwei, his gaze turned cold. After that, a deep and cold laugh erupted from his chest as his eyes which were as sharp and cold as icy knives fixed themselves on Feng Tianwei, “Feng Tianwei! I think you’re getting something awfully wrong here! The fact that you want to kill me is indeed something that the heavens should smite all of you for! But the fact that I want to kill you is completely righteous and just! You ransacked my Blue Wind Nation, so you should face destruction as well! Even if the entire Divine Phoenix Empire was hollowed out to compensate the Blue Wind Nation, it would still be justified! To think that

you actually have the face to make it sound like not attacking me and withdrawing your troops are gracious acts!”

“Yun Che, don’t you spit in the face of our courtesy!” Feng Tianwei’s face had instantly darkened as well.

“Just who is the one that is spitting in the face courtesy?” Yun Che aggressively said, his voice filled with icy contempt, “Do you truly believe that you could kill me if Xue’er didn’t get in the way just now? Do you

truly believe that I would be so naive and foolish as to back myself into a corner by forgiving you without an ace up my sleeve?”

“Feng Tianwei, If I truly wanted to leave, even if there were ten of you, you still wouldn’t even be able to touch a hair on my head!” Yun Che fixed his eyes on both Feng Tianwei and Feng Hengkong as his gaze grew dark and ferocious, “If I truly wanted to destroy your entire clan, I actually didn’t even need to lift a single finger... all I needed to do was to leak a particular secret that all of you



were so desperate to keep hidden to a few particular people. Perhaps, I might have also been able to reap a lot of benefits from it.”

“.... You!” Yun Che’s words caused Feng Hengkong and Feng Tianwei’s expression to dramatically change—his previous confidence had stemmed from the fact that he knew about the secret! Both he and Feng Xue’er had the Phoenix Soul... so perhaps this was the reason he knew about that secret.

“So now, all of you should know... just how great a courtesy I have already shown to all of you!” Yun Che extended a finger and pointed it at Feng Hengkong’s face,”The past two times you tried to kill me with an ambush, for the sake of Xue’er, I can leave that aside for now. But all the conditions that I have mentioned before, not one of them must be left unfulfilled, and they must be fulfilled to a tee! So you must definitely remember not to... spit in the face of my courtesy again!”

The same words that Feng Tianwei had just uttered were

fiercely thrown back to his face.

# Chapter 725 – Atoning For The Sins Of The Father

---

Yun Che's words suddenly caused the atmosphere to become stifling once more as the sense of elation felt by the Divine Phoenix Sect from the awakening of Feng Xue'er's Phoenix Soul mercilessly had a bucket of cold water splashed over it.

Today, no matter how unable Feng Hengkong was to understand and accept it, he had

no choice but to realize that the fate of the Divine Phoenix Sect lay solely in the hands of Yun Che right now—at least it was for the decade before Feng Xue'er fully blossomed into her own. Moreover, because of Feng Xue'er's decisiveness, they were now incapable of moving against Yun Che any further... in the end, the fate of this sect that had lorded over the continent for five millennia was completely in Yun Che's hands.

However, Feng Hengkong no longer displayed the anger and discontent that he had expressed previously. After a short period

of stiffness, his grim face finally relaxed because now that it had come to this, he had no choice but to resign himself to fate. He gave a great sigh before slowly speaking, “Xue’er is indeed correct... absolutely correct. All of this has happened because of us. The deaths of Xiluo, Elder Tianqing and the others, are all because of us as well... Even though we only had the good of the Divine Phoenix Empire in mind, the methods we used and the consequences that we wrought were indeed evil and terrible enough for us to have to endure this sort of retribution...”

“If not for the decision that we made three years ago, our sect would not have met with such calamity, and Xiluo and the others would not have died such miserable deaths... all of these things are the consequences we have reaped from our terrible mistake.”

“And naturally this is something that we must take responsibility for!” Feng Hengkong placed his palm against his chest, “The Phoenix Soul within Xue’er has already awakened, so the greatest wish in our life has already been fulfilled, there is nothing more

that we could ask for! Today, as long as we can ensure the immediate safety and stability of our sect, you do not even need to talk about asking us to destroy our own profound art and kneel for a hundred years, because even if you asked us to end our own life right now, we would not even twitch an eyelid! Withdrawing the troops, stopping the war, paying compensation, ceding away territory... and even offering a sacrifice, we will not be remiss in making sure that all of it comes to pass!”

“I only hope that you will do as



you have said!!”

Feng Hengkong gave a low yell as his palm ignited with Phoenix flames and he sent it exploding towards his own profound veins.

“Sect Master!!” The entire Divine Phoenix Sect gave a huge cry of alarm as they frantically rushed towards Feng Hengkong, but how could they possibly arrive in time to stop him.

“Royal father, don’t!!” Feng Xue’er gave a shrill cry of alarm

as a scarlet flame flashed in her phoenix eyes.

Instantly, Feng Hengkong's Phoenix profound energy was completely sealed away, and even the concentrated profound energy that had been gathered in his palm had completely dissipated, and by the time his palm smacked against his chest, even the all the flames had died out... forget about him being able destroy his own profound veins, he was not even able to inflict a superficial injury on himself.

“Sect Master!” All the gathered Divine Phoenix elders surged forth anxiously as they grabbed and restricted Feng Hengkong’s arms, “Sect Master, do not... you definitely must not do this!!”

“Xue’er....” Feng Hengkong stared dazedly at Feng Xue’er, his nose faintly crinkled and his eyes grew slightly hazy. He knew that even though Feng Xue’er was furious at him, she was ultimately still truly concerned about his wellbeing.

Feng Xue’er did not release the

seal on Feng Hengkong's strength. She turned towards Yun Che and pleaded with him with tears streaming from her eyes, "Big Brother Yun, even though my royal father has committed many grave and irreversible mistakes, Xue'er knows better than everyone that he is definitely not an evil person. If not, the Lord Phoenix God would not allow Grandfather to pass on the position of Sect Master to my royal father. As both the sect master of Divine Phoenix Sect and the emperor of Divine Phoenix Nation, my royal father had to bear a burden and a duty that normal people would be unable to even imagine, so at

times, he would have no choice but to make some decisions, even if they were extreme or even cruel and merciless. But he is really not someone who is filled with evil, and Xue'er is even more willing to believe that when my royal father made that decision three years ago, he was more tormented and helpless than anyone else.... Because all of the sin, debts of blood, vilification and the souls of the departed would weigh down on him."

"Xue... Xue'er..." Feng  
Hengkong's entire body  
trembled and the moment those

words had escaped his lips, tears began to stream down his face... Before this, Xue'er had used her own body to shield Yun Che and for the sake of Yun Che, she had raised her voice and become angry at him. At that time, the pain he felt was akin to ten thousand arrows piercing his heart. But now, after hearing Xue'er's words, even if he were die ten thousand times over, he would no longer have any regrets.

“Big Brother Yun, Xue'er isn't trying to explain away the sins of my royal father. It is only that no matter whether it is the

Divine Phoenix Sect, Divine Phoenix Nation or Xue'er herself, all of us need my royal father. So I beg of you, Big Brother Yun, please let my royal father off and give him a chance to make amends for his actions towards Blue Wind Nation. Xue'er will replace her royal father and follow Big Brother Yun to Blue Wind Nation, and apologize and make amends towards Empress Cang Yue... and the entire Blue Wind Nation."

"Xue'er, you... what are you saying!" Feng Hengkong's face was filled with shock and

horror, “All of this is your royal father’s fault, it has nothing to do with you at all...”

“No...” Feng Xue’er slowly shook her head. She raised her phoenix eyes as she softly continued, “I am royal father’s daughter, and as your daughter, I must definitely join royal father in apologizing and making amendments for his mistakes. Xue’er hopes that after we have expiated our sins that royal father remains safe and unharmed and I hope even more that royal father forever remembers what has happened today, so that he will from now



onwards treat Blue Wind Nation kindly and treat all those who are innocent and good kindly as well. I also hope that no matter what what happens in the future, that royal father will never commit such a grave mistake again.”

“Big Brother Yun, Xue’er is willing to accompany you to Blue Wind right this day, so that I can meet Empress Cang Yue. And no matter what she says to me, Xue’er will not have any regrets or resentment... is that okay?” Feng Xue’er looked at Yun Che earnestly, her phoenix eyes misty and filled with

pleading.

“Xue’er, don’t say such foolish things!” Feng Hengkong was thrown into panic, he was completely panicked and even when he had been forced to the very brink of desperation by Yun Che, he had not reacted with such anxiousness, “Yun Che! Three years ago, it was us who ordered the invasion of Blue Wind, it was also us who gave the instructions for the Blue Wind Nation to be subjugated within the shortest amount of time, no matter what methods we used. And it was also us who ordered the assassination of

Cang Wanhe! All of these things were orders that we had personally given! All of these were only the sins of us and us alone! Let us not even talk about your request that we cripple our profound art and atone for one hundred years, even if you wanted our life, we would give it to you right now! But all of this has nothing to do with Xue'er, nothing at all!"

Feng Hengkong struggled to shrug off the arms of all the elders who had grabbed ahold of him as he roared with widened eyes, "We are willing to go with you to Blue Wind Nation right

now, and once we are there, you can do whatever you want to us! Our sins can only be expiated by us and us alone! Yun Che, you should be more clear than anyone else that this matter has absolutely nothing to do with Xue'er... nothing at all!!”

It could be said that the present Feng Hengkong was filled with shame and remorse. Before this, Feng Xue'er had been desperately protecting Yun Che... but at the same time, she was also rescuing the Divine Phoenix Sect as well. He could not imagine just how much today's situation would have

worsened if not for the timely appearance of Feng Xue'er.

It was Feng Xue'er who had pulled the entire sect back from the brink of the abyss. And right now, it was again Feng Xue'er, for the sake of his safety, who was willing to replace him and travel to Blue Wind Nation, in order to atone for all of his sins....

Even if there was really a medicine for regret in this world, it would still be unable to get rid of the regret that filled every nook and cranny of his soul.

Yun Che shot Feng Hengkong a casual and disinterested glance; after that he took Feng Xue'er's small hand and said with a faint smile, "Fine, then we will do as Xue'er wishes and you can replace your royal father to accompany me back to Blue Wind."

"Yun Che!!" Feng Hengkong let out a lion's roar as his entire body fiercely trembled, "You... you dare! If you dare to take Xue'er away today, if you dare to harm a single hair on Xue'er's head, we...."

“Tch!” Yun Che coldly snorted, “Xue’er saved my life, and there is nothing more that I would want to do than to cherish her. If not for Xue’er, do you actually think that you would still be able to stand there and kick up a big fuss!? And do you think that your Divine Phoenix Sect would be let off with just these few deaths!?”

“Also, in regards to harming Xue’er, Feng Hengkong, compared to you, I am truly inferior!” Yun Che said mockingly.

“You...” Those words had caused Feng Hengkong’s face to become as white as a ghost.

“As the emperor of a country, my Cang Yue is one million times more compassionate than you; she will not harm Xue’er, and I will not allow anyone else to harm her either. Besides, when it comes to representing the Divine Phoenix Empire, in many ways, Xue’er is even more suitable than you are!”

“So you better treasure the



status, freedom and life that Xue'er has guaranteed for you!! When Xue'er comes back, she will naturally tell you just what kind of amends my Cang Yue desires of you!"

"Big Brother Yun, thank you. I know that I am being very selfish... but he is, after all, still my father, I..." Feng Xue'er lightly tugged the small hand that was being held within Yun Che's own as her voice and eyes grew hazy. She was very clear just how much Yun Che had stepped back for her sake.

Yun Che shook his head and said with a faint smile, "For me, you were even able to make that evil oath that you would 'purge your own Phoenix blood and Phoenix soul'. So in comparison, what I have done can't even begin to measure up up that."

"...Mn!" Feng Xue'er nodded her head vigorously as a celestial smile appeared on her face.

"No! We definitely must not let Xue'er accompany Yun Che to Blue Wind.... Royal father, you need to hurry up and stop it!"

Feng Ximing said anxiously, "This is Xue'er we are talking about!!"

Feng Hengkong did not respond to Feng Ximing. His eyes were in a daze for a while before he suddenly shouted, "Yun Che, you can bring Xue'er with you to Blue Wind... however, we must follow you! Otherwise, even if we were to die here today, we will never allow you to bring Xue'er away!"

"Royal father..." Feng Xue'er panicked, just as she was about

to speak, she heard Yun Che's exceptionally calm reply, "Sure! Or should I say even better! After all, what my Cang Yue wanted to see the most is you personally come to atone for your sins!"

"Big Brother Yun..." Feng Xue'er hands tightened.

"You don't have to worry." Yun Che gently replied.

"Just a few simple words settled the nerves and anxiety that Feng

Xue'er was feeling previously as she replied with a simple "mn".

Yun Che did not refuse because he knew clearly what Feng Hengkong was afraid of. He was not worried about Feng Xue'er's safety... After all, Feng Xue'er's current strength had already obviously surpassed that of Feng Tianwei. Within Blue Wind Nation, there was no existence that could possibly post a threat to her. However, Feng Xue'er had never left the boundaries of Divine Phoenix City before and Yun Che was also a highly "dangerous" person. Even if it wasn't Feng Hengkong, any

ordinary father would not possibly feel safe to allow his daughter who had never left home before to follow a man to a foreign place alone.

Therefore, no matter what, Feng Hengkong had to tag along to “protect” her. Even if it meant that he himself had to remain within Blue Wind Nation’s territories.

# Chapter 726 – The True Reason

---

Black Moon Merchant Guild,  
Seventh Floor.

“Master, it was indeed the Divine Phoenix Ark that had just left Phoenix City. After much investigation, we have confirmed that there are only three people onboard the Divine Phoenix Ark... Yun Che, Feng Hengkong and Princess Snow, Feng Xue’er. They are traveling in the direction of the Blue Wind Nation. If they are truly headed towards Blue Wind Nation, then

they will arrive at Blue Wind Imperial City before tomorrow evening.”

“...Can we find out what exactly happened just now?” Zi Ji asked with sunken brows.

“Feng Tianwei is still here, so we do not dare to go closer, but we should be able to acquire all the information before tomorrow.”

Zi Ji let out a long and deep sigh before he continued, “The



events that took place this day truly had many twists and turns.”

It could be said that every development that took place over the course of this entire affair was completely out of his expectations. For Zi Ji, who had an extremely good insight and could normally grasp any situation, this was a rather heavy blow.

“Master, this subordinate also has one more thing to report. A century ago, we sent eleven

people to infiltrate the Illusory Demon Realm. We had already lost eight of them, but the last three soul imprints just vanished... not more than fifteen minutes ago. It is very likely that their identities have been exposed, and after that, their souls were searched before they were executed.”

“...” Zi Ji lapsed into a heavy silence.

“Master, you actually don’t need to be too concerned over this matter. One hundred years

ago, the people we sent to infiltrate the Illusory Demon Realm only brought along seven sound transmission stones with them. One year ago, the news that they transmitted back to us just so happened to be the seventh time they have done so as well. This also means that all seven of the sound transmission stones have been used. So even if they managed to survive, they would be unable to send any more messages back to us. Although they have already lost their lives, at least they have already fulfilled their mission.”

The “sound transmission

stone” he was talking about was naturally not the normal sound transmission stones that were commonly used. Instead, it was a special kind of sound transmission stones which could transmit messages over five hundred thousand kilometers; it could be used to send messages from the Illusory Demon Realm back to the Profound Sky Continent. In the entire Profound Sky Continent, only the Four Sacred Grounds who had enormous and incomparable resources possessed these sound transmission stones, and even then, there were still an extremely small amount of them in existence.

“...Before this, they had been safe and sound for all this while, but it was only recently that they were rooted out one after the other. It looks like something huge must have happened in the Illusory Demon Realm.” Zi Ji said gently, “However, rather than their exposure and survival, what I am even more concerned about is the last piece of news that they had sent back one year ago.”

“One year ago?”

“That report detailed the current status of the Twelve Guardian Families which resided within Demon Imperial City, and when it came to the Yun Family, it was mentioned that the crippled Yun Qinghong had adopted a foster son called ‘Yun Che’...”

Zi Ji’s words stopped here. The blue-clothed man beside Zi Ji immediately furrowed his brows as he responded with a voice filled with doubt and suspicion, “Could it be that Master believes that this foster child has something to do with Yun Che? It should only be a coincidence

that their names sound similar.  
After all...”

“At that time, I hadn’t even  
paid any notice to this fact, but  
now....”

Zi Ji did not continue speaking.  
In his mind appeared an image  
that he had seen within the  
Profound Imagery Stone; one of  
two wings spread wide open at  
daybreak... and also the  
turbulent green-colored storm  
that had gathered beneath those  
wings.

And also... the Yun Che who had managed to return alive.

“Master, could it be that....”

Zi Ji faintly shook his head and refused to make any further comment. But after that, his tone changed as he spoke in a rather gloomy manner, “A century ago, when we were attacking Demon Imperial City, we were not the only ones who took advantage of the chaos to send in an infiltration squad... Mighty Heavenly Sword Region did so as well. I wonder if they



have also finished using all of their sound transmission stones...”

Divine Phoenix Ark; it was the highest-grade profound ark possessed by the Divine Phoenix Sect, and it was a national symbol of the Divine Phoenix Empire. Its appearance definitely meant that the emperor himself had come.

As the curtain of night began to fall across the sky, the Divine Phoenix Ark had already neared the borders of Divine Phoenix.

As it flew past, there was not a single citizen of Divine Phoenix Nation who did not kneel from afar.

The huge Divine Phoenix Ark currently housed only three people. Yun Che, Feng Xue'er and Feng Hengkong whose expression had undergone several changes.

“Royal father said that given the speed of the Divine Phoenix Ark, by this time tomorrow, we should have already reached Blue Wind Imperial City.” Feng

Xue'er sat by Yun Che's side and her body was in very close proximity to his. When she spoke, her face had a rosy color, and it was clear that she was very excited. After all, this was the very first time she had left the Divine Phoenix Nation ever since she was born; she had been dreaming of this day ever since she was a child.

Feng Hengkong's face uncontrollably twitched as he observed how Feng Xue'er not only lacked the slightest inhibitions towards Yun Che, but she even seemed to naturally draw close to him as she looked

at him with a gaze filled with intimacy. However, the only thing Feng Hengkong could do was to silently let out a melancholic sigh... In the few hours they had inside the Divine Phoenix Ark, he had already given the exact same sigh countless of times.

He had naturally protected Feng Xue'er as much as he possibly could; even her own blood brothers were not able to come within three steps of her, much less outsiders. If a disciple within the sect managed to see Feng Xue'er even once, it could be counted as great fortune.

But just like this...

Feng Hengkong extended a hand to grab the top of his head, and his fingers tightened up in such a way that it seemed as if he simply wanted to seize all the hair on his head... He would rather have Yun Che bring about a disaster that would smash the Divine Phoenix Sect to the ground than to see him bring disaster to Feng Xue'er.

“Were you the one who killed Feng Chihuo as well?” Feng

Hengkong, who had been grabbing his head, abruptly asked Yun Che a question.

“Yes.” Yun Che did not even hesitate in delivering his succinct reply.

“Haah!” Feng Hengkong did not continue after that; now that things had come to this point, nothing more was left to be said. Right now, he could only hope that Feng Xue’er’s feelings towards Yun Che had not grown to the point where he wouldn’t dare think to.

“I also have a question to ask you.” Yun Che’s eyes locked onto Feng Hengkong’s, “The real reason behind the invasion of Blue Wind Nation... what exactly is it!?”

Feng Hengkong’s entire body stiffened, but he did not reply.

“Royal father, Xue’er wishes to know as well.” Feng Xue’er softly said, “Because the royal father I know is definitely not a cruel and merciless person, so the decision that royal father made three years ago, there must...

there must be an extremely special reason for it. Can you... tell Big Brother Yun and I about it? And perhaps after knowing the reason, Big Brother Yun might soften his stance towards my royal father... even if it's just by a little bit."

Feng Hengkong's hand slowly lowered. He had no ability to reject Feng Xue'er's soft and gentle request, and he had also remembered that Yun Che clearly knew the truth of the Phoenix God's passing.... He release a feeble sigh before he began to speak, "Four years ago, as our sect's Spirit Earth Hall



began to make preparations for the appearance of the Primordial Profound Ark, we had coincidentally discovered a very faint and weak reaction of a Purple Crystal mine to the extreme east of Blue Wind Nation. Never in our history had we ever recorded such a reaction to a Purple Crystal mine that was located so far away from us. So we secretly dispatched some of Spirit Earth Hall's protectorates to go investigate this occurrence, and they discovered that a extremely huge and powerful Purple Crystal mine lies deep beneath the lands to the east of a small city that was known as Floating Cloud City... If we were able to extract

and refine all the crystals in this mine, we would be able to obtain a whole fifty kilograms of Purple Veined....”

“Divine Crystal!”

“Ah!” Feng Xue’er let out a cry of surprise. Just the notion of having fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Heaven Crystal was enough shake the heavens... much less having fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal!

Even the Four Great Sacred

Grounds would regard fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal as incomparably huge resources.

One must know that it required at least five hundred years for a Sacred Ground to accumulate fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal! So if the Divine Phoenix Sect were able to completely obtain all of these Purple Veined Divine Crystals, it would be equivalent to gaining five centuries worth of accumulation of a Sacred Ground!

This kind of temptation was enough to entice the Divine Phoenix Sect... It was enough to even entice any power that existed within the Profound Sky Continent to go after it at all costs, even if they had to behave unscrupulously!

“So that... was the case!!” Yun Che raised his head because Feng Hengkong’s words had cleared up nearly all the suspicions and doubt in his mind.

“Big Brother Yun, did you

figure out everything already?” Yun Che’s words caused Feng Xue’er to look at him with a puzzled expression.

“I have more or less understood the gist of it.” Yun Che stood up; his brow furrowed as he stared at Feng Hengkong, “But I’ll let your royal father finish his story.”

Feng Hengkong faintly squeezed his eyes shut before continuing his tale once more, “In the years after our Ancestral Phoenix God had passed away,

the ones who were aware of this fact were seized with an intense sense of crisis. Because the moment this matter got out, Divine Phoenix Sect would definitely be suppressed by the Four Great Sacred Grounds... and there was even a possibility that we would be wiped out altogether. So while we fiercely protected the secret that the Phoenix God had already passed away, we were also desperately looking for a method to protect the sect in the event that the secret got exposed... or at the very least, a method to ensure Xue'er's safety."

“And the discovery of this gigantic Purple Crystal mine caused great joy to spring up in the hearts of us and our royal father. If we could really obtain fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, we would be able to birth several supreme powerhouses within a short period of time, and from then on, we would have yet another layer of security.”

“It was... just for this? All of it just for the sake of obtaining the Purple Crystal mine within Blue Wind Nation?” Feng Xue’er was mystified as she shook her head in confusion, “But what does

this have to do with royal father's order to invade Blue Wind Nation... and the terrible and cruel way in which it was conducted!?"

“Of course it was for the sake of keeping everything absolutely confidential, so that the Four Sacred Grounds would not notice what they were really doing.” Yun Che said, but his eyes held a faint glimmer of mockery as well, “At all times, the Four Great Sacred Grounds always have people secretly observing the movements of Divine Phoenix Sect. The existence of this Purple Crystal



mine was known only to the few core members of the sect, and it was natural that these very members would be at the heart of any spying on the Divine Phoenix Sect, so no matter how covert their actions were, there was still a huge risk that they would be discovered. The moment the existence of this Purple Crystal mine was exposed, it would no longer belong to Divine Phoenix Sect.”

“So the real motive behind your war with the Blue Wind Nation was to cover your true intentions and divert the attention of the Four Great

Sacred Grounds! In order to make this diversion as convincing and realistic as possible, you did not hesitate to slaughter innocents and raze cities. All to make it seem as if you were anxious to conquer Blue Wind Nation in the shortest amount of time possible, so that you could give the impression that you were venting your anger on Blue Wind Nation because of the loss of prestige that Divine Phoenix Sect had suffered at my hands during the Seven Nations Ranking Tournament!”

“Yes.” Feng Hengkong said as

he nodded with a dull expression on his face.

“All for the sake of fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal? Heh...” Looking at Feng Hengkong’s expression, Yun Che gave a cold laugh, “Looking at you right now, it seems like you believe that you have done nothing wrong?”

“To Blue Wind Nation, we should indeed suffer the wrath of the heaven! But we are the emperor of Divine Phoenix and also the sect master of Divine

Phoenix Sect!” Feng Hengkong raised his head to stare directly at Yun Che, “These fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal may just be a huge resource to other people, but to our Divine Phoenix Nation who had lost its ancestral Phoenix God, it was our last sliver of hope! The results of what happened has indeed caused us great regret... but our decision was definitely not wrong!”

“How naive! Did you really think that a meager fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal would be enough

to protect your Divine Phoenix Sect once the Phoenix God's passing was exposed to the world!?" Yun Che coldly asked.

"...At the very least, It would have given us a bit more power to protect Xue'er! As long as we can protect Xue'er for one hundred years, even if our sect was completely obliterated, we would still have boundless hope for what would happen after!" Feng Hengkong yelled back in a low voice.

"Royal father, please stop

speaking already!” The moment Feng Xue’er saw Yun Che and Feng Hengkong begin to clash once more, she hurriedly threw herself in the middle of the two of them, “Royal father, no matter what the reason was, causing the death and suffering of so many innocent people is still a grave sin. Xue’er’s Phoenix Soul was awoken with help from Big Brother Yun, and I am already able to protect our Divine Phoenix Sect. Royal father does not need to continue to worry about Xue’er anymore. The only thing Xue’er wants is for royal father and I to make amends for the sins that we have committed, so that we can obtain the forgiveness of Blue

Wind Nation and also the forgiveness of the spirit of Lord Phoenix God who rests in heaven.”

“Xue’er...” Feng Hengkong looked at his daughter as his eyes gradually began to mist over.

“Now that I think about it, you instructed Feng Xichen to personally come to Blue Wind Imperial City to deliver the invitation for the Seven Nations Ranking Tournament all those years ago. However, that was all

a pretense. The real motive was to use his status as a Divine Phoenix Prince to pick a fight with me over the matter of my bloodline, and from there, to create a reason to start a conflict, correct?" Yun Che said with narrowed eyes.

"Yes." Feng Hengkong did not even try to deny it.

Yun Che continued to speak, "And once the war had lasted for more than two years and the Four Great Sacred Grounds slackened their watch over you,



you began preparations to excavate the Purple Crystal mine. When you were extracting the Purple Crystals, even if it was deep below the ground, there would definitely be a large amount of noise. So the purpose of making that area a training ground and instructing the two hundred thousand troops stationed at Floating Cloud City to pound the earth everyday was to completely conceal what was really going on.”

“...You are completely correct.” Feng Hengkong gave Yun Che a deep and profound look. He had only just revealed the existence

of the Purple Crystal mine, yet Yun Che was able to piece together each and every piece of the puzzle flawlessly... that was just how terrifying his mind was.

“So right now, how much have you accomplished in achieving your goal?” Yun Che asked coldly. Never in his life did he imagine that such a huge Purple Crystal mine would be hidden near Floating Cloud City where he had spent more than a decade living in. A Purple Crystal mine that caused the Divine Phoenix Sect to go after it despite the enormous cost; a Purple Crystal

mine that even he himself wanted.

The region around Floating Cloud City was vast and barren, and only a few of the lowest-grade profound beasts lived there. If someone had told him that a huge mineral deposit that could produce fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal was hidden in the area before, even he would never believe it.

“One hundred percent.”

“ONE HUNDRED PERCENT!?”  
Feng Hengkong’s words caused  
Yun Che’s brows to sink deeply.

# Chapter 727 – Kneel Of The Divine Maiden

---

“Just about a month ago, we have finished mining all of the Purple Crystal mines, used hundreds of spatial rings to transport it secretly back to Phoenix City, and it is hidden within the forbidden grounds. Once everything is settled, we can start the refining process. The two hundred thousand army would still remain there and continue to behave the same way as before. This is to continue to confuse the Four Great Sacred Grounds, and to attract their attention,” Feng

Hengkong said without evading anything. He had a feeling a long time ago that Yun Che's eyes seem to be able to see through any lies.

“Is that so? Then congratulations that this laboring ‘great plan’ of yours was successfully carried out!” Yun Che scoffed and said.

“Hmph, since I dared to say it out loud, I am naturally prepared. Once our sect finish refining the Purple Veined Divine Crystals, we will gift five

kilograms to the Blue Wind Imperial Family!” Feng Hengkong said coldly. To a small nation like Blue Wind, forget about five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, the past generations of emperors probably had not even seen a real Purple Veined Divine Crystal. Just Purple Veined Heaven Crystals would be considered as supreme sacred item.

“Five kilograms? Hahahaha!” Yun Che laughed loudly, “These are suppose to belong to our Blue Wind Nation, and the Phoenix Sect Master actually

returned as much as five kilograms, such generosity.”

“You...” Feng Hengkong’s whole face showed anger, but just as he was about to return the favor, he saw Feng Xue’er’s eyes, and he swallowed the words that he was about to say. He held his breath, and said in a low voice, “Seven and a half kilograms... This is already my limit.”

“No need, I don’t care for it. You can save it and enjoy it yourselves!”



Yun Che clearly showed disdain on his face. He showed no sign of interest towards the “Purple Veined Divine Crystal” that Feng Hengkong was speaking of, and didn’t even seem to be joking at all. This instantly startled Feng Hengkong... Purple Veined Divine Crystals were the highest, most divine existence in Profound Sky Continent, and it was a sacred item that every profound practitioner desire in their dreams. When he told the truth, he was already prepared to be “extorted” by Yun Che, but he absolutely did not expect that there was actually someone who could resist the temptation of

Purple Veined Divine Crystals  
with contempt.

“But I want to advise Phoenix Sect Master something... You should be careful of another ‘Feng Feiyan’ appearing among the people who know about the Purple Crystal mine!” Yun Che said mockingly.

“I wouldn’t be stupid enough to allow something like this to happen a second time, you don’t have to worry about it.” Feng Hengkong responded coldly. Obviously, he was extremely

confident about this matter, because the people within the sect who knew about the Purple Crystal mine were all truly his “trusted subordinates”. Besides himself, Feng Ximing, and Feng Tianwei of the sect master bloodline, the memories of other people who knew of the existence of the Purple Crystal mine were all caged just like Feng Huwei. They could not use any method to tell, write, or transmit it, and if they were soul searched, those memories would disperse immediately.

It was also precisely because of the lesson learned from Feng

Feiyan that the Divine Phoenix Sect choose to use such extreme measure.

“I also have something to remind you of,” Feng Hengkong continued speaking, “The reason that things went so smoothly at Floating Cloud City was all thanks to a weirdo called Fen Juechen. He attracted more than ninety percent of focus away from us! And it was said that the reason that he appeared in Floating Cloud City was to kill you! He must already know the news that you’re still alive by now. When the time comes, you’d better not die!”

Yun Che, “...”

“Ah? He wants to kill Big Brother Yun?” Feng Xue’er jumped, but she immediately smiled and comforted, “No problem, Big Brother Yun is so strong, he wouldn’t be in danger for sure. Xue’er will also work hard to protect Big Brother Yun.”

“Xue’er, you... sigh,” Feng Hengkong’s eyebrows twitched, and felt gloomy.

Earlier when Feng Xue'er just appeared, Jasmine had told Yun Che right away that Feng Xue'er's profound strength now had already reached the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, even surpassing Feng Tianwei. If Feng Xue'er really protected him by his side, it would basically be impossible for Fen Juechen to kill him.

The commotion that Yun Che had caused in Divine Phoenix Nation these days had been all over Blue Wind Imperial City already. Yesterday, when Yun

Che sent a sound transmission saying that he would return in the evening today with Feng Hengkong and Princess Snow, Cang Yue was so excited that she didn't sleep all night. She had been waiting in the Monarch Great Hall since after noon today.

Even though she trust Yun Che indefinitely, she was still worried the whole time during the days of which Yun Che was in Divine Phoenix Nation.

Her greatest desire was for Yun

Che to return safely. Compared to that, the results didn't seem to be that important.

The sky darkened, and dusk had fallen. A large profound ark appeared above Blue Wind Imperial City like a scarlet-red flame, and it caused an uproar in the city. The Divine Phoenix Ark stopped right above the Imperial Palace and landed slowly. Because it was too large, it didn't land on the ground and instead it floated in midair as the profound aura surrounding it raised fierce currents of hot wind.



“That is the... Divine Phoenix Ark?” Qin Wushang, who had rushed here with Cang Yue, said with his face full of surprise when he saw the enormous object releasing a pressuring heat aura. Blue Wind Nation already had extremely few profound arks, and this was the first time in his life that he saw a profound ark with such momentum.

“That’s right.” Dongfang Xiu nodded slowly, “Back then when I accompanied the previous emperor to the Seven Nation

Ranking Tournament, I was lucky to have seen it once.”

“Your majesty said Yun Che, Feng Hengkong, and the legendary Princess Snow are arriving on the Divine Phoenix Ark, and there is not a fourth person... Is that true?” Qin Wushang said in a low voice and his expression showed doubt. The news that came from Divine Phoenix these days said that Yun Che made a huge ruckus in Phoenix City, destroyed the Phoenix God Sculpture, and killed several princes. It was no question that he had antagonized the Divine Phoenix

Sect to the point of being absolutely irreconcilable, and only death could put an end to this... Yet yesterday, he suddenly sent a sound transmission like this to Cang Yue.

Even though the message was sent by Yun Che himself and was told by Cang Yue herself, almost no one believed that Feng Hengkong would bring only Princess Snow to follow Yun Che here. He was the emperor of Divine Phoenix, the Phoenix Sect Master, an existence that was the noblest and unparalleled of the Profound Sky's Seven Nations. Even if he was to head

to the weakest Blue Wind that was shrouded by disaster, he shouldn't be this alone.

“Master told me what the Divine Phoenix Ark looked like, it can't be wrong! Brother-in-law!” Xia Yuanba's face was full of excitement. He was about to rush over watching the Divine Phoenix Ark that was stopping.

Number One Under Heaven grabbed him, “Don't go near yet, lest something unexpected happens.”

“That’s right... Yuanba, it is said that Feng Hengkong’s profound strength is at the peak of Tyrant Profound Realm. If something unexpected happened, only you can protect her majesty,” Qin Wushang reminded in a low voice.

“I understand,” Xia Yuanba nodded. He kept a ten step distance from Cang Yue and stopped acting rashly.

When the door of the Divine Phoenix Ark opened, Yun Che was the first one to walk out

before slowly landing. Seeing that Yun Che was safe and sound, Cang Yue's bright eyes flickered with infinite joy. She couldn't care for the occasion or even her own identity as she moved towards him with her Phoenix robe fluttering, "Husband, you're back."

"Mn." Yun Che held onto Cang Yue's hand, and then turned over and said, "The 'esteemed guest' that I mentioned in the sound transmission is also here already."

Under the ark's door which had yet to be closed, a silhouette of a man in scarlet clothes appeared. Feng Hengkong came out of the ark's door, but he didn't land immediately, instead he looked around and smelled the smoke in the air.

His dignity as an emperor and his boundless aura was null to Yun Che, but that did not mean it did not affect the others. The moment his silhouette appeared, everyone's sight uncontrollably fell on him, but they absolutely didn't dare to look at his eyes; even their breathing and heart beat were stopped at that

instant. Their chests and souls seemed to be pressed down by an iron plate as they trembled in fear under the pressure.

“The emperor... of Divine Phoenix!” Without needing Yun Che’s explanation, the heavy and extremely prestigious aura made everyone instantly sure of his identity. An aloof profound strength, aloof position, aloof identity... Under this scarlet clothed man’s gaze and pressure, even people like Dongfang Xiu who was at the peak plane of Blue Wind Nation felt a strong inferiority.



“Yuanba, stay alert at all times,” Dongfang Xiu said in a low voice. Even though he was the Palace Chief of the Blue Wind Profound Palace, he clearly felt like a tiny ant in front of Divine Phoenix’s emperor and Phoenix Sect Master.

None of them knew what exactly happened at Divine Phoenix, and they didn’t know at all why Feng Hengkong was here, so every single one of them were tensed and their backs were soaked with cold sweat.

“He is the emperor of Divine Phoenix, Feng Hengkong.” Yun Che said to Cang Yue, “Don’t worry, he is here as a sinner and won’t do anything to harm us.”

Feng Hengkong’s body sank from midair and landed in front of Yun Che and Cang Yue. From the moment he showed up, the smile on Cang Yue’s has completely frozen, and the hand that was held in Yun Che’s palms also tightened suddenly. She was trying her best to restrain... and restrain... but her body was still shaking uncontrollably.

Contained within her beautiful eyes was a hatred so deep, it had engraved itself into her bones and even the depths of her soul.

He was the one who killed her father! Trampled her homeland and citizens... made Blue Wind fall into a hell-like three years! Who also made her suffer through three years of nightmare!

Even though her hatred could fill the sky and earth, her opponent was the overly powered Divine Phoenix, so she

never had the extravagant hope that she'll have the chance to revenge, never thought she'll see Feng Hengkong, or even one day be able to face the culprit of everything directly...

Cang Yue's tiny hands turned cold really fast, and Yun Che could clearly feel the shivering of fear from her body and the tremble in her breaths. Yun Che held her hand even tighter and told her that he was right there by her side.

Facing Cang Yue who had lost

control of her emotions voice, Feng Hengkong still did not open his mouth, and his aura didn't decrease at all. Yun Che said lightly, "Feng Hengkong, this is the Imperial Palace of Blue Wind Nation! The one in front of you is the current sovereign of Blue Wind Nation! You haven't forgotten what you're here to do, right?"

"Hmph!" Feng Hengkong scoffed softly, "I am here now, and there is not a single guard or elder with me, so how could you possible give us a way out? Empress Cang Yue, I know that I have caused your Blue Wind

Nation to suffer from calamity these three years, the entire nation was in chaos, and out of everyone in Blue Wind Nation, you are definitely the one who hates me to the bones. Your royal father was assassinated under a direct order from me! Say however you would like for me to atone for my sins, we will absolutely not twitch at all!!”

Even though Feng Hengkong had already clearly stated that he was here to atone for his sins, his tone and attitude were incredibly aggressive. After all, he was the emperor of the Divine Phoenix. In his eyes, or

even to the most ordinary commoner in the Divine Phoenix Nation, Blue Wind Nation was an inferior land, and it has been like this since thousand of years ago when Blue Wind Nation was founded. He could acknowledge the fault and atone for his sin, but he would not show weakness! Because the reason why things developed this way was only because of Yun Che, and not the Blue Wind Imperial Family!

“Divine Phoenix’s emperor... Phoenix Sect Master... Feng Hengkong...” Cang Yue’s face was slightly pale. She kept

enough calm and an monarch's dignity in her expression and voice, but the hatred that was flicking in her beautiful eyes couldn't be suppressed no matter what, "In these thousand years, my Blue Wind Imperial Family has always been respectful towards your Divine Phoenix, but you actually harmed my Blue Wind in this way... I want you to give me, give my Blue Wind a reason first!!"

Feng Hengkong looked away, assuming an unresponsive posture.



“He is... Divine Phoenix’s... dog emperor!” Behind the crowd, the commander-in-chief of the Blue Wind Army Feng Yunlie grabbed the handle of his sword. His face was completely red with malice and the rushing rage and hatred made more than a dozen wounds on his face seem to burst open... Because of this person, the blood of so many brothers were spilled on the battlefield!!

“Don’t be rash, not only is he the emperor of the Divine Phoenix, he is also the sect

master of the Divine Phoenix Sect. Even if there's ten thousand of you, you won't be able to hurt a single hair of his," said Qin Wushang as he looked away.

With a soft "clang," Feng Yunlie pulled out three inches of his steel blade. He stared at Feng Hengkong, gritted his teeth and said harshly, "The dream that I've had the most was when I see this dog emperor, and personally cut him into one thousand eight hundred pieces myself! Now that this dog emperor is right before my eyes, even if he is ten thousand times

stronger, I... I... I... wha...  
whoa...”

It was as if a large hammer suddenly slammed onto Feng Yunlie's head. His expression that was filled with hatred and his eyes that was gazing forward suddenly became sluggish; even the voice from his mouth slowly became drifty as if he was sleep talking.

Not only Feng Yunlie, but everyone's expressions and eyes all suddenly become sluggish and hazy at this moment.

Because within their sights, a beautiful, fantasy-like scenery appeared.

A young girl in scarlet clothing landed slowly from the Divine Phoenix Ark. The scarlet color on her Phoenix robes were even richer than Feng Hengkong's, and the gold color was even more noble, more eye-catching Feng Hengkong's. When everyone looked towards her, their heart and soul turned like violent waves. Because that was a face and charm that was so beautiful, it was indescribable.

The second their gaze fell, their whole person seemed to have instantly fallen into a fantastical dream as they witnessed a young girl walk out from that fantasy...

Feng Xue'er landed softly and walked over slowly. In the past, she would appear occasionally in the sect, but she would be wearing her phoenix jade-glazed coronet and wouldn't reveal her face. But today, she was here with a pure, guilty, and sincere heart to atone for her sins, and she also got rid of the mask that she used to always wear.

Cang Yue, who was facing Feng Xue'er directly, was also completely stunned. The girl in front of her was so beautiful that it was as if she was a divine maiden who had walked out from heaven, causing people to not dare believe that she would actually appear in the mortal world. As a fellow woman, when she saw Feng Xue'er, her entire soul, willpower, beliefs were all uncontrollably lost; even the burst of hatred towards Feng Hengkong was completely forgotten.

“In this world, there is actually someone whose beauty... can

beat Xia Qingyue...” Cang Yue mumbled absentmindedly, and almost forgot Feng Hengkong’s existence.

When Cang Yue was looking at Feng Xue’er, Feng Xue’er was sizing her up as well, and even saw her attachment towards Yun Che from her movements. She walked to Feng Hengkong’s side, stopped, and said softly, “Divine Phoenix’s royal princess Feng Xue’er, greets Empress Cang Yue...”

Her celestial voice was as soft as

the wind as it breezed across everyone's hearts, making all those present feel like their souls were being purified. Feng Xue'er's head was slightly lowered, and her knees slowly bended...

“Xue'er... What are you doing!!” Feng Xue'er's actions shocked Feng Hengkong. He yelled loudly, and he even reached out his palm in lightning speed and grabbed onto Feng Xue'er's shoulders.

However, after her Phoenix



soul awakened, Feng Xue'er had the profound strength that could even defeat Feng Tianwei easily; how could Feng Hengkong's strength be enough to stop her? In Feng Hengkong's pupils that were enlarged to their largest, Feng Xue'er faced Cang Yue. Her knees touched the ground as she kneeled down properly.

“Xue'er! What are you doing! Get up now... get up! There is no one qualified in this world for you to kneel down to!! Xue'er!!” Feng Hengkong dragged Feng Xue'er's arms, wanting to pull her up, but despite using all of

the strength in his body and the voice in his throat already becoming hoarse, he couldn't move Feng Xue'er's body even a little bit.

“There is no one qualified for you to kneel to in this world,” What Feng Hengkong had said was not exaggerated at all. Because not only was she the only princess of Divine Phoenix Empire and Divine Phoenix Sect, she was the future “god” of the Divine Phoenix Sect! Not only that, she was the only one in the entire Profound Sky Continent to have accepted the complete legacy of a divine spirit. She was

the person who possessed the most noble of bloodlines, and was the person closest to being a “god”!

When she fully matured, her power would surpass the Saint Emperor, Sovereign of the Seas, Heavenly Monarch and the Sword Master, the four unparalleled Sacred Ground’s masters. The divine bloodline that she possessed was something that others would not be able to get no matter how long they worked or how bountiful their resources were.

So, after the Phoenix God disappeared, there really wasn't a more noble existence on the Profound Sky Continent than her.

As the emperor of the Divine Phoenix, all fourteen of Feng Hengkong's sons needed to greet him everyday with bended knees. But all these years, he had never let Feng Xue'er kneel before him. Even if Feng Xue'er wanted to, he wouldn't allow it, or it could be said that he didn't dare to accept it.

But now, she kneeled down... in front of the emperor of a lowly nation like Blue Wind.

The emperor of Blue Wind... for the longest time was someone that even the lowest level of the Divine Phoenix disciples would slant their eyes to despise, or even not care for at all.

Her kneeling down had already become a fact; Feng Hengkong couldn't stop it, and couldn't even make her stand up. After a long moment of panicking, he

sighed in sorrow... How could Feng Xue'er not know that she herself was the second Phoenix God of the Divine Phoenix Sect, and how could she not know the nobleness of her bloodline and identity? However, she still kneeled down in front of the emperor of the small, tiny Blue Wind Nation... all to get him, the father to atone for his sins!

His pressuring aura from before was gone completely, Feng Hengkong's face was twitching... In the end, the blood debt and sin that he caused was being bore and redempt by Feng Xue'er and him

together. This deep regret made this high and mighty emperor of a hundred years can't help but want to weep loudly.

Bang!!

Feng Hengkong's knees fell onto the ground heavily... In his whole life, he had only kneeled down to the Phoenix God, to his birth parents, and at this moment, he kneeled down heavily in front of Cang Yue. Seeing Feng Xue'er kneeled down to atone for his sins, how could he deserve to support his

dignity as an emperor?

“Divine Phoenix’s emperor Feng Hengkong, for one’s own selfish desire, acted disregarding all dissent and stopped at nothing, trampling down the people of Blue Wind as blood flowed in rivers. The sins are most heinous and aroused great fury from both men and gods and cannot be forgiven... Today I’ve only come to ask for Blue Wind’s emperor to denounce my sins; even if Blue Wind wishes to take my life, I shall have no complaints nor regrets!”



Feng Hengkong kept his head low, and said these words that he never thought he would say in his life word by word.

The entire Blue Wind Imperial Palace was so silent that if a needle could be heard if it fell. Xia Yuanba, Dongfang Xiu, Qin Wushang, Feng Yunlie and the others were all stunned on the spot; their brains had completely shut down and they couldn't believe what they were seeing and hearing.

Cang Yue was also stunned in

place and didn't know what to do for a moment. Yun Che reached out his hand to Feng Xue'er, but once he took a step forward, he slowly stepped back... He knew that this was too hard on Feng Xue'er. Like Feng Hengkong had yelled, there was no one qualified in this world to make her kneel, not even Feng Xue'er's father, Feng Hengkong.

But perhaps this could make Feng Xue'er feel a bit better in her heart.

Her soul was too pure and good. When she found out the truth about everything, the sin and blood debt that Feng Hengkong carried heavily pressured onto her soul. During the two day one night journey on the Divine Phoenix Ark, he continuously felt a faint aura of pressure caused by guilt on Feng Xue'er.

## Chapter 728 – Cang Yue’s Decision

---

Cang Yue had never expected that this kind of situation would actually arise. She hated Feng Hengkong to the bones, but upon facing such an unexpected situation that no one would dare believe even if they saw it with their own eyes, she felt completely lost. She could only stare at Yun Che who was beside her with pleading eyes, “Husband... what exactly is this...?”

“Let them get up first,” said Yun

Che, “I will explain everything to you once we’re inside.”

Cang Yue slightly nodded her head and gradually regained her frame of mind as she took a few steps forward. Facing Feng Xue’er, she held out her hand and said, “Little Sister Xue’er please get up. Little Sister Xue’er has a very noble, unparalleled status. Such a huge courtesy is quite terrifying to even me.”

Feng Xue’er drooped her head down and said softly, “The Blue Wind Empress’ words are too

kind... As the one who bears sins, Xue'er is supposed to be begging for forgiveness on the knees. I can only hope that this will quell Empress Cang Yue's anger."

Cang Yue shook her head as she reached out and helped Feng Xue'er up. Upon personally seeing Feng Xue'er, she couldn't help but marvel that there was actually such a dreamlike, perfect existence in the world. If there was a single woman who could be considered favored by the heavens, then it could only be the young girl before her eyes.

“Although I have never stepped out of Blue Wind Nation, I have still heard the name of Divine Phoenix Empire’s Princess Snow many times. Now that I’ve seen you with my own eyes, I have realized that you are many times better than the rumors.” Cang Yue exclaimed.

Extreme anger and hatred towards a person could easily be spread to their love ones; however, when she faced Feng Xue’er, Cang Yue, who hated Feng Hengkong to the bones, could not feel even the slightest

resentment. Or perhaps it was because there was no one in the world who could possibly hate her.

“Feng Hengkong, you get up too.” Cang Yue once again turned around as her voice became calm and cold, “This is not the place for us to talk. Follow me to the Blue Wind Hall!”

Looking at the signal that Yun Che was giving with his eyes, Cang Yue said to Dongfang Xiu, “Palace Chief Dongfang, stand



guard outside and prevent anyone from coming in. Also, do not mention to anyone what you have seen just now.”

“Yes.” Dongfang Xiu bowed slightly, then glanced at Feng Hengkong. Just as he wanted to remind Cang Yue to be cautious... he suddenly thought back to when Feng Xue'er and Feng Hengkong knelt down to show penance. He immediately swallowed back his words.

After watching Cang Yue, Yun Che, Feng Hengkong and Feng

Xue'er head into the Blue Wind Hall, Dongfang Xiu and the others looked at each other; some of them were still dumbstruck, unable to regain their composure.

“What exactly is happening? Is that really the... Divine Phoenix Emperor?” Feng Yunlie stared with wide opened eyes. Even after thinking so much till his head had almost exploded, he still couldn't understand what had just transpired before him... That was the Divine Phoenix Emperor who looked down upon the world, the Phoenix Ruler!!

Although they were both rulers of a nation, Feng Yunlie, as the general of the Blue Wind Nation, couldn't help but admit that the words "Phoenix Ruler" could completely outweigh the words "Blue Wind Ruler" a thousand times! Feng Hengkong personally coming here had already shocked everyone. However, what people could have never dreamt of was that he was kneeling down in front of the Blue Wind Empress... he was even shouting with a voice that was full of regret and remorse.

“That guy really is Divine Phoenix Nation’s Emperor Feng Hengkong. I’ve seen him three years ago.” Xia Yuanba was very sure as he spoke.

“...That young woman, could she be the legendary Princess Snow of Divine Phoenix?”

“Mn, she is Princess Snow. But I didn’t expect that she would also come... Well three years ago, her and Brother-in-law’s relationship was very good.” Xia Yuanba rubbed his head in uncertainty.

“After all, Yun Che has met an accident in the Primordial Profound Ark after saving her three years ago... Princess Snow, the heaven-sent treasure of the Divine Phoenix Empire, the most beautiful woman in the Profound Sky Continent. Her reputation is indeed well-deserved!” Dongfang Xiu heavily praised.

“As expected of Brother Yun. Within just a few short days, he had actually reversed such an extreme situation to such a degree.” Number One Under

Heaven spoke in an extremely hushed tone that only he himself could hear, “But what’s even more unexpected is that, in this world, there exists a woman whose appearance is comparable to the Little Demon Empress...”

Blue Wind Hall was a field of silence. Feng Hengkong stood at the center of the hall and took a glance at everything around there. He had once imagined that he would personally step inside the Blue Wind Imperial Palace; however, he had never thought that it would happen under such circumstances. Similarly, even Cang Yue had

never thought that she would be in such a situation with the person she hated the most.

Yun Che had already explained the situation with Divine Phoenix to Cang Yue just now. Even though the one that contributed the most was him, the ruler of Blue Wind Nation was still Cang Yue; Yun Che's each and every action was also because of her. Because of that, the decision as to how Feng Hengkong would atone for his sins would ultimately fall in her hands.

“Little Sister Xue’er, please be seated.” Cang Yue’s treatment towards Feng Xue’er and Feng Hengkong was vastly different. She spoke gently and softly towards Feng Xue’er, because she had already understood why this heaven-favored girl would come here and even kneel in front of her... Even if she had removed all those reasons, there was no one who could harbor resentment nor any ill feelings towards her.

“Thank you, Empress Sis.” Feng Xue’er did not take a step back, instead she just sat down beside Yun Che.



“Feng Hengkong, have you willingly come to atone for your sins?!” Cang Yue turned around. Facing Feng Hengkong, her expression instantly turned cold.

After getting down from the Divine Phoenix Ark and setting foot on Blue Wind territory, if Feng Hengkong was still unwilling to let go of his pride, then Feng Xue'er's kneel, which had washed away all the anguish and pain in Cang Yue's heart, would all go down the drain. Although Feng Hengkong could sacrifice himself for all the

numerous blood debts that he had committed, he could only plead that Feng Xue'er should not bear them. For that, he would make every effort to atone for his sins... even if he lost his dignity as the Divine Phoenix Emperor, or even his life.

“We have come here today in order to atone for our sins! We know that we have brought a huge disaster upon Blue Wind, with crimes so many that even us dying a thousand times would not suffice... As long as we can pacify Blue Wind and Empress Cang Yue's resentment, then we

are willing to accept anything with no regrets.”

“Yue’er, during my time in Phoenix City, I have already given them some conditions, and they have also agreed to it.” Yun Che said. After which, he began narrating what had transpired above Phoenix City, him facing against Feng Hengkong and Feng Tianwei, and also the five conditions he had given them in detail.

Whenever Yun Che had spoken out his conditions, especially the

last five conditions he had yesterday, Feng Hengkong's expression would always turn livid, and he would always roar in anger, almost blowing his lungs out in the process. But now, while listening to Yun Che stating all of the conditions, regardless the compensations, annexations, crippling his profound arts, making him kneel for a hundred years, or even towards the fifth condition which stated that he had to pay tribute for several hundred years... his face remained calm and did not show any changes.

Instead it was Cang Yue, while

listening to Yun Che listing down the conditions, who gradually revealed a shocked expression... She did hate Feng Hengkong and Divine Phoenix Empire very much, however, when Yun Che was done listing out all the five conditions, she realized that they were all overbearing and extremely brutal. If all of those conditions were implemented on Divine Phoenix Nation then the five thousand years of prestige it had would be ruthlessly trampled by Blue Wind, the smallest, weakest nation that had only existed for no more than a thousand years. They would always have to hide in an abyss of shame...

Not to mention in Blue Wind's thousand years of history, even in the history of Profound Sky, these harsh conditions that were placed just to atone for their sins had never once happened before.

“All these conditions, your Divine Phoenix... especially you, Feng Hengkong, you are willing to agree to them?” Cang Yue wrinkled her brows and looked into the eyes of the Divine Phoenix Emperor without fear; she wanted to hear his affirmation from his own

mouth.

“Yes.” Feng Hengkong shut his eyes and answered without any hesitation.

“Good...” As Cang Yue’s lofty chest heaved up and down, her gaze had also become sharper and deeper.

“Empress Sis!” Feng Xue’er quickly stood up and faced Cang Yue as she requested, “Xue’er knows that Royal Father has committed a grave mistake and

all the compensation that Big Brother Yun Che had mention should be done. But... about crippling Royal Father's profound arts and the matter of him staying in Blue Wind for a hundred years, I beg Sister Cang Yue to please have mercy. Royal Father has a special identity; not only is he the emperor of Divine Phoenix Nation, he is also the sect master of Divine Phoenix Sect. If he stayed in Blue Wind for a hundred years, then Divine Phoenix will be in turmoil, and the Divine Phoenix Sect will also face difficulties in maintaining its stability.



“Although everything that Royal Father had done was brought onto himself, as his daughter, Xue’er should also carry some of the burden. Therefore, I ask Empress Sis to show some sympathy to Xue’er’s selfishness and Divine Phoenix’s situation. Please let Xue’er stay in Blue Wind as Royal Father’s replacement. For the other compensation, when Royal Father goes back, he will implement it in the shortest amount of time. Empress Sis, please...”

“Xue’er, this matter does not concern you!!” Feng Hengkong

said, “Empress Cang Yue, you should know that other parties should not be responsible in taking in another’s debt! Your royal father’s death and the situation in Blue Wind were all caused by us! Everything that happened has nothing to do with our daughter! During these three years, she had always been in a coma. She isn’t involved in the slightest!

“Right now, we just want to atone for our sins! No matter what you want us to do today, we will absolutely not twitch at all! But Xue’er is the reverse scale that we will never let any

of you touch!!”

Feng Hengkong's expression became serious and filled with determination. At this time, Feng Xue'er's heart became anxious, "Royal Father, you have already agreed to let Xue'er come! Do you not care about the Divine Phoenix and the sect?"

Feng Hengkong shook his head slowly, "Xue'er, to Royal Father, your safety is even more precious than Royal Father's life, the sect, and even everything in the whole world. If we had to

choose, then we would rather destroy Divine Phoenix and the sect than let you suffer the slightest bit of injury.”

Cang Yue, “...”

Yun Che, “...”

“No, it won’t happen. I will stay here. With Big Brother Yun here to protect me, I definitely won’t be harmed in any way. I will pay respects to Empress Sis’ royal father and pray for the Blue Wind, Divine Phoenix and Royal

Father everyday. After a hundred years of atonement, I will go back to Phoenix City... If Royal Father misses me, then he can come here and visit me anytime.” Feng Xue’er smiled as though she had no worries about the future, “Divine Phoenix can do without Xue’er, but it is not able to do without Royal Father. This matter concerns the entire nation and sect, Royal Father cannot afford to be impulsive.”

“Xue’er, we...”

“Royal Father,” Feng Xue’er

softly interrupted Feng Hengkong's next words, "Xue'er has always been spoiled and protected by Royal Father while growing up, and has even received Lord Phoenix God's favor. However, I have never done anything for Royal Father nor for the Divine Phoenix Sect. Now that I can finally share some of my Royal Father's burden, Xue'er can only feel happiness and satisfaction in her heart. I do not feel wronged or afraid... Besides, there is still Xue'er's most favorite Big Brother Yun here. If I can see Big Brother Yun a lot, Xue'er would be happier here than in Phoenix City. Don't forget, three years ago, Big Brother Yun risked his

life in order to protect Xue'er. With Big Brother Yun by my side, Xue'er will be completely safe, and Royal Father would not have to worry about anything... right?"

"Xue'er, you..." Feng Hengkong stretched out his hand, wanting to touch Feng Xue'er's shoulder; at this moment, he couldn't prevent his eyes from turning hazy.

"Empress Sis, in my heart, Big Brother Yun will always be the nicest person in the world. Since

you are Big Brother Yun's wife, you must also be the gentlest and most kind-hearted empress in the world, so please pardon my Royal Father's life and freedom and let Xue'er replace her Royal Father by staying here. In the future, Xue'er and her Royal Father will give our all to repent and redeem all the crimes that we have done during these three years... I beg Empress Sis to fulfill my wish. Xue'er will always remember Empress Sis' kindness."

Each and every word Feng Xue'er spoke dealt a heavy blow to Feng Hengkong's mind and



also shook Cang Yue's mind at the same time. Gazing at her snow-like face and her eyes that were a million times more beautiful than the stars, Cang Yue's heart strongly throbbed... She was very clear of Feng Xue'er's status. Feng Xue'er had the most precious bloodline in the entire Profound Sky Continent, and in the future, she would eventually become the Divine Phoenix Sect's god; both her identity and status would excel Feng Hengkong in the future.

It would even surpass every living being in the Profound Sky

# Continent!!

Beneath Feng Xue'er's gaze, Cang Yue did not speak for a long time. After a while, she turned her head and looked towards Yun Che, seeking his help.

“Yue'er this matter can only be decided by you. No matter what decision you make, I will always support you” Yun Che said with a smile. He believed that, in the end, Cang Yue would make the best decision.

“...” Cang Yue slowly turned around, and step-by-step, she walked towards the emperor’s throne with small strides. At the same time, the hall quieted down, and only the sound of her phoenix gown dragging across hall could be heard.

At the end of the great hall, Cang Yue stopped, raised her head and looked forward... there, the portrait of her late father, Cang Wanhe, who died three years ago was posted.

At this moment, time seemed to

have stopped. As Cang Yue silently stared at Cang Wanhe's unmoving portrait, her pupils trembled and turned hazy... no one could ever know the complicated feelings in her heart nor the difficulty of the choices she was about to make.

After a long fifteen minutes had passed, Cang Yue's voice finally sounded at the great hall.

“Feng Hengkong...” She gently said, “If I was an ordinary woman, the hatred I have towards you for killing my

father will definitely disable us from living under the same sky. I will not even hesitate to personally chop your body into a million pieces...”

“But even if I can borrow my husband’s power and kill you right now, I can’t do it.” Cang Yue turned around and took a slow and heavy step, “Because I am the monarch of Blue Wind Nation... If you lose your life in Blue Wind, then Divine Phoenix will be in chaos. The disaster my Blue Wind is facing will continue, and it might even intensify. Not even your commands before your death

could prevent anything.”

“Crippling your profound arts and letting you stay in Blue Wind for a hundred years is of the same principle; once the seed of vengeance is planted, it will definitely erupt in a few decades, few centuries, or perhaps even several centuries. My Blue Wind still a weak nation after all, so once it erupts, I am sure that the only one who will suffer is my Blue Wind.”

“Therefore... I will never forgive you, but I will not kill

you.”

Feng Hengkong: “...”

“I will not kill you, and I will not force you to cripple your profound arts. I will also not force you to kneel in front of my Royal Father’s tomb for a hundred years... because even if you kneel for a million years, Royal Father will never come back from the dead. Ceding Red Jade City, two hundred years of tribute in profound crystals, profound iron, Phoenix armor... I don’t want any of that!”

“...” Feng Hengkong’s brows abruptly shot up as an expression of disbelief emerged on his face.

“Ah?” Feng Xue’er covered her lips with her hand, “Empress Sis, are...are you serious?”

“...” Yun Che also had a shocked expression.

“Although I am a woman, since I am the empress of Blue Wind,



whatever I say will naturally be as good as gold!” Cang Yue calmly replied, “Among the five conditions that were mentioned, I will only keep one. As for the rest, I will not insist on them.”

“The compensation of fifty billion!” Cang Yue spoke with determination, “I will only keep this one! Because right now, Blue Wind Nation is in a disastrous state and many of the citizens are left with no homes, we need all this wealth to rebuild their homes.”

“R-really?” The mere fact that Feng Hengkong did not need to self-expunge his profound arts and remain in this place had already fulfilled Feng Xue’er’s greatest wish. Her heart was filled with boundless joy, surprise, and gratitude.

Feng Hengkong mouth was wide open and he could not believe his own ears. No need to annex his land, no need to offer tributes and even the apology edicts were not needed... their Divine Phoenix could just preserve their dignity just like that...

However, I have two additional conditions!” Cang Yue’s pupils contracted as she stared at Feng Hengkong.

“Empress Sis please state it, if it can be done, Royal Father and Xue’er will definitely try our hardest to accomplish it.” Feng Xue’er joyfully said.

“First,” Cang Yue’s voice became calm and solemn as she continued, “Countless homes in my Blue Wind’s cities have been destroyed, and currently, the

entire nation is in chaos. By solely relying on the power of my Blue Wind, it is very difficult to stabilize it in a short time. Therefore, in the next five years, you will send more than sixty percent of your army to aid in rebuilding my Blue Wind!”

Of the five conditions, only the monetary condition remained. This was a blessing that he didn't even dare believe even in a dream. Initially, Feng Hengkong thought that each of the two additional conditions would be difficult to accomplish, however, he never expected that the first condition that Cang Yue

had mentioned would actually be so simple. He slightly nodded his head, "Alright, we promise... We will bring seventy percent of the Divine Phoenix Army to stay in Blue Wind and allow Empress Cang Yue and various regional lords to command them. Furthermore, we will also establish strict orders stating that they are not to offend the citizens of Blue Wind."

"Good." Cang Yue nodded her head as a sign that she trusted his words. Afterwards, her gaze shifted away from Feng Hengkong towards Feng Xue'er, "The second condition is even

simpler, Princess Snow, Feng  
Xue'er, I want you to..."

"Marry my husband and  
become his concubine!!"

# Chapter 729 – Heavy Transformation

---

“What did you say?!!”

Cang Yue’s words instantly caused Feng Hengkong’s expression to change. Along with a loud roar, the stone bricks beneath his feet instantly cracked and exploded. The entire great hall violently shook as sand and dust rustled and fell. Even though Yun Che was sitting still, the tea set beside his hand was thrown up high, and when it landed back, it had shattered to pieces.

Everyone waiting outside of the hall were all stunned by the shock. Without saying a word, Xia Yuanba was about to rush in, but just as he stepped out, he was stopped by Number One Under Heaven who shook his head and said, “Don’t be rash, Brother Yun is inside.”

“For the Phoenix Sect Master to react so severely, does that mean you are unwilling?” Facing Feng Hengkong’s sudden outburst, Cang Yue didn’t panic at all; not even a ripple surfaced in her eyes... Just this alone was



something that an ordinary person absolutely wouldn't be able to do. Not only was Feng Hengkong the emperor of Divine Phoenix, he was also a level ten Overlord! The sudden burst of aura that came from him was enough to scare a Throne into limping.

“This is outrageous!” Feng Hengkong had just mentioned that Feng Xue'er was his reverse scale that absolutely could not be touched, yet the condition Cang Yue posed had directly touched his reverse scale. If it wasn't for the situation, he would have already attacked out of fury and

killed whoever said these words... no matter who that person was.

“We were originally impressed by Empress Cang Yue’s grace and compassion, but we didn’t think that behind your grace and compassion, you are actually targeting our Divine Phoenix’s most precious treasure!!” Feng Hengkong tightly clenched his fists as he said full of rage, “Xue’er is not only our daughter, but she is also the sole inheritor of Profound Sky Continent’s only divine spirit and is the future Phoenix God of our Divine Phoenix Sect! How could

a mere Yun Che be worthy enough for her! And you actually want Xue'er to become his concubine, this is outrageous! We'd like to ask Empress Cang Yue to stop daydreaming!!!”

“It is indeed possible that Little Sister Xue'er is the most outstanding woman in the entire Profound Sky Continent. Anyone who has seen Xue'er probably wouldn't deny it.” Cang Yue said without compromising, “But this empress' husband is also the inheritor of the Phoenix God's bloodline. He started cultivating the profound at the age of sixteen, made a name for

himself at the age of seventeen, became Blue Wind's number one at the age of nineteen, and defeated the six nations at the Seven Nation Ranking Tournament alone... of which, it naturally included your Divine Phoenix! Now, he is only twenty-two years old, yet he alone made your great Divine Phoenix Sect so miserable, and forced you, the Phoenix Sect Master, to bear an enormous amount of unwillingness and humiliation to come to Blue Wind to personally atone for your sins!"

"Among the same age group, the achievements this empress'

husband have attained are unprecedented in Blue Wind's entire history, and there will absolutely not be another one! How is he not worthy of your daughter?!"

Cang Yue's voice was filled with deep pride. In her eyes, there were only people who were unworthy of Yun Che in this world, and not people whom Yun Che was not worthy enough for!

"I will say it again... stop daydreaming!" Feng Hengkong

said in an incredibly deep voice; he used all of his patience to suppress his anger that was about to completely lose control.

“Then I ask the Phoenix Sect Master to give a sufficient enough reason that could convince this empress!”

“...If I say he’s not worthy enough, then he’s not worthy enough!” Feng Hengkong’s cold voice revealed anger that would lose control at any moment, “Just based on the fact that my daughter is the future Phoenix

God, there is no one in this world who could be worthy enough for Xue'er!!”

“What a simple excuse!” Cang Yue smiled lightly as she went head-to-head against Feng Hengkong. In terms of profound strength, the two were worlds apart, and there was a hundred years of difference between the time they took their throne. But momentum-wise, she wasn't suppressed by Feng Hengkong at all, “However, this empress has several reasons for why Feng Xue'er must marry Yun Che.”

Not “should”, but “must”.

Cang Yue heavily emphasized the word “must”.

“Hmph!” Feng Hengkong turned his head, not bothering to respond. He posed an attitude as if even if you talk your head off, he would still turn his nose up at it.

“Firstly, according to this empress’ knowledge, Feng Xue’er’s Phoenix blood was given directly by your Divine Phoenix



Sect's Phoenix Spirit, and so her body has the most original and purest Phoenix bloodline. In your Divine Phoenix Sect, other than Feng Xue'er, there is no one else who have the original Phoenix blood! But Yun Che's Phoenix blood was also given directly by the Phoenix Spirit, so he also has the most original and purest Phoenix bloodline! With regards to this fact, this empress knows better than anyone else, because when Yun Che was going through the Phoenix's trial and inheritance, this empress was by his side!"

"Thus, based on the Phoenix

bloodline, even if it's your Divine Phoenix Sect, no one is worthy of Feng Xue'er. And only the bloodline of this empress' husband, Yun Che, perfectly fits with Feng Xue'er's!"

Feng Hengkong locked his eyebrows and did not say a word... All of these, he already knew.

“Secondly, Phoenix Sect Master should not forget that today, you're here to atone for your sins! This empress' hatred has been burning for three

consecutive years, and if it wasn't for hundreds of millions of Blue Wind citizens this empress carries on her back, this empress really wishes to use this chance to give Divine Phoenix Nation the cruelest punishment... to the extent of personally taking your life as tribute to Royal Father!" Cang Yue's words were very calm, but the deep hatred and anger that was accumulated under her calm tone could still be clearly felt, "However, this empress made such decision in the end... because if Feng Xue'er marries this empress' husband, to Blue Wind, it could calm the citizen's frightened emotions. We can rely on Divine Phoenix as

protection, not fear any bullying of war, and my Blue Wind's citizens will enjoy a long period of stability.”

“To your Divine Phoenix, you don't need to apologize in front of the world, don't need to cede away your territory, don't need to pay compensation, and don't need to be humiliated. You don't need to lose your respect and dignity, you won't become a joke, and the people of Divine Phoenix Nation will also not be in panic and chaos. Divine Phoenix Nation can keep its dignity and stability, and you, the Phoenix Sect Master, can

keep your freedom and life! At the same time, your daughter will also find the best home in the world!”

“This is the most merciful and compassionate this empress... a woman who carries the hatred of her father being murdered and her country being destroyed, can give! If you were to agree, both nations will be satisfied. If you don't... then this empress will take back all the grace and mercy!!”

Feng Hengkong, “...”

“Thirdly!” Cang Yue’s voice did not pause at all, her phoenix-like eyes kept staring straight at Feng Hengkong, “Since the Phoenix Sect Master keeps saying that this empress’ husband, Yun Che, is not worthy enough of your daughter, then can Phoenix Sect Master please tell me who, in the entire Profound Sky Continent, is more qualified than Yun Che for your daughter!?”

“...” Feng Hengkong moved his lips, but was speechless for a long time.

This time, it wasn't because Feng Hengkong couldn't bother to respond, but because he was truly speechless.

What Cang Yue said before didn't really affect him, but as of this moment, when his mind scrutinized Cang Yue's words, he suddenly realized that among the same age group, he really couldn't find anyone that could compare to Yun Che.

The Yun Che who forced his Divine Phoenix Sect to such an

extent was only twenty-two years old this year... At this age, the people in the same age group in Divine Phoenix Sect, aside from Feng Xue'er, he couldn't even find someone worthy enough to carry his shoes for him!!

The strongest practitioners in the world were all gathered in Divine Phoenix Sect and the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Even if it was the Four Great Sacred Grounds, not to mention the age group around the twenties, he couldn't even think of anyone that could compare to Yun Che in the sixties.



These days, he was immersed in the disaster brought by Yun Che, so he ignored a fact that could shock the entire continent while being heavily stressed day and night... The Yun Che who had “died” and came back three years later, among the younger generation of the Profound Sky Continent, could very possibly... fully deserve the title of number one!

Then, if there was only one person who was good enough for Feng Xue'er... it would undoubtedly be Yun Che!

“Looks like Phoenix Sect Master can’t name one.” Noticing Feng Hengkong finally showing a change in expression, Cang Yue smiled slightly, “That means this empress’ third reason is also established!”

“Fourthly!” Cang Yue continued to speak, “I heard that Sister Xue’er grew up under the shield of Divine Phoenix Sect before she was thirteen, and after she turned thirteen, she was under the protection of the entire Divine Phoenix Sect. She has never truly stepped into the

real world, so she must not know much about the relationship between a man and a woman. Therefore, Little Sister Xue'er might not understand what kind of feeling she has towards Yun Che. But I believe with Phoenix Sect Master's experience and wisdom, you must be able to tell... that Little Sister Xue'er's feeling towards Yun Che is absolutely not as simple as just the gratitude for saving her!"

"Sss..." Cang Yue's words made Feng Hengkong gnashed his teeth as his whole body shivered violently.

Yes... How could he have not seen and felt it!!

That was why his chest felt like it was going to explode when he heard that Yun Che was still alive; he lost control of his emotions, and he wanted to kill him no matter what... Because of that, when he suddenly heard Cang Yue request Feng Xue'er to marry to Yun Che, his sinking emotion and aura for atoning his sins exploded uncontrollably in an instant...

Cang Yue was always extremely curious of Princess Snow, the “Profound Sky’s number one beauty” who Yun Che had willingly to risk his life to save. Now that she finally saw her, in addition to being impressed by goddess-like looks, she also saw the unusual expression Feng Xue’er had when facing Yun Che, and she also heard the different emotion in her voice when she says “Big Brother Yun”... Even though only thirty minutes had passed since she met her, Cang Yue had already saw through a lot of things.

Looking at Feng Xue’er, it was

like she saw herself back then when she met Yun Che. That time, she couldn't contain her joy, happiness, warmth and satisfaction; she let go of her defenses and opened her heart completely.

“Are you done saying what you want to say!?” Feng Hengkong clenched his fists tightly.

“No!” Cang Yue shook her head and continued to speak slowly, “This empress knows that Phoenix Sect Master rejected rudely without hesitation out of

the love and protective instinct of a father towards his daughter, so it is already a given that he would not be tolerant of sacrificing his own daughter in exchange for compromisation. However, Phoenix Sect Master, after this empress has said this much, I believe you have a reason to reconsider whether or not Little Sister Xue'er marrying Yun Che is a sacrifice! Now only does Little Sister Xue'er have the feelings of gratitude towards Yun Che, there is also the feeling between a man and a woman. Since she is your daughter, you must see it a lot clearer than this empress! And even though this empress' husband always has a tender heart towards women, he

would definitely not risk his life for any beautiful woman!”

“To find someone that she adores who is even willing to protect her with his life... Phoenix Sect Master, do you know that, to a woman, this is the greatest happiness and luck in life? Yet Little Sister Xue’er has already found someone like this... Once someone like this is found, then that someone will be unforgettable for life!”

“Phoenix Sect Master said earlier that to you, Little Sister



Xue'er is more important than your own life and even the life and death of Divine Phoenix Empire and Divine Phoenix Sect! If you forcefully separate Little Sister Xue'er and Yun Che, with Little Sister Xue'er's pure heart and soul, you will bring her an everlasting pain and trauma. The only conclusion would be you, who says that Little Sister Xue'er is more important than anything, personally giving her a lifetime of heartbreak because of your selfishness!"

"You..." Feng Hengkong's body swayed. What Cang Yue had said had unquestionably dealt a huge

blow.

“As such, this empress’ conditions are not threats, not humiliations, not sacrifices... but are compassion and fulfillment!!” Before Feng Hengkong was able to speak of another word, Cang Yue’s voice had already suppressed his, “Of course you can still choose to refuse. If you do, then you can pretend that this empress did not said any of the things from before. This empress will take back all the mercy... and not give you any leeway!!”

Cang Yue's last sentence was said with an overbearing power that even Yun Che felt a second of heaviness from.

When Cang Yue asked for Feng Xue'er to marry him as a concubine, Yun Che was surprised for a while. After that, he looked at Cang Yue silently without saying anything, but in his heart, there were already unappeasable waves.

Back then, his Yue'er, his Senior Sister Xueruo, was independent, strong, but was

also very tame, good, and delicate. When she was before him, she would show her weakness without any reserve. After their big wedding in the imperial palace, as a princess, she changed his clothes, sewed for him, and prepared him three meals a day... Everything was taken care of meticulously. She had almost completely forgotten her identity as a princess, because she wanted to become the most perfect wife that only belonged to him with all her heart. She saw him as her whole world and did not fight for anything nor ask for anything.

The woman before him who wore a phoenix coronet, golden clothing, and an awe-inspiring emperor's dignity was facing Feng Hengkong's boundless pressure yet her aura was not weak or suppressed at all. Her unfathomably deep phoenix eyes were sometimes warm, sometimes cold and sometimes sharp. Her voice went straight to the soul, and her words were incredibly sharp. She was smart, calm, impeccable, and her words almost made Feng Hengkong's aura which had exploded under his rage completely disperse...

Three years, it had merely been

three years, yet she had changed this tremendously.

If it was someone else, they would not be able to change this much in thirty years, or even three hundred years... However, Yun Che was not surprised at all that this happened to Cang Yue; he only felt a heavy heartache.

Shouldering the responsibility of an entire nation's destruction... perhaps there was nothing worse in this world that induced—no, that forced a person to change so quickly.

No person could possibly imagine the weight of the burden one carried after such a transformation... At least, what she had borne in the past three years was really much, much heavier than what the Little Demon Empress undertook under the shadow of Duke Huai.

# Chapter 730 – Half Year Agreement

---

“I have never expected Empress Cang Yue to have such a silver tongue, you have truly impressed us!” Feng Hengkong’s voice was cold; rather than complementing, it was more of being sarcastic.

“You already know what kind of identity Xue’er has, yet you still kept saying that this action could save my Divine Phoenix Empire’s dignity. However, what you truly want is to make the noblest princess of our Divine



Phoenix to marry your Blue Wind's prince consort as a concubine. Not only is her position lowered, she is even directly lower than you. Empress Cang Yue, your words clearly speak that from now on, our Divine Phoenix will be lower than your Blue Wind..."

"Oh..." Before Feng Hengkong finished yelling, he was interrupted by Cang Yue's drawn out tone. She said with a faint smile on her face, "So the reason the Phoenix Sect Master reacted so severely was because you are unwilling for Little Sister Xue'er to become a concubine. If so,

then this empress will compromise. After Little Sister Xue'er marries this empress' husband, she will be a first wife, the same as this empress, and our positions will be equal! This has never happened in the thousand years of history of Blue Wind Nation, and this can count as this empress making an extremely huge concession on behalf of the imperial family's dignity for peace between the two nations. Phoenix Sect Master should be satisfied like this!"

Feng Hengkong's anger and his expression stiffened at the same

time. Halfway through Cang Yue's words, he suddenly realized that the reason Cang Yue requested for Feng Xue'er to become a "concubine" was to conveniently "retreat for the sake of advancing" at this moment! He completely stepped into the trap that Cang Yue had set up.

Cang Yue continued to speak tirelessly, "Other than that, this empress was the royal princess of Blue Wind back then. When I married Yun Che, of course I treated my husband as someone above me. Even though I have now ascended to the throne and

became the empress, I still treat my husband as my everything. And since this empress is the ruler of Blue Wind, this empress' husband, Yun Che, has the most noble position in Blue Wind and is not the prince consort he once was! The person Little Sister Xue'er is marrying is naturally not the prince consort of Blue Wind, but instead the person who has the highest and noblest position in Blue Wind Nation! How is this degrading?"

"But, Phoenix Sect Master's words seem to have reminded this empress. Since Little Sister Xue'er is at the most noble,

highest position of the Divine Phoenix Nation, then she naturally has the highest right to speak for herself. If so, then about this matter, it seems that it will be more appropriate if this empress asks Little Sister Xue'er herself."

Feng Hengkong was speechless for a long time... He wasn't able to accept this all of a sudden. He, who had been the emperor of Divine Phoenix for a hundred years, was being manipulated by a weak nation's empress who had just ascended the throne for three years at the age of about twenty.

“Little Sister Xue’er, are you willing to marry Yun Che, be with him forever, and calm the hatred between the two nations?” Cang Yue turned towards Feng Xue’er; her aura that was as sharp as swords when facing Feng Hengkong transformed into a gentle smile.

When Cang Yue was going head-to-head with Feng Hengkong, Yun Che didn’t speak, and Feng Xue’er was also silent. Since the moment Cang Yue mentioned for her to marry Yun Che, she had been stunned

the whole time. She blinked her crystal-like bright eyes and asked softly, “Marrying Big Brother Yun... is that forever?”

“Of course it’s forever.” Cang Yue smiled and said, “After you marry your Big Brother Yun, you will belong to him, and he will also belong to you. You two can have everything of each other, have each others’ shoulders to lean on, accompany each other forever, and no one can stop or restrict it.”

“...Then, what Empress Sis said

before, are those all true?" Feng Xue'er's beautiful eyes became even more blurry.

"Of course." Cang Yue knew what she wanted to ask, "Big Sis is the empress of Blue Wind Nation. Like your Royal Father, our words are as good as gold. If you are willing to marry your Big Brother Yun, then your Divine Phoenix wouldn't need to apologize in public, cede away their territory, pay tribute, and your Royal Father would be able to return to Divine Phoenix at anytime unharmed. As for you, you would can stay with your Big Brother Yun from then on,



and you can be together as long as you want.”

“...” Feng Xue’er was only here to atone the sins for her Royal Father. As long as she could atone for those sins, she was willing to endure any punishment. However, she never imagined that the “punishment” that Empress Cang Yue gave in the end was something like this. In her own perspective, everything that was happening before her eyes, this type of way to “atone for the sins,” was just too wonderful...

“If, if it’s like this,” Feng Xue’er carefully turned her eyes towards Yun Che, but just as she touched the corner of Yun Che’s clothing, she retreated under a strange, unfamiliar emotion. Her heartbeat sped up many times, and her voice became softer, “Of course I d...”

“Xue’er!!” Feng Hengkong’s low roar interrupted Feng Xue’er, “You are still young, this is not as simple as you think! This is an important affair that will affect your whole life! This is something that can’t be rashly and impulsively decided for anyone in their life!”

“I know...” Feng Xue’er spoke softly, “I am rarely in contact with the outside world, but from the memories that Lord Phoenix God has bestowed me, I roughly knew about many things. I know that, if a woman was to marry a man, it would be for her whole life... But, if it was Big Brother Yun, for a lifetime, wouldn’t it be wonderful?”

“Both Big Brother Yun and I own the bloodline and Phoenix Soul that was bestowed by Lord Phoenix God. Thus, my soul can clearly feel the warmth that Big

Brother Yun's soul brings me. Three years ago at Phoenix Perching Valley, those days that I was with Big Brother Yun were the happiest days in my life. Not only did Big Brother Yun save my life and awaken my Phoenix soul, he has even made me feel the the greatest bliss in the world... and, my soul can feel that in this world, there will never be another person who can make me feel this way."

"Just like yesterday, when I saw Big Brother Yun once again... that was an immense joy that I had never felt before."

“If I am to atone for our sins like this, then I really am willing to spend my life atoning this way.”

Feng Xue'er spoke, mumbled, and couldn't help but giggle softly. The moment that her smile bloomed, the serious Great Hall instantly became warm.

Cang Yue's expression was a little complicated, but it only lasted for a short moment. She glanced slightly at Yun Che, and then smiled with warmth. She

could tell that Feng Xue'er's feelings towards Yun Che was more than just gratitude, but she had never thought that it was so deep and simple. Perhaps, towards Feng Xue'er who had the purest soul, the appearance of Yun Che was completely fatal.

Feng Hengkong's face and his whole body felt a deep sense of powerlessness... The Phoenix Soul was originally a whole, and they attracted each other under instinct. He would rather conclude that the attraction between the two of them was caused by their Phoenix Soul.

“Xue’er...” Feng Hengkong spoke, in his voice, there was a trace of pain and helplessness, “Do you remember when you ‘returned’ from Lord Phoenix God, the things that Royal Father said to you?”

“I remember,” Feng Xue’er didn’t think and nodded her head softly, “Royal Father told Xue’er that I cannot leave Divine Phoenix City before I am seventeen, and I cannot have any contact with anyone other than close relatives. I cannot leave Divine Phoenix Nation

before I am twenty, and I must start to use my own eyes to get to know and understand the whole world.”

Feng Hengkong nodded slightly. Only when facing Feng Xue'er would his eyes turn gentle and be devoid of impurities, “Xue'er, you grew up by Lord Phoenix God's side since you were young. You are far too pure and kind. Even though Royal Father wants to protect you forever, you are bound to grow up, and in the future, you will even need to be in charge of the whole Divine Phoenix...”



“So, even if Royal Father couldn’t let go, my protection for you would only continue until you are seventeen. After seventeen, Royal Father planned to take you to see the world across Divine Phoenix Nation in order for you to realize the fickleness of human nature. Once you turn twenty, Royal Father would completely let go and let you get to know the whole Profound Sky Continent, and then let you decide everything for yourself independently...”

“But in the past three years, you were always in a coma. Now, even though you are exactly the same from three years ago and even though you looked like you didn’t grow at all, you are already nineteen. However, Royal Father wasn’t able to take you to see our Divine Phoenix Nation... And in half a year, you will be turn twenty.”

“Royal Father...” Feng Xue’er mumbled softly.

“Even though three years were taken away from you, the things

that Royal Father had said back then would not be taken away. Once you are twenty, you will be able to decide everything for yourself, and no one can interfere in your decisions... so, give yourself, give Royal Father half a year of time.” Feng Hengkong’s eyes and face were slightly lowered, “In this half a year, you will grow, get to know, and expand your horizon. More than that, you can clearly understand what kind of feeling you have for Yun Che.”

“If your feelings towards Yun Che are still the same as today half a year later,” Feng

Hengkong's fist under his long sleeves tightened, "Then Royal Father will personally call the shots as you wish... Even if the entire sect objects, Royal Father will still do it for you. And, if you changed your mind, then, then absolutely do not force yourself. Royal Father will have a way to deal with Blue Wind."

"...Mn." Feng Xue'er hesitated for a little bit, but she still nodded softly, "Xue'er will listen to Royal Father."

"Empress Cang Yue, you heard

it. It is not that Xue'er and I are unwilling, it's just that it concerns Xue'er's future; it needs to be carefully considered. I can entrust Xue'er to Yun Che... but it is not to protect the dignity of Divine Phoenix; it is because of Xue'er's wish in her heart. But it... it at least needs to be half a year later!"

“Very well!” Contrary to Feng Hengkong's expectations, Cang Yue didn't use the opportunity to take advantage of him. Instead, she nodded cleanly and sharply, “Phoenix Sect Master's words are as good as gold. With your words, it counts as this

empress agreeing to your request! However, this empress will not give away half a year for nothing! During this half year in which your Divine Phoenix Empire will make your final decision, Feng Xue'er must stay in my Blue Wind Nation! As for you, you can leave anytime!"

Cang Yue's tone was determined, stating that there was no compromise!

Feng Hengkong's eyebrows suddenly rose... Feng Xue'er grew up by the side of the

Phoenix God, and she had never left Divine Phoenix City before yesterday. How would he accept leaving her in Blue Wind this easily... and even leave her beside the extremely dangerous Yun Che? He was just about to reject it unyieldingly, but when he raised his head, he saw how Feng Xue'er wasn't worried at all; on the contrary, she seemed to be looking forward to it. At that instant, his heart softened as he swallowed back the words about to burst from his throat, turned around and suddenly flew up towards outside the hall.

“Yun Che, come with us!”

“Give me a moment.” Yun Che lifted his head to look at Feng Hengkong; he then nodded towards Cang Yue and Feng Xue’er and also flew out after Feng Hengkong.

After Feng Hengkong flew out of the main hall, he flew in a straight line until he was in front of the Divine Phoenix Ark. He turned around, looked at Yun Che in front of him, and with a face devoid of any expression, he said in a low voice, “Yun Che... in our life, we have rarely thanked anyone. But three years



ago, we did indeed want to thank you because you risked your life to save Xue'er's life! Based on just that, if you were alive three years ago, no matter what you wanted, we wouldn't hesitate at all."

"What do you want to say?" Yun Che indifferently asked.

"Ever since Xue'er woke up from her three year coma, the hatred in our heart has grown to a murderous extent... and now, our hate for you runs even deeper than our bones!"

“Xue’er grew up beside the Phoenix God, so she hasn’t seen her royal brothers that many times. Because of that, she may not feel even a slight sorrow for their deaths, and it will be even more difficult for her to hate you for it... but they were our own sons! You killed four of our sons, and even if we crush you into bone dust, we wouldn’t be able to dispel the hatred in the depths of our heart... And even with all of this, that is not what we hate the most about you. What we hate the most about you is, is that you actually... actually...”

A strange “bang” sound came out from Feng Hengkong’s mouth... Yun Che could tell that it was at least one tooth getting crushed.

What Feng Hengkong felt for him... was a true teeth gnashing hatred.

“I feel the same way towards you,” Yun Che responded coldly.

Feng Hengkong turned around.

He didn't have to look at Yun Che's face, so he could at least slightly control his emotions and hatred, "The things that I said to Xue'er just now was definitely not because we are giving in to protect the dignity of Divine Phoenix, and definitely not because we have forgiven you. All of them are only because Xue'er's feelings towards you, is real. Heh... Empress Cang Yue has really grasped our weak spot. If we forcefully stopped it, it would indeed break Xue'er's heart... For Xue'er, we can compromise with anything!"

"Heh, the reason you asked me

to come out was just to tell me how great you are as a father?” Yun Che scoffed.

“...” Feng Hengkong wasn’t angered, instead his voice slowed down, “Just based on you saving Xue’er, I can at least believe that you won’t hurt her. Now that Xue’er’s Phoenix Soul is awakened, there are not many people in this world who can hurt her. As for having her stay in Blue Wind close to you, perhaps we don’t need to be too worried about her safety this way. And it is indeed time... for her to get to know this world.”

“However, while Xue’er stays here, you must promise me one thing!” Feng Hengkong’s voice suddenly became very harsh... from the way he spoke, it was obvious that he had already agreed to leave Feng Xue’er in Blue Wind for this half a year.

“Say it,” Yun Che responded.

“With Xue’er’s soul, after half a year, her feelings towards you shouldn’t have any negative changes. This half a year is more to give our sect some time to

react. In the future, I may marry Xue'er to you, but before Xue'er's powers are fully awaken, you must not taint her Phoenix God's body! You should know that it will seriously hinder her powers from awakening!" Feng Hengkong harshly spoke with his back turned towards Yun Che.

Yun Che moved his eyebrows, and then he lightly said, "Don't worry. Even though the life and death of Divine Phoenix Sect doesn't concern me, I will not do anything that will ruin Xue'er's future."

“Good, we can believe you.” Although Feng Henkong hated Yun Che to the bones, Yun Che was still a person who had risked his own life to save Feng Xue’er. As such, in the bottom of his heart, he could never questioned whether or not Yun Che cherished Feng Xue’er.

“But I also have something to say and you must remember it.” Yun Che said coldly, “In the future, even if I am with Xue’er, I will never call you Royal Father!!”



Feng Hengkong's body slightly stiffened. He didn't say another word anymore and just stepped out in the air towards the Divine Phoenix Ark.

Standing in front of the door of the Divine Phoenix Ark, he stopped his heavy footsteps, swung his arm behind him and threw a red jade stone towards Yun Che. Yun Che lifted his hand and caught it, and just as it touched his palm, a warm feeling spread over his body.

“With this Phoenix Stone, you can send a sound transmission to me within one hundred and fifty thousand kilometers. Within this half a year, if Xue’er is in any danger or accident...”

When the ark’s door completely opened, Feng Hengkong didn’t continue speaking. Only until he stepped into the profound ark did he finally turned around and met eyes with Yun Che.

“You’re leaving without saying goodbye to Xue’er?” Yun Che put the Phoenix Stone away and

asked.

“...No matter how unwilling we are, a daughter... is eventually going to marry someone.” Feng Hengkong’s eyebrows creased as he mumbled, “May as well, at least it’s a lot better than the likes of Ye Xinghan.” It was unknown whether he was talking to Yun Che or to himself.

The ark’s door completely shut as the Divine Phoenix Ark rose into the air and shot out into the sky in the blink of an eye. A surging blast of air instantly

swept across Blue Wind Imperial  
Palace.

# Chapter 731 – End Of The War

---

“Royal Father!!”

The sound of the Divine Phoenix Ark igniting caused Feng Xue’er to fly out of the main hall, but she was only in time to see traces of a red shadow vanishing to the west.

“Your royal father has left.”  
Yun Che turned and said to her.

“But why did Royal Father leave just like that, without even bidding me farewell?” Feng Xue’er’s petite face displayed slight bewilderment. This was the first time she had, ever since she was born, left her father’s side and Divine Phoenix Sect.

“Your royal father was worried that once he saw you, he would be reluctant to part with you. Besides, he believes in you as you are right now, and of course, he trusts me as well.” Yun Che said, smiling, “You may need to stay in Blue Wind Nation for a long period of time in the future. It’s not just about being

unable to meet your father and your kinsmen, you'll also be surrounded by strangers... Are you afraid?"

"Oh... Of course not." Feng Xue'er gently shook her head and smiled slightly, "Because Xue'er still has Brother Yun by her side."

Yun Che stepped forward and took her hand. With a gentle tone, he said, "Rest assured, Xue'er. During this period of time in Blue Wind Nation, you don't have to take anything

upon yourself. You can do whatever you want to do, go anywhere you want... and if you're willing, I will accompany you."

"...Mn!" Feng Xue'er vigorously nodded her head, her brows curved into crescents as she smiled. With just a few words from Yun Che, her panic was quelled, only leaving overflowing happiness in her soul, "Thank you, Big Brother Yun."

"Brother-in-law!!"



The sound of the wind whooshed behind them as Xia Yuanba rushed forward. Number One Under Heaven, Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang followed right behind him. Upon seeing Xia Yuanba, Feng Xue'er smiled demurely, "We meet again, Bulky Big Brother. Xue'er has yet to thank Bulky Big Brother for protecting us back then on the Primordial Profound Ark."

"Hehe," Xia Yuanba laughed embarrassedly, "It's my duty. It's been three years since we last met, but Little Sister Xue'er

doesn't seem to have changed much."

"But Bulky Big Brother seems to have... gotten bigger." Feng Xue'er curiously looked at Xia Yuanba. Three years ago, Xia Yuanba blocked Ye Xinghan and Feng Feiyan with his body, allowing her and Yun Che to escape from the Primordial Profound Ark. In addition, he was Yun Che's most important family, thus Feng Xue'er held strong familial feelings for Xia Yuanba. She suddenly smiled and said, "Also, Bulky Big Brother has become really awesome, even reaching the

sixth level of the Sovereign  
Profound Realm! You might even  
be stronger than Grandfather.”

“Hehe... Eh?” Xia Yuanba  
blinked, “How did you know?  
Did brother-in-law tell you  
about this?”

Yun Che laughed, “Xue’er is  
now a level eight Monarch, for  
her to sense the level of your  
profound strength is a piece of  
cake.”

“!@# ¥ %... Wha!” Xia Yuanba

exclaimed in surprise, slack-jawed.

Behind him, Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang jolted, nearly falling from the sky.

“Lev... level eight Monarch?” Number One Under Heaven asked, flabbergasted. The twenty one year old Xia Yuanba attaining the frightening power of a level six Monarch was already enough to startle him, yet this young lady in front of him with a face not inferior to Little Demon Empress, and

whom Xia Yuanba had just said was not yet twenty, was actually an eighth level Monarch!?

That was far higher than his father, Greatest Ambition Under Heaven!

In this Profound Sky Continent... how could there be such an unfathomable and illogical existence!!

“A... as expected of Little Sister Xue’er, that’s... that’s amazing.”  
Xia Yuanba gulped and

stammered out. Dongfang Xiu and the rest had long been dumbstruck. A level eight Monarch was a concept that they didn't even dare to think about.

Xia Yuanba shook his head and finally got down to business, "Brother-in-law, I saw that Feng Hengkong has boarded the Divine Phoenix Ark and left. Why did Little Sister Xue'er stay behind? What happened?"

"About this..." Yun Che was about to explain the gist of the

situation to Xia Yuanba and Dongfang Xiu when he suddenly realized that Cang Yue hadn't left the hall. He frowned and loosened Feng Xue'er's hand, "Xue'er, explain the matter to them simply. I'll go check on Yue'er."

Yun Che then swiftly flew back to the Blue Wind Hall.

As expected, Cang Yue was seated on... to be more accurate, slumped on the phoenix throne. Her face was pale and her aura was weak. Yue Che immediately

rushed over, reaching out to grasp her shoulders and gently infused a stream of profound energy into her body, “Are you alright, Yue’er?”

Cang Yue nodded slightly. She laid her head against his shoulder, her face displaying a tired yet contented smile. Her profound strength was only at the Spirit Profound Realm, yet she did not yield to the immense pressure from Feng Hengkong. Once Feng Hengkong left, the pressure vanished and she almost immediately collapsed.



“Just focus on resting, don’t think of anything else... Feng Hengkong has already left, leaving Xue’er behind. Our Blue Wind Nation is safe.” Yun Che murmured as he embraced her affectionately.

“Mn...” Cang Yue weakly asserted: “All of these are because of Husband, if it wasn’t for Husband...”

“No,” Yun Che shook his head, “All these are because of Yue’er. If it wasn’t for Yue’er shouldering everything in the

past three years, we wouldn't have such an outcome today. Compared to what Yue'er has done for the past three years, what I've done these past couple of days are not worth mentioning."

"Heh..." Cang Yue laughed softly. There was no shadow of stress or darkness in her laugh, "My Junior Brother Yun, my husband, he can always make me happy."

"...Yue'er, you've suffered so much these three years that I

don't even have the courage to think about it. I hate the Divine Phoenix Empire, but it's only right that you hate them more than me." Yun Che voiced out his heart's question, "Why did you make such a decision when facing Feng Hengkong, who was willing to accept any kind of punishment? Fifty billion as compensation may be a lot, but to Divine Phoenix, that might just be water off a duck's back."

"That is because any punishment given out will only bring short-lived thrill and triumph, but in turn, it will plant the seeds of resentment

and hatred in others. This will bring about a vicious cycle and history will repeat itself, even erupting into a full-blown war in the certain future. In comparison with Divine Phoenix, Blue Wind is weak. If that happens, the one who will sink into a time of adversity will surely be Blue Wind. It's not quite... forgiveness per se, after all..." Cang Yue smiled. "My husband and I have seized the most precious Princess Snow from Divine Phoenix!"

"If we let Little Sister Xue'er marry you, my husband, it would be more beneficial for

Blue Wind Nation's future than occupying half of Divine Phoenix Nation. To me, this will also be the best resolution too."

Yun Che gently palmed her cheek, murmuring, "You are the ruler of this country, yet you're initiating a marriage between me and another woman. Moreover, she will be accorded as a legitimate wife with the same status as yours... don't you feel that this is unfair to you?"

Cang Yue smiled faintly, gently shaking her head. "I could only

dream to be with you in the past. But now, my dream has been fulfilled, and I am the world's happiest and most contented person. There can be no unfairness in this."

"Little Sister Xue'er is the most perfect girl I've seen in my life. Her looks, character, upbringing, status, profound strength, everything about her is flawless. And of course, the world's most perfect lady should belong to my husband. Heh... I so strongly desire for all the world's most perfect things to belong to my husband."

“Yue’er...” Yun Che sighed as a warm feeling spread through every corner of his body. He knew that he could not let Cang Yue down... not even the slightest.

“Husband...” Ensnared in his embrace, Cang Yue closed her eyes and whispered, “Won’t you give me a child? When he’s older, I will give him the throne. This way, I can be by Husband’s side and truly belong to you.”

Yun Che gently nodded as his

fingers caressed her snowy neck. He lowered his head and grinned, “Then we’ll have to do our best from today, alright?”

Although Cang Yue had her eyes closed, her snowy cheeks were slowly suffused with red. She shyly buried her head deeper into his embrace. It was a while later that she finally emitted a soft, high pitched moan, “Mn...”

From the second day the Divine Phoenix Ark left, there was a swift reordering of all Divine



Phoenix troops stationed in the Blue Wind Nation. Although the troops did not completely retreat from Blue Wind, all troops were pulled out of the imperial city and given strict orders not to invade again.

The invasion of the Blue Wind Nation by the Divine Phoenix Nation culminated in this unexpected manner.

The development of this situation later shocked the entire Profound Sky Continent... On the fifth day of Feng

Hengkong's return to Divine Phoenix, he announced that the Blue Wind Imperial Family would be compensated fifty billion purple profound coins, and also gifted with an additional thirty tons of Purple Crystals and thirteen thousand sets of light armor and weaponry refined with the Divine Phoenix flame. The afternoon on the same day, tens of thousands of Divine Phoenix soldiers began filing into Blue Wind Imperial City... but not for an invasion. This time, the soldiers were sent to Blue Wind Imperial City to assist and rebuild the structures that were destroyed during the war.

The news of Yun Che killing several Divine Phoenix princes and elders and ruining Phoenix City had widely spread among the seven kingdoms.

Even the most foolish person would have been able to guess what had happened between the two.

Although the Blue Wind Nation was still in a mess, it finally saw the silver lining behind the clouds. The entire nation was in joyous celebration as countless

Blue Wind citizens no longer needed to flee; they all returned to their homeland crying and laughing instead. At the same time, they shouted Yun Che's name, because they knew this was the man who saved Blue Wind Nation from the brink of destruction.

Beyond Blue Wind Nation, the other six nations were undoubtedly extremely shocked.

It would have been within reason if Divine Phoenix simply retreated, but Divine Phoenix

didn't only just retreat, they added a lofty sum as compensation, and they had even mobilized close to seventy percent of their troops to help rebuild Blue Wind...

For Divine Phoenix to have done such a thing, even the simplest reason had the nations tremble in fear. For the past few days, the monarchs of Navy Tide, Black Fiend, Sunflower Dew, Grand Asura, and Divine Incense suffered sleepless nights and loss of appetites. After all, during the three years when Blue Wind was suffering under Divine Phoenix, no matter how

Blue Wind lowered their head or nearly begged for assistance, they had turned a blind eye, and they even shredded the letter of appeal.

Wouldn't it be child's play for them to get revenge if they had been able to corner the Divine Phoenix Empire to such a plight?

Especially with Yun Che's mulish personality and vicious methods... All five monarchs had personally witnessed this three years ago, during the Seven Nation Ranking

## Tournament!

Upon casting aside the shadow Blue Wind Nation had lived in, they began their recovery process and Cang Yue naturally got busier. She had to manage national affairs in the day, and wait on Yun Che in the night. Yun Che, on the other hand, was exceptionally idle. Every morning, he would visit Cang Wanhe's grave to accompany Feng Xue'er... In order to redeem Feng Hengkong's sins, Feng Xue'er resolutely knelt in front of Cang Wanhe's grave, and Yun Che and Cang Yue had no choice but to give in. The rest of the

time was spent traveling between Blue Wind Imperial City and Floating Cloud City.

Ten days later.

As dawn approached, the sky brightened. Cang Yue was awake, but with her soft, jade-smooth body tangled with Yun Che, she was reluctant to rise. Her dazzlingly pale porcelain shoulder peeked out from the embroidered blanket.

“Your majesty, the monarch of



Sunflower Dew, Gui Wanli, seeks an audience... Gui Wanli has been waiting outside the palace since three in the morning.”

From behind the curtain, Cang Yue’s palace maid reported respectfully. With half-closed eyes, Cang Yue gently shifted her body in Yun Che’s embrace and drawled, “Noted, let him wait for another hour.”

“Understood.”

Once the palace maid left, Cang

Yue opened her eyes and threw off the blanket. In that second, a wide expanse of snowy, jade skin was revealed to Yun Che's eyes. Yun Che stretched out a hand and pulled her back into his embrace, "Why bother meeting with him? Just have him leave the tribute and then get lost."

Cang Yue laughed softly and shook her head, "It's time for you to get up too, my husband. Little Sister Xue'er has already knelt in front of my royal father's tomb for a full ten days and ten nights. If you're not going to bring her back, I'll die from the heartache."

Cang Yue easily draped a phoenix muslin over her body. She knelt on the bed, and with a pair of slender, satiny jade hands, she dressed Yun Che and smoothed his hair. She then dressed herself in a phoenix robe and coronet, before hurrying out to prepare breakfast for Yun Che.

Once he left the palace, Yun Che swiftly flew to the north of the city. In front of Cang Wanhe's grave, a young lady knelt quietly, her head bowed and her hands clasped in front

of her chest. Her snowy white face was calm and sincere. Her long hair and skirts were dampened with the morning dew, casting an elegant yet lonely silhouette that would stir a heart wrenching pain from anyone watching.

## Chapter 732 – Temporary Peacefulness

---

“Xue’er, it has been ten days and ten nights. Royal Father’s soul in heaven has already felt your sincerity. He must be worried about you like the rest of us right now. Come back with me.”

Yun Che softly said after landing silently behind Feng Xue’er, and then he kneeled down and bowed heavily towards the tomb.

Feng Xue'er slowly opened her beautiful eyes, and a transparent morning dew quietly fell from her long eyelashes. She leaned herself towards Yun Che and said faintly, "I know, this, to Big Brother Yun and Royal Father, to the broken Blue Wind Nation, this can't even make up even a little bit of it... Empress Sis should hate my Royal Father more than anyone, hate my Divine Phoenix Nation... but, she chose to be so forgiving."

"Empress Sis really is an admirable person, no wonder she can become Big Brother Yun's wife."

Yun Che smiled and said, “To Yue’er, dispersing the disaster of Blue Wind in the shortest amount of time, and then achieving an even longer peace is what she wants. As for the other things, she can work hard to let them go. After your Royal Father returned, he also worked really hard to make up to Blue Wind. Not only did he deliver fifty billion purple profound coins to the Blue Wind Imperial Family within a short span of five days, he also delivered a large amount of Purple Crystal and armor. He also chose to publicly do this to help Blue Wind intimidate the other five

nations... He is also using his own way to repent and atone for his sins. Even though the disaster of those three years wouldn't be forgotten by history, with the emperors from the two nations working together, it could be turned around really quickly. So Xue'er shouldn't put the pressure on yourself. Your safety and happiness is your Royal Father's biggest wish."

"Mn..." Feng Xue'er continued leaning on Yun Che's shoulders, and her face revealed a beautiful smile.



“Let’s go back... I’ll take you to meet my grandfather and little aunt.”

Because of Feng Xue’er, Yun Che’s absolute hatred towards Feng Hengkong was slightly mixed with something complicated... He clearly knew that the main reason Feng Hengkong left Feng Xue’er here in Blue Wind Nation was definitely not to protect the dignity of Divine Phoenix, but because of Feng Xue’er’s wish. If Feng Xue’er wasn’t willing, even if he had to fulfill conditions that were several times harsher than those five cruel conditions,

he would absolutely not agree to it.

Handing his own daughter to an enemy who killed four of his sons... At least Feng Hengkong's spoiled love towards Feng Xue'er was strong and not tainted at all. His heart was vaster compared to what Yun Che had seen with his eyes out of hatred.

When Yun Che returned to Blue Wind Imperial City with Feng Xue'er, he happened to see Xia Yuanba and Number One Under Heaven walking out of the

imperial palace side by side. Xia Yuanba lifted his head when he felt the fluctuation in aura. His eyes brightened up as he flew towards Yun Che immediately, “Brother-in-law, Little Sister Xue’er.”

“Big Brother Under Heaven, Yuanba, I was just about to go look for you two. I am taking Xue’er to Floating Cloud City now, do you want to go back with us?” Yun Che asked them.

“Um... Brother-in-law, I was also looking for you. But, I am

here to say goodbye to you.” There was a temporary dimness in the expression of Xia Yuanba’s eyes when he heard Yun Che said “Floating Cloud City.” That was his homeland, but he no longer had any relatives there. His father was far away in Divine Phoenix, and there was no news about his big sister nor mother...

“Goodbye? You are going back to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary?” Yun Che said in surprise.

“Mn,” Xia Yuanba nodded, “The war here in Blue Wind has already ended, there is nothing more I can do staying here. When I rushed over from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary before, I used Lord Saint Emperor’s Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark. The Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark is extremely important to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, it is already inappropriate for me to have brought it out for so long. Master has already sent a sound transmission urging me to go back, and he said it was Lord Saint Emperor’s orders.”

“Other than that, he also mentioned that a few months later, we are going to Supreme Ocean Palace... I think it’s to attend the Devil Sword Conference, so I must go back early to prepare. Even though I will miss Brother-in-law and Senior Sister Xueruo, I must return to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. On the way back, I still want to go to Black Moon Merchant Guild to visit Father.”

“Devil Sword Conference?” Yun Che’s expression changed, “Your master said he’s taking you to attend it? Then did he mention any details about the

## Devil Sword Conference?”

“No. When I asked him, Master only said to talk about it more once I’m back. Brother-in-law, you also know about the Devil Sword Conference?”

“I’ve only heard about the name from the people of Black Moon Merchant Guild, and that it is going to be held about five months later. I don’t know about anything else. Also, if nothing unexpected happens, I will attend the Devil Sword Conference as well.”

“Ah? Brother-in-law will also go?” Xia Yuanba was excited; he immediately nodded his head without asking why, “Okay! I will definitely go with master then.”

Yun Che thought for a little bit and said, “Attending the Devil Sword Conference is secondary. I am mainly going to Supreme Ocean Palace because there are some affairs I need to take care of. Yuanba, when you return, ask your master more about Supreme Ocean Palace, maybe it will be useful to me.”



“Mn, I understand. I will find a way to send a sound transmission to you... Then, Brother-in-law, I’m leaving. I’ll see you in Supreme Ocean Palace,” Xia Yuanba’s body floated and was about to leave. These days, the Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark had been parked south of Blue Wind Imperial City. It was very eye-catching, and the strength of its aura was so strong that people could only look at it from far away, unable to get close to it.

“Wait...” Yun Che suddenly

yelled and stopped Xia Yuanba. He slightly lowered his eyebrows and spoke in a serious tone, "Yuanba, I heard that the Holy Master of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary does not have sons. Instead, he has many adopted sons, is that true?"

"That is indeed true." Xia Yuanba nodded, "I heard from Master that it seemed to be because of some disturbance on his profound aura while cultivating. Lord Holy Master hurt himself, causing himself to be incapable of producing offsprings, so he adopted seven or eight sons. I heard that the

next Holy Master would be chosen from Lord Holy Master's adopted sons, so they seem to always have an intense competition between each other."

Yun Che continued speaking, "I heard that only the Saint Emperor can steer the Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark, even the adopted sons of his are not allowed to touch it, is that true?"

"Mn," Xia Yuanba nodded once again, "So I was also surprised

when the Lord Holy Master lend me the Heavenly Sacred Divine Ark.”

Yun Che muttered to himself temporarily, and his expression turned serious, “When you return to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, watch out for the ‘adopted sons’ of Saint Emperor!”

Xia Yuanba’s had a stunned expression; he immediately understood the meaning behind Yun Che’s words, and he earnestly nodded, “I

understand. Brother-in-law doesn't have to worry. I am not the same Xia Yuanba that was bullied who needed Brother-in-law's protection! Also, when I was cultivating independently in Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, I basically wasn't in that much contact with them, but I will be aware."

"Brother-in-law, I'm leaving... I will definitely become even stronger five months later!"

Xia Yuanba had lost all the immaturity and hesitation that

he used to have. He waved towards Yun Che, then he flew up with ease towards the south of the imperial city.

“Brother Xia’s gift is really impressive, and his character is so virtuous. In the future, he will definitely rule the masses,” Number One Under Heaven praised sincerely as he looked at the direction where Xia Yuanba left. Number One Under Heaven had an extreme hostility and even hatred towards the Four Great Sacred Grounds of Profound Sky Continent, but he wasn’t able to dislike Xia Yuanba who was from Absolute

Monarch Sanctuary at all.

“Mn... But you definitely wouldn’t be able to imagine what he was like back then,” said Yun Che as smiled and turned around, “Big Brother Under Heaven, how about you come back with us to Floating Cloud City? Oh right, there is something that I forgot to tell you.”

Number One Under Heaven responded curiously, “Oh?”

“It’s good news. Seventh Sister is pregnant... Mn, she is two weeks pregnant now,” Yun Che smiled and said. These days, he would return to Floating Cloud City everyday. He didn’t need to test her pulse and could be completely certain just by looking at her. What a joke, that was the “elixir” that he personally conjured, how could it fail?

“!!” Number One Under Heaven was obviously surprised, “This... how is it so fast! That Xiao Yun brat... No, I must take Old Seven back so she can settle and rest.”



Looking at Number One Under Heaven, it was evident that he was already flustered. Yun Che waved his hand as he said, "Better not. If she were to return to the family now, both of them would be restricted in various ways and become troubled. However, if they stayed in Floating Cloud City, both of them would be able to enjoy their own world, living freely each day. For the pregnant Seventh Sister, this would be the best environment and condition. Even if you wanted to forcefully drag them back now, they would definitely not agree to it."

Of course, there was another more important reason to Yun Che, and that was Xiao Lie.

Number One Under Heaven calmed down slightly, thought for a while, before sighing, "Perhaps it's indeed so. Alright, Brother Yun, I shall follow you to Floating Cloud City then. Although there isn't much danger, given Old Seven's current condition, I really don't feel assured unless I'm by her side."

“Alright!” Yun Che nodded as he called upon the Primordial Profound Ark with his outstretched hand.

Ever since Divine Phoenix started calling back its troops, the atmosphere within Floating Cloud City also began to change daily. Until today, when all the Divine Phoenix Army fully retreated from the surroundings of Floating Cloud City, the entire city burst out in a lively and boisterous mood.

Upon returning to the Xiao

Family, seeing Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven, Number One Under Heaven could not be bothered about anything else and rushed straight forward, “Seventh Sister, Brother Yun said that you’re pregnant, is that true?”

When he finished speaking, he even gave a cold stare to Xiao Yun who was standing behind.

Xiao Yun scratched his head in embarrassment while Number Seven Under Heaven had a proud look, “Of course! Would

Big Brother Yun ever say anything fake. Hmph, and to think you six of my older brothers had not even let Father get a grandchild after so many years. It is I, Number Seven Under Heaven, who is the most impressive.”

The words she spoke caused Number One Under Heaven’s face to contort as he depressingly replied, “Then you... must take care of your body properly. If there’s anything wrong, you must let me know immediately.”

“Haha, Brother Under Heaven is truly panicking due to concern. Seventh Sister’s body is protected by Tyrant Profound energy and natural energy, she would be fine even if she flew around Floating Cloud City more than a hundred times each day.” Yun Che walked over and assured him while laughing.

“Ah...” Looking at the young girl in scarlet-gold long dress beside Yun Che, Xiao Lingxi stopped her rushing steps towards Yun Che. Her beautiful eyes widened as she exclaimed, “Little Che, she... could she be...”

Anyone who was meeting Feng Xue'er for the first time would feel as though they had entered a dream-like state, even if it was a woman. This was because her looks and demeanor were perfect to the point of illusory. Even though she was Princess Snow, even the most beautiful snow flower in the world would not be able to represent a small bit of her beauty.

It was just that there were too few lucky people in the world who could personally witness Princess Snow's beauty.

Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven also saw Feng Xue'er at this moment, and in that instant, their eyes locked in place. As though their souls had left their bodies, they could not look away.

“Feng Xue'er greets Big Brother Xiao, Big Sister Number Seven and... Little Aunt.” Feng Xue'er was gentle and respectful, and she smiled exceptionally sweetly when facing Xiao Lingxi. It was because she knew that Xiao Lingxi grew up together with Yun Che and was the most



important relative to him.

“Uhh... ahh...” Xiao Yun’s eyes opened the widest as he was dazed for a long period, his mouth subconsciously uttering, “Simply... comparable with.. Little Demon Empress...”

Number Seven Under Heaven ferociously covered Xiao Yun’s eyes and angrily said, “You dare to look at other girls in front of me...? You’re not allowed to!” When she turned around, she was full of smiles once again, “Nice to meet you Little Sister

Xue'er. These few days, we have been bugging Big Brother Yun several times to bring you over. It's no wonder that you're the legendary prettiest woman in Profound Sky Continent. You're definitely the most beautiful person I've ever seen in my life."

At the same time, she added another phrase in her heart: Just one of them, there's still Little Demon Empress... Oh! If the two of them were to stand together, perhaps even the moon would not dare to appear.

“The prettiest woman in Profound Sky Continent, it’s indeed not an exaggeration...” Xiao Lingxi stared at Feng Xue’er in a daze. Looking at this absolute beauty that could even cause Xia Qingyue to pale in comparison, she muttered under her breath as her eyes glinted a complicated glow.

“Xue’er thanks Little Aunt and Big Sister Number Seven for the praise.” Feng Xue’er bowed slightly and smiled sweetly. Her words and smile did not made her seem like the princess of Divine Phoenix Empire... but instead a fairy that walked out

from a fairy tale.

“Che’er, you’re back?”

Xiao Lie’s gentle voice rang out. Compared to how weak he was before, it only took merely half a month before Xiao Lie could steadily walk again. His face glowed with radiance, and his smile came from the depths of his heart. Yun Che held Feng Xue’er’s hand, “Xue’er, this is my Grandfather who had brought me up.”

“Xue’er greets Grandfather Xiao.” Feng Xue’er took a step forward, rolled up her sleeve and performed a full salutation that was expected of a junior.

Xiao Lie examined Feng Xue’er and exclaimed in deep admiration, “Princess Snow is really as your reputation goes. Although our Blue Wind is remote, your name is still commonplace to us. I never expected to actually be lucky enough to meet you one day. It is truly three lifetimes worth of good fortune.”

Feng Xue'er replied with a gentle voice, "To be able to meet Big Brother Yun's grandfather, Xue'er is the one who is truly happy."

"Hahahaha, truly a wonderful child." Xiao Lie heartily laughed, and in his admiration, he also grew fond of her. He did not expect that the most revered Princess Snow of the Divine Phoenix Nation that could cover the heavens with one hand would be such a gentle and lovable person. She did not have any airs about her and was even respectful towards him...

Xiao Lingxi quietly walked to Yun Che's side and grabbed onto the fingers of his right hand. She grabbed them rather tightly as her cheeks puffed up slightly but visibly, "Little Che, you need to tell us clearly, what happened between you and... hmph, Profound Sky's number one beauty Princess Snow! Three years ago, you had gotten into danger because of her, and now, she's actually staying by your side and... and calling you so intimately... hmph."

Her final snort was

exceptionally soft, but Yun Che still heard it clearly. In a soft voice, he replied "This matter... is a bit complicated to explain. If you want to know, you can go and ask your Empress Sis... Little Aunt, are you perhaps... jealous?"

"I am jealous!" Xiao Lingxi pinched Yun Che strongly, pouted her lips, turned around and put on a look as though she was no longer going to care about him.

If it were another girl beside



Yun Che, perhaps she might feel sour about it, but her reaction would not have been so big. However, everything about Princess Snow was just too flawless, and she could overshadow any single girl in the world. From how she intimate she was with Yun Che and how she looked at Yun Che, Xiao Lingxi felt an unprecedented sense of danger in her heart.

Yun Che smirked as he held onto Xiao Lingxi's petite hands and refused to let go. Just as he was about to say something beside her ear, his eyebrows

twitched violently. He turned around and shot his sharp gaze to the distant north.

“Little Che, what’s wrong?” Yun Che’s stiff action and abrupt reaction caused Xiao Lingxi to turn around in a panic as she looked at him and asked worriedly.

Yun Che’s tightly knitted eyebrows slowly relaxed as his gaze returned. Then, he suddenly asked in a soft voice, “Little Aunt, have you seen Fen Juechen during this period of

time?”

“Fen Juechen?” Xiao Lingxi was slightly shocked as she shook her head gently, “After he left that day, he never returned again” Thinking about their arranged battle, her face became full of worries in an instant, “There’s two and a half months left. Do you really have to go then?”

“Mn, there must be a conclusion between me and him. However, Little Aunt does not have to worry at all. After all,

don't forget that I do have the best escape method in this world." Yun Che replied with a face of ease.

Xiao Lingxi's lips trembled slightly. She seemed as though she was about to say something, but then she stopped herself. Eventually, she uttered softly, "No matter what, you must be safe."

"For the coming few days, I'll be staying at home. Xue'er is going to be staying with me. In five days, I'll bring Xue'er with

me to Frozen Cloud Asgard.” Yun Che looked towards the north, and a rare listless expression hung on his face. He had to protect Frozen Cloud Asgard. A small part of it was due to Gong Yuxian’s dying wish, but a larger part was due to what he owed Chu Yuechan.

It had already been five whole years without any news of her. Even Black Moon Merchant Guild provided no results. Now, every time Chu Yuechan’s figure appeared in his mind, his heart felt terrible pain.

Four days later, Divine Phoenix City.

Following the distortion of space, Yun Che returned here once again. Changing into a normal and inconspicuous outfit, he kept his Primordial Profound Ark and entered Black Moon Merchant Guild.

“Hehe, you’re here. Counting the dates, it should probably be around these few days.”

Upon entering the seventh floor

of the Black Moon Merchant Guild, Zi Ji's voice rang beside Yun Che's ears.

“Sir Yun, this way please.”

It was still the same three girls as the last time and the same antique stone table, but this time, Yun Che did not sit in front of Zi Ji. Instead, he immediately went straight to the topic, “Senior Zi, it's been fifteen days. I'm sure senior knows this junior's motive of visit.”

Zi Ji smiled gently, stretched his hand out and pushed three spatial rings that were shining with a purple glow in front of Yun Che, “Here are forty-five thousand kilograms of Purgatory Stone, one hundred fifty kilograms of Flaming Devil Vines that are at least ninety years old, six thousand Rakshasa Heart-destroying Fruits, twelve thousand Skull Seeds, six thousand blades of Soul Withering Grass... all of them are inside. You can check through them.”

Forty-nine materials, regardless whether it was their name, age,



specification or amount, Zi Ji said them without any mistake. Yun Che took the three spatial rings and kept them without even looking, “No need, why would junior not believe Senior Zi.”

As he finished speaking, Yun Che took out his Profound Currency Card and paid the remaining four million purple profound coins.

The millions that he previously owned had been completely used up upon this payment.

“Yun Che, with your strength alone, you actually forced Divine Phoenix Sect into such a state. The old man is truly shocked. Now, even within the four Sacred Grounds, there is no one who does not know your name.” Zi Ji looked at Yun Che and praised.

“Senior Zi is too kind.” Yun Che replied plainly as he did not want to continue on this topic. So, he just changed the topic, “During this visit, junior has one more matter that he needs to rely on Senior Zi for, and this

matter can only be done by your Black Moon Merchant Guild within the shortest time period.”

“Please say.” Zi Ji slightly smiled, looking polite.

“I require three profound cores from high level profound beasts. It would be best if they are Sovereign Profound cores, but if those are too hard to find, Tyrant Profound cores can work as well.” Yun Che said seriously.

Zi Ji tapped the stone table

twice with his fingers and remained silent for a short while before replying, “Sovereign Profound Beasts are already a rarity in this world, and it is extremely difficult to hunt them. A complete Sovereign Profound Beast’s profound core is truly a priceless treasure. Even my Black Moon Merchant Guild would need to go through great lengths to find...”

Yun Che stretched out his palm revealing three shiny Overlord Pellets, “If Senior Zi can help junior find three complete Sovereign Profound Cores, junior is willing to use these

three pellets to exchange for them. If it were Tyrant Profound Cores, then junior is afraid that he can only use profound coins or purple crystals as exchange.”

Yun Che’s words caused Zi Ji’s eyes to shine. He was very clear that if he was able to obtain one additional pellet from Yun Che’s hands, he would be able to develop another young talent. The impact behind this was far superior to that of just owning another Sovereign Profound Core. He immediately nodded with a smile, “Since that’s the case, my Black Moon Merchant Guild will definitely do it’s best.

However, when do you require these three Sovereign Profound Cores?”

Yun Che thought about it and replied, “If junior is not wrong, Senior Zi should also be attending the Devil Sword Conference in four and a half month’s time. Senior Zi can just pass it to junior at that time.”

Zi Ji smiled and nodded. His nod undoubtedly meant that he was also going to attend the Devil Sword Conference, “Speaking of the Devil Sword

Conference, how about we auction the ten pellets that you have entrusted with Black Moon Merchant Guild during the Devil Sword Conference? By then, all of the most pinnacle powerhouses would be gathering together, and the rulers of the sacred grounds will also personally attend the event. If the pellets made by your revered master were to be auctioned off in a normal way, it would be an insult to such heavenly items. However, the Devil Sword Conference would undoubtedly be the most opportune time to auction them.”

“...” Yun Che silently counted the time before replying, “Since that’s the case, let’s just follow what Senior Zi has suggested. Since I don’t have any more matters, this junior shall take his leave.”

Yun Che turned around and was going to leave. However, after walking only three steps, Zi Ji’s voice suddenly rang meaningfully behind him, “Yun Che, have you heard of ‘Illusory Demon Realm’ and their Twelve Guardian Families before?”



Yun Che stopped and turned around, “Of course I’ve heard of Illusory Demon Realm. I’ve also faintly heard about the Twelve Guardian Families. Why is Senior Zi asking me about this?”

“Hehe, just a casual question. I don’t have any other intentions.” Zi Ji’s gaze looked as he sipped a mouthful of tea with a smile on his face.

“...This junior shall take his leave.”

Exiting from Blue Moon Merchant Guild, Yun Che's expression instantly sank. He stood silently at the same spot for some time before summoning his Primordial Profound Ark and returning to Floating Cloud City.

## Chapter 733 – Jasmine's Killing Intent

---

On the morning of the next day, before the sun had risen in the sky and a thick layer of fog still enshrouded Floating Cloud City, Yun Che said his goodbyes to Xiao Lingxi and Xiao Lie before entering the Primordial Profound Ark with Feng Xue'er and locking in the coordinates for the Snow Region of Extreme Ice. He had originally intended to soar in the sky together with Feng Xue'er, bringing her to see all the sights and sounds that Blue Wind Nation had to offer, but at that time, he remembered

Frozen Cloud Asgard's two thousand disciples and the unfinished business he had with them. To help them all undergo a transformation before the Devil Sword Conference was a monumental task in and of itself, so in the end he chose to use the Primordial Profound Ark.

“My clan has spent the last few millennia trying to uncover the secrets of the Primordial Profound Ark, and every single time the ark appeared, we would pour all our energy and effort into investigating it. Every time the Primordial Profound Ark

made its appearance, both the Spirit Earth Hall and Lord Phoenix God would detect an extremely high-level spiritual energy, and they were convinced that there was definitely some enormous treasure hidden on the ark. But who would have thought that the treasure was actually the Primordial Profound Ark itself. It is truly unimaginable.”

Feng Xue'er's eyes roamed across the interior of the Primordial Profound Ark as she took in her surroundings. Right now, both she and Yun Che were within the mysterious ancient

fortress that was inside the Primordial Profound Ark, and she still had very clear memories of this place. Three years ago, when Ye Xinghan was in hot pursuit of her, Yun Che had taken her in his arms and had rushed into this place... and even though her profound energy had been sealed and her entire body was bereft of energy, she had never forgotten a single scene from that day.

“I had always felt that this whole affair was rather mysterious. Even though it belongs to me right now, I do not have a single clue as to its

history or origins. There must still be some mystery that is hidden within it, but I am still in that dark in regards to that as well... but Xue'er, you definitely can't tell anyone about this Primordial Profound Ark, not even your royal father."

"Yes, I understand." Feng Xue'er said as she beamed with joy, "Big Brother Yun, the place we are going to right now, is it really filled with snow?"

"Once you close your eyes, you'll find out." Yun Che said

with a faint smile. The Primordial Profound Ark traveled through space and it only needed a fraction of a second to cross from Floating Cloud City to the Snow Region of Extreme Ice. By the time Feng Xue'er had started the conversation, they were already hovering in the air above the Snow Region of Extreme Ice.

“Close... my eyes?” Feng Xue'er softly mumbled before gently closing her eyes.

Immediately, the air around



them turned chilly as an icy-cold aura assaulted them from all sides. The coldness of the Snow Region of Extreme Ice far surpassed the limit of what a normal person could endure, but for Feng Xue'er, who was at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, it did not cause even a hint of discomfort. But this was also the first time that Feng Xue'er, who had never left the bounds of Divine Phoenix City before, had ever come into contact with cold climates in her life.

The cold air that wreathed her body had been purified by ice

and snow for ten thousand years, and it was so pure that there was not a single trace of impurity. The cold winds that whistled beside her ear seemed to let out a peculiar howl... Feng Xue'er opened her eyes and she dazedly stared at the snow-white world in front of her, her eyes faintly trembling as stars shone within them.

Snow would continue to fall in the Snow Region of Extreme Ice for most of the year, and at this time, the Snow Region of Extreme Ice happened to be covered by a thick layer of powdered snow. The earth was

white, the mountain caps were white, the glaciers were white and even the sky was covered with white snow; one would not even be able to make out the horizon in this place. Feng Xue'er gently extended both her hands and within this pure white world, her jade hands seemed to glow with a luster that was even more pure than the snow itself.

A cluster of fortunate snowflakes landed in the palm of her hand, but after a brief instant, they were melted away by the power of her Phoenix flames. Feng Xue'er anxiously

constricted her profound energy, and immediately after that, the snowflakes began to obediently gather on her palms. It was not long before the snow completely covered her palms, her phoenix clothes and her long hair.

Her arms lightly danced in the air and a veil of snow immediately began dancing with her as well. The joy and wonderment in her eyes was reflected clearly on every single crystalline snowflake.

“I feel like I’m dreaming... To think that such a wonderful place truly existed on this earth.” Feng Xue’er softly mumbled. The year she turned thirteen was also the year that Divine Phoenix City experienced its first ever snowfall, and that was also the most beautiful scene she had ever seen in her life, and it was something that she could never forget. Before she had met Yun Che, her greatest desire was to see snow dancing in the air once more.

And the world of boundless snow that lay before her eyes right now was her very

definition of heaven.

“Wah!!”

Feng Xue'er could not contain her elation any longer and she let out a cry of pure delight. She floated amidst the falling snow as her body was immersed in the endless motes of snow that filled the sky, and her pure and joyous laughter was carried along by the cold winds that surrounded her.

She summoned the Snow

Phoenix Beast and soared up into the flying snow on the wings of the Snow Phoenix Beast as it danced in the sky. She was so delighted that it seemed as if she had entered the realm of her childhood fantasies, “Little White, Big Brother Yun said that this place was where you were born, so now that you’ve come home, you must definitely be very happy, right?”

“Scree...” The Snow Phoenix Beast let out a loud and clear cry as it flapped both its wings and raised a huge curtain of snow in front of Feng Xue’er, eliciting a soft cry of pure delight from

Feng Xue'er.

Yun Che smiled as he looked at the scene unfolding before his eyes. However, what he was looking at was not the snow, but Feng Xue'er. Anyone who had seen Feng Xue'er before would likely state that in this Profound Sky Continent, there was no scenery in existence that would be more beautiful than her. From the moment he met her three years ago to this day, when they were traveling side by side, even Yun Che felt like the whole thing seemed to be a wondrous illusion.



“Three years ago, I thought that I would never be able to fulfill the promise between us.” Yun Che softly mumbled to himself.

“Hmph, one of these days, you really are going to die because of a woman!” Jasmine coldly exclaimed, and she had already said such a thing three times now. She had become more and more convinced that if Yun Che met a terrible end one day, the greatest possibility... no, it would absolutely be because of a woman!

Yun Che's mouth crooked sideways but at this time, Jasmine's voice once again rang out within his soul. However, it was a lot more hushed this time around, "Just like... Big Brother..."

Her words were extremely soft and it seemed as if she mumbled it unconsciously and in a daze. It was so soft that even if you held your ear close to her, you would barely be able to make it. But Jasmine shared a body with him, so no matter how faint it was, the voice of her soul would

always be clearly heard by him. Yun Che immediately said in a stunned voice, “Your brother?”

“.....”

Yun Che felt Jasmine’s aura suddenly fluctuate violently as her mood grew extremely cold, but she did not continue to speak to him. It was clear that she did not feel like speaking about it, and what she said just now was a mere slip of the tongue.

Yun Che thought about it for a moment before continuing, "Actually... because you aren't a guy, you naturally won't understand the world that we live in. For the vast majority of men, being able to conquer the heart of the woman that you desire is more important than conquering the entire world. Even if a man is truly unrivaled under heaven and can look down upon the rest of the world, if he cannot conquer the heart of the woman that he loves, then he is still a failure. He himself will feel the same way as well. Also, protecting your own woman is something that is instinctive for every man; even if they died because of this, they

also would not....”

“Shut your mouth!” Jasmine’s cold rebuke cut off his words and she coldly continued after that, “You think that everybody is the same as you!? My big brother only ever loved one woman in his entire life and he was a serious and devoted lover. He did not even spare a glance for other women, he doesn’t resemble you... a stupid lecher who can risk life for any woman as long as she is beautiful!”

“Oh...” In regards to the label

“stupid lecher” that Jasmine had stuck on him, Yun Che had always accepted it with joy, but after a while, he carefully asked her, “You just said that your brother’s death... was for the sake of protecting the woman that he loved?”

“Protecting?” Jasmine gave a cold laugh but after that, a killing intent suddenly flooded forth. In an instant, it had completely filled Yun Che’s heart and soul, causing him to go cold as a stab of intense pain suddenly sprang from the depths of his soul.

Alarm abruptly arose in Yun Che's heart... this was not the first time he had felt Jasmine's killing intent, but in the seven years that they had spent together, all of the killing intent she had shown before added up together would still not be able to equal the amount of killing intent she had shown in that moment alone. Yun Che could be said to be an expert in killing intent, so he was very clear that the killing intent that Jasmine had shown just now was something that was birthed from an extreme hatred and desire to kill that was carved into one's heart.

“Big Brother was willing to throw even his life away for her sake. But the only thing that he got from that woman was poisonous schemes and manipulation. Big Brother was clearly such a powerful and intelligent person, but because of that woman...” A faint tremble could be heard in Jasmine’s voice as she continued, “One of the reasons that I was willing to take such huge risks and pay such a huge price to obtain the Evil God’s indestructible blood was so that I could kill that woman!!”



“But in the end, you ended up being the final beneficiary!” Jasmine’s voice was still ice-cold, but she had already managed to suppress both her aura and her killing intent, “I don’t feel like talking about it anymore, and you are not allowed to ask as well... and you are definitely never allowed to compare yourself to my big brother ever again, you lecher!!”

“Ah... your brother was so powerful that he has always been regarded as the most perfect person in the world in your eyes. So the woman who caused him to be so devoted to

her, she definitely can't be too far off either, right?" Yun Che asked as he placed a finger on his chin.

Jasmine did not respond.

But Yun Che was more concerned by something else... Jasmine had just said that one of the reasons that she went after the Evil God's indestructible blood at all costs was so she could kill that woman.

Which is to say that... Jasmine

was not able to defeat the person she referred to as “that woman”!?

“Sss...” Yun Che could not help but take in a breath of cold air. A person that was stronger than Jasmine, and a woman to boot...

“There are still two months before your duel with Fen Juechen.” Jasmine forcefully changed the subject and it was clear that she did not want Yun Che to continue pursuing the matter, “Under normal circumstances, if you want to

beat him, there may still be a glimmer of a chance if you use those underhanded and despicable methods of yours. If you face him in a straight fight, you will never be able to win. But right now, there may actually be a way for you to face him straight on.”

“Oh? What method is that?” Yun Che asked in astonishment. He had been thinking about ways to deal with Fen Juechen every single day in anticipation of their duel, and he had come up with some plans already... but none of them included the option of fighting him head-on.

“The method is precisely this Feng Xue’er!” Following the guidance of the voice of Jasmine’s soul, Yun Che’s gaze landed on Feng Xue’er, who was at this very moment cheerfully playing with the Snow Phoenix Beast amidst the flying snow.

Yun Che was stumped, but after he thought about it for a while, he decided to probe further, “You are saying that...”

“It’s very simple, you just need to obtain her Phoenix vital yin!”

Jasmine said calmly, “Even though you are definitely not her opponent right now, she clearly isn’t repulsed by you, so given your various despicable and lecherous ways, this shouldn’t really be a hard thing to do at all.”

“~ ! @# ¥ %...” To think that Jasmine, who repeatedly called him a lecher, who had countless of times sneered at him, despised him and even scolded him for harming women, would actually take the initiative to take a girl’s virgin vital yin! This was definitely the first time it had ever happened, and it

caused Yun Che to be so stunned that he just stood there, staring blankly at the sky for a good long while. His appearance also caused Jasmine's voice to clearly become unnatural as she gave a light snort before saying, "I... I just don't want you to die at the hands of Fen Juechen, that's all!"

"This... I don't think this can be done." Yun Che said rather weakly, "Feng Xue'er's Divine Phoenix power has not completely awakened. Moreover, right now she is still at the crucial stage where her power will quickly awaken after her

Phoenix Soul had been awoken. If she loses her vital yin during this period, the awakening of her Phoenix power will drastically decrease and might even stop there and then. This will heavily affect Feng Xue'er's future. Furthermore, I have also promised Feng Hengkong... that even if Xu'er was willing to do the deed, I still must not do it."

"This is the number one beauty of the Profound Sky Continent we are talking about. A huge lecher like you can actually resist the temptation?" Jasmine snorted in disdain before continuing on calmly, "If it was



anyone else on the Profound Sky Continent who caused her to lose her virgin vital yin, then it would be exactly as you described. But only you are unique... in that you will not only not cause any negative side-effects, but actually cause her Phoenix powers to awaken more quickly!”

“Ah? Really!?” Yun Che’s face was filled with astonishment.

Jasmine slowly said, “There are three bloodlines of divine beasts that exist within your body right

now, with the bloodline of the Dragon God as the main bloodline. The Dragon God's bloodline has gifted you with an enormously strong power and body, as well as a long life, while the Phoenix bloodline and the Golden Crow bloodline has bestowed upon you flames which can destroy everything. Due to the existence of your Dragon God's marrow and the countless cycles of destruction and rebirth that occurred on the Primordial Profound Ark, your Dragon God bloodline has become extremely thick, but even if you added all three of your divine beast bloodlines together, it will still not be as thick as Feng Xue'er's Phoenix

bloodline—because she received the complete legacy and inheritance of one of the Phoenix Souls!”

“And this is also the reason why her strength is so ridiculous at the tender age of nineteen. Besides this, because the Phoenix Soul is limited by the fact that it can only exist in soul form, it was never able to display its full power. But once Feng Xue’er, who has completely inherited its entire bloodline and soul, completely awakens her power, it will not be so simple as her power being equal to the Phoenix Soul. Instead, it

will completely surpass the Phoenix Soul!”

“...So powerful!?” Yun Che said in astonishment. Surpassing the Phoenix Spirit!? The Divine Phoenix Sect’s Phoenix God had a power that was equal to the Little Demon Empress, both of them were half a step into the Divine Profound Realm, and if it was truly as Jasmine had said... then in this world, there would truly be no one who could rival Feng Xue’er!

Furthermore this only required

a scant few decades and it did not seem to have any cruel side-effects like the one that the Little Demon Empress had to endure.

# Chapter 734 – Disobeying The Law Of Heaven

---

“If there are no other complications, she should be the first person in history to have received a complete inheritance from a Phoenix Soul... In other words, it can no longer be called something as simple as an inheritance. It would be more accurate to say that the Phoenix Divine Spirit bestowed its entire being upon a human. For these Divine Spirits, entities who have loftily looked down upon all existence since ancient times, to convert the very last flames of its

existence into power for a pitiful human without leaving even a trace of its existence behind and basically destroying every last shred of dignity and majesty that comes with being a Divine Spirit... This is something that should be impossible for an ancient Divine Spirit to do. So, for the Phoenix Divine Spirit of the Divine Phoenix Sect to do such a thing, there must have been an extremely unique reason behind it.”

A scene that had occurred in the Illusory Demon Realm’s Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley appeared in Jasmine’s

mind; that time when the Golden Crow Divine Spirit had said something absolutely astounding...

“So you’re saying that I... erm, will not create any negative side-effects? What is the reason for that?” Yun Che asked. Clearly this was the matter that he was the most concerned about at the moment!

“It’s because you have the Dragon God’s bloodline along with both the Dragon God’s marrow and the Dragon God’s



soul! Even though your Dragon God inheritance is not as complete as Feng Xue'er's Phoenix inheritance, your body can still be considered a 'body of the Dragon God', so it is compatible with Feng Xue'er's 'body of the Phoenix God'!" Jasmine said calmly and sincerely, "Do you remember how Chu Yuechan, whose profound strength had been crippled and who was at death's doorstep, recovered five years ago? It was only by relying on your Dragon God vital yang that her life was saved and her injuries were healed, and she even had a breakthrough in her profound strength!"

“Feng Xue’er, who possesses the ‘body of the Phoenix God’, is an extremely good training incubator for dual cultivation. The Phoenix vital yin in particular will cause her partner’s body, bloodline, and profound strength to be refined and become more powerful! You, who possesses the ‘body of the Dragon God’, also happen to be an extremely good training incubator for women practicing dual cultivation. Even though you lost your vital yang long ago and your Dragon God power is not as pure as Feng Xue’er’s phoenix power, the plane of the Dragon God’s power still

surpasses that of the Phoenix. Not only will it not contaminate and clog up the Phoenix power that she has yet to fully awaken—it will actually speed up the rate of its awakening and give her an even stronger physique and life force.”

“Presently, the power of your Golden Crow flames far surpasses that of your Phoenix flames because your Golden Crow bloodline is three times thicker than that of your Phoenix bloodline. The level of the Golden Crow’s Record of the Burning World also exceeds that of the World Ode of the Phoenix.

However, if you acquire Feng Xue'er's Phoenix vital yin and continue to have sexual intercourse with her on a regular basis, that situation may end up being completely reversed."

"Ah, so it's like that...." Yun Che's fingers drummed against his chin and, as he digested the meaning of Jasmine's words, his gaze became more and more intense.

"Ah, are you thinking of how to deceive Feng Xue'er so you can

do whatever you want to her?”  
Jasmine asked in a low voice.

“Mn, after all, Xue’er is... Uh, no... I’m not, I’m definitely not!”  
Yun Che shook his head in a flustered manner before assuming an upright and moral stance. “Xue’er is an innocent and pure girl, so how I possibly bring myself to do such a... ah, harmful thing to her! Moreover, even if I really wanted to do something... I can’t win her in the first place.”

“Hmph.” Jasmine gave a cold

smile filled with disdain. Yun Che might be able to deceive everyone else in this world, but he would never be able to trick Jasmine. She continued in a chilly voice, "If you are talking about strength, the Little Demon Empress is ten times stronger than the current Feng Xue'er! And, if you are talking about intelligence and experience, she is more than hundred times greater! If she wanted to kill you, it would be no different from crushing an ant. But, in the end, she was still harmed by the terrible lecher that you are... still harmed..."

Jasmine paused for a long time after that as she was simply unable to find the words that could describe the situation with the Little Demon Empress... After the Little Demon Empress and Yun Che got married, they had spent every single day completely engrossed in each other's bodies and, under Yun Che's "tutelage" and "guidance," the Little Demon Empress, who possessed the greatest profound strength in this world and single-handedly ruled the Illusory Demon Realm, was manipulated to become even more wanton than the most debauched courtesan—only she herself remained unaware of it. She was even under the

impression that these actions were something that a wife ought to be doing in the first place.

During that time, Jasmine spent every single day as red as an apple before she sealed both her senses of sight and hearing in frustration.

“Oh, I get it, I get it.” Yun Che’s eyebrows made an arch before he smiled merrily, “I’m actually not as great as you make me sound. For example, my master Jasmine practically wanted to



kill me just because I hugged her once....”

“Get out!!”

Boom!!

A huge bang resonated in the center of Yun Che’s mind, shaking him so badly that the world seemed to go white.

After that, Jasmine refused to pay any more attention to him.

“Big Brother Yun!!”

Both Feng Xue'er and the Snow Phoenix flew down from above before landing in front of Yun Che. Feng Xue'er's cheeks glowed a warm red as the purest and most flawless smile lit up on her face, “This place is even better than I had imagined it to be. It is practically like the heaven that my royal father spoke of... Big Brother Yun, you... your eyes are really weird... and your smile is strange too.”

“...” Yun Che swiftly masked the strangeness in his eyes and assumed a solemn expression before breaking out into a smile. “Because Xue’er is simply so beautiful that I became mesmerised by you without noticing.” He moved sideways and pointed to the west. “Frozen Cloud Asgard is approximately one hundred kilometers west of here. That is where you can really see the most beautiful sights in the entire Snow Region of Extreme Ice.”

“Mn!” Feng Xue’er nodded her

head vigorously and stretched out her tiny, white jade hand towards Yun Che. “Let Little White take us to Frozen Cloud Asgard then!”

Yun Che took Feng Xue'er's hand and he leaped onto the back of the Snow Phoenix. They raced through the drifting snow and the icy winds, headed towards Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Murong Qianxue, Jun Lianqie and the four others who had received the sound transmission long ago waited at the main

entrance of Frozen Cloud Asgard. When they saw the Snow Phoenix flying in the distance, their beautiful eyes lit up with delight as they flew out to greet them.... Even though Yun Che had only been the master of Frozen Cloud Asgard for a short month, he had already saved them from disaster twice over. His power, charisma, sense of responsibility, and wholehearted benevolence made these ladies of snow and ice feel deep admiration for him, not at all repulsed by his position as a male Asgard Master. The outcome of events between him and the Divine Phoenix Sect had long ago spread far and wide,

causing the entire sect to be filled with even more joy and pride.

Stalks of exotic flowers and rare herbs that looked like icicles bloomed all around Frozen Cloud Asgard. They flickered with a crystalline luminescence and were unimaginably enchanting, causing Feng Xue'er to cry out in delight and wonder. These strange flowers and herbs were nurtured by the purest ice energy. Completely unblemished, they seemed to resemble Feng Xue'er who was also pure and flawless.

Yun Che held Feng Xue'er's hand as they both flew down the back of the Snow Phoenix. They landed in front of Murong Qianxue, Mu Lanyi, Jun Lianqie, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue, and Feng Hanxue. "My fellow Senior Masters and Junior Masters, I have returned."

"We welcome the Asgard Master." Murong Qianxue said as she came forward. She looked at Feng Xue'er who was at Yun Che's side and her beautiful eyes were filled with deep shock. "Asgard Master, who is the girl

at your side?”

“Ah, she’s really pretty.” Feng Hanyue’s lips parted and a small cry of surprise escaped from within.

“Mn... I really want to hug her too.” Feng Hanxue said, nodding her head in approval as she stared at Feng Xue’er without blinking.

They had all come for the sake of welcoming Yun Che back but now all of their attention was



focused on Feng Xue'er. Her charming appearance was something that even these ladies of snow and ice could not help but gasp at in a daze.

Feng Xue'er curtsied as she spoke in a soft, gentle voice, "Divine Phoenix Sect's Feng Xue'er greets the Senior Masters and Junior Masters of Frozen Cloud Asgard."

Even though the girls in front of her all seemed close to her in age and could at most be called older sisters, since Yun Che had

called them Senior Masters and Junior Masters, she had to follow suit.

“Divine Phoenix Sect’s...” This name caused Murong Qianxue and the rest of them to immediately become startled. Besides the Four Sacred Grounds, this was the number one sect in the Profound Sky Continent, a supreme existence that all of the sects within the Seven Nations could only gaze at from below. Immediately, all of them let out a startled cry at the same time. “Princess Snow!?”

“Yup.” Yun Che said bluntly as he nodded his head, “In the coming months, I will remain here and Xue’er will be staying here with me as well. I will put in all my effort into ensuring that the profound strength of all the Senior Masters and Junior Masters, and even the profound strength of all of the Senior Sisters and Junior Sisters, rises by at least an entire realm.”

Yun Che’s words shifted their focus from Feng Xue’er back to him. Yun Che had said the same thing before he left for the Divine Phoenix Sect and, right this moment, he said it again.

Yet those words still managed to stun them completely. Chu Yueli said in a soft voice, “Asgard Master... are you really capable of that?”

It was not that they did not believe Yun Che. The words that he spoke were simply inconceivable. Even the Four Sacred Grounds that had lorded over the realm for ten thousand years were definitely not able to perform such a feat.

Yun Che smiled with confidence as he replied, “Even

though I do not dare to guarantee that mistakes won't be made, I am certain that I will accomplish at least ninety percent of what I set out to do. Senior Master Murong, I will have to trouble you to inform all the Senior Sister and Junior Sisters of my return and what I have just said so that they can prepare themselves. From today onwards, they must stop all of their profound energy cultivation. Instead, they should focus on using the Frozen Heart Art to calm their hearts and stabilize their internal energy."

"Also, please help prepare an

ice pavilion for Xue'er. The closer it is to mine, the better." Yun Che said calmly and righteously.

"Understood... Asgard Master, do we need to convene a grand meeting for our sect?" Murong Qianxue asked.

"No, there is no need to but I request that all the Senior Masters and Junior Masters immediately use the Frozen Heart Art to stabilize their internal energy. Four hours from now I will be waiting for

the six Senior and Junior Masters at Frozen End Divine Hall.”

Yun Che’s words made it clear that he was going to start helping them raise their profound strength from today onwards... and it was going to be an increase of one entire realm!

Their hearts and souls throbbed and they found it hard to keep calm. Three years ago, after Yun Che had opened all of their Profound Entrances, the six of them immediately saw

their profound strength increase by leaps and bounds. All of them entered the Emperor Profound Realm and Murong Qianxue, who was the strongest among them, had even reached the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm. If their profound strength really increased by an entire realm, it would mean that all six of them would become Overlords...

The Tyrant Profound Realm, a realm that they had never even dared to dream of before. It was also a legendary realm that no one had ever entered in the history of Frozen Cloud Asgard.



They had no way of knowing what would happen four hours from now. They also could not imagine what kind of method would allow a Throne to directly transcend boundaries and transform into an Overlord in a short period of time.

Under Yun Che's instructions, the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies returned to their cultivation ice pavilions and used the Frozen Heart Art to stabilize their internal energy.

Yun Che continued to hold Feng Xue'er's hand and, even when they were in front of Murong Qianxue and the others, he had not let go. After they left, Yun Che brought her towards the main gate. "Xue'er, the interior of Frozen Cloud Asgard is also very beautiful. There are many exotic flowers and rare herbs within that you won't be able to see elsewhere. The walls, rooms, and ice lanterns... all of them are made from snow and ice. There are also ice corals of different shapes and sizes. Right, there is also an icy pool that refuses to freeze even in place as cold as this! You will definitely like it here."

“Before, even when I looked at it from far away, I already felt that it was so pretty. I wish that I could stay in such a place forever just to wake up to this sight every day.” Feng Xue’er said in a voice filled with anticipation.

“I happen to be the Asgard Master of this place! Xue’er can naturally come whenever she wants to, but the cold energy in this place may slightly affect the awakening of your Phoenix power.” Yun Che said as he faintly smiled. Cold directly opposed the nature of Phoenix

flames. Given Feng Xue'er's level of strength, however, any negative side effects would be very faint.

“That doesn't matter at all!” Feng Xue'er said as she laughed, looking as if she did not have a single care in the world before she asking curiously. “Oh, right. The six Senior and Junior Masters from earlier all have a profound strength at the Emperor Profound Realm. If their strength was able to increase by one entire realm, then they would enter the Tyrant Profound Realm... does such an awesome method really

exist?”

“We will need to use this.” Yun Che opened his hand upwards. In the center of his palm lay an Overlord Pellet that he had refined the night before.

After he had retrieved the forty-nine different ingredients from the Black Moon Merchant Guild the day before, Yun Che used the Sky Poison Pearl to refine all of them and, in the end, he had managed to refine a full three thousand Overlord Pellets. The entire process had

only taken less than a quarter of an hour.

The value of the Overlord Pellet could clearly be measured from the reactions it got from the Illusory Demon Realm's Twelve Guardian Families and the Profound Sky Continent's Zi Ji. Zi Ji was someone who stood at the highest pinnacle of the Profound Sky Continent and his appraisal of the Overlord Pellet was simply that "one pellet would be able to astound the world". Right now, in Yun Che's possession, there were thousands of them... and every single one of them was of the

highest                      quality                      without  
exception.

Yun Che had no doubt that, within the Profound Sky Continent, these three thousand Overlord Pellets would definitely be called a “violation of natural order”. When further supplemented by Yun Che’s abilities, Frozen Cloud Asgard, which could only be viewed as a middling sect in the Profound Sky continent, would transform into one of the supreme sects within the Profound Sky Continent in the span of a few short months!!

This short time would be equivalent to other sects' foundation and accumulation over the course of several thousand years!!

Moreover, the Sky Poison Pearl, which was ranked among Heavenly Profound Treasures, was already considered a heaven defying artifact. It was natural that it could easily produce such items which "violated the natural order". This was the single best way that Yun Che could think of in order to raise the power of Frozen Cloud



Asgard in the shortest amount of time.

Feng Xue'er used her fingers to pick up the Overlord Pellet and, after she used her profound energy to lightly probe it, astonishment flooded her face. "Ah! What a powerful medicine. It is even more powerful than the most precious medicine within my family, the Rising Phoenix Pellet. Furthermore... it feels like it is very hard to control the medicinal strength of this medicine. Just how are we going to use this to raise profound strength... Well, since Brother Yun said that it could,

then it will definitely be able to.”

“You will know when the time comes. Let’s go, I’ll bring you on a tour around Frozen Cloud Asgard.”

“Mn!”

# Chapter 735 – Murong Qianxue

---

After bringing Xue'er around Frozen Cloud Asgard, they then arrived at the Frozen End Divine Hall. Murong Qianxue and the rest were already waiting for them there.

The door to the Frozen End Divine Hall was destroyed by Sun Moon Divine Hall's Ye Qingsheng and Ye Ziyi, and could no longer be closed. In this short span of time, Yun Che was unable to find any way to repair it either. After entering the

Frozen End Divine Hall, the first thing he did was to erect a profound barrier with all his might, because the thing he was about to do next, definitely could not receive any outside interference.

“Asgard Master, we are already prepared,” Murong Qianxue solemnly said.

“Alright.” Yun Che stood in front of the six people and roughly sensed their profound aura, nodding, “The method I’m about to use to raise your

profound strengths is definitely not that mysterious as you think. If I were to describe it, it's actually very simple... and that's to forcefully lift your profound strength through the use of medical pellets of sufficient strength."

After finishing his words, Yun Che was already holding onto a Overlord Pellet in his hand.

At that moment, the extremely powerful medicinal energy of the Overlord Pellet was emitted out, and in merely an instant, it

filled every corner of the Frozen End Divine Hall. The Frozen End Divine Hall was located beneath Frozen Cloud Asgard, and was colder than any other place in Frozen Cloud Asgard. However, following after the pervasion of the Overlord Pellet's medicinal energy, the air actually began to carry an evident sultry feeling.

The mental spirits of the six girls shook, and even the ice spirits that were naturally fluttering around their bodies were acting abnormally under the influence of the medicinal energy.

This was merely the medicinal force of a single medicinal pellet, yet it could actually be powerful to such an extent; something that they had completely never even seen or heard of before. Murong Qianxue stretched out her fingers, and when her fingertips were in contact with the Overlord Pellet, she shortly retracted them, as though she had been shocked by electricity, exclaiming, “Such tyrannical medicinal power!”

The girls of Frozen Cloud were already astonished by the

unbelievably powerful medicinal energy in the first place, and Murong Qianxue's reaction caused their shock to intensify. Chu Yueli asked, "Asgard Master, just what is this?"

"Its name is Overlord Pellet, and it is refined with forty-nine types of extremely violent and intensive ingredients. It contains an extremely concentrated and high level energy inside it. If one is able to completely absorb and assimilate the energy inside it into their profound veins, then they will be able to raise their profound strength to an extremely high degree. After



that, they can use the next several months to stabilize their foundation,” Yun Che explained.

“So that’s the case! With such a powerful medicinal energy, its effects must be really incredible as well!” Feng Hanyue excitedly said.

“Asgard Master...” Murong Qianxue’s brows lightly knitted. Taking a step forward, she cautiously said, “The energy within this Overlord Pellet is indeed incomparably astonishing. Earlier, although I

had only probed it for a short moment, I'm absolutely certain that if all of the energy inside it is released, it's enough to destroy our entire Frozen Cloud Asgard in an instant."

"Ah!!" Feng Hanyue let out an astonished cry, while Chu Yueli and the rest had surprised expressions as well.

"It's not that we are depreciating ourselves, with such a powerful medicinal energy, even though it had turned very docile from the

refinement process, it's still definitely not something we can absorb with our current level. If we were to take it in directly, not only is it impossible to raise our profound strength, it might even bring about some extremely serious consequences."

Murong Qianxue's profound strength was the strongest out of the six. With her assertion, it was not even needed to mention the five other girls.

Yun Che did not deny it as he instantly nodded, "Senior

Master Murong is right. Among the forty-nine ingredients used to refine the Overlord Pellet, none of them does not contain energy that's not tyrannical and violent. In the first place, it's mainly used to break through a realm bottleneck when one encounters it during cultivation. If one tries to forcefully take in the energy within, even Senior Master Murong, who possesses the strongest profound strength here, will suffer serious injuries. And if it's Hanyue and Hanxue, whose profound strength are slightly weaker, it might even result in the destruction of their profound veins."

“Ah...” Feng Hanyue once again let out a soft cry.

“Why does Asgard Master refer Senior Sister Murong as Senior Master Murong, but call us Hanyue and Hanxue?” Feng Hanxue softly said.

“I don’t know... In any case, Asgard Master has never referred to us as junior masters.” Feng Hanyue pouted, “He must be thinking that we’re easy to bully.”

“Since that’s the case... Asgard Master, I believe you must have long thought of a foolproof plan,” Jun Lianqie said. Yun Che’s words did not disappoint them, rather, it had made their expectations rise even more.

“Of course.” Yun Che gripped the Overlord Pellet in his hand, and then he said with complete assurance, “Though the medicinal power of the Overlord Pellet is extremely ferocious, with my unique profound energy and my understanding of medicinal knowledge, it’s possible for me to completely control it! In regards to its

effects, you will find out immediately.”

“Senior Master Murong, we will first start with you then.”

If it's purely the usage of one's own profound energy, even Yun Che would find it a bit strained to guide the medicinal energy inside the pellet to break through a bottleneck. And to aid someone in forcefully absorbing all of the energy within the Overlord Pellet... it could be said that in the entire Profound Sky Continent, not a single person

would be able to do so, and that included the masters of the Four Great Sacred Grounds!

However, it was possible for Yun Che, because he possessed the Sky Poison Pearl! When it came to controlling medicinal energy, under the heavens, there was nothing else that could surpass the Sky Poison Pearl in that regard!

If it could be done flawlessly on the most difficult of medicinal energy control, then adding Yun Che's profound energy guidance



and nourishment from nature's essence, it definitely wouldn't be too troubling of a task to have an Emperor Profound physique completely absorb the energy of the Overlord Pellet.

Upon being called, Murong Qianxue stood forward, sat in front of Yun Che and took the Overlord Pellet off Yun Che's hand. Earlier, she had personally probed into the terror of its medicinal energy. If she were to swallow it down directly just like that, the consequences would be simply disastrous. However, because of her trust towards Yun Che, her expression

was very calm, “Asgard Master, do I immediately eat it now?”

“Wait a minute.” Yun Che once again stretched out his hand, took out another four Overlord Pellets and placed them altogether into Murong Qianxue’s hands. “Take all five of them together!”

“Ah!?” Murong Qianxue was stunned for a moment, and the faces of the other five girls were filled with disbelief as well. With the medicinal energy of the Overlord Pellet, just a single

pellet was enough to destroy a Throne. If one were to swallow five pellets at the same time... wouldn't that mean that even one's entire body would be burnt away in an instant?

“Senior Master Murong, be at ease. I will definitely not do something that will harm Senior Master Murong... If I don't have sufficient confidence myself, even if a crisis is occurring before my eyes, I will definitely not choose this method!” Yun Che nodded towards Murong Qianxue and spoke with an incomparably stern tone.

Murong Qianxue's astonishment and doubt merely lasted for a short three breaths of time, and then, under Yun Che's gaze, she slowly nodded. Raising her jade-like hand, her beautiful lips opened, and then she swallowed all five Overlord Pellets in an instant.

Jun Lianqie, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue, Feng Hanxue, as well as Feng Xue'er who was by Yun Che's side, all had taut heartstrings; their six alluring snow-white faces carried deeply tensed

expressions... Because with just a single and lightest mishap, Murong Qianxue's profound veins would be crippled, and at the heaviest, she would lose her life. With worry and anxiety at this intensity, even the hopes of possibly achieving the Tyrant Profound had been completely suppressed.

On the contrary, Murong Qianxue slowly closed her eyes, her snow-white face was still as cold as profound ice.

“Alright...” Yun Che took a deep

breath and stretched out both of his hands; in his palms, profound energy and nature's essence surged at the same time. "Senior Master Murong, this entire process will take about four to six hours. Within this period of time, you best maintain a state that is as calm as water. No matter what kind of changes occur in your body, you must definitely not circulate your profound energy."

"The moment I release the medicinal energy within the five Overlord Pellets, you will sense countless of profound energy flowing haphazardly in your

body. A part of these profound energy will charge out of your body, so... fellow Senior Masters and Junior Masters, it will be best to stand a little further away in order to prevent sustaining any injuries. Also..."

Yun Che paused for a moment as his brows slightly sank, his expression and tone turned especially stern and righteous, "Senior Master Murong, because you are unable to circulate your profound energy to protect your body, the snow robe on your body will also be completely annihilated by the bursting flow of profound energy. When that

time comes, you must focus your state of mind, do not be flustered.”

“...!!” Murong Qianxue, who even carried a calm expression when she directly swallowed the five Overlord Pellets, instantly opened her eyes wide; the light in her eyes stirred with hints of panic... Earlier, Yun Che said that the entire process would take four to six hours, wouldn't that mean... she would have to be facing Yun Che naked for such a long period of time!?



The girls of Frozen Cloud were icy and pure their entire lives; even the lightest of contact with males in the outside world were extremely small in number. Three years ago, when her back had to be bare while Yun Che opened her profound veins, it had already caused her to feel troubled and unsettled whenever she saw Yun Che in the following months. Whenever she occasionally recalled it, her heart would fluster for a moment as well.

If she had to face him while naked for four to six hours... She was simply unable to imagine it!

But the five Overlord Pellets had already been consumed; even if she wanted to quit now, it was no longer possible. Furthermore, Yun Che did not give her, nor the other Frozen Cloud girls, time to respond and regret. One of his hands pressed onto Murong Qianxue's chest, while the other was pressed on her lower abdomen. Then, he quickly said, "Xue'er, guard me. Before I'm done, do not allow anyone to approach or interrupt."

"Mn, I understand." Feng

Xue'er defended by Yun Che's side. With her present, Yun Che could completely focus on his task, without anything to worry.

When Yun Che's voice fell, his profound energy and nature's essence, like two calm but majestic streams, poured into Murong Qianxue's body. The mystical energy of the Sky Poison Pearl was poured in along with Yun Che's profound energy as well, and with a gentle, incomparably calm method, it slowly released the medicinal energy within the five Overlord Pellets.

In an instant, Murong Qianxue clearly sensed an incomparably powerful hurricane of profound energy swirling within her own body, and then, it turned into countless streams of profound energy, charging into every single corner and every single one of her meridians in her body...

Whooosh!!!

A non-trembling, yet incomparably dull roar suddenly rang within the Frozen End

Divine Hall. There emerged a formless and colorless hurricane of profound energy, but it was evidently distorting the surrounding space, swirling up around Murong Qianxue's body. In a mere instant, it had completely minced away the entire snow robe on her body. The shockwave of the spilled over profound energy quickly dispersed, blowing Chu Yueli and the rest, who were caught off caught, a dozen meters away.

The faces of the girls all lost their color. Although they had thought that the energy contained within the five

Overlord Pellets would definitely be extremely frightening, they had never expected that it would actually be frightening to such an extent. The medicinal energy had only just been released, and it was merely a shockwave from the energy that was spilled over, yet, it was actually powerful to such an astonishing extent! The force of energy Murong Qianxue's body was bearing... was simply unimaginable!!

Their worries had very quickly turned into a much deeper astonishment... Murong Qianxue's snow robe was minced into shreds, and not a single

strand of it was left on her body. However, the surface of her body was not the least bit injured, only her face was slightly dyed red; clearly, there weren't any hints of her having suffered internal injuries.

“Her clothes... were really completely shredded away.” Feng Hanxue held her chest with her two hands, her face completely tensed.

“Shh... Don't speak.” Feng Hanyue hurriedly reached out her hand and covering her lips.

With her snow robe completely shredded, Murong Qianxue's brows twitched, her breathing and heartbeat instantly turned hurried, her mind entered a state of panic, and her mental energy was even incomparably focused on the changes in her body. She slightly opened her eyes and looked straight at Yun Che who was merely a shoulder-length away from her, only to realize that his brows were tightly knitted, his expression was heavy, and his breathing was even more so as calm as still water. Not only did he not reveal a hint of lust because of her completely shredded snow robe,



even his eyes were tightly closed.

Murong Qianxue took in a light breath, closed her eyes and quickly went into a focused state.

Following after the successive releases of medicinal energy, the streams of profound energy in her body grew. And apparently, every single one of these thousands of profound energy streams was much stronger compared to the profound energy she could release with her full strength! It was hard to

imagine that such a small medicinal pellet could actually release energy of this level. Furthermore, all of these energy didn't truly belong to her own body, so if they were to go out of control within her body, merely a single stream would be enough to heavily injure her. And with so many of them, if all of them were to go out of control, she was certain that... in just a few breaths of time, it would already be enough for her to die from self-explosion.

Similarly, just a single stream of external profound energy like these was extremely hard to

control. However, she could clearly sense that although the profound energy were circulating at extreme speeds in her body, not a single one of them was moving haphazardly. It was as though all of them were being firmly controlled by an incomparably mystical force, not even letting a single one of them to run amuck. She could faintly sense the existence of this mystical energy, yet she was unable to perceive just what kind of energy it was in the slightest.

In addition, there was another stream of energy that was as

calm as a gentle breeze, gradually latching onto every single one of the profound energy streams coming from the Overlord Pellet, causing these profound energy to quickly slow down, and actually making them gentler and grow in affinity. Then, every single one of these profound energy streams was released and dispersed, turning into even smaller profound energy streams. And not only did these dispersed profound energy streams fail to cause any damage to her body, they were actually refining her profound channels while flowing through them... Finally, all of the streams gathered towards her profound

veins.

Two hours passed. The medicinal energy of all five Overlord Pellets were released, and the hurricane of profound energy surrounding Murong Qianxue expanded once again. And at this moment, Yun Che's hands finally moved. They began to slowly shift across Murong Qianxue's body, from her collarbone, to her shoulder, and then to her left abdomen... And with every single shift, they would stop for a hundred breaths of time or so, and every stopping point of his palms were where her profound entrances

were.

“Senior Sister’s profound aura... is rising!” Jun Lianqie involuntarily let out a soft cry. With incomparable clarity, every single one of them sensed that whenever Yun Che’s palm moved to the next position on Murong Qianxue’s body, her profound strength would always quickly rise a notch higher.

“And it’s even an increase of a very large degree.” Mu Lanyi softly said as her pair of beautiful eyes looked at Murong

Qianxue unblinkingly... By now, all of their focus were no longer on Murong Qianxue's naked body.

And at this moment, a white fog suddenly rose around Murong Qianxue's jade body. Several dozens of ice spirits suddenly appeared in the air before quickly dispersing. The entire Frozen End Divine Hall was suddenly filled with cold air that came from an unknown source, which then condensed in an instant.

“She broke through, Senior Sister made a breakthrough!!” Although Chu Yueli had been suppressing herself with all her might all this while, at this moment, she still wasn’t able to contain herself from letting out her voice.

As fellow junior and senior sisters of the same sect, all of them could clearly sense that Murong Qianxue’s profound strength had undergone a change at that instant earlier... From the eighth level of the Emperor Profound Realm, she directly made a breakthrough into the ninth level of the



## Emperor Profound Realm!!

And merely two hours had passed!

And this rise in profound strength had only just begun. Under the gaze of the girls who did not dare to shift their eyes away for even a moment, another fifteen minutes had passed, and an ice fog that was even colder than the one earlier floated above Murong Qianxue's body... which was then accompanied by another change in her profound aura.

She broke through to the tenth level of the Emperor Profound Realm!!

“Heavens! Asgard Master really did not lie to us. Senior sister Murong doesn’t look as though she’s suffering from even the least bit of injuries, yet... yet her profound strength is making consecutive breakthroughs as though it’s a dream... Perhaps it’s true... perhaps it’s possible to reach the Tyrant Profound Realm.” Feng Hanxue covered her lips with both of her hands, unable to prevent herself from

speaking softly. Her two beautiful eyes were even more so flashing with crystal-like glow.

“But of course, when has Asgard Master ever lied to us!” Feng Hanyue was adopting the same exact posture as Feng Hanxue... Her two small hands tightly held onto her tender lips.

Their inner hearts were astonished and excited, intense to the point where it was no longer possible to express them in words.

Yun Che's palm once again moved. This time, his left and right hands separately pressed onto the left and right Jadepool Entrances...

To put it more bluntly, Yun Che's two hands... were firmly grasping onto Murong Qianxue's breasts.

Murong Qianxue's entire body lightly shook, as though she was jolted by electricity. In an instant, her beautiful eyes opened... and at the same time, Yun Che's two eyes, which had

been closed the entire time, slightly opened as well. Their eyes instantly made contact. The light in Murong Qianxue's eyes trembled as she dodged his gaze at lightning speed. Then, she tightly closed her eyes again, not daring to open them once more. The clear sense of touch on her body made her heart panic, unable to calm down.

The surrounding Frozen Cloud girls had long widened their beautiful eyes and were close to voicing out at the same time.

“Calm your heart down, do not have unnecessary thoughts!”

Within Murong Qianxue's heart, Yun Che's profound energy sound transmission sounded. Her soul shook as she hurriedly adjusted her breathing, removing all unnecessary thoughts and placed her focus on her internal energy with all her might.

As for Yun Che himself... After he opened a slit of his eyes, he had never closed them since. His two eyes concentrated on

Murong Qianxue's chest, as though he was greedily disgracing her snow-jade skin.

The snow robes of Frozen Cloud Asgard were all slightly constraint, and when she was in her snow robe, Murong Qianxue's chest area had always been perked up; as such, it was imaginable just how bountiful they were under her snow robe... Though Yun Che had once seen her body at the Frozen Cloud Wintry Spring back then, it was merely a short glance, and with the cover from the night, he did not manage to see them too vividly. Only today did he

astonishingly realize that Murong Qianxue actually possessed a pair of such bountiful, large globes. His five fingers were already spread to the widest, yet he had only managed to grasp half of it.

Among all of the women Yun Che had experienced with, even the most bountiful Chu Yuechan and Cang Yue both paled in comparison.

Let alone Little Demon Empress who could only barely compete with Jasmine.



Not only were they huge, even their bounciness were extremely fine and soft. The jade-snow balm was filled with the traces of his fingers, and even when he consecutively and quietly exerted some force into them, he still failed to firmly grasp them; the sensation he felt was even more so silky like touching pearl powder. Yet, under her chest muscle, her body was exceptionally slender, revealing her curvature...

“What nonsense are you thinking about!? Hurry and

concentrate!!”

While his mind was swaying, Yun Che's palms inadvertently made a rubbing motion, when suddenly, Jasmine's cold shout rang in his consciousness, causing his entire body to quiver. He quickly threw away all lustful thoughts, contained his emotions and placed all of his focus on the control and guidance of the medicinal energy... His forehead was close to dripping with lines of cold sweat.

...He had actually been distracted!!

If Jasmine had not woken him up from his senses, he would have been close to losing control of a portion of the medicinal energy.

“At such an important time, dirty thoughts could still sprout in his mind, he’s simply... simply incurable!” Jasmine angrily muttered to herself, “And, he could clearly execute control from her back, yet he just had to do it from the front! This

despicable, shameless and  
perverted sex fiend!”

“Awh...” Hong’er, who had slept the entire day, was woken up by Jasmine’s furious condemning voice. She half-opened her sleepy eyes, let out a lazy yawn and drowsily said, “Big Sis Jasmine, you seem to be angry. Did Master do something wrong again?”

“...It’s something a child shouldn’t know. You’re not allowed to look outside, be obedient and go back to sleep.”

Jasmine's little face was filled with seriousness.

“Ou...” Hong'er obediently responded in compliance as her body rolled up like a kitten, and the moment she tilted her head, she was back to sleeping soundly.

## Chapter 736 – Success

---

The growth in Murong Qianxue's profound aura continued, and not only did it not gradually slow down, it was even growing at a faster rate. Another fifteen minutes had passed, and the streams of profound energy surrounding Murong Qianxue suddenly turned calm, and then bit by bit, it eventually stopped. Suddenly, the streams, which were driven towards the entire Frozen End Divine Hall, reversed and wildly poured into her body.

“What’s going on?” Chu Yueli said in alarm.

The pouring of profound energy streams grew faster, as though the profound energy within the entire space, or even within the entire heaven and earth, were gathering at Murong Qianxue. Murong Qianxue’s eyelashes began to tremble, and a layer of ice-blue radiance slowly appeared around her body. Under the radiance, her skin gradually turned crystal clear like that of the purest flawless white snow. Then faintly,, a glorious icy glow, which only a thousand year

profound ice could possibly have, could be seen flowing about. Even her initially ink-black long hair had gradually turned into a shallow ice-blue color. It was as though her entire body, at this moment, had now truly possessed what could be called skin of ice and bones of jade.

“This... This is...” The girls of Frozen Cloud were all stunned... The changes in Murong Qianxue’s body were not foreign to them. Whenever Xia Qingyue unleashed the seventh stage of the Frozen End Divine Arts, her body would undergo such a



change. In this state, the power of the ice profound arts she used would surge explosively. However, they had only seen such a phenomenon on Xia Qingyue's body; it had never appeared on anyone else, and it had never appeared in the records of Frozen Cloud Asgard either.

At this moment, an ice-blue colored radiance was suddenly released from Murong Qianxue's body, illuminating the entire Frozen End Divine Hall in a blue luster. Within the silence, layers upon layers of thick ice sheets quickly condensed on the Frozen

End Divine Hall's walls and ground. In a blink of an eye, it turned this stone room, which was made of Heavenly Firm Jade, into a room of ice. In the air, glowing white spots shone, before turning into dancing ice spirits one after another; these ice spirits were far different from the ice spirits they were familiar with. The profound aura and the presence of life emitted by every one of these ice spirits were incomparably rich, as though they were independent creatures, complete with their own lives; even the laughter they made as they danced about could be faintly heard.

These ice spirits willfully flew and danced within the Frozen End Divine Hall, sprinkling down dancing snowflakes. And then, as though they were being attracted by something, all of them flew towards Murong Qianxue and assimilated into her icy jade body. Murong Qianxue's blue hair fluttered in the air, and at this moment, the ice-blue radiance being emitted from her body turned extremely dense. Even though it looked calm and gentle, it was near blinding to the eyes.

“Senior Master Murong... has completed a great realm breakthrough!” Feng Xue’er lightly called out.

If not because of being afraid of startling Yun Che, their emotions would have long been completely out of control. The moment the ice-blue radiance on Murong Qianxue’s body reached its peak, every single one of them could clearly sense that Murong Qianxue’s profound aura had undergone a complete, qualitative change. Even though it was the Frozen Cloud aura they were extremely familiar with, it was unbelievably rich,

deep and vast. It far surpassed former Asgard Master Gong Yuxian's, and had even far surpassed Xian Qingyue's; someone who had already reached half-step into the Tyrant Profound Realm early on... In their entire lifetime, they had never felt a Frozen Cloud aura that had reached such a high realm.

“It's the Tyrant Profound Realm... Our Frozen Cloud Asgard's first Overlord in history!” Mu Lanyi forcefully held onto her lips, not allowing herself to lose control and shout out with an overly loud voice.

The light stirring in her beautiful eyes looked as though they were close to condensing into tears.

“An incredible miracle... Asgard Master has really done it.”

Chu Yueli's lightly raised her jade finger and did a hushing action, causing the girls to immediately lower their voices. With all her might, she suppressed herself from letting out another hint of sound, however, her expression still

looked so excited to the point of losing control.

Even if they already had incomparable trust and respect towards Yun Che, when it came to the matter of being able to directly raising one's profound strength by a single great realm in a short amount of time, it was still something they couldn't help but doubt... A few years back, when Xia Qingyue became a Throne because of the Emperor Awakening Heart Lotus, it was already a miracle that had never once happened before in the Profound Sky Continent. To directly raise a

Throne into an Overlord, within the boundaries of the entire Profound Sky Continent, it was simply an overly exaggerated myth.

It was a million times more incredible than the time when he had said that he could open all of their profound entrances back then.

Three years ago, he brought about a miracle for the entire Frozen Cloud Asgard by allowing the profound strength of the Frozen Cloud's Seven



Fairies to rise rapidly in just a short few years, which then made their future achievements unforeseeable.

And now, he once again brought another miracle upon miracles for Frozen Cloud Asgard!

At the same time, they recalled what Grand Asgard Master, Feng Qianhui, had said before. If Frozen Cloud Asgard could make it through the thousand year great tribulation, then it would definitely flourish for the next

ten thousand years.

And right now in front of them, Yun Che, whom their eyes were tightly fixated on, might... no, he was definitely the person who would bring Frozen Cloud Asgard to a flourishing ten thousand years!

Murong Qianxue's rise in profound strength did not stop right after her breakthrough into the Tyrant Profound Realm, rather, it continued to rapidly soar. Furthermore, the increase was evidently growing faster. A

snowy mist floated on her body  
as ice spirits flew and danced  
about. Her profound aura was  
breaking through the limits with  
every breath...

First level of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm...

Second level of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm...

Third level of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm...

Fourth level of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm...

Fifth level of the Tyrant  
Profound Realm!!

The Frozen Cloud girls were passing through every moment with an astonishment of an extreme degree. To them, breaking through into the Tyrant Profound Realm was already a dream-like miracle. Never did they think that achieving the Tyrant Profound Realm was actually just the beginning. In just less than two

short hours, Murong Qianxue's profound aura continued to surge explosively from the first level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, leading to consecutive breakthroughs, from the first level, to the second level... third level... fourth level...

Only after the fourth breakthrough, and after rising up to mid stage of the fifth level, did it finally slowly come to a stop.

In just a short five hours, Murong Qianxue broke through

to become a level five Overlord from a level eight Throne!

The aura on Murong Qianxue's body began to sink, and the cold air was dispersing bit by bit as well. At this moment, Yun Che's hands slowly moved away from Murong Qianxue's body, his chest undulated as he forcefully exhaled. The girls' eyes also shifted from Murong Qianxue to Yun Che; evidently, the feelings of excitement on every single one of their snow-white faces were already intense to the point of being indescribable with words, and the eyes they used to stare at Yun Che were filled with

luster, as though they were looking up to a god.

Yun Che slowly opened his eyes. Following after the relaxation of his body and mind, a large amount of sweat fell off Yun Che's forehead like rain, and his breathing turned especially hurried.

Three years ago, when he opened the profound entrances for the girls of Frozen Cloud, the entire process was incomparably easy; the amount of fatigue added up was merely a few

breaths of time. During the rest of the time, he was mostly touching their jade backs wantonly, taking advantage of them in a justified manner, and the exhausted expression he had at the end was purely an act.

However, it was different this time, as during the entire process, he had to focus his mind and soul. Profound energy, the power of the Great Way of the Buddha, the power of the Sky Poison Pearl, and mental energy... All these had to be made use of, and during the four hours or so, he did not dare to have a moment of rest. If not for



him possessing the Dragon God Soul, allowing his mental energy to far surpass an average person's, it was simply impossible to maintain one's concentration for such a long time with such a large loss of mental energy.

The consumption of profound energy was especially large as well. This time, the fatigued-state he had after completion was completely genuine.

Fortunately, everything went smoothly just like how he

imagined, while the effects of five Overlord Pellets had far surpassed his predictions. After all, although they were similarly referred to as Overlord Pellets, the Overlord Pellet refined by Yun Che with the Sky Poison Pearl, whether it was the medicinal energy or effectiveness, had several times surpassed the Overlord Pellet refined by Duke Baoqing Palace of Illusory Demon Realm.

However, to have five Overlord Pellets achieve such an astonishing feat, in the Profound Sky Continent, this could only be done by Yun Che who

possessed the Sky Poison Pearl. If it was anyone else, even if ten thousand Overlord Pellets were to be passed to him, it would definitely be impossible to increase a person's profound strength from mid stage Emperor Profound Realm to mid stage Tyrant Profound Realm in five short hours.

“The time spent was roughly the same as my predictions.” Yun Che opened his eyes, and a relaxed smile surfaced on his sweat-filled face as his calm yet focused gaze landed on Murong Qianxue. A pair of large snowy peaks like a heap of lustering

jade was trembling up and down as she breathed. As long as he raised his hands, even without moving his body forward, he could once again firmly grasp them in his hands.

Murong Qianxue's beautiful eyes had already opened as well. Raising her jade arm, her eyes were trembling and blurry as she felt the majestic profound aura flowing in her body... For a moment, she simply wasn't able to believe that this power was actually hers.

And, other than the dream-like feeling of obtaining a new leash on life throughout her entire body, there wasn't a single bit of discomfort... It was as though there wasn't the least bit of side effects.

“Congratulations, Senior Master Murong. Not only have you become an Overlord, you're even at the middle stages,” Feng Xue'er smilingly said.

“Senior Sister... This is wonderful, wonderful!”

“Congratulations Senior Sister Murong for becoming an Overlord... The first Overlord in Frozen Cloud Asgard’s history, surpassing the Frozen Cloud Ancestor of a thousand years ago!” Mu Lanyi excitedly said.

Under the intense excitement and unsuppressable joy, Murong Qianxue’s transformation had truly proven that Yun Che’s “astonishing words” earlier weren’t the least bit untrue, rather, it had turned out to be much more astonishing than what he had described! Because, not only had Murong Qianxue broken through and became an

Overlord, she had actually directly stepped into the middle stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm!

And this also meant that with Yun Che's help, their profound strength could also miraculously rise by leaps and bounds, just like Murong Qianxue.

Crossing through a great realm and the dream-like growth in profound strength, naturally, no one other than Murong Qianxue herself could sense it ever so clearly and vividly. With all her

might, she suppressed her unquellable excitement, moved from her sitting posture into a kneel, and fully bowed towards Yun Che, "Asgard Master, thank you for bestowing another grace of transformation. Asgard Master's grace is difficult to repay even with this Murong Qianxue's poor lifetime."

"Senior Master Murong, you must not be this polite." Yun Che hurriedly stepped forward and grabbed onto her jade arm, "Since I have been entrusted the duty of being the Asgard Master of Frozen Cloud Asgard by the former Asgard Master, then, no



matter what I do for the Frozen Cloud Asgard, it is something that should be done.”

“Senior Sister... Murong,” Feng Hanyue could not help but voice out. Then, she spoke with a soft and timid voice, “Don’t you want to... wear some clothes first?”

Murong Qianxue’s body shivered, and only then did she recall that her entire body, at the moment, didn’t have the least bit of cover. Letting out a low “eek” sound, her two arms

covered her chest at lightning speed. She opened her jade palm, but the spatial ring on her finger was also destroyed by the swirl of profound energy earlier...

Chu Yueli hurriedly took out a snow robe, stepped forward and placed it on Murong Qianxue's body. Although Murong Qianxue was maintaining her calm with all her might, her actions of wearing the snow robe was evidently panicky. When she had finally worn it properly, a layer of light glow, which had seemingly never appeared before, emerged on her snow-

like face.

Yun Che's eyes trembled as he gave Feng Hanyue a ruthless glare... It's all your fault! Would it kill you not to remind her!?

“Cough.” Yun Che let out a heavy cough and said with a stern look, “Senior Master Murong, your profound strength has consecutively risen by seven realms, and you have even crossed the divide of a great realm in the middle of it. You should know that with a breakthrough of such a large

degree, it will definitely bring about a loose foundation, and a period of time is also needed to once again familiarize yourself in controlling your profound energy. So, for the next two months, Senior Master Murong, you must definitely solidify your foundation with all your might; the amount of profound energy being circulated cannot surpass seventy percent as well.”

“I understand.” Murong Qianxue was, after all, still a Frozen Cloud Fairy, so her expression was already completely calm... Though in regards to how she felt in her

heart, only she would know best.

“It has gotten slightly late today, tomorrow, I will refine the Overlord Pellets for Senior Master Jun and Senior Master Mu, so as to aid the Senior Masters in breaking through into the Tyrant Profound Realm,” Yun Che said while looking at Jun Lianqie and Mu Lanyi. With his current profound strength and mental strength, he could manage to go through the process twice, but three times would be a little strained.

“Thank you, Asgard Master,” Jun Lianqie and Mu Lanyi replied at the same time.

“The profound energy possessed by fellow Senior Masters and Junior Masters are grand and rich, and hence refining five Overlord Pellets at the same time is tolerable. In terms of profound cultivation, at the very most, it can be risen up to the fifth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, and this is also the limit that can be achieved by the medicinal energy of the Overlord Pellet. Above the fifth

level of the Tyrant Profound Realm, no matter how many more Overlord Pellets are used, it's impossible to rise any further. Once all six fellow Senior Masters and Junior Masters have achieved the Tyrant Profound Realm, I will then proceed to open the profound entrances of all senior sisters and junior sisters in the sect, and then, according to their cultivation levels and physiques, I will refine a single half to two Overlord Pellets, allowing them to at least improve by a single great realm."

Yun Che used a calm tone while

he spoke of matters that was capable of dumbfounding any sect in the Profound Sky Continent.

“But, Asgard Master. Won’t this delay your own cultivation a lot?” Feng Hanxue said out of concern.

“It won’t.” Yun Che shook his head and said with a smile, “On the contrary, while I’m refining the Overlord Pellet, it tempers my profound energy and mental energy by an extremely high degree. So, to me, it’s a form of



cultivation as well. I estimate that after completing all of my senior sisters' and junior sisters' improvements, my profound cultivation and mental strength will rise by a huge margin as well."

Yun Che's words allowed them to feel slightly at ease. They circled around Murong Qianye, feeling the immense change in her profound aura from her body; even after a long time, the excited and enthusiastic expressions on their faces were unable to quell.

Exiting the Frozen End Divine Hall, the outside was already obscured by the color of the night.

“Big Brother Yun, I have a question for you.” Feng Xue’er’s small hand was held by Yun Che. Bathing under the luster of the snow-white light unique to the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, they walked towards the ice pavilion at the east side. “Why don’t you use the Overlord Pellet to increase your own profound strength? Even though Big Brother Yun is so incredible, in terms of level of profound strength, you’re still at the third

level of the Emperor Profound Realm.”

“My profound veins and profound strength regulations are rather different from others. Although my profound strength is only at the Emperor Profound Realm, in terms of realm of power, I have already surpassed the Tyrant Profound Realm, so the Overlord Pellet is completely ineffective on me.” Yun Che was not surprised that Feng Xue’er would ask this question. He believed that Murong Qianxue and the rest of them must have the same doubt in their hearts.

He could only give a very vague reply in that regard.

## Chapter 737 – Deeply and Affectionately

---

“So that’s the case. I have always felt that Big Brother Yun’s profound strength was very strange as well. Even though your level is clearly very low, you can actually be that powerful.”

Within the snowy light, Feng Xue’er turned her face and looked at Yun Che, her eyes sparkling. “Not only is Big Brother Yun so incredible, so mysterious... you’re also really very kind.”

“Kind?” Yun Che turned his face over and looked at her as well. Very seldom had he heard of people using this word to describe him. He could even imagine Jasmine scoffing with her nose held high from hearing these words.

“That’s right.” Making eye contact with Yun Che, Feng Xue’er smiled. “When facing my royal father’s wrongdoings, even though Big Brother Yun was clearly really furious, in the end, you still chose to forgive him. Big Brother Yun has even done

so much more for Frozen Cloud Asgard. The level of the medicinal energy emitted by those Overlord Pellets is even higher than the highest levels of medicinal pellets in our Divine Phoenix Sect. In order to raise Senior Master Murong's profound strength, not only has Big Brother Yun taken out so many of them in an instant, you have even worked so hard to the point of almost causing yourself to collapse."

Yun Che, however, shook his head with a smile as his voice slightly softened, "Although I don't see myself as an evil

person, I have never seen myself as a good person either. It's even more impossible for me to be a kind person... The one who forgave your royal father was not me, but your Big Sister Cang Yue. If we're talking about forgiveness, it's your royal father who had forgiven me."

"Ah?" Feng Xue'er was confused.

"I killed four of your royal father's sons, four of your royal brothers... You have grown by the Phoenix God's side since you



were young, so you seldom come into contact with your royal brothers and do not have any feelings for them. Thus, when it came to their deaths, your feelings were very mild. But your royal father is different. In regards to me, he only carries hatred, and his hatred is very pure at that. If not because of you, he would have definitely and unhesitantly rip me into shreds using the most brutal of methods possible. However, the love he has for you is similarly pure as well, and his love for you has far surpassed the hatred he has for me. Adding that he knows I won't hurt you, he chose to follow your wishes, leaving his most beloved person

with his most hated person.”

“Speaking of which... Back then, when I went to your Divine Phoenix Sect to exact revenge for my royal father and Blue Wind, if not for you, I would have definitely brought away your royal father in an instant, so that I could kill him right in front of my royal father’s tomb. But because of you, I could never kill him even till the end. Right now, your royal father is the same as well. Even if his hatred for me grows ten times more, even if he has the absolute strength to kill me, he will no longer try to kill

me...” Although he was talking about hatred and revenge, Yun Che’s face carried a very warm smile. “Xue’er, two of us men bear deep hatred for each other, but because of you, we are unable to kill one another.”

“Big Brother Yun...” Feng Xue’er slowed down her footsteps, water mists lightly surfaced in her eyes as she said infatuatedly, “Royal father gave me my first life, while Big Brother Yun gave me my second life... Meeting royal father and Big Brother Yun is my greatest fortune in this life of mine.”

“Your royal father and I feel the same way,” Yun Che said with a smile. Raising his head, he looked towards the Frozen Cloud Asgard under the curtains of the night, his voice once again softened, “In regards to why I’m being so good to Frozen Cloud Asgard... Actually, it’s merely for my own sake.”

“Ah?” Feng Xue’er was once again confused.

Yun Che was silent for a short moment, then he gradually

spoke up and told Feng Xue'er about the matters concerning him and Chu Yuechan. From their encounter at Blue Wind Imperial City, to the agreement he made with her in order to protect himself, to their "undesirable fate" in the Wasteland of Death, to their reunion at Heavenly Sword Villa, and also...

Yun Che was a person who was extremely vigilant and suspicious of others, but in front of Feng Xue'er, he could not sustain the wall in his heart in the slightest; this made him tell her everything about the

relationship he had with Chu Yuechan. Their two shoulders touched, and their footsteps were very, very slow. Even after he was done talking, they were still a considerable distance away from the Ice Pavilion.

“Big Brother Yun’s... child?” Feng Xue’er lightly muttered, as though, for a moment, she was unable to accept this existence that had caught her by surprise.

“He’s already four years old now,” Yun Che said with hazy eyes. “I hope that he’s a boy.

That way, he can protect his mother like a little man until I find them. But, I have thrown them aside for five years... It's been exactly five years, yet there's still no news of them."

"That year, your Big Sister Cang Yue spared no costs in mobilizing the entire Blue Wind Army to undergo a search. Three years ago, I commissioned the Black Moon Merchant Guild to undergo a search as well... The Black Moon Merchant Guild possessed the most powerful information network in the entire continent. However, they have searched for three years,

yet they have similarly found nothing. It's as though the two of them had completely disappeared from Profound Sky Continent."

"Big Brother Yun..." Feng Xue'er's heart was in pain. From Yun Che, she could sense deep depression, self-reproach and pain that he was trying very hard to conceal.

"With every new day I'm unable to find them, my heart grows a little bit heavier. The biggest reason why I'm doing so



much for Frozen Cloud Asgard, is because this is the place Little Fairy grew up in, the place which carries most of her feelings and memories. Only by doing so will it barely ease the guilt I have towards her... In the end, it's nothing more than to console myself." Yun Che's voice was filled with bitterness.

"Big Brother Yun, don't worry. Your Little Fairy and your child will definitely, absolutely be safe and sound. Big Brother Yun is such a good person, so the heavens definitely won't be heartless to do such cruel things to Big Brother Yun." Feng Xue'er

tightly grasped onto Yun Che's palm with her two hands and consoled him with a soft voice, "Oh right! I will immediately send a sound transmission to royal father and have him mobilize people to search the boundaries of Divine Phoenix Nation..."

"No need." Yun Che lightly shook his head. "Even the Black Moon Merchant Guild was unable to find any traces, a regular method wouldn't... In another two to three months, I will be able to borrow the use of a special method. When that time comes, then I will definitely

be able to find them.”

Even the Black Moon Merchant Guild was unable to find any traces... Anyone would be very clear of what these words meant. But Yun Che was unwilling to believe that was the case, no matter what... Even if there's only a one in hundred million chance, he would only believe in that one in hundred million possibility!

Jasmine would soon completely free herself from the devilish poison; when that time comes,

then he would be able to find them... definitely!

Sensing Yun Che's sunken feelings, Feng Xue'er lightly bit her lips, and then she pulled his arm, pointing to that tallest piece of profound ice within Frozen Cloud Asgard. "Big Brother Yun, accompany me there to see the snow, alright?"

As night fell, the two did not return to the Ice Pavilion, instead, they sat atop of that profound ice that was several dozen meters in height, looking

at the boundless snow under the curtains of the night from afar.

“The sky above Phoenix City is light red, the sky above Blue Wind Imperial City is deep blue, while the sky here is white.” Feng Xue’er raised her head, gazing at the starless, ashen night sky. “The smell of the air is different as well. Even the white snow portrays different sceneries during the day and night. The world is really more colorful than I imagined it to be.”

Feng Xue'er looked at the snow and night sky, while Yun Che spent more of his time watching her. After a while, he said with a smile, "But even after adding all of them up, they're still not as beautiful as Xue'er."

Under the night sky, Frozen Cloud Asgard was beautiful like an illusory realm, but Feng Xue'er, while illuminated by the snowy light, was like the brightest pearl within this illusory realm. Her existence had suppressed all of the glittering radiance between the heaven and earth.

“Hehe...” Feng Xue’er heartily laughed as she leaned the side of her forehead on Yun Che’s shoulder. “In the past, there will always be people who says that I’m beautiful, but I never felt too much about those comments. But now, I’m feeling very happy... and even hope that once I grow up, I can look even more beautiful.”

“Why?”

“Because that way, I can receive even more of Big Brother Yun’s

love and praises.” She lightly hung down her forehead as she felt a little embarrassed to look at Yun Che in the eyes.

Yun Che’s heart warmed. Reaching out his hand, he lightly wrapped around Feng Xue’er’s soft, slender waist, causing Feng Xue’er’s body to lightly tremble for an instant. “Xue’er, do you still remember that day when we reunited, the amount of tears you shed while you hugged me?”

“...Ah?”



“You cried for so long while hugging me, to the point where my entire back could feel your tears.” Yun Che gently said, “Back then, with that much tears, I was really afraid that I wouldn’t be able to repay them even after several lifetimes... So, in this lifetime, no matter what happens, I will forever treat you well.”

“Just because... of my tears?” Feng Xue’er raised her beautiful eyes; although her eyes were hazy, a warm, teasing light could still be seen within the depths of her pupils.

“Of course, the bigger reason is that you’re my Xue’er!” Yun Che smiled as he hugged Xue’er even tighter. With just a single arm, he completely wrapped around her soft, slender waist. The depression in his heart that was birthed because of Chu Yuechan quickly dispersed as well.

Feng Xue’er lightly moaned from the overly intimate body contact, and her body slightly stiffened from nervousness. However, she did not reject it in the slightest. With a soft voice, she said, “In the past, Lord

Phoenix God had once mentioned this to me. If I could find a person who will make me happy when I'm with him, who will make heart beat faster involuntarily, and that person is even willing to disregard his own life for my sake, then, he's a person who can accompany me forever. And I, have actually met such a person so quickly."

"Just because... I saved you without any regards to my own life?" Yun Che said with a melancholic look.

“Pfft...” Yun Che’s words and tone could not help but make Feng Xue’er laugh. And then, she tried her best to mimic Yun Che’s tone, “Of course, the biggest reason is that you’re my... Big Brother Yun!”

When she spoke these words, Feng Xue’er felt her face heating up. She had no choice but to close her eyes as she buried her forehead deeply into Yun Che’s chest. As for the man who was embracing her, he began to laugh out loud complacently.

## Within the Sky Poison Pearl.

Jasmine quietly floated in midair. Her long, blood-red hair danced high in the air, and her most beloved Smoky Red Fairy Dress fluttered, exposing two small, white thighs. A layer of black miasma was slowly wreathing the exterior of her dress. This layer of black miasma was emitting out from her body, and after being released, it would quickly disperse away.

At this moment, all of the black

miasma disappeared, and Jasmine opened her eyes as she descended from the air. Her blood-red long hair stopped fluttering as well, naturally draping over her petite buttocks. She stretched out her hands, looked at her own snow-white palms, and softly muttered to herself, “The strength of the poison is growing weaker, and the speed of purification is increasing with each passing day. From the looks of it, in just another two months or so, I should be able to completely purify it before his battle with Fen Juechen...”

Back then, to completely purify her body from the devilish poison was her biggest wish. She had initially thought that even if she had encountered the Sky Poison Pearl out of immense fortune, it would still require a very long time... Be it several tens of years, or even several hundred of years, to her, it would have been a torture which she had no choice but to endure.

Presently, not even seven years had passed, yet the purification of the entire devilish poison was already in sight. The strength possessed by Yun Che, the person she was using to depend

her life on, had already reached her requirements as well. Also, because of his extremely powerful bloodlines and profound veins, the outcome had far surpassed her initial expectations. Out of the thirty-five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals, twenty-five kilograms were already in her hands. Gathering the remaining ten kilograms could be said to be an easy feat for Yun Che who possessed a large number of Overlord Pellets in his hands. Three profound beast cores belonging to Tyrant Profound Beasts were completely not a problem as well... After all, Yun Che had directly requested the Black Moon Merchant Guild for



three Tyrant Profound Beasts' profound cores.

There were even news of the location of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower which was hardest to find.

Everything was going so much more successful than what she had predicted. It was even several times better compared to the best situation she had imagined in the past.

She should have felt ecstatic

about this.

But, as the devilish poison in her body weakened, to the point where she could use her own strength to slowly purify the remaining devilish poison without relying on the Sky Poison Pearl, rather than joy, what she felt most was an inexplicable sense of loss.

Jasmine placed down her small hands. Like usual, she habitually looked outside at Yun Che's situation, and then, the first thing she saw was Yun Che and

Feng Xue'er hugging deeply and affectionately...

And every word they spoke could seemingly send chills on her entire body for more than half a day.

“Yet another one has fallen into the devil’s palms!” Jasmine snorted as she spoke with slight anger, “Are all women in the Profound Sky Continent a bunch of incurable idiots!?”

“Ouu...” Hong'er was startled

awake by Jasmine's uncontrolled voice. She opened her eyes, which were shining with a crimson red glow, and vaguely said, "Big Sis Jasmine, are you angry... Has Master done something wrong again?"

"Your master isn't the one I'm angry about, it's those idiotic women!" Jasmine said snappily.

"...Ou?" Hong'er sat up on the bed, stretching lazily. "Big Sis Jasmine, I'm hungry. I want to find Master for some food."

“It’s not suitable for you to head out now, you will see something that you shouldn’t see.”

“But, I’m really hungry.” Hong’er was very obedient to Jasmine. When Jasmine said that she should not head out, she sat obediently unmoving on the bed, pitifully rubbing her own small belly.

Jasmine waved her hand, and a purple sparkling spatial ring was pulled towards her. She took out a Purple Veined Divine Crystal

from the spatial ring and placed it in Hong'er's hands. "Fine, hurry and eat."

"Waah!! Big Sis Jasmine is still the best after all!!" Hong'er's eyes sparkled. Hugging onto the Purple Veined Divine Crystal, she took a huge bite. As her big mouth chewed, her face was filled with delight.

In order to prevent Hong'er from eating behind his back, Yun Che placed all of his crystals and stones into a spatial ring, before placing it back into the

Sky Poison Pearl. However, if he had inspected regularly, he would have realized that out of the twenty-five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals that should have been in the ring... presently, only about twenty-three kilograms of them were left.

...This was the reason why Hong'er had been so obedient to Jasmine.

Jasmine casually flung away the spatial ring and sat on the side of the bed. She silently

watched Hong'er as she happily ate, and gradually, her eyes turned a little hazy...

“Cai... Zhi...” Between her lips, she unconsciously leaked out a soft mutter.

“Cai Zhi?” Hearing her voice, Hong'er raised her head, her face filled with curiosity. “What's that? It sounds very delicious! Is it something delicious?”

Jasmine was startled for a



moment. She quickly regained her senses and shook her head. “It’s not something edible. She’s a little girl like Hong’er, and like Hong’er, she calls me Big Sis.”

“Ou...” Hearing that it was not food, Hong’er’s interest greatly fell in an instant. Swallowing down the last piece of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, she muttered, “Then she’s definitely not as cute as me.”

Jasmine: “...”

“Wuah...” After finishing the entire Purple Veined Divine Crystal, Hong’er’s body slightly flashed with a purple light. She let out a satisfied cry, and then gently curved down onto the bed. “I’m full now! Time to continue sleeping!”

“Sleep.” Jasmine stood up from the bed, and she had only taken a single step when she heard Hong’er sleeping soundly behind her.

Time silently flowed, and the night quietly faded. Both Yun

Che and Feng Xue'er did not return to the Ice Pavilion, but instead, nestled within each other as they watched the snowy scenery for an entire night. And within the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine was silently watching the world outside for an entire night.

“He has so many women by his side, he will never feel lonely for all of eternity,” Jasmine muttered to herself, and then let out a light snort, “Without someone like me who scolds him several times a day, it will definitely be a wish come true for him!”

Shifting her attention away from Yun Che, Jasmine's expression recovered its coldness. Closing her eyes, she slowly guided the Sky Poison Pearl's energy and once again entered the purification state.

# Chapter 738 – Unfilial Son

---

Divine Phoenix Nation, Divine Phoenix Sect.

“Royal father, are these... all true?” Deep astonishment surfaced on Feng Hengkong’s face.

“This news was personally told by Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Ninth Elder Ye Guying himself. Furthermore, among the four Sun Moon Elders brought by Ye

Xinghan that day, he was one of them, so it's definitely not just a mere rumor. That day, if not for Ye Guying's quick wits, Ye Shi might not have been the only person to die back then." Feng Tianwei's voice was calm, but his brows were heavily sunken the entire time.

"Right now, this matter is no longer a secret in the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Ye Guying only disclosed this matter to me because of the long years of relationship we have, advising me to never aggravate Yun Che's resentment ever again."

“No wonder... no wonder Yun Che actually dared to intrude our Divine Phoenix Sect alone and had never felt fear from the beginning to end. It’s also no wonder that, given Ye Xinghan’s sinister personality, he still had yet to lay his hands on Yun Che after knowing that he was still alive. So a figure that could cover the sky with a single hand was actually behind Yun Che’s back...” Feng Hengkong had difficulty quelling his astonishment.

“‘Old Man Duotian’, I once

heard of this name from our ancestors when I was young. Presently, under the heavens, those who know of this name, should only be the Four Great Sacred Grounds and our Divine Phoenix Sect which both have the capabilities to pass down memories. He reigned supreme under the heavens ten thousand years ago and is presently reigning supreme across ancient and modern times. He was the first and only human to reach half-step into the Divine Profound Realm in the history of Profound Sky Continent, standing at the same level as our Ancestral Phoenix God... and that was ten thousand years ago!”



“I never would have that that he would actually still be alive... Upon reaching that level, to be able to possess a lifespan of ten thousand years should be expected. No, if we’re talking about the level that Old Man Duotian is currently standing at, he might have already broken through the half-step Divine Profound Realm and stepped entirely into the Divine Profound Realm, achieving the legendary supreme ‘Profound God!’” Feng Tianwei’s said grimly, his voice carrying a mixture of astonishment, respect, and awe. “It’s also no wonder Yun Che was able to

throw the face of our Phoenix Divine Sect into the dirt with merely the profound strength of the Emperor Profound Realm. In this period of time, no matter how much I tried, I couldn't think of which famed figure in the Profound Sky Continent could have taught Yun Che, a monster who defies all common sense... to think it was actually such a god-like figure!”

“A ball of flames the size of a finger burnt a mid-stage Monarch into nothingness...”

Feng Hengkong could not help but take in a cold breath, unable to imagine such a shocking

scene in his mind. If Feng Tianwei had not personally told him this, even if the news came from the Four Great Sacred Grounds, he definitely would not have believed it.

“Looking at it now, our current situation can already be considered a decent outcome. About the matter of exacting revenge for Luo’er and the rest... Never ever think about it again.” Feng Tianwei said with a sigh.

“Royal father! Royal father!!”

Amidst his loud cries, Feng Ximing stumbled into the place. He did not have time for greetings as he immediately charged right towards Feng Hengkong, his face contorted in confusion, a look which he had never had before. “Royal father... this son has heard that, in the meeting of elders, you announced a marriage between Xue’er and Yun Che. What’s going on...? This definitely can’t be true!!”

“This is true!” Feng Hengkong frowned deeply, as he said with a cold look.

“Wha... what?” Feng Ximing, who was at a loss to begin with, shook uncontrollably upon receiving Feng Hengkong’s personal confirmation. His entire body convulsed as though he heard a clap of thunder. Suddenly, he roared hysterically, “Royal father, have you gone mad!? Yun Che is our greatest enemy, he killed four of my royal brothers... four of royal father’s sons! Even several elders, two grand elders, and a thousand Phoenix disciples... He destroyed the Phoenix God Sculpture and, even now, Phoenix City is still filled with debris... He’s the mortal enemy

of our entire clan, someone we can never reconcile with! How could you possibly have Xue'er marry him!?"

At this moment, he finally saw that Feng Tianwei was standing by his side. Hurriedly, he ran over with unstable footsteps. "Grandfather, royal father has gone mad. He actually wants to have Xue'er marry that devil, Yun Che... Grandfather, hurry and stop him!"

"Enough!" Feng Hengkong turned around and shouted.

“Regarding the circumstances for this issue, we will tell you in a few days. We are currently discussing some important matters with your grandfather. Leave immediately.”

Feng Tianwei threw a glance at Feng Ximing and waved his hand. “I have already finished saying what I wanted to say. Hengkong, in the days to come, make proper preparations for the Devil Sword Conference. In the Devil Sword Conference, not only will all of the core figures of the Four Great Sacred Grounds personally make their appearances, they will have also

invited all of the powers in the entire Profound Sky Continent which possess experts at the level of Tyrant Profound Realm. This is a grand, unprecedented occasion and this gimmick is rather appalling. When the time comes, I will personally head over there with the rest of you... Ming'er shall tag along as well."

"Royal father, you want to head there with us?" Feng Hengkong said, pleasantly surprised.

"Secret of the Divine Profound... Just from these five



words alone, even if all of the profound practitioners in the world are a ninety nine percent certain that it's mere fiction, no one would possibly resist. Even if they gain nothing in return, being able to see the four lords of the Four Great Sacred Grounds personally make an appearance and witness the gathering of all the warlords in the world, the trip would still be worth it."

Once he finished speaking, Feng Tianwei disappeared from sight with a flick of his long sleeves and a flash of flaming light.

“Leave then.” Feng Hengkong gave Feng Ximing a sidelong glance. “You heard your grandfather’s words earlier. In these coming months, we must rebuild Phoenix City and fully prepare for the Devil Sword Conference at the same time. As for Xue’er’s marriage, there are early preparations we must also make.”

“Royal father!” Feng Ximing knelt in front of Feng Hengkong with a loud “thump”, his face filled with desperation. Feng Tianwei’s attitude clearly

showed that he did not object to the marriage, which made him teeter on the edge of despair. “This son is begging you... you must revoke your order. This son simply cannot fathom why royal father would do something like this. That’s Xue’er... royal father’s most beloved daughter and our Divine Phoenix Sect’s future Phoenix God!!”

Feng Hengkong’s brows sank but he was not furious. Instead, he slowly said, “When we made this decision, we had naturally thought through it well. Furthermore, we currently have one more important reason to

do so. Ximing, do you know why Yun Che's actual strength was so astonishing even though he's so young and merely possesses the profound strength of the Emperor Profound Realm? Do you know why his flames surpass our Phoenix flames so greatly? Do you know how he was able to return alive from the Primordial Profound Ark? You know that he had angered Ye Xinghan that year, yet why hasn't Ye Xinghan gone to deal with him this entire time?"

“We have only found out today that Yun Che has an unprecedented, almighty master

who is capable of tearing open dimensional rifts! When Yun Che was trapped in the Primordial Profound Ark that year, his master tore through space and brought him back from the Primordial Profound Ark! It wasn't that Ye Xinghan did not want look for him. Far from it; on the very first day of Yun Che's return, Ye Xinghan brought a total of four Sun Moon elders, fifteen protectorates, and did not hesitate to commandeer the Sun Moon Divine Ark to kill Yun Che. Yet, in the end, they forced Yun Che's master to act..."

Feng Hengkong raised his index finger. "His master used just a tiny spark of flames the size of his finger to burn a Sun Moon Elder to nothingness in just a few breaths of time... Forget about a corpse, not even a strand of hair was left behind! If not for the fact that Yun Che's master had long since distanced himself from worldly affairs and was unwilling to rashly commit murder, and that the Ninth Elder, who headed there as well, had desperately swore to never offend Yun Che ever again, not a single one of the Sun Moon Divine Hall members who went there shouldn't even think about returning to Sun Moon Divine Hall alive."

Feng Ximing was completely dumbstruck, as if he was listening to a heavenly tome being read.

“The strength of Yun Che’s master might even surpass the Ancestral Phoenix God’s to a level that we are unable to comprehend. Presently, even the Four Great Sacred Grounds do not dare to offend Yun Che at all. Although our Divine Phoenix Sect encountered a crisis because of Yun Che, thinking about it now, we must instead feel fortunate. If the one

who was forced into a desperate position was Yun Che and his master was forced out, the consequences... would have been unimaginable!”

“Yun Che’s potential is immeasurable. His body possesses the Phoenix bloodline, he sincerely treats Xue’er well and is willing to protect her with his own life... Adding to that, he has such a powerful backer behind him.” Feng Hengkong closed his eyes. “Although we hate him to the bone, when it comes to Xue’er’s marriage there is definitely no one else more suitable than him. If she can



marry him, not only can it soothe the resentment between our Divine Phoenix Sect and their Blue Wind Nation, our Divine Phoenix Sect will also garner massive support. Even if the truth of our Ancestral Phoenix God's passing is made known to the world before Xue'er's power is completely awakened, the Four Great Sacred Grounds will definitely think twice before touching even a strand of our hair."

Feng Ximing's face was green one moment and white the next. His lips trembled the entire time. Not only did Feng

Hengkong's patient explanation of the circumstances not calm him down, the aura he emitted from his body had instead become even more chaotic. He roared out loud, "So what!? This Xue'er we're talking about! To royal father, this son... she is the most important person in the world. How could you possibly use her like this..."

"What do you mean by use her!?" Hearing Feng Ximing's words, the flames of fury which Feng Hengkong had been suppressing with all his might were now on the verge of exploding. "This is Xue'er's own

will and desire! If Xue'er was unwilling, even if we had to sacrifice our life, we would never agree to it! Whether she was helplessly forced or entirely willing to do so... Could it be that you really aren't certain of it in the bottom of your heart!?"

Feng Ximing's expression paled once more. He knelt limply on the ground as if in overcome with despair. He sounded as if he were in pain as he implored, "Royal father... no matter what, you must not have Xue'er marry Yun Che... You dote upon Xue'er so much, you must be reluctant to let her go, right? Xue'er, she...

she is our future Phoenix God after all. She belongs to our Divine Phoenix Sect so she shouldn't marry to an outsider..."

"Shut your mouth!" Feng Hengkong yelled furiously. "Xue'er is the successor of our Ancestral Phoenix God. She carries the mission of protecting our entire sect in the future but that doesn't mean she must forever belong to our Divine Phoenix Sect, nor does she belong to anyone else! She can only belong to her own self! In another half year, she will be twenty years old and will be able

to make her own decisions. Even we only have the right to guide her on her path, but never will we have the qualifications to forcefully intervene or make decisions in her stead! Only this way can truly be good for her! As for you...” Feng Hengkong’s expression turned incomparably dark. “The lingering filthy thoughts you have for Xue’er... we have never been willing to expose them but do you really think we weren’t aware of it!?”

“Royal father...” Feng Ximing reached out his hands to grab onto Feng Hengkong’s ankle and pleaded with a trembling voice.

“This son really cannot lose Xue’er. When this son thinks of Xue’er marrying to someone else... this son experiences feelings even more unbearable than death itself... This son begs royal father to revoke your order. This son will definitely use everything he has to protect Xue’er and your child is able to give Xue’er everything that she wants... This son can lose the title of crown prince and lose the emperor’s seat... This son can abandon everything as long as...”

“Unfilial son!!” Feng Hengkong went into a rage. Sending out

one of his legs, despite Feng Ximing's screams, he kicked his son out of the main hall.

Under his fury, this kick of his was extremely heavy, and a long trail of blood was splattered from the entrance of the main hall to the outside.

“Forget about you being her royal brother. Even if you two aren't siblings, you will never be worthy of Xue'er and Xue'er will never bat a single eye at you! Leave, shut yourself in the Phoenix Heart Hall, and reflect

for a hundred days! If you dare spout such presumptuous words ever again, we shall personally cripple you!”

Feng Hengkong's body trembled with anger. As his father, how could he not clearly see through Feng Ximing's thoughts? While Feng Xue'er's charm was indeed hard for regular people to resist, although Feng Hengkong was acutely aware of it, he had never felt that it was beyond tolerance.

Yet he never expected that the



thoughts Feng Ximing had for Feng Xue'er were this intense. They had gotten to the point where Feng Ximing had dared to spout such outrageous and heretical statements.

Outside the main hall, Feng Ximing supported himself on the ground with a single hand, continuously coughing out several large mouthfuls of fresh blood. He gasped for air as he stood up without uttering a word, stumbling away shortly after. In the depths of his eyes, a terrifying glimmer of resentment shone...

“I can abandon everything...  
but I can't not have Xue'er...”

“She can forever remain out of  
my reach... but no one else is  
allowed to have her either!”

“Feng Hengkong... you forced  
me to do this...”

“All of you have forced me to do  
this!!!”

# Chapter 739 – Asgard Visitor

---

Unknowingly, Yun Che had already stayed in Frozen Cloud Asgard for over a month.

In this period of time, he was busy every single day. Following after Murong Qianxue, using the Overlord Pellets, he aided Jun Lianqie, Mu Lanyi, Chu Yueli, Feng Hanyue and Feng Hanxue in breaking through the Tyrant Profound Realm, and there wasn't a single mistake or accident throughout the entire process.

With this kind of method that did not require them to exert any effort, in merely a single day, they reached a level which they had once never dared hope to achieve in their entire lives. Even after more than a month had passed, this dream-like surprise had still yet to dissipate. In this period of time, all of them had been focused on quietly cultivating every day, stabilizing their profound strength with the assistance of the Ice Toad Jade that Yun Che refined.

After the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, Yun Che began to raise the profound strength of the other Frozen Cloud disciples. Similarly, he made use of the Overlord Pellets, executing the same exact method and process as well. One difference was that the profound level of every Frozen Cloud disciple was different, and naturally, the amount of medicinal energy from the Overlord Pellets each of them could endure was different as well. The time spent on each of them was also different.

Mu Lingxue, the strongest among them, had endured two

Overlord Pellets, causing her profound strength to surge toward the Emperor Profound Realm in just two hours; in the following days, this made her feel like everything was like a dream. As for those young, newly admitted disciples, even half a pellet was hard for them to bear.

Hence, to raise the profound strength of regular Frozen Cloud disciples, the amount of time used was far shorter in comparison to the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies; however, the difficulty was not the least bit lower. Throughout the entire

process, Yun Che similarly had to be in a state of complete concentration, along with his profound energy being fully released. Because the lower the profound strength, the weaker the physique one had; as such, he had to be even more careful in preventing any accidents from occurring.

In about a month, he had already aided about three hundred Frozen Cloud girls in their profound strength breakthrough, without even committing a single failure.

When looking at this newly appointed Asgard Master, not to mention their first male Asgard Master in history, the eyes of all Frozen Cloud girls no longer carried the least bit rejection and peculiarity... Instead, they were filled with admiration, as though they were looking at a divine being.

It was presently noon, yet Yun Che, however, was not raising the Frozen Cloud disciples' profound strength. Instead, he was sitting cross-legged by himself in the Ice Pavilion, slowly guiding the flow of profound energy inside his body.



Just this morning, when he had completed raising the profound strength of Shui Wushuang, the profound energy in his entire body was suddenly thrown into great disorder. His vision instantly blackened, and his head plummeted onto the ground as his expression turned frighteningly pale. Shui Wushuang was so shocked; she did not even have the time to wear her snow robe as she hurriedly lifted him up... After a good while, she finally realized that Yun Che's profound strength had suddenly broken through a bottleneck.

From the third level of Emperor Profound Realm to the fourth level of Emperor Profound Realm.

Yun Che possessed the Great Way of the Buddha, so even if he did not cultivate, his body would still automatically absorb the world's elements. Even in his sleep, his power and physique would continue to rise, bringing about the rise in profound strength at the same time.

The two biggest leaps in his physique and profound strength

were when he was in the Primordial Profound Ark, and when he was at Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley. The ice elements in Frozen Cloud Asgard were exceptionally lively. Though they could not be compared to the dimensional storms in the Primordial Profound Ark or the Sea of Death in Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, his speed of absorbing the world's elements was still faster than other aspects by a small degree.

After resting for about two hours, the profound energy in Yun Che's body had long

completely calmed down, and his profound strength had officially stepped into the fourth level of the Emperor Profound Realm. Raising the profound strength of the Frozen Cloud disciples was also an exceptionally strong degree of refinement for his profound energy. If no accidents were to occur, before his battle with Fen Juechen, his profound strength should be able to break through the fifth level of the Emperor Profound Realm.

If he could obtain Feng Xue'er's phoenix vital yin...

At this moment, Yun Che's eyes slowly opened, and outside the Ice Pavilion, Feng Xue'er's gentle voice sounded, "Big Brother Yun, can I come in?"

"Xue'er, hurry and come in," Yun Che immediately said.

The ice door was lightly pushed open, and Feng Xue'er walked in with gentle steps. At that instant, Yun Che's eyes fiercely shone; his line of sight was firmly fixated on Feng Xue'er, and for a long while, he was in a

state of rapture.

The clothes Feng Xue'er wore were usually either gold or fiery red in color, but this time, she was wearing the pure, snow-white robe of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

“Big Brother Yun, do I look beautiful?” She stood in front of Yun Che and displayed the look she had while wearing the Frozen Cloud Snow Robe. What she received in return was Yun Che's already dazed gaze.

Clothed in snow-white, the long dress stretched to the ground, and a pair of exquisite snow phoenix shoes could be faintly seen. Wrapped around her waist was a snow-white silk band, perfectly outlining her thin, slender waist, also allowing her pair of breasts to form an incomparably stunning voluptuous curves.

When it came to the snow robes in Frozen Cloud Asgard, the regular disciples wore a different set from the Frozen Cloud Seven Fairies, and what Feng Xue'er was wearing belonged to the snow robes of the Frozen Cloud

Seven Fairies. Yun Che was especially familiar with it, but what he was stunned about was not the snow robe, instead it was the young girl wearing it.

Feng Xue'er's skin was extremely white... like the purest of ice and snow; a lustrous white that was similar to the most flawless of white tallow jades. Even under the contrast of the pure white snow robe, even within the Ice Pavilion where no bright light was present, her skin was still dazzlingly lustrous white. Her face, as though it was carved with ice and snow, was adorned



with thin, long crescent brows, and a pair of clear, deep eyes. Her fragrant cheeks were whiter than snow, her dimples were as beautiful as that of a poem or drawing, and the lipsticks worn on her pair of tender lips were as though they were drawn with the blood and soul of the heavens, beautiful to the point of stirring one's heart.

“My Xue'er... Naturally, no matter what you wear, you're the most beautiful in the world,” Yun Che looked at her dazedly as he sincerely praised.

Feng Xue'er spread out her arms as her smile bloomed. "This was gifted to me by Junior Master Hanyue. It's very fitting, without the slightest bit of discomfort. And it's very light and cool as well... Ah!"

Amidst Feng Xue'er's tender moan, Yun Che had already grasped her waist as he pulled her over to sit on his lap. Yun Che gently embraced her jade body as he spoke with a slightly sly demeanor, "Xue'er, you're really beautiful to the point... where I don't even know what I should do."

Feng Xue'er slightly curled up her body in Yun Che's embrace, her fragrant cheeks were dyed with a faint pink as she timidly said in a gentle voice, "Big Brother Yun, you... you're not going to... bully me again, right..."

Every time he embraced Feng Xue'er's soft fairy-like body, Yun Che's body would always throb intensely to an uncontrollable extent. He approached Feng Xue'er's face and gently said, "I didn't think about it in the beginning, but with Xue'er's

reminder...”

The moment his voice fell, Yun Che had already hugged Feng Xue'er tightly and sealed her supple lips. Then, he reveled in seizing the fragrance and sweetness from her mouth.

“Nng,” Feng Xue'er cried out; the young girl's shyness and timidity instantly turned into a red afterglow on her snow-white face.

It was already not her first time

to have her lips tasted by Yun Che. After her first kiss was snatched away half a month ago, Yun Che began wanting a mile after taking an inch, as he had to kiss her gently, tyrannically, shamelessly, or even when she was caught off-guard several times a day. Every time, she could only shyly yield to him... Because in the depths of her heart, she was already someone who was betrothed to Yun Che by her royal father.

Her tender little hands powerlessly pushed Yun Che's shoulders as she lightly panted, her pair of half-opened eyes

were blurred like a fog... If the citizens of Divine Phoenix Empire were to see their Princess Snow, whom they regard as a goddess, was actually being bullied in such a way by a man, it might lead to a riot of the entire empire.

While Feng Xue'er's consciousness was blurry, she did not sense that her snow dress had already been silently lifted to her waist by a big, restless hand, revealing a pair of jade-like snow-white thighs. The silk band on her waist had already been removed as well, and with her snow robe pulled

down, her finely crafted snow-skinned fragrant shoulders, which were as smooth as oil with a lustrous pink gloss, were revealed, as though the sun was shining upon the frost and snow during winter.

Yun Che's eyes were entranced, and he was simply unable to hold back the intense throbbing within his body. His hands were seemingly raised up uncontrollably, and they were placed on Xue'er's exposed collarbone...

Without the least bit of obstruction, his hands and her skin made contact, causing Feng Xue'er's beautiful eyes to instantly widen. Like a startled rabbit, she leapt out of Yun Che's embrace, panting while the light in her eyes were in disarray...

“I... I’m going to return the snow robe to... to Junior Master Hanyue...”

Feng Xue'er's face and ears were crimson red. She tidied up her snow robe, which was pulled apart without her knowing in a



fluster, as she ran off in a fleeing manner...

“Haah...” Yun Che was a bit dejected as he flopped onto the ice bed.

“You actually have yet to succeed. Aren’t you afraid of losing terribly under Fen Juechen’s hands!?” Jasmine coldly said. “There isn’t the slightest bit of rejection towards you in Feng Xue’er’s heart and soul. If you’re a little bit more forceful, you should have long obtained her phoenix vital yin.”

“I obviously can’t do that!” Yun Che shook his head, muttering, “Matters like this must come gradually. Xue’er treats me with a pure heart. If I were to do it your way, I might frighten or even hurt her. Furthermore, obtaining her phoenix vital yin in order to exchange blows with Fen Juechen would make me feel as though I’m hurting and using Xue’er for my own benefits. I can’t do that... This is a matter of principles.”

“Principles?” Jasmine snorted and coldly smiled. “When it

comes to matters concerning women, you actually have the nerve to talk about principles... Hmph. As expected, your face is even thicker than a city wall.”

“Heheh. Jasmine is still the one who is most familiar with the mere few good points that I possess.” Yun Che revealed a cheap smile.

“...But looking at you, you don’t seem to be worried about the battle with Fen Juechen.”

“I guess you can say that. After all, that guy, Fen Juechen, has a very big weakness in his personality,” Yun Che calmly said as he closed his eyes.

“A weakness in his personality? You’re referring to...”

“Ji Qianrou of Supreme Ocean Palace requests to see Frozen Cloud Asgard Master Yun Che!”

At this moment, a light voice, which carried a hint of softness and gentleness in it, sounded

from outside. Yun Che instantly stood up from the ice bed. “Ji Qianrou?”

Why would he come here?

...Could it be that the person who would come to invite him to the Devil Sword Conference, whom Zi Ji had spoken of before, was referring to Ji Qianrou?

From outside the door, Murong Qianxue’s voice reverberated, “Asgard Master, there’s a strange

person outside the the asgard gate wanting to see you, claiming that he comes from Supreme Ocean Palace.”

Yun Che stood up and walked out of the Ice Pavilion. Seeing Murong Qianxue and Mu Lanyi were currently standing there with heavy expressions, he hurriedly said, “Senior Masters, there’s no need to worry, and there’s no need to be vigilant either. He is one of my acquaintances, and the reason he’s here should be to send me something. Once I pick it up, I will return quickly. Tell Xue’er and the rest to not worry as

well.”

After saying that, Yun Che flew in the air and headed towards the asgard gate.

“Someone from Supreme Ocean Palace... Asgard Master, please be careful,” Murong Qianxue and Mu Lanyi said in unison. Although Yun Che had already said there wasn’t a need to worry... that person was still someone from the Sacred Grounds.

The moment he left Frozen Cloud Asgard, Yun Che saw that figure in front of the asgard gate. Dressed in an extraordinary white robe, his sleeves fluttered amidst the cold winds. He had masculine good looks, and his eyes were like the autumn waters, bearing a charm that was out of this world... This was a man who possessed beauty that could be described as beautiful to the point where even women would be envious of him.

Jade-faced Demon Monarch—  
Ji Qianrou.



Yun Che moved forward and gently cupped his fists. “Junior Yun Che greets Senior Ji. It’s been three years since we last met, and as expected, Senior Ji’s demeanor has grown more than before.”

Ji Qianrou’s pair of delicate eyes were like peach blossoms, though they seem to carry a hint of bitterness. “If we’re talking about demeanor, when compared to Little Cheche, I’m quite far behind~”

After hearing Ji Qianrou's voice again after three years, Yun Che's hair still stood on end as goosebumps spread all over his body. The moment Ji Qianrou's voice fell, he reached out his right hand, and with a light twist of his scallion-like jade finger, a faint blue petal came out of nowhere. Following the gentle wave of his finger, it lightly floated towards Yun Che.

The faint blue petal looked no different from a regular petal. It slowly approached Yun Che, as though it was being blown by a gentle breeze. The cold winds here were wild and rampant, yet

it did not influence the flight path of the petal. Rather... the cold winds that approached it seemed to have been absorbed into a large invisible swirl, disappearing without a trace.

As the petal approached, Yun Che's face was still filled with smiles. Directly reaching out his fingers, he casually caught the petal between two of his fingers, and then held it within his hand. When he opened his palm again, the petal had already disappeared without a trace... There wasn't a single sound throughout the entire process, nor was there even the least bit

of movement of profound energy.

“Thank you for your gift, Senior Ji,” Yun Che said with a smile.

“Haah.” Ji Qianrou once again let out a light, bitter sigh. “As expected, Little Cheche is the same as the rumors say. It’s only been three years since we last met, yet you have already thrown me far behind. In the future, I’m afraid I can’t even enter Little Cheche’s eyes.”

“~ ! @# ¥ %...” Yun Che maintained his smile with all his might, however, his tone was especially sincere. “This junior has never dared to forget Senior Ji’s saving grace at the Primordial Profound Ark three years ago. If there’s anything I can repay Senior Ji with, this junior will definitely spare no efforts to do so.”

The light in Ji Qianrou’s eyes swirled, flickering with a touch of surprise. Then, he gave a delicate smile. “Back then, what I did at the Primordial Profound Ark was merely playing a game with Little Hanhan, and at the

same time, returning a favor of yours. It isn't as exaggerated as you make it out to be, so there's no need to bring up matters of repaying me. Returning things like favors back and forth is just too annoying. This time, I'm here especially under the orders of our Supreme Ocean Palace Great Elder to pass something to Little Cheche."

# Chapter 740 – The Scent Of A Plot

---

“Is this perhaps concerning the Devil Sword Conference?” Yun Che asked straightforwardly.

“Ah, as expected, you do know why I’ve come.” Ji Qianrou stepped forward, and with a flip of his right hand, a hexagonal token made of precious jade, which was illuminated with a fantastical blue glow, was tossed towards Yun Che., “This is the Devil Sword Conference’s invitation card. One hundred days from now, you can use it to

enter our Supreme Ocean Palace and participate in the Devil Sword Conference.”

Yun Che extended a hand and grabbed the blue-colored precious jade token in his hand. A refreshing and cleansing aura abruptly erupted out from his palm, and his gaze swept across the words that were engraved on the precious jade before putting it away. “I thank Senior Ji for personally making a trip here, this junior will definitely visit Supreme Ocean Palace one hundred days from now. Besides this... can I ask Senior Ji to clear some confusion I have about the



Devil Sword Conference? What exactly is the purpose of this meeting? And just what does ‘Devil Sword’ refer to?”

“Oh?” Ji Qianrou looked at Yun Che with an astonished expression as he gently raised a flawless white jade finger. “Ah, it looks like Little Cheche didn’t know about this. The Devil Sword Conference has already been announced in the upper echelons of the Profound Sky Continent’s profound world for a good long while, yet Little Cheche does not even know what the Devil Sword is referring to; it looks like Little

Cheche isn't too interested in this Devil Sword Conference in the first place."

"I won't hide it from Senior Ji, this junior is indeed not very interested in this Devil Sword Conference," Yun Che said without the slightest bit of hesitation. "However, I can use this Devil Sword Conference to visit Supreme Ocean Palace that I've been fascinated with for the longest time."

"Hehehehe..." Ji Qianrou let out a gentle laugh which was

sweeter and more coquettish than a woman's laugh. Yun Che felt his guts cramp up violently at this sight; if his self-control was not good enough, even his face would have distorted. Ji Qianrou said in a merry fashion, "Hmmm, even though this Devil Sword Conference is very prestigious and has gotten a lot of publicity, it really doesn't interest me in the least. In fact, I'm far more interested in Little Cheche's mysterious master. If Little Cheche's master will condescend to visit Supreme Ocean Palace, it will definitely cause a huge commotion at the Devil Sword Conference."

Yun Che smiled but did not say anything.

“Since Little Cheche asked me about the Devil Sword Conference, then I must definitely give you a proper answer. But speaking of this Devil Sword Conference... Little Cheche, have you ever heard of the Eternal Night Royal Family?” Ji Qianrou asked in a soft and supple voice as he narrowed peach blossom eyes that were even more charming than a girl’s.

“The Eternal Night Royal Family?” Yun Che was taken aback for a moment, before his brows twitched as he asked, “Could it be that the ‘Devil Sword’ of this Devil Sword Conference refers to the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?”

Yun Che had heard the name of the Eternal Night Royal Family the very first day he had joined Frozen Cloud Asgard. It was Grand Asgard Mistress Feng Qianhui who had told him about it. And in Feng Qianhui’s own words, the Eternal Night Royal Family was originally a Sacred Ground, and it was one of the

Five Great Sacred Grounds. Furthermore, it was the only Sacred Ground that was a family. However, one thousand years ago, it was destroyed through the joint efforts of the other four Sacred Grounds.

After that, the other three Sacred Grounds gradually noticed that they had been used by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, but in order to maintain the reputation of the Sacred Grounds, they could only accept their mistake and continue to perpetuate the bad name of the Eternal Night Royal Family as they swiftly eliminated all traces

left behind by the Eternal Night Royal Family. And now, there were extremely few people who even knew the name “Eternal Night Royal Family” besides the Four Great Sacred Grounds, extremely few people knew about the grievances and resentments which happened all those years ago.

As for the only reason why Frozen Cloud Asgard was cognizant of those events, it was because the Frozen Cloud Ancestor, Mu Bingyun, had received the help of the Eternal Night Royal Family. And because she was unable to accept the

Eternal Night Royal Family's tragic fate, she sealed these memories as part of the legacy of Frozen Cloud Asgard.

“Aiyah! Even though Little Cheche didn't know about the Devil Sword Conference, he does indeed know about the Eternal Night Royal Family and the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. Ah, but it's to be expected, Little Cheche has such a powerful master, so how many things in this world would Little Cheche be unaware of?”



Outside of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, there were very few people who knew the name “Eternal Night Royal Family”, and there were practically no outsiders who knew about the “Heavenly Sin Divine Sword”.

Yun Che slightly shook his head. “This junior has only heard of it before, and I know very little about it. I was hoping that Senior Ji could enlighten me regarding a few of these details.”

Ji Qianrou slightly narrowed

his eyes before speaking in a casual and relaxed manner, “Regarding the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, even though very few people knew of its name even a millenia ago, it was a name that everyone who was from a Sacred Ground knew about. It is the only Monarch sword in the entire Profound Sky Continent; the lone monarch of all swords. No one knew of its origin, and the only thing that we knew is that it was a divine sword that the Eternal Night Royal Family had been guarding for generations. No one knew why it was being protected either; even within the Eternal Night Royal Family, there were a scant few people

who knew the answers to these secrets.”

“Other than that, from the moment the existence of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword had been exposed to the world, no one had ever seen it being used before. Perhaps it was too superior a weapon, so no one under this sky could wield it. And one thousand years ago, when the Eternal Night Royal Family was destroyed by the combined might of the Four Great Sacred Grounds for committing that grave, unforgivable sin, the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword disappeared

without a trace, and not a single clue regarding it could be found for a whole thousand years. However, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region recently found a strange sword in some barren wasteland by pure chance, and they confirmed that it was the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword that had been missing for a millenia.”

Yun Che, “...”

Three years ago, Feng Qianhui had told him that the Frozen Cloud Ancestor had confirmed that the Eternal Night Royal

Family had been deliberately and maliciously framed of their crimes by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. And the entire purpose of that was to get their hands on the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. Moreover, that same Heavenly Sin Divine Sword just so happened to disappear after the destruction of the Eternal Night Royal Family. It was extremely likely that it actually fell into the hands of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region all along.

However, when it came to a matter regarding a Sacred Ground, it would definitely be

concealed heavily by the Four Sacred Grounds... With Mighty Heavenly Sword Region exerting the most effort in this regard, it was actually quite remarkable that the Frozen Cloud Ancestor would be able to know about what had happened in such exquisite detail... When Yun Che thought about it, it completely mystified him.

“And this Devil Sword Conference is being held because Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is not willing to monopolize the only Monarch-grade weapon in the Profound Sky Continent, so they suggested that all the

heroes of the realm gather at Supreme Ocean Palace so that we could explore the secrets of the divine sword together.”

“Ah... so that is how it is.” Yun Che gave a slight nod of his head before replying with a bland smile, “This junior has long ago heard that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region cultivated the sword as their path, and their obsession with swords exceeded their regard for life, so they would spend their entire lives pursuing an ever-stronger sword and pushing the boundaries of the way of the sword. So I would have never thought that Mighty

Heavenly Sword Region, the ones who found the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword by chance, would actually not monopolize the strongest sword in the world. Instead, they announced it to the whole world, to the point where they even invited all of the heroes of the realm to share in their spoils. And to express their sincerity, they actually specially arranged for the location to be at Supreme Ocean Palace instead of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. It is truly the sacred land of swords, and this boundless and selfless generosity and fair-thinking simply leaves this junior in complete awe.”



How would Ji Qianrou fail to see that Yun Che was clearly calling into question that intentions of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, and that his words even contained a concealed mockery. His eyes narrowed once more as he let out a laugh, “Little Cheche, you shouldn’t betray the amazing goodwill of our friends from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, so I’m definitely expecting to see you there. And if Little Cheche truly holds no interest in the Devil Sword Conference, let this one, who also holds no interest in it, bring you on a tour to see all the amazing sights along the

ocean.”

“Thank you for your kind intentions, Senior Ji,” Yun Che said as he smiled. He was indeed rather curious about the Devil Sword Conference, but he did not really hold much interest in it. Especially after Ji Qianrou told him about the details regarding the conference; the moment he heard those words, he smelled a rat, so he had a feeling that nothing good would come from participating in this event.

Moreover, the real reason for his visit to Supreme Ocean Palace was to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower!

As for the Devil Sword Conference... he had not even decided whether he would make an appearance there at all. After all, the less he associated with the Sacred Grounds, the better. Even though Ye Xinghan still hated him to the bones, because of the existence of the “Master” that he had fabricated out of thin air, and the fact that one elder and many other protectorates had died at Frozen Cloud Asgard, Sun Moon Divine

Hall would not dare to make a move against him... However, the more he interacted with the Sacred Grounds, the easier it was for chinks to appear in his armor.

Once it was discovered that the so-called “Master” did not exist, then there would be a calamitous result awaiting him.

Furthermore... the last few words that Zi Ji had said before he had left the Black Moon Merchant Guild caused him to become extremely vigilant.

“Senior Ji, this junior has a question. Just what kind of powers would have the qualification to participate in the Devil Sword Conference?” Yun Che asked.

“Every power that has a profound practitioner at the Tyrant Profound Realm has received an invitation,” Ji Qianrou casually said, “And most of these powers would come from the Divine Phoenix Nation, because the other six countries had very few of them.”

“So that is to say that the Divine Phoenix Sect will also be participating,” Yun Che muttered rather softly.

“Hehehe, naturally, they are as well,” Ji Qianrou replied as he let out a feminine laugh, “Right now, the entire world knows that the Divine Phoenix Sect has delivered Princess Snow into Little Cheche’s hands in order to appease his wrath. So if Little Cheche wants to bring Princess Snow along with him when the times comes, that would simply be delightful. And just based on

the invitation that you have received from this one, you can bring along ninety-nine other people as well.”

“Oh, right! There is also someone else who has received a special invitation,” Ji Qianrou looked at Yun Che’s face as he said this, “That person also comes from the Blue Wind Nation, and you should be very familiar with his name indeed....”

“Fen Juechen.”

“Him?” Yun Che’s brows jumped up fiercely. “Why are you inviting him?”

“Because he is even more powerful than the current Little Cheche,” Ji Qianrou said as a strange light shone in his eyes. “And from the moment he appeared, the Four Sacred Grounds have always had a very great deal of interest in him, almost as much as they have for Little Cheche.”

“A little weakling who was only at the Spirit Profound Realm



disappears for two years and reappears possessing the power of a Monarch. He is a monster who is even scarier than Little Cheche himself. This one is also extremely interested in him. Moreover, he accepted the invitation... so Little Cheche, you had better be on your guard when the time comes, because anyone who has investigated Fen Juechen knows that the one thing he desires the most is to kill you.”

“Senior Ji, thank you for your warning,” Yun Che said with a bland laugh, but suspicion surged and welled in his heart...

The Four Great Sacred Grounds being interested in Fen Juechen was completely unexpected, but given Fen Juechen's temperament, why would he be willing to participate in this strange Devil Sword Conference?

“Alright, this one's mission is done, so it is about time for me to return. One hundred days from now, you must definitely remember to come.” After saying this, Ji Qianrou's arm swished as he turned around to leave.

Yun Che called out to him, "This should be the first time that Senior Ji has ever visited Frozen Cloud Asgard, so at least let this junior show you some courtesy before you leave."

"There's no need for that. I heard that Frozen Cloud Asgard is filled with women, and I happen to hate things like women the most. This one has no interest in it whatsoever. Being able to see Little Cheche again has already left me completely satisfied."

With a wave of his hand, the flower petals that filled the sky floated downwards and carried Ji Qianrou far away; he very quickly disappeared amidst the shining snow.

Yun Che did not immediately return to Frozen Cloud Asgard once Ji Qianrou left. Instead, he stood there, completely lost in thought.

Devil      Sword      Conference...  
Eternal Night Royal Family...  
Heavenly Sin Divine Sword...  
Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

“What are you thinking about?” Jasmine asked.

Yun Che’s brows arched as he let out a deep sigh, “It’s very clear that Feng Qianhui’s tale was indeed accurate. The Heavenly Sin Divine Sword which disappeared for a thousand years had indeed always been in the possession of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. This is because there is no way Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would be willing to reveal the existence of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword if they had just

acquired it.”

“And now that they have taken the initiative to reveal the existence of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword and arrange this Devil Sword Conference, it is extremely likely that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was unable to find a way to control the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword in the past thousand years. These thousand years have completely worn their patience, so they decided to invite all of the strongest individuals under heaven to explore its secrets together.”

“There is another possible reason as well,” Jasmine said blandly, “And that is that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region has indeed found a way to unlock the secrets of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, but they are unable to do so using their own power, so they are using the ‘Devil Sword Conference’ to gather as much power as possible.”

“There’s also this possibility.”

The deaths of his grandfather

Yun Canghai and the Demon Emperor, the tragedy of the Xiao Family, the revenge of his parents, the resentment of the Little Demon Empress... all of this was intimately related to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. And the destruction of the Eternal Night Royal Family was also due to the selfish schemes of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Yun Che exhaled heavily before speaking in a low voice, "I originally thought that there would be nothing to be worried about since this Devil Sword Conference was being held at Supreme Ocean Palace. But since it actually originates from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... then I'll have to be



cautious.”

As of this moment, Yun Che had only ever come into contact with one person from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, Ling Kun. From his knowledge and experience, the only impressions that he got from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was that of danger, evil, ambition, and despicable ruthlessness.

“Hmph, you’ll know once the time comes. And as for any possible evil scheme or danger...” Jasmine said with a

voice filled with disdain, “You do not need to be too worried about it, because at that time, the devilish poison in my soul will be completely cleansed away! And let’s not even talk about a mere Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, even if all of the so-called Four Great Sacred Grounds banded together... I would only need to lift my finger to slaughter the lot of them!”

Yun Che, “...”

“And if I want you to die, it will be exactly the same!” Jasmine

very deliberately said right after.

# Chapter 741 – Jasmine That Escaped From The Devilish Nightmare

---

Demon Imperial City, Illusory  
Demon Realm.

Three months had already passed since Yun Che brought Xiao Yun and the Under Heaven siblings away from the Illusory Demon Realm.

In the period of three months, the bloodshed in Demon Imperial City gradually stopped,

and an unseen peace that had never been seen before in a hundred years began to appear. The Little Demon Empress had also become the absolute supreme existence in the entire Illusory Demon Realm; no one dared to go against her, and no one could go against her.

“...The last heretical disciples have already been found at the south of the city and were executed. The nineteen heretical disciples placed here by the Profound Sky Continent have all been removed! Out of the nineteen, eleven of them came from Supreme Ocean Palace, one

of the Sacred Grounds, and the other eight came from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.”

Within the great hall, Mu Yubai kneeled on one knee and respectfully reported to the Little Demon Empress. The reason why they knew it was nineteen was through the Yun Family’s Profound Handle Soul Search. After finding the first one, they were able to know their exact number, their purpose, the approximate location of the others, how they arrived, as well as what they did.

The Little Demon Empress wore a pure golden dress with purple crystals decorating her hair. There was a glowing red ribbon tied around her waist, and her entire body released an air of luxury and solemnity. Her snow white face was beyond beautiful despite not having any makeup on, her lips were like cherry petals, and her eyes were like the cold stars; although the former silence and power weren't there anymore, her eyes were still cold. No one would doubt that if these pretty eyes could smile, it would be able to charm anything, and perhaps captivate the entire world.

However, the softness of her beautiful eyes would only blossom for Yun Che.

“Directly executed? This is the last heretical disciple, was the Profound Handle Soul Search performed?” the Little Demon Empress asked. Her cold eyes seemed to have caught onto the abnormality in Mu Yubai’s eyes.

“In reply to the Little Demon Empress, before he was executed, the Profound Handle Soul Search has been conducted,” Mu Yubai



momentarily paused, revealing worry on his face. "From what he said, we acquired bad news."

"Speak." The Little Demon Empress's beautiful face, which could not be described with words, was full of coldness and stunning solemnity, lacking any sort of expression.

Mu Yubai cautiously said, "These heretical disciples from the Profound Sky Continent carried an extremely special kind of sound transmission stone. Sealed within it was an

extremely powerful sound transmission profound formation which allowed them to directly transmit sound from our Illusory Demon Realm to the Profound Sky Continent. This sort of sound transmission stone is extremely rare and valuable, and it would use up all the profound energy in one go. When we executed the eleven people from Supreme Ocean Palace, according to the Profound Handle Soul Search, in total, they brought seven of this kind of special sound transmission stones and consumed them all in a year and three months prior. The last message they sent to the Profound Sky Continent was

before the Demon Empress Ceremony had begun.”

“You have said this several months before. Why are you mentioning it once again? Were the sound transmission stones from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region not used up?” The Little Demon Empress’s frowned slightly.

“Yes.” Mu Yubai nodded, his tense eyebrows did not relax. “The eight people from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region only brought three sound

transmission stones, but after a hundred years, they only used two. As for the last one... it was used three months ago!”

“What!?” The Little Demon Empress’s expression immediately turned sullen; she clearly knew what this meant.

“Furthermore, it was unfortunate that... in the final sound transmission, that person emphasized on things about Yun Che! It was extremely thorough... Including his identity as a son of the Yun

Family, that he came from the  
Profound Sky Continent,  
brought back the Demon  
Emperor's remains from Blue  
Wind Nation, stopped Duke  
Huai's revolution, received the  
Golden Crow's legacy, and  
married the Little Demon  
Empress... It was all transmitted  
back to the Profound Sky  
Continent!!”

These things weren't some kind  
of secret in the Illusory Demon  
Realm; in fact, it could be said  
that everyone knew about it!  
Within the Illusory Demon  
Realm, everyone knew the Little  
Demon Empress like everyone

knew about the first Demon Emperor in the Illusory Demon Realm's history!

The Little Demon Empress's cold gaze became even more icy and penetrating, causing Mu Yubai's body to freeze as he found it hard to breath. After quite a while, he finally managed to breath as he continued, "This means that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region must have already deduced Che'er's identity. He is in... danger in the Profound Sky Continent! Although Che'er is extremely talented and breaks through the higher realms at a godly speed, it would still be

impossible for him to be an opponent for the sacred grounds.”

“...” The Little Demon Empress knew about the existence of the Primordial Profound Ark on Yun Che; by using it, no matter how big the danger he found himself in, he could immediately leave, so he should not meet any fatal danger. However, it was impossible for her to relax completely... Her royal father had found his demise in the hands of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. The deaths of Yun Canghai and the Yun Family’s ancestors were also

caused by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's "Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation". A single Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was already so terrifying; once Yun Che's identity was exposed on the Profound Sky Continent, what he had to face was not merely a Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. As for the results... it would pretty much be the entire Profound Sky Continent as his enemy!

"Did that heretical disciple mention the Mirror of Samsara when he was transmitting sound?" the Little Demon Empress asked in a low voice.



“He also said that!” Only now did Mu Yubai notice that he missed a crucial point, his expression changed once more as he said while clenching his teeth, “...The day of the Little Demon Empress’s marriage, she had once declared to use the Demon Emperor’s most treasured Mirror of Samsara as the betrothal gift... He managed to completely transmit this sentence over... Drats!”

“This is indeed an extremely bad news.” The Little Demon Empress turned her head

around in order to prevent Mu Yubai from seeing the worry in her cold eyes. On the Demon Empress Ceremony, everyone found out the the long lost Mirror of Samsara was with Yun Che, but after he returned the Demon Emperor's Seal, he did not mention about returning the Mirror of Samsara. The Little Demon Empress had mentioned it thrice, yet he still refused to give it back; in the end, she just announced that she would use the Mirror of Samsara as a betrothal gift.... After all, Yun Che, who married her, would also count as one of the Demon Emperor Clan.

Although the Mirror of Samsara was the treasure guarded by every generation of the Demon Emperor Clan, no one ever knew the use of it, nor how to use it.

However, the Profound Sky Continent... would go crazy for the Mirror of Samsara! Back then, the disaster of the Illusory Demons caused by Duke Ming's ploy was due to the Mirror of Samsara! It all started with the Mirror of Samsara!

After Mighty Heavenly Sword

Region discovered the possibility that the Mirror of Samsara was with Yun Che, they might not expose Yun Che's identity in public; they would find a chance to take the Mirror of Samsara for themselves... However, this did not allow the Little Demon Empress to relax at all, because she was thinking of something even more terrifying:

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was knowledgeable about Yun Che's identity... Yet, Yun Che did not know that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region knew his identity!

“How long will it take before the Yun Family’s Space Splitting Ring can recover its power?” The Little Demon Empress suddenly turned around and asked with an ice-cold voice.

“The entire Yun Family is also worried about Yun Che’s safety, so they did not spare to use all of the Purple Veined Divine Crystals that they got before in order for the Space Splitting Ring to recover its power. Even so, for it to fully recover, it would take three months at the least, and six months at the longest...

The Space Splitting Ring was the secret weapon that the Yun Qinghong couple used to sneak onto the Profound Sky Continent.

“Three months...” Clearly, the Little Demon Empress was very dissatisfied with this time. Her eyes flashed, then she suddenly said, “How goes the search for Duke Ming’s trace?”

“It’s a shame, but we have not made any progress in this month, we will definitely...”

“This empress will give you three more months!” The Little Demon Empress coldly interrupted Mu Yubai’s speech. “Within three months, you must find where Duke Ming is hiding! However, do not attack so hastily like the last few times, you must first report it to this empress as soon as possible! Although Duke Ming is heavily injured, he still cannot be handled by normal people! You just need to find out where he is hiding, this empress will personally take his life!”

From the jade strips recording the 【Fallen Flame Devil Arts】 the Little Demon Empress found underneath Duke Huai Palace, she had already understood the blood escape technique that Duke Ming used to escape back then. Once Duke Ming fell into her hands, even if he disregarded the cost of using blood escape, he would not be able to escape.

“If you still failed to find Duke Ming’s location within these three months, then each of you shall break off a finger as punishment!”



Mu Yubai's body shuddered as he said in a panic, "Yubai has been incapable, Little Demon Empress, please do not get angry... Within three months, Yubai will definitely not disappoint the Little Demon Empress once again."

"Go... Get Yun Qinghong to meet this empress quickly!" The Little Demon Empress turned around with her back facing Mu Yubai. A heavy atmosphere that was beyond pressurizing filled the entire hall, causing Mu Yubai to not even dare to breathe.

“Understood!”

Mu Yubai directly walked out of the hall, and only then did he take a deep breath. He used his palm to touch his forehead, only to realize that it was covered by cold sweat.

“Phew... You’re still my niece-in-law, you know,” Mu Yubai muttered, feeling aggrieved, then left carefully with light steps.

At the same time, on the

Profound Sky Continent, within the Frozen Cloud Divine Hall.

It was already bright in the early morning. Before this time, Yun Che was already using the Overlord Pellet to help the Frozen Cloud girls to raise their profound energy level. At this moment, Yun Che was still lying on the ice bed where Chu Yuechan had slept on for several years. His eyes were still closed, as if he was still in deep sleep.

At this moment, there was suddenly a red flash beside him;

a petite young girl with red hair and red cloths appeared. Her face was cold, and her eyes shone with a strange light.

Yun Che opened his eyes and sat up, “Jasmine, why did you come out?”

“Today is the day of your promised battle with Fen Juechen, you can’t have forgotten it, right?” Jasmine raised her thin eyebrow and spoke in an indifferent tone.

“Of course I didn’t. That’s why I’m still resting my strength,” Yun Che said with a carefree expression.

“It looks like you’re not worried at all. I already reminded you that his profound energy must have immensely increased from three months ago... Hmph, never mind, before that, there’s a good news, do you want to hear it?”

“Good news?” Just as Yun Che was about to ask, he suddenly noticed that the purifying aura

of the Sky Poison Pearl was no longer in Jasmine's body. He instantly moved forward and said in surprise, "Could it be... that all of the devilish poison on your body has been purified?"

"That's right, all of it!" Jasmine turned her face, but Yun Che had still seen the way the corner of her lips moved upwards... However, she was not smiling coldly this time; it was very faint, yet it was a true faint smile!

If he carefully calculated it,

from him and Jasmine's meeting till now, six years and ten months had already passed.

Yet, this was his first time seeing Jasmine's true smile... even though it was very slight and very temporary.

“That's great!!” Yun Che let out a quiet cheer. His joy was from his lungs, from his soul. Not because she would be able provide him with great help after getting rid of the nightmare of the devilish poison, but it was merely

because she had escaped from the nightmare of the devilish poison.

“As expected of the Sky Poison Pearl, even this type of devilish poison that had the name of ‘god slaying’ was completely purified. When I found myself getting poisoned by this type of poison, I thought I was dead for sure,” Jasmine spoke in a hushed tone as she looked at her palms. Now, her soul was as pure as it was from the start; there was no sense of the Absolute God Slaying Poison at all. She was far clearer about the terrors of this type of poison... Even



primordial true gods would all eventually lose their lives after getting struck by this sort of poison.

However, she lived, and she had even completely purified the Absolute God Slaying Poison. Furthermore, she had used not even seven years worth of time.

“Hey... it was clearly my effort alright? It was fortunate that I picked up you that night behind the Xiao household and coincidentally had the Sky Poison Pearl on me, otherwise...

ahem,” Yun Che said with indignation.

Jasmine sneered and spoke in disdain, “Hmph, if you didn’t meet me, even if you didn’t die a thousand times, you would have still died eight hundred times!”

“...” Yun Che was unable to reply.

“There’s another thing that I can pretty much tell you now.” Jasmine lifted her delicate cheeks which were even more

delicate than a clay doll's and said with a hint of pride, "Back then, when I claimed to have sealed my profound energy... It's actually false!"

After Jasmine finished, she waited for Yun Che to reveal a shocked or crazed expression, however, after hearing what she said, Yun Che merely looked at her in silence then nodded. "Oh, I knew."

"You knew?" The shocked person became Jasmine. "When did you know?"

“It was approximately the time on the Primordial Profound Ark.” Yun Che rested both of his hands behind his head and leaned onto the ice wall, then he softly said, “During the eighteen months that the Primordial Profound Ark withstood the spatial storm, every time my body and spirit was about to collapse, the spatial storm would suddenly slow down and allow me to have a short time to catch my breath... For eighteen months, the period of time that I could withstand it increased, but every single time, it would slow down at the point where I was about to collapse; there was not

even one exception.”

“During those eighteen months, all of my efforts was spent on surviving, and I couldn’t spare any of it to think about anything else. After the spatial storm stopped, I thought back to that eighteen months, then I started to suspect that you must have interfered with the spatial storm. That’s because it was impossible for there to be eighteen months of coincidences, not to mention that you and I shared the same body, thus you would be able to clearly feel when I would reach the breaking point.”

“...Then why didn’t you point it out?” Jasmine looked at Yun Che in confusion. She did interfere with the spatial storm, and the Primordial Profound Ark stopping at the Illusory Demon Realm was also due to her accidentally interfering with the Primordial Profound Ark’s tracks. “You didn’t seem to have even thought about borrowing my power when you met Duke Ming in Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley, even when you got pushed to a desperate situation and nearly died in his hands!”

“That’s because I know the reason why you are doing this. I knew that you didn’t want me to subconsciously rely on you, which would, in turn, affect my growth severely. Furthermore... I was only guessing. I have always worked hard to tell and hint at myself that it was only a guess, thus I had to use my full power and rely on myself in any situation, instead of relying on your ‘power that might have not been sealed’—it’s that simple.”

Jasmine, “...”

Jasmine's pink cheeks puffed up. Yun Che might not even see her cute look of annoyance once every three years; just as he was about to tease her, he suddenly thought of something. He momentarily blanked, then he leaped up. His upper body directly leaped in front of Jasmine as he asked in extreme anxiety, "Jasmine! All of the devilish poison has been purified, does that mean that you can use your power as you please? Quick... Help me search for Little Fairy's location! This was something you promise me at the start!"



# Chapter 742 – Day Of The Promised Battle

---

“Alright!” Jasmine wrapped her arms in front of her chest and nodded. She already knew that the first thing Yun Che would think of after learning that her devilish poison had been purified would be to use her power to find the location of Chu Yuechan. That was precisely the reason she appeared in front of Yun Che right now.

She knew more clearly than anyone how Chu Yuechan had always been a thorn in the

depths of his soul. Every time it was touched, his heart would hurt. Since the devilish poison has been purified, she should help him pluck this thorn quickly.

“Although I am currently a soul form and can only use a thousandth of my complete form’s power, it is enough for my mind to cover a puny Profound Sky Continent.”

With that, Jasmine put a small hand on Yun Che’s sleeve. Before Yun Che could say anything, he

felt a flash in front of his eyes, and a snow white region appeared before his eyes. It looked like he was already over three hundred meters from the ground.

Yun Che momentarily blanked before realizing that he had been transported from the ice chamber to such a height in an instant. He had actually travelled through space so quickly.

Or perhaps... this actually was space travel.

“I need two hundred breaths of time, so don’t disturb me. Also... Black Moon Merchant Guild’s previous reply to your inquiry should have given you enough mental preparation. You must accept the result no matter what it is!”

Jasmine stretched out her arms and slowly closed her eyes. A layer of invisible power that was so great that Yun Che couldn’t even sense or understand was released. It surrounded the area... and then the entire Profound Sky Continent.

In the blink of an eye, the aura of all living things on the Profound Sky Continent was within her mind; nothing was able to escape her.

Yun Che retracted his profound energy and held his breath, not daring to make any sound at all. At the same time, he found it difficult to calm down from the shock and excitement in his heart. What shocked him the most was what Jasmine had just said: her soul form could only use a thousandth of the power of her complete form!

This meant that all of the power Jasmine had displayed up to this point was under the limitation of not having a complete body, and being only in her soul form, she had only displayed a mere thousandth of her full power!

Just how terrifyingly powerful was her true power?!

And just how terrifying of an existence was that world where she grew up in?!

It was unfathomable!

Yun Che couldn't understand what sort of concept it was for her to have her mind cover an entire continent. He could only sense that Jasmine was concentrating hard, so he tried his best to suppress his deepest wishes and anxiety in order to prevent himself from making a sound.

Little Fairy... You have to be safe!

No... You must be safe! You are just living in a place that the Black Moon Merchant Guild cannot find. I'll immediately come and find you... And our child.

This time, no matter who it is , even if the entire world objects, I will never let you leave my side again.

With each passing breath of time, Yun Che's anxiety increased. When he could almost no longer bear it, he saw



Jasmine slowly open her eyes and put down her raised arms.

Yun Che's heart shook as he held his breath and asked anxiously, "How is it? Did you find her? Where is the Little Fairy? Also, did you find Qingyue?"

Jasmine just looked at him with emotionless eyes. After a moment, she said, "No. I underestimated the number of living things in Profound Sky Continent. Furthermore, I am currently in a soul form, so the

power I can use is far lower than what I expected. It seems like we will have to wait until I can reconstruct my body before I can help you find your Little Fairy.”

Obvious disappointment flashed across Yun Che’s face, but he quickly relaxed, “Alright... We’ll go to Supreme Ocean Palace two months later and get that Netherworld Udumbara Flower no matter what!

“Hopefully. However, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower

only blooms once every twenty-four years. The place that Zi Ji described sounds quite strange, so I don't have much hope," Jasmine said plainly as she looked away without meeting Yun Che's gaze.

"Hm?" Yun Che stared at Jasmine for a short while, then he suddenly smiled. "That's strange, you were always so anxious to reconstruct your body. Now that we only lack one Netherworld Udumbara Flower, why does it seem like you're no longer that anxious? It can't be that... you are reluctant to leave me, right?"

Jasmine looked sideways and laughed coldly. “It’s the opposite. This princess wants to leave you, the contemptible, shameless, dirty, super pervert even in my dreams, so you will stop polluting my eyes and ears. Hmmp!!”

With a cold snort, Jasmine stopped caring about him. She turned into a red light and returned to the Sky Poison Pearl. However, not before she reminded him, “You should go to the Eastern Ocean to have your final battle with Fen

Juechen! In these three months, you didn't listen to me in stealing Feng Xue'er's phoenix vital yin. I do wish to see how you're going to defeat Fen Juechen who is going to be far stronger than he was three months ago!"

.....

After returning to the world of the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine frowned and did not let her expression relax for a long time. A layer of sullenness also covered her snow white face.

After shouting that one last thing to Yun Che, she let out a quiet sigh as mixed emotions flashed through her eyes.

“Crunch...” Hong’er was quite happily eating on a sword that she was holding and had gotten from who knows where. When she saw Jasmine’s appearance, she stopped chewing and got closer to Jasmine. “Big Sis Jasmine, what’s wrong? You were clearly very happy just now, so why do you seem unhappy now? Did master bully you... Oh, no, never mind. Master has always been bullied by you, he doesn’t dare to bully

you.” She said.

Jasmine leaned on Hong’er’s bed and sat down, then she closed her eyes slowly as she muttered, “Couldn’t find...”

“Couldn’t find? Oh? Couldn’t find what? Is it something delicious?”  
Hong’er concentrated a lot.

“A person very important for your master,” Every time Jasmine thought about Yun Che’s intense reaction to Chu

Yuechan's situation, she would frown even more. She clearly understood that Yun Che felt love, as well as intense care and worry, for Chu Yuechan...

Seeing Yun Che suffer at the hands of women was one of Jasmine's greatest joy; if there was a day that Yun Che was going to be stabbed multiple times by a woman that he was about to extend his fiendish hands to, she would be smug. However, because this was Chu Yuechan, she couldn't bear to tell him the truth.



“Important... person? Oh!”  
Hearing that it wasn’t something delicious, Hong’er instantly lost all interest and just stopped asking. She grabbed ahold of the broadsword flashing with purple light in her hands and bit down. A tidy bite-mark appeared was left on the sword.

“It looks like I can only temporarily hide it,” Jasmine muttered quietly to herself. “But why couldn’t I even find Xia Qinyue’s scent?”

“Could it be that teleportation formation in Frozen End Divine Hall...?”

---

It was already mid morning and the time of Yun Che and Fen Juechen’s promised battle was approaching.

Not only had Fen Juechen’s profound energy become beyond terrifying, he also hated Yun Che to the bone. His greatest wish for the remainder of his

life was to kill Yun Che. However, Yun Che was not nervous at all. Only when he had less than an hour until the promise battle did Yun Che ride the Primordial Profound Ark with Feng Xue'er to Floating Cloud City.

The Primordial Profound Ark arrived not above Floating Cloud City, but, the eastern suburbs of Floating Cloud City instead.

After leaving the Primordial Profound Ark, Feng Xue'er held the corner of Yun Che's clothes

tightly in her hands and said with an intimate expression, "Big Brother Yun, can I really not go with you? I'm... still really worried."

"I told you, I'll be fine." Yun Che smiled casually. "I said that it was a one-on-one battle with Fen Juechen, so there should definitely be no one else there. Furthermore, even if I can't beat him, I still have the Primordial Profound Ark, so I can escape really far away at anytime. That's why you don't need to worry at all... What's more, I have absolute confidence in defeating him."

“Mn... Of course I believe Big Brother Yun.” Feng Xue’er nodded lightly, however her eyes still revealed deep worry.

“Alright, go to Grandfather and Little Aunt. I might not be able to return until after dark, so tell them not to worry at all. I will try to move the place where we fight further away, but the residue impact might still hit Floating Cloud City, so I’ll need Xue’er to protect them.” Yun Che patted Feng Xue’er’s hands. From the beginning, he had not planned to see Xiao Lie and Xiao

Lingxi before the fight, as that would only increase their worry.

“Also, if Little Aunt is determined to find me, you definitely can’t let her,” Yun Che reminded her.

“Mn, I know. Don’t worry, Big Brother Yun, nothing will happen to any of them with me here,” Feng Xue’er softly said.

With Feng Xue’er’s strength as a Monarch in the eighth level, even if Yun Che, Fen Juechen,

and Xia Yuanba worked together , they wouldn't be her opponent at all. Naturally, Yun Che didn't have to worry with her at Xiao Lingxi and Xiao Lie's side.

“Then I'll be off... I'll definitely be back before it gets completely dark. Be obedient and wait for me.”

Yun Che cupped Feng Xue'er's face and kissed her deeply. After that, he activated the Extreme Mirage Lightning, instantly becoming a ray of lightning that shot toward the east.

“Big Brother Yun...” As Feng Xue’er looked at Yun Che’s fleeting image, she nervously clasped her hands together in front of her. Only after a long while did she turn around and fly very slowly towards Floating Cloud City.

With his current strength, coupled with the Extreme Mirage Lightning, a distance of several hundred kilometers was nothing to Yun Che. He flew over the territory of Floating Cloud City and through a piece of wetland, then soon after,



Profound Sky's Eastern Ocean coastline came into sight. Yun Che immediately accelerated once more and got further and further away from Floating Cloud City.

Within thousands of miles, there were no clouds or winds, and the Eastern Ocean was also very calm. There was only a ripple on the surface of the ocean. As the coastline neared, an intense smell of the ocean filled the air. Yun Che closed his eyes and inhaled; when he opened his eyes, a blue ocean entered his line of sight.

He had arrived on top of the East Ocean.

At this moment, Yun Che also decelerated until he stopped. There was a black and lonely figure floating in front of him; it was unknown how long the figure had been there. That figure's entire body released a lifeless aura and a bone-piercing cold. Aside from that, it didn't possess the sense of life that a living person would have... It was as if the person floating there was not a living person, but a corpse.

Even the ocean underneath him was completely silent without any ripples, as if it was dead water that had been robbed of life.

“It looks like you have arrived rather early.” Yun Che stopped several hundred meters behind him and smiled faintly. The aura on Fen Juechen was extremely dark and evil; it was enough to induce terror in any other person that got close to him, but it was not enough to affect Yun Che.

When the black-clothed figure turned around, a pair of pitch black eyes focused on Yun Che. His expression was stiff and pale, while his eyes were lifeless without any light. In merely an instant, dense, rampaging murderous aura and killing intent that was extremely evil locked onto Yun Che. The pair of pitch black eyes released out a light that was so dark that it seemed to form into two swords that would rip Yun Che's body apart.

“You actually dared to come by

yourself!” Fen Juechen sullenly said. There were no other things here, so he could release his hatred and killing intent towards Yun Che as much as he wanted.

“How else would I come?” Yun Che had his hands across his chest, while his face clearly showed an expression of despise. “When I slaughtered your entire Burning Heaven Clan by myself back then, I was alone. Now, I only need to deal with you, a pitiful insect that I mercifully let go back then. Why would I need some sort of a helper?”

“You are courting... death!!!”

Yun Che's words undoubtedly caused Fen Juechen's anger and killing intent to explode out. He roared like a wild beast as his right arm rushed out. A large pitch black hand reached out from the sky and grabbed at Yun Che. In the area that the large pitch black hand covered, the sea level instantly lowered by several meters.

Yun Che squinted his eyes; his figure blinked as he dodged the

large pitch black hand with Star  
God's Broken Shadow.  
Afterwards, he laughed coldly,  
"You were enraged to this extent  
by a simple sentence. It seems  
like, despite your profound  
energy increasing quite a bit  
these past few years, your mind  
did not. What right do you, who  
is like this, have to defeat me?"

Boom—————

With a loud and extremely deep  
roar, an enormous whirlpool  
emerged below Yun Che,  
producing a flurried sea breeze.

Fen Juechen's eyes transformed into bloody demon eyes as the aura around his body became even more violent, "You——"

"We're still not that far from Floating Cloud City. You don't want want our fight to affect Floating Cloud City, right?" Yun Che's sentence shut Fen Juechen up. "You don't want others to notice and come disturb our fight to the death either, right? Let's pick a more suitable place."

With that, Yun Che flew



towards the deeper area of the Eastern Ocean without waiting for Fen Juechen's reply.

Fen Juechen continued to keep Yun Che in his sight, however he didn't not attack again. He merely followed closely behind Yun Che and flew towards the east. His speed was no worse than Yun Che's Extreme Mirage Lightning.

“Jasmine, just what profound energy level is he at right now? I can clearly feel that his aura is much stronger than three

months ago,” Yun Che cautiously asked.

“Sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!” Jasmine said coldly. “He is the same level as the Feng Tianwei that caused you to flee in an unsightly manner at Divine Phoenix Sect! Although his profound energy is not as dense as Feng Tianwei’s, his profound art is special. Overall, he might even be slightly stronger than Feng Tianwei! Let’s see how you handle it!”

“Wow... That’s insane!!”  
Although Yun Che had prepared himself mentally, he still took a deep breath.

Three months ago, Fen Juechen was only at the fifth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Even with a force that had as much resources as the Sacred Grounds or the Guardian Families, an increase in a small level of the Sovereign Profound Realm would still take a hundred years or several hundred years. Even if his talent

was absurd, that would still take several tens of years.

However, Fen Juechen merely used three months!

“Just what is going on with his absurd power and growth?!” Yun Che muttered softly.

“When you fight, try to force him to go all out as much as possible. As long as he uses his source of power, I might be able to figure him out... Including the soul he fused with!”

# Chapter 743 – Illusory Devil Tome Of Eternal Night?

---

The two of them, one chasing after the other, moved deep into the sacred region with a speed that no mere mortal could ever comprehend.

In order to prevent the clash of their profound energy from afflicting Floating Cloud City, Yun Che tried his best to increase the distance. From fifty kilometers to a hundred kilometers, and then to a

hundred and fifty kilometers...  
When he looked back, the  
coastline had already  
disappeared from his sight.

Yun Che finally stopped after  
an entire three hundred  
kilometers.

They arrived at an archipelago.  
Within his line of sight, there  
was a large number of reefs and  
small islands scattered all over  
like stars in the sky or chess  
pieces on a chessboard. In this  
place, the ocean breeze was no  
longer gentle. The waves below

them were surging and the wind was whizzing past their ears. Their hair was completely blown into a mess, and their clothes were flapping.

“Let’s fight here..” Yun Che turned around to face Fen Juechen. In this place, he could release all of his strength without restraint.

“You found yourself a pretty nice grave!” The whites of Fen Juechen’s eyes almost disappeared as his eyes released a devilish, sinister light. On the

way here, his murderous aura and killing intent had completely locked on Yun Che, not diminishing one bit throughout the journey. This made Yun Che, who had been flying in the front, feel that there had been a pitch-black knife hanging at the back of his heart the entire time.

“Looks like you are very confident in killing me today.” Yun Che’s hair tie had already been blown loose. His black hair was wildly fluttering in the air under the rush of the strong ocean breeze, revealing grace and elegance completely



different from Fen Juechen's somber aura.

“There were seventy thousand people within my Burning Heaven Clan... My father, my master, my grandfather... they were all killed by you! The enmity between us and my hatred towards you is an irreconcilable gulf! I've experienced hell that you can never imagine just so I can kill you!”

“One reason that I am still trying to stay alive until now is

to rip you into tens of thousands of pieces! Today, not only will I make you pay for your blood debt, but I will also make you taste all the pain that I have suffered!!”

Fen Juechen roared; the expression on his face was terrifyingly ferocious, and the black energy surrounding him was moving restlessly.

“An unimaginable hell?” Yun Che scoffed, “There is no one worthy enough to mention ‘hell’ in front of me yet, not even you!”

The people that I have killed in my life is a lot more than the people that you have seen in your life. I've almost forgotten about the small Burning Heaven Clan with a mere population of seventy thousand people. Only, back then, when I killed people, I would eliminate them completely to spare all later trouble."

"As for you, if it wasn't for Little Aunt who asked to spare your life, your bones would have already been eroded into dust by now. Not only do you not thank me for sparing your life and cherish the life that I granted

you, you came with some odd confidence claiming that you're going to kill me. Hahahaha, haven't seen you for several years, but you haven't grown or improved at all. You are still on your high horse, just an arrogant, prideful, poor fool!"

Mn? One of the reasons that he is staying alive?

Did that mean that he had others he wanted to kill?

The originally blowing ocean

breeze instantly stopped at that moment. The surface of the ocean had also completely stopped churning as the entire world suddenly sank into a deathly stillness, no longer producing any hint of sound. The black energy on Fen Juechen's body rose, almost soaring to the sky. His eyes were even more pitch-black, like an endless abyss... Yun Che's speech was extremely malicious, causing Fen Juechen's originally extreme murderous intent and hatred to wildly flare up and burn!

“Hong'er, prepare to fight.”

Inside the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine called the deeply slumbering in Hong'er. Then, she looked at the outside world with interest as she muttered to herself, "He's purposely making Fen Juechen even angrier, and this Fen Juechen is enraged as expected."

Clang!!

A red light flashed in Yun Che's hands and the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword appeared. The instant he held the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword in

hand, both his hands violently sunk. If not for his fast reaction speed, his body would've nearly lost balance, causing him to fall into the ocean.

“~ ! @# ¥ %.....” The weight of the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword in his hands had increased explosively and there was also a slightly difference in the the sword force as well as the vermilion light it released. The instant the sword's body appeared, a huge change occurred; the blue waves of the ocean became tremendously imposing. Only, the unsightly form of a pocket-sized young girl

sleeping inside the pearl embedded in the body and hilt of the sword diluted much of this world-shaking aura.

“Hong’er, you’ve been sneaking in food again, haven’t you?!” Yun Che roared with his mind. Since the time he had last summoned it, the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword was at least more than fifty thousand kilograms heavier. Its sword force had also become rich; powerful to the point where it had almost broke free from his control... He was ten thousand percent sure that not only had Hong’er been eating food on the



sly, she had definitely been eating a lot of it too!

“Mmm...” As if she had heard Yun Che’s roar, Hong’er let out a whimper in her sleep. However, she did not awaken and only switched postures as she continued sleeping.

“...” Yun Che was now twenty thousand percent sure that Hong’er had been pilfering quite a lot of things to eat... because every time she had eaten her fill, she would go into a long slumber.

Crack!!

As a black streak of lightning crackled within Fen Juechen's hands. An entirely pitch-black longsword with a strange, writhing black radiance was then grasped within them. "Yun... Che... I want you to die... without an intact corpse!!"

"With just you?" Yun Che sneered in disdain. He glanced at the pitch-black sword in Fen Juechen's hand and revealed a deeply scornful expression.

Then, he straightforwardly swung the Heaven Smiting Sword... withdrawing Hong'er back into the Sky Poison Pearl.

“The kind of inferior Emperor Profound sword is your weapon? Heh...” Deep ridicule, disdain and even distinct pity hung on Yun Che's face. “This kind of trash that I don't even bother to glance at actually seems to be your most treasured weapon, huh. So pitiful. Pitiful to the point where I feel embarrassed to use my Heaven Smiting Sword to fight with you... because that's seriously bullying you too much.”

In the face of Fen Juechen's already overflowing hatred and rage, Yun Che seemed to feel that it was not enough as his malicious words ruthlessly stung and humiliated Fen Juechen's mental state and soul which were on the verge of losing control. Not only had Yun Che withdrawn the Heaven Smiting Sword, he had even curbed a large amount of the aura on his body as well. He then extended a finger at Fen Juechen, beckoning him in extreme mockery. "Because of that lousy sword of yours, I find it embarrassing to even use the Heaven Smiting Sword to fight

against you. If I used it, I'd feel like I'm bullying you. Since you are this desperate to kill me, then I'll give you a decent opportunity today!"

"I'll give you eight hours!" Facing Fen Juechen's completely twisted face, Yun Che actually beamed as he stretched four fingers outward. "You haven't heard wrongly, an entire eight hours! In these eight hours, I won't hit back, nor will I flee too far. I'll let you attack as you wish. Let me see if you have the ability to kill me in these eight hours of time while I'm not even going to retaliate!"

“If you can’t even kill me like this...” Yun Che’s smile became sarcastic and disdainful, “Then never appear in front of me and embarrass yourself again!!”

Boom!!

A raging billow shot up behind Fen Juechen, soaring up to at least three hundred meters in height. In these few years when his soul had been undergoing fusion, his profound strength had explosively risen to the Sovereign Profound Realm from

the Spirit Profound Realm. At first, he totally believed that it would be extremely easy for the current him to kill Yun Che... The only thing he had to consider was just how he would execute it so that Yun Che would die in the most miserable way. He had to at least suffer through a thousand kinds of torment and go through every kind of pain.

Yet now that he was finally up against Yun Che, what he found on his opponent's face was not fear or supplication, but the contempt and mockery that he despised the most in his life.

“You... will... regret... every word... that... you have... said!!”

Each and every one of the words Fen Juechen spat out was so grim that it seemed as though they had come from the deepest layer of hell. Boundless hatred and killing intent congested in his body's every cell, drop of blood, and wisp of soul! The instant his voice fell, the color of the sky seemed to have darkened.

“Oh?” Yun Che subconsciously



lifted his head up at the sky.

The originally cloudless azure sky darkened at a speed visible to the naked eye. A heavy darkness slowly pressed downward from every direction, as though a dark demon god was silently swallowing the world.

“What’s going on?”

The shocking change severely stunned Yun Che. Three months ago, he had only fought once with Fen Juechen. At that time,

the sky also dimmed a little, but compared to this, it was like the difference between heaven and earth!

Fen Juechen's power was extremely peculiar. He had already mentally prepared for that, but he never expected that the full release of power under Fen Juechen's rage would actually trigger this kind of... strange scene that could be called a "supernatural phenomenon."

Thick darkness continued to

sink downwards, swallowing every hint of light as a terrifying aura filled the world. The tides churned restlessly as waves roiled in disorder. The originally azure ocean region had now transformed into an astonishingly pitch-black color; even the churning surface of the ocean was suffused with a clear black radiance.

“This is!” Jasmine’s deep bewilderment came from inside Yun Che’s mind.

The scene before her ruthlessly

stirred the depths of Jasmine's soul... a memory that came from an ancient Star God! A name... an extremely frightening name that shouldn't exist in this world appeared in her soul.

“Daylight Devour, Lightless Eternal Night... Illusory... Devil Tome... of Eternal Night...?!”

“Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night?” Yun Che was instantly stunned. “That's the profound art Fen Juechen is using? Could it be that you've seen this kind of strange profound art in your

world?”

“I have not seen it... or I should say, no one should have ever seen it in the entire primal chaos dimension!”

Jasmine’s voice was low, but Yun Che could clearly feel how severely shocked this made her feel. And what she had said also mystified Yun Che even more.

“Don’t get distracted!” Jasmine’s suddenly yelled, “I still cannot confirm whether or

not that is the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night. No matter what you do today, you must defeat him! If you can't, I will take care of it personally... I need to know all of the secrets of this person!"

Jasmine's tone of voice was so serious that it alarmed Yun Che. He stopped asking questions——now was not the time to push for answers. He immediately focused his mind and the profound strength of his whole body started becoming agitated. The expression of his eyes changed back to the disdain from before as he spoke neither

too fast or too slow, “Attack me. Don’t forget that I only gave you eight hours. Let me see if you really have the ability to kill me, or if you’re still merely a condescending, weak piece of garbage!”

The darkness continued to spread. Yun Che then realized that a huge, dark whirlpool had suddenly appeared behind Fen Juechen. The dark whirlpool was expanding. Its blackness was incredibly pure, as though it was a black hole that could swallow anything in the world.

“Careful! This is a Dark Domain! You must either use all of your strength to rip it open or escape as soon as possible!” Jasmine said in a low voice. Originally, she didn’t care too much when Yun Che had arranged a battle with Fen Juechen. She was only interested to know what kind of “despicable and shameless” methods Yun Che would use to win when faced with a great difference in strength.

But now, being enraged, Fen Juechen was using all of his strength. It made Jasmine feel a severe shock in her mind and



soul that she had never  
experienced before.

# Chapter 744 – Night Devil Heaven Burial

---

“Die!!”

The whites of Fen Juechen's eyes disappeared completely as they became pitch-black. The black sword in his hand was thrust out in midair, and as it descended, countless pillars of pitch-black water shot up from below. The dark whirlpool of energy behind him produced a tearing noise that sounded like the cry of a thousand birds as it hurtled towards Yun Che like an enormous sky-devouring devil,

as if it wanted to swallow him up in deep and boundless darkness.

“Star God’s Broken Shadow!”

The pitch-black sword beams that tore open space itself and the shroud of darkness descending from above were filled with an extremely grim aura of danger. Yun Che’s body blurred, and five afterimages shot out in five different directions as he instantly avoided Fen Juechen’s jet black sword beams. After that, his body ignited with Phoenix

flames as he soared into the sky, unleashing the Empyrean Dance of the Phoenix Wing.

The burning Phoenix flames were especially luminous and harsh in the midst of the darkened world. Phoenix flames rushed outwards as it forcibly tore a scarlet trench through the enormous Dark Domain. By the time Yun Che's body had come to a stop, he was already one kilometer away from his original location. He extended an arm, and to his astonishment, he saw that his clothes had become riddled with holes!

Not only did the darkness that had engulfed the entire space have the ability to swallow light, it would also consume his flesh every second he spent beneath it. Even more frightening was that it also had the effect of heavily suppressing one's soul. Yun Che possessed the Dragon God's Soul, so this kind of pressure did little to affect him. However, if another person were facing Fen Juechen, even if they had the same level of profound strength as him, that person would feel ill at ease in this shroud of darkness. Their chest would feel constricted and painful, and if they spent enough time in this darkness, their mind might actually

collapse under the strain.

The Phoenix flames surrounding Yun Che's body flared up. The boiling flames surrounded his entire body blocked the corrosive effect of the dark profound energy. His arms casually crossed over his chest, and he did not even spare Fen Juechen a single look as he spoke calmly, "Tsk tsk! It was such a grand display of might that I expected an attack capable of shaking both the heavens and the earth, but to think that it couldn't even harm a single hair on my head... Trash!"

“Uuaaaaaahhhhhhh!!”

The pitch-black whirlpool behind Fen Juechen suddenly exploded. Dark and sinister profound energy surged forth like a tidal wave as it raised an enormous wave of water more than three kilometers high. At the same instant, a furious roar that seemed to have come from the very depths of hell rang out among surging waves that were rushing into the sky.

“Night Devil Heaven Burial!”

Darkness broke through the heavens, and for a moment, Yun Che's entire field of vision was engulfed in darkness... it was as if the entire sky had been completely and utterly buried by the darkness!

It was truly a power that could bury the heavens!!

Yun Che's pupils contracted slightly, but his expression remained calm and unperturbed. He did not dare to relax for even an instant as the



darkness in front of him threatened to overthrow the heavens. Space began to distort severely under the erosion of the darkness. Both of his eyes widened as he stared at the approaching darkness. He immediately used Extreme Mirage Lightning to retreat backwards swiftly, yet he still could not escape the world of darkness that was vast enough to bury the heavens. The moment the darkness engulfed Yun Che's body, his eyes flashed as the Evil God Barrier instantly opened.

“Sealing Cloud Locking Sun!!”

The space around them tore as easily as drenched paper. In an instant, more than ten small islands were obliterated. The surface of the darkened ocean fell by nearly three kilometers, and countless marine animals were exterminated the moment they came into contact with that aura of death.

Under the effects of Sealing Cloud Locking Sun, even the darkness that had the power to bury the heavens was unable to actually bury Yun Che. The Evil God Barrier twisted and

distorted, but in the end, it did not collapse. Yun Che poured all of his energy into supporting Sealing Cloud Locking Sun as all the Phoenix flames around his body flared up to their greatest magnitude. It was as if his entire body had sunk into a swampy darkness, but he was still moving at an extremely fierce and peerless speed....

Bang!!

Following a clear, resonating Phoenix cry, the world of darkness was violently split

apart by a beam of flame. The moment Yun Che escaped the enshrouding darkness, the Evil God Barrier completely collapsed, but there was not even a single scratch on his body. He fled far away before letting out a wild and reckless laugh, “Hahahahaha! Fen Juechen, don’t tell me that this is all you’ve got? You’re so weak that it’s simply hilarious! Hahahahaha!”

Yun Che might have been laughing outwardly, but he was actually astonished and alarmed inside. The profound art Fen Juechen used was extremely

unique, and he had never come into contact with it in either of his two lives. When he was swallowed by that darkness that could blot out the sky and cover the earth, he was sure that if he had failed to use Sealing Cloud Locking Sun in time, he would have definitely received serious injuries all over his body within a matter of seconds!

Even his soul might have been harmed!

Right now, Yun Che was confident that he could forcibly

endure the Phoenix flames of Feng Tianwei who was also at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Yet Fen Juechen's dark profound energy... Yun Che barely fended it off even with the help of Sealing Cloud Locking Sun, so he could definitely imagine what the result would have been if he had taken that attack directly!

Yun Che's body was ablaze, and he flickered brilliantly in the world of darkness that had

devoured all light. As such, Fen Juechen did not even need to use his spiritual perception to find Yun Che; he could lock onto his position almost instantly. He had seen Yun Che being swallowed up by the “Night Devil Heaven Burial” with his own two eyes, yet with the same pair of eyes he had also seen Yun Che escape from within the darkness. He could hardly see a scratch left by the corrosive darkness on Yun Che’s entire body...

Yun Che’s profound energy aura was only at the fifth level of the Emperor Profound Realm!

And Fen Juechen himself was already at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm! He had exceeded Yun Che by more than two entire realms! Destroying him should have been as easy as scattering dust!

Yet, what he was truly unable to accept or believe was that... he had clearly used all his power to attack, but he had not even managed to harm his opponent at all! Instead, the only thing he received in return was the grating laughter and contemptuous disdain of his



opponent.

In his state of extreme shock and humiliation, Fen Juechen's hate and killing intent once again soared dramatically as he became the embodiment of carnage and vengeance. The jet black sword in his hand swiftly pierced towards Yun Che.

As the jet black sword swept an arc in front of Yun Che's body, space shattered like glass. Aside from the grating sound of space being torn apart, Yun Che could also faintly hear something that

sounded like the wailing of evil spirits.

Ocean waves surged into the sky as pitch-black sword beams flashed in nightmarish splendor, wildly sweeping towards Yun Che. Every single sword beam left a black scar in the air that did not dissipate until a long while later.

Yun Che combined Star God's Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning as he received Fen Juechen's attacks. Sometimes he was an

afterimage, other times he was a tempest, completely dodging every single one of Feng Juechen's attacks. However, the waves of dark profound energy still swept across his body after every attack, causing his body and mind to undergo incomparable suffering... Fortunately for Yun Che, it was still within the limit of what he could endure. After all, even though his profound strength was low, he still possessed the Body of the Dragon God and the Dragon God's Soul!

At the same time, his Phoenix flames and Golden Crow flames

could counteract this dark profound energy to a certain degree...but Yun Che himself was currently unaware of it.

“Die! Die! Dieeeee!! I am going to rip your body to shreds!!!”

The dark profound energy in the sky swiftly gathered into rolling clouds of darkness. As they roiled, they released an aura which evoked a feeling that the end of the world was imminent. Amidst Fen Juechen’s hoarse cries, the dark aura of the entire Dark Domain was

frantically released, sweeping out in a gigantic wave that threatened to engulf everything and swiftly becoming a terrifying storm of darkness...

In an instant, the surrounding space was easily torn apart as it collapsed and shattered, causing spatial energy to wildly surge outwards from the rifts in space. This energy melded with the storm of darkness, becoming an even more terrifying pitch-black cyclone that swept towards Yun Che.

Even when this dark whirlwind was still more than three hundred meters away, Yun Che could already smell the thick stench of hell coming from it. As his eyes focused, he prepared to use Extreme Mirage Lightning to swiftly flee away from this attack. However, the ripping force of that dark whirlwind was extremely terrifying; not only did it prevent him from fleeing, it even forcefully drew him towards it.

Riiipppp!!

All the clothes on Yun Che's body were ripped to shreds. His pupils fiercely contracted and he did not hesitate any longer. He instantly opened the gate of "Purgatory" as he used Sealing Cloud Locking Sun once more.

Scree!!!!

The dark cyclone smashed against the Evil God Barrier, sweeping Yun Che away along with it. In an instant, he had already been swept several kilometers away... and the shattering spatial distortion

continued for several kilometers as well. A pitch-black streak of darkness stretched across the distorted space, and it only slowly dissipated after more than ten breaths had passed.

When the dark cyclone had finally ceased wreaking havoc, Sealing Cloud Locking Sun had completely collapsed as well. All the energy and blood in Yun Che's body surged wildly. He fiercely sucked in a breath of air as he forcibly suppressed the energy and blood that raged inside his body. After that, he crooked a finger towards the mutely staring Fen Juechen once



again. “Continue! It has almost been fifteen minutes already, and I have only been defending. I haven’t attacked even once, yet you’re actually unable to leave a single mark on my body. Before this, you were crowing so arrogantly, but who would have thought that... Tsk!”

“UUAAAAAAAAAAHH!” Feng Juechen cried hysterically before he morphed into a black shadow and shot towards Yun Che. Before he even arrived, a giant, pitch-black hand had already descended from the sky and fiercely grabbed at Yun Che’s head...

At this moment, if one were to look down at the Profound Sky Eastern Ocean from far above, then they would see a gigantic jet black shadow appear in the middle of the Eastern Ocean Region. Moreover, at the borders of that shadow, huge waves soared skyward as they roiled and surged without ceasing.

“Ah, so that’s how it is....”

Right now, Jasmine had completely understood what method Yun Che had chosen to

deal with Fen Juechen even though his strength was inferior.

Yun Che decided to focus solely on defense for a very long time, so Fen Juechen would exhaust most of his profound energy. Once Fen Juechen's strength was nearly exhausted, Yun Che would counterattack with all of his might.

This kind of "tactic"... if used by another person, could not even be called a "tactic" anymore. Not to mention

opponents who were stronger, even if one were to fight someone at the same strength or even someone slightly weaker, not only would this “tactic” not succeed, it would also put one’s self in an inferior position. As the battle progressed, one would be completely suppressed by their opponent, not even having the chance to counterattack.

Only Yun Che alone could make this tactic work.

Furthermore, when facing someone like Fen Juechen, the

chances of it successfully working would dramatically increase.

Since Yun Che possessed both the Star God's Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning, even though his profound strength was nowhere near Fen Juechen's, his ability to dodge and flee was far superior. Therefore, he could easily dodge Fen Juechen's attacks, causing the latter to waste his energy. When Yun Che could not avoid an attack, he could forcibly defend against it by activating Sealing Cloud Locking Sun for a short period of time.

On the other hand, Fen Juechen had an extremely strong ego, causing him to have an extremely arrogant and conceited temperament. Because of that, he was easily agitated! Under the influence of Yun Che's ceaseless taunts, Fen Juechen would continue to burn with fury and be overcome with killing intent. Every time he attacked, Fen Juechen would not hesitate to use all of his power, all for the sake of defeating and even killing Yun Che within the shortest amount of time. Furthermore, Fen Juechen was still far too young, so even though his profound strength

had undergone an explosive growth, his battle experience, finesse, and state of mind was still far inferior to Yun Che's. The more his attacks failed, the more frustrated he would grow, provoking him to continue putting all of his power into every strike...

This was exactly what Yun Che had spoken about.... Fen Juechen's "weakness in his personality".

Moreover, the energy consumption of Star God's

Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning was extremely small, and even though Sealing Cloud Locking Sun did use an enormous amount of energy, Yun Che would only activate it when he needed to, so his total consumption of energy was far lower than that of Fen Juechen who kept pouring everything into his attacks.

Aside from all of these factors, one important point was left unspoken:

And that was... Yun Che's



physical recovery rate and profound energy recovery rate... were far superior to Fen Juechen's!

With the power of the Rage God and the Body of the Dragon God, his physical recovery rate and profound energy recovery rate was at least five times greater than that of Fen Juechen's!!

So, as long as Yun Che did not sustain injuries that were too serious, it was impossible for ordinary injuries to affect him in any way.

Furthermore, as the exhaustion of Fen Juechen's profound energy intensified, his attacks would naturally begin to weaken, so the pressure Yun Che had to endure would also gradually become weaker and weaker as time passed... In the end, his recovery rate might very well exceed the rate at which he was consuming energy!

At that point, he would begin his counter-assault against Fen Juechen.

This “tactic” was something that simply could not be seen through, because no one would think that a person with a profound strength far weaker than them would possess such a terrifying recovery ability. If normal profound practitioners attempted to do so, it would be no different from courting death. At the same time, it was also very difficult to put it into practice... because the moment the other party stopped attacking, this tactic would fail. There were very few people who were so stubborn and single-minded that they would continue to attack at full force

even after wasting a large amount of profound energy on failed attacks.

But an extremely arrogant person like Fen Juechen was clearly an exception to the rule.

Just as Yun Che had predicted, in his rage and agitation, Fen Juechen unleashed all of his profound strength as he frantically threw out one dark profound energy attack after another. Hand of Darkness, Jet Black Sword, Lightless Eternal Night, Night Devil Heaven

Burial... Every single attack he made was done using all of his strength, hate, and killing intent; he did not hold anything back. Not only did the gigantic ocean region turn pitch-black, but it had also been stirred up so much that it was completely overturned. Yet Yun Che had continuously used his bizarre movement skills and his incomparably strong defensive profound skills to dodge or block those attacks.

Under the relentless torrent of attacks, Yun Che's clothes had already been torn to shreds and innumerable wounds which

radiated black light had appeared all over his body... but, in the end, Yun Che had not sustained a single injury that could severely impair him.

All Fen Juechen received in return was Yun Che's contempt and derision... mocking Fen Juechen's overestimation of himself and how "he was nothing more than that".

The explosive growth in profound strength that caused Fen Juechen to leap from the Spirit Profound Realm to

Sovereign Profound Realm had naturally caused his self-esteem to surge explosively. Now, facing someone that he had to kill, the self-confidence and pride that had swelled countless times were swiftly being ground into dust. Given his extremely strong ego, the feeling that he endured right now was even more unbearable than the feeling he endured when he was planted firmly below Yun Che's foot.

Even more unbearable was that, from beginning to end, Yun Che had done as he had said... he had not retaliated at all!

It was clear that he had no regard for Fen Juechen in the first place!

“DIEEEEE!!”

As Fen Juechen emitted a hoarse roar, kilometers of the ocean region around him instantly exploded outwards as water filled the sky. The boom akin to rolling thunder could be heard in Floating Cloud City that was several hundred kilometers away...



# Chapter 745 – Counterattack Begins

---

“Die!!”

Boom————

Boooooom————

Boom boom boom————

Continuous sounds of  
explosions reached Floating

Cloud City from the far east. Even though it was extremely far away, it was still so overwhelming that it made the hearts of the people so uncomfortable that they felt as if there were going to burst. If you told the people of Floating Cloud City that this was the sound of two people fighting each other three hundred kilometers away, absolutely no one would believe it.

This incredibly overwhelming sound of explosions was not only frequent, it continued for two entire hours and did not stop at all. Many citizens of Floating

Cloud City went to the east side of the city to try and find its source by looking to the east.

Ssss!

Ssss!!

Two long, pitch-black fissures appeared on Yun Che's afterimage. Each slash of Fen Juechen's attack were accompanied by an icy dark profound energy. Yet after slashing over ten times like a fierce storm, all he had hit were

Yun Che's afterimages. When the last attack landed, the waves were slashed open harshly, but Yun Che's figure got further away.

“Uuaahhhhh!!”

The waves surged. A huge, pitch-black profound energy storm caused the clouds to change color, and it charged towards Yun Che with a fearful aura. Yun Che focused his gaze, crossed his arms before his chest, and roared deeply...

Bang!!

The dark profound energy storm violently collided with Yun Che's body, sending him tumbling away. A giant, three kilometer long reef was sent flying into the air from directly below Yun Che. Before it could land, it was immediately turned into a fine powder within the energy storm.

Yun Che purposely didn't defend. His body was shot three or four kilometers away by the shock of the dark profound

energy. When he stopped, he looked at his arms... the ends of his arms had been burnt black. There was no bleeding or pain... he couldn't even feel his skin and flesh!

Whoosh!!

Phoenix flames ignited on his arms, dispersing the strange, pitch-black darkness in the blink of an eye and revealing his flesh which had previously been shrouded... The speed at which his body regenerated had already surpassed the limit of

what should have been possible.

“Fen Juechen, it’s been three  
hours!                      You’ve                      really  
disappointed                      me!  
Hahahahaha...”

Yun Che laughed wildly, but not a single part of his body had relaxed. Every time there was a gap between Fen Juechen’s attacks, Yun Che would mercilessly ridicule him as if only he himself was a truly strong practitioner. He teased and humiliated his opponent as if he were a cat playing with a

mouse. However, in his heart, Yun Che knew that the actual situation was not like that.

As time passed, Fen Juechen became increasingly irritated. His roars had long since become hoarse, and the dark profound energy released by his body had already become a lot weaker. Nonetheless, his attacks were still incomparably fierce. Every strike was made with no care for his own life... His entire person had become an enraged madman. The only image within his blood-red eyes was Yun Che's figure! His mind and soul only had one thought, and that was



to kill Yun Che!

Ssss!!

A thirty meter long sword beam horizontally sliced out, savagely and ruthlessly tearing through the sky. Yun Che's figure swayed slightly, then suddenly reappeared above the surface of the ocean a hundred and fifty meters below. A quiet sigh suddenly exited his mouth as he watched Fen Juechen roar and charge at him yet again.

Just based on profound energy, Fen Juechen indeed completely surpassed him. If he fought with him head to head, even though he would not necessary be defeated in a short amount of time, he would definitely lose.

But Fen Juechen was just too young.

And his temperament was far too extreme.

He was originally from Burning Heaven Clan. As the Burning

Heaven Clan's young master, he naturally wouldn't have experienced a battle of life and death.

Moreover, after he acquired the powerful dark profound energy, he had yet to encounter an opponent who could match him.

As for Yun Che, not only did he have the experience from two lifetimes, he had also experienced many life and death battles. Earlier, Fen Juechen had roared that he had "gone through hell," but all of the

things that Yun Che had suffered through were things that even Fen Juechen would never be able to imagine.

Therefore, even though his strength surpassed Yun Che, it didn't mean... that he was be able to beat Yun Che!

In the Azure Cloud Continent, there had been many with strength far beyond Yun Che's. Yet a countless number of them had ended up falling at Yun Che's hand anyway!!

“Looks like we didn't need

eight hours at all,” Yun Che spoke in a low voice. He focused his mind and used all of his strength to deal with Fen Juechen who was closing the distance to him like a beast.

Floating Cloud City, Xiao Clan.

Number One Under Heaven was floating in the air, looking to the east silently. To normal citizens of Floating Cloud City, the explosive bursting and ripping sounds were just strange sounds in the distance, but he knew that, behind every sound,

shocking power was hidden.

“The fight has been going on for four whole hours,” Number One Under Heaven lowered his eyebrows and said in a low voice. “Brother Yun was even able to wound Duke Huai in one strike with his sword... to think that the strength of that young Fen Juechen had actually reached such a shocking degree!”

“And he is not someone from the Sacred Grounds!”

“Four hours have passed, yet it is still so intense... so scary.” Number Seven Under Heaven’s two hands subconsciously wrapped around her stomach as she felt frightened for the baby in her womb.

“Big Brother is strong, he will definitely not lose.” Xiao Yun yelled confidently, yet his voice was trembling a little.

“Little Aunt... don’t worry. Nothing will happen to Big Brother Yun. Even if he can’t beat Fen Juechen, he can use the

profound ark and come back immediately,” Feng Xue’er continuously comforted Xiao Lingxi... because Xiao Lingxi’s aura had been chaotic this entire time. Her expression had yet to relax for a moment, and her face was filled with worry, terror, and fear. Her forehead had also become covered with a fine layer of sweat.

Xiao Lingxi’s hands had been gripping Feng Xue’er’s snow robe very tightly. She begged once again, “Xue’er, please bring me over there... I am so worried, I...”



“Big Brother Yun, he... he will definitely be safe,” Feng Xue’er said, comforting her. Then she bit her lips softly. In her heart, she was not any less worried than Xiao Lingxi. On top of that, she had heard Yun Che himself say that... he was not an opponent for Fen Juechen.

“Nothing bad can happen to Little Che, the same goes for Big Brother Fen... both are them have to be safe! Fen Juechen really isn’t a bad guy. He even saved me twice! If he was killed by Little Che, I will never have

any peace of mind again... I must go and stop them... They have already fought for so long, it's enough!"

Xiao Lingxi's voice trembled as she began to panic. The sounds coming from the east clearly described just how cruel and violent the fight of hatred had become. It was probable that the battle between Fen Juechen and Yun Che would only stop when one of them died.

If Yun Che died, she would no longer want to live. However, if

Fen Juechen died, it would similarly be hard for her to accept.

“But... but I promised Big Brother Yun. I need to listen to Big Brother Yun’s words,” Feng Xue’er panicked and shook her head.

At this moment, the oppressive sounds of explosive combat from the east suddenly stopped. Even after a long time, it didn’t resume. The faint oppressive force they felt, from the battle that was hundreds of kilometers

away, had even disappeared at this time.

“Ah? Is it finally... over?” Xiao Yun said in a low voice, and at the same time everyone’s expressions became serious.

Since the fight had lasted a full four hours, it was impossible for them to predict just how tragic the outcome would be.

Feng Xue’er hurriedly picked up her sound transmission jade and asked in a very nervous tone,

“Brother Yun, are you okay? Did you beat him?”

Each breath after the transmission felt suffocating as they waited for a response. However, Yun Che’s voice quickly transmitted back.

“Rest assured, I am fine. After all, there’s no way anything would happen to me. You all don’t need to worry at all... I will return in another two hours at most...”

Yun Che’s voice was very relaxed and full of confidence. A

faint chuckle could seemingly be heard as well.

At that instant, everyone felt relieved.

---

Profound Sky's Eastern Ocean.

Yun Che slowly put away his sound transmission jade, then coldly looked at Fen Juechen in front of him. Yun Che's hair had

become completely disheveled, and there were no longer any clothes covering his body. Other than the corners of his mouth, no blood was visible on his body. However, his body was covered in black marks from where his flesh had been charred. He was breathing heavily... but he was in a far better condition than Fen Juechen.

Fen Juechen had stopped attacking, but his eyes were still wolflike. His chest intensely heaved up and down as if it could explode at any time. The aura surrounding his body was much weaker than it was at the

beginning, but the despair, violence, coldness, and killing intent still remained.

“You... are... purposely... consuming my... strength!” A bloody light flashed through Fen Juechen’s pitch-black pupils.

Fen Juechen was proud and self confident. Furthermore, he held extreme hatred and murderous intent for Yun Che. Thus, it had been very easy for Yun Che to enrage him and cause him to attack in a wild rage. As he attacked and failed, it had only



made him even more angry... These four hours, he had madly attacked Yun Che constantly, and the profound energy surrounding his body had decreased by more than sixty percent!

As for Yun Che... his profound energy had only decreased by less than thirty percent!

The sword strike just now had churned up huge waves in a three kilometer radius. When the cold seawater descended, it had drenched Fen Juechen's

entire body, shocking him as the chill assaulted his mind. However, this had also cleared up his mind, causing him to suddenly realize Yun Che's true intention.

Yun Che remained calm as he said with smile, "Right. In the end, you managed to see through it after all. However, it took you a full four hours of battle to realize this, you truly cannot be considered intelligent."

Fen Juechen scoffed, and the

pitch-black sword in his hands made terrifying sounds, “The current you is just garbage that must die! No matter what mind games you use today, you can stop thinking about leaving here alive!”

“My, my, looks like even saying you are not intelligent is flattering you.” Yun Che’s expression was a relaxing, slight smile, “I only defended without attacking during these four hours of your continuous attacks, but I am not dead and they didn’t cause a serious injury. Even an idiot should understand by now that, with

my movement skill and speed, you wanting to kill me now... is simply foolish nonsense!”

Earlier, when Fen Juechen had gone entirely the offensive, his strength and momentum had both been frightening, but Yun Che now had Fen Juechen completely figured out. Fen Juechen’s movement skills and speed were undeniably at least level below him!

Long before this battle, Yun Che had decided to use this method to deal with Fen

Juechen. He believed in his superior movement skills and speed and hoped that they would give him an advantage... Currently, it seemed that not only did this advantage exist, it was also greater than he had expected.

Now, since Fen Juechen had noticed it, he naturally couldn't continue doing so. Yun Che already decided to continue defending, not attacking.

Clang!!

Red light flickered, and the Heaven Smiting Sword was in Yun Che's hands once again. At that instant, under the incomparably tyrannical aura of the sword, the ocean's waves and howling wind died down, as if they had been frozen still. An indifferent smile emerged on Yun Che's face as he coldly sneered and said in a low voice, "Not only that, today, the one who will not be leaving here alive... is you!!"

## Chapter 746 – Unexpected Battle

---

“You want to engage him head on?” Jasmine asked softly. “Even though he has already exhausted more than half of his profound energy, it probably hasn’t dropped to the level of your expectations. If the present you wants to forcibly engage him in direct combat, it is still too much to ask.”

“It doesn’t matter,” Yun Che said in an assured manner. “Even though his profound strength is absurdly powerful,

he still hasn't been able to gain full mastery over this new power. Furthermore, the rate that he is exhausting his profound energy is clearly far higher than normal. Before this, I only defended without attacking, yet he practically hurt himself from the backlash of his attacks a few times... it appears his hatred has drowned out his rationality. He was too anxious for success and he focused only on getting stronger, neglecting to take time to stabilize himself."

Fen Juechen's explosive increase in profound energy was due to him absorbing and fusing



with what Jasmine called the “devil origin” and was not something that he had gained through his own cultivation. Moreover, he had only had a short period of time to increase his power, so it was clear that his body had not completely merged with the Devil Origin yet. As a result, he had yet to obtain complete mastery over his new power.

“Oh, so you’ve already noticed this...” Jasmine said blandly.

“Coupled with my weapon’s

superiority and the weakness in his personality... even if he still has nearly forty percent of his power left, there is still a possibility that I can defeat him in direct combat!!”

Holding the Heaven Smiting Sword in a two handed grip, Yun Che made a normal arc through the air with the sword. In a split second, the ocean beneath Yun Che's feet churned as waves exploded out and an extremely heavy and overwhelmingly tyrannical aura shot out over an area that was hundreds of kilometers wide. All of the ocean life in the area curled up in

terror. I was as though they had been fixed in place, for they didn't dare move an inch.

In that instant, it seemed as if an ancient demon god had suddenly descended from above, enshrouding the earth in its terrible majesty.

Feng Juechen's pupils suddenly contracted, his cold gaze forcibly drawn then locked onto the vermilion greatsword in Yun Che's hands. Yun Che's aura did not create the least bit of pressure for him at all, but the

moment that vermilion  
greatsword appeared in Yun  
Che's hands, he could clearly feel  
an oppressive and stifling  
sensation.

Furthermore, as he focused his  
gaze on that sword, his energy  
was suddenly thrown into  
turmoil as an horribly  
unpleasant sensation filled his  
entire body. This sensation did  
not fade as he circulated his  
profound energy, instead  
seeming to intensify for some  
reason. It reached the point  
where it was so unbearable that  
it as if something was viciously  
ripping his organs and soul

apart.

Fen Juechen's face twisted violently and he abruptly turned his gaze aside. Immediately, the unbearable feeling began to lessen; however, his discomfort still remained.

The difference between the time when he had first met her on the Primordial Profound Ark and the current Hong'er who had pigged out recently was simply incomparable. The power of the Heaven Smiting Sword was completely different as well.

It had even begun to radiate a faint aura of majesty and power capable of “shaking the heavens and the earth.”

However, this change was not entirely a good thing for Yun Che as the Heaven Smiting Sword’s rate of growth had already far outstripped his own growth rate. Furthermore, he had recently been pouring all of his time and effort into raising the profound strength of the Frozen Asgard ladies and had not touched the Heaven Smiting Sword in nearly three months. So now that he held the Heaven Smiting Sword in his hands, he

instead felt an extremely large strain... it even felt as though he might lose his grip on it.

Just how many things had Hong'er stolen to eat during these three months?!

Could it be that... she had actually snacked on one of the Overlord swords?!

And even if one did not take into account the peerless sword power of the Heaven Smiting Sword, the sword imparted the

feeling that it was as heavy as a mountain. Yun Che's conservative estimate was that the Heaven Smiting Sword was at least five hundred thousand kilograms!

Yun Che's expression remained completely calm, and his posture was that of someone confident in their victory. He had taken notice of Fen Juechen's bizarre reaction when the Heaven Smiting Sword had made its appearance. He had some suspicions regarding that reaction, however he did not take them to heart. "This sword's full name is the 'Heaven



Smiting Devil Slayer Sword', so let me bear witness to how long you can endure its presence!!”

And immediately after Yun Che spoke, he let out a low roar. He opened the “Purgatory” gate and all of the profound energy in his body violently surged. Flames burned high in the sky as the Heaven Smiting Sword struck downwards... Given his profound energy being far from the depth and thickness of Fen Juechen’s and the huge amount of energy exhausted holding the current Heaven Smiting Sword, he could not afford to tarry any longer.

It was a straightforward attack without any flourish or profound skill yet it held all of the power in Yun Che's body. The oppressive power of the attack was so large that it seemed like there was a mountain crashing down from the sky.

Fen Juechen's gaze grew cold and focused as he released a black light that was even darker than the darkest of nights from every orifice of his body. The sword in his hand was also fully wrapped in black light. An

alarmingly wild and violent dark profound energy crazily surged from the sword, releasing an awful screech as it tore through space to meet the oncoming Heaven Smiting Sword.

Clashing directly with a heavy sword was definitely not a smart move... In fact, it could even be called an extremely stupid move.

But, even if Fen Juechen had been aware of this, he still would have made the same decision anyway.

All because of his strong pride and ego!

And this was exactly the “weakness in his personality” that Yun Che had spoken of.

Clang!!!!

Both swords smashed together and the sound of metal on metal ripped through the clouds as it shook the skies and ocean. The waters below instantly morphed into a hellish disaster zone that made ordinary hurricanes seem

tame. Hundreds of gigantic waves screamed to life as they surged towards the heavens.

Amidst the gargantuan churning waves, the clash between the scarlet red and the pitch-black light was still extremely glaring and obvious. At the point where the lights intersected, the two swords were still locked in a deadly struggle. The flaming Heaven Smiting Sword still radiated its divine might while the black sword in Fen Juechen's hand, despite being already bent like a crescent moon, refused to break as it endured the attack of the

## Heaven Smiting Sword.

The gazes of both parties swept past their blades as they glared at each other, their faces not more than a meter away from each other. One's face was calm while the other's was ice-cold... However, in their hearts, they were filled with shock and alarm.

Yun Che was astonished that Fen Juechen, who had already exhausted most of his profound energy and only had the Emperor Profound black sword,

had able to actually block an attack that he had delivered at full force with the Heaven Smiting Sword. Furthermore, with the support of his incomparably powerful profound strength, the sword had not even snapped.

Meanwhile, Fen Juechen was even more shocked that Yun Che, who only had the aura of Emperor Profound Realm practitioner, could actually take a strike from his sword at full strength as well!!

The black sword in Fen Juechen's hand was originally an Earth Profound sword. However, in the years where Fen Juechen's strength had grown by leaps and pounds, this Earth Profound sword had undergone a fundamental change under the influence of the dark profound energy that he had been releasing. And in the short span of a few years, it had absorbed a large amount of dark profound energy, resulting in it growing into a low-grade Emperor Profound Sword.

While an Emperor Profound Sword could be considered a



monarch of swords within the Blue Wind Nation and it would even still be considered an exquisite treasure among the swords of the Profound Sky Continent, if it were to go up against Yun Che's Heaven Smiting Sword... Without a shadow of doubt, Yun Che had the absolute advantage when it came to weapons!

And despite this fact, Fen Juechen was still able to fully block Yun Che's attack. So it was clear that even though his profound energy had been largely exhausted, he definitely still surpassed Yun Che in terms

of strength.

Fen Juechen's eyes grew so sinister that they looked like the eyes of a feral, bloodthirsty wolf. The black light surrounding his body fiercely swelled up once more... It was at this moment, however, that he suddenly felt the dark profound energy in his body riot, as if it had received some kind of trauma. Not only did the black light surrounding his sword fail to flare up, it even began to abruptly twist and warp in the air. As it was twisting and warping, bits of the black light began to disappear as though being silently swallowed

an invisible black hole.

The pressure coming off Fen Juechen suddenly weakened. Yun Che's eyes grew focused as the Golden Crow flames in his body explosively surged forth while he swept the Heaven Smiting Sword forward once again. Fen Juechen let out a dull moan as a huge force rammed into his chest, ruthlessly flinging aside his sword arm. His body shook in the wind like a leaf as he was blasted far away.

“Oh?”

Yun Che had been concentrating his heart and mind, so he had not noticed the changes in Fen Juechen's dark profound energy. But Jasmine had witnessed the whole event and a strange light immediately flashed in the depths of her eyes.

The deadlock between the two evenly-matched opponents had lasted for only a short period of time and was broken when Fen Juechen could no longer maintain the pressure. This was the first instance where both parties had officially clashed,

but Fen Juechen, who had the absolute advantage in profound strength, was sent flying by Yun Che, who now had the absolute advantage in weaponry.

Yun Che also felt greatly shocked that he had been able to gain the upper hand so easily. He gave a cold laugh and lifted up the Heaven Smiting Sword as he rushed forward like a maelstrom. “Fen Juechen, it looks like you’re really not much after all... let’s see how many blows you can take!!”

Fen Juechen somersaulted backwards in the air many times before he finally managed to stabilize himself in the air. The heavy sword storm that Yun Che had smashed out was no small thing. Even though Fen Juechen had only been smashed aside by the sword wind, it had caused all the blood and energy in his body to churn, practically causing his internal organs to flip over... Normally this would only have been a trivial injury to him. Even if he received an injury that was ten times worse, he would not even raise an eyebrow. But this time, for some unfathomable reason, that weird, unpleasant sensation surfaced again, causing him to

feel dizzy and nauseous.

Yun Che roared as he drew close and smashed down the Heaven Smiting Sword, carrying with it the aura of a mountain, once again. Fen Juechen's pupils released a blood red light as all of the dark profound energy in his body exploded forth crazily...

Clang!!!!

The immense energy storm swept out in all directions and a spatial ripple that was a full

thirty meters wide spread out from the epicenter of the clash. The Heaven Smiting Sword once again clashed with the black sword. This time the black sword was nearly bent into a black-colored full moon. The sword blade quivered as it let out a shrill that was reminiscent of wailing ghosts.

The clash between both swords, once again, did not persist. After a fraction of a second, the power of the black sword swiftly receded once more.



Boom!!

The flames and the black light simultaneously exploded, both people being shot out in opposite directions. Yun Che simply flipped in the air before regaining control over his balance, yet Fen Juechen still flew far into the distance. The black sword in his hand had already been bent to an alarming angle and it had been nearly snapped altogether.

Yun Che, who had already regained his balance, did not

give the disadvantaged Fen Juechen a chance to even catch his breath. He activated Extreme Mirage Lightning and his body morphed into a black-colored streak of lightning as the Heaven Smiting Sword fiercely smashed down once again, carrying with it the howl of thunder.

Clank!!

Boom!!

Boom!!

It was as if the hammer of the heavens had come fiercely crashing down as horrifying ripples of sound rebounded along the ocean waves, shaking the sky.

Yun Che's every sword stroke caused Fen Juechen to retreat rapidly. The black sword in his hand was bent more and more out of shape with every blow, yet it never snapped. As it nearly bent in a circle from every stroke, Fen Juechen's face ran through a gamut of expressions as it twisted up, warped in pain,

showing extreme discontent,  
malevolence...

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Amidst the huge noises that continued to shake the sky, Fen Juechen had been smashed five kilometers back. All of the blood and energy in his body were churning and crimson-black blood continued to spew from his mouth. From the moment Yun Che had unveiled the Heaven Smiting Sword, Fen Juechen had been at a complete disadvantage since the very first

stroke. And he basically only had the power to fend off Yun Che's blows... and right now even fending off those blows were a bigger and bigger ask.

“Phoenix Sky Wolf Slash!!”

Boom!!!

The howl of the Sky Wolf intertwined together with the cry of the Phoenix as the attack ripped through the sky. Fen Juechen shot out like a falling star as he fiercely smashed into a

small reef that was several kilometers away, causing the reef to be completely obliterated. Behind him, an extremely deep trench had been dug across the surface of the ocean, and it did not disappear for a long time... it was as if this large patch of ocean had been directly cut in half.

“Cough... Cough, cough...”

Fen Juechen stood on the surface of the sea as he staggered to his feet and continued to cough out blood that was clearly

darker than a normal person's....

What is going on...? What is wrong with my power...? Why would it suddenly go out of control...? Why would it suddenly disappear...?

Just what was going on...?

Behind him, a wild gale swiftly drew close. Fen Juechen stubbornly forced down a mouthful of stale blood. As he turned around, he exuded a baleful aura which rushed out to

the heavens. The first thing he looked at was not Yun Che, but the gigantic vermillion greatsword that was almost as big as Yun Che's body. Immediately, all the blood and energy in his body began to frantically churn once again, and the unbearable sensation of his soul getting stabbed once again assaulted him.

In that instant, he finally noticed something...

It was Yun Che's sword!!



That bizarre unpleasant sensation he had felt always occurred when his gaze or power had come into contact with that sword!!

It was precisely when his own sword had come into contact with Yun Che's sword that his profound energy suddenly spiralled out of control and disappeared as if it had been devoured!!

That sword... is actually able to restrain my power!?

# Chapter 747 – Complete Victory?

---

Clouds could not be seen for kilometers on end and the skies were completely clear. Yet anyone in Floating Cloud City would be able to see a heavy layer of darkness hovering in the skies to the east of them. It was so gloomy that it threatened to sink straight down, and if one were to look at it, it would cause that person's chest to feel heavy and tight.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The never-ending sound of explosions rang out from the east, and each explosion sounded heavier than the last... One could even feel an incredibly intense and frenzied aura emanating from there.

“It started again.” Number One Under Heaven muttered under his breath as an astonished expression surfaced on his face once again.

“Xue’er!” Xiao Lingxi’s heart simply could not remain calm,

and the explosions that continued to ring out were more than she could bear. Both of her hands tightly gripped Feng Xue'er's snowy sleeve. "Hurry up and bring me there! They really can't continue fighting any longer. I am the reason for their enmity. One of them is Little Che and the other one is the person who has saved me twice. If anything happens to either of them, I won't be able to live it down for the rest of my life! Xue'er... I'm begging you, please bring me there. Please!"

"But... but... Feng Xue'er's heart was also agitated and anxious,

and she had nearly been seized by the impulse to rush out to the battleground more than ten times already.

“Xue’er, the reason why Little Che does not want me close by is that he is afraid that he might hurt me by accident. If Xue’er is there to protect me, then there won’t be a problem no matter how close I get. Furthermore... Xue’er, you’re also very worried for Little Che, right? Since they’ve already fought for so long, it has truly been enough already. If they continue to fight each other, what if... what if...”

Feng Xue'er's already wavering resolve completely collapsed in that instant. Without even mentioning the need to protect Xiao Lingxi from the aftershocks of the clashes, if Yun Che and Fen Juechen combined their powers and attacked Xue'er, she would still be able to protect Xiao Lingxi given her current level of strength. "I... I understand. Little Aunt, you must remember to hold onto me tightly."

Feng Xue'er gave a gentle wave of her snowy hand, causing Xiao

Lingxi's body to rise above the ground. A gust of fragrant wind blew as she shot towards the dark patch of sky in the east as quickly as possible.

---

“His aura suddenly started fluctuating, almost as if he lost some control over himself. It looks like the negative side-effect of forcibly merging with an exceedingly strong source of devil profound energy was more severe than I thought... or perhaps I thought too highly of

him in the first place?”

Yun Che hauled the Heaven Smiting Sword behind him as he swiftly rushed toward Fen Juechen, who had been blasted far away. He had originally thought that, the moment he began to face Fen Juechen in direct combat, he would be drawn into a bitter, fierce battle. He never thought that he would gain such a huge advantage from the very beginning. For every clash after the first, Fen Juechen was not only completely suppressed, but his profound energy grew more and more chaotic. It also grew weaker and



weaker. After he had endured more than ten sword blasts, he had sustained external and internal injuries throughout his body... and those injuries were definitely not superficial.

This entire series of events, and the subsequent result, was something that Yun Che had never expected to happen. He had even begun to feel that his previous caution and meticulous planning had been pointless.

“Don’t drop your guard. This definitely isn’t the full extent of

his power! Devote all your strength to crippling him!” Jasmine yelled in a low voice.

At this moment, Yun Che was already within sixty meters of Fen Juechen. Bringing along a power that could capsize the heavens, the Heaven Smiting Sword smashed down toward Fen Juechen.

Fen Juechen’s gaze was still as crazed and ferocious as it had previously been, and the sinister black blood splattered across his face and body made him seem

even more dreadful and tyrannical. As he faced Yun Che's terrifying and peerless heavy sword blast once more, Fen Juechen chose not to forcefully take it head on. The black light surrounding his body flashed as he unexpectedly retreated backwards.

Fen Juechen's speed could not match up to Yun Che's in the first place. Now that his profound energy was in complete disarray and he was heavily injured, his speed had taken a huge hit. How would it be possible for him to easily dodge Yun Che's attack? He

barely managed to dodge Yun Che's first strike, but the second strike directly smashed toward his chest. He had no choice but to circulate all of the profound energy in his body as he raised his black sword to block the blow.

Boom!!

Fen Juechen's body shuddered violently as the space around him trembled. It was exactly the same as it was the last few times; the profound energy he had infused into his dark blade

would receive a tremendous shock each time it came into contact with the Heaven Smiting Sword, and it would dissipate swiftly like a terrified spirit. This caused the might of the heavy sword, which originally could have been resisted, to smash downward... and as another huge explosion rang through the air, his body flew like a cannonball as it fiercely shot toward the waters below.

“UUAAAAAAAAAHHHHH!!”

In the next instant, Fen

Juechen was already rushing into the air as a huge pillar of water exploded out behind him. His gaze grew even more ferocious and violent. Most of the veins in his arms had exploded and his sword hand trembled so greatly that he could barely hold on to his pitch-black sword. His face, which was covered in blood, twisted as the black-colored profound energy that his body was releasing also began to twist. At this moment, the aura he released was like that of a berserk devil who had been completely consumed by fury, only being fueled by bone-cutting hatred.

“I... was actually... this pathetic...”

“How could I... how is it possible... that I lost... to you!!”

Fen Juechen let out a low moan. His voice was so hoarse and deep that it sounded like it belonged to a demon from hell.

“ARGHHHHHHHHHHHHH...  
Night Devil Heaven Burial!!”

Fen Juechen roared mournfully as all of the black profound light surrounding his body abruptly exploded outward. A row of gigantic waves exploded toward the sky, carrying a darkness that could blot out the sky as they rushed towards Yun Che.

Night Devil Heaven Burial was a unique domain that operated on the concepts of darkness and devouring. When Fen Juechen had initially released it, Yun Che managed to struggle free of it. Now that Fen Juechen's profound energy was in a state of disarray, and he had exhausted most of it, the power



of the same Night Devil Heaven Burial had weakened by several magnitudes.

The world around Yun Che instantly turned pitch-black, but he was not the least bit flustered by this. The Heaven Smiting Sword in his hand began to burn with the glaring flames of the Golden Crow. He fiercely slashed the air around him, and as the Heaven Smiting Sword danced wildly in the air, scarlet trenches were being torn into the newly birthed domain of darkness. In the blink of an eye, it was already ripped to shreds.

Even though the scorching Golden Crow Flames were shredding layer after layer of this domain apart, it did not suppress the darkness which shrouded the heavens and the earth. At this moment, an ice-cold aura that seemed to originate from the very depths of the netherworld itself suddenly shot toward Yun Che's back.

Fen Juechen had been covered by the Dark Domain, and he had even blended his aura with that of the domain, but it was still

not enough to escape Yun Che's spiritual perception. Yet Yun Che did not choose to flee. Instead, he shifted his vital organs slightly as he allowed the cold light to approach him...

Bang!!

A black sword that was completely shrouded in black light cut into Yun Che's right shoulder. The sword easily sliced through his flesh, but the moment it hit his bones, an extremely deep, dull sound of metal striking bone could be

heard. Fen Juechen felt as if he had smashed his sword against a boulder that was countless times stronger than refined steel. He had originally thought that he could take one of Yun Che's arms with this sword strike, but now he actually could not even push his sword an inch further.

Yun Che's bones were infused with the Dragon God's Marrow and had been tempered by enduring the spatial storm for eighteen months. They could be considered the toughest and most resilient things in the entire Profound Sky Continent.

Furthermore, the Heaven Smiting Sword whistled through the darkness at the same time and it solidly smashed into Fen Juechen's body. A strange red light that escaped Yun Che's notice appeared on the vermilion sword as it burst into Fen Juechen's body along with frenzied profound energy.

Boom!!!!

Even if it was a Fen Juechen that was at the peak of his powers, he would still sustain

heavy injuries if he took a sword blast from Yun Che's Heaven Smiting Sword at full strength. Amidst the explosions which caused the surface of the ocean to vibrate violently, more than ten bones in Fen Juechen's chest were simultaneously shattered. His chest directly caved in as his entire person flew away like kite with a cut string and a miserable howl of pain spilled from his lips.

“UUAAAAAAAAHHHHH!!”

The blood in Fen Juechen's

chest trashed about wildly and he briefly lost consciousness. When he came to, he felt an extremely painful sensation flooding his body and soul—it was so agonizing that he nearly wished he was dead.

Why... did his sword... have such a terrifying might...?

I only suffered a single blow from his sword... but why does it hurt so much... that it seems like my very soul is being ripped to shreds...

The extreme pain not only tore at Fen Juechen's soul, but it also intensely agitated his primal instincts. He forcefully brought his tattered body to a stop. It seemed like he did not even care about the gaping wound in his chest as all of the black light surrounding his body surged and the black energy in the surrounding area crazily gushed toward him. They formed a deep and gloomy black vortex in front of his body that resembled a black hole.

“Yun... Che!” Fen Juechen's hoarse voice was filled with so much pain that it no longer even



resemble a human being'se.“I... will rip... you to shreds!!”

Fen Juechen howled wildly as he rushed toward Yun Che, carrying the black energy vortex along with him. He was using every last bit of strength he had to bury Yun Che in that merciless darkness forever.

Yun Che did not retreat from this attack. Instead, both his arms slowly rose in the air as the flames on the Heaven Smiting Sword suddenly intensified and changed color—from a scarlet

red into an eye-catching and captivating pure gold!

“Golden Annihilation!”

Despite being engulfed by the darkness, the golden-colored flames still blazed with a glaring light and was not suppressed in the slightest.

The moment the golden sword beam collided with the black whirlpool, only an extremely soft, muffled explosion could be heard. A split second later, the

sinister, frightening, void-like black whirlpool was completely cut in half by those golden flames, nearly dividing in two. It was reduced to two black currents which streamed to either side of Yun Che's body while the golden sword beam still rocketed forward, smashing into Fen Juechen's black sword.

The black sword was not bent by the impact this time, and the golden sword beam was only stopped for a fraction of a second before cutting through the body of the black sword and brutally smashing into Fen Juechen's chest. Golden light

immediately exploded outward crazily as the heavy sword energy and Golden Crow flames blasted mercilessly into Fen Juechen's body.

“WARRGGHHHHH!!”

An incomparably shrill wail tore through the heavens. Fen Juechen became a figure shrouded in golden flames as he was flung far away. A large amount of blood sprayed through the air, scattering everywhere. It was a ghastly sight indeed.

Riiip...

Fen Juechen's body fell into the sea and large amounts of steam erupted from where he fell. The patch of the ocean that was more than three hundred meters wide began to boil crazily, but the fires that were scouring Fen Juechen's body still did not die out... The flames of the Golden Crow would not be so easily extinguished by mere sea water.

The two halves of the broken black sword also fell into the

ocean almost at the same time, and in the blink of an eye, they disappeared as well.

Pain... Indescribable pain was eating away at Fen Juechen's entire body at this moment. He felt like nearly every single cell in his body was being cut to pieces. This pain could even be compared to the pain he experienced all those years ago, during his forced absorption of the devil origin...

Despite the pain he was going through, Fen Juechen's will

refused to break and he desperately released all his power in an attempt to extinguish the Golden Crow flames. It was only when he had sunk more than hundreds of meters that the Golden Crow flames finally weakened, but his entire body had nearly been burned to a near at that point.

The physical pain he was experiencing was not even a fraction of the pain that his soul was suffering.

His body continued to sink into

the ocean and his entire body hardly moved, as if it had become completely still. Yet his eyes were filled with pain, hatred, discontent and humiliation...

I clearly gained such incredible strength...

Why... am I still unable to kill him...

Why did I still lose in such an ugly, humiliating manner...



Why is it always like this...

Vengeance... the only reason for me to go on living... For the sake of vengeance, I went through hell... and paid the most disastrous price...

Could it be that I cannot even achieve... the only thing that I am living for now...

NO...

How could I... how could I...  
lose to him... How could I lose?!

Fen Juechen's body continued to sink into the deep waters, but he finally began to move. His right arm began to slowly rise up as a bead of jet black blood rose up from his fingertip. His eyes focused on that bead of blood and he mumbled a few words as if he were talking in his sleep, "Daylight Devour... Lightless Eternal Night..."

On the surface of the waters,

Yun Che had not retrieved the Fen Juechen who sunk deep into the ocean. Instead he stood there, staring quietly at the water. His face solemn and grave because he was beginning to feel that something was amiss with the whole situation.

To think that he could so easily injure Fen Juechen to such a serious extent.

Even the wound on his right shoulder was taken so that he could land a heavy blow onto Fen Juechen.

The entire process was so easy that it felt rather unnatural.

When he thought about it calmly, when he had been dodging and defending, Fen Juechen's power, aura, and every single one of his dark attacks had all been peerless and terrifying. Yet the moment he had engaged Yun Che in hand to hand combat... his profound energy continuously grew weaker and more chaotic each time they clashed. The power of his dark attacks also continued to plunge as well.

Even if his profound energy was not stable, it should not have become this wild in such a short period of time.

So what exactly was going on?

“Be careful!!” Jasmine’s cold voice rang out all of the sudden, “There is no way that he would be defeated so easily. Even though the wounds he has suffered are considerably heavy, he still has a measure of strength left. Furthermore, it seems as if he is planning to

release all of that strength in one shot.”

“Mn, I’ve noticed it as well.” Yun Che said, his gaze growing more and more intense as he stared at the waters below. The Heaven Smiting Sword in his hand blazed with flames once more.

# Chapter 748 – Lightless Eternal Night, Yellow Springs Ashes

---

Under the blue ocean, Yun Che could feel that Fen Juechen had stopped sinking. Even though he was seriously wounded, the aura on him was still expanding in an surprising speed... In the blink of an eye, he had actually surpassed the peak status of the profound strength he had before, and was continuing to increase in an extreme speed.

At the same time, an extremely

gloomy, suppressed aura spread through heaven and earth silently, as if a terrifying storm that could end the world was quietly brewing.

Yun Che's eyebrows also tightened more and more. Of the two strikes that hit Fen Juechen before, the first strike smashed all of his breastbone, and the strength of the second strike destroyed his whole body. If it was someone else, that person would've died instantly. Even though Fen Juechen was seriously injured, it wasn't enough to kill him. However, when he was knocked into the



ocean, his vitality and the aura of his profound energy became incredibly weak... But it was at this moment, an unusual burst of power appeared.

Could it be... under his unwillingness, he triggered some kind of forbidden power?

As Yun Che was surprised by it, the ocean region below him suddenly became all pitch-black... this severe change did not happen gradually, instead, it happened in an instant. As far as the eyes could see, the huge blue

ocean region had become black, a thick ink-like black. Before Yun Che could react, the world before his eyes also became pitch-black all of a sudden, and he could not see any trace of light anymore.

Hundred of kilometers away, Feng Xue'er brought Xiao Lingxi and flew to the edge of the ocean region. Just as their bodies passed the edge of the ocean coast, a pitch-black world appeared before them.

“Ah!!” Feng Xue'er and Xiao

Lingxi both exclaimed at the same time.

This pitch-black world was a couple hundred kilometers away, but it was as if it was right before their eyes. The region that was covered by the dark night was like a black hole that was carved into the world. The things within it were all completely swallowed, disappeared, and turned into nothingness.

A gloomy, irritating emotion shrouded Feng Xue'er's mind

and soul. She immediately became alert, and used the Phoenix profound energy to protect her heart. At the same time she transferred a large amount of energy to protect Xiao Lingxi. This pitch-black color overflowed with power which possessed an aura more terrifying than anything Feng Xue'er had ever seen. The unsettling feeling she felt increased more than ten times. She held Xiao Lingxi tight with her arms and said hastily, "Let us hurry."

Before her anxious voice faded, Feng Xue'er's whole body burned

in Phoenix flames, her flying speed increased suddenly as they rushed towards the pitch-black regions like a Phoenix resurrected in fire.

Yun Che's surroundings had become a field of darkness. Moreover, it wasn't just normal darkness due to the absence of light as within the darkness, Yun Che felt as if he had been fallen into a pitch-black swamp as the air surrounding him became viscous and thick. Even simply moving a finger took many times more strength than normal. Countless oppressive, ghastly, ice-cold auras came from all

directions and surged into his mind, eroding it. This kind of mind erosion was extremely terrifying. If these auras had entered the minds of others, they would already corroded those minds with negative emotions, and perhaps even driven those people crazy. However, due to the Dragon God Soul, Yun Che didn't need to fear these auras for now.

“This ‘Lightless Eternal Night,’ one of the high level domains within the 《Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night》!” Jasmine said in a serious tone, “With Fen Juechen’s current ability, he can

barely activate it. He might even need to pay an enormous price.”

“Lightless Eternal Night?” Yun Che started to feel countless of spooky, bone-piercing aura gush crazily towards him. Slowly, he felt like he seemed to be swallowed into the stomach of a giant monster, and would be digested into nothingness anytime.

“Everything that is covered by this domain will be swallowed whole once they are covered by this domain. Not a single trace

would be left... including light!” Jasmine said in a low voice, “Now that this domain has covered an entire seventy five kilometers, even if you used all your strength, you would still be unable to forcefully escape from it before it completely devours you... the only thing you can do right now is to forcefully tear it open.”

Even with his spiritual perception, Yun Che was completely unable to perceive the edges of this pitch-black domain, as if it were endless. As his surroundings became increasingly dark and viscous,



the range of Yun Che's spiritual sense continued to decrease, and the amount of effort for each breath doubled. It reached a point where Yun Che began to feel a trace of despair from being trapped within this endless black hole.

“Yun... Che!!” The sound of devilish voice wailing resonated over from the depths of the dark domain. It was none other than Fen Juechen, who had become completely twisted due to his immense hatred and enmity, “Disappear... forever!!!”

He could hear Fen Juechen's voice, but he wasn't able to detect where he was because this voice came from every corner of the Dark Domain. At this moment, Yun Che was almost suffocated and couldn't even breathe. The devouring energy shrouded his whole body and the whole world, and his protective profound energy was almost pushed to its defending limit.

As the time of the terrifying crisis became increasingly near, Yun Che's face remained extremely stiff, but the glint in his eyes became increasingly

frosty and serene. At this time, a trace of light suddenly appeared below the corner of his eye.

A light which shouldn't have been able to appear within this dark domain.

Yun Che's vision was quickly redirected as he focused below him... the light wasn't a hallucination or illusion. Although it weak, it was real. Moreover, it appeared to contain a unique vermilion!

Yun Che was incredibly familiar with this smear of vermilion... it was the color that belonged to the Heaven Smiting Sword!

As Yun Che's mind willed it, in the blink of an eye, his entire body's profound energy was condensed atop the Heaven Smiting Sword. The next moment, the Heaven Smiting Sword became enveloped in burning flames. Using the Heaven Smiting Sword as a catalyst, Golden Crow flames began to blaze fiercely. An extremely intense glow of fire emerged amidst the darkness

within this dark domain which had devoured all light.

The Golden Crow flames blazed atop the Heaven Smiting Sword, illuminating its blade along with Yun Che's face and figure. It also completely dispersed the darkness around him within a diameter of three meters. Within this seemingly endless dark domain, he had easily burned out an area of light.

After burning a hole in this area, a strange light flashed through Yun Che's eyes as they

became focused and he sliced out in front of him with his sword.

BOOM!!

A dull roar followed the trajectory of the Heaven Smiting Sword's slice as the dark space in front of Yun Che was viciously torn apart. A several meter long trench of blinding, blazing flames began to burn amidst the darkness in front of him, only disappearing after quite a while.

“An extremely strong aura and a similarly terrifying momentum. However, it seems... it’s not that special after all.”

The pressure which had been weighing on his mind suddenly lessened by several times. The feeling perceived by Yun Che’s body and spiritual sense earlier could be described as extremely terrifying. He had been unable to free himself from it, and was even more incapable of tearing it. At the time, he could even clearly feel the aura of death... He had never thought that this shockingly powerful dark

domain would actually be so vulnerable against the Golden Crow flames. It might have seemed scary on the outside, but on the inside, it was just a paper tiger which broke with the slightest touch!

Jasmine, “...”

If so...

Yun Che's hands gripped the Heaven Smiting Sword which was ablaze with flames. As the flames burned, two faint scarlet



flames carrying traces of gold  
emerged within Qin Lie's pupils.  
Behind him, the image of a giant  
golden crow slowly appeared  
and then quickly came into  
being as a heatwave crazily  
spread through the  
surroundings.

“Golden Crow flames’  
destruction domain, Yellow  
Springs Ashes!”

BOOM BOOM BOOM BOOM  
BOOM BOOM

The silhouette of the golden crow gave a long cry toward the sky, causing the air to tremble and the earth to crash. The flames which originated from a primordial true god were extremely hot and carried an unparalleled power of incineration as they forcefully tore through layer after layer of the Dark Domain. Even with the dark profound energy as a medium, the darkness which had devoured all light suddenly combusted and became blindingly bright due to the extreme flames.

Deep howls echoed around the

dark domain like ghostly wails as the darkness which hid the day madly attacked the Golden Crow flames in hopes of enveloping and devouring them. At first, the darkness was still barely able to contend with the Golden Crow flames to a standstill. However as the more and more of the domain was torn and blown apart, the Golden Crow flames quickly became an unstoppable force as thousands of rips and hundreds of holes appeared amidst the formerly complete world of darkness.

“Ah!!!”

In the face of the oncoming heat, Feng Xue'er suddenly stopped as she let out a sound of shock. The originally cool ocean breeze became hot like a flame as several hundred meters of high waves began to madly roil and surge in the ocean below, forcing Feng Xue'er to fly up to an altitude of three thousand meters. As she looked forward, she saw that the giant area of darkness had undergone enormous change as streak after streak of flames pierced out the sides of the darkness. In the blink of an eye, the world of darkness had already become ragged.

The darkness struggled as the flames devoured. Atop the roiling ocean, it was as if two giant beasts were fighting; a scarlet beast and a black beast were ruthlessly tearing at each other's throats.

However, the darkness was clearly not an opponent for the scarlet flames which had later emerged. Before long, exposure to the burning scarlet flames caused the area of darkness to fall apart and turn into countless scattered fragments. Even without touching the

incinerating flames, these fragments quickly dissipated on their own. As the flames continued to burn, they became increasingly intense. They had long since dyed the dark sky a thorough red, and had caused an extremely thick layer of steam which was hundreds of meters long to emerge atop the ocean and linger there.

The gusting winds were now no longer suppressed, and became increasingly violent and hot. In order to protect Xiao Lingxi, Feng Xue'er propped up a giant scarlet red shield. Afterwards, they welcomed the violent gusts,

and used it to increase their speed as they flew east.

Big Brother Yun... Please don't let anything happen to him...

In the sky within an area of five kilometers, only the blazing Golden Crow flames remained as they continued to burn until the last trace of the darkness had been exterminated.

Under Yun Che's "Yellow Springs Ashes," Fen Juechen's "Lightless Eternal Night" had been completely defeated.

It seemingly didn't even have the power to put up any resistance.

The arm Yun Che had raised slowly fell as he withdrew the Heaven Smiting Sword into the Sky Poison Pearl. Once the Heaven Smiting Sword left his body, a heavy feeling of near collapse was felt through every inch of his body. Even though it could be said that the process of destroying Fen Juechen's Dark Domain went through without a hitch, it didn't mean that he could relax. The aftermath of



releasing a Yellow Springs Ashes which contained all his power left the profound energy in his body at a deficit. The reason why he had withdrawn the Heaven Smiting Sword was because he probably wouldn't even be able to lift the Heaven Smiting Sword for ten breaths in his current condition.

But at least his condition was by far better than Fen Juechen's.

The flames that filled the sky began to fall with each ball of fire leaving behind an expanse of

water vapor which shot into the sky... If the power of the Golden Crow flames Yun Che released was increased by just a little bit, even water vapor would not arise for it would instead burn the water into nothingness.

Phew...

Yun Che let out a slow exhale, then extended his hand. As his palm faced the boiling ocean's surface, he quickly released a streak of profound energy.

Bang!!!

The surface of the ocean exploded as a black human silhouette flew out in a straight line at Yun Che, and was firmly sucked into Yun Che's grasp.

Even though he had been soaked in ocean water for a long time, Fen Juechen's bloodstains still had not completely been washed off his body. There were at least tens of external injuries on his body that still slowly oozed with blood. The blood which stuck on his wounds and

body was an abnormal scarlet black color.

Fen Juechen's life force and profound strength aura was already incomparably weak. Only the phrase "hanging on by a thread" could be used to describe his current appearance. All four of his limbs dangled as he was being grabbed by the back by Yun Che. Although he was no longer able to use even an iota of his strength, his consciousness had not collapsed yet. In a weak, hoarse, and painfully low voice, he uttered...

“Why... would... it be like this...”

“How... could... I possibly... have lost...”

“How could... I lose...”

Yun Che didn't say a single word. He lifted his left arm to Fen Juechen's head and after a flash of radiance, his profound handle shot out of his arm, instantly entering Fen Juechen's forehead, attacking his mind and soul.

He wanted to know where Fen Juechen's strange power came from. He also wanted to know what exactly was the "Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night" Jasmine had mentioned.

After a few breaths of time, Yun Che's complexion changed slightly. After a brief deadlock, the profound handle flew out of Fen Juechen's body, returning to Yun Che's arm.

"What a tenacious mind and willpower." Yun Che muttered in

astonishment, “He could actually still resist the Profound Handle Soul Search in that state.”

“Not only has his profound strength explosively increased, his soul has also qualitatively changed. Adding onto his originally strong willpower, even if he’s half dead, you wouldn’t be able to succeed if you conduct a Profound Handle Soul Search.” Jasmine stately indifferently, not surprised at all about this outcome.

“...” Yun Che swept his eyes across the surface of the ocean, dove down, and threw the near dead Fen Juechen onto a broken reef.

“You are not going to kill him?” Jasmine said coldly. She didn’t feel any killing intent on Yun Che. And his action now was obviously letting Fen Juechen go, “The consequences of cutting the grass without digging up the roots are right before your eyes. Do you want to make the same mistake on the same person again?”



“I really want to kill him,” Yun Che took a light breath as his face showed helplessness. A terrifying trouble was created all because he let Fen Juechen go back then. With Fen Juechen’s almost heaven defying growth speed, if he let him leave alive, it would be like planting a disaster that would be who knows how many times larger than today.

But...

# Chapter 749 – Unwilling Defeat

---

“Sigh...” Yun Che shook his head and extended a hand towards Fen Juechen. He did not do it to deliver the final blow, but to release the energy of heaven and earth that he had stored up quite a while ago, as he transferred it into Fen Juechen’s body.

Fen Juechen’s wounds were immediately sealed as a faint energy circulated within his almost exhausted profound veins and meridians... Although

weak, it was enough to allow Fen Juechen to move again, so much that he could fly out of the Eastern Ocean region.

Fen Juechen's eyes widened as his eyes recovered their clarity. Using his arm to support his body, he lifted his upper body with difficulty. His eyes that were filled with shock, unwillingness, and resentment glared unwaveringly at Yun Che. "If you want to kill me, kill me... Don't you dare... humiliate me!"

"Humiliate you?" Yun Che's

mouth curled in disdain. “I don’t have such low level interests and I’m not going to kill you either.”

“You...” Yun Che’s words didn’t make Fen Juechen happy in the slightest, he only felt deep humiliation.

“The reason why I didn’t kill you four years ago was because you had once saved my little aunt Xiao Lingxi. Also, in these three years that I left the Profound Sky Continent, if it weren’t for you, I might not have been able to see my Little

Aunt again.” Yun Che deeply stared at Fen Juechen’s fierce face that was full of hatred. “Frankly speaking, although your heart is filled with hatred and resentment toward me, I actually can’t hate you. Instead, I feel a bit of gratitude.”

“I don’t need your insincerity. Me saving her has nothing to do with you!! If you have the guts, kill me right now! Or else, there will come a day... in which I’ll make you wish that you were dead!!” Fen Juechen roared hoarsely. Being spared... and even offered gratitude by the person he hated the most? To

him, this was a humiliation that he was simply unable to bear.

“Me releasing you today can be considered as repayment for saving my Little Aunt the second time. After that, I won’t owe you anything!” Yun Che stated coldly, “If you want to kill me for revenge, then properly treasure the life that I spared a second time! The injuries on your body are severe and your vitality has taken a huge hit, but with your current cultivation, you ought to be able to fully recover in two months. In these two months, you better hide well, because if you die, you

would've died in vain!”

“As for the next time you come over to kill me... don't even dream of leaving alive like you can today!”

The atmosphere still burned hot, but the ocean waves had somewhat settled for the most part. Fen Juechen slowly stood up. Even though his body was incomparably weak, the expression in his eyes was as sinister as a savage wolf's. “You will... regret this... The reason why I was defeated by you

today... was only because I lost in terms of weaponry...”

Once I retrieve the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword... I will give the blood debt and humiliation to you back... a million times greater!!”

Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?

Yun Che’s brows twitched due to Fen Juechen’s words.



Fen Juechen also quickly realized that his tongue had slipped due to him losing control. He tightened his fists, gritted his teeth, then flew into the air while enduring the sharp pains on his body. Flying haphazardly, he headed south.

“...” Seeing his blood drenched back, Yun Che hesitated for a bit, but didn’t give chase as he indifferently watched him go into the distance.

“Live on for at least a few more years. If you die, she will feel

sad.” Yun Che suddenly  
muttered.

Fen Juechen, who was already  
more than five hundred meters  
away, suddenly trembled  
slightly.

“Heavenly Sin Divine Sword...  
Why would he want to obtain  
that sword?” Yun Che withdrew  
his gaze, his brows slowly  
tightening. Heavenly Sin Divine  
Sword... that was the “Devil  
Sword Conference’s” “devil  
sword”!

Also, what Fen Juechen had said was not “obtain” or “seize”, but “retrieve”!

If it wasn't an error on Fen Juechen's part, the meaning behind the word “retrieve” was too thought-provoking.

On the other hand, Fen Jueche's final words faintly revealed... that he seemed to know how to control the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword.

“As expected, him participating

in the Devil Sword Conference was not without reason... it was actually to obtain the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. And it seems that not only did he know of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword's existence, he also seems... to have a special relationship or purpose. What in the world is going on?"

"Then why didn't you make him stay and question him?" Jasmine asked unhappily.

"His bones are almost as stubborn as mine. If he doesn't

want to say anything, even if you torment him to death, it would be impossible for him to reveal half a word. Forcibly making him stay would only be wasting my strength, is all.” Yun Che said helplessly, “You also saw it before, I failed when I was trying to conduct the Profound Handle Soul Search.”

“Hmph.” Jasmine dully snorted and didn’t deny it. Instead, she changed topics. “I’ve told you this before, he had not even absorbed half the devil origin in his body at the moment. He was completely certain that he would be able to kill you today, yet still

lost miserably, and was even spared. Due to this humiliation, he will definitely absorb the devil origin with more zest than ever.”

“You have already experienced the speed of his growth within these short three months. If you don’t kill him today, what you have buried away is not just a simple risk but an absolute calamity that will most likely kill you soon. By that time, you wouldn’t even have the time to regret it!”

“I knew you would say that... and I know all that.” Yun Che slowly continued, “But he still saved my Little Aunt many times. I also understand Little Aunt too well. She looks strong and positive, but she’s actually too good and kindhearted. She feels grateful toward Fen Juechen and had always seen herself as the cause of Burning Heaven Clan’s annihilation and Fen Juechen’s hatred toward me. If I really killed him, she would then place the sin of Fen Juechen’s death upon herself as well. It would leave a knot in her heart that would perhaps never get untied in this lifetime... I would rather pick the choice of having a future misfortune on

myself instead of that.”

Furthermore, just the fact of him having saved Little Aunt two times is enough for me to do this.”

While talking, Yun Che turned around and looked toward the east while quickly changing into a set of looser clothes. As he put them on, he specially covered the wounds on his shoulders.

“Big Brother Yun!”



“Little Che!!”

Following a scorching heatwave that separated the water's surface, Feng Xue'er quickly flew over while bringing along Xiao Lingxi.

“Little Che, are you alright? Are you hurt?” After stopping by Yun Che's side, Xiao Lingxi hurriedly grasped his hands with force and frantically looked all over his body. Seeing that he was safe and sound, her heart that was hanging on a thread

during the entire journey had finally rested.

“Of course I’m alright. Not a hair less.” Yun Che answered in a comfortable, relaxed voice.

“Big Brother Yun, I’m sorry...” Feng Xue’er lowered her delicate head and said timidly, “I... I didn’t listen to your instructions...”

“I know that you guys risked coming over here because you were worried about me.” Yun

Che said with a warm smile. He pulled over Feng Xue'er's hand. "I told you that nothing would happen to me. See? I didn't lie."

"Then... Fen Juechen? Is he already..." Xiao Lingxi's softly questioned. On the way here, she and Feng Xue'er had personally seen the horrifying scene of the exchange between the darkness and flames. In the end, it was the flames that had extinguished the darkness... which also meant that Yun Che had defeated Fen Juechen.

With the two being mortal enemies and the last scene that fierce... Yun Che winning also meant that Fen Juechen...”

“As for Fen Juechen...” Yun Che gave a slight smile and pointed to the south. “He’s over there. Although his injuries were a bit ugly, flying out of the ocean region was no problem. But if he wants to fully recover, it might take one or two months.”

Severe injuries and a weak state caused Fen Juechen’s flying speed to be really slow. Even a

slightly strong gust of wind would be able to violently shake him, so even if he had left for quite a while, a pitch-black figure doing its best to leave could still be seen in the distance.

However, it seemed like the indistinct black figure had suddenly sensed Xiao Lingxi's arrival, for it started to desperately accelerate. It swayed even more intensely, as though it wanted to escape at all costs... nearly falling right into the ocean several times.

Xiao Lingxi relaxed her mind. Using both hands to hug Yun Che's arm, her head gently leaned on him. "Little Che, thank you."

"Thank me? Why?" Yun Che asked with a smile.

"I know it was because of me that Little Che did... did not kill him. But... but this..." Xiao Lingxi closed her eyes. Her heart felt warm, yet pained and anxious. She didn't want Fen Juechen to die because she knew that he wasn't a bad person.

Furthermore, he was originally a really pitiful person and was also her savior that she was extremely grateful toward. However, because of her, Yun Che let him go, yet he would still desperately try to kill Yun Che...

She didn't know what in the world she should think, should do... nor did she know how to dispel the hatred Fen Juechen felt for Yun Che. After all, it was a hatred born from the annihilation of his clan.

“Hahaha,” Yun Che began

laughing loudly, then said in a rather serious voice, “Even though Fen Juechen has always wanted to kill me, he has still saved Little Aunt’s life. And as for Little Aunt’s life, to me, it is infinitely more precious than my own. That is why me releasing him is just a matter of course. Moreover, he might feel grateful that I released him . Adding on the fact that he himself knows that he isn’t my match, he might not come back again and look for trouble.”

“Little Che...” Xiao Lingxi softly uttered as she tightened her hug on Yun Che.



Sensing that Xiao Lingxi's nervousness and worry scattered into thin air, Yun Che also completely relaxed. Embracing Xiao Lingxi's slender waist in one hand and holding Feng Xue'er's little hand in another, he said, "Let's go back. Grandfather and the others are definitely worried about us."

Yun Che's profound energy surged as they headed back to Floating Cloud City. However, the speed with which he traveled was much slower than he used coming here by several times.

The thoughts he had were much more complex than before as well.

Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night... dark profound strength... Heavenly Sin Divine Sword...

What exactly were the secrets Fen Juechen was hiding?!

---

The ocean surface incessantly lifted huge waves as Fen Juechen's flight speed decreased. With his hand on his chest completely damp with scarlet black blood, Fen Juechen's face was full of pain.

When a small isle appeared in his line of sight, Fen Juechen gritted his teeth and flew over staggeringly. His mind relaxed somewhat as his body fiercely fell onto the edge of the little isle.

Using his hands to support

himself, he flipped his body over with difficulty. His breathing came out in rough pants as he sunk all ten of his fingers into the ice-cold sand with a gripping motion.

“Why... is it like this... cough... cough, cough...” He coughed painfully, with each cough bringing along a patch of black blood and the occasional pieces of his internal organs.

“Heh, what a truly pitiful person.”

A heart piercing, ice-cold voice suddenly came from up front. And judging from the voice... it seemed to the voice of a young girl! Fen Juechen abruptly raised his head... Not even five steps from where he was at, he saw a petite red figure.

Like a ghost, a young girl soundlessly appeared there!

Wearing a luxurious red dress, she looked to be only twelve or thirteen years old and possessed an outrageously exquisite face. It was also this little girl who

actually caused all the nerves on his body to convulse; each and every cell on his body all trembled uncontrollably.

He had never trembled like this before in his entire life, even in the time of his greatest despair.

“Who... who are you!” The girl’s eyes were beautiful to the point of being demonic. Under the gaze of these pair of eyes, he couldn’t feel his body under his intense trembling.

The girl didn't answer him but an ice-cold mocking smile appeared on her extremely beautiful face. "At a great cost, you obtained a huge power and believed that you could easily kill your greatest foe. However, you didn't expect the other party's Devil Slayer Sword to just happen to be your power's greatest bane. Your defeat truly makes one pity you."

"...Who...exactly...are you?!"

The girl's eyes were a field of cold indifference. She slowly

raised her arm and a red light deeper than fresh blood flashed in her palm that was more fair than the first snow. “Him not killing you, doesn’t mean that I won’t kill you! The power of the devil that had already been extinct since the Ancient Era actually appeared on your body. That also determined your end!

As the girl’s voice fell, the red light within her palm became an extremely thin red beam. Along with the instantaneous hissing of space, it shot straight at Fen Juechen...



# Chapter 750 – History Of The Past

---

That beam of red light was even faster than lightning. Fen Juechen only saw that red gleam, he did not even have time to think about reacting before that red light struck him in the head, instantly burrowing its way into his body.

Immediately, the feeling of being pierced by countless steel needles surged crazily out of his soul, causing him to let out a miserable wail before he lost consciousness and fainted dead

away.

The red-robed girl's eyes faintly drooped, her gaze was cold and clear and she maintained a certain posture as she swiftly read through Fen Juechen's memories... After a short ten seconds, that beam of red light left Fen Juechen's body and disappeared into the sky. His memories had also been completely read by the red-robed girl; she had not overlooked anything.

At the same time, she

conveniently wiped away all the memories he had after meeting her.

The red-robed girl slowly withdrew her palm as a strange light briefly flashed in her eyes. She turned around, not looking at the unconscious Fen Juechen again. But she did not make a move against him either. A small, snowy-white hand made a small gesture and an extremely long spatial tear appeared in front of the girl immediately; it twisted and keened in the air, neither dissipating nor disappearing.

“You are similarly a person with two lives. Yet the fate of both your lives are so unspeakably tragic. It is pitiful to the point where even I don’t want to kill you anymore.”

With a cold and detached sigh, the girl stepped into the spatial tear and disappeared completely as the space sealed itself around her.

Once he returned to Floating Cloud City, Yun Che swiftly retreated to his own courtyard, then began to focus on

recovering his profound energy and healing his injuries. The fight with Fen Juechen was far less bitter and desperate than he had originally envisioned. To think that he was actually able to completely dominate a Fen Juechen who still had forty percent of his strength left.... Even when he thought about it now, he still felt that it was rather implausible.

“Jasmine, I just can’t shake the feeling that there was something off with Fen Juechen’s condition. Could it be that a characteristic of devil profound energy is that the once you have

used up most of it, the remaining portion becomes extremely weak?”

Yun Che waited for a good long while, but he did not hear Jasmine’s reply.

Was she asleep? No, that can’t be the case. The devilish poison in her body has already been purged, so she shouldn’t need to descend into a deep sleep where she sealed off all of her senses.

After hesitating for a while,

Yun Che decided to enter his subconscious mind and entered the Sky Poison Pearl.

Within the world of the Sky Poison Pearl, he could only see Hong'er sound asleep; she had not reacted to his arrival... Yet he did not see Jasmine's figure nor did he sense her presence.

“...” Yun Che stood there silently, sunk in thought. He did not leave the Sky Poison Pearl, he merely stood there, waiting for Jasmine to return. Even though Jasmine did not need to

rely on the Sky Poison Pearl any longer, she still shared a life with him, her spirit body could not leave Yun Che's side for too long, so she would be back before long.

And just as expected, after Yun Che waited for a little while longer, a red light flashed in front of him and Jasmine's charming features appeared before him, her small, milk-white face completely expressionless.

“...You were waiting for me?”



“Could you actually have gone... to look for Fen Juechen?” Yun Che said with a doubt-filled expression.

“Hmph, you guessed right.” Jasmine’s face turned to the side as the petals of her lips involuntarily puckered into a pout, as if she was very upset that he had actually been able to guess what she just did, “However, you don’t need to worry. I didn’t kill him, I only obtained some knowledge that I desired from him, that’s all.”

“Which means that you have already gleaned all of his secrets?” Yun Che asked in astonishment.

“Hmph, you could say so.”

Yun Che’s mind jolted and he immediately asked, “Then where exactly did his power come from? What exactly happened to him over the last few years? Why does he want to obtain the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?”

Jasmine's "you could say so" definitely meant that she basically understood the crux of the entire matter and all the necessary details as well. The various mysteries surrounding Fen Juechen had always been in the back of his mind, so since Jasmine already knew the answers to these questions, he definitely had to get to the bottom of the whole affair.

"It looks like the whole matter regarding Fen Juechen has really gotten to you." Jasmine said sedately.

“I’m just intensely curious, that’s all.” Yun Che said as he furrowed his eyebrows, “In just four short years, his strength shot up to such a degree that it’s basically inconceivable. The profound energy he uses is something I have never seen before and the fact that he mentioned the ‘Heavenly Sin Divine Sword’ today raises up even more questions. I just have a feeling that there is a huge mystery hidden behind Fen Juechen and I can’t help but think about it.”

“It is far from being just some great riddle.” Jasmine said as her long and delicate eyebrows faintly sank, “The things recorded in his memories are for more interesting than I had initially expected them to be!”

Even though Jasmine labelled it as “interesting”, her expression had clearly become rather solemn.

This undoubtedly caused Yun Che’s already great curiosity to grow even more as his suspicions became even heavier.

Before, when Jasmine had yelled out the words “Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night”, her tone had been rather irregular. And right now, it seemed like the complexity of the situation far exceeded the boundaries of what he had initially imagined.

“Could it be something that I am once again not allowed to know about?” Yun Che asked cautiously. Jasmine had hidden many things from him and if she did not feel like telling him, there was no way that he could even finagle a single word from her.

Jasmine gave him a glance before haughtily turning her head aside once more, “Even though this matter is rather troublesome to talk about, since you’re so anxious to know about it... Hmph, today I finally got rid of the devilish poison and I’m feeling pretty good, so I’ll just tell you anyways. Whatever I’m about to say to you right now, you must never leak a single word of it to anyone in the future, no matter who you meet.”

Damn me, it was this serious...

Yun Che thought as he solemnly replied, “There is probably nobody in this world who knows me better than you, and whether or not I am a person who has no sense of what is important or not is something that you should know better than anyone.”

“Hmph! When it comes to women, you have never once ever showed that you had your priorities set straight!” Jasmine coldly snorted.

Yun Che was left utterly speechless.



Jasmine extended an arm and with a flourish of her small hand, she set up a small sound obstruction barrier around Hong'er... This sound obstruction barrier was definitely not to prevent her from eavesdropping, on the contrary, it was to prevent their conversation from waking her up.

This casual gesture merely illustrated the practically involuntary care and love that Jasmine had for Hong'er.

Jasmine had always been protective and caring towards Hong'er, but she is forever so fierce towards me... Yun Che thought rather sourly.

“During the Primordial Era, the Divine Era specifically, the other races were all deemed to be inferior and lowly existences. The north of the Primal Chaos Dimension was composed of yin energy while the south was composed of yang energy. The southern region of the Primal Chaos Dimension was the realm where the ancient god clan

existed, whereas the northern region of the Primal Chaos Dimension was where the ancient devil clan lived. The god clan and the devil clan each controlled half of the Primal Chaos Dimension. The yin and yang energies of both clans repelled each other and both clans viewed the other with animosity, but actual conflict rarely occurred. It could even be said that they rarely came into contact with each other and a tenuous peace existed between the two clans. It was just like two conflicting elements which existed mutually as they balanced each other out.”

Jasmine began to recite her tale, but the contents of her story caused Yun Che to become completely dazed as a question involuntarily escaped his lips, “All of this... what does it have to do with Fen Juechen?”

“Do not interrupt!” Jasmine said with a loud scoff, “All of these naturally have something to do with Fen Juechen.”

Yun Che, “...”

“The reason that the gods and

the devils were so strong was because they were birthed from the power produced at the very beginning of the primal chaos. Furthermore, they were also nurtured by the energy that was produced at the beginning of the primal chaos.... And the purest, strongest and most perfect energy of heaven and earth that was produced at the beginning of the primal chaos is the 'primordial energy' that I mentioned when I was teaching you the Great Way of the Buddha. Even though the energy that you absorb into your body using the Great Way of the Buddha is also the energy of heaven and earth, when you compare its quality to that of the

quality of the ‘primordial energy’, it is inferior by heaven knows how many levels, it is akin to the difference between heaven and earth.”

Yun Che naturally remembered the term “primordial energy”. At that time Jasmine had said this: If one could cultivate the Great Way of the Buddha until one reached the tenth stage, that person could use the ultimate energy of heaven and earth—primordial energy! But she had also said that for the body of a human, even being able to cultivate the sixth stage of the Great Way of the Buddha was

already the extreme limit.

“It was basically impossible for any more true gods to appear after the Divine Era, and the most fundamental reason behind that was that the primordial energy within the Primal Chaos Dimension had become so thin that it was no longer possible to nurture any more people with the bodies and strength of a true god. Furthermore, as the Primal Chaos Realm grew more and more turbid, this caused the primordial energy to become thinner as each year goes by. Thus, we are destined to never

have a true god appear from among us ever again. And right now, it is possible that the initial ultimate and purest primordial energy that existed in the beginning might not even exist in the Primal Chaos Dimension anymore.

“During that Ancient Era, the gods were at the pinnacle of all existence. And among the small worlds that exist across countless stars and worlds, a portion of them were naturally created by the primal chaos but the majority of them were created or transformed by the gods. More than ninety percent



of the races in existence today were all created by the power of the gods. And that includes the human race, the demon race, the elven race, the dark nether race, the wood spirit race...”

“Dark nether race, wood spirit... race? What sort of races are these?” Yun Che blurted out involuntarily. He had never ever heard of the name of these two races before, whether it was in the Profound Sky Continent or the Illusory Demon Realm, and there were no written records regarding them either.

Jasmine rolled her eyes at him, seeming angry that she was interrupted once more, but this time she only gave a soft snort as she held her temper and continued to speak, "The wood spirit race is the same as the elven race, they are a clan which possesses an extreme intimacy with nature energy. They can communicate with plants and they have a certain degree of control over plants. The innate talent this clan has for cultivating profound energy is extremely low, therefore they are always weak and downtrodden. Furthermore, given their unique powers and physique, if they fall into the hands of those from outside

their race, their fates will always be exceptionally miserable... they will be enslaved and treated as tools that could look for and nurture medicine, or even worse, their bodies might even be used to refine spirit medicines or medicine spirits! In the auction houses of my world, it was very common to see wood spirits being sold, and because there were less and less of this race of people and they began to teeter on the edge of extinction, their prices began to get higher and higher.

Yun Che, “...”

“The dark nether race is a race that subsists on darkness and has the ability to change their form at will. Their race doesn’t have any distinction between the genders and they can reproduce asexually. This size of this race isn’t small, but they can only exist in places where yin energy abounds; the profound strength they can cultivate by themselves is extremely low. However, they have the ability to harvest the souls of living creatures and they can devour these souls to greatly increase their strength.”

“They...           subsist...           on  
darkness?” Yun Che’s eyes  
widened. He could understand if  
one subsisted on vegetation,  
morning dew or even wind, but  
to subsist on darkness... what  
the hell was this race??

Could           something           like  
“darkness” even be eaten?

“Hmph!           Ignorant           fool!”  
Jasmine said in a very disdainful  
manner,           “Given           your  
experiences, you may perhaps  
only know of the existence of  
humans, demons and beasts. But

in this gigantic Primal Chaos Dimension, there exists hundreds of small and large races, and the knowledge that you possess is not even equivalent to a single drop in the ocean! There not only exist races which subsist on darkness, there are even races that subsist on dreams and even space. It is rumored that during the Primordial Era, there was even a race that subsisted on time itself...”

“~ ! @# ¥ %...” Yun Che’s brain was about to crash but he still could not imagine what it would be like to be able to eat dreams,

space or even time...

“Forget it, you have never even left this tiny Blue Pole Star before, so these are things that you will probably never understand in your lifetime and telling you these kind of things is equivalent to wasting my breath.” Jasmine folded her tender arms across her chest as she assumed a haughty posture which seemed to look down on everything else.

“Moreover, the Divine Era ultimately met a most complete

and thorough demise. And the reason for this demise was something that I mentioned to you a long time ago... it was because of one sword.”

“Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword!” Yun Che whispered in a hoarse voice.



# Chapter 751 – The End Of The Era Of Gods

---

“The Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword existed since the primordial times. It was produced from the foundation and core power of the Primal Chaos Realm, it was also the Primal Chaos Realm’s first sword. It is the ancestor of every single sword and even every single weapon in the world! Ranked first in the Seven Heavenly Profound Treasures, it contains heaven defying strength. The legends say that even a powerless man wielding it, will be able to easily cut

through the blue firmament and destroy the heavens.

Jasmine duly described of this sword of legends... and even in the world she was born, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword was also a legendary existence.

“During the Era of Gods, no one had not heard of the name Heaven Smiting Ancestral Sword. However, as the divine essence of its first owner, who was also its only owner in records—the head of the three

Creation Gods “Mo E”, dissipated entirely and their lifespan ended, the Heaven Smiting Ancestral Sword also disappeared without a trace. No one had ever seen traces of it ever again, until seven hundred thousand years later. In the center of the primal chaos, the silhouette of the Heaven Smiting Ancestral Sword appeared once again.”

Yun Che: “...”

Jasmine closed her eyes, as if immersing herself within

distant memories, and continued narrating unhurriedly. “Because it existed in the middle of the Primal Chaos, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword was discovered by the god and devil races at the same time, and they inevitably wanted it for themselves. This was because by obtaining the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword, they would possess supreme power within the entire Primal Chaos. It was something that none of the gods could resist.”

“Thus, in order to obtain the Heaven Punishing Ancestral

Sword, the southern region of the Primal Chaos world of the gods and the northern region of the Primal Chaos world of the devils waged a fierce war. At first, both sides were simply fighting in order to obtain the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword. As the war became fiercer, as increasing numbers of gods perished at the hands of the devils and increasing numbers of devils were buried by the gods, hatred started to breed, spread and intensify, causing the war between the gods and devils to become more bitter, causing even more gods and devils to perish, and causing the animosity to further deepen...

Yun Che was entranced, however, one sentence roared in his heart tens of times... What did this have to do with the matter of Fen Juechen!?

“The fierce battle between the two races lasted for thirty thousand years, with the devil race starting to collapse, even their northern area of the Primal Chaos was slowly being occupied by the gods. The remnants of the devil race were slowly forced to the corners of the Primal Chaos...”

“In despair, the devil race started a counterattack without a care for the consequences... They sacrificed the taboo device that even they were incomparably terrified of...”

“The Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations!”

Jasmine’s eyebrows trembled for a split second whilst mentioning the name, as if that memory was extremely terrifying... an existence which made even the True Gods

tremble.

“Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations?” Yun Che was slightly shocked, then he remembered, “The second ranking of the Seven Great Heavenly Profound Treasures, the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations which is second only to the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword?”

“That’s right.” Jasmine closed her eyes once again, “Although its ranking within the Seven Heavenly Profound Treasures is



second after the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword, the extent of its terror far exceeds the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword. Even just based on its slaughtering and destructive capabilities, it could probably even surpass the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword.”

“The Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword was birthed from the purest and most sacred force of the Primal Chaos, it is the strongest and most sacred sword. The Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations on the other hand is the most extreme opposite, it was born from the

darkest and most evil forces of the Primal Chaos, containing the most extreme, the most terrifying negative energy. Once that energy is activated, even gods will not be able to control it, not to mention anyone else. Thus, even though the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations had always existed in the northern Primal Chaos, the devil race had always sealed and isolated it with their utmost might, not to mention using its strength, they did not even dare to go near it. Even when they had to continuously retreat during their war with the god race, they had never thought of using the strength of the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad

## Tribulations.

“However, the god race utterly defeated the devil race and gradually occupied more and more of the northern Primal Chaos, with the intention of eradicating the devil race. In desperation and grief, the Devil Race utilized the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations in a frenzy.

Jasmine’s brows could not help but tighten, there was even a hint of pain in her voice, it seemed as if the memory was

too horrifying, “When the power of the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations was activated, a wail as if from an infant, yet sinister and terrifying to the extreme spread to every corner of the Primal Chaos, an aura of death and a shadow enveloped every inch of space.

“If it were the god race of the golden age, perhaps they could have banded together to resist the power of the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations, however, although the god race was victorious, thirty thousand years of bitter war had made them pay an extremely

disastrous price. The golden age of the gods had withered to a point which words could not describe, they simply did not have the power to resist the destructive strength of the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations. All the gods were either destroyed, severely injured, or were inflicted with evil energy, their divine essence quickly draining. They were better off dead."

"It was not only the god race which experienced such a disaster, even the devil race who activated the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations had

experienced it too. That miserable disaster exceeds your imagination by countless times... Those which were cut down like straws were not simply petty creatures, but True Gods, supreme existences which could easily rule the heavens. In order to survive, the remnant god and devil race could not help but to unite in order to resist the power of the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations, however, it was already too late, both races were forced to the verge of extinction... the power of the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations had also neared its end, just when both races thought they could see the light at the end of the tunnel,

the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations released an extremely toxic poison across the skies, leading the god and devil races into an abyss of despair."

"Poison?" Yun Che subconsciously whispered.

"That kind of poison was called 'Terminator of Life'. Although you are well versed in the arts of poison, you could never have heard of this kind of poison." Jasmine said apathetically, "It is even scarier than the 'Heaven

Wounding Thought Severing Poison' that the Sky Poison Pearl can release! It is terrifying to the point that a True God can die by simply touching it!"

Yun Che's heart trembled, then he suddenly felt puzzled... Heaven Wounding Thought Severing Poison? What was that? How do I not know about it? When he initially used the poisonous strength of the Sky Poison Pearl, although the poison which was released was indeed scary, it was not to a level beyond reason. After using all of the poisonous strength, it was only enough to poison thirty-



three cities and seventy-six  
sects.

...Could it be that when I had  
obtained the Sky Poison Pearl,  
the poisonous strength had been  
depleted already?

Jasmine's eyes swept across  
Yun Che and noted his reaction,  
but developed a different notion,  
she turned her head and said,  
“You do not need to feel  
shocked. Although the Sky  
Poison Pearl has the words ‘Sky  
Poison’ in its name, poisonous  
strength is not its main ability,

its main ability is to purify and refine... in fact, it has the most powerful purifying and refining ability in the word!”

“However, even if it is the Sky Poison Pearl’s purifying abilities, whether it can purify the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations’s ‘Terminator of Life’ is unknown. The ‘Absolute God Slaying Poison’ that I was inflicted with and the devilish poison which Hong’er was inflicted with both originated from the evil essence of the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations when the ancient devil race used it. If it is able to

produce a god slaying poison with simply its remnant aura, even True Gods would not be able to comprehend how terrifying the ‘Terminator of Life’ is which was produced with the original power of the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations. At least to me, even the Sky Poison Pearl would not be able to purify the ‘Terminator of Life’. If not, then the god race would not have been entirely wiped out.

“...What happened after that? Were the god and devil races both destroyed just like this?” Yun Che asked in detail.

“That’s right.” Jasmine nodded her head indifferently, “The destruction of the Era of Gods began with the first ranking Sky Profound Treasure, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword, and ended with the second ranking Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations.”

“Back then when I entrusted you with the Evil God’s Indestructible Blood, I had told you that the Evil God was the last god to perish during the Era of Gods. Then, the gods and devils perished, the Primal

Chaos was a mess, countless stars and planets and living creatures perished, and the aura of the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations finally dispersed. Although the Evil God had not died, the 'Terminator of Life' in his body meant that he could not escape death. During the last moments of his life, he used his last bits of divine power to slow down the chaos within the Primal Chaos to his best ability, then, with his last bits of divine essence, he chose the lands he wanted to perish in... and finally died."

"Regarding the part about the

Evil God, I had obtained pieces of memories when I initially obtained the Evil God's Indestructible Blood, the Evil God must have deliberately done that while leaving behind his legacy. However, within these memories are many blanks, obviously the Evil God must have deliberately hidden some things that he did not want later generations to know about. Even the lands where he chose to perish and what he did in the last moments of his life, have been meticulously erased."

From the memories obtained from the Evil God's

Indestructible Blood... that would mean that under the heavens, whatever Jasmine had just said, she was the only one privy to such knowledge.

But! But! But! What did all of these have to do with the matter of Fen Juechen!!!

I only wanted to know what bizarre things had happened with Fen Juechen's body, why did such ancient matters suddenly come up!!

Although it was rather...  
interesting to listen!!

Although that was the end of the Era of Gods and was a catastrophe which affected the entire Primal Chaos, it was too distant and vast for Yun Che. Moreover, it did not have anything to do with his present, past or future, he would only find it interesting, and maybe feel a little mind-blown... basically, there was no difference to hearing a made up myth.



On the contrary, he was much more interested in Fen Juechen's secret!

# Chapter 752 – Ancient Devil Art

---

“And then? Where did the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword and Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations go?” Yun Che asked.

Jasmine slowly shook her head. “Not a clue. The Evil God was the last of the fallen gods, so it’s likely that he knew the final location of the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword and Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations. Yet this was not mentioned in the fragments of

the memories he left behind. Perhaps he hid them in the final moments of his life... in order to prevent these items, the sources of the annihilation of the gods, from throwing the world into chaos and disaster once more. He may have hid them in a place where future generations would never be able to find them.”

“But the Primordial Azure Dragon said that his daughter was sealed within the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword, so what’s going on? He wanted me to find the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword by any means.” Yun Che frowned as he thought

back to the words the Dragon God said to him at the Wasteland of Death... it could have even been considered a request.

“As if I would know.” Jasmine pursed her lips slightly. “Whether it’s the memories I inherited or records of the Primordial God clan, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword has hardly ever been mentioned. As for your search for it... Hmph, from what I see, it’s completely ridiculous.”

“It hasn’t been that long since the annihilation of the gods, probably only about a million years. During these million years, countless creatures and races have persistently searched for the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword. Even if the gods have been annihilated, the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword cannot disappear... Nothing in this world is capable of destroying it. Yet in these million years, no one has ever seen its shadow, much less any trace of it.”

“To this day, there are still numerous people searching for

the Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword. Not a single person who knows of the name ‘Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword’ doesn’t want to possess it. As for the matter regarding the sealed Dragon God’s daughter, I haven’t heard of such news before. Who knows, we could be the only two in the world to know of this... even though it’s useless information.”

“Then... how about the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations?” Yun Che asked.

“While that evil, demonic weapon also cannot be destroyed by anything in this world, no one will attempt to search for it. Hmph... putting aside the potential waste of effort searching for it, even if it were to appear right in front of someone, it would be avoided out of fear. To possess and use it, one would first have to be eternally damned to hell!”

Jasmine’s voice was frosty, as if she had been influenced by the remnants of a memory, causing her to strongly reject and fear the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations, “After the

annihilation of the gods, the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations was also thoroughly hidden and has not appeared for a million years. It was definitely hidden somewhere during the chaos. With a million years of time... the energy used to annihilate gods that went dormant must have awakened once again."

"Then how about the Primordial Seal of Life and Death that was ranked third? Was it also lost for a million years?" Yun Che asked impatiently. The Primordial Seal of Life and Death... it was the



only hope he knew of that could save the Little Demon Empress.

“Of course!” Jasmine replied without hesitation, “Based on the scattered records of the Primordial Seal of Life and Death, it originally belonged to one of the three Creation Gods, a female god named Li Suo. She carried the Primordial Seal of Life and Death with her, and was thus granted immortality barring any accidents. She would not have died or grown old, but in the terrible battle between gods and devils, she perished after being surrounded by a number of devils. The

Primordial Seal of Life and Death fell into the hands of the devil race. In the end, since the devil race wielded the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations, the god race never managed to seize back the Primordial Seal of Life and Death.”

“Therefore, the Primordial Seal of Life and Death was lost in the chaos following the eradication of the devil race. In these million years, the number of people who dream of possessing the Primordial Seal of Life and Death are certainly no less than those who desire the Heaven

Punishing Ancestral Sword. The Heaven Punishing Ancestral Sword can grant the user an unparalleled strength, but the Primordial Seal of Life and Death can grant immortality as long as the holder isn't killed."

"If a person were to possess both..." Jasmine narrowed her eyes. "...they would truly be the master of immortality and chaos."

"Yet, as I've said, it's possible that the Primordial Seal of Life and Death has already been

found. After all, one only needs to carry it on their body to activate its power of immortality. Hiding it out of sight would be simple, and the person who possesses it would do everything in his power to ensure that no one else knows of its existence... not even his own relatives.”

Yun Che pondered for some time before exhaling sharply, almost grinded his teeth, and asked, “All these things that you’ve told me... how exactly are they related to Fen Juechen!?”

“Of course they’re related!” Jasmine threw him a glance, her expression becoming somber. “The profound art he uses is the ‘Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night,’ which is obviously... one of the primordial devil race’s devil arts!”

“Primordial... devil race?” Yun Che’s heart lurched. “Hasn’t the primordial devil race already gone extinct?”

“That’s the reason why I was shocked when Fen Juechen released his power source in

response to your provocation.”  
Jasmine said, frowning.

Yun Che frowned and tentatively asked, “Could it be that... he obtained an inheritance from the primordial devil race? If the gods were able to leave their souls and their blood behind as a legacy, then shouldn’t devils be able to do the same as existences on the same level as gods?”

“No!” Jasmine shook her head. “Although devils and gods have the same divine level of

strength, their souls and sources of power are different. In fact, they are diametrically opposed! Before the gods disappeared into extinction, they were furious that they would simply disappear. So they merged their power and souls together to form a spirit. This spirit guarded the last of their blood and will, bestowing their blood and power to others as a means for their existence to endure the Primal Chaos Realm. The spirit and the divine blood left behind are extraordinarily powerful, to the extent that they cannot be naturally eliminated. They have an affinity with this world, and therefore receive the world's protection."

“Yet devils are completely different! Devils possess a type of power contrary to the unsullied power of the world. Most devils fear the light. Even if devils left spirits or demonic blood behind, the power of the world would reject it and it would quickly dissipate. It probably wouldn't last a couple thousand of years, let alone a million. When the Era of Gods ended, most of the legacies that the gods left behind were found, birthing a new ‘Realm of the Gods.’ As for the legacies of the devils, they indeed appeared after the extinction of gods and devils, but each legacy lasted less



than ten generations before the power of the world purified it. In a mere thirty thousand years, the legacies of the devils disappeared and were never seen again in the following million years.”

Yun Che, “...”

“And now, after vanishing for a million years, the power of the primordial devil race, which even the Realm of the Gods has almost forgotten, has appeared in such a lowly human. It’s extremely strange.” Jasmine’s

frown deepened. Her understanding of gods, devils, the ancient races, and their powers far surpassed Yun Che's. The shock that Fen Juechen's dark profound energy caused in Jasmine was something that Yun Che could not understand.

“Since the primordial devil race's strength vanished such a long time ago, why were you able to recognize it?” Yun Che asked thoughtfully.

Jasmine replied with a straight face, “When I inherited this

power, I also inherited fragments of the primordial spirit's memory. These memories coincidentally recall dark profound energy—or rather, it should be called a dark devil art—that Fen Juechen possesses, which allowed me to recognize it. This type of devil art is called 'Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night' and belonged to a high level devil clan which was called the 'Eternal Night Devil Clan' in the ancient Era of Gods. To use such a devil art, one must have the corresponding devil blood or devil spirit... similar to your 'World Ode of the Phoenix', where you require Phoenix blood to activate certain

abilities.”

“This means that Fen Juechen, who has the ‘Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night,’ also inherited the ‘Eternal Night Devil Clan’s devil blood or devil spirit!”

“Devil blood or devil spirit that hasn’t dissipated in a million years!”

“This...” Yun Che felt stranger as the conversation went on, even thinking that this just was

not something he could comprehend at his level. Fen Juechen's earth shattering change in just a few years surely had an unusual reason... but it was certainly unexpected for it to be so extraordinary.

He could feel a headache coming on just listening to Jasmine's description.

Yun Che considered Jasmine's reaction and spoke while thinking, "You managed to read Fen Juechen's memories, so you should know how he got his

power, right?”

“I do already know and it’s more interesting than any other method I can think of.” Jasmine’s face grew cold. “His devil art and power comes from... his father.”

“His father?” Yun Che stared at her with wide eyes and said with a face full of disbelief, “That can’t be! I killed his father, Fen Duanhun, with my own two hands. He can’t be still alive. Even if he were, Fen Duanhun’s profound strength is only at the

Sky Profound Realm. No matter how...”

“I didn’t say his ‘father’ was Fen Duanhun!” Jasmine’s expression appeared thoughtful.

“...” Yun Che’s expression instantly became strange as he said in a lowly, “Then, Fen Juechen is not Fen Duanhun’s son? Fen Duanhun was cuckolded?”

“Fen Duanhun is indeed Fen Juechen’s biological father, but

Fen Juechen has another father... who is also his biological father.”

Yun Che: “~ ! @# ¥ %.....\*”  
(dumbfounded face)

“Two men... can also... have children?” Yun Che’s voice shook as he audibly gulped.



# Chapter 753 – Forbidden Reincarnation Technique

---

“...” Jasmine used a hard glare reserved for idiots to stare down at Yun Che, “Of course not! It’s just... Fen Juechen is the same as you, a person with two lifetimes!”

“Wh... at!?” Yun Che’s heart jumped.

“But there’s a difference.” Jasmine quickly added, “You

had two lives, in the Profound Sky Continent and the Azure Cloud Continent...” Jasmine paused slightly, before she corrected herself, “No, it should be three lives, because you triggered the Mirror of Samsara’s reincarnation powers, and twice, at that. While the Mirror of Samsara’s reincarnation power is in effect it will simultaneously alter... you could say it alters cause and effect. Yet this ability that goes against the gods doesn’t disrupt the laws of cause and effect. In addition, the Mirror of Samsara has many formidable aspects, which is something that even the heavens cannot interfere with.”

“As for Fen Juechen... I had my suspicions when I was sensing his strength and soul at the beginning. But it was just a feeling and I dismissed it soon after. I thought his devil art was derived from his adverse emotions affecting his strength, giving rise to an ordinary devil profound strength. When I read his memories just now, I realized that that flash of speculation I had was the truth... there is the effect of a type of forbidden reincarnation technique on him!”

“Forbidden reincarnation technique? What is that?” Yun Che asked curiously. It was his first time hearing those four words.

“Since it is a forbidden art, it cannot be tolerated by this world, and is fated to be condemned... it even messes with reincarnation.” Jasmine laughed coldly. Within that sound there was a flash of pity towards Fen Juechen, “But the forbidden reincarnation technique on Fen Juechen’s body is of a higher level than what I’m familiar with. Although it has been a thousand years, the spirit

is still at least seventy percent whole. This must be because it is the forbidden arts of the ancient devil clan... or more accurately, of the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night!”

Yun Che felt increasingly dazed as Jasmine went on... if he were told directly that Fen Juechen inherited the legacy of a certain primordial devil, it might have been easier for him to process.

“Although it is about seventy percent intact, it is still an incomplete soul. This causes Fen

Juechen to have a temperament different from others. He will be more eccentric, sensitive, prone to extremes and will easily lose his temper and self-control.” At Yun Che’s perplexed expression, Jasmine raised an eyebrow. She knew that her explanation was on a level far above what Yun Che was capable of understanding. She had to put it in simpler terms, “Forget it, I’ll just tell you straight up. Fen Juechen’s previous name was Ye Huang. His father in his former life was called Ye Mufeng and his mother was Ye Jianxi!”

“Ye Huang... Ye? Doesn’t this

surname solely belong to the Sun Moon Divine Hall? Could it be...”

“No!” Jasmine interrupted Yun Che and stated mildly, “This is currently so, but a thousand years ago, there was another power surnamed Ye... that clan was essentially different from the Sun Moon Divine Hall!”

“Wait!” Yun Che was struck by a sudden thought. Somewhere in the depths of his soul, there was a sense of familiarity towards the names ‘Ye MuFeng’

and ‘Ye Jianxi’. He quickly calmed his heart and followed the pulsing within his soul. He searched through the ancestral memories within the legacy of the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul...

Not a moment later, his understanding of the two names ‘Ye Mufeng’ and ‘Ye Jianxi’ became crystal clear in his mind, and he whispered in surprise, “Eternal Night... Royal Family!?”

Other than the Four Great



Sacred Grounds, the most detailed and extensive records for the Eternal Night Royal Family that was decimated a thousand years ago would belong to the Frozen Cloud Asgard. Within the ancestral memories of the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul, the last Eternal Night King of the Eternal Night Royal Family was called Ye Mufeng!

And the last Eternal Night Queen... the benefactor of Frozen Cloud Asgard's Mu Bingyun, was called Ye Jianxi!

“That’s right!” Jasmine spoke in a low murmur, “Ye Mufeng was the last king of the Eternal Night Family whom the Four Great Sacred Grounds jointly annihilated. Ye Jianxi was then the Eternal Night Queen. Ye Huang was their only son, who was also the Eternal Night Royal Family’s last prince... and the 《Eternal Night Illusory God Record》, which is the core profound art of the Eternal Night Royal Family, actually is the primordial Eternal Night Devil Clan’s 《Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night》! Even the name Eternal Night Royal Family was derived from the Eternal Night Devil Clan!”

“There... was... such a thing?”  
Yun Che’s mind was now a blank sea. If it wasn’t for Jasmine personally explaining it, even if he retained the knowledge from two lives, he would have never linked Fen Juechen, who was clearly the son of Burning Heaven Clan’s leader with the Eternal Night Royal Family decimated a thousand years ago. What’s more, he would never have expected that a mere twenty year old person would actually be an Eternal Night Prince from a thousand years ago!

“Then what exactly is the forbidden reincarnation technique? Could it be that Fen Juechen’s soul is Ye Huang’s from a thousand years ago? If you knew all these through reading Fen Juechen’s mind, does it mean he has regained his memories from his previous life? What’s the deal with the Eternal Night Royal Family’s profound art?” Yun Che’s head was bursting with countless questions, and each obscure question was like a great mystery of the world, something he could not think through and understand.

Jasmine didn't answer any of his questions upfront, but went on by herself, "A thousand years ago, the Eternal Night Royal Family was jointly annihilated by the Four Great Sacred Grounds. The Eternal Night Prince, Ye Huang, was brutally killed. To save her son, the Eternal Night Queen, Ye Jianxi disobeyed the ancestors' strict orders and employed the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night's forbidden technique. She forcefully confined Ye Huang's vanishing soul and blood essence, and used twenty percent of Ye Mufeng's soul as a sacrifice to activate the forbidden reincarnation technique that violated the laws

of heaven. Doing so, Ye Huang's soul and blood essence would never dissipate, and under special circumstances could reincarnate in another person's body.

“It was evident that the Eternal Night king and queen already foresaw the Eternal Night Royal Family, and used such a method to preserve their bloodline... otherwise they would never go against their ancestors' orders to use a forbidden technique condemned by the heavens.”

Yun Che: “...”

Jasmine knew that the different dimensions of souls was something the current Yun Che would never truly grasp. She said bluntly, “Simply put, Ye Huang died a thousand years ago, both his body and soul. With the help of twenty percent of Ye Mufeng’s soul, Ye Jianxi activated the devil clan’s forbidden technique and used his soul to forcefully revive Ye Huang’s soul. She then initiated the forbidden reincarnation technique, preventing Ye Huang’s revived soul and blood essence from dissipating within

a short period of time. If it comes across an infant who died within six hours of birth, Ye Huang's soul and bloodline could be preserved and reincarnated into that body."

"That means, the real Fen Juechen died shortly after he was born. The current Fen Juechen who is Fen Duanhun's third son, has a mixed bloodline from the Burning Heaven Clan and the Eternal Night Royal Family, but he has Ye Huang's soul, which was wandering around for a thousand years?" Yun Che stated dazedly.



What the hell, this is even more complicated than me reincarnating twice!

In this universe, there really is every kind of monster and demon!

“That’s right. But the soul isn’t just solely Ye Huang’s soul, but a fusion of Ye Huang and Ye Mufeng, with the former as the main. Under the protection of the forbidden reincarnation technique, only thirty percent of the soul has dissipated within a

thousand years of wandering.”  
Jasmine explained.

Although the process and forbidden technique were things that Yun Che knew nothing of and could not comprehend, he did at least understand the result. He muttered to himself, then slowly said, “Then, Fen Juechen’s sudden change is because after he was reincarnated into this body, the bloodline and soul which had been dormant for twenty years were awakened?”

“The bloodline has always existed in him, so you can’t say it has been awakened. Even if it’s the Eternal Night Devil Clan’s forbidden reincarnation technique, the bloodline in the body used for reincarnation will not be able to sustain its previous strength. As for the soul, based on Ye Huang’s incomplete soul, I recall it would take thirty years to awaken if there are no other factors in play. But something happened. With half-lidded eyes, Jasmine continued, “Four years ago, once you left after you annihilated the Burning Heaven Clan, Fen Yijue used his last breath to entrust a pitch-black key to Fen Juechen whom you spared.”

“A pitch-black key? What’s that?” Yun Che asked doubtfully.

“When Fen Yijue handed over the key to Fen Juechen, he said that this was a forbidden item passed down by their ancestors. In it lies a terrifying forbidden secret, and was only to be used when the Burning Heaven Clan faced impending annihilation. But it seems like even he did not know what the secret was. Fen Juechen acted according to the inscriptions carved by profound energy on the key, and travelled to Black Fiend Nation’s land of

enormity, where no sun nor moon has shone over in ten thousand years. He used that key and opened... a Soul Sealing Coffin sealed a thousand year old soul!”

“In that Soul Sealing Coffin, what was sealed was... Ye Mufeng’s remaining soul!”

“Huh?” Yun Che was once again stunned... this bullshit! The biggest and most incredulous joke he had heard in his life couldn’t even compare to this!

Yun Che's memories reverted to the first day he had officially joined the Frozen Cloud Asgard as a disciple. While reminiscing, he said slowly, "At that time, Grand Mistress Feng Qianhui, spoke to me about the Eternal Night Royal Family from a thousand years ago, and briefly mentioned the Eternal Night King's final state. She said that the Eternal Night King's wife and son met a tragic death, and his entire clan was annihilated. Through extreme hatred and sorrow. he was suddenly devilized. He became the first person in the whole of the Profound Sky to have been truly

devilized. After his transformation, the Eternal Night King abnormally grew stronger, but he still could not defend against the Four Great Sacred Grounds' alliance, and was eventually killed by them. Although his body was destroyed, his soul lingered for a long time... as if his devilized profound energy caused his soul to undergo a fundamental change.”

“And so, the Four Great Sacred Grounds could only seal the Eternal Night King's soul in a Soul Sealing Coffin... Feng Qianhui also said, the Eternal

Night King's soul should have dissipated over a thousand years of time."

"What Fen Juechen found was that Soul Sealing Coffin!?"

(For those who can't remember, please refer to chapter 381)

If it wasn't for the Soul Sealing Coffin, the Eternal Night King, Ye Mufeng's soul would definitely have dissipated. The irony here is that the Soul Sealing Coffin sealed Ye



Mufeng's soul, but at the same time, it also protected it! What's even more ironic is that the Soul Sealing Coffin was hidden in Profound Sky Continent's Black Fiend Nation, where the densest yin energy is present. The aura there not only prolonged the dissipation of Ye Mufeng's soul, but it also helped to stave off the dissipation to a certain degree. With all this, it allowed Ye Mufeng's soul to retain about forty percent of his soul while lasting over a thousand years."

"..." Yun Che frowned, pondering.

Fen Juechen borrowed a body and reincarnated into the Burning Heaven Clan... The key to the Soul Sealing Coffin happened to be with the Burning Heaven Clan instead of any of the Four Great Sacred Grounds... even if these were coincidences, wouldn't they have been too serendipitous?

The Soul Sealing Coffin sealed but at the same time also 'protected'... the land with the densest yin energy within the country with the densest yin energy... preventing the Eternal

Night King's devil soul, which should have dissipated over a thousand years from doing so...

Finally, it was Fen Juechen who held the key and opened the Soul Sealing Coffin...

All these coincidences coalesced and seemed more like a well-devised plan instead!

But annihilating the Burning Heaven Clan was done by my own hand, and me heeding Little Aunt's request to spare Fen

Juechen led to Fen Juechen obtaining the key to the Soul Sealing Coffin... then this shouldn't have been a well-devised plan.

Could it be that coincidences to such a degree actually exist in the world...

Or could it be that the heavens pitied the Eternal Night Royal Family's tragic fate?

While he was mumbling, another thought struck him, and

he frowned, “The Eternal Night Illusory God Record is the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night, but it should be an extinct primordial devil art... if so, that means that a thousand years ago, Eternal Night King Ye Mufeng’s devilization was not the devilization everyone knew of, but...”

“That’s right!” Jasmine nodded and spoke affirmatively, “What he released from his body was the bound devil blood that had been always in him!”

Yun Che: “...”

Once the seal on the devil bloodline was unshackled, Ye Mufeng's innate profound strength and the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night's power proliferated, surpassing any one of the leaders of the Sacred Grounds. However, releasing the devil blood should be something only the royal bloodline of the Eternal Night Royal Family can do, or else the Eternal Night Royal Family would never have been annihilated so easily. Also, judging the condition of Ye Mufeng's soul, once the seal on the devil blood is unshackled, it

will cause a permanent drastic change in one's temperament and will. Also, there is no way to reseal the devil blood... but these are just my conjectures. The portion of memories on this part is sadly lacking."

Fen Juechen's soul fused with Ye Mufeng's, and naturally, their memories were also fused. Thus, when Jasmine attempted to read Fen Juechen's memories, she read both Fen Juechen's and Ye Mufeng's memories at the same time. But because Ye Mufeng's soul was slowly dissipating over a thousand years, his remaining memories were also scattered

and incomplete.



# Chapter 754 – The Strange Heavenly Sin Divine Sword

---

“...The surrounding towns of the core lands of the Eternal Night Royal Family were suddenly enveloped in a black fog overnight. Everyone within the towns, whether they were almighty profound practitioners or powerless women or children, were violently killed... Soon enough, all blame landed on the Eternal Night Royal Family because when the Eternal Night Royal Family’s core profound art, the Eternal Night Illusory God Record, was invoked, a

black fog would envelope the user's body. The bodies of those who died under the Eternal Night Illusory God Record were blackened and enveloped in a black fog that persisted for more than a few days.

“...After that, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was the first to question them. They named the Eternal Night Royal Family as a sinful, devil clan; massacring innocents in order to enhance their devilish strength. In the name of protecting the Profound Sky Continent and to get rid of evils, they then joined forces with the other three Sacred

Grounds to annihilate the Eternal Night Royal Family...”

This was what Feng Qianhui had told him regarding the Eternal Night Royal Family back then, that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had implicated the Eternal Night Royal Family.

The name “Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night” could be altered, but the attribute of “darkness” could never be changed, thus the profound aura of the Eternal Night Royal Family would always be black...

Using underhanded means, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region framed the Eternal Night Royal Family as an “evil devil clan.”

However, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would never have dreamed that the Eternal Night Royal Family, who bore the devil’s soul and blood, and cultivated the “Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night” could indeed be labelled as a devil clan!

In fact, they were a primordial devil clan!

“Jasmine, you mentioned that the reason why Fen Juechen’s power had increased explosively was because he had merged with a devil soul. Could that devil soul be the remnant soul of Ye Mufeng, who was sealed in the Soul Sealing Coffin?” Regarding the issue which Jasmine had yet to bring up, Yun Che had gradually formed an outline of the situation in his heart.

“Back then, after the Soul Sealing Coffin had been opened by Fen Juechen, Ye Mufeng’s remnant soul had wanted to

seize Fen Juechen's body, because at that point in time Fen Juechen's body carried an extremely dense resentment. It could be said that his negative feelings were at its peak; it was simply a body bestowed by the heavens. However, Fen Juechen's willpower was too strong. He was countered when attempting to devour Fen Juechen's soul. At the same time, he discovered that Fen Juechen was actually Ye Huang who had reincarnated and thus gave up struggling. This allowed Fen Juechen to counter-devour his soul and also using his remaining willpower and all his might, he transferred the origin power which was sealed within

the remnant soul into Fen Juechen's body, allowing him to slowly absorb and assimilate it.

“Is this type of absorption a property exclusively belonging to the Eternal Night Devil Clan or the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night?” Yun Che asked right after. This was because Jasmine had clearly said that the direct transference of Profound Strength and legacies were extremely difficult tasks.

With Fen Juechen's assimilation of devil origin, it

became a direct transfer or inheritance of profound energy. In just a short few years, he leapt from the Spirit Profound Realm to the Sovereign Profound Realm. It was a mythical jump of five profound realms!

“Of course not! If that were so, then the devil race would not have been crushed by the god race during the Primordial Era. This was possible and realized because the forbidden reincarnation technique created an exceptional and strange coincidence.” Jasmine said blandly. She was initially shocked and could not



comprehend Fen Juechen's ability to directly absorb the concealed devil origin in his body, but she was now speaking in a calm and deadpan manner; an attestation that the truth of the matter did not deviate too far from her scope of knowledge.

“Coincidence?”

“As I've said, a thousand years ago, in order to secure Ye Huang's soul, the Eternal Night Royal Family activated the forbidden reincarnation technique where Ye Mufeng

separated a fifth of his soul and fused it into Ye Huang's soul. Fen Juechen's soul is in essence Ye Huang and Ye Mufeng's souls melded, with Ye Huang as the dominant party. Although this vestige of Ye Mufeng's soul and the soul in the coffin he integrated originate from the same person, there is an inherently distinct difference. The latter is a subsequently devoured soul similar to prey, but the former is his original soul!"

"Since these two parts of essentially different souls trace back to Ye Mufeng, they were

able to assimilate with Ye Mufeng's devil origin perfectly, and allow Fen Juechen's soul to co-exist with Ye Mufeng's devil origin to a certain degree of harmony. In addition, the devil origin is completely malleable, allowing Fen Juechen to directly absorb the power melded within the devil origin and utilize it as his own power.

“It's just that this kind of harmony covers only a small portion after all. So even though Fen Juechen is able to directly absorb the devil origin, the speed of absorption will be sluggish. It's been several years

but he has only managed to absorb less than half, and during the process of absorption... the pain will be unfathomable, especially in the initial stages. Due to the existence of some incompatibility, while he bears this power, his body and soul will endure a pain similar to constant ripping and shredding... that kind of pain is something that no normal person can bear.”

“...” Yun Che remained silent. This should be the aforementioned “hell” by Fen Juechen.

“At the same time, the external energy that cannot fully meld will also reduce his lifespan. If he ceases the absorption and maintains this current state, he can live for another three years at most. If he persists in absorbing devil origin, his remaining lifespan will shorten further.” Jasmine sneered, “Hmph, how could the transfer and inheritance of power be that simple! If it were anyone else faced with such a price, even if it was for the sake of a power ten times stronger, they would still absolutely refuse. Only Fen Juechen, with such a dark life history, would choose this

hopeless road.

“Which is why, even though both of you experienced two lives, you were blessed by the Mirror of Samsara, enjoying impossibly good luck that could incur the wrath of heaven! But Fen Juechen... he could even be named as the most pitiful existence in the whole Profound Sky Continent. Bearing a shattered life, a shattered soul, saddled with the grievances of two clans over two eras, and enduring a living hell of pain with every breath.

“He paid such a price in exchange for power, yet he was thwarted by you, and shown mercy by you... Hmph, the consequent unjustness, humiliation and resentment would be ingrained in him more deeply than you can imagine.”

“The thought of casually killing him did cross my mind, but because he was pitiful to such an extent, I thought to spare his life. He won’t have much time left anyway, and with me around, he won’t be able to kill you.” Jasmine’s tone shifted slightly, and continued, seemingly more meaningfully,

“Even without me, he still won’t be able to kill you. Let him keep his wretched life to kill whoever else he wants to. After all, you are one of the last few amongst those he wants dead, contrary to expectations.”

“The others he wants dead... could they be from the Four Great Sacred Grounds?” Yun Che asked.

“Of course! Ultimately it was the Four Great Sacred Grounds who annihilated the innocent Eternal Night Royal Family, and



were the perpetrators of his tragedy. His sole motive for staying alive till today is revenge!”

With the word “revenge,” Yun Che couldn’t help but recall his last seven years in the Azure Cloud Continent...

The sole motive for staying alive till today was revenge... weren’t these the words ringing in his soul almost every day, every night, inundating his every breath and moment...?

Perhaps, in this world, the person who could truly understand the present Fen Juechen's completely twisted belief... would be Yun Che.

But the difference was, during that time, other than revenge, he had Ling'er...

Just that...

“When revenge eclipses all else and becomes your sole belief, any other advice, any other impediments will become

virtually useless. However, with the little remaining life that he has, no matter how fast his speed of growth, he could never reach a level where he poses a threat to the Sacred Grounds, much less take any revenge...”

Yun Che paused, as if suddenly recalling something. He frowned deeply and said, “A thousand years ago, Ye Mufeng’s strength alone was not enough to overpower any of the Sacred Grounds’ masters, but after he released his devil blood, all four Sacred Grounds’ masters had to join hands to defeat him. Fen Juechen is a direct descendant of the royal bloodline, so is it possible...”

“Of course it’s possible!” Jasmine replied assertively, “Although thirty percent of the inherited blood was lost due to the forbidden reincarnation technique, there’s still about seventy percent that was retained. Also, Fen Juechen already knows the method to release the confined devil blood inside him.”

“And that is... the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword!”

“...It’s no wonder why he is

participating in the Devil Sword Conference and wants possession of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword.” Yun Che murmured, “It’s for the sake of releasing the confined devil blood. Since the key to releasing the devil blood lies in the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, then, would he have the ability to control the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?”

“He won’t be able to!” Jasmine shook her head, “During that time, Ye Mufeng surpassed Fen Juechen, whether it was his profound strength or the density of his devil blood. Even after the

devil blood was released, he was still unable to control the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. Come to think of it...” Jasmine considered Yun Che, “Aren’t you curious why the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword is able to release the Eternal Night Royal Family’s devil blood?”

“I’m guessing... the Eternal Night Royal Family’s devil blood originated from the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?” Yun Che asked cautiously.

“Hmph, you’ve guessed it!”

Unknowingly, Jasmine had strolled over to the sound obstruction barrier made for Hong'er. Watching the blissfully sleeping Hong'er, a gleam of tenderness flashed across Jasmine's icy gaze, "According to Ye Mufeng's memories, ten thousand years ago, the ancestors who established the Eternal Night Royal Family unexpectedly found the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword in a deserted place, south of the continent. When the Eternal Night Ancestor picked the sword up, he couldn't sense the mighty aura of a sword, but a strange aura of darkness. Just when he was about to abandon the sword, he inadvertently brushed against

a drop of black liquid on the hilt... within that moment of contact, the drop of black liquid instantly absorbed into his body.”

“Devil... blood!?” Yun Che exclaimed.

“Though the power of the bloodline contained within was weak, it was still on a different and much higher level, and once the devil blood entered his body the nature of his profound strength changed rapidly. Even his soul was affected, which



caused his temperament to change greatly as well. However, it was fortunate that the Eternal Night Ancestor possessed great profound strength. Although his temperament became violent and explosive, it didn't tamper with his character so much as to land him in a state where he became a bloodthirsty creature. Essentially, he fully retained his logic and reasoning, clearly aware that these changes originated from the devil blood."

"And so, after he established the Eternal Night Royal Family, he decreed that all his newborn, direct descendants had to seal at

least ninety percent of the devil bloodline, seizing the opportunity while the inherited bloodline was weak! Unless they faced a catastrophe, they were absolutely forbidden from releasing the seal. For a whole ten thousand years everyone obeyed. The Heavenly Sin Divine Sword became the entire clan's sacred yet forbidden item, and they protected and looked over it for generations. For every generation, with the exception of the Eternal Night King, no one was allowed to come close or lay a finger on it, much less allow it to fall into another's hands. The appellation Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was given by the Eternal Night Ancestor,

meaning: those who carelessly lay a finger on it will have sinned and invoked heaven's divine wrath!"

"Then, what about the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night? Where did it come from?" Yun Che asked.

"Similarly from the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword!" Jasmine knitted her eyebrows slightly, "The Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night was obtained from the sword by the same Eternal Night Ancestor. Just by

removing the word ‘devil,’ the name was then changed to the Eternal Night Illusory God Record. It wasn’t mentioned within the inherited memories of the Eternal Night Royal Family how it was retrieved, clearly denying the knowledge to any descendants. Relying on this diluted devil blood and the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night, the Eternal Night Royal Family achieved the greatest strength, at the highest level on the Profound Sky Continent, within a short period of time.”

“The devil blood... the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night...

both originated from the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword! But where did that sword come from? Why would it have the blood and art of the devil clan which were eliminated a million years ago?" Yun Che asked solemnly. This, he feared, could be the crux of the whole issue.

Jasmine's tiny face was equally solemn, "This is also the point I'm most concerned about. Before the Eternal Night Ancestor obtained it, the Profound Sky Continent had absolutely not an iota of record on the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. It was as if the sword

appeared from thin air. The Eternal Night Royal Family does not know of its origins, nor does anyone else. However, we should be getting our answers soon...”

“Two months later, head to Supreme Ocean Palace and attend the Devil Sword Conference while you’re investigating the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! I’d like to see exactly what secret that Heavenly Sin Divine Sword has! I can only hope that whatever is inside hasn’t dissipated during these ten thousand years!”

Jasmine's voice had dipped; for the devil blood and art to have reappeared after a million years, even if it occurred in the Realm of the Gods, it would still be an earth shattering event. However, her expression was still calm, because on the Profound Sky Continent, even if she were to exhibit a small portion of her power, there was nothing that was not within her control.

“I've got it.” Yun Che nodded and inhaled a little, on one hand digesting the information that Jasmine loaded him with today, and on the other, sinking further into his rumination.

“What are you thinking about? Did it suddenly occur to you that what you’ve witnessed in your past two lives have been completely insignificant?” Jasmine slightly tilted her exquisite, doll-like face up, speaking in a patronizing tone and attitude.

“I’m thinking about... Fen Juechen’s situation.” Yun Che lifted his head, staring into the white expanse of the Sky Poison Pearl, “He is indeed as you described him to be, beyond pitiful and lamentable. His most



pitiful aspect would be... he thought he had nothing, no relatives, only vengeance, yet fate arranged for him to stumble upon his former father's soul. However, this father of his gave him not familial warmth to rely on as he lived his life, but turned him into a vessel for vengeance... you could even call him a tool."

The remnants of Ye Mufeng's soul recognized that Fen Juechen was Ye Huang. He should therefore be clear that this transference of his own memories and devil origin to Fen Juechen will cause the latter

to gain immense power, but at the same time, to inherit and bear an unfathomable agony. Even his lifespan would be suddenly cut to just a few years, essentially turning him into a marionette whose sole purpose was revenge...

During that time, they ignored the consequences, disobeyed their ancestor's instructions and activated the forbidden reincarnation technique on Ye Huang. This was in order to allow him to live on, continuing the bloodline of the Eternal Night Royal Family. But a thousand years later, Ye

Mufeng's remnant soul personally destroyed all of this, completely destroying all the effort put into preserving their son's life...

This was absolutely not something a father would do.

“Should the current Fen Juechen be successful in his quest for vengeance, I fear he may no longer have any further attachments to the mortal world.” Yun Che murmured, rather emotionally. Just as the words left his mouth, the

silhouette of Xiao Lingxi  
wavered across his vision...

Perhaps, there was still...

Jasmine was naturally clear on Yun Che's hint, and she sneered, "The thousand year devil blood released by Ye Mufeng caused his soul to subsequently change its nature, and his temperament naturally followed suit to change greatly. This remnant soul bore a thousand years of suffering; at that time, his willpower, his vengeance, both were exponentially greater than his

son's! This is the devil! The devil that warps a human's nature!"

"The devil... is indeed a fearsome thing! Fen Juechen, that guy..." Yun Che sighed in frustration, "I still really wish he could live a couple of years longer. Little Aunt's heart is softer than cotton—she will surely be deluged in sorrow for a long time."

"Also, his heart holds the most hatred for Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. It seems like he and I both have a common

enemy... and there's also that  
Sun Moon Divine Hall.”

# Chapter 755 – Heavenly Sword Villa's Distinguished Guests

---

After staying in Floating Cloud City for three days, Yun Che had fully recuperated from his injury and replenished his profound strength. On the fourth morning, Yun Che and Feng Xue'er bade farewell to Xiao Lingxi and the others, riding the Primordial Profound Ark toward Blue Wind Imperial City. They planned on stopping at Blue Wind Imperial City for two days before making their way to Frozen Cloud Asgard.

Number One Under Heaven had chosen to stay in Floating Cloud City to focus on the safety of Number Seven Under Heaven, worried that a mishap might befall her.

The Primordial Profound Ark traveled through space and arrived at Blue Wind Imperial City instantaneously.

A duration of three months was not enough for the Blue Wind Imperial Family to completely restore peace from the chaos of



war, but it made a world of a difference regarding atmosphere. After discovering that Yun Che had a “mysterious master” behind him which even Sun Moon Divine Hall was afraid of, Feng Hengkong’s gestures were not simply to compensate them, but also to express goodwill. Within the span of two months, not only had he proactively sent additional Divine Phoenix soldiers to assist Blue Wind Empire, he also delivered forty thousand kilograms of purple crystals to them in three shipments.

Compared to the fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal they had “stolen” from the Blue Wind Empire, this eighty thousand catty of purple crystals was but a paltry sum. However, it was still a considerable sum of wealth and resources. At the same time, it served as a sign of their “goodwill” toward the Blue Wind Empire in the eyes of others. Additionally, a rumor that the Divine Phoenix Nation left behind their snow princess in the Blue Wind Empire caused the rest of the five nations of the Profound Sky to become ill at ease. Every nation sent envoys and even monarchs to frequently visits with presents.

Their attitude became humble, as if they were facing the Divine Phoenix Nation.

When Yun Che and Feng Xue'er arrived at Blue Wind Imperial City, Cang Yue was reading through the status of reconstruction and resettlement of the various areas within Blue Wind. With Yun Che back, everything else would naturally take a backseat.

“Husband, you returned at just the right time. I something important to tell you.”

Although she said it was “something important,” Cang Yue’s beautiful eyes held a hint of amusement. “The somewhat secret plan where the Divine Phoenix Nation wanted to let younger sister Xue’er marry you has somehow spread like wildfire. Even the rest of the five nations are aware of it. Yesterday, the Navy Tide sent their envoy to propose a marriage between their princess Hanyu and yourself, thereby securing an alliance of marriage like that of Qin and Jin with our Blue Wind Empire.”

## Qin? Jin? What?

This is a stupid 4th wall break joke because of the proverb 秦晋之好, which refers to an alliance sealed by marriage between Qin and Jin Dynasty in the real world's chinese history. Obviously Yun Che had never heard of such dynasties because they do not exist in the ATG world, so he's reacting to it.

“Ah?” Feng Xue’er cried softly and stared at Yue Che with her beautiful glistening eyes.

“Mn? Yue’er, judging by your appearance... don’t tell me that you agree?” Yue Che touches his nose.

Cang Yue said with a smile, “Princess Hanyu is not an ordinary princess. She is the youngest daughter of the Navy Tide monarch. She is less than twenty years old this year but is already well known. There was a rumor circulating that, not only was she extremely beautiful but she is also the most intelligent daughter of the Navy Tide monarch. She is the most beloved daughter of Navy Tide’s monarch by far and was named

the Frost Navy Princess of Jade. They have taken the initiative this time to make the proposal on the marriage, so it shows their sincerity.

“They brought a portrait of Princess Hanyu. I took a glance and felt that you might like her, so I did not decline.”

Cang Yue... and everyone else were well aware that part of the reason why the five nations of Profound Sky changed their attitude toward Blue Wind was because of the Divine Phoenix

Empire, while the main reason was Yue Che... a man who had caused even the Divine Phoenix Nation to have no choice but to give in.

Although he was merely the prince consort of Blue Wind during the reign of Cang Wanhe, he had henceforth undoubtedly become the ruling “monarch” in the eyes of other nations.

As she spoke, Cang Yue placed an exquisite portrait scroll in front of Yun Che, her eyes brimming with joy and



contentment... She did not reject Navy Tide and had even kept the portrait. This was not meant to tease Yun Che. She thought he might genuinely like her. As long as he showed the tiniest bit of fondness, she would accept the arrangement. As for the ties between the two nations... they were secondary.

Oh, it's good to be powerful. Even beautiful princesses are knocking at the door... Yun Che thought to himself. He took the scroll but did not unroll it. Instead, he asked with a serious expression, "Yue'er, is this Princess Hanyu as pretty as

Xue'er?"

Cang Yue was startled for a moment, but then shook her head with a smile. "Xue'er is like the embodiment of a heavenly fairy, her beauty can put the sun and moon to shame. Princess Hanyu is undoubtedly a ravishing beauty, but she is nowhere near comparable to Little Sister Xue'er."

"Oh!" Yun Che nodded and then put the scroll down. "In that case, forget it. I would not be interested in a girl I have not

even met before, much less marry her... unless she were as pretty as Xue'er."

"Hee..." Feng Xue'er laughed. "Big Brother Yun, you are flattering me again."

Cang Yue retrieved the scroll and said with a smile, "The envoy of Navy Tide is still in the city. If my husband does not like it, then I really will reject them you know?"

"Mm, reject them firmly and

with any kind of reason.” Yun Che said with a helpless expression. A man married to any woman from a family with even the slightest bit of power would face countless objections to taking a concubine. With her status as Blue Wind Nation’s monarch, Cang Yue was instead pampering him to the heavens...

Yun Che suddenly noticed that, among the jade scrolls placed next to Cang Yue’s hand, there was a green male eagle imprinted on the topmost jade scroll. This imprint... was obviously the unique “Heavenly Eagle Imprint” that belonged to

the Xiao Sect!

“Have the people from Xiao Sect been here recently?” Yun Che asked in a casual manner. It was not surprising for them to have visited.

“Mn.” Cang Yue nodded gently. “Since two months ago, Xiao Sect has been constantly seeking an audience. Each time, it was the Xiao Sect Master, Xiao Juetian, who came personally. Since I still feel some resentment toward them, I have never agreed to meet with them.

A few days ago, they attempted to send these jade scrolls, pledging their loyalty to our royal family and placing their services at our disposal.”

During the three years of invasion by Divine Phoenix, the Xiao Sect did not put up any resistance. The fact that they stooped to grovelling could be written off and ignored, but they also provided resources to support the Divine Phoenix Army as “tribute.” This greatly bolstered the Divine Phoenix Army’s ability to conquer Blue Wind. With a complete reversal in circumstances, they would

naturally be terrified and restless, desperately rushing to grand gestures of apology and expressing their loyalty.

“Xiao Sect.” Yun Che sneered, but his smile immediately vanished as he thought of something. “What about Heavenly Sword Villa, did they show up during this period?”

At the mention of “Heavenly Sword Villa,” Cang Yue’s radiant smile slightly subsided. She shook her head gently. “No. Back then, when my royal father was

killed and Blue Wind was in a perilous situation, Heavenly Sword Villa's indifference angered me. They also said that they're breaking off all ties and swear that we would be enemies henceforth. Now that the Blue Wind Empire has managed to endure this adversity and rebuild, Heavenly Sword Villa... is acting as if nothing happened before, as if they do not exist."

Cang Yue's expression and tone were calm, as if she were apparently taking things quite lightly. Yet, from her disappearing smile, it was clear that she was unable to get over



this matter.

She had personally written to them nine times. She was an empress, yet she had to resort to pleading for their help... To avoid any retaliation, Heavenly Sword Villa betrayed her and rejected her pleas. She could have accepted the first few rejections, but her nine pleas yielded nine counts of apathy. Without even a shadow of a reply, it was as if the Blue Wind Imperial Family did not exist.

That was a kind of resentment

and humiliation that would never be forgotten.

Three months ago, when the Divine Phoenix Army retreated and gave various forms of apologies and compensation to Blue Wind, striving to express their goodwill, Heavenly Sword Villa did not visit the imperial family a single time...

“Hmph, that’s right. They don’t have the face to show up.” Yun Che laughed coldly, his laughter carrying an underlying gloominess that Cang Yue and

Feng Xue'er did not understand. "It's fine if they don't come, I have wanted to pay them a visit anyway... Let's make it today, then!"

Blue Wind Nation, Heavenly Sword Villa.

The atmosphere of Heavenly Sword Villa was especially solemn and rigid because the villa had received distinguished guests, with terrifyingly high statuses.

The arrival of these two people caused the auras of the swords surrounding Heavenly Sword Villa to undergo tremendous changes.

“For two elders to personally make a trip to our villa... I, Yuefeng, am extremely perplexed. If I had known of the two elders’ arrival earlier, Yuefeng would have summoned the whole villa to welcome you from a hundred miles away.”

Ling Yuefeng’s respectful posture belied his fear. He

personally served tea to his two distinguished guests... It was a hundred year old collection known as the Swordgreen Tea, a tea so precious that he would usually be unwilling to drink it.

“It is a pleasant surprise that both uncles are here. You should have notified Yufeng in advance so that I could welcome you along with my husband.”

Compared to Ling Yuefeng, Xuanyuan Yufeng was more at ease. Although the two distinguished guests present

were indeed her uncles in terms of seniority, both of them had showered her with tender loving care when she was young.

The two people appeared to be past their fifties, but their hair and beards were still black. The man on the left wore a green gown, had a medium build, and wore a cheerful expression. The one on the right wore a gray gown, was slightly taller than the other, and had a thick beard that reached his chest. He similarly had a warm expression. If one were to look purely at their appearance, they were both simply two gentle,

middle-aged men, but to sword expert Ling Yuefeng, he could sense gusts of cold from them... Even though they were just sitting there, their profound energy suppressed, a formless sword energy shrouded them. The sword energy was majestic, as if were a boundless, immeasurably deep ocean.

Their eyebrows were shaped, pointing upwards as if two sharp swords were stabbing into the sky, and instilled fear in others.

“Hoho.” The elder dressed in

green said with a mild smile, "The two of us were instructed by the Sword Master to make a trip to the Black Fiend Nation, and before we departed, Ninth Elder made a request. Once we settled matters in Black Fiend Nation, we made a detour here."

Xuanyuan Yufeng stepped forward and said, "This must be an important task since the Sword Master himself gave these instructions, and it was personally attended to by both elders. With such an important matter on hand, both elders still made a detour to visit us. We are certainly honored."



The elder dressed in gray stroked his long beard and said with a mild smile, “ Not at all. We are obliged to fulfill Ninth Elder’s request. Yuefeng can be considered a part of our Sword Region, and Yufeng is all the more so. Both of you should ease up on the formality, hohohoho.”

“For my father-in-law to have requested both elders to come personally... should he have any instructions, Yuefeng will be happy to fulfill them.” Ling Yuefeng said respectfully. If it was three years ago, he would

not have dared to say “father-in-law,” but he was now used to it.

“It’s nothing that important.” The elder in green said with a dull smile, “Ninth Elder likes Ling Jie very much. Ever since he left the Sword Region to return here, Ninth Elder has missed him daily even though it has been less than half a year. He instructed us to bring Ling Jie on our way back once we settled issues in Black Fiend Nation.”

“If neither of you have

anything important to attend to, it would be best to return with us.” The elder in gray continued, “Ninth Elder rarely smiles, but he is always overjoyed when he reunites with all of you.”

Ling Yuefeng and Xuanyuan Yufeng smiled at each other, their faces revealing joy. Xuanyuan Yufeng and her father Xuanyuan Jue had originally “severed” their ties, but Xuanyuan Yufeng was the only daughter of Xuanyuan Jue after all. After some time, the anger subsided. Although he missed his daughter, it was difficult for him to admit it because of his

pride. Three years ago, when both husband and wife brought Ling Yun and Ling Jie back to the sword region, the strained relationship began to soften... Furthermore, Xuanyuan Jue liked Ling Jie so much that not only had he personally guided him in swordplay, but he also spent a generous amount of the sword region's resources on him. This helped Ling Jie's profound strength and sword art to improve tremendously in the past few years.

The main reason for Xuanyuan Jue's relationship with the husband and wife softening so

much over the past three years could be attributed to Ling Jie.

Xuanyuan Yufeng smiled and was just about to accept when, suddenly, a deep, thunderous voice boomed from outside.

“Xuanyuan Yufeng, come on out!!”

## Chapter 756 – Condemnation

---

“This stretch of mountain was conferred on Heavenly Sword Villa by the Blue Wind Royal Family a thousand years ago. Since then, it has been renamed as the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range. The summit of the tallest mountain is known as the Summit of Cloud Piercing Sword, and it is also the highest peak in Blue Wind Nation.”

From a bird's eye view, Yun Che introduced the area in detail to Feng Xue'er. When he first

arrived at Heavenly Sword Villa years ago, he was awed by the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range with its surging sword aura. Coupled with the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range's reputation, a reverence was naturally born in his heart.

This time however, when he faced Heavenly Sword Villa once again, he felt mildly scornful. This feeling of scorn definitely did not emerge from him being strong and looking down on the weak. It was contempt birthed from his heart for all of Heavenly Sword Villa!

When he first arrived at Heavenly Sword Villa six years ago, it never crossed his mind that Heavenly Sword Villa of Blue Wind, in all its tremendous overshadowing power and magnificence, would land in such a sorry plight when faced with Blue Wind Nation's difficulty and Frozen Cloud's crisis.

“Big Brother Yun, I'd like to know, how do you plan to deal with Heavenly Sword Villa with your visit this time?” Feng Xue'er asked gently, her words



imbued with worry, “Are you going to just to teach them a small lesson, or go... go...”

He had previously damaged Phoenix City into a complete mess. As for Heavenly Sword Villa... to the current Yun Che, even if he wished to demolish them, it was not going to cost him much effort.

Yun Che was slightly startled by Feng Xue'er's question. He lifted his gaze and his vision was filled with the surrounding range of mountains around the villa. He

said regretfully: “Perhaps I’m here solely to vent my anger. Although Heavenly Sword Villa was morally despicable because of their betrayal, they were able to preserve their Heavenly Sword Villa’s thousand year foundation. Besides, selfishness is human nature. Thinking from this angle, I have constantly attempted to absolve Heavenly Sword Villa during this period, but in the end... I still cannot forgive Heavenly Sword Villa. Since they chose to betray the trust placed in them, they naturally have to bear the consequences of that betrayal. Back then, both the Blue Wind Imperial Family and Heavenly Sword Villa pledged to survive

or perish together. With this catastrophe that Blue Wind has suffered through, Heavenly Sword Villa has no right to escape unscathed after their betrayal!!”

“And... even if I were magnanimous enough to forgive Heavenly Sword Villa, Little Fairy’s matter... simply cannot be overlooked!”

Recalling the incident involving Chu Yuechan, Yun Che’s peaceful mindset abruptly emanated an aura of

viciousness... with this nascent aura, he became irascible and uncontrollable. Ever since Zi Ji disseminated the “free” information of the mastermind behind Chu Yuechan’s incident, the formerly fading memory of the name “Xuanyuan Yufeng” was brutally nailed into his heart and soul with bitter vengeance.

“Big Brother Yun...” Feng Xue’er instantly sensed the change in Yun Che’s emotions. She turned her face and looked at him with bright and clear eyes. Whenever the name “Little Fairy” was mentioned, his

breathing and aura became agitated. Now at Heavenly Sword Villa, the aura he suddenly emanated was frighteningly maniacal, his gaze turned terrifying.

During the past three months of constant day and night companionship, Feng Xue'er's initial surprise and anxiety gradually changed to understanding... Towards Chu Yuechan, Yun Che held deep affections, worry, yearning, guilt... and fear, of not seeing her again. That was why whenever he mentioned her, or thought of her, he would fall

into a state of agitation for a long period of time.

Grabbing Feng Xue'er's hand, Yun Che hastened down towards Heavenly Sword Villa. At the same time, a deep, somber voice with a ruthless aura encompassed Heavenly Sword Villa, and even the entire Heavenly Sword Mountains Range.

“Xuanyuan Yufeng, come on out!!”

Yun Che's profound strength was robust and powerful; a frisson of shock ran through the dignified sword aura surrounding Heavenly Sword Villa purely from his roar. The several thousand swords dancing in the Sword Management Terrace became chaotic. All at once, the originally tranquil and solemn Heavenly Sword Villa was thrown into turmoil. Almost all disciples, pavilion masters, sword attendants and elders rushed out in rage, as if facing their nemesis.

After all, no one has ever dared

to provoke Heavenly Sword Villa since their establishment a thousand years ago.

“Heavenly Sword Villa seems to have two incredible guests today.” Jasmine said suddenly.

“Incredible... guests?” Yun Che frowned.

“Two level six Monarchs, one mid-stage, and one late-stage. Seems like you won’t be getting your way today.” Jasmine said lightly.



“Level six Monarchs?” Yun Che startled slightly but did not express any worry and sneered instead, “Don’t tell me they’re from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region? Heh, it looks like I’ve come at the wrong time. Heavenly Sword Villa is really clinging on to whoever is backing them for dear life.”

Yun Che suddenly recalled a conversation he had with Ling Jie three years ago in Phoenix City, when he met the latter unexpectedly after the Profound Sky Seven Nation Ranking

## Tournament...

“Back in the day, mother chose father over grandfather, causing grandfather to be furious. A few days back, father and mother brought big brother and I to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region to meet grandfather. Mother and grandfather finally resolved their differences. Eh... grandfather even seemed to like me a lot, and even said that he would personally teach me the complete Heaven’s Might Absolute Sword, hehe...”

“...” Yun Che’s expression subtly turned complicated.

Yun Che did not conceal himself, but blatantly showed up above Heavenly Sword Villa, coldly staring down.

There were many shadows scurrying around in Heavenly Sword Villa. Directly below Yun Che, a silhouette accompanied by a cold, dense sword aura shot upwards and appeared in front of him in a split second... It was Ling Yuefeng. At the same time, a number of Heavenly Sword

pavilion masters and elders, wielding profound strength in the Earth Profound Realm and above followed hot on his heels, quickly falling into their battle formation and surrounding Yun Che and Feng Xue'er.

“Yun Che, it's really you.” Ling Yuefeng's expression became especially complex when he saw Yun Che, and he said with a mild smile, “You came later than I expected.”

Indeed, he had predicted that this day would come.

At first, in order to protect the thousand years of foundation of Heavenly Sword Villa from the chaos brought by Divine Phoenix, they chose to violate the promise made by their ancestors, committing a betrayal of trust that breached morality. The villa was sealed, and the pleas for assistance sent by the Blue Wind Imperial Family and Frozen Cloud Asgard were ignored. At that time, it had never occurred to them that the Blue Wind Imperial Family would survive, much less this complete reversal of what was supposed to be an expected outcome.

And the reason for this variance, was Yun Che's return.

Yun Che was infamous for seeking revenge for any grievances suffered. The tragic extermination of the Burning Heaven Clan that year was an event nobody dared to let slip from their memory. After Yun Che survived, the first thing he did upon his return was to serve a revenge many times more devastating than the extermination of the Burning Heaven Clan... towards the Divine Phoenix Sect which had

the Profound Sky Seven Nations under their thumb. He made them suffer a crushing defeat, and threw them into a state of chaos and unrest. Eventually, they were forced to withdraw and even offered an apology and an enormous compensation to Blue Wind Nation... Moreover, it was rumored that these were the consequences after Empress Cang Yue pardoned them. Otherwise, the Divine Phoenix Sect might have had to pay a more tragic price.

With Yun Che's character, it would have been impossible for him to forget Heavenly Sword

Villa's "sin of apathy" after the war. After all, Heavenly Sword Villa was different from the other profound cultivating forces... At the same time, there were rumors that he saved Frozen Cloud Asgard from an imminent demise. He assumed the new appointment as the Asgard Master, as both the former Asgard Mistress Gong Yuxian and the Grand Asgard Mistress Feng Qianhui had perished...

At Yun Che's hands, the Divine Phoenix Sect was left devastated beyond hope; Heavenly Sword Villa would not even stand a



chance.

The current Yun Che was worlds apart from himself of three years ago.

Ling Yuefeng's gaze roamed towards Yun Che's side, and he startled slightly. The young girl next to Yun Che wore a snowy white robe, her waist wrapped with thin jade silk, signifying an outfit of the Frozen Cloud Asgard. Her face was obscured by a muslin, and one could only vaguely see a pair of beautiful eyes.

Although her face could not be seen, her entire body exuded an ethereal and fairy-esque aura. Merely looking at her would cause one to feel ashamed and inferior, and would have qualms about being disrespectful...

This feeling, it was exactly the same back when he first met Chu Yuechan... That particular scene, that moment his heart palpitated wildly, he would never forget it even on his deathbed.

“Ah...” Yue Che let out an ear-piercing sneer, which snapped him out of his fleeting absent-mindedness, “Isn’t this the awe-inspiring Villa Master Ling Yufeng of the supposed number one sect in Blue Wind Nation, the illustrious Heavenly Sword Villa? To have impulsively dropped by for a visit without prior notice and troubled renowned Villa Master Ling to personally greet me, this junior is intimidated beyond his wits.”

As long as one was not deaf, one would be able to hear the ice in Yun Che’s tone and his derisive sarcasm. The closest

Heavenly Sword Elder exclaimed furiously, “Yun Che, don’t forget your status! In our Heavenly Sword Villa, you have no place to behave audaciously!!”

“Step down!” Ling Yuefeng’s chest heaved, as he uttered heavily.

“Villa Master...” the surrounding Heavenly Sword elders and pavilion masters who stood by gravely were shocked and stared at Ling Yuefeng, bewildered and nonplussed.

“Step down, all of you!” Ling Yuefeng’s tone hardened, “Without my order, no one is allowed to come any closer!”

Under Ling Yuefeng’s strict order, all Heavenly Sword elders and pavilion masters retreated gradually while staring at Yun Che with unrestrained alarm, until everyone was a distance away. They were well aware that if Yun Che decided to strike, with his caliber of strength that left the Divine Phoenix Sect in chaos, even if their strength were to be multiplied by ten, it would be moot.

Once everyone had retreated, Ling Yuefeng faced Yun Che and inhaled deeply. The last time he met Yun Che was five or six years ago, and at that time, Yun Che was merely a junior who caught his attention slightly. Today, although the current Yun Che in front of him has not changed much in terms of appearance, with the exception of growing slightly taller. However, when facing him, there was a distinct pressure not unlike facing a mountain.

He            held            exceptionally

complicated feelings towards Yun Che... It could perhaps be understood as a deep envy and jealousy, stemming from his unrequited love for his beloved Chu Yuechan who did not even once spare him a glance, yet towards this twenty something year old boy...

At the same time, there was a feeling of unavoidable resentment, although he was clear that he was not in any position to do so.

“Yun Che.” Ling Yuefeng said

with a calm tone, “I have not left the villa these past two months, since I was awaiting your visit, or even someone from the Blue Wind Imperial Household. We sealed the villa for the past few years as we were powerless to help, but we still feel ashamed. I have nothing further to say since you are here to condemn us.”

Yun Che raised his eyebrow and was just about to speak, when an elderly, dignified voice spoke from a distance, “The decision to seal the villa was made by me. The decision to withhold assistance to Frozen Cloud Asgard was also made by me.”



As soon as the voice was heard, an elder dressed in an ash-colored gown arrived beside Ling Yuefeng. He glanced at Yun Che and slowly closed his eyes, "Since you are here today... then I will naturally provide an explanation."

"Father, these are clearly the decisions I made... you didn't have anything to do with them!" Ling Tianni's appearance and his words caused Ling Yuefeng to momentarily lose his train of thought, and he hurriedly added, "Yun Che, my father said

all that to shield me. As the current villa master of Heavenly Sword Villa, all of the decisions were made by me and have nothing to do with my father. If you have any grievances, you should just direct them at me!”

“Haha, how wonderful that father and son are mutually protecting each other, simply touching enough to move the world!” Yun Che sneered and directed his piercingly sharp glare at Ling Tianni, “Ling Tianni, you and I have no relations, yet you traveled thousands of miles to the Blue Wind Imperial City to have me

killed under the pretext of ridding evil back then, under the guise of justice and under the pretense of purging danger from Blue Wind! Although I was badly injured and almost died by your hands, I still maintained a modicum of respect towards you in my heart because I believed your intention towards me arose from the misunderstanding that I was a malevolent and bloodthirsty person. I thought you were an upright and principled person who loathed evil, a trustworthy and honest man!”

“Yet when the country was

facing a real crisis, even if no vow was made with the Blue Wind      Profound      Palace's ancestor, Heavenly Sword Villa should have stepped up as the core strength. In the end, under the leadership of Ling Tianni, Heavenly Sword Villa has become Blue Wind Nation's biggest cowards!" Yun Che criticized unreservedly, "When Blue Wind Nation was enveloped in the flames of war and rivers of blood were shed, Heavenly Sword Villa has suffered not even a single loss in the past three years. It moved not a single muscle, and not even a shadow was seen. Recalling how you used to proudly proclaim those ostentatiously dignified

words makes me nauseous!”

“...Yun Che!” Ling Yuefeng’s face darkened slightly, “Heavenly Sword Villa has acknowledged this matter and is accordingly ashamed! But this decision was made considering our circumstantial difficulties. If you want to exact revenge, I, Ling Yuefeng will be accountable... desist humiliating my father!”

“That’s enough, Yuefeng. What he said was right, there is no need to absolve me.” Ling Tianni

raised his hand and said weakly. With the passing of just a few years, his appearance had aged rapidly. Perhaps for the past few years years, he had been carrying a heavy guilt in his heart. “Yun Che, I’ve said that I will naturally give you and the Blue Wind Imperial Family an explanation regarding this matter.”

“An explanation?” Yun Che turned and said coldly, “Hah, I have not said I needed any explanation from you!”

“Originally, I did intend to level Heavenly Sword Villa.” Yun Che’s frosty tone and words had anyone listening shudder in fear, “Don’t assume that I’m unable to deliver just because you have the backing of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! Three months ago, even the Divine Phoenix Sect’s Phoenix City was almost completely razed to the ground by my hand. For me to destroy just Heavenly Sword Villa without even blinking is as easy as pie!”

Ling Tianni’s and Ling Yuefeng’s breathing simultaneously became rougher

and heavier. If those words were uttered by anyone else, it could have been brushed off as a joke, but because it came from Yun Che, it sent a chill down their spines and they could barely crack a smile.

“However, before I left the Blue Wind Imperial City today, my empress wife stopped me and said this: Heavenly Sword Villa may have disregarded the ancestor’s vow, but the Blue Wind Imperial Family will not do likewise! The founders of Blue Wind and Heavenly Sword pledged to support each other as pillars of power and strength in



Blue Wind, to survive and perish together as brothers, and all descendants were mandated to maintain close ties with Heavenly Sword Villa! Today, even if Heavenly Sword Villa is indifferent and callous, as descendants of the Blue Wind Ancestor, we will not disobey the ancestor's instructions and destroy the legacy of the Heavenly Sword Ancestor.”

“For three years, she was saddled with the pain from the passing of her father and her husband. She shouldered the burden of Blue Wind Nation's crisis and protected the final

dignity of Blue Wind Nation and the royal family. However, she abandoned her own dignity and sought help from you nine times! But what did she gain from this...?" Yun Che inhaled violently, his voice becoming more frigid and bitter, "Therefore, she should be the one who carries the most hatred for you in this world, and is the most qualified person to seek vengeance. But it is also her, her who had wanted me to forgive you. At the very least, to not eliminate Heavenly Sword Villa... but pretend Heavenly Sword Villa did not exist!"

With those words from Yun Che, Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng's gazes wavered... As they recalled Empress Cang Yue's nine letters of plea written with her blood and tears, a sourness welled up in their hearts, and their expressions turned markedly contrite.

# Chapter 757 – Xuanyuan Yufeng!

---

“Which is why, you can go ahead and set your hearts at ease. Since my empress wife has made a request, I have no interest in finding trouble with Heavenly Sword Villa. I’m not about to let her stoop to your level. She would feel ashamed when meeting her ancestor in the other world!!”

Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng’s faces stiffened; they had prepared themselves to pay a hefty price should they face

condemnation from Yun Che and the Blue Wind Imperial Family. But this, this was “forgiveness.” This kind of forgiveness astounded them, making them feel ashamed and embarrassed...

Ling Tianni closed his eyes, flashes of emotional pain crossed his face. Although, facing the Divine Phoenix Nation whose power was second to none, it was wisest to seal their villa doors. Even if they made a move, they could not promise to save the Blue Wind Imperial Family, they would only accelerate their villa's

demise. But no matter what reasons or excuses of hardship they were facing, it was a fact that they turned a blind eye and went back on their word.

“Empress Cang Yue is matchless in her farsightedness, her heart as wide as a valley, her current fame and prestige far surpass the late emperor. Her future accomplishments will be limitless. For Blue Wind to be led by such an empress is a once a century fortune. I, Ling Tianni, have lived my life with a clear conscience... but because of thoughts of comfort, I ended up letting down the Blue Wind

Imperial Family, Frozen Cloud Asgard and even my own Heavenly Sword Ancestor.” Ling Tianni’s voice was full of regret and carried hints of pain, “Although I no longer have the face to see Empress Cang Yue, my wrongdoings have been cast in stone, and I cannot keep making mistakes. Tomorrow, I will personally make a trip to Blue Wind Imperial City and apologize before Empress Cang Yue...”

“Forget it!” Yun Che raised a hand, unforgivingly interrupting Ling Tianni’s speech, “My empress wife is

working very hard right now and doesn't have the time to entertain you. She also doesn't want to see you nor anyone from Heavenly Sword Villa! Ling Tianni, you can also quit your hypocritical act. The reason why you are saying all these is because the Blue Wind Imperial Family has been defended, and if the Blue Wind Imperial Family wishes for it, as long as my empress wife calls for it, I could stomp your Heavenly Sword Villa flat anytime I want! If the Blue Wind Imperial Family perished and I was already dead... would your face be like that right now?!"



Ling Tianni's lips trembled and was left speechless.

“A person who would be indifferent when his own nation was being exterminated, someone who was still hard-hearted after my empress wife begged with her tears and blood, has already ceased to possess any honor or shame. Your so-called shame and apology have no meaning in my eyes, they are not even comparable to a joke!” Yun Che's eyes were ice-cold, his voice chilled them to the bone. He said without any mercy, “If during these three years, even if you did not bother about the

extermination of Blue Wind Nation, and only used your power to help the Blue Wind Imperial Family, even if you merely sent people to protect the safety of my royal father and empress wife, then today, the Blue Wind Imperial Family would be grateful to you. I would be grateful towards you too! What you lost in that time, I would have repaid you tenfold! I, Yun Che, have always repaid my favors and graces!”

“However you chose to be ruthless and shameless. You cannot blame anyone else for the result of today’s outcome! You

should be glad for my empress wife's compassion, otherwise, after today, Heavenly Sword Villa would no longer exist... even Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would not be able to protect you!!”

Whether it was Ling Tianni or Ling Yuefeng, both were legends within Blue Wind Nation. When were they ever insulted and abused before? However, facing Yun Che's ear-piercing words, they tilted their heads, with their eyes closed, and didn't retort... they did not have the qualifications to retort.

After all, even though they chose to selfishly ignore Blue Wind Nation's crisis, they were not actually vile people who did not know the meaning of shame. On the contrary, no matter if it was the human way or the way of the sword, they had some accomplishments on the righteous path. The past three years was probably the biggest shame and wrong doing of their entire lives.

Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng did not retort, however, an incomparably piercing female

voice came from below, “Yun Che, you really have quite the manner of speaking. You not only dishonor my Heavenly Sword Villa, you even dare to disregard Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, who gave you such guts!?”

Xuanyuan Yufeng soared into the air, landing to the right of Ling Yuefeng. Her decently beautiful face showed a completely opposite expression from Ling Yuefeng. She looked at Yun Che with a face full of anger, hostility and ridicule.

“Xuanyuan Yufeng!” Yun Che slowly squinted his eyes. The woman in front of him was the real reason he was came to Heavenly Sword Villa today.

“Yufeng, this does not concern you, quickly go back.” Ling Yuefeng said lightly. He deeply understood Xuanyuan Yufeng’s temper, and knew Yun Che was not one to swallow it.

“Does not concern me?” Xuanyuan Yufeng laughed coldly, “He already clearly said that he wasn’t here on the behalf

of the Blue Wind Imperial Family. As to the real reason why he is here today... ah, the words he yelled when he arrived, were my, Xuanyuan Yufeng's, name! How could this not concern me!"

Ling Yuefeng shook when he heard it, then suddenly recalled, the words that Yun Che yelled when he reached Heavenly Sword Villa were clearly...

"Xuanyuan Yufeng, come on out!!"

He was already prepared for Yun Che's arrival, he was sure that Yun Che would be here on the behalf of the Blue Wind Imperial Family... He subconsciously did not notice that the person he yelled for was actually "Xuanyuan Yufeng," and only "Xuanyuan Yufeng."

"Xuanyuan Yufeng!" After Xuanyuan Yufeng appeared, Yun Che's gaze fixed deadly onto her. The look in his eye and the aura on his body had also become bone-piercingly cold. The atmosphere had even become so tense that killing intent could appear any moment, "Between



us... we have a huge debt to account for!!”

Facing Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni, Yun Che’s voice was full of contempt and disdain. However, when he spoke to Xuanyuan Yufeng, his words were laced with killing intent.

The abrupt change in atmosphere suddenly made Ling Yuefeng aware that the situation was very abnormal... not just simply abnormal! Resentment, coldness and killing intent, all these he could perceive clearly.

He hurriedly stepped forward, “Yun Che, there must have been some sort of misunderstanding! Ever since my wife married into Heavenly Sword Villa, she practically never leaves the villa, and does not interfere with matters that do not pertain to the villa. My wife only met you six years ago, and you did not even converse. How could there be any animosity?”

“Moreover, all the decisions made in the past few years were solely made by me, the villa master, they had nothing to do with my wife at all... There must have been a misunderstanding!”

Ling Yuefeng was not merely protecting her. He was the clearest on what Xuanyuan Yufeng had done these past years. After marrying into the villa, she practically never stepped out of the villa. For the past few years, the few times that she did leave, were only to return to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, and those few times, he had followed along... He absolutely could not think of how Xuanyuan Yufeng could have provoked Yun Che, and from the looks of it, there was an enormous amount of hatred.

“Misunderstanding?” Both of Yun Che’s hands tightened, his joints turning white, “Xuanyuan Yufeng! Whether it is a misunderstanding, your heart knows it the clearest! Today, I do not need any explanation from Heavenly Sword Villa, but you...”

Before finishing his words, Yun Che could not restrain his anger, his silhouette rushed out explosively, his gaze like a cold star, his hands grabbing onto Xuanyuan Yufeng’s neck like an eagle’s talons.

“Stop!” Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni yelled in alarm at the same time, they were still wondering what kind of hatred did Yun Che have towards Xuanyuan Yufeng, but they never imagined that he would actually make a move, and so viciously.

Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni went in both directions, intending to stop Yun Che. However, though their strength was like an insurmountable mountain to Yun Che six years ago, today, their roles had completely reversed. They had only taken half a step, without

even having the time to raise their arms, and they were struck by the waves of air brought by Yun Che's body... they did not even have a shred of power to resist.

At this point, an ear-piercing slashing sound rang out. A streak of sword energy tyrannical to the point that it warped space as it flew from below. One moment it was three hundred meters away, in the next moment, as if striding across space, it suddenly swept towards Yun Che.

Clang!!

Yun Che turned his body, blasting all the profound energy he had already prepared at his front. The space in front of him distorted, the path which the sword energy was taking bent by a huge degree, flying straight behind Yun Che. At the same time, Yun Che was forced to retreat back beside Feng Xue'er, looking coldly at the two silhouettes which just appeared. "Looks like the two of you are finally willing to appear, I almost thought that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was full of cowards."

Yun Che held a deep sense of resentment towards Mighty Heavenly Sword Region so he did not hold back when speaking.

“Hohohoho...”

Amidst the gentle laugh, two similarly aged elders floated in the air, each to the left and right sides of Xuanyuan Yufeng. One was wearing a green robe and the other a gray robe, on their backs were respectively green and gray longswords. Their



gazes were as sharp and cold as the edge of a blade, the profound energy they possessed was naturally as deep and boundless as the vast ocean.

They were not the least bit angry upon hearing Yun Che's derogatory words about Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. The elder in green gazed at Yun Che for a moment, then slightly nodded his head and said with a slight smile, "Although this old one has been at the Sword Region for a long time, in recent times, the name Yun Che has a well-known reputation. I thought I would be able to view

your talent in two months at the Devil Sword Conference. Who knew that we would have a chance encounter here? This could be counted as a fortunate event.”

“Elders.” The aura on both Ling Tianni’s and Ling Yuefeng’s bodies were in a huge mess from Yun Che’s previous attack. Seeing the elders in green and gray appear, they hurriedly clasped their hands before their chests and saluted. That was because to them at Heavenly Sword Villa, these two were high ranking people they could not afford to neglect.

However, Yun Che was entirely different from them. Even though he clearly knew they were from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, much less the fact that they had the status of Elders, his face was as dark as before, “Fortunate event? Since it is a fortunate event, what does the attack from before mean? Since you have heard of my great name, then, have you ever heard of this? I am a person who... holds an extremely deep grudge!”

# Chapter 758 – Xuanyuan Jiuding

---

When Yun Che shouted out the four words “Mighty Heavenly Sword Region”, it surprised Xuanyuan Yufeng, Ling Yuefeng and the rest. What shocked them even more was that the expression and tone Yun Che used when he shouted “Mighty Heavenly Sword Region”, were actually overbearing and carried an evident disrespect. The phrase “full of cowards” even brought along a certain degree of shame.

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was a force of the highest level in Profound Sky Continent. In the eyes of Heavenly Sword Villa, they were even more so like a divine city floating in the clouds, an extraordinary existence which they desperately wanted to depend on, and definitely did not dare to disrespect or offend in the slightest. Furthermore, they had never seen or even heard of there being someone who would dare be this overbearing when facing people from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.

These two elderly men were

even Elder-class figures who carried extremely high standings in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. They possessed incredible profound strength that could be said to pierce the skies!

“Yun Che, you sure have huge guts!!” Xuanyuan Yufeng’s face was filled with anger. With two Mighty Heavenly Sword Region Elders by her side, how could she possibly possess the slightest bit of hesitation in front of Yun Che? She furiously said, “Even though you know that the two esteemed guests of our villa hail from Mighty Heavenly Sword

Region, you still actually dare to be this disrespectful with your words! Do you think that after lording all over Divine Phoenix Nation, you have the qualifications to behave this arrogantly in front of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!?”

“Milady!” Ling Yuefeng immediately uttered, wanting to stop Xuanyuan Yufeng from continuing. Enraging two Elder-class figures of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region who possessed monstrous profound strength... It was definitely impossible for Yun Che to leave this place alive.

With his knowledge, even if Yun Che's profound strength has grown by a heaven-bending degree in these few years he was "dead," and was now sufficient to deter the Divine Phoenix Sect, how could he possibly contend against Mighty Heavenly Sword Region as well...? The latter was after all a supreme sacred ground which had looked down on Profound Sky Continent for ten thousand years!

Xuanyuan Yufeng, however, directly ignored Ling Yuefeng's discouragement, and said while



facing the green and gray elderly men. “Uncles, I can put aside this little junior bullying my Heavenly Sword Villa, yet now he actually dares to not place even Mighty Heavenly Sword Region in his eyes. In my whole life, Yufeng has never seen someone who dares to be this audacious towards Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... This is something that cannot be tolerated! Uncles, please take him down!”

“Elders!” Ling Yuefeng’s heart skipped a beat, as he hurriedly stepped forward and anxiously said, “Yun Che is young and hot-

blooded, not to mention he is here to settle debts, so he was unable to control the weight in his words. I hope that Elders do not lower your esteemed selves to his level... Yun Che, my Heavenly Sword Villa will give the Blue Wind Imperial Family an explanation. These two great figures are after all still the Elders of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. They are the most distinguished guests in the history of my Heavenly Sword Villa, so I am unable to accommodate you. Please leave with haste.”

Yun Che did not move, but his

eyes lightly glanced at Ling Yuefeng for a moment... Although he was selfish and ungrateful, he could still be considered as an upright person. At the very least, he deserved Cang Yue's forgiveness!

“Husband, he has already come to bully and shame our villa, why do you still intend to protect him? And today, he actually dared to treat my Heavenly Sword Villa this way. If we let him leave like this, it will only grow even more severe in the future!” Xuanyuan Yufeng said loudly, “Fine! His life can be spared. Let's have two fellow

uncles cripple his entire profound strength. Let's see if he can still act this arrogantly in the future."

"Haah." The green robed elder had instead raised his right arm, and shook his hand. His face still carried that chuckling expression, and did not have the slightest sign of being enraged by Yun Che's words. "Yufeng, no need to be furious. We have long heard of Yun Che's temper as well, no matter. Furthermore, Yun Che is one of the people whom the Venerable Sword Master wishes to see at the Devil Sword Conference the most. If

things really go as you say, wouldn't we have to be blamed by the Venerable Sword Master?"

Yun Che, "...?"

"The Venerable Sword Master... wishes to see him?" Xuanyuan Yufeng frowned, puzzled. Both Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni were similarly dumbfounded as well. Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian... the master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. They had gone several times to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region

in these recent years, yet never have they dared wish that they could meet him. However, he actually wanted to meet Yun Che himself!?

“Hoho. Not a single word spoken by your Thirteenth Uncle contains falsehood.” The gray robed elder spoke up. With a calm expression, he faced Yun Che. However, in the depths of his eyes, were a deep heaviness and fear which he was suppressing with all his might... Because, after all, he clearly knew that behind Yun Che was a teacher who possessed seemingly incomprehensible

strength!

The reason why Yun Che dared to act this overbearing even in front of them, was because of that master named “Duotian.”

He believed that killing Yun Che was a simple feat, but when he recalled that Yun Che’s master had used a mere flicker of starfire to turn a Sun Moon Elder, who possessed strength comparable to his, into nothingness, how could he dare to truly make a move?

“Little friend Yun.” The gray robed elder said with a chuckle.” This old man is surnamed Mu, with the given name Yuanzhi, ranked among the Elders of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Though Yufeng had married into Heavenly Sword Villa, she was born in our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, and is still the sole daughter of Xuanyuan Jue, the Ninth Elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. I wonder just what kind of grudge little friend Yun has against Yufeng, that you actually have to target her so?”

Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni



looked towards Yun Che as well... They similarly had no idea just what kind of conflict there was between Yun Che and Yufeng.

“Grudge?” Yun Che laughed solemnly. Ever since he saw Xuanyuan Yufeng, an air of hostility was madly tumbling within his chest. Earlier, when his move towards Xuanyuan Yufeng was obstructed by the two green and gray elders, it had also intensified this hostility. It seemingly wanted to burst apart within his chest. At this moment, he was already at the brink of losing control.

“Since you people want to know it that much, then I shall have her... answer herself!!”

When his last word fell, Yun Che's body slightly blurred, as he suddenly charged towards Xuanyuan Yufeng who was guarded behind the two Sword Region Elders.

Rather than his speed, what was more terrifying was Yun Che's explosive acceleration. From being stationary, he turned into a bolt of lightning in

a mere instant.

The faces of the green and gray robed elders instantly changed. Though they were shocked, they were not flustered, as they speedily made their moves at the very first moment, grabbing towards Yun Che at the same time... Not only were those instantaneous reactions, the speeds of their movements were not the slightest bit slower than Yun Che's speed.

After all, they were two powerful and peerless mid-stage

Monarchs!

Fwoosh!!

The two Sword Region Elders' hands caught onto Yun Che's arm at the same time, but their five gripping fingers did not feel the slightest sense of physical contact. Instead, they caught onto empty air, causing a small spatial ripple from their grips. Along with the stirring of the spatial ripples, Yun Che's figure disappeared.

What they grabbed hold of,  
were surprisingly, only  
afterimages!

“Ah!”

A hoarse scream sounded from behind, and the two people immediately turned around. Within their intensely contracted pupils, Yun Che's figure resurfaced. He was already standing next to Xuanyuan Yufeng, and the palm of his right hand was unhesitatingly locked onto her neck. His five fingers were held

firmly tight, causing Xuanyuan Yufeng's complexion to turn deathly pale in that short instant.

“Milady!”

“Yufeng!”

“You!!”

Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng turned pale from shock, as everything happened in an

instant. The sound of Yun Che's words had still yet to completely disperse from their ears. Forget about reacting, they did not even have the faintest clue how Yun Che got behind them. Furthermore, the faces of the two Sword Region Elders had turned as red as pig liver. They had once heard that Yun Che's personality and actions could not be determined by logic, and he had never played by the rules. However, they never expected that his personality would be arrogant to such an extent. In front of the two of them, two Sword Region Elders, he unhesitantly made his move all of a sudden, without any warning whatsoever...

And when the two of them made their moves at the same time, they were actually unable to stop him... nor had they even touched the corner of his sleeves.

Just what kind of shocking speed and profound movement skill was this...? These thoughts rang in the hearts of the two Sword Region Elders at the same time.

“Yun Che... Let her go immediately!!” The green robed



elder's complexion sank.

“Yun Che, she's the daughter of our Sword Region's Ninth Elder, are you planning on becoming enemies with with our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!?” Gray robed elder Mu Yuanzhi roared out. “Release her this instant! And you will still have the room to negotiate!”

“Like I care whose daughter she is! This is a feud between me and this vile woman, there's no place for you two undead farts that came out of nowhere to point

fingers!” The stance of these two Sword Region Elders was incomparably firm, while his stance was even firmer than theirs. “If you don’t wish to get into trouble, then get out of my sight immediately... The further the better!”

“...” The green robed elder’s chest rose, evidently, he was already brimming with anger. He had lived for nearly a millennium, but had never encountered such a situation. His gaze turned cold, and his voice grew even more solemn as well. “This old man is surnamed Xuanyuan, with the given name

Jiuding, and is ranked thirteenth among the Sword Region Elders! Yufeng is this old man's niece! This old man was been sufficiently courteous to you earlier. It would be wise to not step over my face! You can't really possibly believe that... Our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is a place you can offend!?"

Xuanyuan  
Xuanyuan?

Jiuding...

Yun Che had heard from Zi Ji that the surname Xuanyuan was the bloodline of Mighty

Heavenly Sword Region's Sword Master; the most respected and revered bloodline in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. And from the tone and actions of these two people earlier, it could also be seen that between the two of them, Xuanyuan Jiuding was evidently taking the lead.

His words had slightly stirred Yun Che's heart... When that Mu Yuanzhi was facing him, he clearly carried very deep fear, evidently afraid of that imaginary teacher "Duotian" of his. However, this Xuanyuan Jiuding in particular did not carry these thoughts at all.

Furthermore, the words he spoke seemed to carry a hint of ridicule?

“Yun Che, this old man must remind you!” Mu Yuanzhi spoke up with a solemn voice as well. “Our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region has reigned for ten thousand years, and there has never been a single person who dared to touch someone of the Xuanyuan bloodline! Though Yufeng has broken off from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, the Xuanyuan bloodline still flows in her body! If you dare to touch her, the very first person who won’t forgive you, will be

the Venerable Sword Master of our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!”

“Oh? Is that so?” Yun Che’s face did not reveal the least bit of fear, and still carried that icy and dangerous smile.

“Uncles, don’t mind me... Just cripple him now!” Xuanyuan Yufeng, whose throat was locked onto by Yun Che, distorted her face, and let out a hoarse, frail voice. “Yun Che, if you have the guts... then kill me! By killing me... You will die with your

corpse completely shredded into pieces... Everyone related to you won't even have to think about continuing living in this world... Ha... Haha..."

"Heh, you're actually still able to talk. Looks like my actions have really been too gentle, as expected." Yun Che let out an icy laugh, and his five fingers fiercely tightened.

With a cracking sound, one of Xuanyuan Yufeng's neck bones resoundingly broke. Her eyes instantly bulged, and her face

was as white as paper, yet, she was not able to even let out a single scream.

“Stop... stop! Stop!” Ling Yuefeng roared out with an expression filled with pain. “Yun Che, just why must you act so vilely!? If you have anything that you aren’t happy with... Then lash it out all on me, Ling Yuefeng!”

“It seems, you really are completely unaware of this.” Yun Che coldly said. “This sure shows the bond of husband and



wife of more than twenty years!”

“Very well... Yun Che. It seems like you refuse to yield, and want to play with force!!” Xuanyuan Jiuding’s robe rose upwards as his profound energy intensely stirred. Dozens of domineering sword waves began to dance around his body.

“Thirteenth Elder...” Seeing that Xuanyuan Jiuding actually had signs of making a forceful move, Mu Yuanzhi hurriedly stepped forward, wanting to persuade him with a low voice.

After all, they could offend Yun Che, but that teacher behind his back was someone they definitely could not offend... Sun Moon Divine Hall had already paid a price of blood, and even now, they did not dare to seek the slightest bit of trouble with Yun Che.

Bang!

With a low explosive burst of air, Xuanyuan Jiuding's body fiercely pounced forward... However, the direction he pounced towards was not where

Yun Che was, but behind him!

The direction he leapt, was towards the girl that came along with Yun Che, who had not uttered a single word. Her white robe fluttered, and her aura was similar to that of a fairy.

He did not dare to rashly make a move against Yun Che, because from the rumors of Yun Che's extreme personality, even if he knew that Xuanyuan Yufeng belonged to the Xuanyuan bloodline, he would still not be hesitant of doing matters such as

directly striking her to death.

He did not know this girl's status or facial features, and from her attire, she could possibly be a certain disciple or Frozen Fairy from Frozen Cloud Asgard. However, since she accompanied him here, her relationship with him must definitely be beyond ordinary as well. By bringing her down, he should be able to force Yun Che into submission!

# Chapter 759 – Embarrassing Beyond Belief

---

Before Yun Che made the move to capture Xuanyuan Yufeng, he had already sound transmitted to Feng Xue'er to be careful. Facing Xuanyuan Jiuding's sudden attack, Feng Xue'er wasn't the least bit startled as she slightly raised her snowy hand. With a soft swish of her white sleeve, a scarlet red flame arrow condensed before her, shooting at Xuanyuan Jiuding at a considerably slow speed.

Even a profound practitioner in the Earth Profound Realm would scoff at an inferior scarlet profound flame, so Xuanyuan Jiuding directly ignored it and grabbed at Feng Xue'er's neck... However, in the next instant his complexion changed, because what came at him was actually a scorching, oppressive power that suffocated him immediately.

Amidst his great shock, Xuanyuan Jiuding didn't hesitate to push out both hands. His profound strength also rapidly increased by several fold as his profound energy surged,

causing his two gray colored sleeves to flutter upwards.

Bang!!!

When the two bursts of Monarch level profound energy collided, a tremendous ripple of energy spread outwards, to the surroundings. Even though Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni were more than three hundred meters away, they were still fiercely blasted far away by this energy ripple. Only after they were a few kilometers away did they stop, with all the energy and

blood in their bodies churning,  
and nearly spitting out blood.

Feng Xue'er's flame arrow stilled in front of Xuanyuan Jiuding... but it merely stilled, and wasn't dispersed by Xuanyuan Jiuding's power. Not even the slightest hint of weakening could be found. This scene caused Xuanyuan Jiuding's pupils to shrink; he didn't dare to believe his eyes at all. He suddenly gritted his teeth as the profound energy in his body surged once more. This time, he didn't hesitate to push his full strength forward.



With a dull smothering sound, the scarlet flame arrow was immediately knocked a few meters back. Behind her white gauze veil, Feng Xue'er's bright eyes flashed as her long sleeves swept again, her fine white jade-like hands lightly pushing forward.

The flames on the Phoenix Arrow instantly rose sharply and its power explosively increased by several fold. Though the blaze was not that big, it turned the entire sky a scarlet color.

Xuanyuan Jiuding's already shrunken pupils contracted even further as he uttered a dull shout. He was unable to believe that the power from earlier was not even the other party's limit... Furthermore, in the blink of an eye, with merely a casual movement, the power had nearly doubled!

Beneath the Phoenix Arrow's explosive increase in strength, his body was forced to withdraw several steps. Clenching his teeth, he gathered all of his profound energy into his two

arms, causing his arms to double in width. He desperately struck out, but to no avail. Moreover, an increasingly terrifying sensation of burning began to raid his entire body, causing him to feel as if he were walking step by step towards a purgatory of fire which would completely incinerate him.

Whoosh!!

Xuanyuan Jiuding's two long sleeves began to blaze fiercely, and his expression became increasingly agonized... under

the flame's flickering light, one could see that his hands hadn't turned a scarlet color, but had instead become a striking coal black.

“Th-Thirteenth Elder!” Mu Yuanzhi screamed in shock. Other than Yun Che, everyone else who saw this all stared blankly ahead in shock as if they had entered a dream. Xuanyuan Jiuding was the thirteenth elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, and was one of the most powerful people within entire Profound Sky Continent! In order to force Yun Che to submit, he had despicably

attacked a little girl who was a disciple of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Moreover, it had been a surprise attack. Something which should have been easily obtained... had ended up not being obtained. Instead, he had been forced away in one blow by his opponent's counterattack, which had caused him to fall to a disadvantage in the blink of an eye.

Xuanyuan Jiuding's profound strength had reached the sixth level of the Emperor Profound Realm... In the eyes of Ling Yuefeng, Ling Tianni and the rest, his existence was like that

of a god.

“Yuanzhi... help me!!”  
Xuanyuan Jiuding roared, his voice trembling from pain... he could already clearly smell the scent of his own burning flesh exuding off his body.

As if he had suddenly woken up from a dream, the energy atop Mu Yuanzhi's body exploded as the longsword on his back flew out of its sheathe and landed into his hand. He then stabbed out... his stab was not directed towards Feng Xue'er, but

towards the scarlet flames suppressing Xuanyuan Jiuding. In just this short period of time, Xuanyuan Jiuding's body had already become extremely burned. If Mu Yuanzhi didn't first help Xuanyuan Jiuding get rid of the flames, it was possible that Xuanyuan Jiuding's hands would become wasted.

Earlier, all of their focus had been on Yun Che. Although Yun Che's profound energy aura was surprisingly low, they didn't dare be careless. After all, each new rumor about Yun Che was even more shocking than the previous one.

However, not even in their dreams had they thought that the little girl who came with him would actually be so terrifying! She was clearly even more terrifying than Yun Che!!

As Yun Che watched Mu Yuanzhi rush towards Feng Xue'er, his face didn't show even the slightest bit of worry. Although these two Sword Region Elders were quite strong, it was all too easy for Feng Xue'er to defeat them at her level of profound strength. Instead, he took advantage of the time



while everyone was distracted. A blue light flashed atop his left arm as his Profound Handle instantly pierced into Xuanyuan Yufeng's mind.

The blade of Mu Yuanzhi's sword was pitch-black. As he stabbed out with it, wave-like fluctuations began to emanate from around his body.

Clang!!

The tip of the sword stabbed into the tip of the Phoenix

Arrow. At that moment, the exploding sword intent agitated the nearby space, causing it to screech as it was torn apart. Immediately, the aura of the scarlet flames was significantly reduced, finally reliving some of the pressure on Xuanyuan Jiuding. Ignoring the pain of his entire body, he fiercely raised his energy as the sword on his back flew into his hand... similar to Mu Yuanzhi's sword, his was also pitch-black and plain. However, it surged with a kind of extraordinary power and prestige.

“Heaven’s            Might            Sword

Formation... Star Piercer!”

Riip!!

Space was torn apart like cloth as a several meter long tear appeared. Just the surging sword intent and immense force from this one sword caused the distantly observing Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng to feel as if they were witnessing the domain of a sword god.

The two swords of the Sword Region Elders slashed down,

forcefully diverting the Phoenix Arrow. Even the powerful flames were slightly weakened. Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi simultaneously gritted their teeth as they fully released their profound energy and sword intent. They no longer dared to be even the slightest bit neglectful. Although they had finally acquired the upper hand, they didn't feel even the slightest bit of relief in their minds... they were two dignified Sword Region Elders, yet they actually had to work together to deal with a little girl...

To them, this was something

that they had never conceived of and was a humiliation they could not accept.

However, at this moment, even they had both released their full powers, it didn't mean that Feng Xue'er had as well.

As Feng Xue'er raised her arm for the third time, her snow white sleeves gently fluttering, the golden phoenix mark between her brows faintly flashed... amidst the silence, the sound of a phoenix resonated out. However, no one knew

where it came from.

The flames atop the Phoenix Arrow exploded once more as it transformed from an arrow to a phoenix in the blink of an eye. The scarlet radiance and scorching heat which seemingly came from the bottom of purgatory, easily pierced through the sword formation of the two Sword Region Elders and ruthlessly enveloped their bodies.

“Aghhhh!”

Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi's expressions changed yet again as agonized moans simultaneously emerged from both of their mouths. Clenching their teeth to the point of almost shattering them, the two growled low as what could be considered as the highest level of sword intent and force on the Profound Sky Continent wildly surged out, trying to smash the flames to pieces. However, even after putting their lives on the line and exhausting all of their energy, they were still unable to disperse the scarlet flames. Instead, their swords were quickly devoured. Even the sword formation they had pierced out was suppressed and

rapidly collapsed.

The two originally pitch-black longswords began to quickly turn red as if they were pieces of ordinary iron. However, for these swords to be the partners of Sword Region Elders, how could they possibly be ordinary swords? For the two swords to burn and turn red, the temperature must have reached an unthinkable point.

Strands of black smoke began to emerge from Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi's palms



as clusters of fire planted themselves onto their bodies and hair. The two desperately tried to suppress them, but quickly, more and more of them sprang up... at this time, the two felt as if they had been placed over the fires of purgatory and left to burn. The pain was so great that they wished they were dead, but they were unable to retreat... because the flames in front of them were just too terrifying. As soon as they even slightly eased up and took half a step back, the flames in front of their eyes would immediately surge forward and completely devour them.

“Miss... mercy... please...”  
Xuanyuan Jiuding’s beard had already begun to burn, and his entire body now looked like a heated piece of iron which had turned red. Having been forced into this position, he no longer cared about his dignity as a Sword Region Elder and issued a painful plea to Feng Xue’er.

Feng Xue’er didn’t retract the flames, but instead looked towards Yun Che, only to discover Yun Che’s ashen face and terrifyingly overcast eyes.

Tragic cries began to echo over from afar. Several corners of Heavenly Sword Villa had begun to blaze as a large number of Heavenly Sword disciples began to roll on the ground in agony... although the phoenix flame summoned by Feng Xue'er was several hundred meters in the air, she was still a Monarch... even though it was only residual power, as phoenix flame created by a Monarch level practitioner, just how could Heavenly Sword Villa withstand it?

The strange state of Heavenly Sword Villa caused Feng Xue'er's red lips to part as her heart fell

into chaos. She quickly lifted her jade arm, causing her long sleeve to sway. Immediately, the direction of the Phoenix Arrow changed as it began to fly towards the west of the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range accompanied by trails of smoke and phoenix cries.

Boom!!!

The Phoenix Arrow descended atop the peak of a tall mountain at the edge of the range. Amidst the dull sound of an explosion, the entire mountain peak

suddenly combusted. The blaze quickly descended the mountain at a terrifyingly rapid pace, then disappeared... as it turned the mountain into patch after patch of roiling lava.

The extremely high temperature enveloping Heavenly Sword Villa quickly disappeared. As the elders and disciples of Heavenly Sword Villa stared blankly at the flames in the west, which seemed as if they were going to breach the heavens, their souls violently quivered.

Towards the people of Heavenly Sword Villa, Feng Xue'er's level was just too fantastical.

Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi were finally able to escape from their nightmare. The instant the phoenix flames flew away, they backed away while crying like wolves which had been scared out of their wits. Even their swords, which generally never left their bodies, had fallen from their hands and landed on the dirt below them. They crazily took deep breaths as they circulated profound energy to suppress the burns all over their body.

The hands which they gripped their swords with had all been scorched black. This was especially evident on Xuanyuan Jiuding's right hand, where his palm had been directly incinerated, exposing mostly charred bones. The robe covering his body had long since entered a disastrous state, and his hair and beard had all been burnt to a crisp. He looked unbelievably miserable.

The two of them had never been this tragic in their lives.

“Phoenix flames! You... Who exactly are you!?” While holding in the intense pain inflicted all over his body, Xuanyuan Jiuding shouted with an obvious tremble in his voice. He considered himself rather well learned regarding the Divine Phoenix Sect, and he had even dueled against Feng Tianwei himself before... The grand sect master of the Divine Phoenix Sect was just on par with him.

However, the aura of this girl was just too young... how could she have such terrifying



profound energy!? Just when had the Divine Phoenix Sect given birth to such a monstrous person!?

He was just finished when he suddenly recalled a certain rumor about the Divine Phoenix Sect from three months ago. His pupils shrank, and he cried out in shock, “You’re... Princess Snow of the Divine Phoenix Sect!?”

“What?” Mu Yanzhi abruptly turned his head in great shock.

Everyone on the Profound Sky Continent knew about the news when Yun Che devastated the Divine Phoenix Sect three months ago. At the time, the Four Great Sacred Grounds had also heard that the person who ultimately ended the devastation was Princess Snow. Moreover, Princess Snow went into a slumber for three years seemed to have experienced a massive increase in profound strength. She had also accompanied Yun Che back to Blue Wind Nation.

To have been able to force the two of them into joining hands, her cultivation was at least a

small realm above theirs!

This was to say, her cultivation had to at least be at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!!

Moreover, for one at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, no matter which Scared Ground they're in, it was enough to enter the top ten ranks!!

The girl had used phoenix flames, and was beside Yun Che.

Furthermore, the burning power of her phoenix flames had been so terrifying... she could only be Princess Snow! However, although they had heard that Princess Snow's cultivation had greatly improved, they had never imagined that it would have soared to such a level.

Princess Snow should only be nineteen years old this year...

A nineteen year old level eight Monarch!!

Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yanzhi both sucked in a harsh, cold breath at the same time... Even if they were to declare this with their statuses as elders of the Sword Region, almost no one would have believed them.

In the distance, Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng, who had been sent flying by the waves of energy, stood where they were like wooden statues... Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yanzhi, these two figures who were like gods in their eyes, had actually suffered such an embarrassing defeat at the hands of a little girl. Their shock was something

which could not be conveyed with words... they had even forgotten that the life and death of Xuanyuan Yufeng was currently in Yun Che's hands.

Feng Xue'er didn't reply as her snow white figure slightly shook and her figure moved to Yun Che's side. She worriedly looked at his gloomy face and said, "Big Brother Yun, what's wrong? You look so scary."

"..." Yun Che's grip on Xuanyuan Yufeng tightened unconsciously. While Xuanyuan

Jiuding and Mu Yanzhi were suppressed by Feng Xue'er just now, he had seized the opportunity to invade Xuanyuan Yufeng's mind and scour a portion of her memories with his profound handle... After all, he had only heard them from Zi Ji and could not be sure that they were completely true. Perhaps he had accused Xuanyuan Yufeng wrongly.

Subconsciously, he even hoped for a bit that he had wronged Xuanyuan Yufeng. After all, she was Ling Jie's biological mother.

However, the scan results of the profound handle left him absolutely furious.



# Chapter 760 – Goodbye, Ling Jie

---

“Yun Che, let go of my mother!!”

Amidst a loud roar, a young man, fully in white, arrived from far off in the air. With the Celestial Yuan Sword in hand, his whole body was raging with sword intent as he charged at his fastest speed towards Yun Che, who had seized Xuanyuan Yufeng.

“Ling Yun?” Yun Che’s eyes slanted, and he immediately saw the person following closely behind Ling Yun... He looked a little younger than Ling Yun, but his figure was already similar to Ling Yun. The face that was once filled with innocence and brashness was now more stern with determination after maturity.

“Little Jie...” Yun Che said in a low voice, and the expression in his eyes suddenly become extremely complicated. The person that he didn’t want to see most on this trip to Heavenly Sword Villa was Ling Jie.

It had been several years since they had met and Ling Yun's profound strength had increased rapidly, already reaching the Sky Profound Realm. As for Ling Jie, because he was beloved by Xuanyuan Jue, under the personal tutelage of Xuanyuan Jue, his strength advanced at a tremendous pace. Yun Che was able to tell immediately that not only had Ling Jie entered the Sky Profound Realm, his strength was actually almost the same as Ling Yun. He would be able soon be able to completely surpass Ling Yun.

“Yun’er, Jie’er, don’t go over there!!” Ling Yuefeng reached out and yelled. Previously at the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament, Ling Yun and Yun Che were still opponents at the same plane. But now, even if it were ten thousand Ling Yuns, if he dared to offend Yun Che, he would just be courting death.

Ling Yun pretended like he didn’t hear the warning as a one and a half meter long sword beam swept out from his Celestial Yuan Sword, ruthlessly piercing toward Yun Che. He and Ling Jie were originally practicing the sword in the back

mountain. When they heard the news that distinguished guests had arrived from Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, they rushed back to the villa at their fastest speed. There were extremely unusual air waves and sounds on the whole way back, and once they returned to the villa, they saw the scene of Xuanyuan Yufeng being held hostage by Yun Che.

Ling Yun was furious, but Ling Jie's emotions were a lot more complicated than Ling Yun. Since he found out that Yun Che was still alive, he was wild with joy. It was unknown just how

many times he couldn't help but want to go see Yun Che. He had at last seen him today, but it was actually under a situation like this... it made his whole brain go into chaos. He was following behind Ling Yun, but his speed was slower and slower. He was drowning in shock, confusion, fright, and panic, and didn't know what to do.

Facing the approaching Ling Yun, Yun Che held out his other hand towards him... This movement made Ling Yuefeng turn pale from fright as he yelled madly, "Yun Che... stop!"

Bang!!

Before Ling Yuefeng could finish, Yun Che had already extended his palm. At that moment, the air waves within the space of three hundred meters were pushed severely as they hit Ling Yun and Ling Jie. It made them lose their balance immediately, causing them to spin a couple circles in the air before they landed on the ground.

Watching Ling Yun and Ling

Jie stand up immediately after falling onto the ground without a single injury, without even their auras weakening, Ling Yuefeng's whole body immediately relaxed as it felt drained. Breaking out in cold sweat, he asked in a trembling voice, "Yun Che, what do you want... what did my wife do wrong!?"

"Big... Big Brother Yun. What... exactly happened? What happened?" Ling Jie's face was covered in shock and confusion. He also used a completely different title to call Yun Che. He couldn't even dare to believe



that the Yun Che before him was really Yun Che.

Yun Che ignored Ling Jie and also directly ignored the currently recuperating Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi. He stared straight at Ling Yuefeng and said darkly, "Back then, Chu Yuechan's pregnancy was discovered in your Heavenly Sword Villa by someone called Grandmother Jiumu. At that time, other than Chu Yuechan, Grandmother Jiumu, Chu Yueli and you, there was no one else present... Then, in the span of a few days after Chu Yuechan returned to Frozen

Cloud Asgard from your Heavenly Sword Villa, how did rumors spread throughout the whole world? Ling Yuefeng, even if you were ten times dumber, you must know the consequences that she would suffer if this matter were to be spread. Did you attempt to lockdown the information!?”

Yun Che’s words caused Ling Yuefeng’s heart to skip a beat as he frantically replied, “Regarding this matter, I obviously knew the severity of it. We naturally do not need to question Fairy Yueli, Grandmother Jiumu has also

practiced medicine for a hundred years and definitely wouldn't spread anything. I have always been wondering how exactly this matter spread as well..."

"Wonder!?" Yun Che's eyes suddenly turned cold as he glared daggers at Ling Yuefeng's heart, causing the latter's voice and breathing to instantly freeze, "Ling Yuefeng, you have always been known as the gentleman of the sword to others, but the current fake appearance you're trying so hard to put on really doesn't suit you at all! Were the ones who knew

about that matter back then only those four I mentioned!? Did you really not run into a person who just happened to hear about it that day!? Don't tell me that, in your heart, you really don't know the one who spread this news and did their best to fan the fire all the way, until everyone in the world knew about it!?"

"..." Ling Yuefen's lips shook and he remained speechless for a long time. He had known all along that it was done by Xuanyuan Yufeng, because aside from her, there couldn't have been any other person.

However, he had never asked Xuanyuan Yufeng about this, nor did he look into it to confirm his suspicions. He didn't even mention it at all. The majority of his heart had died upon knowing that Chu Yuechan was pregnant by someone else. When it had come out, even though he was furious at Xuanyuan Yufeng for having done that, he could not worsen their marital relationship further. Instead he had tried his best to mend it... her father was, after all, an Elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.

After the incident, he received

news that when Chu Yuechan returned to Frozen Cloud Asgard, she had crippled her profound art and was expelled. Nothing further was heard after that. At that time, Frozen Cloud Asgard had also closed its doors.

With Chu Yuechan's status in Frozen Cloud Asgard, she definitely wouldn't have been expelled even if she had violated a rule of the sect. It was clear to him that this only happened because the news spread to the entire world and gave Frozen Cloud Asgard pressure that they hadn't received in a thousand years.

“Right... I was the one who did it!” Xuanyuan Yufeng cried out when Ling Yuefeng was speechless. A twisted smile was even revealed on her face as she stated, “That slut... made her own scandal! Don’t tell me that you think she is qualified for everyone to seal their lips for her!? As for the consequences of everyone knowing about it, that’s the shameful scandal you and she caused, what does that have to do with me? Hahahaha...”

Yun Che slightly narrowed his

eyes as he said in a low, unhurried voice, “She and I love each other very much. The child she had with me was a gift bestowed from the heavens, how is it shameful!? The word slut that came out from your mouth doesn’t make me the least bit angry, it would only make others laugh. In your heart, I’m sure you know very clearly that the word slut can never be placed on Chu Yuechan even in a hundred lifetimes! As for you, even ten thousand lifetimes wouldn’t be enough!

“You...”



Yun Che's hand tightened, constricting Xuanyuan Yufeng's voice. Then, he said slowly, "Xuanyuan Yufeng, you should've been thankful about me and Chu Yuechan being together. In fact, I don't even think that being thankful for your entire life would be enough. Because you should know this clearer than anyone; if it wasn't for the fact that my Chu Yuechan never paid any attention to Ling Yuefeng, forget about being the villa master's wife, Ling Yuefeng probably wouldn't even have spared you a glance! In terms of looks, temperament, cultivation, and

mentality, the difference between you and Chu Yuechan is like the mud on the ground against a snow lotus on a heavenly mountain! Yet you, just because of your own jealousy, actively schemed to push her toward a dead end... I, Yun Che, rarely kill women, but you, Xuanyuan Yufeng, have succeeded in making me want to tear you into ten thousand pieces!!!”

“Yun Che!!” That freezing killing intent made Ling Yuefeng, who was more than three hundred meters away, feel as though he had fallen into an

ice cave. He shouted hurriedly, "About the Fairy of Frozen Beauty, my wife has truly done a huge wrong. However, women are naturally prone to jealousy, and the jealousy she has for the Fairy of Frozen Beauty was caused by me, Ling Yuefeng. Everything done was all because of me, Ling Yuefeng! And it is not just that..." Ling Yuefeng sucked in a deep breath as he slightly gritted his teeth, "Even if my wife is wrong, it is merely because she spread news of a fact under a fit of jealousy. She didn't maliciously spread false information, so her sins simply aren't worthy of death... Please have mercy and let go of my wife. I, Ling Yufeng will

undertake all the responsibilities of this sin and I won't complain at all."

"Ah, a sin not worthy of death?" Yun Che glanced at him from the corner of his eye as his expression became even more dark and cold. "Looks like you really have no idea, huh... Back then, when Chu Yuechan stripped her profound arts and left Frozen Cloud Asgard, before she even had the chance to leave the Snow Region of Extreme Ice, she had encountered the pursuit of three people who had been waiting a long time to kill her. Those three people were all

members of your Heavenly Sword Villa. You tell me if that it is not a sin worthy of death!?”

“Wh... what!?” Yun Che’s words made Ling Yuefeng abruptly raise his head as his eyes enlarged. Ling Jie, who was down below, also stiffened from head to toe, not daring to believe what he had heard.

“Im... Impossible! Impossible! My wife never would have done such a thing. No one from my Heavenly Sword Villa would do such a malicious thing;

absolutely impossible!  
Absolutely impossible! This  
must be a huge  
misunderstanding...” Ling  
Yuefeng violently shook his head  
and roared, but his later actions  
and voice unwittingly slowed  
because he suddenly recalled  
that back then, on the night  
Frozen Cloud Asgard left the  
villa, Xuanyuan Yufeng had  
personally dispatched three  
Heavenly Sword Elders to send  
Ling Kun a distance off. At that  
time, he was puzzled. With Ling  
Kun’s strength, he simply didn’t  
need any protection at all, nor  
would he get lost. However,  
before Ling Kun, he obviously  
was unable to refuse or question  
that action. After that, he didn’t

think about it that much either.

Could it be...

“Impossible? A huge misunderstanding?

Hahahaha...” Yun Che laughed tauntingly, “Xuanyuan Yufeng, since you have the guts to do it, do you have the guts to admit it!?”

“Why wouldn’t I have the guts to admit!? Xuanyuan Yufeng screeched, her hideously pale face didn’t even have much fear

at all. Relying on her status of a Sword Region Elder's daughter, she was still confident that Yun Che definitely didn't have the guts to kill her. Not only was she not extremely scared, her voice and appearance were still as arrogant and as haughty as before. "I just hate that those three trash didn't do their job properly and had instead let the slut escape... Mngh!"

Under Yun Che's fiercely tightened grip, Xuanyuan Yufeng's entire throat had completely twisted and her eyes were protruding out. She was no longer able to shout out a single



word.

Xuanyuan Yufeng's confession instantly shattered the illusion which Ling Yuefeng was desperately clinging onto, as the scenery in front of him began to twist and turn. "Yufeng, you... how could you do... such a thing..."

"This isn't true... This definitely can't be true..." Ling Jie collapsed weakly onto the ground, as he soullessly muttered to himself.

“Heh, since you have already admitted it... Very well, you can die peacefully now!” The cold sneer and overcast expression on Yun Che’s face disappeared, turning into an indifferent look, completely devoid of feelings. Within the space, a bone-piercing, heart-crippling killing intent stirred.

This killing intent shocked Mu Yuanzhi and Xuanyuan Jiuding greatly. Mu Yuanzhi no longer cared about his injuries, as he stepped forward and roared out. “Yun Che! She is Ninth Elder Xuanyuan Jue’s...”

“Shut up!” Yun Che turned his head, that terrifying gaze of his fiercely shook Mu Yuanzhi’s very core. “I don’t care who she is, and I don’t care you are... Whoever dares to stop me from killing her today, I will kill every single one of them!! Mu Yuanzhi, Fifteen Elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... Heh, I seem to recall that elder of Sun Moon Divine Hall who died in front of my eyes three months ago was also ranked fifteenth, are you that anxious to have me send you to the palace of hell today to be his companion!?”

A chill crept up Mu Yuanzhi's entire body, while his figure actually took a step back. Enveloping him were a chilling intent and killing intent which could even send fear to a mid-stage Monarch like him. If the exact same words were spoken by anyone else, he would have just loudly laughed it off, but the person in front of him, was Yun Che... A maniac who had killed two great Monarchs of the Divine Phoenix Empire, and had even almost destroyed Phoenix City single-handedly!

Yun Che might perhaps not be able to kill him with his abilities

alone, but it was definitely possible for Princess Snow who was next to him!

Next to him, Xuanyuan Jiuding had reached out his hand to firmly grasp onto his arm. Using his eyes, he signaled him not to anger Yun Che... Feng Xue'er, who was next to Yun Che, possessed the ability to forever have them stay where they are, so in this present situation, even if they had to stand by and idly watch Xuanyuan Yufeng die, it was definitely inappropriate for them to threaten or anger Yun Che.

“No... Don’t.”

Bitterness was carried within his trembling, pleading voice. Below, Ling Jie was already kneeling on the ground, the Celestial Yuan Sword which he treated as part of his own being was already unsheathed. He raised his head upwards to the sky where Yun Che was, his face was filled tears. “Big Brother Yun, my mother definitely isn’t a bad person with a venomous heart, she had merely... acted out of impulse... really... Big Brother Yun, I beg you to show

mercy to my mother, allow me to shoulder my mother's sins. Big Brother Yun, please fulfill my request."

As his voice fell, the Celestial Yang Sword drew a ray of cold light, as it suddenly pierced towards Ling Jie's throat.

Ling Yuefeng and Ling Tianni exclaimed loudly, as they madly charged towards Ling Jie. Xuanyuan Yufeng's pupils had even contracted greatly. The final tint of redness on her face had completely faded out of

shock and fear, as it turned completely pale...

Clang!!

A ray of fiery light surged into the skies, instantly blasting his Celestial Yang Sword far away. At the same time, Xuanyuan Yufeng was thrown downwards from the sky by Yun Che, smashing right onto Ling Jie's body.

“Mo... Mother!”



“Yufeng!!!”

Ling Jie and Ling Yun frantically grabbed onto Xuanyuan Yufeng’s hand and despite their agitation, they still could not believe what they had just seen. Ling Tianni and Ling Yuefeng also rushed over and surrounded the three of them.

“Xuanyuan Yufeng...” Yun Che, who was in the air was already, had his back facing them and his expression could no longer be seen. His voice however

remained ice cold and filled with deep hatred, “ From today onwards, you had better desperately pray that both mother and child are safe, otherwise...”

# Chapter 761 – Fateful Turning Point

---

“Xue’er, let’s go.”

Yun Che didn’t continue his sentence. He couldn’t. He did not spare a glance for single person as he pulled Feng Xue’er’s hand and flew off into the distance without turning back.

He had overwhelmed them with killing intent that sent shock and fear rippling down their spines a moment ago, but

then abruptly released Xuanyuan Yufeng and departed with his head bowed low. This turn of events was something that left Xuanyuan Jiuding and Mu Yuanzhi dazed for a good while.

“This Yun Che is even harder to deal with than the rumors said.” Yun Che’s departure caused Mu Yuan to feel an astonishingly huge sense of relief overtake him. This was the first time in his life that a youngster made him feel this way. He immediately added a few words to his sentence, “He has a terrifyingly strong master to

support him after all, so he does have the backing to be this forceful and cocky.”

“Master? Heh.” Xuanyuan Jiuding gave a faint smile. “Don’t worry. He won’t be able to prance around much longer. There will naturally come a day where he will pay for all that he’s done!”

“Oh?” Mu Yuan looked at Xuanyuan Jiuding with an astonished expression. “Thirteenth Elder, your words...”

“Don’t ask any further. When the time comes, all will be made clear to you,” Xuanyuan Jiuding said, his lips peeling back as a strange smile stretched across his face.

---

Once they left the vicinity of the Heavenly Sword Mountain Range, Yun Che’s speed slowed down a bit. His brows knit together tightly as he silently pondered about something.

Feng Xue'er could tell that Yun Che's current mood was very heavy and she tried to console him in a soft voice, "Big Brother Yun, don't be too worried. Chu Yuechan and her child are definitely safe and sound. They must be in some safe haven waiting for Big Brother Yun to find them."

"..." Yun Che exhaled lightly and a faint smile appeared on his face. "You're right. They're definitely okay. I have firmly believed that all this time."

“It’s just that, I only found just out today that Heavenly Sword Villa tried to kill her after she left Frozen Cloud Asgard all those years ago.” Yun Che’s fists were tightly clenched. Since Xuanyuan Yufeng was Ling Jie’s mother, he was unable to bring himself to kill her.... Otherwise, he would not even have taken the fact that she was some daughter of some Sword Region Elder into consideration. Even if she were the Queen Mother of the Heavens, he would still slaughter her in rage.

“I wonder... how she managed to escape then?” Feng Xue’er



knew that since Xuanyuan Yufeng had schemed about how to kill Chu Yuechan day and night, the three people that she had sent to do the deed would definitely have the ability to fulfill their end of the bargain... Therefore, the situation that Chu Yuechan faced at that time had to have been quite desperate.

Yun Che replied softly, "The real reason why Xuanyuan Yufeng spread the news of the Little Fairy's pregnancy to the whole world all those years ago was so that she would have a chance to kill her. She was

certain that, upon returning to Frozen Cloud Asgard, there was a high chance that Little Fairy would be expelled from the sect. Just to prepare for this possibility, she hid a force of ambushers within the Snow Region of Extreme Ice far in advance... Little Fairy would not have been the match for the three people that she dispatched even if she were at the peak of her powers. Furthermore, Little Fairy was pregnant, her profound aura was weak and fluctuating, and she had just crippled her own profound arts. The moment she appeared, she must have sustained heavy injuries... It just so happened that the Snow Region of

Extreme Ice had fortunately been struck by a blizzard that day, and there was also a Snow Phoenix Beast in the vicinity. While stuck in the blizzard, the speed, the profound energy circulation, and the vision of ordinary profound practitioners would be greatly reduced. For the Snow Phoenix Beast, however, it just so happens to be the opposite, so Little Fairy borrowed the power of the Snow Phoenix Beast to make a narrow escape under the cover of the snowstorm...”

If not, the results would have been too ghastly to think about.

The only problem was, Yun Che was completely unaware of what happened after that... where she had fled, whether her injuries had been healed, and whether the child in her belly had been harmed... he did not know a single thing. He was unable to even imagine the circumstances she faced at that time. Every time he thought about it, it caused his heart to bleed.

At that time, she was probably all by herself and extremely helpless....

“My royal father once said that good fortune will definitely come in the wake of calamity. If she could avert disaster despite the perilous situation she was in, then it definitely means that even the heavens could not bear to see her harmed and has been protecting her all this time,” Feng Xue’er said in a soft, graceful voice as she tried to comfort him.

“Yes. After hearing Xue’er’s words, I feel much better already,” Yun Che said as he smiled. However, his face soon

began to sink once more....

From Xuanyuan Yufeng's memories, he had also discovered... that she had some sort of relation to the calamity that had struck Frozen Cloud Asgard.

To put it plainly, the relation was that Ling Kun!!

“Big Brother Yun... Big Brother Yun!!”

An anxious cry rang out from behind them. It was Ling Jie's voice. Yun Che's expression grew complex as he hesitated for an instant before gradually coming to a stop.

Ling Jie had expended all of his energy chasing them. After much difficulty, he finally caught up and was already so tired that he was gasping for breath. Yun Che turned around and spoke as he looked straight at him, "Little Jie, do you desperately desire to kill me with one stroke of your sword?"

Ling Jie shook his head vigorously as he replied, “No... why would I... I... I have actually come here to thank you.”

“Thank me?” Yun Che gave a bland smile. “Why would you want to thank me? I just turned your Heavenly Sword Villa on its head several times over, fiercely rebuked both your father and grandfather, and I nearly killed your mother. It is good enough that you don’t want to kill me... but instead you want to thank me?”



Ling Jie shook his head yet again. This shake of his head was even more vigorous than the last. He stared straight into Yun Che's eyes and spoke in a sincere tone, "I know that you let my mother go for my sake... All those years ago, just for the act of kidnapping your family, the Burning Heaven Clan was exterminated down to the last man. Just a few months ago, it is rumored that you killed quite a few princes of Divine Phoenix Nation... and despite my mother doing something that was far more heinous than anything the Burning Heaven Clan did, you still... it was clear that you were extremely angry, but you still let her go. I really have to thank

you. Your forgiveness and mercy is something that I will remember for the rest of my life.... The mistake that my mother has made, I... I will definitely do all that I can to make up for it.”

“...” Yun Che silently observed Ling Jie and looked at him for a long time... They had not met for three years and Ling Jie’s aura, figure, and appearance had undergone great changes, but his eyes were still as clear as water. His spirit was slightly moved by this and he extended a hand to lightly pat Ling Jie on the shoulder. “Little Jie, you do

not need to thank me, and you definitely shouldn't mention whatever 'debt' you owe me ever again... or could it be that you've forgotten that we're good brothers?"

Ling Jie's eyes lit up. They gradually began to sparkle as he replied, "I... I... Can I still call you 'Boss' like I did in the past?"

"What nonsense are you saying? Of course you can!" Yun Che vigorously shook his shoulder as he replied, "Don't forget that you became my little

brother because you lost to me all those years ago! Are you telling me that you're now trying to weasel your way out of it?"

"No... of course not!" Ling Jie's eyes were moist and he took in a large breath of air, struggling against the tears that threatened to leak from his eyes. "Boss, I just knew that you wouldn't die so easily... I've finally, finally gotten to see you again! Furthermore, you've become so... so powerful. It is truly my, Ling Jie's, greatest fortune in life to have been able to meet you."

Yun Che could clearly hear the joy in Ling Jie's voice as it quivered with emotion. It reached his heart as well.

“No, the fortunate one is me,” Yun Che said sincerely. “Little Jie, did you know that, when I first met you six years ago, there was a reason why I took the initiative to suggest that we compete with three strikes, and that whoever lost had to be the little brother of the other... At the time, I only wanted to use your status as the young master of Heavenly Sword Villa, so that

it would be more convenient for me to make moves in the future... Yet, after that, you braved danger for my sake by coming to the Burning Heaven Clan by yourself. You used your very life to block his sword just so you could stop your grandfather from killing me. Just so you could cheer me on, you travelled to Divine Phoenix Nation by yourself for five thousand kilometers ... I really don't know how it is possible for me to have received such sincere and ardent devotion.”

“Hehe...” Ling Jie was moved once more, so he laughed in

embarrassment before replying, “I am your little brother after all. It’s only proper that I do some things for my boss. Furthermore, to be able to follow in your footsteps is something that is... very special to me, a pride that cannot be replaced by anything else.”

“Hahahaha....” Yun Che laughed as he said, “Little Jie, because of what you just said, I must definitely become someone who can make the entire world tremble. I definitely won’t disappoint you.”

Yun Che's voice trailed off and his face grew solemn. His expression changed, causing Ling Jie's laughter to subconsciously subside as he spoke, "Boss, do you... have something to say to me?"

"Little Jie, we haven't met in three years, but your profound strength is so high now. This has something to do with you going to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, right?" Yun Che asked in an even tone.

"Yes." Ling Jie nodded his



head. “Grandfather loves me a lot and treats me very well. He is also very strict with my training, and during these three years, he spent most of the time personally imparting Heaven’s Might Absolute Sword to me. He has even managed to obtain many Sacred Ground quality resources for me as well.”

As he said this, Ling Jie’s eyes began to light up once more. Yun Che had confirmed many years ago that, even though Ling Jie’s personality was pure and open, deep inside, he was also someone who loved the sword to the point of irrationality. Being

able to train his sword skills in a place at the level of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region with a Monarch as his teacher was something that Ling Jie would naturally dream of night and day.

“The words that I am about to say will be hard for you to understand. They may leave you at a loss or even cause you to feel disgust, but it is something that I must say regardless.” Yun Che’s face grew incomparably solemn.

“Ah?” Ling Jie’s expression

tightened as he grew nervous.

“This time, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region dispatched two elders. Their goal should be to bring you back to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region to see your grandfather, Xuanyuan Jue. I think that, for you, this is something that you have been anticipating ever since you came back to the villa. I, however, hope that... you never return to the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.”

“Ah? Why?” Ling Jie asked,

mystified.

“I can’t explain it to you clearly.” Yun Che gave a faint shake of his head. “Perhaps, if you stay in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region long enough, you will be able to find the answer with your own eyes. By then, it may already be too late. I can only tell you this: Mighty Heavenly Sword Region may be a sacred land of swords in your opinion, but that is only its outer appearance. What it wears on the inside is far dirtier than you can imagine, and far more terrifying as well. The reason why I hope that you do not

intertwine yourself too much with Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is because I do not want to see your bright, diamond-like soul get sullied. It may result in a situation where it will not be possible to extricate yourself from that place.”

“I...” Ling Jie’s expression was vacant.

“I also hope that you don’t inherit Heavenly Sword Villa. In terms of either innate talent in the sword or current skill, you are superior to your older

brother, Ling Yun. Just based on these points alone, it is only right and proper that you inherit the position of Villa Master of Heavenly Sword Villa. Yet the title of Villa Master does not just come with status and glory. It also comes with far too many burdens, responsibilities, and often leaves your hands tied. The pressure that this status brings will forcibly twist your will and your personality at times... Ling Yun is far more stable than you are. In the future, the position of Villa Master is far more suitable for him than it is for you.”

Ling Jie, “...”

Yun Che patted Ling Jie's shoulder before finally withdrawing his hand. He began to move backwards, but a faint smile lit up his face as he spoke, “Little Jie, I have said everything that I wanted to say. It is your own life, so you are the one who has to choose your path in the end. Everyone else can only observe and provide counsel. From today onward, if you ever encounter a problem that you can't solve on your own, you can come to Frozen Cloud Asgard to look for me.”

He waved his hand at the Ling Jie who stood there staring blankly into space. After that, Yun Che took Feng Xue'er's hand once more and they soared toward the north.

“Boss!!”

Suddenly, Ling Jie's full-throated yell rang out from behind them, “You are the person I believe in the most... so I'll listen to what you said... I won't return to Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... From tomorrow



onward... I will leave Heavenly Sword Villa... and roam the entire world... I will be chivalrous and heroic... leaving a good name for Heavenly Sword Villa... I will also work hard to find the Fairy of Frozen Beauty... to redeem my mother's sins... and I, Ling Jie... will do as I say!!”

Yun Che turned around but Ling Jie had already become a distant blur. He smiled faintly as the burden in his heart became lighter.

# Chapter 762 – Hatred Higher Than The Heavens

---

Floating Cloud City, Xiao Clan.

“Grandfather, Seventh Sister has been pregnant for three months, but we’ve been unable to tell our father and mother all this time. Therefore, Seventh Sister and I are ready to pay respects to them today. Their deceased souls will be very happy to hear this.”

Xiao Yun and Number Seven Under Heaven stood in front of Xiao Lie while wearing joyful expressions on their faces. While they were at Floating Cloud City, and not tied down by the hideous mess that was their family relationships, it was the most relaxed and happy moment the newlyweds had spent in their lives... and that was without mentioning the great joy within Seventh Sister's belly.

“Hehe, that will be the best of course.” Xiao Lie chuckled and nodded.

“I’m coming as well.” Xiao Lingxi walked over and said cheerfully, “Big Brother and Sister-in-law’s souls would definitely bless the baby...”

“Fifth Elder, Ju... Junior Master Lingxi...”

It was at this moment that an urgent cry came from outside. Then, a young disciple of the Xiao Clan ran in with hurried footsteps and a flustered look.

“What is it that made you look

so flustered?” Xiao Lie lowered his eyebrows.

“It’s... it’s Fen Juechen!” The Xiao Clan disciple stopped and exclaimed while panting heavily, unable to even attend to his salutations.

“Fen Juechen!?”

This name caused everyone present to feel shocked on the inside. Number One Under Heaven swiftly took a step forward and said, “Can it be that

Fen Juechen is not resigned to defeat, and has come back to seek vengeance?”

N... no.” The Xiao Clan disciple shook his head hurriedly and said pantingly, “S... someone found him... he’s lying at the eastern side of the city... bloody... all over... He looks like he’s... about to... die. None of us dare to approach him...”

Fen Juechen was a name that struck absolute fear in Floating Cloud City and especially Xiao Clan... even though he was the

one who protected Floating Cloud City from destruction by the hands of the Divine Phoenix Army.

“Ah?!” Xiao Lingxi cried out in shock before running over, “Quick... bring me to him now, quickly!”

“Lingxi!” Xiao Lie stretched out his hand, but Xiao Lingxi had already hurried out of the courtyard just as he finished his words.

“Don’t worry, I’ll go after her right away. Since Fen Juechen is grievously injured and near death, then naturally he is of no threat.” Number One Under Heaven said before flying into the air and chasing after Lingxi.

“Fen Juechen may be an extremist, but he isn’t a bad person by nature. Moreover, Lingxi, I, and the entire Floating Cloud City owes him a great debt... Sigh.” Xiao Lie let out a heavy sigh.

“...” Number One Under



Heaven floated into the air, summoned a gust of clear wind and flew straight towards the south.

“I will send word to Big Brother right away.” Xiao Yun took out the sound transmission jade a little clumsily.

However, Xiao Lie stretched out his hand and halted Xiao Yun's arm. He shook his head and said, “Leave this matter to Lingxi. Che'er is her family, and that Fen Juechen is her benefactor... Lingxi has been

soft and good hearted since she was young. She must be extremely afraid to watch them see each other and fight to the death...”

“Still, that is the hatred born from the destruction of one’s entire family... how can it possible be resolved...?” Xiao Lie closed his eyes and let out yet another long sigh.

---

At the east side of Floating Cloud City, Fen Juechen’s black

clothes were torn to shreds and was stuck on his body almost entirely by many layers of dry blood.

Although he was severely defeated and injured by Yun Che two days ago, with his current constitution and recovery of profound energy, over two days of time, his injuries had lessened somewhat. At the least, they should not have worsened further. Originally, he was going to leave Floating Cloud City, after leaving the Eastern Ocean and find an uninhabited place to fully recover his injuries and profound energy. However, he

ran into Jasmine who searched his soul after he was severely injured by Yun Che... Although Jasmine's soul searching technique wasn't as bad as the common soul searching technique that it would turn him directly into a human vegetable, it was definitely unlike the simple read of Yun Che's Profound Handle Soul Search either. Moreover, Jasmine's Star God powers were incomparably potent. It may have only been for a short instant, but it was still enough to severely damage Fen Juechen's mind.

If it wasn't for the fact that his will was far stronger than the ordinary man, he would've died in the Eastern Ocean a long time ago.

With his profound energy almost depleted, and his body and soul both damaged severely, he had crawled with all his might away from the Eastern Ocean, up the shore and all the way to this place... but he did not know where or how far he had climbed. The only thing that drove him so far was the pain and his desire to live.

Very soon, the people of Floating Cloud City found him, and they had all backed away from him in fear, far, far away. No one dared to approach him, much less help him... even though the current Fen Juechen was so weak that a normal kid could've taken his life easily.

“I... can't... die...”

He lay on the ground, so weak that he could not even feel his own breath. He wanted to continue climbing forwards, but his arms had already lost all

strength. The only thing that proved that his consciousness hadn't faded yet was the raspy and cryptic mutters from his mouth.

“Big... Big Brother Fen...”

Xiao Lingxi's footsteps hurried over. Fen Juechen's current appearance shocked her greatly. She hurriedly arrived by his side and cried out urgently, “Big Brother Fen, Big Brother Fen...”

Xiao Lingxi's voice sent a huge

impact through Fen Juechen's soul... perhaps Xiao Lingxi's voice was also the only thing that could've returned some clarity and wakefulness to his currently muddy mind. He tremblingly turned his head sideways, and through blurry vision saw Xiao Lingxi's face...

“It's... you...”

“Yes! It's me... It's me, Xiao Lingxi!” Seeing that he wasn't dead, and that he was able to speak barely, Xiao Lingxi's worry lessened a little. She stretched



out a hand in attempt to lift him to his feet, but just as her palm touched Fen Juechen's arm, she withdrew it back as quick as lightning...

This was because his arm was actually so cold it was as if it was encased in ice.

“Don't go near him!”

Number One Under Heaven dropped down from the sky. Although Fen Juechen's current state was not much different

from a dead person's, his expression was still filled with caution, "This man is too dangerous."

"Big Brother Under Heaven!" Number One Under Heaven was without a doubt a savior in Xiao Lingxi's eyes to have arrived now, "Help him, quickly. His injury is so severe. If you don't help him then he'll... he'll be in great danger."

"Save him?" Number One Under Heaven's eyebrows lowered, "He is an extremely

dangerous person who tried to kill Brother Yun! I personally want to kill him now so we can be rid of this threat.”

“No!” Xiao Lingxi hurriedly stood up and blocked Number One Under Heaven, “Big Brother Fen is not a bad person. He really isn’t. The root cause behind his reason to kill Little Che... is all me. It’s not his fault. On the contrary, I owe him my life twice, and it was also thanks to him that Floating Cloud City was safe when it was being invaded by the Divine Phoenix Army. Otherwise, god knows how many people would’ve died

at the hands of the Divine Phoenix Army.”

Number One Under Heaven,  
“ ... ”

“Therefore, I beg of Big Brother Under Heaven, please save him. Think of it... think of it as repaying his favor. Please, Big Brother Under Heaven, I beg you...”

Xiao Lingxi’s eyes rippled with pleading.

Fen Juechen's spiritual perception might be impossibly weak at the moment, but it was still enough to hear Xiao Lingxi and Number One Under Heaven's voices. He let out a painful and raspy voice with trembling lips, "Ignore me... I don't... need you to care for me... Ugh..."

He stretched out a trembling palm, ready to climb away from this place. However, his entire arm moved only half an inch before it could proceed no longer.

“Big Brother Under Heaven...”  
Xiao Lingxi begged him once  
more.

“Sigh!” Number One Under Heaven waved his hand and stopped her from continuing any further. He swept a complicated glance at Fen Juechen at his feet before sighing, “Two days ago, during the final moments of the battle, although Brother Yun’s profound energy was greatly depleted, he was in great condition and should have had the ability to kill him easily. Still, he released him... so I

suppose even Brother Yun does not truly wish to see him die.”

“Never mind. I hope I’m not doing something stupid.”

Number One Under Heaven might be warlike in nature, but as an elf he was also a good hearted person and disliked killing. Moreover, Xiao Lingxi’s pleading was really hard for him to resist. After a long internal struggle, he ultimately stretched out his hands and formed a refined lump of nature energy in his palm.

The tension on Xiao Lingxi's face instantly turned into a very faint smile. She said gratefully, "Thank you, Big Brother Under Heaven."

"However, if he does anything that I believe is dangerous, then I will kill him immediately!" Number One Under Heaven said seriously.

"He will not. He will definitely not. I know better than anyone that he is definitely not a bad person." Xiao Lingxi said with



absolute certainty.

Number One Under Heaven did not say anything. He crouched down and pressed his palm to the back of Fen Juechen's heart... the second he touched him, his eyebrows abruptly twitched as a nature's aura swiftly entered Fen Juechen's body.

“Don't... touch me!” Fen Juechen roared weakly in disgust and anger.

“Hmph. Goodwill is regarded as malice.” Number One Under Heaven snorted impatiently and swiftly withdrew his hand after injecting a full surge of nature energy. Then, he stood up and looked at Feng Juechen no longer. The nature energy he injected into Feng Juechen could swiftly aid his severely injured body in regaining its life energy. Moreover, it could to a certain degree quicken the recovery of his wounds, although it would not aid in the recovery of his profound energy. In Feng Juechen’s current state, even if he recovered his ability to move, there was no way he could be a threat for a very long time.

Under the miraculous power of the elven energy, Feng Juechen's eyes gradually regained their clarity. Even his breathing had obviously grown heavier. Xiao Lingxi let out a heavy sigh of relief as she said gratefully to Number One Under Heaven, "Big Brother Under Heaven, thank you... may I trouble you once more to carry him to Xiao Clan? In his current state, he will need a quiet place to be able to recover."

Number One Under Heaven looked deeply at Xiao Lingxi. He

was not surprised at all by her decision. He nodded slightly, grabbed Feng Juechen by the collar and jumped straight into the air, lifting him to fly straight towards Xiao Clan.

---

During the time Feng Juechen stayed at Floating Cloud City, he had lived in a courtyard at the corner of Xiao Clan. After he left, no one had ever dared to approach it. Number One Under Heaven threw him right through the window and into the house inside the courtyard. Then he

left straight away. He was not a man to let his emotions affect his decisions, and he would never have done something like saving an infinitely dangerous and scary person and bringing him back to his family... However, even if he did not save him, Xiao Lingxi would have thought of a way on her own to take him back to the house, and the process in doing so would've been filled with countless hardships. If that was going to be the case, then he might as well do it himself.

It was even more impossible for him to kill Feng Juechen right

before her eyes... not to mention that Yun Che did not kill him two days ago either.

That being said, although he had turned around and left, he did not in fact stay too far away from the house. His spiritual perception continued to lock tightly on the courtyard Feng Juechen was in, staying alert against any potential incidents.

“Big Brother Fen, how are you doing? Are you feeling better?”

Xiao Lingxi crouched beside him and asked in concern. With the assistance of Number One Under Heaven's nature energy, Feng Juechen's five senses had already recovered mostly. Even his body had regained some strength, although it seemed insufficient to support him just yet.

“Ignore... me...” Fen Juechen turned his head away. The short sentence took him a lot of energy to utter. He was numbed to the intense pain in his body and soul from long ago, but that pain seemed to have decreased quite a bit now that his

profound energy was depleted, and his body was grievously injured.

“What’s with the wounds on your body? After you met Little Che that day... did you meet with another enemy?” Xiao Lingxi asked softly. Everyone in Floating Cloud City was afraid of him, and the people in Xiao Clan were so terrified of him they even lost control of their bowels when they saw him. Xiao Lingxi was the only one who was never afraid of him, because she was firmly believed that he was not a bad person.



When he heard Yun Che's name from Xiao Lingxi's mouth, Feng Juechen's pupils abruptly shrank as a fierce hatred gushed up his throat, "I told you... to ignore... me!"

While roaring, he abruptly stretched out and pushed Xiao Lingxi on the shoulder. Xiao Lingxi let out a cry and abruptly fell down on the floor.

Feng Juechen panted heavily, a moment of panic flashing across his eyes... he didn't think that he

had regained this much energy.

Xiao Lingxi was neither afraid, nor angry, nor withdrawn by Feng Juechen's scolding, anger, hatred and violence. She stood up and said with her voice still as gentle as ever, "Big Brother Fen, I know that you have never been one to depend on others. However, you should not force yourself in your current state. It is best if you set your mind to rest and recover first."

"I will find you some recovery medicines. Although Xiao Clan

is very small, we still have some very good herbs in stock. They will definitely be good for your injuries... Big Brother Fen, rest well for the moment. I will come back in four hours.”

Once Xiao Lingxi finished softly, she stood up and left with light footsteps.

When the girl left, and the door was closed, Feng Juechen's expression was frozen, and his eyes were blank. For a moment, he looked as if he had lost his soul. After a very long time, he

raised his heads and leaned against the icy cold wall behind him. His fists gradually clenched together...

“The death of one’s whole family is absolutely irreconcilable... Yun Che... I will kill you... no matter what... no matter what!!”

The moment Xiao Lingxi exited the courtyard Feng Juechen was settled into, she immediately saw Number One Under Heaven standing there with a solemn expression.

“Big Brother Under Heaven, please... do not tell Little Che about Feng Juechen for the moment.”

“I know.” Number One Under Heaven nodded, “However, that is under the premise that he is not strong enough to threaten me. If his profound energy recovers near to the point where I cannot control him, then either he leaves, or I... will tell Brother Yun.”

“Mm.” Xiao Lingxi nodded

lightly and said gratefully, “Thank you, Big Brother Under Heaven.”

Number One Under Heaven let out a faint laugh and shook his head, “You don’t have to thank me. You are the person Brother Yun appreciates the most, so you have the right to be headstrong.” He paused for a moment before choosing to continue, “You should know that a great threat towards Brother Yun will be gone if he is to die. By saving him, you will add a deadly threat towards Brother Yun. Are you... trying to resolve his hatred towards Brother Yun?”

“I know that this is very, very difficult.” Xiao Lingxi lowered her head and muttered softly, “But he did save my life after all. He saved father and Floating Cloud City, and he is definitely not a bad person by nature. The tragedies inflicted on him all started because of me, which is why I cannot ignore it. I only hope... I only hope that...”

“May it be as you wish.” Number One Under Heaven said indifferently before flying away.

“Sigh.” He turned around to glance once at Xiao Lingxi’s delicate figure. When he recalled Feng Juechen’s hatred and killing intent that was so icy that it was impossibly scary when he was facing Yun Che, Number One Under Heaven let out a soft sigh, “That is the hatred of one whole family’s death. To say that it is absolutely irreconcilable is an understatement. So how can it possibly be resolved?”

Time quickly approached evening. After Xiao Lingxi exited the medicine pavilion, she entered Feng Juechen’s courtyard with quick steps.



She pushed open the door and entered, and Feng Juechen was still in the same state as before. His aura seemed to have calmed down quite a bit, and his eyes were half-lidded. He did not appear to be asleep, but he did not react at all towards Xiao Lingxi's arrival.

“Big Brother Fen, are you better now?”

Xiao Lingxi walked closer while holding a black soup bowl, “This is a freshly cooked medicinal

soup. The medicine pavilion elder said that it can improve one's blood circulation and recover one's strength..."

Xiao Lingxi wasn't yet finished when the lifeless Fen Juechen suddenly slapped out and flung the soup bowl in her hands fiercely against the floor. With a pang the bowl shattered as the medicinal soup sprayed everywhere.

"Ah!!" Xiao Lingxi cried out and retreated a step. She said anxiously, "Big Brother Fen,

you... never mind. I'll go cook another bowl for you."

"I'll repeat this once more... ignore me!!"

Four hours of rest was enough to for Feng Juechen to recover some strength in his voice. His tone was also deeper than before, "I will leave here before it is dark. From here on... we will never meet each other again!"

"No!" Xiao Lingxi shook her

head and said anxiously, “Your wounds are so severe. If you are met with any danger out there, then you may lose your life. At the least... At the least, please heal your wounds before you leave.”

“Do... do you know what you’re doing!!” Feng Juechen abruptly raised his head with clenched teeth, “The reason I’m alive is all to kill Yun Che! If I die, then he’ll be able to live a bit longer. Isn’t that exactly what you want!? Then why are you still trying to save me!?”

Xiao Lingxi shook her head, “No. I do not wish any harm upon Little Che, but I also cannot stand by and watch...”

“Do you think that if you save me, I will be deeply grateful to you and not kill Yun Che!?” Fen Juechen roared through seething teeth, “Don’t be naive! All these years, everything that I’ve worked for, everything that I’ve endured are all to kill him! To this moment I am still doing my best to survive in order to kill him... there is no one and nothing in this world that can stop me from killing him! As long as I still live in this world, I

will sacrifice everything to kill him!”

Feng Juechen's every word was like a heavy hammer that struck Xiao Lingxi in her chest. While holding in her pain, she said softly, “Big Brother Fen, I've always known that you're not a bad person. On the contrary, you're a very, very good person. Yun Che and I have done you wrong back then, but I believe that you know yourself that Little Che is not a bad or cruel person as well. Back then, everything he did was to protect my father and I... Can the grudge between you two truly

not be resolved? Why must it be this way...?”

“Resolved? My entire family died!!” Fen Juechen’s face writhed in pain, “The murder of one’s father is already utterly irreconcilable, but he... he killed all of my relatives; exterminated everyone in my family! He is the one who took away my family and my home and turn me into a lone demon who lives only to claim vengeance! This hatred is higher than the heaven itself... how can it possibly be resolved!? For what reason should it be resolved!?”

“No!” Xiao Lingxi shook her head strongly and placed both her hands before her chest. She stared into Feng Juechen’s terrifying, hatred filled eyes with her own warm and honest eyes, “Who said that Big Brother Fen has lost all of his family and home? Big Brother Fen is definitely not alone.”

Amidst Feng Juechen’s startled gaze, Xiao Lingxi lightly knelt on one knee, and with a raised head and sincere eyes she said, “With the heavens as witness, I, Xiao Lingxi am willing to take Big



Brother Fen, Fen Juechen as my elder brother. From this moment onwards, Big Brother Fen is my elder brother. Blessings or hardships, I will bear them both together with Big Brother Fen. The home of Xiao Lingxi, is the home of Big Brother Fen. As Big Brother Fen's sister, I will do my best to take care of Big Brother Fen, listen to his words, lend him my care and company and endure everything for him. I will never leave Big Brother Fen alone and solitary ever again."

"If I am to go against this oath, then may both heaven and earth

destroy me.”

Words of sincerity. Oath of solemnity. Feng Juechen’s gaze shook greatly as he followed Xiao Lingxi’s gradual lowering hands. His eyes were blurry, and he felt as if he had fallen into a dream. Then, his body and even his soul began to tremble intensely and uncontrollably...

Sis... ter...

Family...

Home...

# Chapter 763 – Tears Of A Devil

---

Familial love... Home...

These were things that had long ago vanished from his world and he did not even dare to dream about them any longer...

From the moment he had begun to absorb Ye Mufeng's devil soul, the only things that were left in his world were pain, ruthlessness, despair and an icy

hatred... If an average everyday life was heaven then his life had become complete hell.

And Xiao Lingxi had become the only source of warmth in his entire universe.

She was the only reason he had stayed at Floating Cloud City all this time. As long as he could just catch a glimpse of her once a day, it would bring him endless satisfaction. It even made the enormous pain he had to endure while absorbing the devil origin almost bearable. But when it

came to drawing closer to her... he had never dared to do so before, because to everyone else, he was terrifying devil god, and it was only in front of Xiao Lingxi that he would feel madly ashamed of the boundless inferiority and timidity that was birthed in his heart.

Because he had long ago stopped regarding himself as a human, and now he only thought of himself as an ugly and repulsive devil; a devil whose soul had been completely stained with filth.

He thirsted for the death of Yun Che... he had originally thought that Xiao Lingxi would not consent to ever see him again after he had left Floating Cloud City that day. He thought she would only be repulsed by him from that day forth, feeling only loathing and hatred for him. During the three months before his duel with Yun Che, he could not control the urge to return to Floating Cloud City so that he could see Xiao Lingxi again. He only gazed at her from afar... because he was afraid that she would find out.

Today, she had not only

dragged him back from the borders of death, she had even taken the initiative to recognize him as her brother and become his family, giving him a new home again.

No one knew that her every word and action had such a profound effect on his very soul. It was as if a raging blizzard had blown through his icy world.

He was caught up in a fantasy that he did not dare believe in... but after that Fen Juechen drew back in fright, his body



shrinking backwards as he shook his head vigorously, “No, it can’t be... it shouldn’t be like this, you’re definitely... definitely doing this so that I will stop going after Yun Che’s life...”

Xiao Lingxi replied in a very forceful tone, “Big Brother Fen, every single word that I have said, and the vow that I have just made, has come from the bottom of my heart! If... if it was because of Little Che, why would I get Big Brother Under Heaven to bring you back...”

“No, you don’t understand!” Fen Juechen shook his head even more vigorously, his eyes closing shut as his face was filled with pain, “Right now, I’ve become... a devil, a devil who is filled with sin and only lives for vengeance, you can’t understand this... you can’t understand at all!”

“You’re the one who doesn’t understand!!” Xiao Lingxi shouted, “Big Brother Fen, do you still remember how, for the sake of protecting me four years ago, you suffered a broken arm at the hands of your brother Fen Juecheng? Yet you still refused

to let go of him... This is something that I, Xiao Lingxi, will remember for the rest of my life. So how can someone like this be a devil!?

“During your time in Floating Cloud City, I always thought that you were constantly suffering. You made yourself cold and cruel, and you even called yourself a devil... But you did all of this for the sake of avenging your family. A true ‘devil’ is someone that is selfish and brutal. How could a true devil give up his own humanity for the sake of his dead relatives and plunge himself into a world of

pain!?

“I am afraid of the danger that you pose to Little Che... but what I am even more sure of is that from start to finish, you have been blameless and you have only ever been a victim this entire time. At the very least, you are definitely not the villain that you make yourself out to be...”

“No... do not speak any further.” Xiao Lingxi’s words did not put him at ease, on the contrary, his expression grew

even more tortured as he clutched both hands to his head, “You don’t understand, you really don’t understand... I really have become a devil...

“I don’t have the right to be treated this way by you!”

“Whether you possess the qualifications or not is not something that Big Brother Fen can say.” Xiao Lingxi replied in a soft voice as she shook her head, “For me, the word ‘family’ is sacred. In my entire life, the only family I have ever had was

Father, Little Che and the newly-returned Xiao Yun. I have never ever once thought of calling someone who was unrelated to me by blood family. But Big Brother Fen isn't the same... When the Divine Phoenix Army descended on our Floating Cloud City, it was Big Brother Fen who protected us and protected the home where Little Che and I grew up in. So to me, Big Brother Fen is not only a good person and my benefactor, he is also a true hero!"

Fen Juechen, "....."

“So, I will always respect and feel a sense of intimacy with Big Brother Fen. If Big Brother Fen is willing to become my elder brother, then we can rely on one another, and protect our family together. To me, that will be a most fortunate event that will bring incomparable joy to my heart. If Big Brother Fen rejects me, I will definitely be very sad and despondent.”

Fen Juechen’s body trembled as it froze in place. He stood there, stock still, his eyes glazed over, as if he had become a statue.

“But it seems like Big Brother Fen does not want to be part of my family.” Xiao Lingxi raised her head and looked at him, her eyes clouded by sadness and loss.

“I... I...” Under her unrelenting gaze, the man, who had caused a Divine Phoenix Army that was two hundred thousand strong to tremble in fear and had filled Yun Che with a profound dread, was all of a sudden at a loss for words as he was completely flustered.

“Anyways...” Xiao Lingxi said as



she laughed once more. Her blossoming smile caused the world in front of Fen Juechen to explode in light, "I have said all I have wanted to say, and I've even sworn such a venomous curse. So I don't care if Big Brother Fen is unwilling to accept this little sister of yours, because he will always be an elder brother to me from now on! From now on the Xiao Clan will always be Big Brother Fen's home, and this room will always be yours as well. When Big Brother Fen is at home, I will take care of Big Brother Fen as if he were my own elder brother, and I'll share both the good and the bad with Big Brother Fen from now on!"

“However, if Big Brother Fen does something wrong, as your younger sister, I will not hesitate to criticize and correct you!!”

Without waiting for Fen Juechen’s reply, Xiao Lingxi stood up, a pretty and coquettish smile appearing on her face, “It’s decided then! Big Brother Fen is badly wounded right now, so no matter what, you can’t resist me! So...”

“Give me a moment, I’ll be back straight away!”

Xiao Lingxi finished her little monologue and immediately scampered away... but before long, she pushed open the doors yet again and she carried a set of clean gray-white clothes in her hands.

“Big Brother Fen, all of the clothes that you were wearing are tattered and torn, and they’re really stinky too. Put on some clean clothes first. Big Brother Fen isn’t used to relying on other people and it looks like you’ve already recovered quite a bit of strength, so you can

definitely wear these clothes by yourself. I won't ask Big Brother Under Heaven to come and help." She said as she smiled merrily, gently placing the clothes into Fen Juechen's hands, "Right, these are Little Che's old clothes, so they should fit rather well."

When Fen Juechen, whose heart was numbed by his internal turmoil, heard the two words "Yun Che", a violent emotion instinctively stirred in his heart, "Yun... Che!?"

“Yes!” Xiao Lingxi paid no attention at all to the irregularity in Fen Juechen’s voice and aura and she still smiled sweetly as she replied, “These are the clothes he left behind before he left the last time, and I just laundered them not too long ago. I know that Big Brother Fen truly hates Little Che, but the clothes didn’t do anything wrong. A mighty person like Big Brother Fen definitely shouldn’t be so petty that he won’t even let a set of clothes off... I’ll go and boil up a new batch of medicine, so Big Brother Fen needs to be good and wear these clothes. I’ll be back once the medicine has finished boiling.”

Xiao Lingxi gave a gentle smile as she turned around to leave, closing the door behind her.

The world had suddenly fallen into a dead silence, and Fen Juechen felt his heart beating in his chest with such clear intensity.

He sat there blankly for a very long time, before finally stretching out a hand towards the clothes beside him.

The clothes were folded in a neat and tidy manner, they were completely clean and one could still smell a faint fragrance emanating from them.

These were the clothes of the person he hated the most, Yun Che, and he hated him so much that he hated everything associated with him... he should have been completely repulsed by them, tearing these clothes into shreds and going into a simmering rage. But... at this moment, his heart was bereft of any rage or killing intent when he held them in his hands. Even the act of picking up the clothes

was subconsciously done in a careful and gentle manner.

.....

“With the heavens as my witness, I, Xiao Lingxi, take Big Brother Fen as my elder brother... from now on, I am part of Big Brother Fen’s family and my home has also become Big Brother Fen’s family...”

“You’re the one who doesn’t understand... I am afraid of the danger that you pose to Little



Che... but what I am even more sure of is that from start to finish, you have been blameless throughout, and you have only ever been a victim the entire time. At the very least, you are definitely not the villain that you make yourself out to be...

“...So to me, Big Brother Fen is not only a good person and my benefactor, he is also a true hero!”

“If Big Brother Fen is willing to become my elder brother... To me, that would be the happiest

and most fortunate thing...”

“I don’t care if Big Brother Fen is unwilling to accept this little sister of yours, because he will always be an elder brother to me from now on! From now on the Xiao Clan will always be Big Brother Fen’s home...”

.....

Xiao Lingxi’s voice, her every word, and her every action, resounded in his heart again and again as it rippled across every

corner of his soul.

Drip...

The soft sound of dripping water was exceedingly clear in this quiet space. Fen Juechen dazedly hung his head... and a damp moistness began to silently spread to the corners of the gray clothes in his hands.

Te... ars...

He extended a trembling finger and touched his face... his fingertips coming into contact with a long trail of wetness...

Tears...

I had clearly already become a devil that had erased all traces of his humanity and emotion, a devil that was only left with sin and vengeance...

Why... do I still have tears...

His fingers were trembling, but his soul was shuddering with even more ferocity. He did not recognize the emotion that filled his soul right now. The only thing that he was aware of were the tears dripping uncontrollably down his face. He could not stop them...

So it turns out that I... could still be... “human”, huh...

# Chapter 764 – The Approaching Devil Sword Conference

---

“Big Brother Fen, the medicine is ready... but I’m going to say this first! This time you better not throw it away petulantly, because if you do, I’m really going to get angry with you!”

Xiao Lingxi pushed the door open as she strode into the room. The medicine in her hand was still boiling so the first thing she did was place the medicine on the little table in front of the

door. When she looked at Fen Juechen she discovered that he had already changed his clothes and was standing... Even though his aura was rather weak and his face was pale, he still stood very straight.

Xiao Lingxi's eyes lit up and she crowed with joy, "Big Brother Fen, it seems like you're already able to stand up, that's great!"

No one would have thought that it was possible for Fen Juechen's heart to have gone through such a tumultuous

change in the short period between Xiao Lingxi's departure and return. Xiao Lingxi's figure appeared once more in his sight, and nervousness, an emotion that would not have appeared in front of anyone else, crept across the face of the usually calm Fen Juechen as he stuttered, "Xiao Lingxi, I..."

"You're not allowed to address me like that anymore!" Xiao Lingxi said in a serious tone, "Don't forget, right now you've already become my elder brother, so you need to call me sister, or... you can just call me Lingxi if you like. The three



words Xiao Lingxi are far too distant.”

“Hm... these clothes really fit you very well, it is practically as if they were measured and made just for you.” Xiao Lingxi said with a smile as her eyes roamed across Fen Juechen’s body, “But that’s to be expected, because your figure has always been very similar to that of Little Che’s. When I think about it, besides your figure, there are many other similarities that you share with him.”

“I am similar to... Yun Che?”  
Fen Juechen said in a daze.

Xiao Lingxi raised eyes which were filled with astonishment. This was because Fen Juechen did not give off a bone-chilling, icy-cold murderous aura at the mention of the name “Yun Che”. She gave a light nod of her head, “Yes, you really resemble him in many ways. For example, normally Little Che is a very gentle and warm person, but when he goes up against people who want to harm those who are important to him, he becomes very extreme, just like Big Brother Fen who has been

consumed with the desire for vengeance. Also, he has an extremely strong ego. He is very obsessive about things that he wants to do, and he will always bear the burden for every single thing... these are the areas where the both of you are alike.”

Fen Juechen, “...”

“Actually, Little Che recently told me that he did not regret doing what he did four years ago. Yet at the same time, he had always felt some remorse when it came to you. He said that

given your personality, not killing you all those years ago was actually far crueler than the alternative. And now, even when he had the chance to kill you, he was unable to bring himself to do the actual deed. If there is any way he can make it up to you, he will definitely do all that he can to make it so.”

“...” Fen Juechen’s arms began to tremble violently.

“Big Brother Fen, I know that asking you to set aside your desire for vengeance is a very

selfish thing indeed. After all, you lost all of your relatives. But... but you are clearly such a good person, and Little Che is also such a good person as well. The past can't be changed anymore, so does it mean that one of you has to die before this matter can reach its ultimate resolution? Is there truly not a slight... not a slight possibility that this does not need to come to pass?"

Fen Juechen raised his arm, and it was as if his gaze penetrated his flesh, and that he was looking at his ice-cold blood which was far darker than a

normal person's, "In order to kill Yun Che, I have paid an enormous price to attain the power that I have today. If I just give up like this... what is the worth of this power that I have given up everything to attain...?"

"Oh, it's really simple." Xiao Lingxi said in a soft voice, "Great power need not only be used for vengeance, it can also be used to protect the people that you desire to protect."

"Pro...tect..."

“That’s right!” Xiao Lingxi said as a faint smile bloomed across her face, “Like Big Brother Fen, Little Che has always been diligently pursuing strength, but the reason he is chasing after strength is not to be able to be victorious in battle, it is so that he can protect the people that he wants to protect, and keep them from coming to any harm. This is also why he chose the heavy sword as his weapon, it is also for the sake of ‘protecting’. So Big Brother Fen can use his own power to protect the ones that he wants to protect... Besides, Big Brother Fen is already so powerful, the ones who are

being protected by Big Brother Fen will definitely feel very safe and happy.”

Xiao Lingxi slowly raised her eyes and her starry pupils expanded to form two delicate moons, “And I don’t know if I can also have the privilege of being someone that Big Brother Fen wants to protect? Heh... if that’s possible, then not only will I have Little Che’s protection, but I will also have Big Brother Fen watching over me. Just the thought of this makes me feel like I’m the most fortunate person in the entire world.”



Protect...

My power does not only need to be used for vengeance, it can also be used to... protect her...

Fen Juechen placed a hand on his chest and the evil and icy-cold power that resided in his body, the power that caused even him to feel fear and disgust, suddenly felt rather warm...

“If... I kill Yun Che, will you still be willing to accept my protection?” Fen Juechen mumbled.

Xiao Lingxi did not shake her head, but she did not nod her head either. She merely replied in a soft but resolute tone, “If Little Che is no longer around, then I won’t tarry on this earth for much longer either.”

Fen Juechen, “...!!”

Xiao Lingxi closed her eyes and

said in a very soft voice, “Little Che is the person who grew up together with me and he is also the person that treats me the best. In my entire life, almost every single happy thing that has happened to me has occurred because of him. So to me, Little Che is like half of my life. In fact, he is the more important half, so if he isn’t around... then I will never be able to experience happiness ever again.”

“Three years ago, when I received the news of his death, I desired to accompany him as well... but I still had my dear

father, so I could not leave him to fend for himself. But right now, Xiao Yun has returned, so now that he is around to accompany father, if anything ever happens to Little Che, I can have peace of mind when I go to accompany him.”

“...” Fen Juechen’s breathing had become rough and heavy, his hand tightened strongly and it seemed as if he was going to rip the flesh off his chest. He recalled the time that he had spent in Floating Cloud City, and during that period, he had seen Lingxi everyday, but he had never seen her smile even once.

Her face had been etched with a sorrow and despondency which seemed like it could never be erased.

During the times he had visited Floating Cloud City after Yun Che had returned alive, he no longer saw the sorrow on her face anymore. Instead it had been replaced by a gentle happiness and a warm smile, as if her life had already been completely fulfilled, and she no longer had any regrets in this life.

“Okay... I promise you that from now on, I... will no longer try to kill him.”

The words that had come from his mouth resounded in their souls like peals of heavenly thunder. Xiao Lingxi's head jerked up violently and her eyes began trembling violently as well, “Big Brother Fen, you... what did you just say? You just... what you said... is... is it true?”

Fen Juechen had thought that saying these words would cause him incomparable pain, but the

moment the words had left his lips, it felt as if a huge burden had been lifted off his chest instead. Lingxi's face was filled with astonished joy and disbelief, a deep sense of satisfaction appeared in her heart.

What was going on...

Why was it like this...

The tens of thousands of lives that were lost when my entire clan died... the absolutely

irreconcilable grievance and hatred that I had for him... the hell that I have endured over the past few years...

In the end... all of these things cannot be compared to her smiling face?

Why do I not feel any discontentment or pain...

Just why...



“I will no longer try to kill Yun Che, and even if he stands before me, I will no longer take any action against him... and I won’t do so ever again.” Fen Juechen’s voice did not waver this time, and it was instead filled with sincerity and resoluteness.

“I... I...” Every word sounded like a celestial chorus which had descended from the heavens. Xiao Lingxi’s eyes instantly grew misty as a trail of tears steadily trickled down her face.

“Big Brother Fen... thank you...

thank... thank you..." She pressed her lips together with force, she could not stop the joyous tears that were streaming crazily down her face, and her entire body was wracked by sobs.

The corner of Fen Juechen's mouth crooked slightly... If he was looking at a mirror, he would be able to see that a small smile was playing across his face... and he had thought that he would never be able to smile again.

Lingxi... From this day forth, as long as I am still breathing, anyone can forget about harming a hair on your head ever again... I will not allow anyone to do so!

Number One Under Heaven hovered in the air above the room, his face filled with shock, and a long time passed before he regained his senses.

“Whether it comes to appearance, profound strength or status, she is a far cry from the Little Demon Empress, but

Brother Yun had kept pining for her day and night when he was in the Demon Imperial City, could it be... could it be that...”

“Not only does she possess an unmatched intellect, but she also has a soul that shines like a precious diamond.” Number One Under Heaven mused to himself.

---

Time continued to pass, and within the blink of an eye, two months had passed. It was finally approaching the day that

the Devil Sword Conference would be convened.

“Whoosh!!”

Yun Che breathed a great sigh of relief as he returned to his ice pavilion. With a backwards flip, he planted himself on his ice bed... because today, his “grand scheme” had finally come to complete fruition. Aside from the few young disciples who had just been admitted into Frozen Cloud Asgard and could not endure the strength of the medicine, all the other Frozen

Cloud disciples had been given a boost in profound strength through his skillful use of the Overlord Pellet... Furthermore, every single person's power had increased by at least one great realm.

In this short span of time, he had forcefully dragged his sect to a whole new level. This entire undertaking had been equivalent to a few thousand years of accumulation and expansion by any other sect. In the history of the Profound Sky Continent, it was definitely an event that had never ever happened before.

What was even more terrifying was that in the process of increasing the profound strength of the Frozen Cloud disciples, Yun Che had also conveniently opened up all of their profound entrances, so their profound cultivation would be many times faster than it had been from now on... Right now, every single Frozen Cloud disciple had attained the Heavenly God's Spiritual Veins that other sects could only dream about attaining once every few thousand years or so... so Yun Che's actions were practically begging for the punishment of heaven.

The process of raising the profound strength of all the Frozen Cloud disciples also counted as a rather rigorous cultivation for him as well, so in these last two months, his profound strength had undergone some growth as well. Ten days before, he had finally managed to break in the sixth level of the Emperor Profound Realm.

“Big Brother Yun, can I come in?”



Feng Xue'er's tender, graceful and lovable voice came from outside his door and just by hearing that sweet voice, Yun Che felt as if all of the aches and pains on his body had simply vanished. He got up with a "swish" as he replied, "Xue'er, hurry up and come inside."

Today, Feng Xue'er still wore a set of snowy clothes, she was as beautiful as a divine maiden, as graceful and pretty as a fairy. She was enveloped in Yun Che's embrace, and with a soft cry, she practically melted into his bosom... During these five months that they had lived

together, she had practically become used to his frivolous ways.

“Big Brother Yun, Royal Father just sent me a sound transmission to inform me that the Devil Sword Conference would be officially convening in four days time and that he has already arrived at the Supreme Ocean Palace. He also told me that the majority of the invited powers have already reached the Supreme Ocean Palace as well. When is Big Brother Yun going?” Feng Xue’er softly asked as she was embraced by him.

“Ah? There’s still four days?” Yun Che was slightly shocked as he raised his head and silently calculated the time before nodding his head and replying, “It is not strange that they would all arrive early. After all, the ones who have been invited are all the peak powers that exist within the Profound Sky Continent. The leaders of the Four Great Sacred Grounds will all be in attendance as well. This kind of spectacle has probably only happened a few times in the history of the Profound Sky Continent. Furthermore, the attraction this time is rather enticing, the secret of the Divine

Profound huh... heh heh.”

“Then when are we going to make our move?” Feng Xue’er asked. If they were going to fly to the Supreme Ocean Palace from their current location, even given their speed, it would still take them at least ten days. However, with the Primordial Profound Ark, this problem was clearly no longer a problem.

“Hmm...” Yun Che pondered the question for a while before replying, “Then let’s leave tomorrow morning. I still have

some other things to do at that place, so it will be good to arrive a bit earlier as well.

“Let’s go and inform all the Junior and Senior Masters first.”

Yun Che and Feng Xue’er arrived at the Frozen End Divine Hall. Murong Qianxue and the others were all within the hall, and every single person was surrounded by a hazy layer of ice crystals and mist. At Yun Che’s arrival, the ice crystals and mist immediately vanished and all of them stood up as they paid their

respects towards Yun Che.

“Greetings, Asgard Master.”

Yun Che did a quick examination of the aura of the six people in front of him. His brows knitted together as he asked in an astonished and confounded voice, “To think that not a single one of you was able to make a breakthrough? That is exceedingly strange, all of you have outstanding innate talent, all of your profound entrances have been opened and your profound strength has

already reached the Tyrant Profound Realm. You should be able to handle higher-level laws of nature... so why haven't any of you been able to comprehend the Frozen End Divine Art despite laboring at it for so long... it truly is strange."

When he had begun cultivating the Frozen End Divine Art, he had only needed a few minutes to comprehend it, and he had only needed a day and a night for his comprehension to deepen. But Murong Qianxue and the others had the Frozen Cloud Art and the Frozen Heart Art as their foundation,

moreover, all of them had the Heavenly God's Spiritual Veins as well, but in the end not a single person could comprehend the Frozen End Divine Art... none of the six of them could make the first step into understanding the Frozen End Divine Art, much less beginning to cultivate it.

“Asgard Master, even though we have tried to forcefully understand the profound art, in the end we cannot circulate our profound energy in accordance with it. Furthermore, the laws of nature that are contained within flit in and out of our minds and



they are exceedingly hard to grasp... many years ago, when we tried to cultivate the Frozen End Divine Art, the results were the same. Despite undergoing an enormous breakthrough in our profound strength, the results are still the same.” Mu Lanyi said as she furrowed her crescent brows together.

“It seems as if we are destined to never be able to learn the Frozen End Divine Art.” Murong Qianxue said with a soft sigh, “However, this isn’t because we are slow or lacking in talent. In the thousand year history of the Frozen Cloud Asgard, there have

only been three people who were able to cultivate the Frozen End Divine Art. The first person was the Frozen Cloud Ancestor, and the other two people are the Asgard Master and Xia Qingyue.”

Yun Che raised a hand to his jaw and just as he was about to lapse into deep thought, Jasmine’s voice resounded in his heart, “It’s better if you just saved your strength and stopped trying. Even if you gave them another ten thousand years, they would still not be able to cultivate the Frozen End Divine Art.”

“Eh? Why?” Yun Che said in shock.

# Chapter 765 – The Peculiar Frozen End Divine Art

---

“The Frozen End Divine Art made a sudden appearance a thousand years ago due to the Frozen Cloud Ancestor, Mu Bingyun. Before that there were no previous records of it. Didn’t you find something fishy about that? This profound art is not as simple as you believe it to be... and if you want to cultivate it, you will need the blood or soul of a certain divine beast. If not, even if your comprehension is top-notch and you are able to understand it, you will never be

able to release even the teeniest bit of its power.”

“Just like how someone that does not have the Phoenix bloodline will never be able to truly cultivate the ‘World Ode of the Phoenix’!”

“What?” This time Yun Che was not just taken aback, he was truly shocked, “So what you’re saying is that the Frozen End Divine Art is actually a primordial divine art that was left behind by a certain divine beast?”

“Wait, wait, that’s not right!” Yun Che suddenly recalled something as he blurted out a response, “If that’s the case, then how come I can cultivate it? And how the heck did Qingyue cultivate it as well?”

“Hmph, that is because Xia Qingyue has the Nine Profound Exquisite Body, so she can break through the boundaries of most natural laws! As for you, you have the Evil God Profound Veins, so you can ignore both the natural order and the laws of nature. Moreover, you also have

the Water Spirit Evil Body... All those years ago, you managed to forcibly skip four levels of the World Ode of the Phoenix and comprehend the fifth and sixth level of it, so forcibly cultivating the Frozen End Divine Art was the much easier feat by far.” Jasmine explained in a bland voice. However, she had not mentioned any of this before Yun Che had returned to the Profound Sky Continent, she only felt that the Frozen End Divine Art seemed somewhat familiar.

“However, whether it was you or Xia Qingyue, even though the

Frozen End Divine Art that the both of you use far outstrips that of any normal ice-based profound art, it is merely a pale shadow of the true Frozen End Divine Art... but if you think about it, the true ‘Frozen End Divine Art’ is a primordial divine art that is on the same level as the World Ode of the Phoenix!”

“On the same level as the... World Ode of the Phoenix?” Yun Che exclaimed in shock. He had rarely used the Frozen End Divine Art after he had learned it because even though it could produce several peculiar effects



in certain situations, in terms of raw strength it was far weaker than the World Ode of the Phoenix or the Golden Crow's Record of the Burning World. If their strength was supposed to be on the same level... then did it also mean that the primordial divine beast who passed it down was an existence that was on the same level as the Phoenix?"

“During the Primordial Era of the Gods, the Vermillion Bird, the Phoenix and the Golden Crow were the three supreme fire attribute beasts. The element of water also had three supreme rulers as well, and that

was the Blue Dragon, the Ice Phoenix and the Ice Qilin! Ice was the form of water that possessed the most might, so the Ice Phoenix's and Ice Qilin's power was governed by ice. Only the Blue Dragon's power was governed by water, so the power of its ice was inferior to that of the Ice Phoenix and the Ice Qilin."

"Furthermore, this 'Frozen End Divine Art' is actually the primordial divine art that was passed down by the Ice Phoenix!"

“Ice... Phoenix?” This was the first time that Yun Che had ever heard that name, he replied in a low voice, “Phoenix... Ice Phoenix... Could it be a primordial divine beast that was related to the Phoenix but possessed a contrasting element instead? Since this was something that was passed down by the Frozen Cloud Ancestor, Mu Bingyun, then it means that she could cultivate it, which in turn means... that she received the inheritance of the Ice Phoenix Divine Beast?”

“So this means that besides the legacies of the Dragon God and

the Phoenix, there is also a place in the Profound Sky Continent that contains the legacy of the Ice Phoenix?” Yun Che asked. If that was truly the case, then if he was able to find out where the legacy of the Ice Phoenix Divine Beast was concealed and obtain either the blood or the soul of the Ice Phoenix, his own Frozen End Divine Art would definitely receive a huge boost in power. Frozen Cloud Asgard would also then be able to ascend to even greater heights.

“Heh...” Jasmine naturally knew exactly what Yun Che was thinking of and she replied in a

disinterested voice, “And how do you know that she obtained the legacy of the Ice Phoenix on the Profound Sky Continent?”

“I can definitively confirm one thing for you, this world definitely does not contain the legacy of the Ice Phoenix. If my conjectures are accurate, Mu Bingyun lost all of her memories all those years ago, and after that, as she slowly recovered, she established the Frozen Cloud Asgard and left behind the Frozen End Divine Art. Yet, no one could cultivate it. After that, when she recovered her memories, she also remembered

that the Frozen End Divine Art could not be learned by ordinary folk, so she created the far-inferior ‘Frozen Cloud Art’ which could be cultivated by normal people.

Yun Che, “....”

“But do keep in mind that everything that I’m saying is merely conjecture. The real truth is something that probably nobody knows, and there is no need for you to dig any deeper as well. All you need to know... is that asking them to learn the

Frozen End Divine Art is merely a waste of time.”

After Jasmine had said her piece, she did not bother herself with him any further.

Yun Che stood there, staring blankly into space for a good long while. Jasmine’s words had clearly indicated that the Frozen Cloud Ancestor, Mu Bingyun, was not a person who belonged to the Profound Sky Continent.

No, Jasmine had said “in this

world”, so she was not only referring to the Profound Sky Continent.

Could it be that the person who had created the Frozen Cloud Asgard was actually someone from another world!?

It was also clear that Jasmine knew something about it, but she did not intend to clarify it for him in the slightest.

“Asgard Master, we will continue to try for a while



longer. But if we haven't accomplished anything within a year, then the only option we have left is to give up." Jun Lianqie said.

"If it's the Frozen End Divine Art..." Yun Che looked for the right words before he opened his mouth to speak, "There are a few things about it that are quite unique, and there are a few hurdles that cannot be overcome by hard work or comprehension. It's through no fault of your own that all of you are unable to cultivate it. Thus, let's set aside the matter of cultivating the Frozen End Divine Art for now.

Cultivate the Frozen Cloud Art to its highest level, its power should not be any weaker than the Frozen End Divine Art.”

“Yes, we will do as Asgard Master commands.” Currently, the entire Frozen Cloud Asgard had long ago began to regard Yun Che as a deity, and so his word had become law.

“Tomorrow morning, I will travel to Supreme Ocean Palace with Xue’er, so that we can attend the Devil Sword Conference. It will be roughly

six or seven days before we can return. During this period of time, I will have to trouble Senior and Junior Masters to guide and supervise all the other disciples in building up their foundations. It would be best if they did not hastily attempt to cultivate the Frozen Cloud Art for the next two to three months.” Yun Che reminded them, “Other than that, if any accidents happen during this period of time, let me know immediately and I will rush back as soon as I can.”

“You’re leaving tomorrow?”  
The six of them huddled closer

and Murong Qianxue glanced at Feng Xue'er before speaking, "I heard that the Devil Sword Conference will be a gathering of all the heroes of the realm, and the peak experts of the Four Great Sacred Grounds will all be present as well... when Asgard Master reaches that place, he must definitely be cautious."

"Xue'er, we will have to trouble you to protect our Asgard Master." There was a layer of worry that was hidden just beneath Murong Qianxue's calm exterior... After all, it was a gathering that was on the level of a Sacred Ground. Even

though Yun Che was strong, once he reached that place, there would be far too many people that were stronger than him.

Especially Sun Moon Divine Hall, who had a grudge against him...

After all, they were painfully aware that Yun Che's "master" did not exist. The moment this flimsy pretence was laid bare, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Mn, I will protect Big Brother Yun. Furthermore, we are not going to the Devil Sword Conference to do battle, so there shouldn’t be too much danger involved.” Feng Xue’er said with sweet laugh.

“...Asgard Master.” Chu Yueli hesitated for a while before stepping forward, “Qingyue has not sent us a sound transmission after all this time. Since the Devil Sword Conference is going to be a gathering of all the heroes of the realm, perhaps we might be able to find out some news from there?”

“Mn, I understand.’ Yun Che said as he nodded his head, but in his heart, he was aware that it was extremely likely that Xia Qingyue was not on the Profound Sky Continent anymore. Or else, she would have long ago attempted to make contact with Frozen Cloud Asgard.

And as for where exactly she ended up in... his desire to find out was stronger than anyone else’s.

---

At the same time. Illusory  
Demon Realm, Southeastern  
Region.

The normally quiet and peaceful mountain range had presently been transformed into a sea of fire. Startling explosions ripped through the air; they were so loud that they could be clearly heard within a fifty kilometer radius. The nearby mountains shook violently and seemed to be on the verge of collapse as boulders tumbled



through the air.

“Duke Ming, you reprehensible traitor, stop resisting and accept your fate!!”

Mu Feiyan, Mu Yubai, Su Xiangnan and Lin Guiyan exerted all of their strength, profound light exploding from their bodies and their faces flushed red from the effort, as they tried their best to surround one man... Besides the four of them, there were still another eight people prowling in the background, waiting and

preparing for the moment their prey attempted to escape the encirclement. Each and every one of these eight people was on the same level as a grand elder of a Guardian Family.

Any one of these twelve people could be counted amongst the most powerful practitioners within the Illusory Demon Realm. Such a startling array of strength had been assembled, all for the sake of one person...

Because that person was Duke Ming!!

“Hahahaha, you vermin think that you are worthy enough to force this duke to submit!?”

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!!

When it came to desperate battles at the level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, every single profound energy explosion would contain earth-shattering might. As the battle raged on, the land in a hundred kilometer radius of the fight had been completely devastated, countless profound beasts were

buried before they could even react to their demise.

Duke Ming had used the blood escape to flee from Demon Imperial City at that time, but that also caused him to lose a lot of his blood essence, greatly injuring his vitality. After that, he was constantly fleeing for his life, and he could barely find a moment to catch his breath. Given the power that Duke Ming had previously, even if Mu Feiyan and the others combined their strength, all four of them would still have tasted bitter defeat at his hands. But right now, they could actually

suppress Duke Ming and prevent him from fleeing.

“Duke Ming, you old villain! This old man was truly befuddled and confused all those years ago! To think that I believed you instead of the Demon King, holding your words as truth and his words as false... Today, this old man needs to bury you personally!!” Mu Feiyan roared in fury as he and Mu Yubai forged an enormous ice-cold domain; Duke Ming was being assaulted by unending shards of ice every single second, and many bloody wounds had been gouged in his

body.

“You want to bury this duke!? Hahahahaha... I will bury you first!!”

Duke Ming's expression turned sinister as a wild laugh tore from his throat. His entire body suddenly glowed with a bloody light, and two enormous skulls made of red-black flames suddenly coalesced in the air above them before fiercely descending down from above.

“Patriarch Mu, be careful!!”

These were flame devils conjured by Duke Ming, so they possessed an incomparably terrifying might. Su Xiangnan's heart was jolted by shock and he swiftly changed his angle of attack, a hundred thousand sword shadows instantly congealing into one sword as it thrust towards the flame devils, wild gales howling in its wake.

“Divine Wind Sword!!”

But as the two flame devils descended, they changed their trajectory midair. They no longer targeted Mu Feiyan, but rushed towards Lin Guiyan instead.

Boom!!

It would be extremely hard for Lin Guiyan to even fend off one flame devil, much less two of them. Lin Guiyan's face blanched as he tried to endure the full might of the assault, but after a single breath, he let out a miserable cry as he was engulfed



by crimson black flames. In the next instant, the attack had sent him flying, blood spraying in the air as he went.

Riip!!

Su Xiangnan's Divine Wind Sword had opened a hole in Duke Ming's shoulder, a bloody, gaping wound that one could see through. But the four man encirclement had been blasted wide open. Duke Ming had to eat this attack, but he let out a wild laugh instead as he took his opportunity to swiftly flee.

“Dammit... hurry up and restrain him!!” Mu Yubai roared.

The moment Mu Yubai yelled, the eight grand elders that had been lurking in the shadows simultaneously rushed towards Duke Ming. But Duke Ming had long been prepared for this moment, even before he had broken out of his encirclement. Before the two closest grand elders neared him, two clusters of crimson black flames suddenly exploded from his palms, their terrifying might instantly shattering the nearby

space into fragments.

A wounded tiger was still a tiger after all. Duke Ming had been the strongest person in the entire Illusory Demon Realm at one point, so even though he had lost a lot of blood essence, causing his profound strength to fall dramatically, a grand elder from a Guardian Family would still find it exceedingly hard to restrain him.

Amidst the huge explosions, both of the Mu Family's grand elders were tossed aside like

ragdolls. By the time they had managed to regain control of their bodies, Duke Ming's wild laughter already echoed from several hundred meters away.

“Shit... chase him! Quickly! It was really hard for us to pin down his location in the first place, so this time, we can't let him escape no matter what!!” Mu Feiyan yelled shrilly. The Little Demon Empress had given them a time limit three months ago, and if they were not able to capture Duke Ming within three months, they would all have to sever a finger in apology.

Boom!

A dull and heavy explosion suddenly rang out in the distance as a golden light illuminated heaven and earth. Duke Ming's wild laughter was abruptly cut off, and what replaced it was a miserable scream of pain.

Bang!!

Duke Ming was fiercely

smashed from the air to the ground, a cluster of golden flames slowly burning on his chest. He rolled on the ground in pain as all of the crimson black flames on his body desperately surged forth. It took several seconds before they could finally suppress and extinguish those golden flames. He raised his head to the sky, and his eyes showed a fear that he had rarely displayed in his lifetime.

A figure clad in rainbow colors slowly descended from the air above. Her figure was petite and delicate, her exquisite features

were so beautiful that they would cause the sun and the moon to lose their luster, but those delicate, slanted brows held an incomparable dignity and majesty that caused all to tremble before her.

Her appearance seemed to cause the entire world to stop in place, and even the sound of the roaring flames had completely disappeared.

# Chapter 766 – Crippling Duke Ming

---

“Li... Little Demon Empress!” Duke Ming held a hand to his chest, his entire body trembling uncontrollably... he had been strong enough to arrogantly look down upon the entire world, so he did not want to display fear in front of anyone, but right now his body betrayed him as it shivered uncontrollably...

Because his body had clearly felt the approach of death itself.



The moment Lin Guiyan, who had been sorely wounded by Duke Ming, saw the Little Demon Empress, he ignored the blood streaming from his mouth as he hurriedly knelt down to the ground and said in a quavering voice, “I greet the Little Demon Empress!!”

The ones who had been marked with the Slave Imprint had all become the loyal dogs of the Little Demon Empress.

“We greet the Little Demon

Empress.”

All of those present paid their respects to her. Mu Feiyan quickly strode forward, bowing towards her as he said, “With the Little Demon Empress personally taking a hand in this, Duke Ming will find it hard to flee even if he suddenly grows wings!” His eyes swiveled towards Duke Ming and he barked out a furious command, “Restrain the traitor!!”

Before the words had even finished escaping his lips, Mu

Yubai, Su Xiangnan and the eight grand elders moved in unison, but this time, a clear and indifferent voice rang across the intervening space, "Withdraw, nobody is allowed to interfere."

A shudder passed through Mu Yubai and the others. They ground to a halt in panic and began to scramble backwards.

It was clear that the Little Demon Empress wanted to kill Duke Ming herself... to use his blood to quench the hatred and need for vengeance of the

## Illusory Demon Imperial Family.

Even though Duke Ming was strong, given the Little Demon Empress' current strength, killing him would be as easy as swatting a fly.

Right before this, the world had been filled with explosions that seemed to come from hell itself but right now, that same world was deathly silent. The Little Demon Empress' eyes bored into Duke Ming, her flat and emotionless expression bearing no trace of rage or indignation,

no signs of joy or sorrow. Yet everyone who was present felt a pressure building up in their hearts and souls and found it hard to even breathe.

“Huan Caiyi...” The terrifying silence caused Duke Ming to feel as if his chest was about to explode. In the end, he could no longer endure it and croaked out hoarsely, “This duke... really regrets deciding not to simply kill you one hundred years ago!”

“Hmph, you’re about to die yet you still dare to spout such

arrogance!” Mu Feiyan rebuked him furiously.

The Little Demon Empress did not say anything, and she also did not get agitated by Duke Ming. She slowly and gently raised her petite and exquisite little hand, her tender white palm pointed in Duke Ming’s direction.

This simple gesture of hers caused Duke Ming’s pupils to suddenly contract. He let out a fierce and desperate howl, both his palms thrusting outwards as

all of the profound energy in his body crazily surged forth. Fallen Devil Flames raged throughout the sky as Duke Ming thrust them towards the Little Demon Empress with a yell.

If the extremely dense Fallen Devil Flames released their full might, they were able to reduce a city to ashes within a matter of minutes.

The Little Demon Empress' face did not even twitch; it remained completely emotionless, but a golden light flashed in the center

of her brows. She pushed her little hand forward lightly and a brilliant golden light covered the sky. Golden Crow flames began igniting furiously as they moved against the Fallen Devil Flames. Every time the terrifying and sinister Fallen Devil Flames came into contact with the Golden Crow flames, they reacted in the same way as a devil touched by holy light. The Fallen Devil Flames let out an ear-piercing shriek, trying to flee away as they were distorted and quickly consumed...

“Hahahahahaha...” Duke  
Ming’s hoarse and wild laughter



could be heard behind the cover of the Fallen Devil Flames, “Huan Caiyi... you think that you are able to kill this duke... stop dreaming!!”

Pfft!!

A large cloud of blood violently sprayed out from Duke Ming’s mouth, the blood mist fell from the sky and poured over him, causing his entire body to slowly become transparent as he began to... disappear within the bloody mist.

“It is the Blood Escape!!” Mu Yubai yelled in shock. During that time in the Demon Imperial City, Duke Ming had used this marvelous and strange Blood Escape to slip through the Little Demon Empress’ grasp.

The Fallen Devil Flames that Duke Ming had used to attack the Little Demon Empress at full force were only to obstruct her. His real motive had been to pull the same trick once more, and run away using the Blood Escape... the Blood Escape was conjured by spending blood essence, but using it also came with disastrous consequences. If

it was not a life-or-death scenario, he definitely would not even contemplate using it. Moreover, the two times that he did use it were when he was facing the Little Demon Empress... because if he did not pay this terrible price, the only outcome waiting for him would be a miserable death!

“Hmph!!”

The Little Demon Empress’ eyes, which were brighter and more beautiful than a full moon, narrowed slightly. She gave a

faint but cold snort as the flames all around her flashed and in an instant, they pierced through the layered Fallen Devil Flames. She sketched a small gesture with her hand as she pointed towards the location where Duke Ming had just vanished from.

When they had searched the hidden sanctuary that had been buried underneath Duke Huai Palace, they had also managed to find the forbidden Blood Escape technique. And given the long period of time that she had to study the technique, she had already grasped its entirety.

Therefore, Duke Ming was the person who was dreaming if he thought that he could use the Blood Escape to flee from the Little Demon Empress once more.

Bang!!!

Flames exploded everywhere as the very air itself was explosively torn apart. Amidst the exploding spatial fragments they could see Duke Ming, who had already disappeared, being hurled screaming back out. His body smashed heavily against the

ground, his entire body twitching and spasming. He glanced at the Little Demon Empress's ice-cold face and his entire body started trembling in fear. His expression warped into one of abject terror, as if he had seen a ghost.

“You... could not possibly... could not possibly...” Duke Ming stuttered, his face and lips losing all their color. Given his might and power, if he went all out in a fight against the Little Demon Empress, he could definitely still hold his own for a period of time. But when he used the Blood Escape technique, he had

lost a lot of blood essence. Not only did this injure his innate strength, it would also put him in a severely weakened state for the next few days.

At this time, even a single Mu Yubai could consign Duke Ming to death with a twitch of his fingers, much less the Little Demon Empress.

The first time he had used the Blood Escape, he had managed to run away successfully.

This time, not only had he not succeeded in his endeavor, he had even wasted all of that blood essence for nothing, putting himself in even more dire straits.

The Little Demon Empress' eyes were like two chips of ice. Her hand lifted up and fell again, as a cluster of golden flames mercilessly struck the location of Duke Ming's dantian.

Boom!!



The flames blew apart and the ruthless Golden Crow flames crazily surged into Duke Ming's profound veins. The flames mercilessly incinerated the profound veins that had been drastically weakened by his loss of blood essence... Duke Ming's incomparably miserable and wretched howls rang out into the sky, they were so shrill that he felt like his throat was about to be ripped apart. Moreover, all the profound strength and profound arts that he had painstakingly cultivated for nearly a thousand years were being swiftly burned away by those cruel Golden Crow flames...

The faces of everyone present warped in fear as a bone-tingling chill was sent down their spines... For people on their level, having one's profound strength crippled was a fate even more dreadful than death.

The Golden Crow flames only stopped burning once they reduced Duke Ming's profound veins to cinders. Duke Ming did not lose consciousness, but he had lost nearly all his profound strength, so his ability to endure pain was only a small fraction of what it had been before. His face

was so distorted that he looked like an evil spirit and his body was curled up into a fetal position. From his trembling lips, he issued a voice that was incomparably weak but also extremely malicious, “Huan Caiyi... even if this duke... descends into the depths of the netherworld... I... will never let you off!!”

“I’m afraid you won’t have the chance.” The Little Demon Empress said, her voice so cold that it cut to the bone, “Because once you reach the netherworld, the ancestors of our Illusory Demon Imperial Family will not

let you off either, and neither will the ancestors of all the Guardian Families. In fact, even your own ancestors will not have mercy on you!!”

“ARGHHHHHHHH!!” Duke Ming’s blood-curdling howl of frustration and hate was as desolate and hopeless as any demon’s.

The Little Demon Empress raised a palm and she made a simple gesture with her finger as four beams of fire shot towards Duke Ming’s arms and legs.

They instantly charred his limbs black and one last beam of fire shot directly into his mouth, causing all of his teeth to explode... and before the fragments could even fall to the ground, they had already been burned up in midair.

Duke Ming's eyes rolled back as his whole body went rigid and he directly passed out due to the extreme pain.

It was during a warm spring afternoon, but Mu Yubai and the rest who were watching felt

their entire bodies go cold. They had slowly and cautiously crept closer... but Duke Ming's miserable state did not elicit the slightest bit of pity from them.

Because the sins that he had committed could not be repaid even if the cruelest punishments on the earth was inflicted on him!

“Little Demon Empress, why didn't you kill him?” Mu Feiyan asked cautiously. The Little Demon Empress had not taken Duke Ming's life, she had only crippled his profound strength.

Moreover, she had also destroyed all four of his limbs and all of his teeth, so he would not be able to take his own life even if he wanted to.

“He caused my royal father to die, killed my royal brother, brought the clan of the Demon Emperors to the brink of extinction, nearly consigned the Yun Family to the abyss, and plunged our entire Illusory Demon Realm into a hundred years of chaos... With crimes of this magnitude, killing him like this would simply be doing him

a favor!”

“Oh, I won’t let him die. In fact, this empress will make sure that he lives on no matter what! For the next hundred years! And during these hundred years, this empress will ensure that each and every day, every single second of his life, will be filled with the cruelest and most painful tortures imaginable!”

Mu Feiyan fiercely fought down the shudder that threatened to course through his body.



Everyone else felt their bodies tense up and they dared not even breathe too loudly.

“Furthermore, as Yun Che has said before. A living person is far more useful than a dead person can ever be.” The Little Demon Empress glanced to the side and did not spare Duke Ming a further glance, “Patriarch Mu, how much longer will it be before the Yun Family’s Space Splitting Ring can be used again?”

Mu Feiyan’s words practically

tumbled over each other as he replied, “This old man has personally confirmed this sound transmitted with Yun Qinghong yesterday. Within ten days, the Space Splitting Ring will be fully operational. After that, it can make a single trip to the Profound Sky Continent.”

“Ten days?” The Little Demon Empress asked, her brows faintly creasing.

“Ten days was the conservative estimate. At this present moment, the Yun Family is

doing all that they can to restore the Space Splitting Ring's functionality. The various Duke Palaces are also doing all that they can to assist the Yun Family so I believe that it will be shorter than the estimated ten days... Pardon my impudence, but once the Space Splitting Ring becomes operational again, can this old man also accompany you on your trip?" Mu Feiyan asked cautiously. He also missed Yun Che very much.

"There is no need!" The Little Demon Empress said, giving a flourish of her robe as she turned around and floated into

the air, “This empress will make this trip alone!”

The Little Demon Empress' figure wavered like a misty cloud, but in the blink of an eye, she had already disappeared into the distance. It was only then that Mu Feiyan let out a heavy sigh of relief. He gave Duke Ming a glance before spitting out a few words, “Capture this evil traitor and drag him back to the Demon Imperial City! Remember, we need to reserve some profound energy to stabilize his wounds, we must definitely not allow him to die.”

“To think that the Little Demon Empress wants to venture forth to the Profound Sky Continent by herself.” Mu Yubai mused as he walked over, his expression strange.

“This actually isn’t that surprising. To the people of the Illusory Demon Realm, that is an extremely dangerous place. Every additional person means that there will be one additional source of possible trouble and danger. Contrary to expectations, it would actually be safer for the Little Demon

Empress if she went by herself. This old man believes that given the Little Demon Empress' current power, there isn't anyone on the Profound Sky Continent that can pose a threat to her." Mu Feiyan said truculently

"Heh heh." Su Xiangnan chuckled as he walked over as well, his tone thick with suggested meaning, "The Little Demon Empress is extremely worried about dear nephew Yun Che. Every time she meets Patriarch Mu or Brother Yun, she will definitely ask about the Space Splitting Ring. So it seems

like the relationship between our Little Demon Empress and our dear nephew is most certainly not only the ‘Golden Crow Divine God’s will’.”

“Tsk, tsk! For someone like Yun Che, there are only girls who are unworthy of him. There will never be a girl that he can’t match up to, so the intensity of the feelings that the Little Demon Empress has for him is simply the way things should be. After all, just whose grandson is he? Hahahahaha!!”

Mu Feiyan placed both hands behind his back, striding forward as he roared in laughter. Every time he either thought or mentioned his grandson, his face would turn ruddy and he would release a vigorous and hearty aura.

---

Profound Sky Continent,  
Divine Incense Nation.

Divine Incense Nation was located at the southern part of



the Profound Sky Continent and it was also the location that was closest to the Profound Sky Southern Ocean. Thus, it was also the country closest to Supreme Ocean Palace.

It was early in the morning and the sky had just started to light up. Yun Che and Feng Xue'er were sitting in the Primordial Profound Ark, having teleported from the Frozen Cloud Asgard to Divine Incense Nation in the blink of an eye.

“Grandfather said that Divine

Incense Nation is known for growing a mysterious plant called 'Thousand Fragrance', and the fragrance of this plant would spread very far. So one can smell this fragrance everywhere in the Divine Incense Nation, and it is also possible that this is how the name Divine Incense Nation came about in the first place."

Yun Che flew steadily in the direction of the Southern Ocean, as he wracked his brains for any stories about Divine Incense Nation that he could tell to Feng Xue'er.

The reason they had not directly teleported into the Southern Ocean Region was naturally to prevent the existence of the Primordial Profound Ark from being exposed.

“I will soon be able to see royal father once more. After leaving Lord Phoenix God, this is the first time I have left royal father’s side for so long. I wonder how he’s been doing during this period.” Feng Xue’er said softly.

The sky grew brighter and brighter and the moment the warm sun finally appeared in the eastern sky, the boundless blue ocean also appeared in their vision.

The Profound Sky Southern Ocean!

One thousand five hundred kilometers to the south of the border of the Profound Sky Southern Ocean lay one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds—Supreme Ocean Palace.

# Chapter 767 – Floating Ocean Palace

---

Not long after flying over the coastline and reaching the airspace of the Southern Ocean, a peculiar blue radiance finally appeared in the vision of Yun Che and Feng Xue'er... emitting this blue glow was a not so large island.

“This is it, let's descend.”

Yun Che pulled on Feng Xue'er's little hand, and together, they

descended onto the island. As Feng Xue'er raised her hand and gently touched her face, her absolute beauty which eclipsed the world suddenly appeared from below the layer of satin.

Yun Che retrieved the hexagonal jadestone which Ji Qianrou had given him from within his Sky Poison Pearl. This jadestone was specifically a piece of Sea God Jade. It had been engraved with the invitation for and date of the Devil Sword Conference, as well as the directions to Supreme Ocean Palace.

Arriving atop the island, a cool, refreshing sea breeze blew over as if greeting them. The entirety of the small island was empty, but when Yun Che and Feng Xue'er had descended, two figures appeared in front of them like ghosts.

“Have the two of you come for the Devil Sword Conference? If so, please show your Sea God Jade. If not, leave!”

Both of them wore blue clothes and had stiff expressions.

Although respectful, there was still a clear trace of undisguised arrogance and pride.

This was because they were the disciples of Supreme Ocean Palace! Although all of the visitors this time were the most powerful practitioners and forces amongst the Profound Sky Continent, the only ones who could be considered to be on equal footing with them atop the continent were those from the other three sacred grounds. Thus, unless they met someone from one of the other three sacred grounds, they wouldn't retract their arrogance even the



slightest bit.

The Four Great Sacred Grounds were the ruling figures within the Profound Sky Continent. It was a position they had held onto for tens of thousands of years without the slightest bit of weakness.

Yun Che didn't bother to reply and directly took out his Sea God Jade. Right when he was about to throw it to one of the disciples, a familiar voice bearing extreme joy suddenly emanated over from behind as it

breezed over with the wind.

“Brother-in-law!      Brother-in-law!”

Yun Che and Feng Xue'er simultaneously turned around. Yuanba was quickly flying over from the southeast in an impressive manner. Besides him, there was also an old man wearing white robes who exuded an unique demeanor... it was none other than Spiritual Master Ancient Blue who he had met so many years ago in Divine Phoenix Nation.

Xia Yuanba landed on the ground first and quickly rushed in front of Yun Che, his face full of excitement as he said, "I'm way too lucky, to be able to actually meet brother-in-law here! Hehe, I see Little Sister Xue'er also came."

"Yuanba, how come you and your master have come alone? Where are the rest of the sanctuary's people?" Yun Che casually asked after patting Xia Yuanba's shoulder. Being so close to Yuanba, Yun Che could clearly feel just how much

stronger Yuanba had become from their last meeting...

Moreover, it had been an extremely great increase.

The Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins... Jasmine's so called "unparalleled Tyrannical Divine Veins"!

"Oh, the major party from the sanctuary set out two days before us. Recently, I just had another small breakthrough, so master and I left later." Xia

Yuanba chuckled as he spoke. From his tone, it was clear that he was incredibly happy to see Yun Che

“So it was like this.” Yun Che slowly nodded as he silently thought: I myself arrived nearly four days early, but Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s people actually arrived even earlier due to the Saint Emperor’s order. It seems that the Four Great Sacred Grounds are also extremely interested in this sword, huh.

After all, towards all those respected, powerful practitioners who had been stuck at the peak of the Sovereign Profound Realm for hundreds to thousands of years, the words “secrets of the Divine Profound” contained an irresistible attraction.

Upon seeing Spiritual Master Ancient Blue, the two Ocean Palace disciples no longer cared about Yun Che and Feng Xue’er, and instead quickly walked forward to greet him. The arrogance on their faces had disappeared without a trace as they saluted in an extremely

respectful and humble manner. They simultaneously greeted, "Junior Ocean Palace disciples Du Changming and Gong Kaichuan greet Spiritual Master Ancient Blue."

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue slightly flicked the whisk in his hand as he faintly smiled and nodded his hand. Afterwards, he directly moved towards Yun Che, chuckling as he said, "Little friend Yun, when we met in the past, this old one believed that you would become a dragon in the future. Today, only three short years later, you have already become a true golden

scaled dragon which can look down on the heavens. Even this old one cannot help but shower you with praise, ha ha ha ha.”

“Junior Yun Che greets Senior Ancient Blue. This junior feels ashamed to be praised so highly by Senior Ancient Blue,” Yun Che respectfully greeted as a faint smile emerged on his face.

While Spiritual Master Ancient Blue spoke to Yun Che, his eyes slightly moved, sweeping over the figure of Feng Xue’er beside Yun Che. As he did so, his pupils



and face momentarily stiffened. Even his footsteps had obviously paused for a moment.

The higher one's profound energy, the longer one would live. Thus, one simply couldn't use appearance to judge the age of a powerful profound practitioner. However, even though appearances could be kept youthful, profound practitioners with enough experience could still roughly guess a person's age from their aura.

Using this method, Ancient Blue perceived that the girl beside Yun Che was only in her twenties. At the very least, she was definitely younger than Xia Yuanba.

However, her profound aura was actually...

Sovereign Profound Realm... eighth level!?

This greatly surprised him, but he then immediately thought of a person... and the ridiculous,

unbelievable rumors which had been recently floating around.

Could it be that those rumors... were actually true?

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue's gaze fixated on Feng Xue'er's figure as he suddenly asked with difficulty, "This little friend, could it be that you are Divine Phoenix Sect's Princess Snow?"

In the face of the question, Feng Xue'er courteously replied, "Junior Feng Xue'er greets

Senior Ancient Blue Cang.”

“Mn.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue slowly nodded. However, the waves in his heart took much longer to suppress. He heavily sighed then said, “Ah, the younger generation will truly surpass the older one. Even after living these thousand years, it seems like I have still been a frog in a well this entire time, hoho.”

The moment Yun Che had revealed his name, the expressions of the two Supreme

Ocean Palace disciples drastically changed as a great fear arose amidst their panic. The two of them looked at each other, then hurriedly walked forward towards Yun Che and saluted him while saying in a respectful tone, “So... so esteemed guest is actually the Asgard Master of Blue Wind Nation’s Frozen Cloud Asgard. Although we have eyes, just now we were unable to recognize Mount Tai and acted poorly. We hope Asgard Master Yun will be magnanimous enough to tolerate our errors.”

This huge change in attitude

slightly surprised Yun Che as he waved his hand and said, “I am only but a junior. Moreover, this is Supreme Ocean Palace, so you two don’t have to be so polite with me.”

“No no,” an Ocean Palace disciple quickly shook his head, “The great Sovereign of the Seas personally stated that Asgard Master Yun was a distinguished guest of our palace, and that we should treat you with extreme respect. Just now, I...”

“Ah, understood, understood.”

Yun Che flourished his hand again, “Forget about all of these useless matters, just directly take us to the teleportation formation.”

“Alright... guests, please follow us.”

At the center of the little island was a profound spatial formation which released a greenish-blue glow. Of all the various types of profound formations, profound spatial formations had the greatest rate of consumption. However, they

were nonetheless extremely precious because this spatial profound formation allowed one to directly travel across a distance of fifteen hundred kilometers. In the entirety of Profound Sky Continent, there were very few of these profound spatial formations.

“Four esteemed guests, after entering this profound formation, you will be directly transported to an island called ‘Ocean Eye Isle.’ If you travel another fifty kilometers south from Ocean Eye Isle, you will arrive at the ocean palace. Great Elder is already there personally



waiting to welcome you all.”

As they activated the array, the two ocean palace disciples respectfully explained everything. As for their eyes, they focused less on the figure of Spiritual Master Ancient Blue, and instead constantly stole glances at Yun Che and Xia Yuanba.

The blue light within the profound formation flickered, and suddenly, the scene before Yun Che momentarily turned into a plane of whiteness before

changing into a different view of a blue ocean.

“We’ve arrived. This place must be the Ocean Eye Isle that those two disciples talked about. The ocean palace should be fifty kilometers south of here.”

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue was the first to exit the profound formation as he spoke with a chuckle. Yun Che and the other two all suddenly subconsciously looked south, their mouths simultaneously opening as similar exclamations of shock

came out.

“Waah... wow!”

“Is that... Supreme Ocean Palace?” Xia Yuanba’s eyes had grown huge as he stared. This was also his first time coming to Supreme Ocean Palace.

Their eyes were all stuck on a circular island veiled by a cover of light blue light which filled the entire airspace south of them. Unlike other ordinary islands which floated atop the

ocean, this island... floated in the sky, high above the ocean!

From their point of view, the giant palace was around three to four thousand meters above the ocean!

“My royal father once said that Supreme Ocean Palace is eternally floating in the sky... to think that it was so mystical,” Feng Xue’er mumbled softly.

“...To continuously keep such a large island afloat in the sky,

must be very expensive,” Yun Che said as he looked south.

“Hehe, naturally.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue nodded and then said with a chuckle, “From north to south, this floating island is forty five kilometers long. From east to west, it is thirty five kilometers long. Although this floating island is the smallest amongst the Four Great Sacred Grounds and is even smaller than Divine Phoenix Sect’s Divine Phoenix City, its magnificence and aura are unparalleled under the heavens. Moreover, the number of profound crystals spent every

year to keep it afloat is astronomical.”

“Big Brother Yun, let’s hurry and go. I really want to see what Supreme Ocean Palace looks like. Even just looking at it from afar has already caused me to feel that it is much more magnificent than what my royal father said about it.” Feng Xue’er very naturally grabbed Yun Che’s arm as her cheeks became flushed pink from the excitement.

“I am also interested now. Let’s

go!” Extending his arms, Yun Che wrapped them around Feng Xue’er’s thin waist as the two simultaneously flew into the sky and directly towards the mystical floating island.

“Hey, hey, wait for me brother-in-law!” Xia Yuanba jumped, suddenly traversing hundreds of meters as he quickly caught up with Yun Che.

“Hoho,” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue warmly laughed as he followed closely behind the three. As he watched their

backs, the smile on his face slowly disappeared and became replaced by an increasingly complicated expression.

This was because the three youths in front of him were impressively the three most talented youths of the young generation within the Profound Sky Continent!

Furthermore, each one had abilities which were truly able to shock the world, surpassing the ancients and amazing the current generations.



Xia Yuanba's body contained the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. These veins that he had been naturally born with had contained a great power which even he himself couldn't control. However, now that he had awoken them, the degree of growth of his profound strength had shocked even the Saint Emperor of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary... his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins were even many times more powerful than any of the previous instances of Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins recorded in the history of the Profound Sky Continent!

If Xia Yuanba could enter the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm before he turned twenty two, he would be making history within the Profound Sky Continent.

Others thought that becoming the disciple of Ancient Blue would be the fortune of a lifetime. However, Spiritual Master Ancient Blue had always deeply felt that having obtained such a talented Xia Yuanba as his disciple was his life's greatest fortune.

However, today, Feng Xue'er had appeared. She had yet to reach the age of twenty, yet she had already reached the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm! Xia Yuanba had actually been thoroughly defeated by her.

At least, it was like that for now.

However, the most shocking figure amongst the young generation was neither of those two, but instead... Yun Che!

Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er both had the terrifying talent and profound energy to break history. As for Yun Che... with profound strength at the Emperor Profound Realm, he was yet able to display power comparable to a Sovereign Profound Realm practitioner. This was something which none of the peak practitioners were able to understand.

If one's talent or profound art was high enough, it was normal for one to crush those of the same level and challenge

those levels above them.

However, throughout the entire history of the Profound Sky Continent, forget about an Emperor Profound being equal to a Sovereign Profound, even a Tyrant Profound being equal to a Sovereign Profound was unheard of.

What Spiritual Master Ancient Blue took to heart the most though was that whether it be Xia Yuanba or Feng Xue'er, these two future ruling figures of the Profound Sky Continent all had

deep relations with and feelings for Yun Che. Needless to say, Ancient Blue knew Xia Yuanba's reasons very clearly. Even if Xia Yuanba were to use his life to save Yun Che, Ancient Blue wouldn't furrow his brow.

As for Feng Xue'er, this young girl who caused his heart and mind to be shocked to the point of turmoil, had an extremely intimate relation with Yun Che. Within her eyes, one could see a feeling of attachment which had already become a kind of habit.

The history in which the Four Great Sacred Lands had ruled over the continent... was it about to finally come to an end?

“Haah...” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue let out a long sigh, then opened his mouth and said, “Little friend Yun, I wonder if your respected master is interested in watching this Devil Sword Conference?”

Towards the Four Great Sacred Grounds, the name of Yun Che’s master, “Old Man Duotian”, was undoubtedly the name which

astonished them the most.

Without an ounce of hesitation, Yun Che directly replied, “Master has long since been a person who doesn’t care about the mortal world. He already almost never sets foot into the mortal world as he doesn’t want to be bound by any responsibilities. Thus, although this junior is his disciple, I don’t know where my master is currently nor where he will go next. Only when this junior cannot help but beg will his master reveal himself.”



Yun Che's response was quite clever and was something that he had thought of long before he had arrived. This was because upon arriving at Supreme Ocean Palace, he knew that there would definitely be people asking this question.

“I see.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue nodded.

“Senior Ancient Blue, when the people of Supreme Ocean Palace want to travel to the mainland, wouldn't they all have to go through this teleportation

profound formation we just went through?” In order to prevent Ancient Blue from asking too much and possibly finding a flaw in his response, Yun Che took the opportunity to ask a useless question he didn’t care about first.

“That’s not the case.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue then replied, “Very few of Supreme Ocean Palace’s people leave the ocean. However, when they do leave, it is through flying. In fact, it’s very possible that this teleportation                      profound formation was just temporarily built for for this Devil Sword

Conference. After all, since the consumption of a spatial profound formation is so great, I'm afraid even the Supreme Ocean Palace is not able to maintain one."

Seemingly seeing through Yun Che's intentions, Spiritual Master Ancient Blue faintly chuckled. Still, he no longer asked Yun Che any questions about his master.

"Earlier, the two ocean palace disciples stated that the person welcoming guests was their

Great Elder. The importance of this Devil Sword Conference for Supreme Ocean Palace must be extremely great if they are actually having their Great Elder personally welcome guests. To be a Great Elder of a sacred ground, his power and status must be only second to the Sovereign of the Seas within Supreme Ocean Palace,” Yun Che said after pondering.

“Supreme Ocean Palace’s Great Elder is called Mo Chenfeng.” Xia Yuanba continued, “However, within Supreme Ocean Palace, he isn’t necessarily second to only the

Sovereign of the Seas as in Supreme Ocean palace, there are also the Seven Venerable Ones above him. They are the true seven strongest people of the Supreme Ocean Palace other than the Sovereign of the Seas.”

“Seven... Venerable Ones?” Yun Che turned around in astonishment.

“Within the Four Great Sacred Grounds, Elders aren’t necessarily the highest level of power. In Supreme Ocean Palace, there are still the Seven

Venerable Ones above the Elders. Meanwhile, there are the Five Divine Envoys in Sun Moon Divine Hall and the Three Sword Attendants in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Our Absolute Monarch Sanctuary is the same. Above the Elders are the Twelve Spiritual Masters,” Xia Yuanba explained with great detail.

# Chapter 768 – Summoned By The Sovereign Of The Seas

---

Supreme Ocean Palace's Seven Venerable Ones, Sun Moon Divine Hall's Five Divine Envoys, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region's Three Sword Attendants, and Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's Twelve Spiritual Masters... these were existences within the Four Great Sacred Grounds who were even higher than elders!

“...That year in Divine Phoenix City, I heard many people call

Senior Ancient Blue ‘Spiritual Master’ so I believed that it was a special title for anyone who came from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. But if it’s like you said, then that means Senior Ancient Blue is one of those Twelve Spiritual Masters?” Yun Che asked. His heart began to beat harder and harder... that year in Divine Phoenix City, he had already guessed that Ancient Blue’s status in Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was not low because of the way Feng Hengkong and the others treated him. Even the proud and arrogant Ye Xinghan and eccentric Ji Qianrou acted respectfully in his presence and didn’t dare act rashly. Moreover,



Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had shown that they held Xia Yuanba in high regard because of the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins in his body. In fact, there were even signs that he could possibly become the next Saint Master as his cultivation had always been guided by Ancient Blue and his strength and status were enough.

But now, he knew that the two words "Spiritual Master" in Ancient Blue's title were actually amazing!

“That’s right, that’s right!” Xia Yuanba quickly nodded, “My master is one of the Twelve Spiritual Masters. He is ranked fifth amongst the twelve.”

“So it was like this.” Yun Che slowly nodded. Not only was Ancient Blue a Spiritual Master of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, he was ranked fifth...

This was to say, Spiritual Master Ancient Blue was ranked sixth within the entire Absolute Monarch Sanctuary! He was even more frightening than Yun

Che had expected.

An odd glow silently appeared in Yun Che's eyes as he looked back at Spiritual Master Ancient Blue in the distance. He whispered, "Yuanba, I have never asked you before, but just what is your master's profound cultivation level?"

"Ninth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm," Xia Yuanba replied without hesitation. Then, he patted his chest as he continued, "In the past, I felt master was extremely powerful,

but if I'm given another ten years, I will definitely surpass him, hehehe."

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue slightly shook his head behind them as he lightly smiled, his face showing a mixed expression of exasperation and pride.

For a master, having a disciple surpass them was a matter of great comfort and even pride. However, after living a thousand years and having reached a profound energy level which was enough to stand at the

pinnacle of the world, it had become increasingly difficult for him to accomplish this matter... However, Xia Yuanba, the freak that he was, had only needed a short few years of time to rise from a weakling in the Elementary Profound Realm to where he was today in the Sovereign Profound Realm. Moreover, even now, he still had a rate of growth which shocked even the Saint Emperor.

For Yuanba to surpass Ancient Blue, it might not even take ten years. At that time, he might not have even reached thirty years old.

To be surpassed by a twenty  
some year old disciple as a  
thousand year old master, how  
could he not feel exasperated?

“Your master is actually so  
powerful. Are the rest of the  
twelve as strong as your  
master?” Yun Che asked.

To ask about the inner  
workings of a force, especially  
anything relating to how power  
was structured at the top of a  
force, was extremely avoided...  
this was also true for Absolute

Monarch Sanctuary and the Four Great Sacred Grounds. However, Xia Yuanba didn't have any qualms at all about Yun Che so he directly answered without thinking, "The Twelve Spiritual Masters are strictly ordered in terms of strength. The most powerful, Spiritual Master Bitter Pain, Spiritual Master Nine Lamentations, and Spiritual Master Detached Heart, are all mighty and powerful level ten Monarchs!"

"Level ten Monarchs?" A thought congealed in Yun Che's mind... a level ten Monarch, the peak of the Sovereign Profound

Realm and the pinnacle of strength which can be reached by a human atop the Profound Sky Continent!

In the current Illusory Demon Realm, the only person to have reached this level other than Little Demon Empress was Duke Ming!

Yet Absolute Monarch Sanctuary actually had three!

No, adding in the Saint Emperor, they had four!!



“Of the remaining nine Spiritual Masters, there are five ninth level Sovereign Profound Realm practitioners and four late stage eighth level Sovereign Profound Realm practitioners. As for the elders, the strongest is also at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm.” Xia Yuanba continued.

“...” Frankly speaking, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s strength had far surpassed Yun Che’s expectations and caused great waves in his heart. The terror of a force was absolutely not

something which normal people could guess at. If not for Xia Yuanba, even Yun Che wouldn't have been able to figure out that Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's strength had reached this point so easily. After thinking a while, Yun Che said, "So you're saying that in order to be higher than an elder, one has to at least have the strength of late stage eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Also, of this kind of peerlessly powerful practitioner, your Absolute Monarch Sanctuary has twelve, Supreme Ocean Palace has seven, Sun Moon Divine Hall has five, and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region has three... Although Absolute Monarch Sanctuary is far far

ahead of the other three sacred grounds in terms of strength, all four grounds are indeed worthy of their title as the Four Great Sacred Grounds.”

“It’s not quite as you think,” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue’s voice emanated over from behind them as he said in a gentle voice, “Spiritual Masters, Venerable Ones, Divine Envoys, and Sword Attendants are respectively the strongest twelve, seven, five, and three people of their sacred ground. However, these four entities are all independent of each other, thus the standard of strength of

each entity is different.”

“Among Supreme Ocean Palace’s Seven Venerable Ones, two of them are at the tenth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and the other five are all at the ninth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Great Elder Mo Chenfeng who was brought up earlier is at the late stage eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and is the strongest practitioner among Supreme Ocean Palace’s forty eight elders.”

“Among Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Divine Envoys, the strongest two are also at the tenth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. The latter three are all level nine Monarchs. The strength of its most powerful great elder is similar to that of Mo Chenfeng. Just according to the number of top level powerhouses, Sun Moon Divine Hall is weaker than Supreme Ocean Palace.”

“As for the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region... although they have the fewest number of high level Sovereigns, as well as Sovereigns in general, among

the Four Great Sacred Grounds, their “Three Sword Attendants” are all at the tenth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. In terms of strength, they are stronger than Supreme Ocean Palace and Sun Moon Divine Hall, and are equal to my Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.”

“...So it’s like this. I thank Senior Ancient Blue for openly enlightening me,” Yun Che said, turning around.

“Haha,” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue slowly shook his

head and then quietly sighed, saying, "It's rumored that your respected master has already obtained world-defying power. I'm afraid that we are nothing but insignificant clouds floating in the sky."

"Where are Senior Ancient Blue's words coming from?" Yun Che casually threw out a random thought as his heart sank a bit.

Within the Four Great Sacred Grounds, there was actually as many as fourteen people who

had reached the peak of the Sovereign Profound Realm, and the tenth level at that! Moreover, it was likely that the leaders of the four sacred grounds had also reached the late stage of the tenth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm! They were definitely all no weaker than Duke Ming... if they weren't already much much stronger in the first place.

As for those at the ninth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, there were more than twenty of them!



Meanwhile, the Twelve Guardian Families in the Illusory Demon Realm, which were comparable to the top forces of the Profound Sky Continent, didn't have single level ten Monarch! They only had three level nine Monarchs! Within the Yun and Mu families, which he was most familiar with... the Mu Family's most powerful practitioner was his uncle, Mu Feiyan, who was a level eight Monarch. As for the Yun Family, which had withered for a century, their strongest practitioner was only at the seventh level of the Sovereign Profound Realm.

Yun Che had long since realized that the Profound Sky Continent's level of profound strength was greater than the Illusory Demon Realm's. This was why the Four Sacred Grounds had been able to pressure the Twelve Guardian Families even within the Illusory Demon Realm and the Twelve Guardian Families didn't dare take a step into the Profound Sky Continent.

These four forces which had legacies of tens of thousands of years and were titled "Sacred Grounds" were truly terrifying existences.

As they came increasingly close to the floating Ocean Palace, Yun Che asked Ancient Blue, “Senior Ancient Blue, I wonder if you have any understandings about the ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’?”

“Moon Slaughter Devil Nest? What kind of place is that?” Xia Yuanba leaned over, his face full of curiosity.

“...” A trace of shock flickered across Spiritual Master Ancient Blue’s face. It was clear that he

was surprised that Yun Che, who had never before come to Supreme Ocean Palace, actually knew this name. He prudently stared at Yun Che for a moment before slowly saying, “You actually know of the ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’. In that case, you should also know why Supreme Ocean Palace perennially resides atop this blue ocean. However, outside of that, even I do not know much about the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. To us mortals, that place is an extremely taboo existence. You absolutely must not develop any curiosity towards it.”

“Why is that?” Yun Che furrowed his brows.

“Because it has existed for tens of thousands of years, but the enigma behind it still has yet to be unlocked.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue’s voice contained traces of seriousness as he continued, “Things which are unknown are often filled with unknown dangers. The longer an enigma remains unsolved, the more likely the dangers within are greater. This name ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’, you should treat it as a false legend. Don’t try to get to the bottom of it... don’t even go close to it so as

to avoid going beyond redemption.”

By the time Spiritual Master Ancient Blue finished speaking, Supreme Ocean Palace was already right in front of their eyes. He suddenly flailed his whisk, and immediately, a gentle wind surged from below, causing the four of them to quickly float forward, “We’ve arrived... let’s go in.”

As their bodies passed through a layer of light blue colored profound light, Yun Che brought

along Feng Xue'er and gently descended atop the floating isle atop the blue ocean.

The very moment they entered Supreme Ocean Palace, the atmosphere surrounding them completely changed. Not the slightest trace of the ocean's scent could be smelled, and the ocean breeze had completely disappeared... It was as if they had suddenly left an ocean world and entered into an independent, completely different world.

Below their feet were great numbers of profound jade, each of which released a faint, cold light. They were all priceless. Looking out into the distance, towers, halls, and courtyards of varying sizes mixed with a widespread amount of flourishing flora. Moreover, an unbelievably dense profound energy, which was filled with several times more vitality than usual, enshrouded the entire ocean palace.

This place was completely unlike an island, and even less like a “palace”. Instead, it was a magnificently luxurious city in



the air!

“Such dense profound energy.” Jasmine’s voice transmitted into Yun Che’s mind, “Almost all of the Profound Sky Continent’s Monarchs have gathered here. It is really interesting.”

Yun Che, “...”

As the group of four expressed their astonishment towards the floating city, another figure appeared in the sky. In the blink of an eye, the figure arrived in

front of them.

The figure was a pale white, short and fat old practitioner with a respectful expression. His speed was shockingly fast that not even Yun Che knew when he appeared in front of them.

The white old practitioner cupped his hands towards Spiritual Master Ancient Blue, a faint smile appearing on his face as he said, "So it was Spiritual Master Ancient Blue. Shu Chenfeng is busy with various tasks, so he is unable to welcome

you.”

“Old Mo, it’s been a long time.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue lightly chuckled and nodded his head.

“This person should be Supreme Ocean Palace’s Great Elder Mo Chenfeng,” Xia Yuanba whispered by Yun Che’s ear.

Mo Chenfeng then turned to looked at Xia Yuanba. His face suddenly showed shock, “Now that I think of it, this fellow

should be the famous one who has shocked the world with his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins, Xia Yuanba, right? To have such a level of cultivation at such a young age, you are truly an unmatched divine figure who causes people to lament. The Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins have been recorded to have appeared several times on the Profound Sky Continent, but none of them have ever been taken as disciples. For Absolute Monarch Sanctuary to have been able to accept you, it is truly enviable."

"Hoho,"      Spiritual      Master

Ancient Blue lightly chuckled, but didn't express an opinion.

Mo Chenfeng's eyes then landed on Feng Xue'er's figure. Right when he was about to open his mouth, his entire body suddenly quivered and his pupils fiercely contracted.

As even Spiritual Master Ancient Blue, with his thousand years of experiences, had been astonished upon seeing Feng Xue'er earlier, how could Mo Chenfeng fare any better?

Just now, Mo Chenfeng had showered Xia Yuanba in praise, calling him an “unmatched divine figure who caused people to lament.” However, the moment his spirit touched Feng Xue’er, he realized that she was even younger than Xia Yuanba, yet her profound strength had actually reached the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm.

She was at the same level of strength as himself, the Great Elder of Supreme Ocean Palace!

“Young lady... could you perhaps be Divine Phoenix Sect’s Princess Snow?” Mo Chenfeng asked, his voice cracking in a very obvious manner. As he questioned Feng Xue’er, his pair of hands subconsciously cupped together... as Supreme Ocean Palace’s Great Elder, he had a large amount of presence even in the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Thus, those who were qualified to be saluted by him within the Profound Sky Continent were quite rare, yet facing Feng Xue’er, he subconsciously entered a respectful state.

This was the respect shown to

powerful practitioners by other profound practitioners. Although the two were both at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, his age was a full fifty times Feng Xue'er's age! Just because of this fact, he simply didn't consider his cultivation to be on the same level as Feng Xue'er's. There was a world of difference between them.

“Junior Feng Xue'er greets Great Elder Mo.” Feng Xue'er politely saluted.



Mo Chenfeng opened his mouth, but was unable to reply for the moment. Then, he suddenly realized that if this abnormally powerful girl was Feng Xue'er, the person beside her should be...

“Then... this young friend, are you Blue Wind Empire's Frozen Cloud Asgard Master Yun Che?” Mo Chenfeng asked Yun Che, turning to face him. When the four of them had first arrived, he had only paid attention to Spiritual Master Ancient Blue's aura. He had never thought that Yun Che, the person he had waited for so long for would

arrive together with Spiritual Master Ancient Blue.

“This junior is indeed Yun Che, I greet Great Elder Mo.” Yun Che slightly nodded his head.

“...” Mo Chenfeng quietly took a big breath, then sighed and said, “Blue Wind Empire’s Frozen Cloud Asgard Master Yun, Divine Phoenix Sect’s Princess Snow, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s Xia Yuanba, you three are the three most stunning figures in the young generation. For you all to

have arrived at the same time, it has really surprised me.”

“Just now, I was quite rude, please enter!”

Under Mo Chenfeng’s personal guidance, the four walked into the ocean palace. Mo Chenfeng’s gaze constantly swept across the three youths as he incessantly sighed in his heart, “Of these three, one belongs to the Blue Wind Empire, one belongs to Divine Phoenix Sect. As for the latter, Xia Yuanba, it’s uncertain if his birthplace is Absolute

Monarch Sanctuary.”

“Could the era of the Four Great Sacred Grounds... actually be about to meet its end?”

As thoughts flashed through his mind, he ended up with the same thought Ancient Blue had when he saw the three together.

Mo Chenfeng took out a light blue jadestone and his lips slightly moved. Clearly, he was sending a message to someone far away.

“Old Mo, the profound energy within the ocean palace is so thick, it’s something I’ve never experienced before. Although there are still several days till the Sword Conference begins, many of the invited have already arrived, right?” asked Spiritual Master Ancient Blue.

Mo Chenfeng slowly nodded his head, “You’re right. It seems many profound practitioners are fascinated by the secrets of the ‘Devil Sword’.”

Yun Che silently sneered... Your Four Great Sacred Grounds are most fascinating! As for the other forces... Heh, who would have the courage to dare to refuse the “invitation” of the Four Sacred Grounds.

Mo Chenfeng turned and said to Feng Xue'er, “Princess Snow, Divine Phoenix Sect sent your respected father over this time, and he has been here for several days already. He is currently residing in the Flame Heart Palace in front of us. I wonder... ha ha, I wonder if Princess Snow wants to also reside in Flame Heart Palace, or if she wants to

reside with little friend Yun?”

“I definitely want to live together with Big Brother Yun.” Feng Xue’er replied without hesitation... moreover, she clearly didn’t realize any of the implications. This was because she wasn’t the slightest bit interested in the Devil Sword Conference. Her reason for coming here with Yun Che this time was to protect him, and naturally to live together with him.

“Then, it shall be as Princess

Snow wishes.” Mo Chenfeng nodded. At this time, the blue jade stone in his hand shimmered, causing him to stop in his steps and turn towards Yun Che, “Little friend Yun, the Sovereign of the Seas told me a few days ago to notify her of your arrival right away. Just now, upon learning of your arrival ocean palace, the sovereign immediately dropped all the matters currently at hand and requested that I bring you over, no matter how.”

“The Sovereign of the Seas is already waiting for us at the Ocean Imperial Palace in front



of us. Before going to your residence, please come meet the Sovereign of the Seas with me.”

“My pleasure.” Yun Che naturally had no reason to decline.

For him to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, he first had to gain the agreement of Supreme Ocean Palace’s Sovereign of the Seas.

# Chapter 769 – Ocean Palace’s Sacred Master

---

“Lan Zi, Lan Shen, bring these two esteemed guests from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary to Divine Ocean Palace. Also, make sure you personally accommodate them, they must not be neglected.”

Heeding Mo Chenfeng’s summons, two female ocean palace disciples approached and deeply bowed, “As you wish, Great Elder... two esteemed guests, this way please.”

“Why does the Sovereign of the Seas want to meet my brother-in-law?” Amidst Xia Yuanba’s curiosity, there was also a trace of apprehension... after all the Sovereign of the Seas was the leader of one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds of Profound Sky Continent. She was someone who was on the same level as the Saint Emperor!

“Since the Sovereign of the Seas personally summoned him, you shouldn’t ask too much.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue grabbed Xia Yuanba’s shoulders,

continuing, “Relax, nothing bad will happen to him. It’s even less likely he will encounter any danger.” He then turned his eyes away to gaze profoundly at Yun Che, “To get the Sovereign of the Seas to want to meet him so badly... and he’s a junior at that. This must be a first in the history of the Ocean Palace.”

“Brother-in-law, then... then I will leave first to go to the Saint Emperor’s side. You must make sure to stay safe. If anything happens, you must notify me as soon as possible.”

As he said those words, Xia Yuanba was half dragged away by Spiritual Master Ancient Blue.

“Hoho, I heard long ago that Asgard Master Yun’s relationship with Xia Yuanba was very good, even better than blood relatives though you are not. It seems it is indeed true.” Mo Chenfeng said with a light chuckle. However, his mind had been suddenly thrown into disarray... in the future, these two would both become figures who would shake the world, yet their relationship was like that of true blood brothers. For the

sacred grounds, which had ruled the world for ten thousand years, this was definitely not a good thing.

“Princess Snow, Ocean Imperial Palace is the most sacred ground of my ocean palace. Without being invited by the Sovereign of the Seas, no one can enter. Just now, the Sovereign of the Seas only allowed this old one to bring Asgard Master Yun in. Currently, this old one is arranging for several disciples to bring Princess Snow to her residence, is that alright? Princess Snow, if you want, you may go meet your family in

Flame Heart Palace first.”

Mo Chenfeng’s mind was set, but facing Feng Xue’er, he couldn’t help but subconsciously show a respectful attitude. Feng Xue’er’s profound strength was just too shocking.

“I don’t want to.” Feng Xue’er shook her head as both hands grabbed onto Yun Che’s arm with no intention of letting go, “If I cannot go in, then I will just wait outside for Big Brother Yun.”

“That is also fine,” Mo Chenfeng nodded, but his heart had tightened fiercely just now.

This Yun Che, just what kind of monster was he... his own talent was already terrifying, and he had a heaven defying master behind him as well. Moreover, of the two most talented and shocking figures among the young generation, one held him as a relative while the other had deep feelings for him...

Currently, the three of them were all around twenty years of



age, which made it all the more shocking. If they were given another hundred years... no, with their rate of growth, they wouldn't even need a hundred years. By that time, even the Four Great Sacred Grounds would all need to bow before them.

Mo Chenfeng secretly took a deep breath, then out walked in front, "Please follow me."

As they walked further into the depths of Supreme Ocean Palace, the profound energy became

increasingly thicker. Currently almost all of the high level experts of Profound Sky Continent had congregated within Supreme Ocean Palace, yet the entire ocean palace was extremely quiet. There was no clamor. In fact, during their whole journey, they hadn't met any practitioners outside of the stationed ocean palace disciples.

This wasn't a surprise at all to Yun Che. In the past, the Blue Wind Ranking Tournament and Seven Nation Ranking Tournament had all been extremely boisterous due to the crowding together of so many

practitioners but there was one difference between those tournaments and this conference... this one was in Supreme Ocean Palace! It was held in one of the places considered sacred in the hearts of profound practitioners! Other than the other three sacred grounds, the forces which had come after receiving invitations were too overwhelmed with with honor and fear to act otherwise. To set foot in a legendary sacred ground, each step was startling and uneasy. Even if one had great courage, they would still only quietly live in the residence arranged for them. One would absolutely never dare to raucously run

around.

The profound practitioners who were able to be invited were all renowned powerful experts and hegemons. However, upon arriving at Supreme Ocean Palace, they were all like civilians who had entered a royal palace. The atmosphere made them too timid to even breathe heavily.

As they walked, Mo Chenfeng no longer spoke with Yun Che. Instead, his footsteps became faster and faster. However, Yun

Che and Feng Xue'er effortlessly kept up. At this time, a vague figure appeared in Yun Che's vision.

This person was roughly three feet tall and was completely clad in pitch-black clothes. Furthermore, they also wore a dilapidated cloak which was too large for them, the upper part covering their entire face while the lower part dragged along the ground beside their feet.

This was the very first profound practitioner Yun Che

had seen after entering Supreme Ocean Palace who wasn't associated with the ocean palace. He was certain because the aura emanating off this person's body was completely different from the ones emanating off the bodies of the ocean palace disciples he had met earlier. Moreover, the person's profound energy aura was only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm.

This person walked across the faintly flashing blue ground at a pace that wasn't fast or slow, making it hard to immediately discern if it was truly a person

walking regardless of the angle. Within the quiet, open ocean palace that contained profound energy so thick it had become heavy, this figure's existence was particularly eye-catching... even though the figure was so far away, one could still feel an extremely strange aura emanating off of them.

Seeing this person, Yun Che's footsteps momentarily paused as his brows furrowed.

Such a heavy poisonous aura! Under the person's black

clothes, there had to be at least two hundred or more powerful toxins hidden!

Moreover, that aura... could it be the Poison Emperor?!

Having seen Yun Che's reaction, Mo Chenfeng turned his head and asked, "Has Asgard Master Yun perhaps met that person before?"

"I have not." Yun Che shook his head, retracting his gaze from atop the figure of the short



person covered in black clothes, “I was only curious. I heard that this Devil Sword Conference only invited Overlord and Sovereign level practitioners, yet that person’s profound strength is only at the third level of the Emperor Profound Realm and they were still invited. Furthermore, based on their appearance and indiscreet behavior in Supreme Ocean Palace... I believe that they should be quite an unusual figure.”

“That person is indeed unusual.” Mo Chenfeng whispered, “He comes from

Black Fiend Nation. Although his profound strength is only at the Emperor Profound Realm, he is as strong as an Overlord if not as strong as a Sovereign. Facing him, many would quickly retreat to avoid conflict as this person is quite infamous in Black Fiend Nation, where he is fearfully compared to a viper. Perhaps Asgard Master Yun too will have heard of his name.”

“Toxin Immortal!”

“Oh...” Yun Che let out a exclamation. This was the first

time he had heard this name.

“I’ve heard this name before from my royal father.” Feng Xue’er opened her mouth and said, “In the past, royal father once told me about the most terrifying figures within the Profound Sky Continent, he mentioned the ‘Toxin Immortal’ and said that this person was the most powerful poison user within the Profound Sky Continent... especially his personally crafted poisons. Upon being poisoned, there is no one who can save you from them.”

“Right.” Mo Chenfeng nodded. Although he was the Great Elder of Supreme Ocean Palace, even he still knew of this person, showing just how terrifying this person was, “He has countless enemies including several Overlords and Sovereigns yet he has still survived to this day with his level of profound strength. Clearly the strength of his poisons is no small matter. However, this fellow wasn’t invited by my ocean palace.”

“Oh?” Yun Che perplexedly asked.

“He was invited by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. They intend to borrow his ability for some matter or another. Perhaps we will find out when the Devil Sword Conference begins.”

“We have reached Ocean Imperial Palace.” Mo Chenfeng stopped and turned around, “Princess Snow, I will trouble you to wait here. Asgard Master Yun, please follow me.”

“Big Brother Yun, I will wait for you here... you must be careful,”

Feng Xue'er gently said,  
stopping.

“Relax, I'll be back before you  
know it.”

Ocean Imperial Palace was  
situated in the exact center of  
Supreme Ocean Palace. In a  
sense, it was the core of the  
entire ocean palace and was a  
symbol of the palace's ten  
thousand years of prestige and  
glory.

The appearance of the Ocean

Imperial Palace was not much different from all of the other palace halls Yun Che had passed during his walk here. However, the moment he entered the vicinity of Ocean Imperial Palace, his mind and senses simultaneously became unsettled... in that instant, he felt as if he had left the mortal world and stepped into a heavenly palace. A deep feeling of reverence spontaneously emerged within the depths of his heart, causing him to suddenly feel the desire to kneel in worship. His originally extremely perceptive spiritual sense became hazy as even his vision began to blur.

Yun Che's dazed state was only for a very brief moment while he was in shock. Afterwards, he quickly concentrated his mind. Because of his body's Dragon God Soul, his soul power had reached an extremely high level. Thus, his five senses were quickly restored to their normal states.

“Below this Ocean Imperial Palace, there is indeed a strange profound formation. If one's profound strength or soul power isn't enough, I'm afraid one would fall to their knees upon



entering,” Jasmine suddenly said in a cold tone.

Arriving at the door to the Ocean Imperial Palace, Mo Chenfeng turned around and looked at Yun Che, only to discover that Yun Che's eyes were both clear. Moreover, his demeanor was still composed, and his footsteps were still smooth. Not the slightest trace of fear or anxiety was apparent on his face. He was instead leisurely appreciating the surrounding scenery.

An expression of deep shock flashed through Mo Chenfeng's pupils. The entire Ocean Imperial Palace was enveloped within a giant profound formation. Furthermore, this giant profound formation, called the "Oceanus Shroud Formation," was the most powerful profound formation within Supreme Ocean Palace. Upon entering the formation, one would become subject to extreme pressure as if one was facing a true god. Those under the level of Sovereign would feel their bodies become weak upon entering the formation and begin to shiver. Those under the level of Overlord would immediately collapse to the

ground and kneel, becoming completely incapable of walking.

Even Mo Chenfeng himself, eighth level Sovereign that he was, would feel his heart continuously palpitate in fear every time he entered Ocean Imperial Palace.

He had originally believed that Yun Che, even with his own abnormal talent, would at least experience unsteady steps, a pale face, and cold sweats upon entering the “Oceanus Shroud Formation” for the first time

without preparation... he had never thought that Yun Che's face would be so leisurely and composed, as if he weren't affected at all by the "Oceanus Shroud Formation."

Just... just how could this be? Could Yun Che's mental strength actually be higher than his own?

Mo Chenfeng thought in shock.

The great doors were pushed open, and the two entered with Mo Chenfeng lowering his head

as he entered. After taking three steps, Mo Chenfeng had already stooped down in a bow, "Reporting to the Sovereign of the Seas, Blue Wind Empire's Asgard Master Yun Che has been brought over."

After Mo Chenfeng entered the Ocean Imperial Palace, he had constantly kept his head down. Yun Che then immediately moved towards the figure in the middle of the giant palace.

The Sovereign of the Seas stood there with their back facing

them. Their figure was exquisitely slender, and they wore a long palace robe which was sparkling with a blue glow. The highest collar of their robe directly reached their hair which was in the shape of a top knot.

This back figure caused Yun Che to momentarily stop in astonishment.

A... female?

The Sovereign of the Seas was

a... woman?

“You may withdraw.”

The Sovereign of the Seas spoke. Their voice was like that of a middle aged woman's, very gentle, but each word was like a heaven shaking bell, majestic and full of power.

“Yes.” Mo Chenfeng withdrew and closed the great doors of the Ocean Imperial Palace.

“Junior Yun Che greets Senior Sovereign.” Yun Che took a step forward and respectfully saluted as he acted in a dignified manner. After all, the person in front of him was the leader of one sacred grounds which had lorded over the Profound Sky Continent for ten thousand years! She was one of the peerlessly strong practitioners who stood at the peak of the Profound Sky Continent, and was the first leader of a sacred ground that Yun Che had met!

Only, Yun Che had never imagined that the Sovereign of the Seas, one of the four sacred



masters, would actually be a female!

The Sovereign of the Seas slowly turned around, exposing her true appearance to Yun Che. She had the appearance of a middle aged woman, but without the slightest trace of femininity. Instead, each contour contained an extremely solemn dignity and sharpness.

Her eyes were extremely clear, and her pupils were as profound as the ocean. Within her eyes, there was a trace of emotion

trickling around. The awkward oppressive silence lasted for a full ten breaths before she finally spoke. She slowly nodded, “Seeing is indeed better than hearing from others. Even while standing in front of this sovereign within the ‘Oceanus Shroud Formation,’ your eyes are still as clear as a mirror, your heart still as sturdy as a rock. This sovereign had always believed that the rumors surrounding you were over exaggerated, but meeting you now, you are even better than the rumors! No wonder ‘that person’ has such a high opinion of you.”

Yun Che didn't bother asking who the 'person' she spoke about was, and instead faintly smiled as he replied, "This junior doesn't dare receive the Sovereign of the Seas' praise. This junior only came to Supreme Ocean Palace to participate in the Devil Sword Conference and enter Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. I wish for Senior Sovereign's consent."

"Asgard Master Yun is truly straightforward." The Sovereign of the Seas' eyes furrowed as she slowly walked forward. Every step closer she got, the stronger the pressure enveloping Yun

Che's body became. "This sovereign had wished to converse with you for quite a while, but it seems like Asgard Master Yun has no interest in this."

"To be able to meet Senior Sovereign is already this junior's greatest fortune. Senior is the leader of Supreme Ocean Palace, and is a powerful overlord under the heavens. Each breath of your time is as valuable as ten thousand jin of gold. How could this junior dare delay you?" Yun Che replied in a manner which was neither humble nor arrogant.

“Is that so?” The Sovereign of the Seas reached a point three steps in front of Yun Che and stopped. She was impressively half a head taller than Yun Che. “The reason for why you want to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is already known by this sovereign. However, this sovereign is very curious about why you are willing to pay such a cost to pick a Netherworld Udumbara Flower. From what this sovereign knows, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower is an extremely evil and vile thing. Even if a Sovereign nears it, just a simple mental attack will result in death. Outside of

using it for murder in a traceless manner, I've never heard of any other uses for it."

Without the slightest bit of hesitation, Yun Che sincerely said, "The Netherworld Udumbara Flower is needed by my master. Truthfully, this matter should not have been told to others, but since it's requested by Senior Sovereign, this junior will naturally tell."

The Netherworld Udumbara Flower was something Jasmine needed, and Jasmine was indeed

his master. Thus his words were justified and true. There was no way for the Sovereign of the Seas to find any trace of lies.

“Your master?” The Sovereign of the Seas’ eyes narrowed, “This sovereign heard that your respected master has heaven defying abilities, an ability to turn a Sovereign to ashes just by flicking his fingers. Since it’s something your master needs, why doesn’t he come pick it himself? I trust with your respected master’s ability, there is no where in this world he cannot go.”

“It’s because the task of picking this Netherworld Udumbara Flower was given to this junior by my master as a test.” Yun Che chuckled and said, “Since master has ordered it, this junior must try to complete it at all costs. These last few years, this junior has constantly been inquiring about this matter concerning the Netherworld Udumbara Flower and has finally been fortunate enough to learn that they have appeared before within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Thus, this junior has to go in and search no matter what... this junior beseeches senior to agree.”



“So it’s like this.” The Sovereign of the Seas slowly nodded. However, the fluctuations in her eyes were still there, as if she still wasn’t sure whether to believe him or not. “While we are on this topic, where is your respected master currently? This sovereign wonders if she could have the opportunity to meet him?”

“Master has long since been a person who doesn’t care about the mortal world. He already almost never sets foot into the mortal world as he doesn’t want

to be bound by any responsibilities. Thus, although this junior is his disciple, I don't know where my master is currently nor where he will go next. Only when this junior cannot help but beg will his master reveal himself." Yun Che repeated again the same words he had previously said to Spiritual Master Ancient Blue.

His fictional master "Old Man Duotian" had been completely accepted by the Four Great Sacred Grounds, acting as a great deterrent against them for him. Since this "master" was of great use, he would naturally do

his best to maintain it.

“That is indeed unfortunate,” the Sovereign of the Seas casually replied. Suddenly she changed the topic, “Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is the most taboo place of my Supreme Ocean Palace. We don’t allow any outsiders to enter. However, Moon Slaughter Devil Nest hasn’t been opened for the last thousand and three hundred years, and it is about time for this sovereign to arrange for people to enter and check for any abnormal changes. Moreover, considering how my ocean palace has already

received ten of your ‘Six Flavor Emperor Pellets’, wouldn’t it make my ocean palace’s words worthless if I rejected you?”

Yun Che’s eyes stared blankly... what? Six Flavor Emperor Pellet? What the hell was that?!

Could it refer to... the Overlord Pellet?

Holy shit! Just what kind of crappy name did Zi Ji come up with?!

Moreover... from the Sovereign of the Seas' words just now, she had just taken initiative to completely expose the ocean palace's relationship with Black Moon Merchant Guild!

“Thank you for your consent!” Yun Che joyously said.

“Don't get happy too early,” the Sovereign of the Seas coldly said, “Moon Slaughter Devil Nest's seal can only be opened once every five hundred years. Moreover, each time it is open, it

is only for the extremely short period of a hundred breaths! After a hundred breaths, the passage will forcefully close and become sealed for another five hundred years. Even my Supreme Ocean Palace has no way of forcing it to open before then. This is to prevent any yin energy from leaking out into the Profound Sky Continent. As for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, it only blooms once every twenty four years and wilts three days after blooming. For you to find a blooming Netherworld Udumbara Flower in the time of a hundred breaths is pretty much impossible. That's not to mention the fact that we are unsure whether or

not there are still Netherworld Udumbara Flowers existing in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.”

“Thus, just forget about entering the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Even if you enter, it will just be a wasted trip.”

“This junior already knows this. However, junior still hopes that senior will allow him to try,” Yun Che said without hesitation.

“Since you are so persistent...

this sovereign will allow you to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. When do you want to enter?” the Sovereign of the Seas asked.

“The earlier the better!” Yun Che said after thinking for a while, “If possible, I would like to enter today.”

“Alright!” Sovereign of the Seas slowly nodded her head, “Since it’s like this, this sovereign will help you! I will arrange for someone to bring you to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest right



now!”

# Chapter 770 – A Bad Bargain

---

“Right now?” Yun Che asked in daze. He had never thought that the Sovereign of the Seas would be a woman, and he had not expected that she would be so honest and frank regarding the huge matter of Supreme Ocean Palace’s forbidden grounds.

“The Devil Sword Conference will commence in three days. In order to prepare the profound formation that will be used during this conference, this sovereign will be even busier

than usual for the next few days, and I won't have time to worry about anything else. So if we can resolve this matter at an earlier date, this sovereign will be able to avoid a potential headache. What do you think about this arrangement?" The Sovereign of the Seas said, her face a rigid mask.

Yun Che thought about it briefly before giving an assertive nod of his head, "Great! Then let's begin now!"

"Very good!" The Sovereign of

the Seas said, after which she glanced to the side before continuing, "Zi Ji, I will task with you personally escorting Yun Che to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! You can embark immediately!"

"Hohoho." A mild laugh rang out as a door on the left side of the Ocean Imperial Palace gently opened and a elegant, middle-aged man who was wearing a purple robe emerged from within. The man's face bore a faint smile as he spoke, "Yun Che, it has only been a few short months since we last met, yet your profound strength has

grown by leaps and bounds once again. This rate of growth is truly breathtaking.”

“As expected, Senior Zi is a member of Supreme Ocean Palace.” Yun Che replied, a faint smile plastered on his face, he was not the least bit surprised at Zi Ji’s sudden appearance.

Zi Ji gently nodded his head, “Given your intelligence and powers of observation, it was expected that you would have long ago come to this conclusion. It is fortunate that

the Sovereign of the Seas was agreeable when it came to the matter of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, because I, Zi Ji, also owe you a personal favor over the matter of the ten medicine pellets. With this, we can consider our debt settled. Also, the request that you made the last time we met has already been completed, and I trust that you will not be disappointed with the results.”

After Zi Ji had finished speaking, he gave a flourish of his hand. Profound light flashed as two ebony wooden boxes appeared in his hands. Even

though he did not know what was within the wooden boxes, but the thick and heavy aura that it released was evidence enough that these two boxes were definitely extraordinary items.

“Could this be two profound cores?” Yun Che immediately asked as his gaze grew more intense, “But I am unclear as to whether it is the profound core of a Tyrant Profound beast or a Sovereign Profound beast.”

“You will know once you’ve

taken a look.” Zi Ji said with a placid smile.

Yun Che strode forward and took both the wooden boxes from Zi Ji’s hands. Instead of opening the boxes, he sent two streams of profound energy into them. Immediately, his profound energy came into contact with two incomparably strong profound energy auras that were at the level of the Sovereign Profound Realm.

Much to his astonishment, the two wooden boxes contained the



profound cores of two Sovereign  
Profound beasts.

This is great... Yun Che thought before he kept both of the wooden boxes, “Senior Zi is indeed a man of remarkable abilities. Just as we had agreed upon that day, you have delivered two precious cores to me.”

Yun Che’s flicked a finger towards Zi Ji as he tossed two Overlord Pellets to him. Zi Ji extended a hand to catch them and he handled the two pellets

with great care as he withdrew them. His face glowed with satisfaction as he replied, "Sovereign Profound beasts are extremely hard to find, and they are even harder to hunt. In order to obtain the profound cores of these two profound beasts, my Ocean Palace had to exert themselves greatly. But since the payoff was two of these matchless and wondrous pellets, it was more than worth it."

The Sovereign of the Seas shot Zi Ji a glance before speaking, "Yun Che, I heard the rumors about your master 'Old Man Duotian' from Sun Moon Divine

Hall. Even though the actions of Sun Moon Divine Hall clearly demonstrated their great fear of your teacher, this sovereign still remained mostly skeptical about the entire affair. But now that I have seen this peerless, precious medicine that your master can produce easily with a flick of finger, this sovereign cannot help but bow to the truth that was demonstrated by such skill. Even if we poured all of our resources and effort into such an endeavor, my Ocean Palace would not be able to refine this medicine.”

“You do not need to worry. Zi Ji

has only advised me on the truth behind this precious medicine. In this world, only the three of us know about it, there definitely won't be a fourth person." The Sovereign of the Seas said, her face expressionless and her eyes cold and tranquil as a lake.

"This junior naturally will not dare to doubt the words of the Sovereign of the Seas." Yun Che replied.

"Zi Ji has also mentioned this to me. Several months ago, you

requested that the Black Moon Merchant Guild help you auction off twenty of these precious pellets, and after that, you swore that you would not sell any more of these pellets to the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Is that truly the case?”

“Of course it is.” Yun Che replied as he nodded his head unhesitantly, “No matter how precious something is, if it is easily available, it won’t be worth much. If not for the fact that this junior required a large amount of Purple Veined Divine Crystal within a short amount of time, I would definitely not

choose to sell this medicine at all.”

“That would be most ideal.” The Sovereign of the Seas said as she nodded her head solemnly. Once the twenty Overlord Pellets that came from Yun Che were revealed to the whole world, it would definitely cause a great stir. The other three Sacred Grounds would spare no expense in obtaining as many of them as they possibly could. But in the end, the most likely outcome was that all four Sacred Grounds would split the twenty pellets evenly. Anyone who was not a Sacred Ground could forget

about obtaining even one pellet.

So, in the end, Supreme Ocean Palace would appear to have five of the pellets, but the fact of the matter was that they would have seventeen of them! And the price they had to pay merely amounted to a measly ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal and granting Yun Che permission to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest once. These extra twelve Overlord Pellets could not be used publicly in the short term, but once a generation had passed, the peak of the Supreme Ocean Palace's power would definitely far

exceed its current lofty heights, and they might even be able to surpass Absolute Monarch Sanctuary!

“This Devil Sword Conference will cause all the heroes of the realm to gather together, so it will be an excellent time to hold an auction. After the Devil Sword Conference ends, this sovereign will naturally get Zi Ji to make the necessary arrangements.” The Sovereign of the Seas raised a long sleeve as she flipped her hand, and a piece of precious jade that emitted an ethereal blue light floated on top of her palm. She



gently pushed the precious jade towards Zi Ji, "This is our Supreme Ocean Palace's Ocean Emperor Seal, the emblem of the Sovereign of the Seas. It is also the only object that can release the restriction placed on the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Zi Ji, take it and bring Yun Che to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest right away. And once the matter has been resolved, come back as fast as you can!"

Zi Ji did not say a word. He merely gave a faint nod of his head as he gripped the Ocean Emperor Seal tightly in his hand.

Yun Che's expression had not changed this entire time, but he had been secretly observing the expressions and body language of both the Sovereign of the Seas and Zi Ji.... As the ruler of the Ocean Palace, even the extremely exalted great elder Mo Chenfeng still held her in great reverence. But when Zi Ji interacted with the Sovereign of the Seas, his attitude was nearly the same as it had been when he was talking terms with Yun Che, there was hardly any fear or reverence when he spoke to her. When the Sovereign of the Seas had given Zi Ji an order, her tone was far less intimidating

and imposing than when she was ordering Mo Chenfeng around... Furthermore, it seemed that this softened attitude was something that she was completely unaware of.

The relationship between Zi Ji and the Sovereign of the Seas... definitely seemed to be rather special.

A thought flashed through Yun Che's mind, causing his eyebrows to twitch. He swiftly seized the opportunity to speak, "Sovereign of the Seas, Senior

Zi, regarding the auctioning of these precious pellets, this junior has thought of a new trade and perhaps, it might be of great interest to the both of you.”

“Oh?” The Sovereign of the Seas said, her eyes slanting. But Zi Ji’s expression lit up with expectation and he replied merrily, “What kind of trade do you have in mind?”

Yun Che proceeded to explain in an unhurried manner, “The last time we spoke of this at the

Black Moon Merchant Guild, Senior Zi said that one of these precious pellets could be sold for at least one kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal. After that, Senior Zi did not even hesitate to produce ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal and even tell me about the secret of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, all so he could purchase ten pellets from me immediately. So it is very clear that Senior Zi regards the price of one kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal as a very conservative estimate, and the actual price of one pellet when the time comes for it be auctioned will definitely be far higher than this.”

“Hohoho.” Zi Ji gave a tepid laugh and allowed Yun Che to continue. Even though he held an extremely exalted position within one of the Sacred Grounds of the profound world, when he dealt with profound practitioners, he would always rather identify himself as a merchant. And a merchant would definitely never easily reveal his “true valuation” of an item. Once he had found out about the effects of the Overlord Pellet, he was entirely sure that the price of one pellet would definitely not only be one kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal... especially if

they were talking about the Sacred Grounds, it was definitely not going to be as low as that.

The Sacred Grounds would never have enough of resources that could directly increase their power, so a medicinal pellet like the Overlord Pellet that could forcibly break through high-level bottlenecks was an item that the Sacred Grounds yearned for even in their dreams.

Yun Che reached into the Sky Poison Pearl and took out twenty Overlord Pellets. The rich, thick

and intense aura of medicine instantly pervaded the entire Ocean Imperial Palace, causing the atmosphere within the Ocean Imperial Palace to change precipitously, despite being enveloped by an extremely strong profound formation.

The gazes of Zi Ji and the Sovereign of the Seas fell on the twenty Overlord Pellets simultaneously... and even though she was the Sovereign of the Seas, she could not help but be shaken when confronted with a medicinal aura that she acknowledged as being able to shake the heavens and the earth.



“Originally, my desire was to hand over twenty of these precious pellets to Senior Zi so he could auction them off. But now, I have changed my mind.”

“Oh? Could it be that you decided not to sell them?” Zi Ji asked.

“No! I have only decided to change the way they are going to be sold.” Yun Che made a gesture with his arm, but he did not withdraw these twenty Overlord Pellets. Instead he continued

speaking with an extremely sincere expression, “I decided that I would rather sell these twenty Overlord Pellets for twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals directly to the Supreme Ocean Palace before I venture into the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. After that, whatever you get from auctioning off these twenty precious pellets will all belong to you, it will have nothing to do with me!”

“...” The Sovereign of the Seas’ and Zi Ji’s eyebrows very clearly twitched at those words.

“Why have you come to this decision?” Zi Ji asked in a composed manner, “If you auctioned these pellets to the Four Sacred Grounds, their price will definitely not only be twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal. I can frankly and honestly tell you that the price of one kilogram for one pellet is indeed the most conservative estimate. And for medicine that would allow a person to break through the bottleneck of the Tyrant Profound Realm, even if it was one and a half kilograms for one pellet, the Four Sacred Grounds would still fight tooth and nail

with each other to obtain these pellets.”

“I know.” Yun Che said with a bland smile, “If not, given Senior Zi’s mental state which is akin to a thousand year old dead tree, he would not have been so anxious to buy ten of these pellets.”

Zi Ji, “...”

“I am not a greedy person.” Yun Che continued, “And the price of one kilogram of Purple Veined

Divine Crystal for one pellet had already exceeded my initial expectations. Even though the price I could fetch for twenty of these precious pellets through an auction is far higher than twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, this amount already satisfies my requirements, and I have no real need for any more than that. For me, if I can obtain this amount early on, it would give me greater peace of mind.”

Zi Ji fell silent for a brief period of time before replying, “In another three days, the Devil Sword Conference will

commence. Once the Devil Sword Conference ends, I will personally arrange for an auction to be held before all the heroes of the realm depart. Added altogether, this should take place in a mere four to five days. At that time, the price you can get from the auction will at least surpass twenty five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal! But for the sake of getting these Divine Crystals a few days earlier, you are willing to forego at least five to ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals!?”

“Yes!” Yun Che said as he

nodded his head, “Of course, this is just my own personal desire. If the Sovereign of the Seas and Senior Zi are not amenable to this suggestion, then I won’t try to force the issue.”

Zi Ji and the Sovereign of the Seas exchanged a glance before he replied with a wide smile, “How could our Ocean Palace miss out on this great opportunity? If you are truly willing to do as you said... Sovereign of the Seas, we will need to use a part of those Divine Crystals.”

“Indeed, we must.” The Sovereign of the Seas said with a faint nod as she gazed into Yun Che’s eyes before replying, “Purple Veined Divine Crystals are the most valuable and rare resources in the entire Profound Sky Continent! And it is extremely hard for anyone to be able to use twenty kilograms of it in a single transaction.”

“Oh?” Yun Che said as he raised his eyebrows, “The Four Great Sacred Grounds definitely have resources that are far more vast than the common man can



imagine. Moreover, the Supreme Ocean Palace also has the support of the Black Moon Merchant Guild. While twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal is an astronomical sum to the other powers, for your Supreme Ocean Palace, it shouldn't be too big of a request, correct?"

"It seems that you do not have a clear understanding of just how precious and rare Purple Veined Divine Crystals are." The Sovereign of the Seas said as she shot Yun Che a glance, "When it comes to the abundance of resources, our Supreme Ocean

Palace is the first amongst the Four Great Sacred Grounds. But do you know how many Divine Crystals our Ocean Palace distributes to our most talented disciples every five years?”

Yun Che, “...”

The Sovereign of the Seas slowly extended one finger, “It is fifty grams! Moreover, only the most talented, high-status disciples in our Sacred Ground will receive this amount, and that includes this sovereign as well!”

“That is also to say that even if it was this sovereign’s son, he would only be able to obtain half a kilogram of Purple Veined Divine Crystal after fifty years! As for Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, Sun Moon Divine Hall and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, they will definitely distribute a lesser amount than we do! Even for the other powers within the Profound Sky Continent, obtaining a Divine Crystal that is as small as a grain of sand could be said to be the highlight of a lifetime! Yet you are willing to forego such a huge amount of Divine Crystals just for those

few days of ‘peace of mind’. This ‘magnanimity and open-mindedness’ has truly expanded my horizons!”

Yun Che’s expression did not change. “This junior definitely understands the value of the Purple Veined Divine Crystals. But since your Ocean Palace is unable to retrieve twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal, then you can treat it as if this junior had never mentioned this matter in the first place. Senior Zi, I will have to trouble you to escort this junior to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.”

Yun Che was calm and collected and there was an air about him that showed that he did not really care whether it was a few days early or a few days late or how much more or less Purple Veined Divine Crystals he could obtain from this deal.

“Twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal is indeed an astronomical sum, but that does not mean that our Ocean Palace is unable to foot the bill.”

Zi Ji continued speaking as a

merry smile spread across his face, “The last time we expended ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal in order to buy those ten pellets from you, using up nearly half of the Divine Crystals that our Ocean Palace had allotted for use. That is to say that the amount of Divine Crystals that our Ocean Palace is currently free to use only amounts to about ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal. But other than this amount, we still have a stash of Divine Crystals that we are not allowed to touch.”

“Not allowed to touch? Could it

be that it is being held in reserve in case disaster strikes?” Yun Che asked after he thought about it briefly.

“Hoho, you are indeed intelligent.” Zi Ji said as he nodded his head, “Our Supreme Ocean Palace has stashed away twenty five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal for the longest time. And this stash of Divine Crystals are only to be used to activate a sect-wide protective profound formation when the Ocean Palace encounters a great crisis. So we were given a strict order that has been passed down for

generations, that we were not to use these Divine Crystals unless we encountered such a crisis. The truth of the matter is that these twenty five kilograms of Divine Crystals have been stored in reserve for the past eight thousand years or so, but we have yet to find the occasion to use it.”

Because within the Profound Sky Continent, there was nothing that could threaten the extermination of Supreme Ocean Palace.



# Chapter 771 – Mighty Heavenly Sword Master

---

“Even though using these divine crystals violates our ancestor’s prohibition, a transaction like this with such tremendous earnings yet is so low-risk, I can’t find any reason to refuse. This could be said to be the most profitable transaction I’ve done in my entire life. If I miss out, I wouldn’t deserve to call myself a merchant.”

As his voice fell, a spatial ring that flashed with purple light

appeared in Zi Ji's hand. He put the purple crystal spatial ring before Yun Che's eyes. "In here, are precisely twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals. If you want to back out, there's still time to do so right now."

Yun Che didn't answer. With a push of his hand, twenty Overlord Pellets flew over to Zi Ji. Simultaneously the purple crystal spatial ring in Zi Ji's hand was drawn over into his hands. He used his conscious to look inside and found twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals stored inside with not a gram more or less.

“Making a transaction with Senior Zi is sure delightful.” Yun Che withdrew the purple crystal spatial ring. “I hope Senior Zi will not forget that these twenty precious pellets can only be used for auction and not pocketed privately.”

With these twenty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal now in hand added to the twenty five kilograms inside the Sky Poison Pearl... Jasmine’s required thirty five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals had thus been met!

He had two profound cores already in hand and they were Sovereign Profound Cores, far above Jasmine's needed Emperor Profound Cores.

The only thing missing was now only the Netherworld Udumbara Flower!

“Hoho, that is a matter of course.” Zi Ji's profound energy also swept across every Overlord Pellet, then carefully withdrew them with a face full of smiles... This was indeed the most

profitable transaction he had made in his entire life. Not only was it easy, Yun Che had obtained more than ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals and the entire process only took a short, few days.

The “sum” of the exchange between the two was enormous, yet was easily completed in but a few words and left both sides extremely satisfied.

He was in possession of forty five kilograms of Purple Veined

Divine Crystals, an amount that was astronomical whether it was in the Illusory Demon Realm or the Profound Sky Continent and definitely surpassed any Sacred Ground's reserves! Yun Che knew that him being able to obtain this many Purple Veined Divine Crystals definitely was not based on his own strength, but rather the Sky Poison Pearl's unrivaled heaven defying power.

But that was merely in terms of reserves. The current Yun Che wasn't actually in possession of the highest number within the Profound Sky Continent... the ones with the most Purple

Veined Divine Crystals were actually the Divine Phoenix Sect!

The death of the Phoenix God and having fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal were two secrets the Divine Phoenix Sect had to protect with their lives! Either being leaked out could attract a huge catastrophe. In order to cover up those secrets the Divine Phoenix Sect spared no effort in pursuing their cruel war with the Blue Wind Nation.

“Well done!” The Sovereign of

the Seas was also evidently pleased about this transaction. Her face that was always stiff had even smoothed somewhat. "Asgard Master Yun, you are indeed an extraordinary person of talent. Since this transaction is complete, Zi Ji, you can now take Yun Che to Moon Slaughter Devil Nest."

"However, Asgard Master Yun, this sovereign must still remind you again that Moon Slaughter Devil Nest's seal will only be open for one hundred breaths! After a hundred breaths of time, the seal will automatically close and definitely can't be forced



open again. Thus, after entering Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, you must leave within a hundred breaths regardless of the outcome or else you will die inside, eternally trapped! Furthermore, the yin energy in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is extremely strong. Not only will it substantially suppress profound energy, it will also decrease one's life essence. Forget about you at your current strength, even this sovereign would not last a day before dying as a cripple if trapped inside. Being able to stay in there for a five hundred years before leaving at its next opening is complete nonsense."

“Don’t worry, when we get there, I will go inside the devil nest along with him. No need to wait for a hundred breaths, once fifty breaths have passed, I will forcibly bring him out.” Zi Ji said as he chuckled.

“That’s for the best, you may go!”

.....

Together, Yun Che and Zi Ji left

Ocean Imperial Palace. Feng Xue'er, who was waiting outside quickly walked to Yun Che's side. "Big Brother Yun, are you alright?"

"Of course I'm alright." Yun Che smiled as he held Feng Xue'er's hand then extended the other one, gesturing toward Zi Ji, "This is Supreme Ocean Palace's Senior Zi Ji."

"Divine Phoenix Sect's Feng Xue'er greets Senior Zi."

Zi Ji smiled as he nodded with a peculiar expression in his eyes. "Princess Snow's name has long passed through my ears. To have met you in person is a great fortune."

"Xue'er, I'm going to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest with Senior Zi. Go accompany your royal father first, I will be back before you know it." Yun Che said to Feng Xue'er.

"You're going in now?" Feng Xue'er knew that the main objective for Yun Che's visit to

Supreme Ocean Palace was to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, she just did not expect it to happen so quickly. She automatically replied, "Then I am definitely going to be accompanying Big Brother Yun as well. After all, I already promised all the Junior and Senior Masters that I would definitely be keeping watch over you at all times."

"Alright then." Yun Che had expected such a reply so he did not try to talk her out of it. He gripped Feng Xue'er's tiny hand even tighter than before and said sincerely, "It is very likely

that there will be unforeseen dangers that lurk in that place, so you must definitely listen to my every word while we are inside. You must definitely not endanger your own life trying to protect me.”

“I know! I’ve always been really obedient to Big Brother Yun you know.” Feng Xue’er said with a sweet smile.

The intimacy shared between the two of them caused Zi Ji’s mood to immediately grow complex. He raised his hand and

spoke, "The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is extremely close to our Ocean Palace. If you travel seventy-five kilometers south in a straight line, you will reach your destination. So Yun Che, unless you have any other things to settle, let us make haste."

"Alright! I'll have to trouble Senior Zi to lead the way then!"

Just as the three people took to the sky, they saw a faraway figure rushing towards them at an extremely fast speed, as if that person was really eager to

catch up to them. Yun Che halted in mid-air before letting out a low yell, “Yuanba! What are you doing here?”

Whoosh!

A rush of wild wind blew in Xia Yuanba’s wake as he rushed over. He bent over to catch his breath as he gasped for air. He said, “My teacher has already settled in, so since I have nothing better to do, I went to look for Brother-in-law. Ah? Mister Zi? You... are going somewhere?”



During the last Seven Nation Ranking Tournament, Ancient Blue had brought Xia Yuanba to the Divine Phoenix City, and the first place they had paid a visit to was the Black Moon Merchant Guild. The purpose of that visit was to see Zi Ji. So even though Xia Yuanba had never been to Supreme Ocean Palace before, he still recognized Zi Ji.

“We are going to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Yuanba, do you want to come with us?” Yun Che knew that the reason Xia Yuanba had rushed over in such

a hurry was because he was worried for Yun Che's safety. Now that they were going to enter the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, Xia Yuanba would definitely want to come along, and they could forget about chasing him away.

“Ah? We're going now? Of course, I'm coming along! I'm actually also very curious to see what that place is like.” Xia Yuanba said with much excitement.

“Sigh.” Zi Ji laughed as he

shook his head as he simply let out a sigh, “Let’s be off then. Once we reach that place, remember to always be on your guard.”

Standing guard over the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was the reason behind the existence of Supreme Ocean Palace in the first place, so it was natural that they would not be located too far apart. And to the four of them, seventy-five kilometers could be said to be a short stroll in the park.

Before long, they had reached the southern border of Supreme Ocean Palace.

A human figure appeared in their path.

Even though they were still several kilometers away from that person, Yun Che, Feng Xue'er, Xia Yuanba and Zi Ji all began to slow down simultaneously as the look in their eyes subtly changed.

“That person... has an

incredible aura! Despite the fact that he is still so far away, I'm actually finding it hard to breathe." Xia Yuanba exclaimed as he sucked in some air. He continued in a low voice, "It seems like he is even stronger than my master!"

As they drew closer to that person, his figure grew clearer in their vision. The man was wearing simple green robes, his body was lithe and limber, his long black hair bound into a simple ponytail which reached his waist. He was floating more than thirty meters above the surface of the ocean and despite

the howling of the seabreeze around him, neither his clothes nor his hair moved a centimeter. Even the surface of the ocean beneath his feet was completely calm and still, not a single ripple that could be seen.

It seemed as if the space that existed around him had been completely frozen and sealed.

The man did not move a muscle and his body did not release any profound energy. As Yun Che's party approached him, a soundless pressure descended

upon them and it felt as if a metal plate that was growing thicker and thicker was being pressed against their chests.

“Senior Zi, who is that person?” Yun Che asked in a soft voice. The soundless might and pressure that this man was exuding definitely exceeded the might and pressure that Duke Ming had displayed at the Golden Crow Lightning Flame Valley!

Zi Ji did not reply, striding forward to address the man that

stood in front of them, “Sword Master Xuanyuan, what brings you here? To think that we would find you surveying this part of the ocean by yourself. Could it be that you have attained some form of enlightenment in recent days?”

Sword Master Xuanyuan!

These four words caused the hearts of Yun Che and his two companions to tremble.

“So he is the Sword Master of



Mighty Heavenly Sword  
Region... Xuanyuan Wentian!?”  
Xia Yuanba said in a low  
whisper.

“...” Yun Che’s hand curled  
inwards as it began to tighten  
into a fist. It was only after a  
good amount of time had passed  
that it finally relaxed a little.

Mighty Heavenly Sword  
Region... the ones who had  
caused the crippling of his  
parents and the death of his  
grandfather! It was also Mighty  
Heavenly Sword Region who

killed Xiao Yun's birth father, causing his birth mother to die of sorrow, and thus plunging Xiao Lie into despair and agony for more than twenty years....

The tragedies that stuck both his and Xiao Yun's families all those years ago could be said to have been orchestrated by Duke Ming, but if Duke Ming had schemed up the whole thing, then Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had been the ones who had wielded the executioner's blade!!

The green-robed man slowly turned around. His face was thin and sunken, his features were completely ordinary. His gaze raked across all four of them before he gave a weak smile and spoke, "Ah, so it was Mister Zi."

After he had muttered those words, his gaze directly fell on Yun Che.

"If my guess isn't wrong, the person to the right of Mister Zi should be the Yun Che who has sent shockwaves through the Profound Sky Continent in

recent months.”

Yun Che, “...”

“Hoho, it is so. But who would have thought a supreme existence like Sword Master Xuanyuan would take such great notice of a junior.” Zi Ji replied in an even tone.

“That is only natural.” A bland smile that was filled with deep meaning spread across Xuanyuan Wentian’s placid face, but his eyes remained fixed on

Yun Che, “As the most outstanding youngster of his generation, I would hope that you, Asgard Master Yun, will make it a point to come for the Devil Sword Conference that is being held in three days. The Devil Sword Conference would lose much of its luster if you choose not to grace us with your presence.”

Yun Che, “...?”

“It looks like Mister Zi and Asgard Master Yun still have some important things to attend

to, so I won't inconvenience you any further. Please."

A mysterious smile was draped across Xuanyuan Wentian's face as he slowly ascended into the sky. After that, his body blurred as he flew towards Supreme Ocean Palace. He had not asked them where they were heading to... as if that held no interest whatsoever.

"That was the Sword Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region—Xuanyuan Wentian. I never thought we would meet him in

such a place.”

Zi Ji said this rather casually, but once he had finished speaking, he took to the air once more as he continued to travel south.

Yun Che's brows sank and his spirit suddenly felt a lot heavier. After a period of silence, he spoke out in the recesses of his mind, “Jasmine, during the period that we are staying in Supreme Ocean Palace, it is highly likely that I will have need of your strength... because

I can't shake the feeling that something just isn't right."

"Hmph!" Jasmine gave a bland and cold snort, "If I do not want you to die, ten thousand Xuanyuan Wentians would not be enough to kill you. But I am rather curious about one thing, why did you make such a bad bargain with Supreme Ocean Palace?"

"Because I have been having this inexplicable feeling of uneasiness ever since I arrived at Supreme Ocean Palace." Yun



Che said as his voice grew solemn, “I am afraid that some variables will appear during the Devil Sword Conference, so it would be best if I settled all my business first. Moreover, the gaze of that Xuanyuan Wentian... makes me feel as if I am completely naked before him.”

“I just hope that it’s just my overactive imagination... but no matter what, I definitely need to proceed with extreme caution now.”

.....

“Father, the Toxin Immortal has arrived.”

The one who spoke was blue-robed young man with a thin and sunken face. His features and his figure resembled Xuanyuan Wentian very much.

The man who stood in front of him was the Xuanyuan Wentian who had just returned to Supreme Ocean Palace.

“Very good.” Xuanyuan Wentian said with a curt nod of his head, “I hope that his venomous insect poison works just like it does in the legends. If all he has is an empty reputation and he is of no use to us whatsoever, then there is no need for him to remain on this earth.”

“Is Father going to see him now?” The young man asked.

Xuanyuan Wentian did not give the go-ahead. Instead he spoke

in a slow and deliberate tone, “That Yun Che didn’t disappoint me after all. He is already within Supreme Ocean Palace. I actually just met him.”

The young man threw his head back in delight as a dangerous smile played across his face, “That’s just wonderful news.”

“During the past hundred years, I have been obsessed with my preparations regarding the Devil Sword. I had originally planned to pay a visit to the Illusory Demon Realm again

after I unsealed the Devil Sword so I could seize the Mirror of Samsara. But who would have thought that it would actually deliver itself up to me just as the Devil Sword is about to be unsealed. Truly even the heavens are on my side!” Xuanyuan Wentian said as he soundlessly laughed, his face raised to the heavens.

“Does that Mirror of Samsara really hide the ‘secrets of the Divine Profound’?” The young man asked.

“The secrets of the Divine Profound?” Xuanyuan Wentian said as his eyes faintly narrowed, “That was only a lie that the Illusory Demon Realm’s Duke Ming invented so he could make use of us. Hoho, that Duke Ming probably still naively believes that his intelligence and cunning was truly so peerless and unmatched that he managed to use the invented secret of the Mirror of Samsara to manipulate us into helping him achieve his ambition. Little does he knew that without my intervention and exhortation all those years ago, the other three Sacred Grounds would not have so easily bent to his will and commenced the invasion of the

Illusory Demon Realm.”

“Since the so-called secrets of the Divine Profound are fake, then why does Father still have such a strong desire for the Mirror of Samsara? The young man asked very sincerely.

“I asked the Devil Sword about the Mirror of Samsara at that time, and it told me that the Mirror of Samsara was one of the ‘Heavenly Profound Treasures’, an item that even the gods of the Primordial Era desired to obtain. So even

though I do not know exactly what it can do, something that even the gods themselves desired definitely is a hundred thousand times more valuable than those so-called ‘secrets of the Divine Profound’!”

“It was something that I definitely had to obtain once I unsealed the Devil Sword. And now that it has delivered itself to my doorstep, then how could I miss this opportunity to gladly receive it!!”

“Wendao, this matter is a secret



that is to be kept solely between us, father and son.” Xuanyuan Wentian said as he cast a sidelong glance at his own son, “Furthermore, this is Supreme Ocean Palace, not the Sword Region, so do not mention even a single word of this again.”

“This son understands!”

## Chapter 772 – Moon Slaughter Devil Nest

---

“What caused me the most concern was that Xuanyuan Wentian did not ask me where we were going just now. He also did not ask him anything regarding the ‘master’ that I had invented, yet he still gave me a very weird look.” Yun Che said to Jasmine in a low voice, “Moreover, when I visited Heavenly Sword Villa, that Xuanyuan Jiuding also gave me a very strange look as well.”

The strongest attributes Yun

Che possessed were his powers of perception, insight and an intuition that was so strong that it bordered on terrifying.

“I’m just thinking that it’s extremely possible that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region may have uncovered some information. For example, for some reason, they already know that the ‘Old Man Duotian’ I invented is fake.” Yun Che said as his brows sank.

“Hmph, with me around, are you still actually afraid that

you'll die?" Jasmine scoffed. In the eyes of the profound practitioners of the Profound Sky Continent, Xuanyuan Wentian was someone that was akin to a god, a peerless individual. But in her eyes, he was just an ant that was slightly bigger than the rest.

“...So that is to say that for the duration that we are staying in Supreme Ocean Palace, I will need to rely on your power.” Yun Che said helplessly and reluctantly. He was not a person who was used to relying on others because he was extremely clear that relying on this sort of

thing would for a major impediment to his growth—Jasmine knew this too, so for the past few years, she had kept up the pretense that she had sealed her own powers away.

This time, in order to grasp the slim chance that he might be able to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, he had no choice but to face the exceedingly powerful Four Sacred Grounds in advance. Therefore, he had no choice but to rely on Jasmine's power... Otherwise, if Jasmine was still the state where "her power was sealed," he would definitely not

choose come to Supreme Ocean Palace at this point of time.

“Yun Che, you need to be exceedingly cautious about Xuanyuan Wentian.” Zi Ji suddenly said when he saw Yun Che’s solemn expression, “Xuanyuan Wentian is someone who is truly a sword maniac, and he has an insatiable desire for strength. Even though Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is the weakest of all the Four Sacred Grounds when it comes to aggregate power, Xuanyuan Wentian himself is slightly stronger than the Sovereign of the Seas, Qu Fengyi, and the

Heavenly Monarch, Ye Meixie. Even when you compare him with the Saint Emperor, Huangji Wuyu, there is scarcely any difference in their power.”

“But if he was just a simple sword maniac, then that would be fine. Even though he seems like a refined, courteous gentleman and a respectable elder, the truth of the matter is that he is an extremely prejudiced and shrewd person, someone who is willing to do anything for the sake of attaining power. One thousand years ago, the Eternal Night Royal Family were destroyed for

the sake of his insane ambition and even the rest of us became his accomplices during that sordid affair. In the end, we had no choice but to commit one wrong after another in order to protect the reputation of the Sacred Grounds.”

“Furthermore, your innate talent is extremely unusual and there are far too many unexplainable mysteries about you. If not for that inscrutably powerful teacher of yours, he might have already made his move against you... Just now he behaved in a rather odd manner, so it is something that you best



pay attention to.”

Zi Ji’s voice was soft, but the warning in his eyes was clear for all to see. Yun Che and Xuanyuan Wentian had just met for this first time today, and someone who was at Zi Ji’s level would definitely know far more about Xuanyuan Wentian than Yun Che himself.

Yun Che nodded his head, “I understand. Thank you for your warning, Senior Zi... Senior Zi, this junior is also curious about one thing, but I’m not sure if it

is a question that I should ask.”

Qu Fengyi... That was the name identified by Senior Zi as belonging to the Sovereign of the Seas. As one of the four Holy Masters of the Profound Sky Continent, her name was not domineering, but neither was it feminine or soft. Instead, it was a name that seemed to have weathered many storms.

The Saint Emperor, the ruler of the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, the head of the four Holy Masters, and the person

who reigned supreme in the  
Profound Sky Continent. His  
name was Huangji Wuyu...

Wuyu? (No desires?)

It was said that the Saint  
Emperor was unable to produce  
a heir, and he only had a few  
foster children. Could it be  
anything to do with the words  
“no desire”?

...If a man had no desires, then  
how was he different from a  
salted fish?!

“Ah, do you want to ask what kind of relationship I have with the Sovereign of the Seas?” Zi Hi asked with a faint smile.

Yun Che replied with a laugh, “Senior Zi’s perceptiveness is indeed illuminating. When we were at the Black Moon Merchant Guild and Senior Zi was able to move a whole ten kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal in one transaction, this junior was very sure that Senior Zi definitely had an exalted position within Supreme Ocean Palace. And just

now, when we were in the Ocean Imperial Palace, the Purple Veined Divine Crystals that had been held in reserve were also on Senior Zi's person. Furthermore, the Sovereign of the Seas is an extremely imposing person, but when she treated Senior Zi entirely differently from how she treated her own great elder. So this junior cannot help but be extremely curious in regards to Senior Zi's identity."

Zi Ji have a faint smile as he said, "Then why don't you try guessing it."

Yun Che had already made a rather enlightened guess in his heart so he replied in a very frank manner, "This junior has heard Yuanba mention that there are seven existences that are above the great elder within Supreme Ocean Palace, these seven people are extremely powerful profound practitioners known as the Seven Venerable Ones, and they have the colors red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple in their names. The weakest of the seven is Venerable Red and the strongest is Venerable Purple, whose power is inferior to only the Sovereign of the Seas herself.

Furthermore, Senior Zi just happens to have the color purple as a surname. So Senior Zi being the number two person within Supreme Ocean Palace may just pass muster as an explanation.”

“It is just that even though Senior Zi’s profound strength is extremely high, the pressure it gives this junior is less than that of Great Elder Mo Chenfeng. So it is definitely impossible for Senior Zi to be one of the Seven Venerable Ones... and because of this, the only answer that this junior can think of is that the both of you are...”

“Husband and wife!”

“...” Zi Ji gave a startled jolt before throwing his head back and laughing loudly.

“You are far worthier of the words ‘perceptiveness is illuminating’.” Zi Ji said with a great laugh, but his words did not confirm Yun Che’s guess, “If you are talking about status alone, I am indeed the husband of the Sovereign of the Seas. But the relationship of husband and wife that I have with her is



utterly alien to your concept of what a husband and wife are.”

“...What does Senior Zi mean?”

“I have been married to her for a very, very long time. It was according to the wishes of our parents and the sect. However, when I married her, I had never dreamed that she would become the next Sovereign of the Seas. Her entire heart and soul was consumed by the profound way. This coupled with her extremely high innate talent paved the path for her to become the

number one person in Supreme Ocean Palace. However, I have always been fascinated with commerce and I spent most of my time either at the Black Moon Merchant Guild headquarters or visiting the branches scattered around the Profound Sky Continent. I rarely ever return to Supreme Ocean Palace. I will normally only see the Sovereign of the Seas once every ten years on average and even though we are husband and wife, we don't have many feelings for each other. Our union was ultimately meant to signify that the Black Moon Merchant Guild and Supreme Ocean Palace were one entity and not two powers that stood

independent of one another.”

When he was relating his tale, Zi Ji's tone was even and it was not melancholic in the least.

“Ah, so that's how it is.” Yun Che nodded his head slowly, “This junior does not dare speculate on whether the husband and wife relationship Senior Zi and the Sovereign of the Seas shares is shallow or not, but there is one thing this junior is very convinced of. The Sovereign of the Seas places a lot of trust in Senior Zi. And it may

just be that Senior Zi is the one person in this entire world that the Sovereign of the Seas truly trusts.”

“Hoho.” Zi Ji gave a brief laugh before pointing ahead, “We are here. This is where the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is located.”

There was a gloomy blue light that was intermittently flickering about five kilometers ahead of them. There was a small island that was nearly perfectly round and on top of the island lay a dome-shaped

barrier which fully engulfed it. The gloomy blue radiance was coming from the barrier that engulfed the small island.

The ocean surrounding the small island had sunk so low that it formed a trench around it. It was almost as if the seawater was being pushed away by some unimaginable power.

“This is the barrier that is used to seal the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.” Zi Ji said as he slowed down, “The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is inside this barrier.”

“This place is located in the ocean and it is more than one thousand five hundred kilometers away from the mainland. Normally, no one will approach this place because there are always disciples of Supreme Ocean Palace keeping watch. Even if someone manages to enter by accident, the Sovereign of the Seas will be alerted immediately once that person comes into contact with the barrier.”

The four of them descended towards the island. Immediately,

an incredibly strong repulsive force struck them. The strength of all four people was at the very peak of the Profound Sky Continent, but they immediately found it hard to breathe as an oppressive force constricted their chests.

“What a powerful barrier!” Xia Yuanba exclaimed in a low voice, “We are so far away and yet the repulsive force that struck us was strong... Master said that this barrier has persisted for more than ten thousand years, and that it could even be called the strongest barrier that exists within the Profound Sky

Continent. It looks like the reputation it has for being indestructible is richly deserved.”

“Just based on its isolating ability alone, this barrier is indeed unparalleled.” Zi Ji said as he nodded his head, his expression filled with admiration and reverence, “The founders of Supreme Ocean Palace used more than half of the Tyrant Profound artifacts that exist in the Profound Sky Continent and used up an incredible amount of profound crystals in order to set up this barrier all those years ago. If not



for this isolating barrier, that dreadful yin energy would have run rampant for the past ten thousand years and the consequences would have been unimaginable.”

“My Ocean Palace has flourished for ten thousand years and even though we have made our shares of mistakes through the years, we have also maintained this barrier for ten thousand years as well. So my Ocean Palace has always been able to search its own soul without being found wanting, truly living up to the name ‘Sacred Ground’!” Zi Ji’s calm

voice was laced with pride. He strode forward slowly and the Ocean Emperor Seal, which was flickering with blue light, was already in his hand.

Yun Che took a quick breath before walking up to Zi Ji's side. It had already been an entire seven years since Jasmine had first mentioned that she needed to find a Netherworld Udumbara Flower. In these seven years, the only place where it was possible to even find a Netherworld Udumbara Flower was the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest that laid enclosed in a barrier before him.

And now, Jasmine had already been cleansed of the devilish poison and all the materials that were needed to reconstitute her body had been gathered, save for that very Netherworld Udumbara Flower... Even though there was a very slim chance that they would be able to find one, here he was. He could only hope that he was able to find the miracle flower in full bloom during the short hundred breaths that he could stay in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

The closer they drew to the

barrier, the more they understood just how strong this barrier was. Yun Che was completely convinced that even if he had ten times the amount of strength, he would not even be able to make a dent in this barrier.

When Zi Ji stood right in front of the barrier, he raised the Ocean Emperor Seal and hesitated for a moment before turning around to address Yun Che, “Yun Che, even though we are already here, and I know that I shouldn’t say anything to dampen your hopes... but you should be very clear that the

chance of finding a Netherworld Udumbara Flower in full bloom is extremely slim. Moreover, even if you do miraculously find one, how will you obtain it?”

“Those Supreme Ocean Elders who had seen the Netherworld Udumbara Flower all those years ago were all peerless powerhouses who were at the Sovereign Profound Realm. Even though they only looked at it from a distance for a few moments before swiftly departing, all of them suffered through a terrible illness after that. So it is hard to imagine the consequences of even coming

close to that flower, much less picking it. And from my own knowledge, there has never once been a recorded instance where the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was successfully harvested in the history of Profound Sky Continent. The only records we have of this flower are the countless deaths that occurred because of it and its reputation as the ‘evilest of flowers’.”

“I have my own methods.” Yun Che said confidently.

The moment he had spoken those words, Jasmine's voice also rang out in his mind, "If there is really a Netherworld Udumbara Flower, you must definitely not approach it. Even though you have the Dragon God Soul, if you come within thirty meters of it, you will definitely be wracked by extreme pain. And if you come within fifteen meters of it, you are simply begging for death! Leave the harvesting of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower to me, I will bring it into the Sky Poison Pearl fully intact."

"I know." Yun Che replied.

When he was living in the Azure Cloud Continent, his master had taught him about the Netherworld Udumbara Flower as well and the words that he had emphasized the most when he had taught Yun Che about this flower was that “you must never ever come close to one.”

Zi Ji slowly nodded his head. He did not attempt to speak any further. Instead, he slapped the Ocean Emperor Seal heavily against the surface of the barrier in front of him.



Immediately, they could see the barrier ripple where it came into contact with the Ocean Emperor Seal. Zi Ji's brows sank and he said in a solemn tone, "The moment the seal on the barrier is released, there will be a large amount of yin energy expelled. This yin energy is extremely domineering and if normal people and weak profound practitioners come into contact with it, their lives will be put in danger. The yin energy within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest is even more dreadful, and even if it is us, the moment we enter this place, our profound strength will be suppressed by two entire realms. At the same time, our vitality will also be

drained away swiftly. Right now, you need to use all your strength to protect yourselves! You definitely must not underestimate the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest!”

## Chapter 773 – Half-Bloomed Udumbara (1)

---

Yun Che turned around and spoke to his two companions, “Yuanba, Xue’er, this place is extremely dangerous. I think it’s best that neither of you accompany me in and wait outside. And no matter whether this place has the thing that I am looking for or not, I will also leave as soon as possible.”

“That’s enough, Brother-in-Law.” Xia Yuanba shook his head as all of his muscles bulged fiercely and his body was

surrounded by a peerless and domineering profound energy aura, “Since we have already come here, how can I not go in and have a look?”

“Big Brother Yun, if I am not by your side to protect you, all the Junior and Senior Masters will definitely blame me.” Feng Xue’er said in a soft voice, her expression completely devoid of fear.

“Alright.” Yun Che said as he grabbed Feng Xue’er’s tiny hand, “Xue’er, you mustn’t let go of my

hand. Yuanba, you must be careful as well! If anything happens, remember that the first thing you should do is to run away!”

Sssss!!

A sound like thunder ripped through the air, as both the barrier and the Ocean Emperor Seal simultaneously emitted a glaring blue light. In the next instant, Zi Ji retreated swiftly as he gripped the Ocean Emperor Seal tightly while the a square-shaped hole that was two meters

wide and long appeared in the barrier.

Tendrils of ebon darkness crazily gushed out from inside the barrier.

This was...

“We only have a hundred breaths, hurry up and go in!” Zi Ji shouted as he swiftly put away the Ocean Emperor Seal and rushed through the gap in the barrier.

“Be extremely cautious!” Yun Che did not have the leisure to think anymore, he pulled Feng Xue’er along as he rushed inside as well, with Xia Yuanba hot on his heels.

When they entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, it felt as if they had stepped into a desolate, icy abyss. A chill washed through them, body and soul. All of the hairs on their bodies instantly stood on end. Yun Che felt Feng Xue’er’s hands tightly grip onto him as she pressed herself against him.

The sun was shining really brightly over the South Ocean, and a hole that was two meters in length and width was big enough for the daylight to shine through and illuminate a large portion of the abyss. But, after they had taken three steps forward, they were thrust into the inky darkness once more; they could scarcely see even a glimmer of light.

When they turned around, all they could see of the entrance was a hazy white outline.



“The daylight is unable to penetrate this darkness!?” Xia Yuanba exclaimed in shock.

“This is darkness energy.” Yun Che said as his brows knit together. When he had fought Fen Juechen, he had used profound energy of this exact element, “This darkness energy will swallow all light while restricting your spirit perception at the same time... it may even affect your five senses!”

“That’s right!” Zi Ji’s voice rang

out in the darkness, “This is only the entrance of the Devil Nest, the further you venture inside, the thicker the aura of darkness will be. Your spirit perception will be suppressed to barely a tenth of its normal strength! And your five senses will be similarly restricted! When you have reached the deepest parts of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, even your profound strength will be suppressed to the Emperor Profound Realm.”

“I am already beginning to feel... my profound strength being restricted.” Xia Yuanba

said through gritted teeth as he raised an arm, “It feels as if my profound veins are being constricted by something, and I find it far harder to circulate my profound energy than normal.”

“...Senior Zi, we only have the space of a hundred breaths, so we need you to immediately bring us to the location where the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was last seen.” Yun Che said calmly.

“Yes!” Zi Ji replied.

Within the darkness, Feng Xue'er raised her arm and a scarlet cluster of Phoenix flames began to burn on top of her tender and white palm. The Phoenix flames that she had conjured were far purer than Yun Che's Phoenix flames, so the light that these flames released would shine brightly over large distances. But within this Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, they could only illuminate the space that was within ten steps of them.

Furthermore, they were still only at the entrance.

Under the light of the Phoenix flames, Yun Che could see the floor that was still pitch-black despite being illuminated by the Phoenix flames. But he could not see the walls or the ceiling of the Devil Nest. It was clear to him now that this nest was far more spacious than he had expected it to be.

“Don’t worry, the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest only has one passageway, the path doesn’t fork or branch. As long as you follow the path, you will reach the end of the nest. Furthermore, this nest isn’t very deep. Given your current speed,

you should be approaching the end of the nest in around thirty breaths.” Zi Ji was in front of them and he was moving at a respectable speed. Even though it was the first time he had entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, he had heard and read the records that the Supreme Ocean Palace had kept of this place so many times that he had practically committed it all to memory

“So that is to say that the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that was discovered one thousand three hundred years ago was located at the very end

of the Devil Nest?”

“That is right.” Zi Ji replied as he nodded his head, “Ten thousand years ago, the seven Ocean Palace Ancestors who discovered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest also plumbed its deepest reaches. The weakest among them was at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, but once they had reached the deepest part of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, all of their profound strengths had dropped to the middle of the Emperor Profound Realm and their vitality was being drained away swiftly as well. Afterwards,

they ran into the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who was only at the initial stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm and they were massacred. Only one of the ancestors managed to escape with his life... After that, this ancestor established a law for us. The law was that we were forbidden from entering the deepest parts of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest unless we could confirm that Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was already dead.”

Zi Ji was steadily increasing his speed, but the profound energy aura he was releasing was



growing weaker and weaker.

The radius of the light given off by the Phoenix flames were swiftly shrinking as well.

“So has the death of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign been confirmed?” Yun Che asked gravely.

“It’s only a Tyrant Profound beast after all.. Even the most powerful Sovereign Profound beasts only have a lifespan of a few thousands years. So no

matter how strong a Tyrant Profound beast is, it will definitely not have a lifespan that extends past ten thousand years. Even though we have yet to discover its corpse... it should have long ago turned into dust within the darkness.” Zi Ji replied.

“Are there any clues as to where this yin energy is originating from?” Yun Che asked, his brows furrowing together as he looked ahead. At the same time, he checked his own profound veins.

The profound energy auras of Zi Ji, who was in front of him, Feng Xue'er, who was beside him, and Xia Yuanba, who was behind him, were all steadily growing weaker with each passing second. Zi Ji's profound energy aura was weakening at the fastest rate, Xue'er's aura weakened the second-fastest, while Xia Yuanba's aura weakened at the slowest pace. Now that they had reached the middle of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, Zi Ji's profound energy aura had already dropped to roughly the eighth level of the Tyrant Profound Realm.

Feng Xue'er and Xia Yuanba had both dropped to around the third level of the Sovereign Profound Realm.

And the reason why he could so clearly feel the change in their profound strength was because...

His profound veins had not been affected in the slightest!

He did not even find it hard to circulate his profound energy either.

Jasmine had indeed been right. The Evil God's profound veins could not be restricted by ordinary means. The Heaven's Might Soul Suppressing Formation would not be able to restrict them, and neither could the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest!

The suppressive power Feng Xue'er was facing was weaker than Zi Ji, and it was clear that it was because of her Phoenix bloodline!

As for Xia Yuanba, he was the

person who possessed the  
Tyrannical Emperor's Divine  
Veins!

“This is the greatest unsolved  
mystery of the Moon Slaughter  
Devil Nest.” Zi Ji said as he  
exhaled, his breathing becoming  
slightly uneven, “The origin of  
this dreadful yin energy is  
something that my Ocean Palace  
wants to find out more than  
anyone else. But for the past ten  
thousand years, we have yet to  
find the answer to that question.  
Perhaps the origin of this yin  
energy is located in the deepest  
part of the Moon Slaughter Devil  
Nest. It is just that the yin

energy in the deepest part of the nest is far too terrifying. It will cause a person's profound strength to drop drastically and muddle their five senses. Perhaps even if the Sovereign of the Seas herself came into contact with it, she would be unable to remain for longer than twenty breaths. So attempting to conduct a thorough search is a task that is as hard as soaring to the heavens."

As their profound strength grew weaker, the scope of the spirit perception would grow smaller as well. It got harder and harder for them to breathe and

their five senses kept growing weaker as well, to the point where they could not even hear the sounds of their own footsteps.”

“To think that such a place existed in this world. Sss...” Xia Yuanba said through gritted teeth. The feeling of having his profound strength and spirit perception suppressed was unbearable. It felt as though he had sunk into a deep marsh, and he found it difficult to even move his feet.



“Jasmine, have you figured out where this yin energy may have come from?” Yun Che asked in his heart. There was one thing that had caused him great concern... and that was the fact that Jasmine had kept silent ever since they had entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, and she had not said a single word since then.

“The yin energy in this place...” Jasmine’s voice grew extremely heavy, and Yun Che could hear traces of disbelief in that voice as well, “What exactly is going on here!?”

Yun Che ground to halt as he quickly asked, “Could it be that there is something irregular about this place?”

“This is something that is far beyond the word irregular!” Jasmine’s voice was frightfully low and heavy, “Based on strength alone, the aura of darkness in this place isn’t too intense, and one might say that it is actually rather weak. But... but if we are talking about the level of this darkness, it is so high that it is frightening.”

The words “so high that it was frightening” caused Yun Che’s heart to lurch in his chest. Because these words had been uttered by Jasmine herself.

“And as for the principles of darkness contained in this place, they are so profound that even I cannot understand them!”

Within the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine had a serious expression on her face, an expression that she had never adopted before. Her eyes which

flashed with red light contained a fierce disbelief, “This level of darkness energy, I have not even seen it on the plane that I was born in, much less this plane! Just what sort of thing could release such an aura of darkness!!”

“...” Those few words of Jasmine had shocked Yun Che a million times more compared to when Zi Ji was telling him about the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

“Yun Che! Leave this place immediately!” Jasmine suddenly

yelled in a shrill voice, “The situation here is completely out of my expectation! There must be some incomparably terrifying object hidden inside this place! That’s the only explanation for this yin energy! Leave immediately and do not bother with the Netherworld Udumbara Flower right now! Because even if you...”

“Heeheeheehee...  
Kekekehahahaha... Huhuhuhu...  
Wahahahaha...”

At this time, an incomparably

sinister laugh rang out from the darkness ahead of them. Ever since they had entered the depths of this place, their five senses were being heavily suppressed. Yet all of them could clearly hear this dreadful sound that sounded like the cackling of demons. It sounded like weeping and laughter all at the same time, and it seeped into their very souls.

“Ah!!” All four people came to an abrupt halt. Feng Xue’er had let out a cry of alarm as she dove into Yun Che’s chest, “Wha... what was that sound... it’s so scary!”

“The... there’s someone inside!?” Xia Yuanba said as he leaped forward to shield Yun Che and Feng Xue’er, as all the profound energy in his body surged crazily... However, even though he was Xia Yuanba, at this time, he was unable to combat the feeling of fear that coursed through his body.

Zi Ji was greatly shocked by the profound energy that Xia Yuanba had released with all of his strength. At this point, his profound strength had already been suppressed to the latter

stages of the Emperor Profound Realm, but the enormous might and pressure that was being released by Xia Yuanba was shockingly belonged to the latter stages of Tyrant Profound Realm!

Zi Ji's heart was completely flustered... The place where they were at was exceedingly close to the deepest part of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest and his own profound strength had already been suppressed by two entire realms, but Xia Yuanba's strength had only been suppressed by one realm!



Even though it was only a difference of one realm, it was undoubtedly the difference between the heavens and the earth! Under normal circumstances, Xia Yuanba's profound strength was weaker than Zi Ji's, but right now, Xia Yuanba could kill him with a flick of his fingers.

Could this also be another advantage provided by the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins?

“Wait! This sound...” Yun Che said as he got over his momentary fright. After he had taken the necessary precautions, his face suddenly relaxed as his eyes became filled with a triumphant light. He let go of Feng Xue’er and shot forward as he rounded a stone wall.

Immediately, the world before him was no longer pitch-black, instead he could see a bright, pulsing, purple light.

Within this dreadful darkness, Feng Xue’er’s Phoenix flames

had only been able to light up an area that was roughly three meters wide. But the purple light that filled his vision radiated a full hundred meters outwards and it was indelibly burned into Yun Che's eyes. It seemed as if even the deepest darkness in this world would be unable to devour this purple light.

The purple light gently flickered. However that bone-chilling and terrifying devilish laughter had also come from that purple light.

Yun Che's heart began to pound in his chest like a hammer and his eyes widened into saucers as he stuttered, "That is... that is..."

"The Netherworld Udumbara Flower!!" Zi Ji's voice rang out from behind Yun Che.

"Ah? That is... the thing that Big Brother Yun wants to find!?" Feng Xue'er cried in a voice filled with joy and amazement.

"That's right! This is the

Netherworld                      Udumbara  
Flower... The strange bright  
purple light, the ghostly wail  
that it emits every time it sways.  
This is exactly as my teacher  
described it!!” Yun Che said  
excitedly as both his hands  
curled into fists.

For an entire seven years, he  
had not been able to find a single  
trace of the Netherworld  
Udumbara Flower. Yet today, he  
had entered the Moon Slaughter  
Devil Nest knowing that it  
would be a futile attempt, akin  
to trying to find a needle in a  
haystack... but who would have  
thought that he would have such

a miraculous encounter!!

“Jasmine, we found it... we found it!!” Intense surprise and excitement had taken over Yun Che for a period of time. But at this moment, he noticed that something was wrong. Because he suddenly did not hear anything behind him, even the sound of breathing had completely disappeared.

## Chapter 774 – Half-Bloomed Udumbara (2)

---

Yun Che turned around in a flash. To his surprise, he found that Zi Ji, Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er all stood there with slack expressions on their face. Their eyes were completely blank and their pupils dilated and contracted intermittently. It was as if their souls had left their bodies.

Yun Che's heart was filled with alarm as he rushed over and swiftly grabbed Feng Xue'er with his right hand, hugging her

close. At the same time, his left hand shot out, releasing an energy wave that shoved Xia Yuanba and Zi Ji far away. He roared loudly and frantically, "Retreat! Don't look at the purple light!!"

The three of them shuddered simultaneously, as if they were waking up from a dream. Feng Xue'er immediately hugged Yun Che tightly as she curled into his chest, not daring to raise her head again. Yun Che could clearly feel that her heart was racing. Zi Ji and Xia Yuanba practically fell over themselves as they scrambled backwards,



and their expressions were ones of stark terror.

“This Netherworld Udumbara Flower indeed lives up to its reputation... No! It is far more terrifying than the legends describe it!” Zi Ji said as his heart hammered in his chest. His face was green and he was unable to compose himself at the moment. That purple light radiated at least one hundred meters outwards and despite that distance, it had so easily drawn him into this nightmare.

“To think that such a terrifying thing... actually exists in this world!” Xia Yuanba said in a rather traumatized voice, “Is it truly just a flower?”

“What did all of you experience just now? What exactly happened?” Yun Che asked as his brows furrowed. When Yun Che had stared at the purple light, he had only felt dazzled for a moment. He had not experienced any abnormality.

“Let’s not talk about these things right now!” Zi Ji said

somberly. He leaned on a wall, not daring to look at the Netherworld Udumbara Flower again. Even then, he still had a vague feeling that a pair of demonic eyes were staring at him from some place and his heart was beating so fast that it felt like it would explode at any moment, “Yun Che! We only have a short hundred breaths! Right now, more than half of that time has passed! Your luck is extremely good. To think that you were actually able to find this dreadful Netherworld Udumbara Flower. Moreover, it is in half-bloom as well... Quickly seize this opportunity and retrieve it with the fastest possible speed! If we are not able

to leave within the designated time limit, we will all be trapped here and die! There will be no chance of survival!”

“I understand!” Yun Che nodded his head, and once he had deposited Feng Xue’er beside the wall, he yelled out a warning, “Xue’er, Yuanba, lean against the wall! You definitely mustn’t turn back. I will harvest the Netherworld Udumbara Flower shortly!”

“Big Brother Yun... you must definitely be careful!” Feng

Xue'er said in an extremely worried voice. Yun Che had told her about many of the legends associated with the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. But in that brief, horrible instant, she now knew that the dreadfulness of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower had far exceeded her wildest imagination.

“Don't worry! Since I dared to come here, I definitely have a foolproof plan as well!”

Yun Che said this as he rounded the corner, taking more than ten

steps towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. After that, he stopped and just as he was about to call Jasmine to go harvest the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, he heard Jasmine yell sternly, “Were you not listening to what I just said? Immediately leave this place! Don’t bother with the Netherworld Udumbara Flower anymore!”

Yun Che was taken aback, “But...”

“No buts from you!” Jasmine said in an extremely somber

tone, “Haven’t you noticed that even though this Netherworld Udumbara Flower has already started to bloom, it is only in half-bloom!”

Yun Che was stunned by those words and he raised his head to stare that at that gently swaying purple light.

Within the deep darkness, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower’s appearance was still clear for all to see, as if it was right in front of Yun Che. It was slightly taller than three meters in height, its

stem and leaves were greenish-black in color. In the middle of that fantastical bright, purple light, a bewitching flower could be seen. Every petal seemed to be made of radiant purple jade, but the flower bud was still faintly curled up and the petals had not fully unfurled. Even though it had an extremely bewitching and enchanting appearance, it had not fully bloomed yet.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was a desolate place, and the air was stale and stagnant. Yet the half-bloomed Netherworld Udumbara Flower gently swayed



as it released a light purple mist that seemed to come from the underworld itself. And from time to time, it emitted that nightmarish sound that seemed to be a mix of both wailing and laughter. It was so sinister that it caused the souls of those who heard it to tremble.

And just as Jasmine had said, it had not fully bloomed yet!

Given Yun Che's knowledge regarding plants and herbs, even though this Netherworld Udumbara Flower had not fully

bloomed, it looked like it would not be long before it reached full bloom. Perhaps it would take a few more days, or even a few more hours, for it to bloom!

At this moment, the purple light suddenly flashed, and the scene in front of Yun Che blurred before becoming awash in a sea of purple.

A boundless purple world. It was as if he had stepped into some fantastical wonderland, and it caused his heart to become intoxicated and

bewildered. All of the nervousness, apprehension and caution in his heart... seemed to melt away completely along with the rest of the emotions in his heart. He became completely relaxed and he felt as if his body had become as light as a feather. He could not help but desire to float up in the air so that he could fly even deeper into this purple-colored world, to the point where he could become one with this fantastical world...

After being lost in delirium for that brief instant, Yun Che jerked back to wakefulness. The purple-colored world instantly

shattered before his eyes as it morphed into a pitch-black world which flickered with a bewitching purple light.

What a terrifying ability to invade the soul... Yun Che thought as his forehead was matted in cold sweat and his heart thumped wildly in his chest. A Netherworld Udumbara Flower that had not fully bloomed and was nearly one hundred meters distant from him had actually been able to hypnotize him, someone who possessed the Dragon God Soul, for a brief period of time!

If he had drawn close to it, the consequences would have been unimaginable!

Jasmine had told him that if he was within thirty meters of the flower, he would be wracked by indescribable pain and if he was within fifteen meters of the flower, he was practically committing suicide... Right now, Yun Che was completely convinced that these were not words that were just meant to frighten him.

“Even though it hasn’t fully bloomed, it is about seventy to eighty percent done! Will the difference be that drastic if you used this instead of a fully bloomed one?” Yun Che asked in a low voice as he looked to the side.

“It is the difference between the earth and the sky!” Jasmine said sternly, “Only a Netherworld Udumbara Flower in full bloom can perfectly merge my soul with my reconstituted body. The level of power of a Netherworld Udumbara Flower that has not fully bloomed is far from enough

and even if you plucked ten thousand of them, they would not be able to perfectly merge my body and my soul. If we attempt to force a merger, I will end up becoming like the current Fen Juechen. My body will be wracked with intense pain due to the rejection of my soul and within a few short years, my physical body will die once more and my soul will be destroyed.”

Yun Che, “...”

“No...” Yun Che clenched both

his fists tightly as he spoke through gritted teeth, his expression colored with discontent, “It was so hard for us to even find a clue regarding the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... and now it is right in front of us. It is so close to being in full bloom as well...”

“If we miss this chance, the next time it will bloom will be an entire twenty-four years later... Furthermore, we will only be able to enter this Moon Slaughter Devil Nest five hundred years later...”



How could he let go of this Netherworld Udumbara Flower that they had spent seven whole years to find!

“Yun Che, you better listen up and listen good!” Jasmine said gravely, “I desire to obtain a fully bloomed Netherworld Udumbara Flower more than anyone else! But right now, even if there was a fully bloomed Netherworld Udumbara Flower before our eyes, much less this half-bloomed one, we would still not be able to obtain it! Right now, what you need to do is to leave this place quickly!”

“...Why?” Yun Che did not understand and he made no move to retreat as well... he could hear the discontent in Jasmine’s voice and he was just as discontented as well!

“This place is terrifying beyond the boundaries of what you can imagine!” Even though the intensity of the darkness energy in this place is extremely weak, but the level of this darkness energy is so high that even I have never seen it before. If my body and soul were whole, the darkness energy in this place

would not be able to affect me in the least, but right now, I only have a spirit body. I don't have a physical body to anchor me so I have no way of keeping darkness energy of this level from eating away at my existence! If I were to materialize my spirit body in this place, I would suffer very serious injuries in a matter of minutes and even my soul origin would receive extreme damage!”

Yun Che, “...”

“My spirit body was being eroded by that devilish poison

for many years and it's only now that I have completely escaped from its clutches. But I am still many times weaker than I would be in my complete state! I will only slowly regain my true strength after my body has been reconstituted. But if my current spirit body is eroded by darkness energy again... the consequence is that I will not be able to ever fully recover! And my spirit may even end up dissipating forever!!”

Every single word that came from Jasmine's mouth was extremely heavy and they rooted Yun Che in place.

“So even if that was a Netherworld Udumbara Flower in full bloom, I would also not be able to materialize and harvest it. It is even more impossible for you to do it.” Jasmine’s tone grew more serious by the second, “I am not exaggerating anything in the least! For darkness energy of this level to be continuously released for the past ten thousand years, there must be something that is far more terrifying than anything that you could think of that is hiding in this Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! Even though I am in the Sky Poison Pearl right now, I can still feel

my spine tingle in a way that it never has before. Even my spirit perception has been suppressed to a certain...”

Jasmine suddenly stopped talking, causing Yun Che’s heart to skip a beat. Then she started shouting sternly, “Hurry up and leave!! There is a living creature hiding somewhere above the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... and it is looking at you right now! Flee immediately!”

“What?” A jolt of shock raced through Yun Che’s heart and he

unwittingly raised his head to look at the ceiling above the Netherworld Udumbara Flower but all he could see was inky darkness.

At this moment, Zi Ji howled at him from behind, “Yun Che! What are you doing!? You only have thirty breaths left, if you don’t hurry up, you won’t be able to make it!”

Yun Che did not have time to hesitate any further, he quickly turned around and yelled, “We’re getting out of here!”

“But that Netherworld Udumbara Flower...” Xia Yuanba said as he hesitated for a moment. Because the purple light was still shining and that meant that Yun Che had not been able to successfully obtain the flower.

“Don’t worry about it, let’s hurry up and leave!!” Yun Che shoved Yuanba a long way towards the exit with his palm. He grabbed Feng Xue’er’s hand tightly and he used the light of the Phoenix flames to guide him as he rushed towards the exit at



the fastest speed possible.

“Is that ‘monster’ following us?” Yun Che asked anxiously. Because they had just travelled down to his path to reach the deepest part of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, they were familiar with it, so they fled at a much greater speed than when they had arrived.

“No, it isn’t”. Jasmine replied.

“...” Yun Che let out a small sigh of relief as a thought flashed through his mind: A living creature that is hiding within

the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.  
Could this be the legendary  
Moon Slaughter Devil  
Sovereign?

The Moon Slaughter Devil  
Sovereign should have died  
more than six thousand years  
ago. It was not possible for a  
Tyrant Profound beast to  
survive for ten thousand years!

Furthermore, the urgency in  
Jasmine's voice told him that the  
monster hidden in the darkness  
was a creature that was too  
strong for him to fight... So it

would definitely not be the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign which was only at the Tyrant Profound Realm.

Just what was it!?

“What kind of monster is it? Do you have any insight as to what it’s power level is?” Yun Che asked.

“It is far bigger than a normal human. And as for its strength... it should roughly be at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound

Realm! The caveat being that my suppressed spirit perception might not have captured its power level correctly!” Jasmine said in a doubtful voice.

The sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm... Yun Che increased his speed yet again as a complicated light flashed in his eyes.

“We still have ten breaths worth of time left. Don’t worry, we’ll make it.” Zi Ji said as his voice grew more relieved but his heart was still shaking with

adrenaline and fear... When he had spoken to the Sovereign of the Seas, he had told her that he would yank Yun Che out of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest once fifty breaths had passed. He never would have thought that they would be in this desperate situation. If they were not able to leave this place within one hundred breaths, the four of them would all die in this place.

“It’s just that Brother-in-law was not able to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.” Xia Yuanba said in a somewhat disconsolate voice.

“That was to be expected. Given how terrifying the Netherworld Udumbara Flower is, even if the Four Sacred Masters were to join hands to obtain one, they would definitely not be able to survive the attempt.” Zi Ji said as he sighed. Even though Yun Che’s objective had not been fulfilled, Supreme Ocean Palace had lived up to its end of the bargain.

Just a few breaths before the opening in the barrier closed, the four companions finally saw a hazy glimmer of light appear

in front of them.

“We’re at the exit, let’s hurry up and get out of here!” Zi Ji, who was the furthest ahead, yelled as his figure blurred and he dashed towards the exit.

“Brother-in-law, hurry!” Xia Yuanba yelled, he was hot on Zi Ji’s heels and the moment he exited the barrier, he turned around, fearing that Yun Che was lagging behind.

The exit was right in front of

them and once they left, Yun Che would only be able to enter this place again five hundred years from now at the minimum.

Even if he managed to enter five hundred years later, there were no guarantees that they would be able to find a Netherworld Udumbara Flower like they had today.

Yun Che began to slow down. He used both hands to give a mighty shove to Feng Xue'er's shoulder, flinging her far out of



the opening of the barrier. Then, he stopped right at the opening itself.

“Yun Che! What are you doing... hurry up and get out!” Jasmine had guessed his intentions in a second and her small face immediately went pale.

“Brother-in-law!!”

“Big Brother Yun!!”

One breath later, Yun Che still had not emerged from the opening made in the barrier. Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er both realized that something was wrong at the same time. Xia Yuanba's expression changed dramatically while Feng Xue'er's pretty face lost all of its color as they both rushed towards the opening at the same time.

“Don't worry about me!” Yun Che roared as he pushed both his arms out at full strength towards the opening. He blew the nearby Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er, neither of whom could react fast enough to defend

themselves, at least three hundred meters away.

“I am going to wait for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower to reach full bloom, so I’m going to have to stay here for a few days... Don’t worry about me, don’t forget that I have that ‘profound ark’!”

“Big Brother Yun...NO!!!” Feng Xue’er’s teary cry could be heard from outside the barrier.

“Hurry up and leave!!!”

Jasmine yelled with such anxiety and fury that it caused Yun Che's heart and soul to quake, "The laws of space in this area have long ago been distorted by the darkness energy, even the Primordial Profound Ark..."

Ssssss!!!

With a sizzling pop that sounded like the discharge of lightning, the opening in the barrier that had lasted for one hundred breaths instantly snapped shut. The entire barrier

glowed with a flowing blue light which blended with the barrier. Not even a small scratch could be seen on it presently, much less an opening, as it completely and perfectly separated what was inside the barrier from the outside world.

# Chapter 775 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (1)

---

Boom! Boom! Boom!!

Amidst ear-shattering explosions, continuously exploding Phoenix flames had dyed a large swathe of the sky and sea a startling crimson. As those frenzied flames fell from the sky, the small islets that came into contact with them immediately turned to magma.

The dreadful sounds and power being displayed had long ago alerted Supreme Ocean Palace but the Phoenix flames continued to wreak havoc with no signs of stopping and they kept growing hotter and wilder with each passing minute.

“Princess Snow, please stop! This barrier can’t be forcibly blasted open! Even if the Four Sacred Masters were to join hands, they would also not be able to do so!!”

Zi Ji was also at the eighth

stage of the Sovereign Profound Realm. But when he faced these terrifyingly powerful divine flames, he also had no choice but to keep his distance, he even had to keep retreating.

“Big Brother Yun... BIG BROTHER YUN!!!” In front of the barrier sealing the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, Feng Xue’er screamed as she crazily hurled phoenix fire. But no matter how the Phoenix flames assaulted the barrier, not a single scratch was formed on it. It did not even quiver in the slightest and it would only give out threads of rippling light



every now and then.

“Little Sister Xue’er, you need to stop at once!!”

Xia Yuanba had also been forced to keep his distance. He had wanted to approach Xue’er many times but her Phoenix flames were simply too dreadful. In the blink of an eye, he had already been blown half a kilometer away by those Phoenix flames. He could only howl helplessly and anxiously but no matter how he and Zi Ji tried to counsel Feng Xue’er, they simply

could not get through to her.

At this moment, the Phoenix flames suddenly stopped and the firelight that had shrouded the entire island began to wane. Xia Yuanba thought that Feng Xue'er had started to come to her senses but just as he was about to advance... An enormous and extremely glaring fire lotus gorgeously bloomed around Feng Xue'er.

Boom!!!!

An all-encompassing wave of heat assaulted Zi Ji and Xia Yuanba. They both felt a pressure on their chests, as if they had been smashed by a giant hammer that had come from the depths of a fiery purgatory. They fiercely shot backwards and their clothes and hair started to burn.

This was a Star Scorching Demon Lotus performed with all of Feng Xue'er's might and it was also the strongest attack that the Phoenix flames could display on this world! It was more than ten times stronger than the strongest Phoenix flames that

Yun Che could produce.

“Little Sister Xue’er... hurry up... and stop!!”

Xia Yuanba’s cries were now tinged with pain. He retreated at full speed. His body felt like it was being wrapped in purgatorial flames as every inch of skin was being burned to the point where the pain was unbearable. It was a long time before the burning sensation finally subsided to a level he could endure. He anxiously extinguished the flames burning

on his body as he began to noisily gasp for air. Every single breath that he expelled from his chest was boiling hot.

The Phoenix flames that had been raging for a long time finally began to die down as their light swiftly receded. Xia Yuanba took ragged gasps as he desperately sought to regain his composure. It was only then that he discovered that he had been blasted five kilometers away from the island that the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was located in.

Even though he had seen Yun Che use his Phoenix flames before, he had never once seen Feng Xue'er in action. It was only now that he came to the startling realization that this girl, who was as beautiful as a fairy and who would tenderly and gently call him "Bulky Big Brother" was actually extremely terrifying!

On the other side, even though Zi Ji had not been pushed as far as Xia Yuanba, the trembling of his pupils were no less intense than Xia Yuanba's... His profound strength was the same as Feng Xue'er's, both of them

were at the eighth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. And when it came down to it, he was still slightly stronger than her. But right now, he was utterly convinced that if he were to face Feng Xue'er in battle, he would definitely eat a loss!

The eighth stage of the Sovereign Profound Realm coupled with the purest Phoenix bloodline and Phoenix flames; it was a power that was definitely able to match the profound practitioners of the Four Great Sacred Grounds who were at the ninth stage of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

The light of the flames had completely dissipated but the sea breeze was still boiling hot. It was just that the original island had completely disappeared and the only thing that was left was an enormous ocean-blue barrier shimmering on top of the sea as it sealed off the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest from the rest of the world. The island that had existed outside the barrier had been completely obliterated by Feng Xue'er's Star Scorching Demon Lotus.

“Why did it turn out like this...



Big Brother Yun... Big Brother Yun...”

Feng Xue'er floated above the barrier all alone, her shoulders faintly shaking. She stared at unharmed blue barrier dumbly, her eyes filled with misery and heartbreaking words spilling from her lips.

“Little Sister Xue'er, don't be too worried.” Xia Yuanba said as he quickly flew to her side. His appearance was quite pathetic, his face and his entire body had been burnt black, his clothes

were dotted with innumerable holes due to the flames, and even half of his eyebrows had been singed off. However he bore no resentment towards Feng Xue'er. Instead he now liked her even more... Because she had fallen apart on behalf of Yun Che.

“Brother-in-law is a very clever person... Since he chose to remain inside that place, he definitely has an objective he needs to fulfill and also a method of escape.” Xia Yuanba said as he tried to comfort Feng Xue'er. But his own palms were soaked in cold sweat and he was

so anxious that he felt like his heart was about to burn to cinders.

“But... that place is so dangerous. Senior Zi also said that if someone were to be trapped inside there, that person would... that person would...” Feng Xue’er sobbed, her voice quivering with barely restrained weeping.

“Don’t worry, it will be alright.” Xia Yuanba did his best to remain calm and comfort Xue’er, “Brother-in-law was the one

who made the decision to remain in that place, he wasn't forcibly imprisoned within. So he definitely must be confident that he can get out. Between Brother-in-law and Zi Ji, the one you should trust is definitely Brother-in-law! Just now Brother-in-law himself said that he would be out in a few days. Moreover..."

Xia Yuanba quietly ascertained where Zi Ji was standing before concentrating his profound energy and sending a sound transmission to Xue'er, "Don't forget, Brother-in-law still has the Primordial Profound Ark

and he can teleport tens of thousands of kilometers in the blink of an eye. So it should be a simple matter... for him to escape from that place.”

The three words “Primordial Profound Ark” caused Feng Xue’er’s teary eyes to immediately sparkle prettily. Xia Yuanba’s words was not an empty consolation and it helped her confused and frightened heart regain a semblance of calm.

“I also think that there is no

need to worry too much.” Zi Ji flew over from afar. Even though his body was scorched all over, his calm and tranquil attitude remained, “Even though I am convinced that absolutely nobody on this earth can break this barrier, do not forget that Yun Che’s master is an expert who has transcended this world. He was able to bring Yun Che back from the Primordial Profound Ark all those years ago, so breaking out of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest should be as easy as waving his hand.”

“Yes, yes, yes, that is definitely

the case.” Xia Yuanba quickly went along with Zi Ji as he nodded his head vigorously. But his anxiety was not eased in the least... because he was extremely clear that Yun Che’s so-called “master” was fake.

“What just happened!?”

A stern voice echoed from the distant north and at the same time, they could feel a energy wave pressing in from afar. Both the tone and the actions of the approaching person were fraught with anxiety.

Xia Yuanba turned around and saw a blue-robed man flying over at an astonishing speed. Behind him, thirty meter high waves were roaring in his wake as the sea had been agitated by the profound energy he was releasing. And far behind that blue-robed man trailed four people who were all clothed in red.

“Supreme Ocean Palace’s great elder Mo Chenfeng!” Xia Yuanba blurted out in surprise.



The four red-clothed people trailing behind him rooted Feng Xue'er in place for a while. But after that she excitedly took flight as she went to meet them, "Royal father, Grandfather, Crown Prince, and... Great Grandfather!?"

As they saw Xue'er come to welcome them, the four red-clothed men also slowed to a halt, their faces showing their great excitement at seeing her again. Feng Hengkong cried out emotionally, "It's Xue'er... It's really Xue'er!"

Feng Xue'er had just used the full power of her Phoenix flames to assault the barrier and in doing so, she had radiated an overly strong Phoenix aura that spread out over fifty kilometers. This had startled the members of the Divine Phoenix Sect who were currently staying in Supreme Ocean Palace. The only person in this world who was able to release such a refined and pure Phoenix aura was Feng Xue'er!

At that point, all four of them dropped everything else and flew towards the south at full speed. Now they had once again

been reunited with the Feng Xue'er, who had left the Divine Phoenix Sect for several months already.

“Great Grandfather?” After hearing Feng Xue'er's cry of surprise, Xia Yuanba's gaze immediately fell on the red-clothed man who stood on the extreme right. He had a head full of white hair and his face was as ruddy as scarlet flames. But his eyes seemed to be two burning flames and just meeting them caused Xia Yuanba's eyes to feel a burning sensation.

Little Sister Xue'er's great grandfather... Oh that was right! It was the man whom master called the number one person in the entire Divine Phoenix Sect... Feng Zukui!!

Xia Yuanba had heard Spiritual Master Ancient Blue personally mention this person before. He had said that Feng Zukui's profound strength was already at the ninth stage of the Sovereign Profound Realm one hundred years ago and because of his intimacy with the Phoenix flame, his overall strength was even higher than Spiritual Master Ancient Blue!

Outside of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, he was also the undisputed number one person in the Profound Sky Continent!

Feng Zukui very rarely appeared anymore and even among the Divine Phoenix disciples, very few of them had personally seen him before. But it was not surprising to see him attending this Devil Sword Conference.

“Mister Zi, what happened here?”

There was only that blue barrier below which was still shining on the surface of the sea, all the other islets and the island itself had disappeared without a trace. Mo Chenfeng's brows twitched violently as his face was colored with shock.

Zi Ji made a small gesture before saying, "We didn't meet any great enemy. It is only that Yun Che is still stuck inside the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest."

"What!?" Mo Chenfeng gasped in astonishment.

“However, it wasn’t because he couldn’t make out it in time. Rather, he chose to remain inside. Zi Ji said, “And after hearing what he said, it seemed like he was unable to harvest the Netherworld Udumbara Flower because it had not reached full bloom yet. He decided to remain inside so that he could wait for it to fully bloom.”

“This...” Mo Chenfeng’s face twitched before he said in a deep voice, “This is the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest we are talking about. If one is sealed

inside, the only thing awaiting that person is death! The Sovereign of the Seas has personally said that even she would not be able to last in that place for more than six hours! For him to decide to remain inside there... it's no different from digging his own grave!!”

Zi Ji shook his head in disagreement, “If it was any other person, that would most certainly be the case. But Yun Che was able to return alive from the Primordial Profound Ark. Furthermore, even though he is a haughty man, he is not so arrogant as to gamble his own



life by underestimating the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.”

He turned around and faced the barrier surrounding the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest before calmly continuing, “Right now, I am actually very curious to see whether he will really be able to survive for long within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. And whether he will be able to escape this isolation barrier... Also whether he will be able to successfully obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that nobody has ever approached and lived!”

Mo Chenfeng fell silent.

“However, my anticipation will only continue until this time tomorrow.” Zi Ji said, “Yun Che’s ‘master’ may have the ability to transcend the heavens but Yun Che’s strength falls slightly short of the mid stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm and his vitality is far below even that. In a place where even the Sovereign of the Seas is not able to survive for six hours... If he is not brought out by his ‘master’ within a day, then it is impossible that he will

still be alive. At which time, that ‘master’ of his either does not know of his predicament or simply doesn’t exist in the first place.”

“Mister Zi has indeed reminded me of something. The laws of space within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest are very different from the laws of space here. Among these differences is the fact that all Sound Transmission Jade and spatial profound artifacts will be rendered useless in there. If Yun Che’s trump card is to use a sound transmission to get his ‘master’ to save him or to use a

spatial profound artifact to escape this place, then he has truly dug his own grave this time.” Mo Chenfeng said in a relaxed voice.

“...” Zi Ji’s brows sank by several degrees and his originally calm face was now creased by uncertainty and pity, “In short, we should return to the Ocean Palace first so we can make our report to the Sovereign of the Seas. We need to devote all our efforts to getting ready for the Devil Sword Conference. We can’t afford to be distracted by anything else.”

“Yes.” Mo Chenfeng said as he nodded his head as he turned around to leave. It was not important that the island that the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was located on was destroyed. Because the barrier sealing the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was absolutely impregnable and indestructible.

“Xue’er, why are you here?” Feng Hengkong asked in both concern and agitation. The three people that had come with him were Feng Ximing, Feng Tianwei, and last but not least...

Feng Zukui!

“Xue’er, you... have you been well? During the past few months you spent in the Blue Wind Nation, has anyone... especially that bastard Yun Che, bullied you!?” Feng Ximing asked anxiously. As he said this, both of his hands were trembling, his face had gone completely red and his eyes were tightly locked onto Xue’er. He was so agitated that he looked like he was going to lose control of himself.

“I came together with Big Brother Yun. I did not inform Royal Father because I was not sure if Big Brother Yun would bring me along. Great Grandfather, you actually came as well, Xue’er has already... not seen you for the longest time now.” Feng Xue’er bowed gently towards Feng Zukui.

“On the other hand, during the three years that Xue’er was unconscious, I went to see Xue’er many times.” Upon seeing Feng Xue’er, Feng Zukui’s mood had become extremely good. A weak and shallow smile suddenly appeared on his calm and

imposing face. After he gave Feng Xue'er a few deep and measured looks, the red light in his eyes immediately gleamed even brighter and the smile on his face grew deeper as well. He nodded his head heavily as he sighed, "Xue'er, you are truly the precious gem of our entire clan. In just a few short years, your Phoenix profound strength has actually exceeded your own father and grandfather. Perhaps by this time next year, even this old fogey will be left in your dust! Hahahahahaha!"

Feng Zukui threw his head back in laughter and everyone could



hear the immense elation and joy contained in that great laugh. From the moment Feng Hengkong could walk and talk, he had only seen Feng Zukui laugh four times and every single time he had laughed, it was because of Feng Xue'er. This time, his laughter was far more joyous and jubilant than it had been on any of the previous occasions. He took a step forward and bowed as he said, "Grandfather, it has to be said that Xue'er's transformation is truly thanks to that Yun Che. Three years ago, Yun Che had imparted the fifth and sixth stages of the 'World Ode of the Phoenix' to Xue'er on the Primordial Profound Ark. This

event allowed Xue'er to attain a true mastery of her Phoenix flames and also caused her strength to soar."

"Even though Yun Che brought a great calamity down on our heads a few months ago, he has always been sincere towards Xue'er. And Xue'er even owes him her current powers and her very life..." Feng Hengkong shut his eyes before saying, "Therefore, during these few months, the burning desire to avenge my sons... is something that I am more than willing to forego. I have no desire to pursue vengeance on behalf of

the other two grand elders either.”

Feng Tianwei’s gaze swept across the surrounding area and he said with furrowed brows, “Xue’er, you said that you came here with Yun Che. Why are you here by yourself right now?”

These words caused Xue’er’s delicate body to faintly tremble as two tears instantly fell from her beautiful eyes. Even though Yun Che was the person that she trusted the most in this world, and even though she knew about

the existence of the Primordial  
Profound Ark... she could not  
quell the intense fear and worry  
that gnawed at her soul.

Feng Hengkong and the two  
other elders were immediately  
struck dumb. Feng Ximing, on  
the other hand, practically  
jumped up in anger, the hair on  
his head standing on end and his  
features warping as a bestial  
snarl tore from his throat,  
“Did... did he bully you! Did he...  
he... where the hell is he right  
now!? Bastard! Beast! I will kill  
him... I will rip him to shreds!!”

Feng Hengkong glared at Feng Ximing fiercely before he asked Xue'er in a low voice, "Xue'er, what exactly happened here?"

Xue'er bit her trembling lips and it was only after a long while that she could finally speak in a grief-stricken voice, "Big Brother Yun, he... he is trapped inside the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest."

"What!?" Feng Tianwei's and Feng Hengkong's faces immediately lost all color. Feng Ximing was taken aback as well

but his face immediately twisted into an expression of undisguisable jubilation.

The existence of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was known to only one other sect besides the Four Great Sacred Grounds... and that sect was the Divine Phoenix Sect.

“There is no need to be so worried.” Feng Zukui’s expression remained calm as he spoke, “I just heard the discussion between Supreme Ocean Palace’s Mister Zi and

great elder Chen Mo Feng. Yun Che seems to have chosen to stay behind, so he definitely has confidence that he can escape. Furthermore his master is the legendary 'Old Man Duotian' who has the ability to transcend the heavens. So being sealed within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest may not end in his death."

"Yes, yes, yes!" Feng Xue'er's tears stabbed into Feng Hengkong's heart like needles, so he hurriedly nodded his head in agreement as he said, "Your great grandfather is completely right! If anyone else was trapped in the Moon Slaughter Devil

Nest, it would indeed spell their doom! But Yun Che is different! Even the Primordial Profound Ark couldn't contain him all those years back. You should follow your royal father back to the Ocean Palace first and maybe by the time you wake up tomorrow, he will already be out of this place."

Feng Xue'er raised a jade hand as she wiped away the tears from her snowy face. She softly said, "I know... I believe more than anyone else that Big Brother Yun will definitely... definitely come out of there in one piece. So, I will wait here for Big Brother



Yun. Great Grandfather, Grandfather, Royal Father, Crown Prince Brother, Xue'er is alright. All of you should return to the Ocean Palace first. Xue'er will immediately come and see you all once Big Brother Yun returns."

"Ssss..." Feng Xue'er's words and the resolute expression on his face caused Feng Ximing's smooth face to once again warp in anger as he clenched both his fist tightly and viciously murmured under his breath: Yun Cheeeee! Go down to the eighteen layers of hell within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! Die!

Die! DIEEEEEEEE!!!!

“Xue’er...”

“You don’t need to advise her any further.” Xia Yuanba walked over as he said with a serious expression on his face, “No matter what you say, she will definitely not leave this place right now. Return to the Ocean Palace first, I will wait here with her. And once she has regained some of her composure, I will advise her to return as well.”

“This man is Xia Yuanba, Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s disciple who possesses the legendary Tyrannical Emperor’s Divine Veins! He is Yun Che’s brother-in-law.” Feng Hengkong sent a sound transmission to both Feng Tianwei and Feng Zukui.

The look in both Feng Tianwei’s and Feng Zukui’s eyes changed drastically once they heard those words.

Feng Hengkong knitted his brows before he let out a soft

sigh, “Since that is the case... Xue’er, we will be waiting at the Flame Heart Palace that is located in the northwest part of the Ocean Palace. If anything happens, you must definitely send a sound transmission to inform us... No matter how anxious and worried you are, your royal father will be even more worried and anxious than you. No matter what, don’t be too headstrong and put too many burdens on yourself.”

Feng Xue’er’s eyes grew misty as she said, “Royal Father...”

“Royal Father, this place is still Supreme Ocean Palace, so how can we leave Xue’er here all by herself? I request that Royal Father allow this son to stay behind to accompany...”

“Shut your mouth!”

Before Feng Ximing could even finish what he was saying, he was sternly cut off by Feng Hengkong. He did not spare Feng Ximing another glance as he turned towards Feng Tianwei and Feng Zukui, “Royal Father, Grandfather, let us leave this

place for now. If we remain, it will be harder for Xue'er to calm down.

The four people of the Divine Phoenix Sect departed and Zi Ji left along with them. Only Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er were left in the now quiet ocean region. They mutely stared at the blue-colored barrier, neither of them speaking a single word for a long time.

“Brother-in-law, you will definitely be alright!” Xia Yuanba tightly clenched a fist as

he murmured these words over and over again in his head.

“Big Brother Yun, Xue’er will wait here for your safe return.” Feng Xue’er placed both hands on her chest and she closed her beautiful eyes, her snowy lips softly whispering, “If Big Brother Yun does not return in a day, then Xue’er will wait a day. If you don’t return in a year, then Xue’er will wait a year... If... if Big Brother Yun never returns, then Xue’er will remain in this place forever... so that I can accompany Big Brother Yun here forever...”

# Chapter 776 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (2)

---

The sealed Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was blanketed in inky darkness.

For the first time in his life, Yun Che experienced what true darkness was. The world he was trapped in seemed like a bottomless abyss; there was not a single trace of light or life. In this world of absolute darkness, he could not see anything else, he did not even know where he



was and what direction he was facing. His mind was under a lot of pressure and he started to feel a little dizzy.

“Yun Che... Do you know what you’ve just done!” Jasmine yelled through gritted teeth as her voice echoed in Yun Che’s mind.

“Of course I know.” Yun Che replied as he took a deep breath, trying his best to compose himself. Within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, even drawing breath was several

times more difficult than it was normally.

“I had already told you very clearly, there isn’t any way that I can materialize to go harvest the Netherworld Udumbara Flower in this place. And I was even more clear about the fact that there was no way that you could do it with your current ability. You won’t even be able to go anywhere near it, you...”

“I know.” Yun Che said with a somber expression on his face, “I will definitely not question what

you have told me. But we have already looked for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower for a whole seven years! And during these seven years, whether it was in the Profound Sky Continent or the Illusory Demon Realm, we have not been able to find even a clue regarding it. Now there is one that is growing in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest and it is extremely likely that it is the only Netherworld Udumbara Flower in this world! Furthermore, it is right on the brink of fully blooming... so how can you expect me to just give up on it like that!”

“When I saw this Netherworld Udumbara Flower, I had an powerful feeling that if we left like this, we might never see a second Netherworld Udumbara Flower in our lives ever again. Which also means that you will never be able to obtain a new body.” Yun Che said solemnly, “Furthermore... furthermore, truth be told, I’m not too afraid of that Netherworld Udumbara Flower. Just now, even though it was able to enthrall me briefly once I entered within a hundred meters of it, the moment I concentrated I was able to break out of its spell. My condition was far less serious than Xue’er and the others. This should be related to the fact that I possess

the Dragon God Soul... and if my Dragon God Soul is fully unleashed, it should be very possible for me to resist its ability to steal one's soul. At the very least, let me try it out."

"Foolishness!" Jasmine said sharply, "Do you know how big a difference there is between a Netherworld Udumbara Flower that has fully bloomed and one that has not? Once a Netherworld Udumbara Flower reaches full bloom, its ability to steal your soul will grow at least ten times stronger!"

“...” Yun Che stammered out in a stunned voice, “Te... ten times!?”

“For the past seven years, since I mentioned the Netherworld Udumbara Flower until now, I have always asked you to locate one but I have never ever once asked you to actually go obtain one. It is not something that a person from this plane, such as you, can even come into contact with!” Jasmine’s voice was filled with fury and Yun Che could well imagine that she was so shocked, upset and frustrated that she could barely contain the desire to smack him so hard that

he flew tens of kilometers.

“Are you thinking that if you aren’t able to succeed, you will be able to escape using the Primordial Profound Ark? If you are, then you are truly naive! Having to endure more than ten thousand years of darkness energy which is of such a high quality slowly eating away at it, the laws of space in this place have long since been distorted! You will barely even be able to use the Primordial Profound Ark to move around in this Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, much less use it to leave this place!”

Yun Che, “...”

“Also, I clearly just warned you that there was a living creature hiding in this place! It’s strength is at least at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm! Furthermore, to be able to survive in such a dark environment, it is very likely going to be an extremely evil creature! Perhaps you will die under the claws of this foul beast before you can even approach the Netherworld Udumbara Flower! And even if you wanted to flee at that moment, you



wouldn't be able to!"

"You've basically made your own grave! And this is a grave that even I can't dig you out of!" Jasmine yelled in fury.

"Heh heh." At this moment, Yun Che suddenly let out a small laugh.

"...To think that you are actually able to laugh right now." Jasmine said in an exasperated voice.

Yun Che faintly smiled as he said, “I just suddenly thought of the many times you’ve scolded me because I always risked my life for women. Every single time, I gave you the same reply. If it was for you, I would also be willing to throw my life away. But you’ve never once believed me. However, now that we’ve reached this point, are you starting to believe those words?”

“You...” Jasmine’s voice ground to a halt immediately.

“Jasmine, you’ve given far too much already. On the other hand, I have never really been able to do anything for you. Even cleansing that devilish poison from your body was only possible due to the existence of the Sky Poison Pearl. I have never ever needed to give up anything or pay any price. Right now, this Netherworld Udumbara Flower may be the only hope of you getting a new body. So even if the risk was ten times greater and the chance of success was ten times lower, I would still choose to stay behind.”

Jasmine, “...”

“Moreover, I was not being completely reckless when I chose to stay behind. I had already carefully weighed the pros and cons in my mind. Our situation is far less dire than you made it out to be. Even though the Dragon God Soul in my body has already become a part of my own soul, because my spirit power is too weak, even I am not able to tell just how strong it actually is. Therefore, it is impossible for you to know either, Jasmine. If my will is resolute enough and I am able to draw out even more of the

Dragon God Soul's soul power, approaching the Netherworld Udumbara Flower is not an impossibility!"

"And even if that living creature that is hidden in the darkness is an evil beast, if it is at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, it isn't impossible for me to beat it either. Two months ago, Fen Juechen had around the same level of strength. In the end, not only did I manage to beat him, it was a complete victory!" Yun Che said in a voice that was brimming with confidence as his eyes widened in the darkness.

“...” Jasmine remained silent for a while before viciously spitting out a response, “IDIOT! The reason why you were able to beat Fen Juechen was entirely because of Hong’er! You really thought that the present you could be a sixth stage Monarch!?”

“Because of... Hong’er?” Yun Che asked in a stunned voice.

“Forget it.” Jasmine said as she gave a faint sigh, “Now that things have reached this point, it

would be useless even if I scolded you another ten thousand times. If that foul beast can survive in such an environment, then it means that it must be a creature of the darkness element, so it should also be vulnerable to Hong'er just like Fen Juechen was. If that is the case, then you might have the ability to face it in open combat... but it isn't a sure thing! Right now, the first thing you need to do is to get accustomed to this environment so you can remain in your peak state indefinitely!"

Jasmine's tone remained stern

but she had subconsciously softened it already. Though she still felt that Yun Che choosing to remain in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest to wait for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower to bloom fully was the stupidest and most reckless thing he could do, that it was akin to digging his own grave, it had all been because of her this time around... completely because of her.

Moreover, this was a man that she had spent the most time with in her life, the man whom she understood the most. From start to finish, he had always



been this kind of person...

“When you’re in this place, do you feel a weight on your chest, do you start feeling dizzy and does it get harder for you to breathe?” Jasmine asked with surety in her voice.

Yun Che nodded his head, “Yes. Furthermore, these sensations are far more intense now than when I had first entered this place. Darkness energy is able to devour one’s life force and soul, so the sensations that I am feeling right now should be

considered quite normal.”

“Hmph! The only reason why you are able to maintain your present state is because your life force far exceeds that of a normal person. If it was a normal Emperor Profound Realm practitioner, he would have lost all the strength in his body and he would be teetering on the state of unconsciousness after one hundred breaths. But even with your life force, you still won’t be able to hold out in this place for too long. In two hours, you will...” Jasmine’s voice suddenly stopped and when she spoke again, her voice

had become neutral and emotionless, “It looks like I don’t need to remind you about this after all. If you dared to stay behind, then you’ve definitely thought of this as well.”

“That’s only natural.” Yun Che said as he stuck out his chest, “The origin of energy in this world is the energy of heaven and earth and darkness energy is naturally also no exception. The Great Way of the Buddha could even absorb and transform the energy from the spatial storm within the Primordial Profound Ark into vitality for my body, much less the fire element found

in the Sea of Death. So it stands to reason that the darkness energy in this place can be absorbed as well! The richer and denser an element is in one place, the stronger the ability of the Great Way of the Buddha to absorb and transform said element into vitality for my body. So it can definitely cancel out or maybe even exceed the rate at which my life force is being eroded by the darkness energy in this place.”

Yun Che’s brows twitched as he suddenly asked a question, “The level of the darkness energy in this place truly surpasses your

level as well? You said that you would not be able to stop it from devouring your spirit body but why do I not find it quite so terrible? In fact, I think that it is far weaker than the spatial storm I had to face in the Primordial Profound Ark! When I had to endure the spatial storms within the Primordial Profound Ark, if I just relaxed for a few breaths, I would be deader than dead. But in this place, even if I do not activate the Great Way of the Buddha, I can still hold out for a long period of time.”

“Hmph, didn’t I say this just

now. The level of the darkness energy is extremely high but its intensity is extremely weak. The darkness energy here is akin to the profound energy being released by a Sovereign whose profound strength is exhausted, whose life has withered away and who is on the brink of death. So even though the profound energy being released is still at the level of the Sovereign Profound Realm, it is so weak that it would not even be able to kill a True Profound Realm practitioner.” Jasmine said as her voice grew serious once more, “But what worries me the most is that this darkness energy is still clearly in an active state, it has not lain dormant.”

“...What is that supposed to mean?” Yun Che asked.

“It means that this darkness energy is clearly being constantly released from some place. Furthermore, despite the fact that it has been unable to spread due to being completely sealed in this place, it still remains so thin even after ten thousand years have passed... It is highly likely that some dreadful thing that is hidden in this place has been releasing this high level of darkness energy while some other thing has been

steadily absorbing this darkness energy! If not, why would the darkness energy in this place still be so thin despite this place being sealed away for ten thousand years and why is the darkness energy still in an active state!?”

“Otherwise, given the level of the darkness energy here, if it were to get dense enough, it is not something that Supreme Ocean Palace’s barrier could seal away!”

Jasmine’s words sent a fierce



jolt through Yun Che's body. After that, he asked in a low voice, "Could it be... that it is the darkness-element      Profound beast that has been hiding in here along?"

"Compared to a mere Monarch level darkness profound beast, I am much more curious about what exactly could be releasing this level of darkness energy!" Jasmine said in a somber tone, "Since we are already sealed in this place, we might as well find out what kind of mysteries are hiding in this place!"

“Just based on this bizarrely high level of darkness energy, the thing that is hidden in this place is far more dreadful and complex than what Supreme Ocean Palace thinks it is!”

Jasmine’s words caused the whole atmosphere of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest to abruptly change for Yun Che.

Something whose level surpasses Jasmine and something that Jasmine called “dreadful”... just what could it be!?

But all of these things were secondary to him right now. What he needed to do first was to get accustomed to this environment. After that... he would use all of his strength to obtain that Netherworld Udumbara Flower that was almost within reach, no matter what the cost.

Within the darkness, Yun Che sat down, calmed his mind and focused his heart. The Great Way of the Buddha circulated slowly at first, but after that, it began to circulate faster. All fifty

four of his profound entrances began to gradually open up along with the pores on his body. A thread of extremely refined and pure energy of heaven and earth began to flow into his body like a cool stream, becoming part of his strength and his life force.

A faint gold pagoda hazily appeared over Yun Che's head as it began to slowly revolve in place.

In this world that was filled with darkness energy, his life

force and profound energy was being swiftly chipped away and even his soul was under assault. At the same time, the Great Way of the Buddha drew out the energy of heaven and earth that was far purer than normal from this darkness energy and it swiftly recovered both his vitality and his profound energy... Gradually, as the golden colored pagoda soundlessly spun, the rate of erosion and recovery easily balanced each other out.

Yun Che opened his eyes... All of this was proceeding far more smoothly than he had expected.

As such, he could now survive in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, a place that would cause all who knew of it to blanch just at the sound of its name, for a sufficiently long period of time.

After Yun Che stood up, he raised an arm. With an explosive pop, violent Golden Crow flames sprang to life on his palm. The Golden Crow flames fought desperately to pierce the incomparably dense darkness and they managed to illuminate an area that was roughly ten paces around Yun Che.

Yun Che began to move slowly towards the deepest parts of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest once more. Given what Jasmine had just said, if the darkness energy in this place was not being absorbed by something and was allowed to build up over time, then it could completely... and easily destroy the sealing barrier that Supreme Ocean Palace boasted was the strongest in the entire continent. But the barrier had lasted for a whole ten millennia, and nothing out of the ordinary had ever happened either...

Could it be because the thing that was hiding in this place... was deliberately maintaining its sealed state!?

As that thought flashed through his mind, Yun Che immediately trembled in fear.

Within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, even Jasmine's spirit perception was greatly restricted, much less Yun Che's own spirit perception. As he walked towards the deepest parts of the nest, he could not sense anything else besides the



boundless darkness. If not for Jasmine's warning, he would not even have known about that "living creature" that was hiding within the darkness.

The entrance of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was rather narrow and cramped but the further one went in, the more spacious it got. In the middle segment, the path had already broadened out to an unknown height and width. As Yun Che neared the deepest part of the devil nest, the area the Golden Crow flames could illuminate shrank drastically. And at this time, an extremely bewitching

purple light once more appeared  
before Yun Che's eyes.

It was the otherworldly purple  
light of the Netherworld  
Udumbara Flower!

# Chapter 777 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (3)

---

Yun Che raised the Golden Crow flames a little higher as he averted his gaze from where the Netherworld Udumbara Flower laid. He spoke in a low voice, “Jasmine, where is that monster currently located?”

It was a while before Jasmine finally responded, “It is still right above the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, roughly one hundred meters above it. It

hasn't moved from its previous spot. If my spirit perception isn't wrong, its gaze is currently locked right onto you!"

"What about its profound strength? Can you confirm that it's at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm?" Yun Che asked again.

"...I don't dare to use too much soul power right now, and my spirit perception is heavily restricted in this place, so I am unable to confirm anything. But at this distance, even if there is a

difference between its real and currently measured strength, it shouldn't be too big of a difference."

"Good..." Yun Che murmured quietly before sucking in a quick breath. His face grew cold as he raised his head and looked at the spot that was roughly one hundred meters above the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. After that, he spoke in an immeasurably calm voice, "I apologize for disturbing your peace and quiet, Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!"

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign?” Jasmine said in a voice filled with suspicion, “Are you trying to test it?”

“Not completely.” Yun Che replied seriously, “I just have this feeling that it... should be the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign that Zi Ji was talking about! Zi Ji said that it had died more than six thousand years ago. For the last six thousand odd years, the disciples of Supreme Ocean Palace who entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest have not found any traces of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. However, when

the four of us first entered this place, it was clearly alive but it did not make a move from beginning to end... So it is extremely likely that its death was always an facade!

“Because it did not need die in the first place! As long as it remained hidden here, even if the Four Sacred Masters themselves entered this place, they would still not be able to detect its existence!”

Two pinpricks of deep gray light suddenly sprang to life in

the boundless darkness that was hanging over Yun Che's head.

Those were a pair of immeasurably dreadful eyes! Yun Che felt his body and soul fiercely tremble the instant those eyes opened.

“Foolish human! Was the reason you disregarded your own life to remain in this place to beg this king to personally send you on your way!?”

It was not the least bit



bewildered that Yun Che had discovered its existence and its hoarse and raspy voice was filled with a violence and arrogance that caused one's heart to palpitate.

“...So that is to say that you are indeed the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign that lived here ten thousand years ago?” Yun Che asked as his heart leaped in his chest.

Even though Jasmine had already told him that there was a dreadful monster hiding in this

place, upon seeing it himself, his heart was seized by shock and horror. Because its existence was something that even Supreme Ocean Palace, who had been guarding the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, was not aware of!

“Hahahaha!” That dreadful voice erupted in laughter, “This king has only stated his name once to you humans but who would have thought that you would still remember this king’s name after ten thousand years have passed. Even though this king has not seen the light of day for ten thousand years, making a single appearance was enough to

plunge you pitiful creatures into an eternal abyss of terror, hahahahaha...”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s voice was extremely unpleasant and Yun Che could barely make out what it was saying. Furthermore, every single word that was uttered from its mouth caused his body to cramp up and its laugh was extremely hard to bear. But the words it uttered had completely admitted to the fact that... it was truly the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign that Supreme Ocean Palace thought was long dead!

That also meant that... it had survived for the past ten thousand years till now!

The strongest Monarchs would have died several times over in the space of ten thousand years, yet it still remained despite a whole ten thousand years having passed!

This lifespan was completely inconsistent with logic and common sense!

And it was far stronger than the Tyrant Profound beast that it was rumored to be!

“To think that it really was this guy!” Yun Che said to Jasmine in a low voice, “It has not passed away despite ten thousand years having gone by, it is definitely some kind of abnormal monster!”

Jasmine, “...”

Yun Che sucked in a quick breath as he regained his

composure. He raised his head once more and spoke in a calm voice, “Even though you have never shown yourself in the Profound Sky Continent, the name of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign has never once been forgotten. As for me, I am merely what you termed a pitiful human being. I have no grudge or vendetta against you, so I definitely do not want to become your enemy. I am here only for the sake of one thing, once I obtain it, I will leave this place immediately. I will definitely not speak a single word regarding your presence... I just spoke out because I wanted to apologize for disturbing your peace and quiet.”

It was very clear that Yun Che had no desire to enter into a deadly struggle with a horrifying creature that could survive in this environment of darkness for at least the past ten thousand years. If it did not obstruct his attempt to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower and they both remained amicable to each other... That would naturally be the best result that could be reached.

However, Yun Che's hopes were dashed just as those words left his mouth.

“You foolish, pathetic and insignificant lower lifeform!!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign thundered, that ear-piercing and soul-scalding voice filled with fury, contempt and disdain. That pair of eyes which seemed like two dark grey abysses suddenly dropped down from the air, “Not only do you have designs on this king’s Netherworld Udumbara Flower, you’re actually still dreaming that this king will let you live!”

Bang!!



With a huge explosion, an enormous gray figure landed heavily in front of Yun Che.

A baleful aura that seemed to come from hell itself assaulted Yun Che, forcing him to stumble back five steps as he reflexively clenched his fists. From its voice, Yun Che could tell that it was no more than thirty meters away from him but the only thing he could see in the darkness were those grayish-white eyes. Other than that, he was not even able to make out a hazy silhouette.

It knew that Yun Che wanted the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... Oh yeah! It had already heard the conversation that he had with Zi Ji earlier!!

Even though the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was close by, he still could not see it. However, Yun Che did feel a dreadful pressure envelop him as it sought to crush both his body and soul. This pressure was entirely different from any other kind of pressure that Yun Che had endured in his life. Icy, violent rancor, arrogance and

unreal bloodlust... Yun Che felt a thick wave of negative emotions envelop every corner of this dark world. All of a sudden, he was struck by the dreadful feeling that he was sealed in some kind of hellish volcano and that he was about to face the cruelest punishments imaginable.

“The root of this king’s very life and soul had been left in tatters so I had no choice but to seal myself in this place, not daring to see the light of day for ten thousand years! The darkness energy in this place has helped this king slowly recover my vitality and strength and this

Netherworld Udumbara Flower will be able to restore this king's soul origin! This is something the heavens have blessed this king with. It is the most precious thing to this king in my life! In this disgraceful place, the day on which this flower blooms every twenty four years is the day this king looks forward to the most! To think that a foolish and insignificant inferior lifeform such as yourself would dare to have designs on the object that this king treasures the most!"

When an immeasurably strong existence faced a "pitiful

creature,” it normally would not even be moved to anything resembling anger. But it was very clear that Yun Che had touched this creature’s reverse scale, something that he definitely should not have done!

The baleful aura which it had suddenly released caused Yun Che’s heart to race but after that, he quickly regained his composure. His eyes turned exceptionally cold as he said, “It looks like... there isn’t much room for discussion after all.”

Not only was he unable to attain his desired outcome but the situation had deteriorated in the worst possible manner... To think that this Netherworld Udumbara Flower was actually the “reverse scale” of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!

This also meant that if he wanted to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, he would have to kill the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign first!

He had to kill a monster that had lived for more than ten

thousand years! A monster that was surrounded by boundless mysteries!

“It was rumored that your strength was around the initial stages of the Tyrant Profound Realm ten thousand years ago. Now a whole ten thousand years have passed, yet you are only at the middle stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm...” Since it had devolved into a life-or-death struggle between them, Yun Che naturally dispensed with all formalities and courtesies. Instead he gave it a cold smile as he continued, “Even the most ordinary human

being could outstrip this pitiful rate of growth! It looks like the monster who keeps calling us inferior lifeforms... is nothing much after all!”

“Hahahahaha!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was not provoked by Yun Che’s words. Instead, a wild laugh erupted from his throat, “Foolish and pathetic creature, how could you even deign to understand the true might of this king! This king’s current isolation is only because the very roots of my life and soul have been wounded! As long as this Netherworld Udumbara Flower



is not destroyed, this king's vitality and his soul origin will have completely recovered after three thousand more years! When that time comes, this king's body and soul will swiftly recover and this king's strength will grow by leaps and bounds! And at that time, everything in this world will have to bow at this king's feet!"

Jasmine, "..."

"Tch." Yun Che snorted disdainfully, his expression filled with contempt, "I have met

quite a few strong people in my life and there's a whole bunch of people who are stronger than you. But when it comes to being boastful and arrogant, I don't think I've met a single person who has beaten you yet. Oh... could it be that you've been crazy from the start? That sounds about right, in this environment of absolute darkness, it wouldn't be surprising for someone to be driven to suicide within a month or two, much less lose their minds. Speaking of that, I have to say that I am suddenly filled with admiration for you. Not only did you not commit suicide despite being holed up in this place for ten thousand years,

you're actually doing just fine."

"Heh..." A dangerous chuckle coldly rang out in the darkness as the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign snickered, "This king has been able to endure for the past one million years, so what is a mere ten thousand years to me!"

Yun Che's brows fiercely jumped...

One million years!?

“How ridiculous! To think that this king would deign to waste his breath on a foolish and pathetic lower life form such as yourself!”

Boom!!

An icy-cold energy wave exploded outwards as the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s eyes turned from grayish-white to jet black. Around its body, dense black-colored mist gathered. In an instant, all of the darkness energy within the Moon

Slaughter Devil Nest began to stir violently as an evil wind that seemed to come from hell itself mercilessly swept through and began to erode every part of the place.

Yun Che felt a pressure on his chest but after that he leaped backwards with all his strength, instantly retreating three hundred meters away. The darkness energy that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had explosively released made him feel as if he had instantly dropped into the pits of hell.

Wooosh!!

Yun Che's left hand blazed with Phoenix flames while his right hand was engulfed by the Golden Crow flames. His entire body was being baptized by fire and his brows were fiercely knitted together. While he had been alarmed and shocked by the darkness energy radiating from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, for some odd reason, he could not help but feel a familiarity from it that should not have existed...

## Familiarity?

“Ignorant lower life form, given your pitiful strength, approaching the Netherworld Udumbara Flower would only end in your death. This king does not even need to personally execute you. But at the same time, it would also stain this king’s Netherworld Udumbara Flower with the dirty and inferior soul lower given off by you humans! So this king has no choice but to personally consign you to the dust within this darkness!”

The boundless darkness had completely camouflaged the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. Yun Che could not see where it was and could only rely on his restricted spirit perception to sense it. So in this current situation, Yun Che had already been forced to assume an absolute defensive posture before they had even come to blows.

At this moment, an extremely low voice icily rang out:

“Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal



Night!!”

This voice had not come from Yun Che... instead it was Jasmine who had said those words!

These six words caused Yun Che to be rooted in place while also causing the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to abruptly to freeze in place just as he was about to make an attack.

“Who is it!?” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign

roared as its pupils suddenly radiated a hellish, ebon light. This hellish light fell onto Yun Che's body as it roared once more, "Oh, so that's how it is! Your body houses another soul... and this soul is actually able to recognize this king's devil art!"

"Jasmine, what is going on?" Yun Che asked apprehensively. He finally knew where that odd sense of familiarity originated from... The darkness energy that was radiating from this Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was astonishingly similar to the energy aura that Fen Juechen had released the other day. It

was only that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aura was many times denser and purer than Fen Juechen's aura had been.

“This monster is neither a beast nor a man!” Jasmine's voice was frighteningly low, because the shock and terror in her heart was many times that of Yun Che's own, “It is extremely likely that this monster is... from one million years ago... during the Primordial Era... it is from the Eternal Night Devil Clan...”

“A devil!!”

The appearance of the “Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night” in the Profound Sky Continent had caused Jasmine to sense that something was amiss. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign standing in front of them was extremely likely to be the dreadful truth behind... the “Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night”!

# Chapter 778 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (4)

---

“...!!” Even though he had similar suspicions, hearing Jasmine utter the word “devil” in an immeasurably somber tone caused Yun Che’s heart and soul to fiercely quiver.

Devils! They lived during the Primordial Era and had dominated the Primal Chaos Realm together with the ancient gods. Their strength, vitality and spirit... were at a level that

was far above humanity... and they were an existence that was greater than all other living creatures as well!

But the gods and devils had clearly gone extinct a million years ago!

The dead gods had at the very least left behind their scattered legacies but according to what Jasmine had told him, the devils had long ago faded away completely, not leaving a single thing behind.

“Jasmine... are you sure?” Yun Che asked as his heart remained stuck in his throat. If what Jasmine had said was correct, then the monster standing in front of him was a terrifying creature of ancient legend that should have been wiped out one million years ago!!

“It is extremely likely... The Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night that he had displayed may not have been too powerful, but it was incredibly pure! There is an entire world of difference between the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night it just displayed and the one that Fen Juechen

used! If one's devil body and devil soul was not pure enough, it was impossible to use such a pure devil art... Furthermore the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night was a devil art that was supposed to have died out along with the ancient devil clan!"

Every single word that Jasmine said weighed down on Yun Che like an enormous and heavy boulder, "The Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night that was used by Fen Juechen and the Eternal Night Royal Family had very likely come from it!"



Yun Che, “...”

“Who are you! How could you recognise this king’s devil art!?” Jasmine’s words had not only stunned Yun Che, they had also stunned the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, causing the darkness energy that was swirling around it to sink slightly. But the black light that was shining in its eyes grew even brighter.

“Hmph, what a joke.” Jasmine said icily, “Do you think the

Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night is very rare? Within the Profound Sky Continent, there are tens of thousands of people who can use the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night!”

Jasmine’s words were clearly meant to sound things out.

“What a load of bullshit!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign roared as fury filled his voice, “The Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night is the devil art unique to my Eternal Night Devil Clan, and it is also the only

devil art that still exists in this world! Under this sky, other than this king himself, it will definitely not be used by another!”

“Oh really? Since this devil art should solely belong to you, then can you explain how this princess could recognize it at first glance and how I was even able to correctly identify its name!?” Jasmine replied icily.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was dumbstruck for a short while. But after that, the

dark mist around its body began to swirl violently as it become a violent tsunami of darkness, pushing Yun Che backwards by tens of steps once more. At the same time, Yun Che could clearly tell that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's fury was not directed at him.

“Oh so that is how it is... That's how it is!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign roared in fury, “It was that unfilial son of mine... that unfilial wretch!! Not only did he betray this king, he even handed down our clan's supreme and unsurpassed devil art to humans...

AHHHHHHHHHHHHH!!! This  
king... should have torn you to  
shred all those years ago...  
TORN YOU TO SHREDS!!!”

Boom! Boom! Boom!!

The Moon Slaughter Devil  
Sovereign had completely lost  
control of its emotions and its  
power had gone berserk as well.  
The darkness profound energy  
spread all over the place as it  
lashed out crazily at its  
surroundings and deafening  
explosions blanketed the area.

“What did he say? His son?” Yun Che asked with bleak eyes as he remained on his guard. But he was completely unable to understand what the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was roaring.

Jasmine explained in a slow but low voice, “We definitely need to think of a way to get it to divulge all of its secrets! To think that there was actually another devil hiding in this world! This definitely can’t just be categorized as simply an odd occurrence! This is a huge matter that is big enough to shock the entire Primal Chaos

Realm!”

“If he is really a devil from the ancient devil race and he is really able to recover his strength one day, then... he will bring about a horrifying calamity to the entire Primal Chaos Realm!”

Yun Che’s mind whirled before he shouted out in a stern voice, “Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign! I can tell you one thing, the ‘Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night’ that we know of comes from a sword that is

known as the ‘Heavenly Sin Divine Sword’! Does that Heavenly Sin Divine Sword have any relation to you whatsoever?”

“Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign said as he gave a furious laugh, “That is this king’s Eternal Night Devil Sword!!”

Eternal Night... Devil Sword?

The Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was the name given to the sword



by the Eternal Night Royal Family, and it was a warning to its descendants that whoever used this sword was committing a crime against heaven! The Eternal Night Devil Sword... so that was its true name!?

“Why is it in the Profound Sky Continent? Did you leave it behind on purpose?” Yun Che asked as his brows knit together. As he was speaking, he also began to quietly withdraw all of his concentrated profound energy. Yun Che did this because he knew that if he made himself seem weak enough, weak to the point where it looked like he did

not have the strength to resist and was a dead man walking, it would be much easier to get the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to divulge all of his secrets.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's rage had still not dissipated and it seemed like the "unfilial son" he had mentioned was the greatest regret of his life. He roared in nearly uncontrollable rage, "Ten thousand years ago, this king had finally managed to escape the seal, and even though I did not die, the roots of my life and soul were completely destroyed. Anytime my body came into

contact with the light of the sun and the moon, I was wracked with unbearable agony. Furthermore, it was highly likely that I would die in that condition so I had no choice but to cower in this dark abyss! In order for this king to find out what was going on in the outside world, I threw the Eternal Night Devil Sword into the outside world! And sealed inside the Eternal Night Devil Sword was this king's unfilial wretch of a son!"

“This king had thought that he would do this king's bidding and be this king's eyes and ears in

the world. But this unfilial wretch actually cut off the soul link that he had with this king! He actually betrayed this king! And he even passed down the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night to you lowly human beings...

AHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!”

“To think that this king actually personally destroyed his devil body all those years ago in order to seal his devil soul into the Eternal Night Devil Sword, all so he could escape death together with this king! But in the end, he wound up betraying this king... That unfilial wretch!

THAT UNFILIAL WRETCHED  
SON!!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s emotions were going berserk, and his deafening roars of fury threatened to rupture Yun Che’s eardrums.

“...Jasmine, do you understand what he is saying?” Yun Che whispered as he leaned against one of the walls towards the back.

“The Heavenly Sin Divine

Sword is the Eternal Night Devil Sword that he is talking about, and there is the soul of another devil hiding in that sword!” Jasmine said in a somber voice, “However that sword is no cause for concern because if even the Eternal Night Royal Family could easily seal it away, it means that its strength is already too weak to even be worth mentioning. Right now, even if the devil soul in that sword hasn’t been completely extinguished, it is already teetering on the verge of oblivion. But this Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign... why is he still alive!? And he was even able to survive to this very day!”

“This planet was created by the Evil God! Since he said that he was sealed away for one million years, it is extremely likely that the Evil God was the one who sealed him away! Since the Evil God had the power to seal him away for so long, then why didn't he just kill this Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign in the first place? He also just talked about how he sealed the devil soul of his own son into his sword, so that his son could escape death together with him... What exactly is going on here!?”

A living devil, this matter was far more terrifying and serious than a normal person could imagine.

Jasmine's voice once again rang out within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, "Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign! You keep claiming that you are from the Eternal Night Devil Clan and you also keep saying that you've been sealed for a million years. Are you actually trying to tell us that you're a devil god from the Ancient Era? Hah, how ridiculous! The god race and devil race died out one million years ago, this is a fact that any



three year old child within the Primal Chaos Dimension can tell you. So every single word that you've uttered is foolish beyond belief!"

"This king's devil body is not something you lowly humans have the right to call into question!" The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign furiously roared back at her, "Yes, the gods fell and the devils died. Half of my Eternal Night Devil Clan died at the hands of the god race, the other half were destroyed by the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations! Only this king survived! That damned Evil God,

he was clearly struck by the Evil Infant's Wheel of Myriad Tribulations' 'Myriad Tribulations', yet he was still able to survive for so long after that. He was even able to use the remainder of his strength to seal this king into this lowly place!!”

“...It was just as you had guessed! He was sealed by the Evil God!” Yun Che whispered to Jasmine.

Jasmine, “...”

“This king was sealed away for one million years... A whole million years!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign continued to howl in fury, as if he was giving vent to the berserk rage that was caused by his “unfilial son”, “That damnable seal is eating away at this king’s devil body and devil soul every second! This king originally believed that he would die due to the Evil God’s seal but who would have thought that the seal’s power would suddenly run out ten thousand years ago. That not only left this king with a sliver of my life origin and soul origin, it also gave me back my freedom!”

“...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s words caused a flash of doubt to cross Yun Che’s mind... Normally speaking, after being released from a seal, a person would say that “I had regained my freedom, but was left with a sliver of my life origin and soul origin after that”, but what the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign said was, “This not only left this king with a sliver of my life origin and soul origin, it also gave me back my freedom.”

So his words seemed to express

that he did not have any freedom before he was sealed by the Evil God.

However, this doubt did not linger in his mind, because he knew that it was very likely only a difference in the way the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign expressed himself.

“That Evil God would never believe that the seal that he exhausted all his strength to set was not able to kill this king... What’s more, he himself lies dead one million years in the

past, hahahahaha!!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s rage turned into wild laughter, “It is truly heaven itself which has protected this king. Heaven itself which has protected my Eternal Night Devil Clan!”

“The Evil God sealed this king in this incomparably inferior world for one reason. It must have been to ensure that if the day came where this king managed to escape his seal, I would be unable to regenerate my broken devil body and devil soul and the only thing I would be able to do was wait for death to claim me! He definitely would

never have dreamed that a group of foolish, lowly humans would actually create a perfect barrier for this king. Not only did it completely obstruct the light of the sun and the moon, it also prevented this precious devil energy from dissipating, leaving it completely for this king's use! And what was even more marvelous was that a Netherworld Udumbara Flower was actually birthed in this place... So I could absorb this devil energy to recover my life force and I could consume this Netherworld Udumbara Flower to recover my soul origin. All of these things fell into place perfectly. It is clear that the heavens themselves are helping

my Eternal Night Devil Clan to once again establish the reign of the devils!”

“!!!!” At this point, Yun Che fully understood what the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was saying.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign... A devil that the Evil God had used the last bit of his strength to seal away before he himself had fallen! The seal lost its power ten thousand years ago, allowing the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to



regain his freedom. But at the same time, the seal had been eating away at him constantly for one million years. So even if he managed to escape the seal, it was just a matter of time before he met his own end.

But as it happened, he was discovered by the founders of Supreme Ocean Palace not long after he had escaped his seal and so a barrier was erected around him... which simultaneously created the most optimal place for him to recover!

Furthermore, due to the accumulation of darkness energy, a Netherworld Udumbara Flower had been birthed in this place!

The Supreme Ocean Palace had wanted to seal away this dreadful devil energy and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign along with it... But it had unwittingly saved him!

On the other hand, if not for this barrier, that terrifying devil energy that seemed to come out of nowhere would spread

towards the Profound Sky Continent and the consequences of that were unthinkable.

Just as Jasmine had said, compared to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, the object that continuously released this devil energy was far more terrifying!

Jasmine replied in a cold voice, “All those years ago, even the Evil God died due to the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations, why is it that you were the sole survivor!?! Moreover, sealing you for a

million years would be far more difficult than killing you. So why did the Evil God choose to exhaust all his remaining strength to seal you away rather than simply killing you?”

“Heh.” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign gave a sinister chuckle and at this moment, his fury had begun to abate as well, “Because the Evil Infant’s Wheel of Myriad Tribulations is not able to kill this king! And the Evil God is even less capable of killing this king!!”

“Why couldn’t they kill you!?”  
Jasmine pressed on, “The  
Eternal Night Devil Clan was not  
the most powerful clan amongst  
the ancient devil race! Even if  
you are the king of the Eternal  
Night Devil Clan, you are still  
definitely not counted amongst  
the strongest devils either! Even  
the devil god of the highest  
order, the Creation God known  
as the Heaven Smiting Devil  
Emperor had fallen... so why are  
you the only one that is still  
alive!?”

Boom!

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign did not reply. As he regained his composure and his rage died down, the darkness energy around his body flared to life once more as a bone-cutting, icy aura heavily locked onto Yun Che. As he advanced, the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest began to fiercely tremble, “Since you are so eager to know the truth, then you can ask that damnable Evil God after I’ve sent you to hell! Lowly and pathetic humans, if you had been trapped in here by accident, this king wouldn’t even bother lifting a finger. Instead, I would let the devil energy in this place consume you. But you dared to lust after

this king's Netherworld  
Udumbara Flower... So prepare  
yourselves, as this king will  
grant you the cruelest of  
deaths!!”

# Chapter 779 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (5)

---

“Be forever consigned to dust in the darkness!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign took a step forward. Immediately, the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest began to quake. The dark mist around his body billowed crazily as it transformed into a giant wave of darkness energy and surged toward him.



Absolute darkness and extreme cold engulfed Yun Che like a boundless, inescapable, abyss. In front of this wave of darkness energy, Yun Che felt his body becoming rigid and he felt like dust in front of a tidal wave that reached the heavens. He was not able to attack with the Golden Crow flames he had gathered up as every cell in his body screamed for him to “escape”! If he dared to face it head on, it would only end in his complete and total destruction.

This was the first time that an

attack caused his very soul to tremble in fear before it even neared his body.

Yun Che abruptly bit the tip of his tongue as he activated both Star God's Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning at the same time as he darted backwards, quick as lightning. As he was making his swift escape, he felt his back smash heavily against a wall that he had no way of seeing.

Boom!!

The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest shook again as the wave of darkness exploded at the place where Yun Che had been stonewalled. The exploding darkness energy seemed to spread out like a horde of evil spirits.

The interior of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had been saturated by darkness energy of an extremely high level for an entire ten thousand years. Every inch of its walls and every grain of sand within had become incomparably durable and it also had an immeasurably strong resistance against darkness

energy itself. Even though it was being impacted by this peerlessly terrifying darkness, no dust flew in the wake of the attack and the wall itself merely shook but did not collapse.

Even though Yun Che had not been caught by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's exploding darkness profound energy, the icy cold aftershocks caused his whole body to be wracked by unbearable pain. His brows knitted together tightly as he took big gasps of breath. After facing the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's first attack, his heart instantly sank to the

bottom of his stomach... Both individuals were at the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm and both of them also wielded the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night but just based on the darkness profound energy that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had used in his attack, he was at least several times stronger than Fen Juechen!

Furthermore the icy cold might and pressure that were emanating from his body were at least one hundred times more stronger than Fen Juechen's!!

Even when he faced the Sovereign of the Seas, Qu Fengyi, the might and pressure that he had felt was vastly inferior to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's.

Because, it... was a devil from ancient times after all!!

“Yun Che, you better listen up and listen good!” Jasmine yelled in an extremely serious tone, “This Moon Devil Sovereign! No matter what tactics or trump cards you have to use, you must

use all your strength to kill him, even if you have to put your life on the line! Only your strength is not restricted by the dark devil energy in this place! So you are the only person who can kill him on this Blue Pole Star! Otherwise, the day he fully revives is the day the entire Profound Sky Continent and all the living creatures on this world experience a catastrophe beyond imagination!”

“Heh, right now, I have no time to care about a catastrophe.” Yun Che’s hands tightened into fists as he barked out a miserable laugh filled with self-mockery,

“If I’m unable to kill him, then I’m dead meat. So I have no choice but to put everything on the line anyways... It’s only that this time, there really isn’t any chance of victory.”

Because the monster he was facing was a devil from ancient times!

In the million years since the fall of the gods and devils, Yun Che was astonishingly the very first person who had crossed arms with a devil in the entire Primal Chaos Realm!



“If it was just you alone, then you’d indeed be as good as dead, as you wouldn’t have a snowball’s chance in hell of beating him.” Jasmine said in a deep voice, “But if we add in Hong’er... then we might just have a chance!”

“Hmph, what a pitiful struggle!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign stretched out a pitch-black arm as a cluster of dark mist coalesced in front of him. After that, it started to pulsate like an enormous living organ. After the Moon Slaughter

Devil Sovereign stretched out his finger, the dark mist fiercely tore itself apart as it shot out a thousand bolts of black lightning that stormed in Yun Che's location. Every single bolt of dark lightning was as slender as a needle but the might contained within each bolt of lightning caused all the hairs on Yun Che's body to stand on end as he instantly went pale.

“Don't even think of trying to break that attack, dodge all of them! If you are hit by any one of them, the darkness energy contained within will directly harm your soul!” Jasmine yelled

out an urgent warning.

Yun Che did not even stop to think about it. He clung to the side of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest's walls as he once again activated Star God's Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning to escape from this attack at the fastest speed possible.

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!  
Bang...

The dark lightning tore a

thousand holes in the air before it collided against the stone wall with an ear-splitting wail. At the same time, vicious currents of dark energy spilled from the dark lightning uncontrollably. Many stone walls were scattered within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, so as Yun Che fled backwards with all his might, all of the dark lightning was soaked up by the stone walls... Despite the dreadful power that was contained by each bolt of dark lightning, power sufficient to easily pierce through Heavenly Firm Jade, none of these lightning bolts were able to penetrate a single stone wall in this place.

These stone walls that had been saturated by darkness energy for ten thousand years had clearly become a protective umbrella for Yun Che as he fled pathetically.

“Hah... hah...” Yun Che gasped violently as he leaned heavily against a stone wall, his forehead covered in cold sweat. Once he had managed to compose himself, he realized that the two attacks made by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had pushed him from the depths of the Moon Slaughter Devil

Nest to its middle.

If this continued, he would simply flee until he was rendered unable to flee.

“This can’t continue...” Yun Che mumbled through gritted teeth as he stared in the direction of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, “Merely escaping is completely meaningless in this place... I’ll just have to put it all on the line, no matter what!”

“Ah, this has truly shocked this king! To think that a pathetically weak and inferior lifeform such as yourself could escape this king’s punishment twice in a row. But it is such a pity, because you are not qualified to become a plaything for this king. So this time, even if you have ten more lives, even if you are ten times faster, you will disappear forever! Not even a single bone will be left behind!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s voice seemed near and far as it rang out from within the boundless darkness, making it hard for Yun Che to

get a lock on his position. He gritted his teeth hard as he suppressed the terror that was welling up in his heart...

“Purgatory!!”

With a low roar, all of the profound energy in Yun Che’s body explosively swelled up as the pupils of his eyes and the surrounding profound energy instantly turned a dull red.

“Burning Sun Rupture!!”



Yun Che darted out from behind the stone wall as blazing Golden Crow flames frantically ignited and exploded with full force towards the onrushing Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

Boom!!

When the onrushing Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was still sixty meters away, the Golden Crow flames abruptly ruptured, but these rupturing flames of destruction did not

release the power of the Golden Crow flames which would reduce everything to nothingness. Instead the flames were quickly extinguished within the darkness as they faded away. Within the short span of a single breath, everything was plunged into pitch-black stillness once again.

“Wh...at!” Yun Che said as he gritted his teeth fiercely.

“This is truly a meaningless struggle.” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign said with icy

contempt and mockery, “If it was the flames of the Vermillion Bird, this king may feel the slightest hints of trepidation. But these lowly Golden Crow flames are merely a pitiful joke!”

“...” The fact that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was an ancient devil was confirmed yet again! Not only had he identified the flames as Golden Crow flames with a single glance but he also did not show the slightest bit of amazement at seeing them.

At this moment, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aura abruptly grew thick and heavy as the expression in his eyes fiercely changed as well... because he had felt the change in Yun Che's profound energy and he had also noticed the strange profound light which glowed around him.

“Evil God... Arts!!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign said in a voice that trembled suddenly. But after that, it morphed into a roar of pure fury and rage, “You actually inherited the powers of the Evil God... AHHH!!!! THEN YOU DESERVE

TO DIE EVEN MORE!! EVEN MORE!!”

“This king has sworn countless of times that the first thing I had to do when I saw the light of day again was to destroy every single trace of the Evil God left in this universe!!”

“So you, the human who who has inherited the power of the Evil God! This king will consign both your body and soul to oblivion forever!!”

The seal had lasted for one million years and what was accumulated had been one million years of resentment and rage against the Evil God!

The moment he had felt the Evil God's power on Yun Che's body, all the resentment that festered within the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign erupted like a raging volcano. In a single instant, his fury caused the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest to shake and it was a million times more intense than the fury he had previously directed towards his "unfilial son".

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign roared once again as he suddenly took to the air. He shot a claw out towards Yun Che and a thick and dense darkness that seemed to come from a devil god that dwelt in the depths of a deep abyss shot out from his body to engulf Yun Che.

He wanted to use that darkness energy to imprison Yun Che before using his bare hands to personally tear Yun Che into bits and pieces. All so that he could give vent to the million years of

anger and resentment he held against the Evil God.

Yun Che steeled himself as he tried to push aside his fear and desire to flee but the dread that welled up in his soul and his body's instinctual desire to cower in fear was incomparably intense. The pressure from this devil simply wasn't something a mortal's body could bear. Yun Che being able to endure up to this point was already difficult beyond belief.

“I have to put it all in the line...



The only choice I have is to put it all on the line! If not, the only thing that awaits me is a meaningless death!”

His body was still being wracked by uncontrollable trembling and he gritted his teeth so hard that he had nearly broken a few of them. However, the dread in his heart instantly turned into a violent rage...

“Hong’er!!”

A vermillion light shone as the

Heaven Smiting Sword  
appeared. Yun Che's body shot  
into the air at the same time as  
he braced to meet the darkness  
energy that he could not  
possibly resist. While he gave  
vent to his emotions with a great  
roar, he poured all of his energy  
into the Heaven Smiting Sword  
without reservation as he  
smashed it towards the  
boundless darkness before him.

It was also at this exact moment  
that Yun Che suddenly saw the  
absolute darkness clearing  
before his very eyes.

The body of the Heaven Smiting Sword released a vermillion light that Yun Che was quite familiar with. In this world of darkness, that the Golden Crow flames could barely illuminate, the vermillion light that emanated from the Heaven Smiting Sword was actually able to pierce through the darkness around Yun Che... it revealed the approaching whirlpool of darkness... and even managed to light up every corner of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest!!

It even clearly revealed the full appearance of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to

Yun Che as well!

At the same time, he felt the all-encompassing, unconquerable fear that he held towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, which had captivated his heart, suddenly disappear. It had disappeared completely, he even felt that the vortex of darkness which sped to engulf him had become far less dreadful. Even the dark might, which radiated from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, had become less heavy.

What's... this?

All of these changes had occurred the moment Yun Che had put his life on the line and rushed forth with the Heaven Smiting Sword. It was just that Yun Che did not have the time to be amazed by these changes or even think about them. Because in the very next instant, the Heaven Smiting Sword had heavily collided with the vortex of dark energy that had been conjured by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

The instant the sword blade approached the vortex of darkness, Yun Che clearly saw the originally raging and surging vortex of dark energy become sluggish... or perhaps it would be better to say that it had curled up in fear!

Ripppppp!!

The dreadful vortex of dark energy was sliced cleanly in two by the Heaven Smiting Sword, as if it was simply a pitch-black curtain. The dark devil energy that rushed out did not attempt

to rush up and devour Yun Che. Instead, it curled back as if in fear before twisting backwards as it fled desperately... as if it had come face to face with the one thing in the world that it feared the most.

The incomparably dreadful vortex of darkness had been dispersed with a single blow. Yun Che stared at the now empty space in front of him with blank eyes as he could barely believe what he had just witnessed. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was equally stunned. He stopped in place as both of his eyes fell heavily on

the sword in Yun Che's hand. The gray light in his pupils grew incredibly frenzied as he gasped, "That... that is..."

At this time, Yun Che finally came back to his senses. His heart no longer felt any fear or pressure as he used Star God's Broken Shadow to appear in front of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, smashing the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword down fiercely on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's chest.



The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was in shock as he was struck by Yun Che's attack.

“ARGGHHHHHHH!!”

A hoarse and shrill cry blanketed the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Even though Yun Che's blow had been hastily struck, it still carried the force of a tremendous amount of weight and sent the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign flying.

Yun Che did not give chase. He

only stood there, rooted in place... All he heard was the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's shrill and miserable wails, which did not die out until a long time later.

An ancient devil who could endure a seal that lasted a million years, who had a mighty devil body had actually let out such a shrill and miserable wail after being struck by Yun Che's sword... It was as if he had suffered the cruelest punishment in this world.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's pitch-black body heavily smashed against a stone wall that was three hundred meters away before it flopped to the ground. But he did not stand up. Instead, he began to roll on the ground as he let out cries that spoke of incomparable agony... As for the place where the Heaven Smiting Sword had struck his chest, it was astonishingly marked with a vermillion red wound. The vermillion light radiating from the wound was exceptionally glaring and it did not fade for a long time after, as streams of pitch-black blood poured out from within.

“Devil... devil slayer... sword!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's voice had been warped by pain but the three words “devil slayer sword” had clearly been uttered with deep dread.

Yun Che stared blankly at the scene in front of him. The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was no longer a world of absolute darkness. It had now become completely stained in vermillion light. And the Moon Slaughter

Devil Sovereign who was incomparably terrifying was now mewling in pain as he laid curled out up on the ground... Yun Che bent his head to look at the vermillion greatsword which was all too familiar to him with a dazed expression on his face. Yet at this moment, it almost seemed to be a stranger.

“Hahahahaha, that was the case after all!” Jasmine crowed triumphantly, “The moment an ancient devil is wounded by a devil slayer sword, the pain it endures is a thousand times greater and the time the wound takes to recover is also ten times

slower than usual! So devils who are more pure than others will fear the devil slayer sword even more!”

“So now, you should know why I said that as long as you have Hong’er around, there is still a chance that you can beat this Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!”

# Chapter 780 – Xiao Yun's Disappearance

---

“So you’re saying that the reason why I was able to defeat Fen Juechen so easily was also due to Hong’er?” Yun Che asked in astonishment.

“Hmph, what do you think?”

“...” Yun Che immediately grew depressed. Since he had beaten Fen Juechen, he had always thought that his strength had reached the stage where he

could go toe to toe with a practitioner of the sixth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. But to think that it was actually because of Hong'er!

It was no wonder why the darkness profound energy that Fen Juechen had used during their duel was far weaker than the exceedingly terrifying aura that had radiated from his body... At that time, he had already found it exceedingly strange but he had not thought of Hong'er at all. Instead, he guessed that it was because Feng Juechen was unable to obtain complete mastery over the



darkness profound energy which had come from an external source.

Under the vermillion light emanating from the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword, the originally inky dark interior of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest became incredibly clear and Yun Che could even see the small pebbles at the corners of the nest. He naturally could also see the full appearance of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign... He was nearly five meters tall, black light radiating from his body. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's skin was a deep gray

color while his hair was bone-white, trailing all the way to his feet.

At first glance, besides the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's enormous build and the dusky hue of his skin, his appearance was basically no different from a human's. Having been tortured by a seal for a million years and having to hide from the light of day for another ten thousand years, Yun Che had thought that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign would be exceedingly ugly and look as old as a ghost. To his surprise, the Moon Devil Sovereign's

features, while warped in pain, were exceptionally handsome, from a human's perspective. Furthermore, he did not look much older than a thirty year old man.

“It... it can't be... it can't be a devil slayer sword!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign finally stood up, but he remained in a hunched posture and the gray hand that he held to the wound on his chest continued to tremble. Yun Che could still see that

vermillion light leaking out from between the gaps of his fingers and it did not seem to be weakening in the slightest.

“The Sword Spirit God Clan... were the first clan of gods to be wiped out... So it isn’t possible that a devil slayer sword still exists in this world!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign exclaimed in a voice that was still filled with pain. Besides a devil slayer sword, nothing else in this world could inflict a wound that would torment a true devil body for such a long period of time, despite only being only half a foot long.

“The sword light...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s eyes widened as he let out a sudden howl, “Devil slayer swords emit a white-colored sword light... That isn’t a devil slayer sword!! Just what sword are you holding in your hands!? Where exactly did you get such a sword!?”

Jasmine, “...”

“Hmph, you don’t need to concern yourself with where my sword came from. The only thing you need to know is that

you will die at the hands of this sword... and that is enough!” Yun Che hefted the Heaven Smiting Sword, his expression no longer containing the slightest bit of fear or desire to flee. Instead, he looked supremely confident at the moment and his lips curled into a cold smile that spoke of his impending victory.

Jasmine could naturally feel the change in Yun Che’s attitude and she spoke out abruptly, “Aren’t you getting a bit too overconfident right now? The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign only used half his power at most

when he launched that attack at you. Furthermore, the only reason you were able to wound him at all was because you caught him off guard. Even though Hong'er's power is able to heavily restrict his own power, it definitely doesn't mean that your victory is assured! His powers are far more robust and stronger than your own! And it is absolutely sufficient to overcome the disadvantage that Hong'er has put him at."

"I know." Yun Che said as he gripped the Heaven Smiting Sword tightly but his voice still contained more than a hint of

excitement, “I can roughly gauge his strength right now. The first thing I felt when I faced him was an overwhelming dread that I wasn’t able to overcome at all. But after I summoned out Hong’er, for some inexplicable reason, that feeling completely disappeared. And right now, I don’t feel the slightest bit of fear. Rather... I feel even more relaxed and excited than when I faced off against Fen Juechen.”

Jasmine, “...?”

This was indeed strange. It was



true that holy power and devil power mutually repulsed and restricted each other but Yun Che did not have a holy body and he did not possess any holy powers either. Furthermore, it was Hong'er's presence alone that was restricting the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's devil body and devil powers.

But that was only his devil body and devil powers! It would not affect his soul!

No matter whether it was strength, spirit or species, the

Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was far above Yun Che. So without even discussing the Yun Che who was currently far inferior to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, even if both of them were equal in terms of power, Yun Che would definitely still be suppressed, especially when it came to the suppression of his soul... The overwhelming terror that Yun Che could not shake was the most ordinary and expected outcome.

So why had Yun Che's fear completely disappeared and why was he able to radiate such a fierce and aggressive aura? On

the other hand, it was the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who... If it was a god who was on the same level as him holding a devil slayer sword, then perhaps he might feel fear. But right now he was facing a Yun Che whose power was far inferior to his, so why was he feeling such an intense dread?

From all the records of the devil slayer swords and from all his memories of them, it had never once been mentioned that they could also suppress a devil's soul.

Oh right, Hong'er was not simply a normal devil slayer sword! The light she radiated when she transformed into sword was completely different from the light that the fabled devil slayer swords emitted...

But being able to create such a huge suppressive effect on a devil's soul that practically transcended levels... Such an item should not even exist in this world! Whether it was the records of the Primordial Era or any inheritance of memories, there was no mention of such an item... given the level that the gods and devils existed on, it was

not possible for such a thing to exist.

Unless... it was a higher order devil or god who was facing a lower level devil or god... But that was purely a suppression based on the order of things!

“...” The abnormally fierce and exuberant expression displayed on Yun Che’s face caused Jasmine to go into deep thought.

“Very good!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s face

was warped by fury. He slowly straightened up and began striding towards Yun Che, “It is indeed not important for this king to concern myself with that sword! Because the conclusion will be the same regardless! To think that a lowly and inferior creature such as yourself could actually inflict such pain on this king... Unforgivable!!”

“This king will grind all your bones into dust!!”

As his voice fell, all of the dark energy surrounding the Moon

Slaughter Devil Sovereign began to surge and roil. He was only about one hundred steps away from Yun Che as well. He had originally believed that every step he took towards Yun Che would be like the footfalls of death itself as it pressed on in this lowly human, causing his entire body to tremble with fear, his courage to completely melt away and ultimately ending with Yun Che turning tail to flee... But right now, the only thing he saw was the cold smile that played across Yun Che's face and even as he pressed in, no fear appeared on Yun Che's face. Instead his gaze grew more fevered and excited and even his profound energy aura grew

incredibly frenzied.

On the contrary, it was the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who felt like his heart was being weighed down by one crushing boulder after another with every step he took. Furthermore, the light radiating from Yun Che's sword was especially unbearable, it caused him immense discomfort and he did not even dare to look at it directly. This natural repulsion he felt towards the light that he recognized as a great threat to his own life and soul origin continued until he suddenly focused his gaze on the sword.



At the same time, the full appearance of that vermillion greatsword and the light that it emitted was completely absorbed into his mind...

At that instant, his feet completely froze and his pupils widened so much that it seemed like they would rupture.

“Heaven... Heaven Smiting Devil God Sword!!”

Jasmine, “...!!!?”

Thump...

The moment the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign started to shiver in fear, it seemed as if all of his strength had slipped away as he sank to his knees, his body trembling violently like a sieve. It was as if he had witnessed the most terrifying and unbelievable scene in this world!

This bizarre behavior and reaction was one hundred times more intense than when he had

shouted out the three words  
“devil slayer sword”!

“What’s going on now?” Yun Che had already been prepared to launch an all-out assault. But he had never expected the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to suddenly become scared witless. His brows twitched as he stared at the dazed Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign... Could it be that this fellow’s wits had been completely scrambled because he had been alone for too long?

“He just yelled out a name...

Heaven Smiting Devil God Sword? Yes?” Yun Che suddenly exclaimed, “Oh right! Besides the two words ‘devil slayer’ that is inscribed on the sword that Hong’er transforms into, there are also two other words, ‘heaven smiting.’ At first, he called it a ‘devil slayer sword,’ then he called it the ‘Heaven Smiting Devil God Sword.’ When you put those two names together, it really fits the sword that Hong’er transforms into. Could it be that he knows about Hong’er’s origins? After all, like Hong’er, he also hails from the Primordial Era!

“...Now is not the time to worry about these things!” Jasmine shouted in a rather strange voice but she did not address Yun Che’s doubts, “Remember what I said just now, do not hold anything back, use all your trump cards and pay whatever price you have to because you definitely need to kill this Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!” Right now, his devil body and powers are being restricted by Hong’er. Furthermore, he threw his own weapon into the Profound Sky Continent, so when it comes to weaponry, you have the absolute advantage... Put everything you have on the line! It is definitely possible for you to kill him!”

“Alright!” Yun Che swiftly cast all other thoughts aside as his killing intent surged and flames ignited all over his body.

“Im... Impossible! Impossible! Impossible!!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign howled hysterically but it was almost as if he was talking to himself at the same time, “Appearance... exactly the same... and this devilish might... No! It isn’t possible... it definitely isn’t possible! The color isn’t the same... and even if it is... then how come it is also

able to exude the aura of a devil slayer sword...”

At this moment, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s head suddenly jerked up as he roared at Yun Che, “That sword... just what kind of sword is it, where did it come from!!?”

He had just yelled that the origins and history of that sword was not important... But at this moment, he repeated the words that he had shouted at Yun Che initially and this time, his voice was even more frenzied.

“You talk way too much!” Yun Che replied coldly. After that, his body blurred as he rushed towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, “Why don’t you just ask King Yama when you see him in hell!?”

Yun Che’s words caused the devilish light in the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s eyes to burn brightly. To think that he showed such a pathetic and cowardly face to a human being, just thinking about it caused his temper to boil over. “This king will cripple you first, then



search your soul!!”

He had changed his mind and decided not to kill Yun Che... It was clear that he simply had to figure out what was going on with the vermillion greatsword that Yun Che held in his hands!

All of the devil energy in his body swelled up as deep gray devilish markings lit up on his back. In an instant, the roiling dark devil energy formed into a enormous black shadow behind him. This black shadow was tens of meters tall and it had nine

sinuous heads which twisted about, as if it was the legendary monster, the Nine-headed Hydra!

A brutal and frenzied aura which promised pain leaked out from that shadow, causing all of the energy in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest to grow frenzied as well. After that, the black shadow dissolved into nine beams of dark energy which sizzled towards Yun Che.

“That is the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night’s Nine

Deaths of Eternal Night! It carries nine different kinds of extremely negative concepts and it will destroy your mind before even hurting your body!”

Yun Che remained fearless and resolute, a corner of his mouth hooked into a cold smile. All the joints of his body creaked as he swung the Heaven Smiting Sword which weighed nearly five hundred thousand kilograms. Golden Crow flames ran along the body of the heavy sword as it instantly generated a rampaging, all-consuming firestorm which smashed heavily against the nine beams

of dark devil energy.

The beams of dark devil energy were completely swallowed by the onrushing firestorm and in that instant, the space in that area completely shattered. The color of the wind changed as deafening energy explosions and the extremely terrible shrill sound of something being devoured rang in the air for a long time.

For the levels of power being shown by Yun Che and the Moon Slaughter Devil

Sovereign, the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, while being immensely sturdy, was far too small a battlefield to contain their fight. Both of their powers clashed fiercely and it seemed like the entire earth was shaking. The clothes on Yun Che's body had been ripped to shreds but the pupils of his eyes released a deep red light. He lashed out with the Heaven Smiting Sword again and again and each slash was accompanied by an earth-shattering boom.

Boom! Boom! Boooom...

Yun Che had made more than ten continuous slashes, forcing those nine beams of devil energy more than thirty meters into the distance, not allowing a single one to approach his body. The attack which had used about seventy percent of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's power had been completely blown away. After that, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's body shot out like a rocket and two black hands which seemed to emerge from the deepest abyss, streaming with the extremely dense dark devil energy, tore at Yun Che's throat.

Boom!!

Sword and claw met as the scarlet red flames surged against pitch-black devil energy. Yun Che's body shook and his upper body bent, causing a faint shock to shoot through his heart... This Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had actually used a hand that had been wrapped in darkness energy to clash directly with his Heaven Smiting Sword!

Just based on this point alone, Yun Che was absolutely convinced that if not for the

Heaven Smiting Sword in his hand, he would definitely not be the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's opponent.

But the alarm and astonishment that shot through the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was one hundred times more intense! He was shocked that the power of a noble and superior devil such as himself had been blocked by this inferior human being!

What alarmed him even more was that... the moment his



power came into contact with that vermillion greatsword, it suddenly weakened drastically! It was as if something had mysteriously siphoned that power away!

Pop! Pop! Pop...

All the bones in Yun Che's body made small popping sounds and his originally dull red eyes became filled with frenzy and killing intent. Before the aftershock of the previous attack had completely dispersed, he suddenly somersaulted through

the air as he smashed his sword toward the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

“Pathetic human being... if it’s just you alone, you can stop dreaming of matching blows with this king!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign gave a roar of extreme fury as both his claws shot out. At the same time, the pitch-black devilish light suddenly expanded and swelled by tens of meters. The darkness energy swept forward, intending to

smash the Heaven Smiting Sword into pieces, reducing it to nothingness.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Booom...

Flames exploded violently and darkness energy wreaked havoc all over the place. Within the space of a few breaths, the flames and the devilish light had clashed against each other one hundred times as the small battlefield seemed to be engulfed in an apocalyptic calamity... If this was not the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, then even if it was an

island that was five hundred kilometers wide, it would have been completely obliterated by now.

Blue Wind Nation. Blue Wind Imperial City. The main hall of the Imperial Palace.

Cang Yue lounged on a phoenix chair, a faint smile played across her fair face. Her heart was calm and peaceful as she casually perused a jade scroll.

At this moment, she felt a faint

ripple of profound energy course  
through her Sound  
Transmission Jade.

Cang Yue put down her jade  
scroll and grasped the Sound  
Transmission Jade in her hand.  
The voice that came from the it  
was Xiao Lingxi's voice... and  
Cang Yue could hear the  
anxiousness in her voice as well  
as faint traces of weeping.

“...What!” After she had  
finished listening to the Xiao  
Lingxi's sound transmission, she  
shot to her feet, her crescent

brows knitted together fiercely.

After she pondered the matter briefly, she grasped the Sound Transmission Jade once more as she sent a sound transmission back to Xiao Lingxi, “Lingxi, don’t be anxious. You need to devote all your energy into ensuring that Seventh Sister’s emotions remain stable, we definitely mustn’t allow anything to happen to the baby! I will immediately think of a way to transmit a message to my husband.”

Even after she put down the Sound Transmission Jade, Cang Yue's phoenix brows remained furrowed for a long time. She whispered to herself, "Husband is currently at Supreme Ocean Palace, which is one hundred and fifty thousand kilometers distant. The highest grade Sound Transmission Talisman can only send a message over a distance of fifty thousand kilometers..."

"Only Frozen Cloud Asgard is left! Perhaps they will have a way to send a sound transmission to my husband!"

“Men! Summon Palace Chief Dongfang and Palace Chief Qin!” Cang Yue shouted in an anxious voice.

The highest grade Sound Transmission Talisman was only able to transmit over a distance of fifty thousand kilometers. Furthermore, it was also exceedingly expensive. Even so, it would still not be able to reach Supreme Ocean Palace, which laid one hundred and fifty thousand kilometers away. Frozen Cloud Asgard was their only remaining hope... but it



just so happened that the only sound transmission imprints she had belonging to Frozen Cloud Asgard was those of Yun Che, Feng Xue'er and Xia Qingyue. But right now, none of them were not in the Frozen Cloud Asgard.

After a very short period of time, Dongfang Xiu and Qin Wushang had finally hurried over.

“Palace Chief Qin!” Cang Yue yelled, dispensing with all formalities as she rushed over to

speak to them, “You need to immediately send a sound transmission to all the Profound Palaces within the Blue Wind Nation and order them to cease all other activities within the next three days as I want them to devote all their efforts into searching for traces of Xiao Yun!”

“Xiao Yun?” Qin Wushang and Dongfang Xie were both taken aback, “What has happened!?”

“Xiao Yun disappeared four hours ago.” Cang Yue said

solemnly, "If someone else had disappeared for four hours, it wouldn't be anything strange. But Xiao Yun normally doesn't even stray half a step away from his wife. So for him to suddenly up and vanish is a very strange thing indeed! Palace Chief Qin, time is of the essence and we don't have any of it left to explain things or second guess ourselves! You already know Xiao Yun's age and appearance and before he disappeared, he was wearing plain white clothes and he had a white cloth wrapped around his waist... So go and inform all the Profound Palaces! But remember this, all the Profound Palaces must conduct their investigations

covertly! We definitely must not disclose anything to the public! The moment anyone discovers a trace of Xiao Yun, he must make a report back with the fastest speed possible!”

“Understood!” Qin Wushang yelled. He knew that this matter was deadly serious and he did not speak any further. Instead, he turned around to carry out his orders.

“Do we need to dispatch anybody to Floating Cloud City?” Dongfang Xiu asked.

Cang Yue gently shook her head, “The profound strength of Xiao Yun and his wife are unrivaled in Blue Wind Nation. Even if you put them in the Heavenly Sword Villa, the other party was able to kidnap Xiao Yun without raising a single alarm. So if they wanted to take action against the others, no matter how many people we send, it won’t be of any use.”

“Palace Chief Dongfang, my hus... Yun Che is currently staying at Supreme Ocean Palace and only the disciples of Frozen Cloud Asgard will be able to contact him! I want you to

depart for Frozen Cloud Asgard right away! Even if you have to travel day and night, you have to reach Frozen Cloud Asgard within the next twenty four hours, no matter what! Inform them of what has transpired! They will naturally know what to do after that.”

Dongfang Xiu gave a brief nod before he took the air and disappeared from the great hall as he rushed towards the north.

# Chapter 781 – Fierce Battle Within The Devil Nest

---

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boooooom...

The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was enduring the most terrifying calamity it had ever experienced in its existence as raging flames and sinister darkness filled every nook and cranny. The space within was crazily collapsing in on itself and the thunderous explosions sounded like they were being produced by a heavenly bell that

was being repeatedly smashed by an enormous mountain... At this moment, if there were other profound practitioners on the scene, even if they were strong individuals who were at the Emperor Profound Realm, just these earth-shaking explosions would be enough to instantly cause their energy and blood to flow in reverse, rendering them unconscious.

And if they were slightly weaker than that, they might simply be killed on the spot, completely shattered in body and soul.



One man and one devil had already exchanged hundreds of blows in this sealed world of darkness. It was as though the both of them had come to an agreement of sorts, as their strength continued to rise with no end in sight... both man and devil kept pushing each other and testing the limits of each other's power.

The catastrophe that had engulfed the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest grew more and more intense and it was as if the small world had been thrown into the

mouth of an erupting volcano...  
Only the half-bloomed  
Netherworld Udumbara Flower  
remained undisturbed, even  
though it was right in the eye of  
the storm. It gently and leisurely  
swayed as it continued to let out  
those ghastly wails every now  
and then.

Bang!!!

Yun Che's sword exploded  
forward but the body of the  
blade was smashed aside by the  
Moon Slaughter Devil  
Sovereign. Flames which

contained the strength of the heavy sword exploded against a stone wall that was more than one hundred fifty meters away. Immediately, an extremely shrill and piercing cracking sound muffled the explosions of the flames as a long crack which stretched all the way to the floor appeared on the stone wall.

To make a crack in the walls of this place was even harder than smashing apart an enormous mountain with the stroke of a sword!

Yun Che's blade sliced through the air as he lost his balance, but he swiftly gathered himself. Grasping the five hundred thousand kilogram Heaven Smiting Sword easily in his hand, he immediately counterattacked, fiercely smashing the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's devilish claws aside.

Boom!            Boom!            Boom!  
Boooooom...

The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest continued to shake as stone

fragments began to fall from the crack in the stone wall that Yun Che had smashed. Before those fragments even hit the ground, they were swallowed up by an immeasurably frenzied vortex of energy.

After more than ten thousand exchanges, it was remarkable that the man and the devil were still evenly matched. From the start to now, neither party was able to gain even the slightest advantage over the other.

Yun Che's expression was

extremely gloomy, because this was no simple exchange of skills, this was a fight to the death. Between him and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, one of them had to die... Yet his eyes were shining with an excitement which only seemed to grow fiercer still with each passing moment.

On the other hand, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was growing more and more alarmed.

He was a devil, a true devil

from the ancient times and he was a ruler among the devils at that! Moreover, it was tacitly understood by all devils that humans were merely an inferior lifeform that was not much different from a scurrying ant. In the past, a casual wave of his hand would have been enough to destroy a planet that contained billions of humans.

So even though his life and soul origin ad sustained incredible damage and his current strength was not even a fraction of what it used to be, the contempt that he had for humans still remained carved into his very

bones. Even though he was in his current weakened state, the aura that Yun Che exuded was still many times weaker than his own... and even though Yun Che held a bizarre blade that caused his power to recoil and his soul to tremble uncontrollably in fear, in the eyes of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, he was still an insect.

However, from the moment he had first exchanged blows with Yun Che, shock began to resonate within his soul. Not only did this shock not grow weaker with each exchange, it was instead growing more and



more intense with each passing moment... Initially, he had not used all of his strength, because when he was facing a lowly creature such as this, using all of his might would be a huge stain on his name. After realizing that Yun Che's strength was far greater than he had initially anticipated, he also began to increase the power that he used. But no matter how much his power rose, the other party was able to match it. And right now, it had reached the point where he was using ninety percent of his strength, yet he was still unable to suppress Yun Che.

The power that radiated from that vermillion greatsword alarmed him greatly. Given such power, every swing of that sword should expend a great amount of Yun Che's energy, as he merely had the body of a mortal. Shockingly, even after a thousand sword strokes, not only had his blows not become softer, they were actually growing stronger and stronger with each swing...

This was a lowly creature with an inferior body and aura. Yet he seemed to hold a power that was not inferior to the power his devil god body bestowed him!

This damnable human being, he was definitely desperately holding on just by the skin of his teeth! Given his pathetic aura and his pathetic body, how can he continue to release such a level of power!?

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's expression warped fiercely as black light suddenly exploded out of his fiendish pupils. The highest level of the Illusory Devil Tome of Eternal Night was instantly channeled and dark devil energy surged up from within his entire body

without reservation.

Yun Che's brows knit together as he let out a great roar. All of the muscles in his arms swelled, veins twisting and joints popping explosively as he shot forward using both feet as a spring. Berserk profound energy flowed from his entire body into his arms before surging into the Heaven Smiting Sword. Without holding back, he fiercely swept the sword forward.

Boooooom!!!

The dark earth beneath Yun Che's feet had completely fractured and stone fragments were billowing in the air like leaves in his wake. He heavily smashed into the wall behind him with a loud crash... the overly strong stone wall caused the enormous power that he had endured to completely rebound back into him, rendering his entire body numb. His consciousness instantly blanked as he nearly spat a large amount of blood out of his mouth.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was not in a much better state than he was. He had

been sent flying overhead by Yun Che's sword smash. His huge devil body had smashed into the stone ceiling above before violently rebounding off of it. After that, he had rolled for tens of meters before he finally smashed into a stone wall.

When the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign finally stood up, his eyes and expression had completely changed. Even his breathing had grown incredibly rough and heavy.

He... a mighty devil lord, to

think that he had actually been sent flying by a human being!!

Sent flying by a human being!!

Sent flying!!

It was like a devilish curse that resonated in his ears and his soul again and again. When he had been wounded by Yun Che's sword at first, it was because he had been in a total state of shock and so he did not react fast enough to defend. But this time around, he had clearly used all

of his powers in an all-out clash, and there were no cheap tricks involved either, yet he was still sent flying in the end!!

Sent flying by a human being!

What kind of a humiliation was that!?

It also clearly proved that... the human who stood in front of him, the one that he had thought to be no more significant than an ant, actually had power that rivalled his own!



Yun Che had gotten to his feet before the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign and even though he had endured an attack from his opponent at full strength, the five hundred thousand kilogram Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword had not budged from his grip. Though some of his bones had sustained hairline fractures and more than ten of his veins had snapped, to him, these were merely superficial injuries. He stabilized his energy and blood before slowly sauntering towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, “Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, you kept calling me a pathetic and

lowly human being, so here I was, thinking that you were hot stuff... But it turns out that you only amount to this much after all!!”

“You... dare... to...”

Regardless of Yun Che’s reckless mockery, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had already become so incensed and ashamed because of this humiliation that all his rationality had practically flown out the window. During the Primordial Era, even in the

world of devils, he was still one of the devils that stood above the rest! Mere human beings were not even qualified to kneel in his presence!

Yet right now, he had been sent flying by a human, had been wounded by a human, was being looked upon contemptuously by a human and had even received mockery from a human.

This was like no humiliation he had ever experienced before in his lifetime!!

“Light... less... Eternal...  
Night!!”

As he chanted those words in a voice filled with enough hate to encompass the universe. Boundless darkness descended from above like a pitch-black curtain. It instantly plunged Yun Che into a quagmire of darkness as that terrifying devouring power immediately assaulted both his body and soul. Every cell in his body seemed to be swarmed by countless dark and sinister hands which tried to drag him towards the abyss of death.

Yun Che instantly recognized it. This was actually the move that Fen Juechen had used during their duel several months ago. The Dark Domain that he had released when he was on the brink of defeat, regardless of the cost.

During that moment, all the light had been swallowed up and it was as if he had been pulled into an endless dark quagmire... It was only the Heaven Smiting Sword that was still able to emit that unrelenting vermillion light within the boundless darkness.

When he brandished the sword, that streak of vermillion light had easily torn through the unending night.

The Lightless Eternal Night that was used by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was many times stronger than the one that Fen Juechen had used. But the vermillion light of the Heaven Smiting Sword continued to flash in the midst of that dark abyss! In this dense and inky darkness, the light emitted by the sword was even more eye-catching.

“Break!!”

“Yellow Springs Ashes!!”

The Heaven Smiting Sword smashed forward heavily, instantly slashing apart this world of darkness as its sweeping blade formed a true vacuum which extended out more than ten meters in diameter. The frenzied Golden Crow flames ignited and spread like wildfire as they fiercely penetrated every nook and cranny of this dark world. In the blink of an eye, the world within

the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest seemed to be engulfed in crimson black lava that looked tyrannical enough to annihilate everything.

Darkness and fire tore at one another and in the midst of this catastrophic collision, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign and Yun Che resumed their battle once more. This time, the man and the devil no longer bothered testing each other's strength. Every claw and sword stroke was sent out with full force. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's expression was so warped that it barely resembled



anything normal anymore. The roars coming from his mouth no longer held his previous devilish majesty, instead, they sounded malevolent and terrifying. All of the veins in Yun Che's body were burning and every stroke of his sword was accompanied by a hoarse cry of fury.

Lightless Eternal Night, Yellow Springs Ashes... Both of them had activated startlingly powerful domains, yet both attacks were confined within the tiny interior of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. The current Moon Slaughter Devil Nest could not merely be called a

world that had been stricken by calamity, it had practically become a hell of destruction! It would not matter if the living or the dead entered this place, because within a few short seconds, they would all be reduced to nothingness.

Even though it had become such a realm of destruction, both opponents still continued to crazily claw at each other within.

Yun Che's clothes had long since been blown to shreds. His

skin was a startling crimson-black color and his entire body was covered with hundreds of big and small holes, some of which were so deep that they nearly exposed bone. Many clusters of flame burned on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's body as well but the two seemed to be completely indifferent to their own injuries and their opponent's injuries. They did not care about what damage their respective domains wrought on each other and every single attack that was being made was extremely fierce and deadly... They were doing their utmost to consign their opponent to the grave!

One devil and one man had fought to the point where both parties seemed insane. Within the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine had been quietly observing this vicious fight. Just like the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, she had never thought that Yun Che could go toe to toe with the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign without exhausting all of his trump cards.

The most important reason for this was Hong'er... in other words, the existence of the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer

# Sword!

Hong'er's presence allowed Yun Che to completely escape the spiritual suppression that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had inflicted on him purely based on the fact that the level of his power far exceeded that of Yun Che. At the same time, this same suppression was instead visited upon the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign himself!

During this fierce and vicious duel, Yun Che had managed to maintain his eager and

composed state of my mind. Yet the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, who had ten thousand times the amount of experience in cultivating his mental state, had been in a state of constant frenzied rage... and within this rage, Jasmine could still detect the uncontrollable trembling of his soul.

Furthermore, when the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's power approached Yun Che... or more accurately, approached the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword, it would instantly weaken by a full thirty percent! Such a great decline in power

was not accompanied by any grand show or series of events, it simply seemed as if that power had suddenly vanished into thin air!

In other words, even though the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was using all of his strength, Yun Che only endured what amounted to seventy percent of his full power.

This point was something that Yun Che had not noticed but the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was well aware of it. Jasmine

had also clearly detected this as well.

With all these factors added together, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, who was clearly far superior to Yun Che in every aspect, was drawn into a deadly struggle with Yun Che, something that he had not even dreamed possible.

And the source behind all of these factors was the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword!



A devil slayer sword was the bane of all devils.

But the constraints that the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword had placed on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's far exceeded the effects of any other devil slayer sword that were recorded in the memories that Jasmine had inherited.

The name "Heaven Smiting Devil God Sword" that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had at first shouted out and then denied had caused an enormous

ripple to resonate in Jasmine's heart and up till now, she still could not calm her heart and mind.

---

The world inside the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was being turned upside down. But the outside world which was separated from it by that shimmering blue barrier was calm and peaceful.

The sky had gradually darkened but Feng Xue'er

remained rooted to her original position. No matter how hard the ocean winds blew, she had not moved even half a step. Those pretty eyes which contained the most beautiful and brilliant light in the world remain focused solely on the shimmering blue barrier in front of them. Her gaze did not waver for even a second, as if she was afraid that she would miss something in that instant.

Xia Yuanba flew over from far away before finally arriving at Feng Xue'er's side. It had been more than eight hours since Yun Che had been sealed within the

Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. In these eight hours, he had paced around the barrier that surrounded it countless times. He had tried his hardest to find anything abnormal about the barrier but he was unable to detect even the slightest ripple of profound energy.

Feng Xue'er stood there in a complete daze, her eyes vacant. Xia Yuanba's heart was pained at that sight and once more, he tried to comfort her in a soft voice, "Little Sister Xue'er, you should go back to the Ocean Palace to rest first. Your father and family are definitely

extremely worried about you. I will keep watch over this place and the moment Brother-in-law comes out, I will inform you immediately... you know, your father came here about an hour ago. He surveyed us from a distance before leaving again.”

“...I want to wait here for Big Brother Yun.” Feng Xue’er murmured in a soft and gentle voice, “If I am not here when he comes out of that place, he will definitely be worried.”

“...” Xia Yuanba gave a quiet

sigh and did not attempt to advise her any further. He flew to the spot that was directly above the middle of the barrier as he tried to detect any changes that occurred in this silent world. Before today, he had never thought that this girl, who was more gently beautiful than the purest snow, would have such a stubborn and obstinate side to her.

“Ah but women... they really are troublesome.” Xia Yuanba quietly muttered to himself with emotion, “I think it would be better if I don’t find a wife for my entire life.”

# Chapter 782 – Devil Transformation

---

Boom boom boom...

It was as if countless bolts of heavenly lightning were exploding in the air as more and more of the black stone that had been tempered by the darkness energy for ten thousand years began to crumble apart. Then, the stone fragments were fiercely sucked into the powerful currents of profound energy flowing through the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Fire light shot out in all directions as

darkness saturated the air. The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest's quaking did not abate in the slightest.

Both man and devil had been bogged down in furious combat for an unknown period of time. The wounds on both their bodies were too numerous to count but the power that exploded out from the both of them were still sufficient to shake the heavens and move the earth. In both of his lives, Yun Che had gone through countless life-and-death battles but none of those battles had lasted as long nor been as vicious as this



one.

Even though Yun Che had entered the highest tier of profound strength that existed within the Profound Sky Continent, there were still many people from the Four Great Sacred Grounds who could defeat him.

However in terms of endurance and recovery ability, he was undoubtedly number one in the entire Profound Sky Continent.

When he had dueled with Fen Juechen several months ago, he had not known that Hong'er was able to restrict his powers. So he had to rely on his absurdly strong recovery ability to outlast Fen Juechen and defeat him. But today, he had met an opponent whose endurance and recovery ability was no less than his own.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who possessed a devil body!!

Their fight had lasted for several hours but every blow

that they sent at each other was still deadly and incisive. However, their power, speed, and the sharpness of their attacks had clearly declined. Both of them had been similarly weakened, so neither party could gain a clear edge.

Boom!!

The Heaven Smiting Sword clashed with the devil claws of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign in midair as another thunderous explosion resounded. A large amount of

black stone was pounded into dust by the aftershock of that attack, causing the air in the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest to grow gray and hazy.

Darkness energy and Golden Crow flames crazily circulated around the two as the respective energies attempted to tear away and devour one another. It was literally like seeing two vicious beasts which hated each other engage in combat.

Bang!!

The ground that had already begun to sink beneath their feet started to fracture even more. The stone ceiling above their heads had also begun to resemble a giant dome. At this point, the devil claws that clashed with Yun Che's heavy sword suddenly drew back. With a howl of fury, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign thrust out both his hands. Ten ebon beams of profound light shot out from each of his ten emaciated, claw-like fingers as they stabbed towards Yun Che's chest.

Yun Che's body unconsciously started to move backwards.

Through sheer force of will, he stubbornly stopped his first reaction, forcing his body to stay put. He neither tried to dodge, nor counter strike, instead pouring all of the profound energy protecting his body into his arms. As the pupils of eyes contacted, he sent his sword sweeping towards the chest of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

The boundless pressure generated by this sword stroke threatened to collapse the space in a thirty meter radius around them.

Boom!

The sword beam generated by the Heaven Smiting Sword fiercely swept across the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's chest. There was a sickening snap as the largest bone in his chest was smashed into several pieces and his body was flung hundreds of meters away.. However, all ten beams of the dark devil energy that were shot out by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign also stabbed into Yun Che's body, causing his vision to go dark as his body stumbled

back furiously. However, both his hands still remained tightly locked around the vermillion greatsword and he refused to allow it to leave his hands.

A miserable howl of pain rang out as the longest vermillion sword wound to date had been inflicted on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's chest. The wound also brought along pain and trauma that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had never experienced before. The heavy sword energy that surged out from the vermillion sword wound on his chest, poured into his devil body as it wreaked



wanton destruction on his body and already weakened life force.

Even though a long time had passed, Yun Che remained sitting slumped on the ground and still had not gotten up yet. The ten beams of dark devil energy that bored into his body were like ten devilish needles that came from the depths of the underworld themselves. They ate away at his flesh, meridians and internal organs, wracking his body with so much pain that even his soul could barely stand it.

He pressed his lips together tightly, refusing to let even a hiss of pain escape his lips.

“Stop inhaling right now. Use the cleansing power of the Phoenix flames and the destructive power of the Evil God’s profound energy!” Jasmine exclaimed in a low voice, “You are really far too reckless! That energy originated from a true devil! If it enters your body, no ordinary profound energy will be able to cleanse it away! If not for you possessing the profound energy of the Evil God and the cleansing power of the Phoenix flames, you would

have basically thrown away half your life there and then!”

Yun Che fiercely gritted his teeth while quickly regaining his composure. Phoenix flames began to swiftly circulate throughout his body as he also used the Evil God’s profound energy to wrap up those ten beams of dark devil energy. In a short amount of time, all ten beams of devilish energy were sealed tightly before they were purified by both the Phoenix flames and Evil God’s profound energy working in tandem.

Pfft!

Yun Che lurched forward as a large amount of black blood sprayed from his mouth. All of the energy in his body, as well as his five senses, became clear. Unfortunately, his aura had weakened by yet another degree.

But it was clear that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was in a far worse situation.

Yun Che had taken those ten beams of devilish energy in

order to land an extremely heavy blow on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's miserable cries of incredible pain sent a loud and clear message to Yun Che; that he had gotten the better of that exchange! Even though the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had already gotten to his feet, the vermillion light clearly showed a hole the size of a human head carved into his chest. Black blood poured out from that hole and Yun Che could even see the broken pitch-black bones jutting out from inside.

Even though the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign tried his best not to cry out, the uncontrollable spasming of his body clearly showed how much pain he was enduring. However, his alarm was far greater than his pain!

Even though his vitality had been sapped, he still had a devil body! No matter how weak a devil body was, it was still something that a mortal's body could not hope to compete with! Furthermore, due to the lingering devil energy within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, his wounds and his energy were

recovering far faster than they normally did.

He had been forced to use his profound energy from the very start, after such a long and vicious battle, only half his profound energy remained. Given that his opponent had the body of a mortal, his energy should have long been exhausted. But the young human in front of him was weakening at the same rate as he was!

Even the wounds on his body, carved out by the corrosive dark

devil energy, were recovering at a rate that completely defied logic.

As for his own wounds... The burns left behind by the Golden Crow flames were still manageable, but the wounds left behind by that vermillion greatsword were another thing altogether! Not only did every one of them caused him immense and unbearable pain, they were recovering at a rate that was more than ten times slower than usual!



“You... who exactly are you!?”  
As he saw Yun Che, who had taken all ten beams of his devil energy, get up so quickly and calmly, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s pupils widened. He pressed both hands against the hole in his chest and every single finger was trembling as he continued, “You’re not human... what exactly are you!?”

His voice now quivered with fear.

Even the Moon Slaughter Devil

Sovereign was surprised to hear the fear in his own voice.

He had originally thought that he had encountered a human with a death wish.

Never in his wildest dreams would he have imagined that he would meet a monster among human beings!!

Given that inferior human body, how could he possess this kind of vitality and recovery ability... Furthermore, all of this

was occurring while he was stuck in an environment where darkness energy was sapping away at his life at every second!

The sword Yun Che held in his hand was also far more dreadful than any other sword the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had seen during the Primordial Era!!

Even when he had faced off against a true devil slayer sword all those years ago, he had not been seized by this unconscious trembling that he was feeling right now.

“My name is Yun Che and you will find no man more ordinary than I!” Yun Che said as he strode slowly towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, “Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign! The era of gods and devils has long since come to a close! A million years ago, you should have stopped existing in this world! Today, regardless of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, I would still have to consign you to the grave!!”

“Consign this king to the grave? With just you!?” The

Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign growled through gritted teeth. No matter how bad his situation became, he had never imagined he would ever be reduced to such a pathetic state! And at the hands of a human at that! Boundless fury and humiliation ate away at his already fading rationality and he suddenly let out a furious roar as his entire body was engulfed in a gloomy black fog. At the same time, the crimson black devil tattoos on his chest and back began radiating a deep bloody light.

“You arrogant, ignorant and pathetic human being... this

king will let you know just how strong the devil clan is! If you think you alone are capable of defeating this king... you need to stop dreaming!!”

The blood red devil tattoos began to twist and warp as they gradually formed into row upon row of strange runes. The hair on the Moon Devil Sovereign’s head grew even longer as all the bones in his body cracked so loudly that it sounded like a boulder had fractured. The muscles on his body swelled explosively as all four of his limbs instantly doubled in thickness. The blood red

meridians present throughout his entire body twisted like earthworms.

A low, pain-filled, roar tore from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's throat as his body distorted and twisted like a thrashing snake. Jet-black scales quickly appeared on his skin, covering his entire body., A layer of dense, white bone armor grew on his arms and legs. It was as if his bones had been spat out from his flesh so they could wrap around his muscles instead.

This dreadful and bizarre transformation sent a jolt of shock through Yun Che's heart and he immediately stopped moving forward. At the same time, he could clearly feel the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aura spike tremendously... Furthermore, it had also become even more sinister and tyrannical than before.

“It's a transformation!” Jasmine's exclaimed in a similarly shocked voice but Yun Che heard more caution than alarm.



“All of the ancient devils were able to transform themselves! This type of transformation is different from the shapechange that you are familiar with. It is a method that transforms the body to allow for greater control and release of power. After the transformation is complete, that person will be able to use all of his power. However, the burden on his body and the amount of energy being consumed will greatly increase as well. They would normally only transform into their full-powered state when they were drawn into life-and-death battles! There are some devils that can even

undergo multiple transformations as well.”

Zzzt!!

A pair of teeth, which glowed with a dense cold light, extended out of his mouth. They looked like the fangs of a wolf as they flashed with a glaring cold light. Sinister bone spikes had also grown out of his elbows and knees... Finally, the imprint of a blood moon had shockingly appeared on his chest!!

This was the imprint that belong solely to him, the king of the Eternal Night Devil Clan!

During the Primordial Era, this imprint would cause ten thousand devils to bend their knee in submission! But today, a mere human had forced it out!

His fury and power began to spike crazily as the whirling darkness energy coalesced into howling gales. This completely stopped Yun Che's breath as an incomparably heavy pressure assaulted him from all sides,

nearly crushing his chest and bending his back.

“His power... has actually risen by a massive amount in just an instant!!” Yun Che, who had originally intended to assault the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign while he was in the midst of his transformation, was slowly being forced backwards by the sharply increasing devil energy. He used both hands to brace himself as a deep expression of shock appeared on his face.

Jasmine let out a emotionless

and cold laugh instead, “The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign definitely never imagined that you would be able to force him to transform! The current Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign is a far cry from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign from the Primordial Era! Given his extremely depleted life force, not only will he have to pay an extremely high price for his transformation but it won’t last long either! Otherwise, he would not have waited until now to transform!”

“In his current state, it won’t be easy to go toe-to-toe with him.

You'll need to use Star God's Broken Shadow and Extreme Mirage Lightning to engage him! However, in these tight and narrow confines, it seems like it's nearly impossible to do so!" Jasmine's brows twitched before she made a decision, "Activate your Profound Handle! Even though it will increase the amount of energy you're consuming and might not help you span the power gap of transformed Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, at least... the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign won't have such an easy time of defeating you while he is transformed!"

“Alright!” Yun Che nodded his head as he changed his grip on his sword, putting his left arm forward instead of his right.

# Chapter 783 – Blooming Of The Udumbara

---

“Haa... haa... haa...”

At last, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign finished his transformation. However, for something that would have taken a mere instant in the past, even he had not imagined it now required such a long period of time. Now transformed, the aura of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had grown immensely, the dark devil energy surrounding his body doubling in thickness and



density. Yet, his expression lacked any hint of arrogance or complacency that typically came with absolute power. Rather, it seemed to radiate with sinister fury... and hatred.

Since he was not the same Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign he was one million years ago, this transformation had further delayed the full restoration of his life origin by at least another thousand years!!

He had felt this very clearly... had he chosen not to transform,

he would have very possibly met his end by Yun Che's hands on this very day!

“In my current state, this king will need no more than ten breaths to kill you!!

“Die!!”

The transformation had greatly increased the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's power, but the enormous burden it put on him made him feel as if his body was going to fall apart at any

moment. Without any further delay, he took to the air with a furious roar and rushed towards Yun Che. The sudden change in speed spread waves of alarm through Yun Che's heart.

After the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign transformed, his speed had also massively increased. Yun Che immediately determined that the current speed of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign exceeded his own when he was using Extreme Mirage Lightning! This also meant that even if this place was a wide and boundless region instead of the cramped Moon

Slaughter Devil Nest, he could forget about using speed to escape!

Devil energy swirled in the air as sinister winds whistled about. As the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign shot into the air, he had caused all the broken stone fragments to whirl upwards. The terrifying and incredible wind pressure had actually gouged deep grooves into the incredibly tough ground!

His two dark devil claws had grown twice as large and were

wrapped in dark light. They seemed to morph into dragon claws as they ripped at Yun Che... Though they were three hundred meters away, they still caused Yun Che's body to freeze as his feet seemed to sink into the ground.

Yun Che's gaze focused coldly. After taking a deep breath, he used Star God's Broken Shadow to instantly escape.

Boom——

The claws of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign smashed fiercely onto the ground, immediately shattering all the stone walls in a thirty-meter radius. Even Yun Che, who had managed to dodge in the nick of time, was smashed in the chest by the roaring and billowing dark energy waves. He let out a low moan as he rolled backwards.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign sent blow after blow flying through the air without much aiming yet all of them immediately home in on Yun Che. His body was sent flying

through the air as an enormous dark shadow completely engulfed him.

Yun Che swiftly turned around in midair. All of the profound energy in his body circulated as the figure of the Phoenix and Golden Crow simultaneously appeared behind his back. His left arm also lit up with a strange blue light as the vermillion flashing greatsword, wreathed in the divine fires of both the Phoenix and the Golden Crow, exploded downwards.

Even though Yun Che was facing the transformed Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who had gotten significantly stronger, he still decided to go with a simple head-to-head clash!

Rrrmb!!

Darkness and flames instantly clashed and interweaved, becoming an ocean of catastrophic energy that blindly engulfed everything within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.



Within this ocean of calamitous energy, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign howled in anger as his long hair fluttered haphazardly in the wind. He felt his power being obstructed and immediately raised his head to let out a great laugh... However, this laughter lasted for just a split second before it cut off... because his power had actually been unable to break through the resistance and destroy Yun Che. Instead, all he could see was his power being forced to a ten-meter standstill, unable to advance even an inch further.

“Wha... what!?” The Moon

Slaughter Devil Sovereign's pupils grew large. He could feel that there hadn't been any change to Yun Che's aura, but beside him, another aura had suddenly appeared! This aura was roughly only half as strong as Yun Che himself but together with Yun Che, it had managed to somehow block his power!

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign let out another furious roar as he raised both of his bone-plated arms. Those shockingly huge arms began to swell up even more before he began to launch a torrent of blows at Yun Che. Terrifying

dark devil energy surged like a tsunami as they exploded towards Yun Che, who had nowhere left to run or hide.

“Haah!!” Yun Che let out a furious shout of his own as he swung the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword with all his strength. Every sword stroke launched a profound energy storm that was powerful enough to annihilate everything that stood in its path. Beside him, the Profound Handle which had taken the form of a heavy sword also danced alongside the Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer Sword. Both heavy swords wove

a dance of blades as they formed an extremely tyrannical and powerful “Heavy Sword Domain” around Yun Che which expelled the dark devil energy out of it.

“This... this is impossible!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s scalp went numb as his pupils grew even larger. When Yun Che held off his attacks before, it had already far exceeded his expectations. Moreover, it also forced him to pay a heavy price and transform

into his battle form. He had thought that once he released all of his power, he would have the power to completely flatten Yun Che and that would have been as easy as flipping his palm. Not once had he ever imagined that the attack he launched after his transformation would actually be completely blocked by Yun Che!

He released his power in a frenzy and every single time he attacked, he did so with all of his might. He held nothing back. Even after thousands of continuous blows, Yun Che still stood there alive, having

smashed aside every single one of his attacks!!

“AHHHHHHH!!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's fluttering hair immediately stood on end as the imprint of the blood moon on his chest shone with a ghastly and terrifying crimson black light. Every single devil tattoo on his body also began to shine with a frightening, bloody light.

All of the dark devil energy

came to a stop in that very instant and an absolute silence instantly settled over the world. It was as if time itself had suddenly stopped. Following that, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign let out a howl which seemed to come from the depths of purgatory as all the darkness energy in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest began to dance furiously as they merged together to form a gigantic devil god that seemed to come from the depths of the underworld. The giant mass of darkness energy surged forward, swallowing up the tiny and insignificant Yun Che into the boundless and endless darkness.

“Eternal Night’s Oblivion!!”

The       boundless       darkness  
pressed down from all directions  
as it devoured light, devoured  
space and even devoured his  
heavy sword storm. In the next  
instant, it might just devour him  
and   his   profound   handle  
completely as well.

No shock or fear appeared on  
Yun Che’s face. His gaze grew  
dark and cold and the flames on  
his body, which were burning  
with all their might, intensified



by yet another degree. Raising both the greatsword in his hand and the heavy sword that the Profound Handle had become at the same time, he released two vast and boundless auras which would even cause the heavens and earth to lose color.

“Destroying Sky Decimating Earth!!”

BOOOM!!!!

The terrifying explosion consumed all the other sounds

in this tiny world.

Terrifying energy explosions spread all over the place as both the air and the ground shook. Even space itself recoiled at this dreadful energy as the shrill wail of space being torn asunder echoed through the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

Following that, three kilometers of space instantly collapsed. In front of this kind of power, space itself had become as weak and fragile as a thin sheet of paper.

Black holes of various sizes instantly flashed into existence before fading out as quick as they appeared.

Yun Che and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign naturally had to endure the massive impact and aftershocks left in the wake of the rampaging energy explosions.

The two of them were forced three hundred meters apart. If not for the extremely hard and durable black stone walls

blocking their flight, they might have been pushed tens of kilometers away by the impact.

Yun Che leaned on a stone wall as he slowly got to his feet. By the time he stood up, the black stone wall collapsed with a loud bang.

Streams of blood poured down the blade of the Heaven Smiting Sword. His arms had largely borne the impact of that terrifying energy blast. The webs between his thumb and his index finger on both hands were

split, many wounds had appeared on both his arms and he had sustained more than ten fractures by the impact alone. But he did not feel the slightest bit of pain... He just felt a numbness that was overly intense, so intense that he lost nearly all feeling in both his arms. It was his willpower and determination alone that allowed him to still firmly grasp that five-hundred-thousand-kilogram sword.

The Profound Handle had disappeared as well. It had been blasted to pieces by that energy blast—but the Profound Handle

was a power that came from his bloodline. Even if it was shattered another ten thousand times, he could still summon it once again.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's injuries looked far lighter than Yun Che's. Other than the chest bone that Yun Che had previously broken, only the bone spike on his right arm had been snapped, as blood freely flowed down that arm.

But that was just how things appeared. In reality, his

situation was far worse than Yun Che. Because if Yun Che activated his Profound Handle, he only increased the consumption of his profound energy.

But when the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was transformed, not only did he consume more energy, his body also had to endure an enormous burden! And he had just been desperately using all of his power in spite of this, so one could well imagine what the consequences would be.

If Yun Che got a bit closer, he would be able to see that the scales and bone plating on his body were astonishingly covered with many tiny cracks.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's body went limp as he sank to the ground numbly, unable to climb up for quite some time. The dark pupils of his eyes contracted fearfully as though he was trapped in a nightmare.

“Moon	Slaughter	Devil
Sovereign...	have	you...



already... reached your limit!?”

Yun Che dragged the Heaven Smiting Sword behind him as he walked slowly towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. His voice had become hoarse, his feet felt like lead, and his breathing had become incredibly heavy and rough. Whether it was the Profound Handle or the “Destroying Sky Decimating Earth” technique, all of them had consumed an extremely large amount of his energy. Coupled with the wounds he had sustained on his arms and his internal organs, he was in an incredibly bad state.

But he could tell that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was in even worse shape than he was! Even though he could still maintain his transformation, his aura had dropped to the point where it was even weaker than Yun Che's.

Even if the wounds on his body were ten times worse, Yun Che would not waste time worrying over things... because he absolutely could not give the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign a chance to catch his breath.

“You... you aren’t... human!!”  
The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign forced himself to his feet. He tried with all his might to gather devil energy but it was as if his devil body had transformed into a leaky wooden bucket. No matter how he tried to gather his energy, he was unable to suppress Yun Che’s aura.

So now, he was completely incapable of believing that Yun Che was a human being... Given a human being’s weak physique, how could he have a vitality and

endurance that even exceeded his own!

“Sorry to disappoint you! I am a human being raised on the very soil of the Profound Sky Continent! Today is the day that you will die... and it is the result of looking down on humans!”

The feeling in his arms began to come back as intense pain replaced numbness. Yun Che started gasping heavily as he tightened his grip around the Heaven Smiting Sword.

“Heeheeheehee...  
Kekekehahahaha... Huhuhuhu...  
Wahahahaha...”

It was at this moment that an extremely dreadful and sinister laugh rang out from the depths of the cave behind the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. It sounded like laughter and wailing mixed together, and just hearing it would cause one's blood to go cold as all the fear in one's body congealed to one spot.

Yun Che's feet subconsciously

ground to a halt. That was the sound emitted by the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. From what he remembered, he had only heard the ghastly wailing of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower when his group had come within a hundred and fifty meters of it. Whether it was due to them leaving or his vicious battle with the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, once he left that radius, he was no longer able to hear that sound.

Right now, he was standing roughly one and a half kilometers away from the

Netherworld Udumbara Flower, yet he could clearly hear that ghostly wail, as if it was right by his ear! Furthermore, it sounded even more sinister and soul-shaking than before. Just hearing it caused Yun Che's heart to tremble.

At this moment, a wild and triumphant smile suddenly appeared on the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's face.

“The heavens are aiding this king... ha... hahahahaha!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign let out a wild and crazy laugh as he crazily circulated all the remaining energy in his body. He allowed all the wounds on his body to split open and as a fierce current of darkness energy streamed around his body, he rushed towards the depths of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

Yun Che was dazed for an instant. But following that, his expression changed. Could it be that...



“You need to stop him immediately!!” Jasmine suddenly shouted. “It must be because the Netherworld Udumbara fully bloomed! It holds a giant amount of nether yin energy and if he consumes it, not only will his soul origin be repaired fully, it will also replenish his strength and rapidly heal all his wounds!”

Bang!!

All of the profound energy in Yun Che’s body flared as the wounds all over his arms ripped

open, spraying fresh blood everywhere. He immediately put the Heaven Smiting Sword away, his body blurring into streak of lightning as he chased after the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

# Chapter 784 – Desperate Straits

---

“Hahahaha... hahahahaha! The heavens are aiding this king, the heavens are aiding this king!!”

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign laughed as he madly sprinted forward. His laughter was even more wanton and arrogant than it had ever been before. The Netherworld Udumbara Flower only bloomed once every twenty four years and it was this moment that he anticipated the most every twenty four years. Furthermore,

this time he was many times more excited by it than ever before!!

Because this time, not only would the Netherworld Udumbara Flower repair his tattered soul origin, it would also greatly boost his soul power, vitality and profound energy for a short while! It would even increase the recovery of his wounds by several times! Before, all of these effects were useless to him but right now, they could completely change his destiny!!

The past few days, he perched on the ceiling above the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, spending every second keeping watch over it, patiently waiting for the moment when it fully bloomed. Now that it had finally bloomed, it was like the heavens themselves had given him a gift as it had bloomed when he needed it the most.

He only needed a short span of twenty breaths to consume the fully bloomed Netherworld Udumbara Flower, which would allow his dark profound energy to mostly recover! During the vicious battle with Yun Che, he

had come out only slightly worse than Yun Che. Thus, if he could recover to that extent, he would definitely be able to turn the tables on Yun Che and suppress him completely!

“You must catch up to him!! If he devours that Netherworld Udumbara Flower, your death will be all but assured!!” Jasmine’s voice was filled with immeasurable solemnity and resentment... Given her level of power, if they were in any other location, she would need a mere instant to extinguish the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!

But the battle just had to take place here. In this place, she could not even leave Yun Che's body, much less use her powers!

Yun Che used all of his profound energy as he pushed the Extreme Mirage Lightning technique to its utmost limit, gritting his teeth so hard they nearly broke. When it came to the amount of profound energy they had consumed, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had roughly used the same amount as him but when it came to their injuries, the Moon Slaughter

Devil Sovereign had clearly been injured worse than him. This coupled with the fact that Yun Che's speed had always been superior to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's speed in the first place meant that Yun Che was quickly catching up to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, even though both of them were traveling at their fastest speed. In the blink of an eye, he had forcefully closed the gap between them to about one hundred and fifty meters.

Now that all of his profound energy was devoted to increasing his speed, not only



did the internal and external injuries he had sustained stop stabilizing, they quickly began to grow worse... But in the current situation, he could not afford to pay attention to that.

He should... be able to catch up!!

Within a few breaths, he had rushed into the depths of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest and pulled within one hundred meters of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. The wailing laughter of the Netherworld

Udumbara Flower, echoing in his ear, became increasingly clear as he drew closer and closer.

Suddenly, Jasmine noticed something as she shouted in alarm, “Wait! Wait! Stop chasing him!!”

At this moment, a fantastical ghostly light had suddenly emerged within Yun Che’s eyes.

The previously curled-up Netherworld Udumbara Flower

was finally fully bloomed, its nine fully unfurled petals arranged prettily as it released an extremely deep and gloomy purple light. In the darkness, that gloomy purple light completely engulfed everything. Yun Che was not able to see the base of the flower or the stamen and he could not see the gently swaying stalk either. It was as if those nine flower petals were floating in a sea of darkness as they released a mysterious and dangerous bewitching purple light.

Reflected in Yun Che's eyes was... It was as if he had

suddenly seen nine demonic eyes!!

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign gave a wild and triumphant laugh as he had already rushed in front of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. He could sense Yun Che quickly closing in behind him but he did not turn around, the blood-smeared corner of his mouth hooking into a cold and mocking grin.

Ding!

The world in front of Yun Che changed from a dark world streaked with purple light to a completely white one that was still streaked with purple. Even the sounds around him had suddenly died down... the sound of wind that roared in his ears, due to the speed he was traveling, had vanished into thin air.

The only sound that was left was the ghostly wailing of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

The whole world seemed to

have transformed into a field of white in an instant.

Purple light swiftly spread within this white world as it gradually stained the entire world. The ghostly wailing began growing closer and closer, clearer and clearer. The sound was even growing more and more beautiful and pleasing to the ear... It slowly changed from the sinister and bone-grating sound he had first heard to something which sounded as sweet and melodious as notes from heaven...

The purple world and the sweet and beautiful melody were able to drown a person in a fantastical dreamscape. Within this dreamscape, familiar scenes and faces began to appear. Cang Yue, Feng Xue'er, Xiao Lingxi, Xia Qingyue, Chu Yuechan, the Little Demon Empress... Each of them appeared one after the other and every one of them had the most gentle and beautiful of smiles on their faces. One pair of beautiful eyes after another gently gazed at him as the purple world slowly began to drift away...

Further and further... more

and more hazy...

“Yun                      Che!                      Retreat  
immediately!!”

A shrill shout resounded like  
thunder in the purple world.

Bang!!

The      purple-colored      dream  
world instantly shattered as all  
the illusions disappeared. After  
that,      an      enormous      pain



assaulted Yun Che. It felt as if hundreds or thousands of steel needles were piercing his heart and soul, causing him to hold his head with both hands as hoarse wails of pain escaped his throat.

He felt as if countless dark hands were tearing at his soul, as if they were trying to pluck all the memories, will and beliefs... from his living body!

Yun Che had experienced mental assaults and battles of the soul far too many times but none of them had been as

terrifying and cruel as this one. This feeling of his soul tearing and ripping felt colder and clearer than a knife carving into his body... He had never known nor had he ever imagined that mental assaults could be this terrifying!!

As his soul struggled in pain, he nearly lost control of his power and body. His entire person knelt on the ground as his body shivered crazily, his forehead matted in cold sweat.

Moreover, he was still a full

sixty meters away from the  
Netherworld Udumbara Flower!!

“Hurry up and retreat!!”

Jasmine’s voice cracked like thunder in his head once more, helping Yun Che recover some modicum of clarity as he was engaged in a fierce struggle for his soul. He gave a fierce howl as he desperately gathered and focused all of his energy, tumbling backwards in an extremely distorted and painstaking fashion.

Bang!!

Yun Che's head fiercely hit the ground and he rolled and tumbled backwards several times before coming to a stop. During this bumpy ride, he had rolled backwards more than sixty meters. It still felt like his soul was being torn to shreds but it had weakened to the point where he could easily deal with it.

Yun Che propped himself up using his arms as he gasped for breath. Cold sweat streamed

down his forehead and rarely-seen fear and alarm could be seen in his eyes.

So that was the... Netherworld Udumbara Flower's soul stealing ability!?

To think that it was this dreadful... Why was it this dreadful!!?

He was still so far away just now, but it was already that terrifying! If he went even nearer in order to harvest it...

The results would have been unimaginable!

How could such a terrifying thing exist in this world!?

“Now do you believe me?” Jasmine said with an extremely solemn expression on her face, “Once the Netherworld Udumbara Flower fully blooms, its soul stealing ability will be far more terrifying than you can imagine! It is definitely not something that a person from your plane can come into contact with!!”

Yun Che did not voice a reply to Jasmine, instead his head jerked upwards... Ahead of him, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign already stood in front of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. That gray-white face was spread wide by an arrogant, mocking grin. He greedily stared at those nine ghostly purple petals as he got drunk on the hellish aura that radiated from them. But he did not forget to cast a wanton, mocking grin in the fallen Yun Che's direction, "Foolish and pathetic human being! To think that you even dared to dream of snatching the Netherworld Udumbara Flower from this

king... hahahahaha...”

The wild laughter suddenly abated and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s face twisted into a mask of fury while his voice grew thick with bone-grating rage and resentment, “It was you... who forced this king to transform, causing me to greatly harm my life origin as a result! Even if you lose your pathetic life ten thousand times, it would not be enough to assuage this king’s rage! After this king consumes this Netherworld Udumbara Flower... I will definitely allow you to experience all of the



torture known to my devil race!  
I'll leave you begging for death!  
I'll make you forever regret  
being born into this world!!”

He turned his head back, his eyes completely focused on the nearby Netherworld Udumbara Flower. His previous violent fury immediately turned into ecstasy and agitation. He stretched out both his devil claws, covering them with black light as he slowly reached towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... His movements were so slow and gentle that it looked like he was going to handle the most

precious treasure he possessed in his life.

“Ssss—” Yun Che gritted his teeth so hard that they almost broke. Just thinking about the dreadfulness of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower left him drenched in cold sweat. So this short distance that laid between him and the flower had now become a natural chasm that he could not cross!

No! No matter what, he had to stop the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign...

The reason I risked it all to stay behind in this place was to obtain that Netherworld Udumbara Flower! If the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign consumes it, not only will it be extremely likely that it will be the only of one of its kind to exist in this world, the lives of Hong'er, Jasmine and I will be lost forever in this dark place!

So I have to stop it no matter what!

No matter what!!

Both of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's claws were touching the Netherworld Udumbara Flower as he prepared to slowly pluck it... Even though his movements were slow, his hands still trembled, his expression even contained a hint of fanaticism and devotion! As an ancient devil, he had never believed in any higher power. Nor was there any higher power worthy of his belief. But this Netherworld Udumbara Flower had become a sacred existence to him. Without it, he would have disintegrated into dust long ago! Moreover, it was only by relying on it that his

soul origin could be fully recovered and he could see the light of day once more!

So every time he plucked it, he was exceedingly careful as he was afraid that he would hurt it. He had never fully absorbed all of the energy in this place, he would always ensure that enough of it remained so it could continue to nurture the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

Black light wrapped around the nine petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. In the next

instant, he would perfectly pluck all nine of these petals... But at this moment, an extremely dangerous aura assaulted him from behind.

Yun Che bounced to his feet as he summoned the Heaven Smiting Sword and his Profound Handle once more. He nearly raised all the profound energy in his body to its limit in one instant as his sword and the Profound Handle blazed with gold-colored Golden Crow flames. After that, he launched an explosive attack in front of him.

“Phoenix Sky Wolf Slash!”

Poof!!

Flowers of blood sprayed from his arms once more as the huge aftershock of his attack sent him tumbling fiercely backwards. The two images of a flaming Sky Wolf carried furiously vibrating spatial ripples as they exploded towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had never thought that Yun Che, who had clearly exhausted most of his profound energy, would still be able to launch such a ferocious attack. Furthermore, the two images of the Sky Wolf were moving at an exceedingly fast speed. Because the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had devoted all of his attention to the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, he had only detected those two attacks when they were barely ten meters away from him.

Bang!!!



Both burning images of the Sky Wolf viciously rammed into the back of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. He gave a strangled cry as the black-colored scales on his back immediately exploded. Black blood flew through the air as severely deformed bones, that had yet to break, were exposed. His entire devil body shot outwards like a cannon before fiercely smashing against a stone wall that was three hundred meters away. He slid to the ground in a slump, not getting up for a very long time.

“It... succeeded!!” Yun Che said as he propped himself up using his sword. His vision suddenly went black and he nearly toppled over. The Sky Wolf Slash that he had just performed had exceeded the limits of his strength through sheer force of will. Furthermore, he also had to use energy to activate his Profound Handle. The enormous amount of energy he had used caused his body to feel drawn and weak for a while and he could barely hold the Heaven Smiting Sword steady.

But before he even had time to draw a few breaths, his pupils

suddenly contracted fiercely.

His recent attack had been cleverly designed to avoid any damage to the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign did not wish for any harm to come to it and neither did Yun Che. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was blown away but the stalk of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was practically untouched. However, of the nine glowing purple lights which swayed above it...

Shockingly, only four petals were left!

Furthermore, at the end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, five gloomy purple lights were glowing where the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign laid!!

“Crap!” Jasmine exclaimed, “When he was blasted away, he managed to grab five flower petals!!”

Before Jasmine’s voice had fallen, Yun Che shot towards the

Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign like an loosened arrow... He took a look at the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that he avoided before crazily racing towards where the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign laid.

“Bastard!!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign struggled to get up, his back arched in pain. He felt as if a hole had been blasted clear through his chest. But the moment he was sent flying, he had also managed to grab the five petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that were already in his hands. If not for

Yun Che blasting him away, all nine of the flower petals would have fallen into his hands.

When he looked at the onrushing Yun Che, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign grew so furious that he felt as if he would explode, “You damned bastard!! Your struggles will only increase the pain that you are about to experience!!!”

As he roared in fury, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign grabbed those five gloomy and ghostly petals and tossed them

towards his open mouth.

Yun Che's expression suddenly went white as he yelled in a hoarse voice, "Shut your mouth!!"

Gulp!!

It was a simple swallowing motion, something that Yun Che would not be in time to stop even if he was ten times faster. He could only watch as those five petals fell into that wide devil mouth. He could only

helplessly witness the Moon  
Slaughter Devil Sovereign  
swallowing them in one gulp.

Yun Che, “!!!”



# Chapter 785 – Desperate Gamble

---

Shit!!

As he saw the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign swallow the petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, Yun Che felt an intense chill wash over his entire body.

In the end, the worst case scenario had still presented itself in front of his very eyes.

Not only had he missed the chance to get the desired Netherworld Udumbara Flower, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's wounds and powers would be recovering soon as well! Furthermore, this place was a region that was sealed shut, so even the Primordial Profound Ark would not be able to teleport out of here. It also happened that Jasmine was not able to materialize in this place!

So right now, this could be said to be the most cruel and desperate situation Yun Che had

ever been in before.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who had swallowed the petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower threw his arms wide open in ecstasy as he shut his eyes and enjoyed the feeling of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower's power spreading through his body. An extremely soothing and comfortable feeling spread through his entire body, even down to depths of his soul, causing all the aches and pains that afflicted him to practically disappear.

The dark energy in his body also seemed to be recovering quickly... Yun Che and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign could both sense it clearly. At this moment, all the wounds on his body started to glow with a faint purple light. After that, the wounds began recovering at such an alarming speed that Yun Che was able to witness the flesh mending and knitting right before his very eyes.

“Hahahaha!” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign laughed wildly. The moment he

consumed the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was the moment of the greatest ecstasy for him. But this time, the feeling of ecstasy was far greater than it had ever been before. Once he thought of how Yun Che's desperate struggles would only lead to despair in the end, his heart was seized by an intense joy, "Pathetic human! Let's see how long you can struggle against this king this time around!"

"You will soon know the fate of those who have provoked and enraged this king! This king will let you experience the most

dreadful purgatory in this world!”

“...” Yun Che’s whole body went cold as he sensed the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s aura begin to rise dramatically. His guts sank as he saw those wounds close before his very eyes but his mind still remained incredibly clear and focused despite the emotions washing over him...

The more desperate a situation got, the more clear-headed he would become!

Jasmine had said that given the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's current state, he would be able to recover most of his profound energy and be healed of most of his wounds within a mere hundred breaths! However, he had only consumed five flower petals rather than the entire flower, so it should take longer than that.

Even though being able to recover most of his energy and vitality just like that was truly astounding, in the end he still had one hundred breaths... So

he would not be thrown into the pits of despair just yet!!

Furthermore, even though five petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower had been consumed... four petals still remained!

The power of the remaining four petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... may just be enough to grant Jasmine a new life!! Even if they could not, it would definitely still be of great help.



Yun Che's brows sank as his thoughts began to race... Right now, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was still seriously injured and he had used up most of his power as well. If he was able to kill him before he could recover with the Netherworld Udumbara Flower's help, then...

No! There was no if! This was the only option left to him, the only hope he had left... Otherwise, he would definitely be dead meat once the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign recovered!!

However, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aggregate power and current state was not far off from his own, given the fact that he also had a devil body... He had not even managed to critically injure him during their vicious battle that had lasted for hours! So trying to deliver a killing blow within the span of a few short breaths would be harder than reaching the heavens!

But the situation he was currently facing did not give Yun Che time to hesitate or consider. Because the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's strength

continued to grow with each passing breath and his wounds continued to heal at a rapid pace!! This basically meant that each passing breath would cause the already miniscule spark of hope he had to constantly shrink! Perhaps after the next ten or twenty breaths, that already faint hope might disappear completely.

On the other hand, even if Yun Che had to think with his toes, he would be able to realize that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's following move would not be to engage him in combat. Rather, he would pour

all his effort into shaking Yun Che off and rushing towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower! At that point, not only would the remaining four petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower fall into his devil hands... He was not even able to approach the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, so he could forget about struggling or hoping for victory!

Yun Che's eyes widened as a resolute and vicious light radiated from within. Both his hands tightened fiercely around the hilt of the Heaven Smiting Sword. It was almost as if he wanted to embed it in his flesh...

Now that he only had one option left to him, Yun Che tossed aside all thoughts of prices or aftermaths!

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!!”

Yun Che roared in such a loud voice that it sounded like his throat would be torn apart. After a short pause, his speed explosively increased as he rushed towards the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

“Yun Che, you...”

Jasmine instantly realized what Yun Che was planning and she swallowed her words of warning before they even left her mouth... Because she knew that this was indeed the only option left to him.

He had not choice but to stake his very life on this gamble!

Even though it was extremely likely that he would explode on the spot, at least he could still

grasp at that tiny sliver of hope!

“Evil God’s fourth realm,  
Rumbling Heaven!!”

Boom!!

An incredibly heavy rumbling sound resounded within Yun Che’s profound veins. All of his profound entrances were fully opened as the Evil God’s Profound Veins instantly swelled to twice their usual size... and they were coming close to rupturing!!

At the same time, a wild and frenzied energy wave exploded from his body as they shoved aside all the surrounding darkness energy! The dreadfulness of this energy wave caused the wildly laughing Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign to fly away as if he had been hit by a giant mallet. He flew through the air before smashing against one of the stone walls located in the very depths of the cave.

The Moon Slaughter Devil  
Sovereign's laughter



immediately grew strangled as he jerked his head upwards to look at Yun Che. The eyes that were filled with complacency and joy were now filled with an enormous dread...

The Yun Che who had been rushing at him had disappeared and what had taken his place was a man who was completely covered in blood, a blood person who was radiating a terrifying aura! Every single strand of his hair stood on end as flames burned around his body! And the profound energy that he was releasing was astonishingly dyed an eye-catching and alarming

scarlet color! Both of his eyes seemed to have been dyed with blood as even the whites of his eyes had turned a bloody red!

Blood was spraying from his arms as countless alarming cracks started running through his skin, causing blood to spout from his body like a fountain. His entire body looked as if it had been stabbed thousands of times before it was dragged out of its own blood and one could scarcely see any part of his body that was left unharmed!

His appearance was so frightening that it would cause a normal person to pale in shock and fear but it definitely would not be able to faze the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. What frightened the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was the wild and berserk aura that was radiating from his body!!

If Yun Che's aura could previously be described as a cluster of flames... then the blood man in front of him was releasing an aura that was akin to a violently erupting volcano from the depths of hell itself! It was so terrifying that all the

nerves in the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's body convulsed as the soul that was being nourished by the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was instantly assaulted by an extreme sense of danger.

Furthermore, the blood man was holding a vermillion greatsword in his hand, that further proved that... this blood man was actually Yun Che!!

“You...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign gasped as he pressed his back against the

wall. He was not able to even croak out a chuckle anymore.

From the moment Yun Che had opened the “Rumbling Heaven” gate, his senses had been completely engulfed by unending pain. But at the same time, he could also feel an incomparably dreadful power exploding out of his body... Furthermore, this power far exceeded the limits of what his body could endure. He could clearly feel every part of his body rupturing the moment profound energy exploded from within his body... Even the world in front of him had turned

blood red.

Besides that blood red color, he could not see anything else...

Only the spark of an unextinguishable will was still firmly locked onto the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aura.

Raising arms that had nearly lost all feeling, he exhausted all of his will to barrel towards the area where the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's aura was

located.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's pupils narrowed to pinpricks... One million years ago, this kind of power would've been so insignificant that he would not even deign to notice it. But for the current Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, it was a calamitous power that caused him to shake uncontrollably in fear.

He glanced at the purple light shining in the periphery of his vision. He wanted to rush to

where the Netherworld  
Udumbara Flower was but every  
time he tried to move his devil  
body forward, he was forcefully  
pushed back by the terrifying  
aura that was rushing towards  
him. It was as if his back had  
been nailed to the wall behind  
him. Right now, he could barely  
even raise his leg, much less try  
to rush forward. It was as if  
every part of his body was being  
pressed down by an enormous  
mountain.

The vermillion sword beam  
grew nearer and nearer and the  
fear in the Moon Devil  
Sovereign's eyes grew



commensurately. He gave a great roar as all the power in his body surged forth desperately. He formed a jet-black vortex of energy that was ten thousand times darker than the deepest abyss and sent it flying towards Yun Che with a yell.

The moment that jet-black vortex exploded outwards, the Heaven Smiting Sword which carried the power of the “Rumbling Heaven” gate whistled downwards. Instantly, the jet-black vortex that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had formed with all his remaining energy came to a

sudden stop. After that, it began to be suppressed, devoured and swallowed up by that vermillion sword beam... until it completely disappeared.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's vision was covered by boundless vermillion light, a copious amount of blood spraying into air as he bore the brunt of that catastrophic explosion. An earth-shaking rumble shook the entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest as a howl laced with despair and pain rang throughout every corner...

Booom—

“UUUUWWWWAAAAAAHHHHHH!!

Jet-black stone walls crumbled away rapidly as countless stone fragments fell to the ground. The entire Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was shaking and it seemed as if the heavens and the earth themselves were shaking along with it. Destructive winds blew throughout the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest as they collided and slammed into everything around them, destroying whatever they could destroy. Furthermore, the

deepest part of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had been completely filled by fiercely burning dull golden flames as a catastrophic storm raged about wantonly for ages...

This was the first time Yun Che had ever opened the “Rumbling Heaven” gate, so this was also the first sword slash that he had ever performed while the “Rumbling Heaven” gate was open. Jasmine was still unaware of the result of this sword slash. But what she could definitively confirm was that the current Yun Che was completely incapable of enduring the power

unleashed by the “Rumbling Heaven” gate! Yun Che forcefully opened the “Rumbling Heaven” gate and his profound energy instantly went berserk, Jasmine could clearly see all of his internal organs rupturing as his veins snapped and blood flowed freely from his body. The only things that remained unbroken were his bones that were reinforced by the Dragon God Marrow.

It was only for that one instant... But every single second after that would cause the situation to worsen by many times!!

Perhaps it would only need two breaths for Yun Che's body to explode and he definitely would not leave a whole body behind.

Given the dire straits that they were in, Jasmine could not afford to hesitate anymore. The moment Yun Che used all of his willpower to launch that blow with his sword, Jasmine's soul body left the Sky Poison Pearl and entered Yun Che's body. Four scarlet profound energy beams shot out at extreme speed as they pierced all of Yun Che's internal organs and entered his

profound veins. The four beams of light unerringly pressed on the four open Evil God Gates.

Jasmine's power was so tyrannical that the instant those scarlet lights disappeared, the four open Evil God Gates had closed as well. The berserking profound energy immediately began to fade away. Jasmine breathed a small sigh of relief before she hurriedly entered the Sky Poison Pearl.

Her soul form was deathly afraid of the devil energy within

the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Since Yun Che had been within the very depths of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest itself, it was natural that a small portion of that devil energy had seeped into his body. Even though Jasmine had only dwelt inside Yun Che's body for a brief moment, she felt an exceedingly unbearable feeling spread through her body the moment she re-entered the Sky Poison Pearl.

Jasmine swiftly went into meditation and a long time passed before that unbearable feeling finally disappeared.



She opened her eyes once more  
as she took a look at the world  
outside.

# Chapter 786 – Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer

---

The fires continued to burn but they had grown much smaller than before. The wild windstorm and the constant shaking of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had also come to a stop. Yun Che lay limply on the ground, the muscles of his blood-drenched body spasming and twitching. Every now and then, hoarse moans could be heard from his mouth... proving not only that he was still alive but also that he still retained some semblance of consciousness.

“Yun Che, don’t even try to stand up. Immediately focus on activating the Great Way of the Buddha instead!” Jasmine quickly commanded him.

Jasmine’s voice caused the shuddering in Yun Che’s body to lessen. He no longer tried to struggle. Instead, he closed his eyes and devoted all his remaining strength to activating the Great Way of the Buddha. He could see through blurry eyes that his body was completely covered in blood, yet he did not feel the slightest bit of pain... it

was as if his entire body did not belong to him anymore.

At the very end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, more than ten paces to the right of Yun Che, several small clusters of flame still continued to burn. Astonishingly, the thing that had been set aflame was the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's devil body.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's left arm and both his legs had been severed from his body, lying strewn across the

floor in scattered pieces. What remained was only his right arm which could barely be considered intact. Furthermore, his entire body had been completely shattered. It was as if he was mud that had been trampled over by an entire battalion of soldiers. And even this “mud” was still slowly being burned up and consumed by the Golden Crow flames.

“...This king... actually...”

The fingers on his right arm were trembling and a voice that

sounded as rough as sandpaper came from the immobilized head of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign.

That voice caused Yun Che's body to twitch. After that, he began to struggle furiously to get up. It was then that Jasmine's low voice rang out, "Don't worry about him, he's already been smashed to bits and pieces by you. The reason why he can still speak is because he is using the very last bit of his devil energy. He will very soon be even deadlier than dead."

“...” Yun Che’s eyelids cracked open as his expression grew more relaxed. His lips curved slightly into a faint smile before he spoke with great difficulty, “Jasmine... thank you, if not for you...”

“Hmph! If not for me, you would have died an even uglier death than him!” Jasmine said huffily. But this time, she did not scold Yun Che for forcing open the “Rumbling Heaven” gate. Because it was really the only option left to him, the only hope that he could grasp at... and in the end, fate once again stood at Yun Che’s side.

His wounds were very heavy and another practitioner would have died a hundred times over. Still, these injuries were insufficient to condemn him to death and could be recovered from in a fairly short period of time..

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, do you have any words to leave behind!?”  
Jasmine asked in a cold voice.

“Cough...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign droned on in a



voice filled with pain and despair, “Even the Evil God’s... seal... which lasted for a million years... was not able to kill this king... Yet this king... actually... died... at the hands of... a pathetic human...”

“Hmph! Even though the million year seal of the Evil God was not enough to kill you, in the end, you still die because of his power! It looks like no matter how hard you struggled, even though your struggles lasted for a million years, you were ultimately still unable to escape your fate of dying by the Evil God’s hand!”

Jasmine's cold voice was somber. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's impending death caused her to breathe a large sigh of relief but her heart still held a gloominess that would not be easily dispelled... If they had not entered this place for the sake of finding the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, if Yun Che's peculiar characteristic of courting disaster had not acted up again and convinced him to stay behind, they would not have known that this place was actually hiding a devil from ancient times.

She was unable to imagine the horrific outcome that would have occurred if the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had continued to hide in this place until the day he completely recovered the strength he had during his peak.

Yun Che's all-or-nothing gamble to kill the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was for the sake of preserving his own life and obtaining the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. But in the end, he had still killed a devil! Perhaps no one in this

universe would ever know about it but he had eradicated a giant calamity that would have engulfed countless of worlds in the future.

“Evil... God...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign mumbled before he began to laugh hoarsely, “Ha... haha... ha... Do you... really think that the... Evil God... was truly... a god...”

“What? If the Evil God wasn’t a god, then could he have been a human or a devil instead!?”

Jasmine said with a cold and mocking laugh, “Even though you are at death’s door, you’re still a devil who has lived for over a million years. But the only thing you want to say before you die is this pile of hilarious rubbish?”

“Heh... hehehe...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign continued to chuckle but his laughter sounded rather bizarre. At this moment, his remaining arm trembled in the air as it slowly lifted up off the ground. The remaining devil claws began to stretch out wide as they started to emit a weak and faint

black light.

“...!” Jasmine’s heart suddenly tightened with anxiety... Could it be that he still had some strength left!?

But she immediately relaxed once more. Even though Yun Che’s wounds were extremely heavy right now and he did not possess the ability to resist, he still had the protection of the Dragon God’s bloodline and the Great Way of the Buddha. Even if the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign could release one final

beam of devil energy, it would still not be enough to kill Yun Che.

At most, it would merely inflict another wound on Yun Che's broken body.

A jet-black orb that was around the size of a dragon's eye appeared in the middle of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's hand which was wrapped in black light. His devil claws began to tremble as he spoke in a hoarse voice filled with resentment, "Pathetic

human being... who has also inherited the power of the Evil God... this king... will sacrifice his devil orb... in order to consign you to eternal... damnation!!

All of the remaining power in his broken body was gathered up in that trembling arm as he threw something forward... The jet-black devil orb flew through the darkness before coming into contact with Yun Che and directly burying itself inside of his body.



This sudden and bizarre occurrence sent a jolt of alarm through Jasmine's heart and she spoke in a low voice, "What was that!? What did you throw at him?!"

"Ha... hahahaha... HAHAAHAHA..." The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign began to laugh wildly and his hoarse laughter was laced with pain, sorrow... and a warped and twisted joy.

"UWAAAAAAAAAHHHHH!!

At this moment, a pain-filled moan suddenly came from Yun Che's mouth as his blood-covered body was suddenly covered in a weak and hazy black light... Furthermore, the aura that this light was releasing was shockingly a dark devil energy!

“!!” Jasmine could not care less about the risk as her soul body swiftly left the Sky Poison Pearl and entered Yun Che's body once more. Her senses remained locked onto the jet-black orb that had entered entered Yun Che's body. To her shock, she discovered that it had actually

buried itself into Yun Che's profound veins. It released a layer of black light as it sheathed his profound veins in a faint black glow.

Jasmine stretched out a hand, intending to use her power to eradicate it... But the moment her finger stretched out, her heart and soul were shaken fiercely and her face went white with shock.

The devil aura radiating from this dark orb was not strong; it could even be said to be

incredibly weak. It would not even be able to swiftly kill the current Yun Che who was in an incredibly weak state. But the level of this devil aura was terrifyingly high!

This was far beyond the scope of her knowledge and experience!

Suddenly, Jasmine remembered that the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had mumbled the two words “devil orb” right before he had thrown out this black orb...

Could it be that this was actually the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's devil origin orb!?

Was this the devil origin orb that the records stated sustained an ancient devil's life origin, soul origin and origin of darkness!?

An item on the level of the devils!!

Jasmine's tiny hand faintly

trembled... No, she could not do it!! If this was truly a devil origin orb as recorded in the annals of history, even if its power was extremely weak, it was still not something that she could destroy! Moreover, it appeared to have actually forcefully merged with Yun Che's Evil God's Profound Veins... Even if she was able to remove it by force, it was extremely likely that she would cause severe damage to Yun Che's profound veins in the process!

What was going on!? These were the Evil God's Profound Veins that we are talking about,

how could a devil origin orb merge with them so easily? Could it be because the level of the devil origin orb was so high while the level of Yun Che's profound energy was too low, causing his profound veins to be unable to resist it?

Jasmine's expression kept changing as she struggled with her thoughts. Finally, she stretched out her hand once more as a scarlet colored profound energy surged forth. She reduced its power again and again... She repeated this process more than ten times before finally pushing it into

Yun Che's profound veins. After that, she carefully wrapped her profound energy around that jet-black orb.

Immediately, the jet-black light was completely engulfed and covered by that bloody light and the originally weak devil energy completely vanished as well... It had been thoroughly sealed away by Jasmine's powers.

Jasmine let her arm drop as she swiftly returned to the Sky Poison Pearl... Sealing away this thing that was most likely a



devil origin orb was the only option she could think of at the moment. But in order to avoid harming Yun Che's profound veins, she did not dare to use too much power. So that seal would not last for very long. From today onwards, she would have to renew that seal from time to time.

“Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign...” Yun Che could feel the intense changes that his body and profound veins were undergoing as he hoarsely gasped through gritted teeth, “What did... you do to me!?”

“This king... has given to you... a great boon... that you would never be able to obtain... even if you wished for it... ha... haha... kuh...” A spurt of black blood sprayed from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s mouth, carrying away the greater part of his life with it.

“You...” Yun Che growled through tightly gritted teeth but he was still unable to stand up.

“Don’t worry, I have already sealed it away.” Jasmine said

coldly, Even though she had told Yun Che “not to worry”, her heart was exceptionally heavy. Because now that a devil origin orb had merged with the Evil God’s Profound Veins, perhaps... it may one day cause a bizarre change that no one would be able to predict or anticipate.

Things that were on the level of the devils were things that not even Jasmine was able to control or anticipate.

“Heh...” The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s body no longer

moved and his voice had grown so faint that it was as soft as the buzzing of an insect, “You... pathetic... and stupid... human beings... Do all of you really think that our devil race... has been destroyed completely...?”

“That which... was... banished... will surely... one... day...”

The final traces of black light within the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s eyes completely disappeared.

This was the king of the Eternal Night Devil Clan, a devil who had escaped the calamity that had afflicted the gods and the devils during ancient times, a devil who had escaped the million year seal of the Evil God. But in the end, he had died at the hands of a human being and he would forever lie in the eternal darkness of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

# Chapter 787 – Taking The Netherworld Udumbara By Force

---

“Is he... dead?” Yun Che asked with much difficulty.

“He’s dead!” His devil soul has dispersed and before long, the Golden Crow flames will completely burn his body to ashes as well.” Jasmine said as she sighed silently in her heart, “But don’t let anything distract you right now, you need to devote all your energy to healing your wounds! The injuries you

sustained are really too serious this time around and even if it is you, if you let them linger on a while more, you might lose your life at any moment.”

Yun Che did not speak any further. Instead he focused on adjusting his current state and mindset until he could attain proper focus. After that, he swiftly cleared away any thoughts that would distract him before he focused on circulating the Great Way of the Buddha... He knew that Jasmine’s words were not the least bit exaggerated. Even when he was in the Primordial

Profound Ark, he had never been so seriously injured to the point where he lost all sensation of pain.

This time, his internal and external injuries were incredibly serious and within the entire Profound Sky Continent, the only person who could sustain such injuries and still live was Yun Che alone. This coupled with the fact that he had nearly run out of profound energy meant that it would require a rather long period of time before he could make a full recovery.



Because of his heavy injuries, Yun Che's ability to concentrate was also greatly affected. A full seven minutes passed before that dim golden pagoda gradually appeared over his head. After that, the energy of heaven and earth that surged into his body began to get denser and denser.

At the end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, the broken corpse of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had finally been incinerated by the Golden Crow flames. The devil body, that was bereft of the power of the devil god, could not escape the fate of being burned to cinders...

However, the clouds of black ash were dimly illuminated by streaks of bizarre black light.

Behind the body lay the wall at the very end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Most of the impact from the sword strike that Yun Che had launched at the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, after he opened the “Rumbling Heaven” gate, had been absorbed by this pitch-black wall. However, the attack that had enough power to destroy the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had not caused this wall to collapse. It had only left behind many long and

narrow cracks along its surface.

Threads of abnormal black energy were quietly seeping from those cracks. It was just that there was no way anyone would be able to see it with their naked eyes in this absolute darkness.

“Heeheeheehee...  
Kekekehahahaha... Huhuhuhu...  
Wahahahaha...”

Now that the dust had finally settled, one could clearly hear

the sinister wailing laughter that continued to echo within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. The Netherworld Udumbara Flower still gently swayed despite the absence of wind but only four petals remained and whether it was the ghostly wail or the gloomy purple light, both of them had grown far weaker than before.

---

Blue Wind Nation. Snow  
Region of Extreme Ice

Dongfang Xiu had been going north all this while, traveling through day and night and barely even stopping to catch his breath. Given his cultivation, which was at the initial stages of the Emperor Profound Realm, he had barely made it from Blue Wind Imperial City to Frozen Cloud Asgard within twenty hours.

By the time he had reached Frozen Cloud Asgard and conveyed the message he was supposed to deliver, Dongfang Xiu had exhausted all his profound energy. He fell headfirst into the snow and he

could barely force himself up after half a day of rest.

“Palace Chief Dongfang, do not worry. Asgard Master has the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul with him, even if the distance is one hundred and fifty thousand kilometers away, he will still be able to receive our sound transmissions.”

The news of Xiao Yun’s disappearance deeply shocked the disciples of Frozen Cloud Asgard. Yun Che had personally told them that Xiao Yun was his

sworn brother and a few months ago, he had even brought Xiao Yun to Frozen Cloud Asgard to assist him in scaring off Sun Moon Divine Hall.

Murong Qianxue and the others did not have time to arrange for a place for Dongfang Xiu to rest. The six of them combined their powers and swiftly constructed the sound transmission profound formation that was unique to Frozen Cloud Asgard. Borrowing the power of the profound formation, they would definitely be able to send a sound transmission to Yun Che, who possessed the Frozen Cloud

Celestial Soul, as long as he was still on the Profound Sky Continent.

After they had constructed the sound transmission profound formation, Murong Qianxue entered the center of the profound formation and focused on sending a sound transmission to Yun Che. Immediately after that, her eyes blinked open as a look of shock and alarm spread across her face.

“Senior Sister, what happened?” Mu Lanyi asked in a



worried voice.

“I can’t get through, we are unable to send out the sound transmission.” Murong Qianxue replied, shaking her head gravely as her crescent brows knitted together in confusion.

“How could it be?” Feng Hanyue asked anxiously, “Asgard Master has the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul, so how is it possible that he isn’t able to receive our sound transmission. Nothing like this has ever happened before. Unless...

unless Asgard Master has expelled the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul from his body.”

“Ah!” Feng Hanxue cried in shock as her beautiful eyes immediately grew misty with emotion, “Could it be... could it be that Asgard Master doesn’t want us anymore...?”

“Stop spouting nonsense.” Jun Lianqie immediately exclaimed, “Asgard Master is a man who values relationships the most in this world! There is no way he would suddenly abandon our

Frozen Cloud Asgard. If he truly expelled the the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul from his body, the six of us should be able to sense it. My guess is that because Supreme Ocean Palace is located in the ocean that is one thousand five hundred kilometers to the south of the southernmost part of the Profound Sky Continent, it might be located outside the boundaries of the Profound Sky Continent. So Asgard Master would not be able to receive our sound transmission. There is another possibility... That place is, in the end, still a Sacred Ground, so it should be covered by an a powerful protective barrier and that barrier might

also block out sound transmissions.”

“Another possibility I can think of is that Asgard Master is currently within the ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’ that he had mentioned many times before.” Chu Yueli continued after Jun Lianqie, “Asgard Master has told us this twice before, the main objective behind his trip to Supreme Ocean Palace is to enter the ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’ to look for something. Furthermore, that ‘Moon Slaughter Devil Nest’ is the greatest forbidden ground in the

entire Supreme Ocean Palace, so it is definitely covered by an extremely strong isolation barrier. Not being able to send a sound transmission to him is extremely normal in such circumstances.”

“In short, let’s not play wild guessing games with each other.” Murong Qianxue said as she strode out of the profound barrier. She turned to Dongfang Xiu before she continued, “Palace Chief Dongfang, please rest here for the time being, you can send a sound transmission to Empress Cang Yue to update her on the current situation.

There is definitely a reason that we cannot send a sound transmission to Asgard Master but there is no need to get too anxious. After that, we will attempt to send a sound transmission every two hours and I believe that Asgard Master will reply us before too long.”

“If that is the case... then we will have to trouble you fairies regarding this.” Dongfang Xiu said in an extremely exhausted voice.

Murong Qianxue and the others

did as they said they would. They would reconstruct that profound formation and attempt to send a sound transmission once every two hours. Each time they performed the task, they intentionally increased the amount of profound strength they used...

But the days passed and there was still no reply from Yun Che.

At this point, even the ladies of Frozen Cloud Asgard began to panic.

Even though none of them said it out loud, every single one of them had a bad feeling that... it was not only Xiao Yun that was in trouble right now. It seemed very likely that something had happened to Yun Che as well.

---

Within the dark and silent world, Yun Che, who had sat quietly for an unknown period of time, suddenly opened his eyes as he asked in a strained and urgent voice, “How long was I in a trance for!?”



“More than forty hours.”  
Jasmine coolly replied.

“What!?” Yun Che shouted in shock as he jumped to his feet. That sudden action immediately tore open all the wounds in his body, causing his face to twist in pain as he uttered a low moan.

Yun Che could completely recover from normal injuries in two days time, even if they were considered heavy injuries for a normal person but this time, things were different. Not only

had he sustained grievous external and internal injuries, he had even damaged his foundation. So even though he had been quietly recovering from his injuries for more than forty hours, only half of his injuries had healed and he had also only recovered about fifty percent of his profound strength.

“Why? Are you afraid that you won’t make it in time for the Devil Sword Conference?” Jasmine said as she gave cold snort, “Hmph! You haven’t even completely recovered yet and you still have to think about how

you're going to break out of this place! So attending the Devil Sword Conference should be the last thing on your mind."

"No! It's not that!" Yun Che said as he swiftly turned around.

Those four points of gloomy purple light continued to slowly sway three hundred meters from where Yun Che was. The moment he looked over at them, he could hear that sinister, soul-piercing, ghostly wail ring out.

Besides the fact that it was missing petals, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was exactly how Yun Che saw it initially. Even the four petals that remained still continued to shimmer with that purple light, it did not look like it had started to rot or decay in the least.

Even from three hundred meters away, the moment Yun Che laid his eyes on it, he could clearly feel its touch on his soul.

“This is great.” Yun Che said as he let out a long sigh of relief,

“Master told me the Netherworld Udumbara Flower would only bloom for three days and once those three days were up, it would wilt instantly.”

“Even though it’s only been two days since it bloomed, it still lost five of its flower petals. So its strength would have greatly weakened. Given my knowledge of these rare plants and spirit medicines, I believe it will definitely wilt earlier than the recorded three days because of it! So we are truly fortunate that all four of the remaining petals are still in perfect condition!”

Yun Che could not help feeling antsy right now. In order to concentrate on recovering from his injuries, he had sealed all of his senses. He knew that the moment he slipped into a trance he would lose all sense of time, so he ensured that a part of his will remained to prevent him from being in a trance for too long a period of time. It was just that his wounds were really too serious, so his will had become extremely weak and the bit of will that he had held in anticipation of this event very swiftly dissipated as well... The moment he came to, he instantly thought of how long the

Netherworld Udumbara Flower would stay in full bloom and he grew so anxious that cold sweat nearly drenched his entire body.

It was truly fortunate that all four of the remaining petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower had remained intact.

But at the same time, he was perfectly clear about one thing—If it was a complete and unharmed Netherworld Udumbara Flower, it would still be a full day away from wilting.

A Netherworld Udumbara Flower that had only four petals remaining would definitely remain in full bloom for a shorter period of time, it definitely would not last for three full days! If two days had already passed since it fully bloomed... then it was extremely likely that it would wilt any second now!

“You want forcefully retrieve that Netherworld Udumbara?” Jasmine said as her delicate brows slanted downwards. After that, she immediately barked out a rebuke, “Are you insane!? Have you so quickly forgotten



about how terrifying the Netherworld Udumbara Flower is!? What's more, right now you're injured all over and you only have half your usual profound strength. So even thinking of getting within one hundred meters of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower will already be harder than scaling the heavens, much less actually plucking it! Forcing your way close to it will also likely result in it stealing your soul and you will become the living dead!"

Yun Che breathed a long sigh before he said in an extremely

resolute voice, “I am well aware of how terrifying the Netherworld Udumbara Flower is! But do not forget the reason why I stayed behind in the first place! This even resulted in meeting one Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign who very nearly buried me in this place!”

“What Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign? What ancient devil? What universal calamity... I don’t really give a crap about any of those things! The only thing I stayed behind to do was to obtain this Netherworld Udumbara Flower! Furthermore, I have exhausted

so much strength and braved so much danger that I very nearly threw my life away, all so that I could protect this Netherworld Udumbara Flower that only has four petals left! If we do not manage to retrieve it, how do you expect me to be satisfied!?”

Yun Che had already started to gnash his teeth as he finished his rant. Ever since he had entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, his encounters had far exceeded his expectations. Given his personality, having already reached this point, he would definitely not allow himself to leave empty-handed, regardless

of the risks or how difficult the task was.

Jasmine replied in a very grave voice, “Hmph, I know that the thing you love to do the most is to gamble with your life. But you should still retain some self-awareness at the very least! Two days ago, you personally experienced the might of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower—and it was when you were still very far away from it! Right now, your wounds haven’t even healed, yet it seems like you’ve completely forgotten what it means to feel pain!”

“Jasmine, tell me this one thing.” Yun Che said in a very calm voice, “Is an incomplete Netherworld Udumbara with only four remaining petals enough to create a new body for you?”

“...No! Of course not!” After a short pause, Jasmine vehemently denied him, “An incomplete Netherworld Udumbara Flower and a complete one are worlds apart! If I want my body and soul to be perfectly united when this new body of mine is created, I

definitely need a complete and perfect Netherworld Udumbara Flower! Even if it was missing just one flower petal, it would not be of any use, much less a Netherworld Udumbara Flower that is missing five! So even if you decide to gamble your life and you really succeed in obtaining it, it will all be for nothing!”

“Besides, you won’t even be able to live to tell the tale if you do try to attempt it!”

Jasmine’s words did not move

Yun Che in the slightest. On the contrary, they caused Yun Che to focus even more intensely on the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, “You’re lying to me!”

“...Lying to you!?” Jasmine’s voice became cold, “So now, you don’t believe even my words?”

“No.” Yun Che lightly shook his head, “Jasmine, you are the person that I trust the most in this world. As long as it is something that you’ve said, no matter how unreasonable or outrageous those words may be,

I will not doubt them in the least. Unless... it was the words that you just said.”

Jasmine, “You...”

“Jasmine...” Yun Che’s voice became exceptionally soft and gentle, “The year that we met, I was sixteen and you were thirteen. You helped me rebuild a set of profound veins, took me as your student and even used your foot to step on my head to force me to kowtow to you... After that, we have been together every day and night,



every hour and every moment. We can even clearly feel each other's existence with every breath that we take. And now, it has already been more than seven years since we met."

"You... what are you trying to say?" Yuni Che's words caused Jasmine's voice to turn funny.

"What I'm trying to say is that we have spent seven years completely tangled together. The time that I have spent with you is longer than the time that you have spent with your

parents, longer than the time that you have spent with your precious big brother, longer than the time you have spent with any person in this world. So, I know you better than anyone else does—just like how you know me better than anyone else as well.”

Jasmine, “...”

“So right now, I could tell instantly whether you were lying or not. What’s more, you don’t even like to lie in the first place, so you’re really not used

to it. Normally, if you want to hide something from me, you'll simply seal your lips and refuse to speak a word more and you will also deliberately make it known to me that you don't want to continue. Other than the time you 'sealed your own profound strength', you have never even tried to deceive or lie to me!"

"That is also why your claim that you had 'sealed your own profound strength' deceived me for such a long time. It was the only time that you had ever lied to me before this! Just now was the second time you tried to lie

to me! But I am no longer the person I was five years ago, so I won't fall for your trick this time. No matter what..."

"No matter what, you definitely want to forcefully obtain those four petals, right!?" Jasmine's voice had undergone a faint change, it was as if some complex emotion had been layered into it. "Fine... I was indeed lying to you just now! But it wasn't a complete lie! Even though a Netherworld Udumbara Flower with only four petals remaining would be able to merge my body and soul together, it would not be able to

perfectly merge the two! So in the end, it would only stay in effect for twenty to thirty years!”

“...What will happen after twenty to thirty years have passed?” Yun Che asked in a stunned voice.

“It is highly likely that my body and soul would reject each other and I would have no choice but to resume my current form! Hmph, I won’t be so stupid as to endure the same kind of pain as Fen Juechen.”

“So that’s how it is!” Yun Che said as he nodded heavily, “This also means that it will grant you at least twenty years of independence and absolute freedom. After that, the worst case scenario is that you would return to your current state.”

“Then we definitely need to obtain this four petal Netherworld Udumbara Flower!!”

“You!!” Jasmine snapped as her temper boiled over. She gritted

her teeth within the Sky Poison Pearl as she said angrily, “You’re really someone who won’t weep until you are one foot in the coffin! Since that is the case, then go ahead and try! Go harvest that four petal Netherworld Udumbara Flower! Let me see where you’re getting that confidence from!”

# Chapter 788 – My Jasmine (1)

---

Yun Che casually inspected his injuries before focusing his mind and striding towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

Those four petals released an extremely bizarre and fantastical purple light. Once Yun Che was within one hundred and fifty meters of it, he could clearly feel his soul being pulled in by formless hands. Yun Che ground to a stop, sucking in a deep breath of air before he spoke in a calm voice, “Jasmine, don’t you



worry. I'm not silly as to die because I overestimated my own strength. Besides, my life is still linked with yours. The reason my soul was nearly stolen by the Netherworld Udumbara Flower the first time around was because I had not experienced its true terror yet, so I didn't prepare myself well enough."

"However, right now, I roughly know the method it uses to steal one's soul. This coupled with the fact that it only has four petals left makes the prospect of facing it much less terrifying than before. If I pour all my effort and strength into this attempt, it

isn't guaranteed that I will fail. I also have the Sky Poison Pearl with me, so as long as I can get near it, harvesting it won't be a problem at all."

"If the final result ends in complete and utter failure and I see no hope of succeeding, then I will give up."

"Hmph!" Jasmine sniffed angrily as she replied, "Anyways, I can't stop you no matter what I say, so I can't be bothered with you anymore! When you are being tormented to the point

where you start begging for death later, don't blame me for not giving you ample warning!"

"I get it."

Both of Yun Che's hands slowly tightened into fists as his brows knit together tightly... In this lifetime, he was convinced that he would never be able to forget just how terrifying the soul stealing ability of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower was. Now that he thought about it again, his entire soul started to shudder uncontrollably as a

intense dread was birthed in his heart.

If the thing placed in front of him was something else, even if it was a legendary treasure, a peerless profound artifact or even a mountain of Divine Crystals, he would turn around without a hint of hesitation and leave without even taking another look... because he was definitely not willing to ever experience the pain of his soul being taken from him again.

But what was in front of him

was the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... The only Netherworld Udumbara Flower in this world.

“I will definitely succeed!”

“Hah!!”

Yun Che murmured before expelling an explosive shout. His entire body started burning with flames as he rose into the air, rushing with full force towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

The first time he had approached the Netherworld Udumbara Flower and was affected by its soul stealing ability, all of the power in his body instantly dissipated... So this time, he wanted to see if he could use extreme speed to reach the Netherworld Udumbara Flower in an instant.

Ding...

The hellish purple radiance before him expanded and the world suddenly fell completely

silent. After that, innumerable icy needles crazily pierced his soul while countless dark hands emerged from the depths of the abyss to tear apart every corner of his soul...

Bang!!

Yun Che was thrown to the ground as he fell from the sky in a heap. All the flames on his body had been completely extinguished. His soul was being twisted and rent and the enormous pain that accompanied it caused his

internal organs, limbs and the rest of his body to spasm uncontrollably. Every single hair and cell of his body was twisting and shivering in pain.

He gritted his teeth with all his might, forcefully keeping his cries of pain inside. Under that immense pain, his vision had become blurry but he could still see that bizarrely beautiful purple light clearly. It was roughly fifty meters distant from him.

It was also this purple light





Sovereign, leaving his body in tatters, he had not even given voice to a single whimper of pain. But right now, Yun Che was letting out a blood-curdling scream. Just drawing one step closer was like walking through hell and finding another hell inside hell itself. He could feel both his body and soul being rent into tiny bits and pieces. This pain far exceeded any pain that Yun Che had ever known before, it even exceeded Yun Che's very understanding of pain itself!

Furthermore, this intense pain also gave birth to a frantically

blooming terror!

Fear and dread instantly swallowed up all of Yun Che's remaining will and bravery. His contorted body reacted by itself as it tumbled backwards.

The sensation of his soul being sliced apart and the mind-warping pain dramatically lessened with every inch he retreated. Once his mind had cleared, he naturally regained control over his power and body. Yun Che continued to stagger backwards, stumbling on the

ground as he went. He finally stopped when he reached a distance where he could endure the pain. Both of his knees sank to the ground as he used his arms to prop himself up. He gasped heavily for breath and sweat poured down his forehead in torrents. In the blink of an eye, the ground beneath his head had become completely drenched.

“Haah... Haah... Haah...”

His body continued to spasm uncontrollably for more than

ten breaths as he took in great gulps of air. At this point, Yun Che felt as if he had endured the cruellest torture in the entire world... No! This pain was far more dreadful than any torture he could ever imagine.

He turned his head, raising his pasty-white face to look towards the position that he had reached previously. That spot was only about forty five meters away from the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. He could sense that that distance was the limit of what he could endure. If he tried to move forward, even if it was a single tiny step... he

would be unable to endure the pain from that point on.

He was also unable to imagine what kind of terrible hell awaited him if he continued to take yet another step forward. He could also scarcely imagine what kind of horrific world awaited him when he was within a single step of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

Forty five meters... To him, that normally would be a pitifully short distance.

But in this place, it seemed even farther and more despair-inducing than a gap that spanned millions of kilometers.

One step was a step into an abyss.... One step was clearing a natural chasm!

“Are you... alright?” Jasmine asked in a voice laced with worry. But the moment she noticed the worry in her voice, she immediately turned frosty, “Hmph! This is the result of you overestimating your own strength! I will say this once

more! The Netherworld  
Udumbara Flower isn't  
something a person from your  
plane can get close to! As for that  
soul-stealing pain, you have now  
experienced it a second time! To  
be honest, the fact that you  
haven't collapsed is  
commendable in and of itself!  
Because this kind of pain, even if  
it is I... even if it is a god from  
the legends, it would still be very  
hard to bear! Much less someone  
like you!"

By the time Jasmine had  
finished speaking, Yun Che had  
gotten to his feet once more.  
After that he turned around and



faced the Netherworld Udumbara Flower yet again. But this time, the unwavering determination in his eyes had long since disappeared and a thick fear had replaced it instead.

In the past few years, Yun Che had not feared anything—whether it was unbearable might, the approach of death, or a natural force that he could not resist...

This was the first time he had ever experienced fear due to

“pain.”

Crack!

He squeezed his left hand so hard that he had cracked the bones on two of his fingers... but his pale face did not even flinch. Because it was not even an ant bite when compared to the pain he had experienced when his soul was being stolen.

His feet started moving as he began to walk towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower

yet again.

“What are you doing?” His actions shocked Jasmine. She knew very clearly what kind of pain Yun Che had just endured and she had also felt the dread that it had brought to him. So she had thought that Yun Che would never even try to approach the Netherworld Udumbara Flower ever again... and perhaps, he might not even dare to glance at it anymore but he was actually... trying to approach it yet again!

“I still... haven’t... failed yet!!”  
Yun Che said huskily. But the words that he had spat still quivered due to his remaining fear.

“You... Have you really not given up!? Will you truly only weep once you’ve seen your own grave!?” Jasmine shouted angrily.

“This Netherworld Udumbara Flower... it’s right in front of me! It’s only a short sixty meters away right now! If I lost all heart to continue due to this small

obstacle, then where... will I find the face to see you next time!?”

“Me!?” Jasmine yelled in surprise, “...What small obstacle!? How in this world is that a small obstacle to you!? The pain your body is feeling will seep into your soul and the pain of the soul is not something that mere physical pain can compare to.” Jasmine had felt true soul searing pain once in her life before. It was when she inherited the profound strength legacy of the Heaven Slaughter Star God. So she had a very clear understanding about this kind of pain! Even someone as powerful

as her would tremble in fear every time she remembered that experience. And to this day, she still would not have the courage to go through that experience a second time!

But for the sake of an incomplete Netherworld Udumbara Flower, Yun Che was willing to face that pain for a third time!!

Yun Che did not wait for Jasmine's response. With a loud roar, he rushed towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower

again while Jasmine was still stunned.

Forty five meters...

This distance proved to be the bottleneck yet again. Once more, Yun Che felt all of the strength in his body dissipating as he fell to the ground in pain. He forcefully opened his eyes so wide that they seemed like they would explode and he bit down so hard that his teeth nearly broke as he bounded a huge step forward.

“UWAAAAAAHHHHHHH!!”

A soul-rending cry of pain resounded through every corner of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. It was so shrill and sharp that even the pebbles on the ground started to tremble. This instant of soul searing pain was something that Yun Che could not even describe with words and the terrifying notion of committing suicide to escape this pain surfaced in his head.

The only thing that filled his body and remaining will was the



instinct to “run away”... to flee at all costs! As his shrill cries continued to rend the air, Yun Che’s body was rolling and tumbling backwards... By the time he had recovered some semblance of clarity, he had already tumbled sixty meters away.

Yun Che’s face had gone even paler than before and his entire body was twitching and trembling like an insect that was going through its death spasms. Streams of cold sweat rolled down his body. He tightly gritted his teeth... This time, it took an entire thirty breaths before his

body finally stopped trembling.

“That’s enough, don’t try that again. How many time do I have to tell you, it’s impossible for you to succeed! You’re only suffering for nothing!” This time, Jasmine did not scold him and one could hear a faint trembling in her voice. At first, she was completely convinced that no matter how strong a person’s will was, the moment that person experienced the pain of one’s soul being stolen, it would leave an eternal dark memory and that person would not even have the courage to think about the experience. But

Yun Che... had thrown himself into the fray time and time again.

His desperate actions were so extreme that it was akin to forcefully jumping into a deep abyss, which even the gods would fear, repeatedly. It was not even to fulfill his own selfish desires... it was all for her!!

When Yun Che had endured those spatial storms within the Primordial Profound Ark, what he had experienced was the most extreme physical pain.

Jasmine admired his ability to endure all of it, but she was not too surprised by the end result. But comparing physical pain to pain of the soul... it was on an entirely different level!!

Forcefully flensing the soul from the body... it was a process that was millions of times more painful than removing every single bone and blood vessel from one's body!

# Chapter 789 – My Jasmine (2)

---

Yun Che's hands pushed himself off the ground as he began to slowly stand up. His pupils were contracted but when he stood up, he was still looking at the four petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that were pulsing with hellish purple light.

“I want to get closer to it...” He muttered under his breath, his voice hoarse from the screaming, “But why do I always involuntarily... use my

remaining strength to run away... Moreover, I'm actually afraid right now..."

"Could it be... that my so-called determination was this... weak!?"

Yun Che's voice sounded fuzzy and indistinct. It was as if the Netherworld Udumbara Flower's soul stealing ability was making him delirious. Jasmine immediately replied, "This has nothing to do with the strength of your will! In this world, there isn't anyone who can endure the

pain of their soul being rent from their bodies. There is also no one who isn't afraid of this pain either!"

"No, it has something to do with it!" Yun Che had finally managed to stand up completely. He looked at the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, his arms trembling. Not only did his eyes contain a fear that could not be dispelled, there was also a growing violence being kindled there. After that he started moving once more and strode towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, "For the sake of reconstituting your body..."

That was the request that you made of me the very first day we met. Up to now, it has also been the only request that you have ever made!”

“Jasmine, meeting you allowed a cripple like me to gain a new life and I was also able to regain my dignity as well... Because of you, I can protect my grandfather and my little aunt from all harm and mistreatment... Because of you, I found out about my past and I was able to find my real parents... All of the power, status, dignity and fame that I possess today is due to you. If



not for that chance meeting with you, I might have died a dog's death by now... Even if I was still alive, I would possibly only be a wandering ghost that hovered on the edge of despair...”

“But in the end, I could not even help you realize... this sole wish of yours.”

Jasmine, “You...”

“Now, in front of my very eyes, I see what might be your last sliver of hope. So, no matter

what... No matter what...!!”

“You... need to stop trying,  
even if it is you...”

“UWAAHHH!!”

Jasmine’s words had just left her mouth when they were completely engulfed by Yun Che’s roar. He rushed towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower for the fourth time as flames and killing intent covered his body... His strongest aura was his killing aura! So he was

using his most extreme killing aura to suppress the fear that he felt towards the pain caused by his soul being rent apart.

In the blink of an eye, Yun Che had once again entered that forty five meter radius. This spot seemed to be the border of a devil's forbidden zone—No one would be allowed to take even one step inside!

Yun Che was once again assaulted by the indescribable pain of his soul being rent apart. His entire body was contorting

and spasming but this time, he forced himself to stay upright. He gritted his teeth tightly as he took his first step into the devil's forbidden zone...

“AAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHH!!”

Yun Che's shout was laced with both pain and determination. He fiercely guarded his soul and his will as he continued forward... one step... two steps... three steps...

Thud!!

By some kind of miracle, he kept charging forward while roaring in rage and wailing in pain. By the end, he had covered a full three meters and now he was within forty two meters of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. He finally sank heavily to his knees and his face was twisted with such extreme pain that his features were all scrunched together. His ten fingers fiercely scrabbled against the ground as they curled and contorted into a shape that resembled withered animal claws...

Pain and terror filled his soul as he began to wish for death rather than survival. The all-consuming desire to run away, at all costs, engulfed his remaining will. His body began to jerk spasmodically as he desperately crawled and rolled away from the source of pain...

The pain started to lessen as his shredded soul finally became tranquil. Yun Che's mental clarity returned to him as he lay on the ground and looked in the direction of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... That purple light was once again more than sixty meters away.

“He... hehe... Hahaha...  
HAHAHAHAHA...” Yun Che’s  
fists fiercely smashed into the  
ground as he started laughing in  
a voice filled with pain and  
despondency, “To think that I  
actually ran away once again...  
To think that I am actually...  
this useless...”

“Yun Che!! How much longer  
do you want this foolishness to  
continue!?” Jasmine yelled at  
him in a furious voice, “If you’re  
thinking that the reason that  
you listed just now is a good  
reason for your desperate

actions, then you can jolly well stop! I don't need you to repay me for my actions! Everything that I have done is entirely for my own sake! I don't need you to gamble your life just to get a mere Netherworld Udumbara Flower! Let's not even talk about the fact that it's impossible for you to succeed... Even if you do manage to obtain it, I won't feel the least bit grateful. Rather, I'd only feel that your stupidity knows no bounds!!”

“Repay... your kindness?”



Yun Che used both arms to hoist himself off the ground. His body wobbled and his voice was weak and lacking energy, “How could it just be... to repay your kindness... Jasmine, to me... How could you simply... be a benefactor to me?”

Jasmine, “...”

He turned towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower and spoke in a low voice, “In my life, I, Yun Che, have braved many storms and seas. I have experienced countless life and

death struggles and innumerable calamities. Even an ancient devil that came from the Ancient Era one million years ago died under my blade!!”

“So how can I... be so miserably defeated by a mere Netherworld Udumbara Flower!!”

Jasmine shouted in shock, “Are you telling me that you’re about to try again!? Have you experienced so much pain that you’ve lost all of your grip on reality!?”

“No! On the contrary, I feel more clear-headed than ever right now!” Yun Che said with a low shout, “I am not even scared of a devil! I am not even scared of death! So how can a mere flower scare me so badly that I scamper off with my tail in between my legs time and time again!!”

ROOOOOAAAR!!!!

A majestic dragon roar shook the entire place as a pair of azure eyes suddenly blinked open in this pitch-black world. A

boundless power engulfed this tiny space as it weighed down on everything.

Dragon Soul Domain!!

Jasmine, “...!!”

The moment he unleashed the Dragon Soul Domain, all of the fear that remained in Yun Che’s heart and eyes completely vanished. He looked at the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, a calm and resolute smile playing across his face, “This

time, I will no longer allow myself to be afraid or run away... Because I no longer have a way out!!”

After he unleashed the Dragon Soul Domain, all of his soul energy would be exhausted in an extremely short period of time. So if he retreated again, it would take a very long time before he could recover all of his soul energy... By that time, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower would have already withered away.

So he really did not have a way out after this anymore!

“You can’t!” Jasmine shouted in her loudest voice, “Even if you use the Dragon Soul, you still won’t be able to get anywhere near the Netherworld Udumbara Flower! Moreover, the Dragon Soul Domain will quickly deplete your spirit energy. After that, your soul energy will be extremely weak and it will result in your soul being swiftly devoured by the Netherworld Udumbara Flower! You won’t even have a chance to resist or retreat!!”

“I can do it...” Yun Che gasped through gritted teeth, “Because this is for you... that is why I will definitely succeed!”

“...” Jasmine’s heart was heavily smashed by some unfamiliar object.

ROOOOOAAAR!!!!

As the dragon cry resounded in the air, Yun Che gathered all the profound energy in his body as

he rushed towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower yet again... But this would be his final attempt!

Because he would no longer have a chance to try again!!

Yun Che's soul power grew explosively under the influence of the Dragon Soul Domain. As he drew nearer, the Netherworld Udumbara Flower began to sway quicker and the ghastly wail it released started to sound rather abnormal.



Yun Che gobbled up the distance as he fiercely pressed towards the forty five meter mark. His entire body tensed up but the soul-rending power that assaulted him was casually batted aside by the Dragon God's soul power. The pain and his loss of willpower was not even half as much as it was before.

His power and his will were still being swiftly worn away by the Netherworld Udumbara Flower's soul-stealing power. Yun Che began to slow down as his steps became wobbly but he gritted his teeth fiercely as he desperately surged forward...

While the Dragon Soul Domain was suppressing that dark and hellish power, he managed to bull his way to within thirty meters of the flower!!

Yun Che was suddenly assaulted by pain which far surpassed the threshold of what he could endure. It was so intense that every hair on his body was shaking and his knees hit the ground violently with a thud. However, his eyes still retained a startling and dreadful clarity...

To be able to retain some semblance of clarity in this sort of situation could only be described as “dreadful”.

“Even if... my soul... is completely ripped apart... I will no longer retreat, not even half a step!”

“UWAHHH!!”

His trembling, powerless arms swayed as he began to crawl towards that hellish purple light. The pain of his soul being

torn apart caused him to begin to feel as if his arms and even his entire body did not exist. It was only by squeezing out the last bits of his willpower and determination that he was able to push his body forward... As he advanced, the terrifying feeling of his soul being torn apart and flayed from his body continuously increased.

But he... definitely could not retreat!

Within the Sky Poison Pearl, Hong'er was in deep slumber.

The vicious battle with Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign seemed to have left her exhausted. So during the past two days when Yun Che had been recovering from his injuries, she had been sound asleep. Jasmine stood by Hong'er's bedside, a stupefied look spreading across her face as she witnessed Yun Che's desperate struggle in stunned amazement. He was slowly crawling within that hellish purple light and he had inched from the thirty meter mark to the twenty seven meter mark. Enormous pain caused his face to twist and warp in such a sinister way that it resembled an evil spirit.

Furthermore, the Dragon God image behind his back was slowly but surely fading away as well...

Suddenly, the Dragon God image flashed and then started fading away at a startlingly fast pace. It seemed like it was about to collapse at any time.

Jasmine's delicate brows jumped as she cried out involuntarily, "Yun Che, don't carry on any longer, hurry up and get back! Your Dragon Soul

Domain has almost reached its limit... You can still escape before it completely dissipates! If not, this is where you will meet your end!!”

“...” Yun Che did not reply and he did not retreat. His arms trembled as he clawed forward, leaving behind bloody fingerprints in his wake. He had gritted his teeth so hard that blood was flowing from his gums and streamed from the corners of his mouth. But he barely noticed all of this as he slowly crawled through this purgatory that a normal person would never be able to imagine.

He inched forward bit by bit, crawling even deeper into hell.

“...Yun Che! Listen up!” Jasmine’s spirit body was also shaking, and she was shaking nearly as fiercely as Yun Che was, “If I am unable to gain a new body, then I can only exist by continuing to stay attached to your lifeline! If you live, I live! If you die, I die! Now I have already escaped the clutches of that devilish poison, so I can use my powers with no hesitation! As long as I don’t die, I will have to ensure that you continue to live as well! Given my power, even if all the people on the



Profound Sky Continent ganged up together, they still wouldn't be able to kill you! You can also rely on my power to do anything that you are unable to do!!”

“If I can never reconstitute my body, then I will have no choice but to rely on you to continue existing! No choice but to continue protecting you forever!”

“But if I do get a new body, then you will be throwing away an extremely strong protective charm! Right... once I get a new

body, I will definitely kill you right away! Because you not only know too much of my secrets and you are also the type of person that I detest the most!”

“You are literally paying an enormous price to do the most stupid thing conceivable in this world! There is still time for you to stop and change your mind... Get away from here immediately!!”

Jasmine yelled in her loudest voice, clenching her tiny hands so hard that the joints of her

fingers had long since turned white.

Clap!

Yun Che's hand grabbed onto a black rock that protruded slightly from the ground as he pulled himself forward an inch. His mouth was trembling as he spoke in a hoarse and weak voice, "You... will... not..."

## Chapter 790 – My Jasmine (3)

---

The Dragon God image had grown incredibly faint and it looked like it would disappear at any moment. At this instant, Yun Che's pupils flashed with firelight as a phoenix cry rang out in the room and the image of a Phoenix coalesced behind his back...

After releasing the Dragon Soul, he released the Phoenix Soul without holding anything back. The weak Dragon Soul and the recently ignited Phoenix

Soul combined forces to slightly weaken the soul stealing power of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. Yun Che gave a low roar as he rushed forward. During that burst of speed, he covered another three meters.

Now he was only twenty one meters away from the Netherworld Udumbara Flower!

“Wha... what proof do you have that I won’t!” Jasmine’s strained voice showed that she was losing control over her emotions. She deeply inhaled as she forced

herself to remain calm and composed, “Okay... fine... Could it be that you will only be content after you have dragged me down to the grave with you once you have been tortured to death by the pain of having your soul stolen!? If you don’t hurry up and get back to a safe spot, you will be dooming me as well! I endured so many years of that devilish poison and it wasn’t easy for me to get to this point! So if your stupidity today ends up causing my death... I will never ever forgive you, not even in our next lives!!”

While the flames burned, the

cry of the Phoenix Soul began to grow weaker and weaker. Yun Che was now only eighteen meters away from the Netherworld Udumbara Flower... Even Jasmine was unable to believe that Yun Che could withstand this horrifying soul stealing ability and the pain of having his soul rent apart and come this close to the Netherworld Udumbara Flower. His miserable cries of pain had grown so hoarse that they barely even sounded human anymore. His actions were so weak that he resembled an old man who was at death's door. But his arms and his body continued to slowly crawl forward inch by inch...

If the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign still lived, perhaps even he would not be able to believe the scene he was witnessing.

“Jasmine...” Yun Che murmured in a voice so low that even he could not hear himself clearly, “Believe me... I can definitely... make it...”

“You are even... younger than me... Yet from such a young age... you could only... rely on one person... to live... I know



just how... painful... and sad...  
that kind of life is...”

“Even though you are...  
haughty... stubborn... foul-  
tempered... and you love to scold  
me... you have never allowed...  
me to pity you... but... I know  
that... you desire freedom...  
more than anything else...”

“If... we miss this chance... I  
don’t know... how many more  
years we will have to... I... will...  
definitely... not...”

“AAHHHH!!!”

Yet another resonant cry pierced the air, the image of the third Divine Spirit appeared behind Yun Che. The Golden Crow Soul was also ignited by Yun Che, he was releasing all of his soul energy without any reservation.

This explosion of soul energy allowed the now clear-headed Yun Che to stride forward yet again.

By the time he fell to the ground again, he was only fifteen meters away from the Netherworld Udumbara Flower.

But these short fifteen meters were the widest and most terrifying divide in the entire Profound Sky Continent.

At this point, anyone who had not personally experienced the same thing would never be able to imagine what Yun Che was currently enduring.

Dragon God Soul, Phoenix Soul, Golden Crow Soul... All three Divine Spirit images were radiating light. It was just that the images of the Phoenix and the Dragon God had already grown extremely thin and faint but Yun Che was still desperately holding on to the last threads of soul energy. If he did not have the protection of these three Great Divine Spirit Souls, his soul would have long ago been shattered into countless fragments.

Fifteen meters away. This was a distance that Jasmine could scarcely believe. But she knew

how hopeless an affair it would be to try to cross these last fifteen meters. Even if Yun Che was at his peak, he would not be able to cross this last stretch... Besides, the Divine Spirit soul power he was relying on had grown extremely weak.

But Yun Che was still using his arms to pull his entire body along as he crawled towards the Netherworld Udumbara Flower at a snail's pace... Jasmine was closely observing Yun Che but she was unable to find out what kind of power the current Yun Che was using to continue dragging himself forward.

“Just what... will make you give up!?” Jasmine’s voice was shaking so hard that it was scarcely recognizable. She turned her head away and closed her eyes... Given her nature, she no longer dared to look at Yun Che’s current appearance, “For the last... I’ll say this for the last time! Immediately... get away from here!! This is an order! I am your master... and you well know that one must always obey their master. Are you telling me that you’re even going to rebel against your master’s orders!?”

Yun Che's arm was spasming but his body moved forward yet again. His entire body was wriggling and jerking spasmodically, as if he was a dying bug wriggling the last of its life away... Behind him, the images of the Dragon God and the Phoenix had completely disappeared and only the weak light of the Golden Crow image was still flashing.

“A master's order cannot be disobeyed...” Yun Che's eyes still remained open as his blood-stained mouth whispered those word, “But in my heart... you are not merely... my master...”

“You are also... my...  
Jasmine!!!!”

“...” Jasmine’s body trembled. Her heart had grown completely muddled, as if something had exploded in the very depths of her soul.

“UUWAAAAAAH!”

The Golden Crow image had also completely disappeared. The moment all three Divine



Spirit images completely disappeared, Yun Che's body was suddenly lit up by flames and under the firelight, one could also see a scarlet profound light...

The three drops of Phoenix origin blood and the nine drops of Golden Crow origin blood were ignited by him in that one instant.

This was the second time he had ignited his Divine origin blood ever since the duel that he had with Xia Qingyue all those

years ago! The difference was that he had drawn the origin blood out of his body to ignite it the first time around, but this time, he had ignited it while the origin blood was still in his body.

At the same time, he also resolutely opened the fourth gate of the Evil God that caused him to lose half his life in those short two breaths of time.

“Rumbling... Heaven!!”

Like an insect on the brink of

death, Yun Che fiercely rushed forward as cauterizing flames burned all around him. In an instant, he covered nearly fifteen meters of ground. With his remaining will, he hazily ascertained the direction in which the purple light lay. He desperately thrust out his left hand, which flashed with a green light as he came into contact with the purple light, which resembled devil eyes...

Bang!

Yun Che heavily fell to the

ground and stopped moving completely. All of the wounds that his body had just recovered from had all ruptured open, whether it was his internal or external wounds. Furthermore, those injuries were even worse than they had been; they were so serious that Yun Che had instantly lost consciousness as he lay there unmoving.

The world within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had finally descended into its dark quiet solitude once more... Furthermore, it was an absolute darkness, not a single thread of light continued to glow in this

place.

Jasmine dumbly stood in place. She neither moved nor spoke for a very long time... The only things one could see were two streams of wetness trailing down her snow white face. They did not stop, the tears only streaming down faster and faster in the silence.

---

“Uuu... This isn’t real... Big Brother... I don’t want you to die... Uuuuu... I don’t want

this... don't want this!!”

“Jasmine... don't cry... Even if Big Brother isn't around, you must still... continue to be strong... You still need... to protect Caizhi... After all, she... Cough, cough cough.”

“I... I understand. I will protect Caizhi, I will protect her the same way Big Brother protected me. I must be strong... I must also... must also kill that person... kill all of the people of that astral plane to take revenge for my brother...”

“No... please don’t... don’t visit your vengeance on her...”

“Why... It’s obvious that she was the one who harmed Big Brother... Why is Big Brother still trying to protect her!?”

“Jasmine... you’re still young. Once you’ve grown up, you will learn to truly love someone. It is then that you will understand... Big Brother may have died because of her... but I have no regrets... I just have too many worries that I am leaving

behind...”

“Jasmine... promise Big Brother this one last thing... In the future... once you’ve grown up... if there comes a day where you meet a man who is strong, treats you as good as Big Brother has and is willing to give up anything for you... even his life. Then get him to... bring you... far away from this place... forever... The further the better... so no one will be able to find you...”

“No... I don’t want... In this



world, there will never be  
someone who will treat me as  
well as Big Brother... I only want  
Big Brother... Uu...  
uwaaaaaaaaaah...”

“Jasmine... you will definitely  
be able to meet that person...  
Because my sister... is the  
kindest... and most beautiful  
girl... in the world...”

---

“...” Jasmine stretched out her  
small hand and touched the two  
warm streams of tears that ran

down her snowy face. Perhaps it was because she had not cried since the death of her brother and it had been far too long since then. As a result, too many tears had accumulated, and no matter how she tried to control them, those flowing tears simply refused to stop.

Big Brother, do you know? I've really met someone who fits that description.

But, how can I...

“Eh? Big Sis Jasmine, you’re crying!”

While Jasmine was in a daze, she had not realized that Hong’er had woken up. She stood by Jasmine’s side, looking curiously at Jasmine’s tear-stained face while racking her brains. After she had confirmed what she was thinking several times over, she suddenly started jumping in excitement as she shouted, “Whoaa! I had always thought that only I knew how to cry, but it looks like Big Sis Jasmine also knows how to cry as well... This is great!!”

Hong'er always got excited over the weirdest things. This time, Jasmine didn't encourage her like she normally did to make her happy. Instead, she stretched out a hand and lightly grasped Hong'er's white and delicate hand.

“Hong'er, if there comes a day where I won't be here anymore and I won't return for a very long time... you need to obediently listen to your master's words, okay?”

“Of course that’s okay!” Hong’er said as she nodded her head with no hesitation. She smiled merrily as she replied, “I have always been very obedient to Master... Ah?” Hong’er had finally noticed the main point and she asked Jasmine curiously, “Big Sis Jasmine, you won’t be here? Are you going somewhere else to play?”

“I don’t know, perhaps I have been thinking too much all of the sudden.” Jasmine said as she gave a faint smile, “Anyways, you need to obediently obey your master at all times, okay. Because besides me, young

master is the person who treats Hong'er the best in this world, right?"

"Mn!" Hong'er obediently nodded her head. But after that, she slanted her head and whispered to herself, "It's so strange. Big Sis Jasmine seems really weird today... Aiyah, I don't care anymore! Big Sis Jasmine, now that I've finished sleeping, my tummy is rumbling again! I want to eat lots and lots of delicious stuff!"

“ ..... ”

There was no sound and no light. Within the boundless darkness, Yun Che lay unmoving, whether he still lived or if he had died was a complete mystery.

# Chapter 791 – Hazy Dreamscape

---

Where is... this place?

Yun Che could only see a completely white world in front of him.

“Husband...” Cang Yue’s voice drifted into his ear. She appeared before him dressed in her phoenix robe, that soft and gentle expression that she would only show in front of him displayed on her beautiful and



delicate face, “You need to take care of yourself, I will always be waiting for you in the Imperial City... I’ll wait till the day you’ve fulfilled all of your wishes, then I’ll accompany you wherever you wish to go. I don’t need anything else but you.”

“Senior Sister Xuerou... Yue’er...” Yun Che did his best to stretch out his hand and grasp her soft shoulder, “Don’t worry, I won’t let you wait for too long. In this life, I’ve done too much wrong to you already. But I will definitely... never forsake you.”

But his hand only passed through an illusion.

“Little Che, you’re hurt again?”

This time, it was Xiao Lingxi’s sweet and gentle voice that rang in his ears, “It wasn’t easy for us to reunite, so nothing must ever happen to you. If not, I really won’t know how I’m supposed to continue living anymore. Little Che... uuu...”

“Little Aunt, don’t worry, I’ll be fine... After I leave this place, I’ll

immediately head back to Floating Cloud City.”

“What about me then? When will you come back and see me again?”

An anger-filled voice rang out behind him. He turned around and saw the Little Demon Empress. She may be small and delicate but the frightening power that she released from her body was right next to him, “You said you’d return shortly, but now you’ve been gone half a year, and you haven’t even sent

me a single message! Are you tired of living!? Does your heart even remember me anymore!?”

Yun Che replied in an anxious and panicked voice, “Caiyi, how would it be possible for me to forget you. Since I left the Illusory Demon Realm, I have thought of you every single day. It is just that too many unexpected things happened while I was over here. Once I have settled everything on this side, I will return as fast as I can and I will bring many people with me as well.”

The figures of Yun Qinghong and Mu Yurou appeared behind the Little Demon Empress. A faint smile played across Yun Qinghong's calm face, it was as if he was always so relaxed and composed, "Che'er, you are a true man, the one thing that your father is most proud of in his life. You are also the pride of the Yun Family. Go forth my child. Don't be too weighed down by worries and restrictions, go do whatever you deem is right. Go do whatever you have to do!"

"No, don't listen to your father's words!" Mu Yurou said

as tears danced in her eyes, “Che’er, hurry up and come home. Mother has been yearning for your presence day and night... Mother isn’t asking you to accomplish great things. I don’t care if you’re ordinary your entire life. I only want you to always be safe and sound, never having to suffer or worry...”

“Father, Mother...” Yun Che softly called out to them as he stretched out his height. But he could not reach them in time as their figures had already vanished into thin air.

“Yun Che, I left for somewhere far far away, and perhaps, we will never meet again in this life. You need to take care of yourself.”

That voice was soft and gentle, but it sounded nearly emotionless. Yun Che's head jerked up as he saw a blue-clothed Xia Qingyue standing high in the clouds. Her figure was misty and enchanting as if she was a fairy that had descended from heaven. Her beautiful eyes glanced at Yun Che, before she turned around

to leave, floating away with the clouds.

“Qingyue! Where are you... Don’t go! Tell me where you are right now!”

But no matter how hard he called, Xia Qingyue still slowly disappeared into the distance before completely vanishing from his world.

“Heh, Brother-in-law, even though we don’t know where Sis went, I have become extremely



powerful now! I am even stronger than her now!”

Xia Yuanba appeared in front of him as he slammed both of his iron fists together, “Before, it was Brother-in-law who kept protecting me. But from now on, it will be I who protects Brother-in-law! If anyone dares to bully Brother-in-law, even if I’m not able to beat that fellow, I’ll still put my life on the line and fight!”

“So Brother-in-law, you must definitely not get into any

trouble before we find Big Sis... Pah! What I mean is that I hope Brother-in-law and Sister will always be well and that the both of you will never run into any more danger!”

“Yuanba...”

“Big Brother Yun, I’m begging you... Please come back safe and sound. Xue’er will be waiting here for you. If you don’t come back for ten years, Xue’er will be waiting here for ten years... If you never come back, then Xue’er will stay here to keep you

company for all eternity...”

Feng Xue’er kneeled in her spot, her hands clasped together, her eyes shining with tears. Her cherry lips were uttering a soft prayer, as a heart-wrenching aura radiated from her.

Yun Che anxiously rushed over to where she was, “Xue’er, nothing happened to me. I’m fine now, and I’ll be coming out soon, so you’ll be able to see me again. Xue’er... Xue’er!”

But Feng Xue'er could not hear his voice. No matter how loud he yelled, she still kneeled in tearful prayer, her melancholy and grief were boundless.

“Yun Che, before I even realized it, we've already been separated for so many years... I am waiting for you in a safe haven and I've even borne you an adorable daughter. So why haven't you found us yet...”

At the very edges of his vision, he seemed to catch sight of a snowy figure. Even though it

was only her back, it still remained as dreamily beautiful as ever. Yun Che's heart was so agitated that he lost all control as he desperately tried to draw closer. He yelled at the top of his lungs, "Little Fairy! Is that you... Where are you right now!? Quickly tell me where you are! Answer me please!!"

Before he could even wait for a reply, his vision slightly blurred, after which, that figure had completely vanished as well.

But right in front of him

appeared two figures at the same time. When Yun Che saw them, he simply stood in place, as he stuttered out a response, “Ling... er...”

On the left stood Su Ling’er. She was slender and elegant, all dressed in white silk. Her expression was one of melancholy and there was an eternal sadness written between her brows. On the right stood Su Ling’er once again but this was the young Ling’er. She was ten years of age, her delicate features slowly budding into wonderful maturity.

She softly spoke, “Yun Che, even though you owe me an entire lifetime, I have no regrets. Do you know that the moment that I died was the happiest moment in my entire life? Because I could sense those tears that you shed were for me.”

“If there is such a thing as reincarnation, even if we will meet the same end, I will still be like a moth drawn to your flame...”

“Ling’er...” Yun Che sank to his

knees, his chest filled with boundless guilt, pain, loathing and regret...

“Big Brother Yun Che.” The young Ling’er had the purest and most innocent hope in her eyes, “You promised me that you would definitely be back to take me as your bride. Ling’er has been waiting... waiting every single day. So many years have gone by and Ling’er has already grown up. So why hasn’t Big Brother Yun Che come to fetch me...”



“Ling’er... I’ve done you wrong! But I will immediately find a way to get to the Azure Cloud Continent. Just wait for me a while longer... just a short while longer! In this life, I will definitely never hurt you nor forsake you, I definitely won’t...”

Ping!!

At this moment, that pure white world shattered into fragments and a boundless darkness replaced it instead.

“Urgh...”

A dry croak came from Yun Che’s lips. He opened his eyes with much difficulty and all he could see was boundless darkness.

“Jasmine... I think that... I shouldn’t be dead.” Yun Che said with a small grin on his face.

“Hmph! Hurry up and start healing your wounds!” Jasmine said in a huffy and angry voice, “To think that you’d actually

dare to open ‘Rumbling Heaven’ again before your wounds were fully healed! If you didn’t stake it all on the ignition of your Phoenix and Golden Crow blood, you would have long ago become a shattered corpse!”

“Heh...” Yun Che gave a self-satisfied chuckle instead, “I said it before, didn’t I!? I can definitely... do it!”

Jasmine, “...”

“But this time around, my

injuries were really... quite serious.” Yun Che muttered to himself. After that he used all of his might to take in a long breath of air, focusing his mind, calming down his blood and energy and slowly entering a state where he could begin his recovery.

His extremely abnormal recovery ability had always been the main reason he dared to keep risking his own neck.

When Yun Che opened his eyes once more, several hours had

already passed.

However, not only had he not fully recovered from his old wounds, he had suffered even more injuries since then. Even if Yun Che possessed the power of the Rage God and the body of the Dragon God, it was definitely impossible for him to completely recover in such a short period of time. But these few hours of rest had stabilized his injuries. Furthermore, he had lost so much blood that he felt extremely anemic at the moment.

He had also encountered a very large obstacle when he tried to recover his strength.

“I have only recovered about forty percent of my strength and if I want to fully recover, it will need a decidedly long period of time.” Yun Che muttered to himself. But at the very least, his power was recovering faster than his wounds.

“You opened the ‘Rumbling Heaven’ gate twice in one day and this severely exhausted your profound veins! The fact that

you can somehow recover forty percent of your strength is remarkable in and of itself! Even if you have the Evil God Profound Veins, you will need at least half a month to make a full recovery!” Jasmine said in a huffy and irritated tone, “Furthermore, you also ignited your Phoenix origin blood and Golden Crow origin blood... Even though it has been several years since you last ignited them forcibly like this, the damage inflicted was still very serious! So within this half a month, the power of your Phoenix flames will be cut in half, and the power of your Golden Crow flames will drop by roughly thirty percent!

“The price that you have paid this time is simply...” Jasmine’s voice stopped as the complex feelings in her heart made it hard for her to speak.

Yun Che sat up straight before he stood up once more. The movement caused wounds that covered his entire body to tear. It was so painful that Yun Che could not help but grimace. He stretched out a hand and a flame ignited on top of it... Even though it was still a Golden Crow flame, its aura of destruction was indeed much



weaker.

“It doesn’t matter, it’s not like it won’t recover forever. It will only take half a month.” The flames went out but Yun Che still had a relaxed smile on his face, “Compared to the result we obtained, the price I had to pay was simply insignificant.”

Before he had fainted, he had felt the four petals of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower being harvested by the power of the Sky Poison Pearl... Or else how would he be able to faint in

peace.

“An insignificant price? That is considered an insignificant price to you!?” Jasmine grew furious once more, “Could it be that you do not know what you just endured!? You were one inch away from your body and soul being annihilated! But right now, you actually... you actually still don’t feel like it’s anything much?”

“Even though we didn’t get the best result, we still managed to get four flower petals in the end.

As for the process, why the hell do we need to care about it anymore!” Yun Che was still smiling merrily, as if the Netherworld Udumbara Flower had not left the shadow of terror in his heart, “Jasmine, don’t you suddenly feel that I am way more awesome than you ever imagined! I have just accomplished a feat that you felt was absolutely impossible to do!”

“You... are really stupid! You’re the biggest idiot... IDIOT!!” Jasmine yelled in frenetic fury, she sounded as if she hated that she could not come out of the

Sky Poison Pearl and give him a good wallop.

Yun Che closed his eyes as he prepared for his consciousness to enter the Sky Poison Pearl... But all of sudden, he opened his eyes again as he suspiciously surveyed his surroundings.

In order to counteract the terrifying soul stealing ability of the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, he had used the Dragon God Soul, the Phoenix Soul and the Golden Crow Soul, so in the end, he had used up so much

energy that he had run empty. So the moment he woke up, it should not only be his power and his body that became frail, his mind should also be exceptionally frail and weak at this point of time.

But at this moment, his mind was not only not muddled, it was actually exceptionally clear! What was even stranger... was that his spiritual perception had originally been suppressed to an extremely small radius within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. But right now, he could clearly feel the flow of energy within a radius of more than thirty

meters!

What was going on? Why did my mental power instead...

However, he chose to focus all his attention on the Netherworld Udumbara Flower first. He did not give it much more thought as he focused his consciousness and entered the Sky Poison Pearl.

# Chapter 792 – Mysterious Black Jade

---

In the world of the Sky Poison Pearl, Jasmine stood with her back facing him, a cold look on her face. On the small bed beside her, Hong'er was snoring lightly after having eaten her fill.

That gloomy purple light was especially eye-catching in this jade-green world.

The four petals of the  
Netherworld Udumbara Flower

were perfectly unharmed, and they were currently being surrounded by a thin layer of green light as they floated quietly in place. Even then, that purple light still shone clearly through it, but it did not affect Yun Che's soul in any way.

“It looks like its soul stealing ability has been sealed by the Sky Poison Pearl.” Yun Che said in relief as he drew closer.

“Hmph! What does that have to do with the Sky Poison Pearl!? The moment the Netherworld



Udumbara Flower was harvested, I was the one who sealed its hellish power so that it would not leak out any more.” Jasmine turned around, her face tilted to the side as she refused to look at him.

“Hm?” Yun Che stared at Jasmine’s tiny face and asked her with a shocked and doubtful look on his face, “Jasmine, your eyes seem a bit weird. Why do I get the feeling that... you were crying before this?”

“What... nonsense!” Jasmine’s

reaction was akin to cat whose tail had been stepped on, “Crying? Me? What a ridiculous thing to say!”

“...” Jasmine’s weird reaction caused Yun Che’s eyes to be filled with suspicion. He redirected his gaze to the Netherworld Udumbara Flower once more and said in a sincere voice, “Two profound cores from a Sovereign Profound Beast, more than thirty five kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystal and now we finally have the Netherworld Udumbara Flower as well... Jasmine, all the things that you needed have been gathered. So

now you can begin to reform your body, correct? Or do you still need to fulfill any other conditions? Such as a certain environment, or some kind of external energy...”

“There is no need for anything else! Now that all of these items have been gathered, I can start right away!” Jasmine said as she shook her head. After that, she gave Yun Che a very deep look as she said in irate tone, “The fact that you were able to obtain this four petal Netherworld Udumbara Flower far exceeded my expectations but you must never ever do such a thing...”

Forget it! In any case, you never listen to anything that I say!”

“I can begin reconstituting my body right away!” Jasmine repeated as her eyes grew focused, “Right now, I am unable to go outside and while the Sky Poison Pearl is able to house spirit bodies, it is unable to harbor any living creatures. If I try it here, it will come with the risk that something strange occurs during the process. So, the best possible choice and the only choice left to me right now would be to use the Primordial Profound Ark.”

“I was also thinking of that.” Yun Che said as he nodded his head.

“Once I have regained my physical form, the devil energy within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest will not harm me in the slightest. As for that sealing barrier...” Contempt appeared on Jasmine’s face as she spoke, “I can tear it apart with a twist of my fingers.”

She glanced over as she continued, “The reason why you

were not bothered by the barrier being resealed and you being left behind is because you assumed that once I regained my physical form, I would be able to easily tear open this barrier, correct?”

“You’re absolutely right.” Yun Che said as he looked intently at the Netherworld Udumbara Flower, his hand on his jaw. He looked like he was pondering something deeply before he continued to speak, “However, before that... Oh right, Jasmine! Roughly how much time will it take for your body to be reconstituted?”

Jasmine fell silent as she furrowed her brows in thought. After that she replied, "Even though I know the method, I have never tried it before. According to the records and given my degree of strength, it shouldn't take too long. It will roughly take around twenty odd hours, give or take. Perhaps it will be longer, perhaps it will be shorter. But there shouldn't be too much of a discrepancy from the estimate that I've made."

"I see." This amount of time was far shorter than Yun Che

had imagined it to be. Things on the same level as Jasmine were indeed things that he were basically unable to understand or measure given his knowledge.

After silently calculating how long he had been trapped in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, he suddenly spoke up, “Jasmine, your soul body is unable to leave me for too long a period of time, correct? But what if you were in the Primordial Profound Ark? After all, it has already been absorbed into my body.”



Jasmine immediately understood what Yun Che was trying to get at. She shook her head sharply and with no hesitation, “Of course not! The Primordial Profound Ark forms its own world. If I am within the Primordial Profound Ark and you are not, even if it is absorbed into your body, we will still be separated by two worlds! If that situation continues for even a moderate period of time, my soul will be scattered to the four winds before I’d be able to finish reconstituting my body.”

“Could it be that you can’t wait for me to finish reconstituting

my body and you want to leave the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest earlier?”

“Sort of.” Yun Che said as he nodded his head, “I’ve already been here for three days. If my calculations aren’t too far off, the Devil Sword Conference will start in around twelve to fourteen hours. If I can get out now, I can make it just in time.”

“Before I reconstitute my body, I won’t be able to materialize in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! So how are you going to get

out?” Just as she finished speaking, a thought flashed through Jasmine’s mind, “Could it be that you want to try...”

“Well, I should give it a try at the very least!” Yun Che rubbed both his hands together, an eager expression on his face,” If I can succeed, then that would naturally be great. If I fail, then it won’t really matter much either way. The main objective I came to Supreme Ocean Palace for has already been achieved. The Devil Sword Conference isn’t something that I feel like I definitely need to participate in.”

Yun Che's consciousness left the Sky Poison Pearl and he opened his eyes once more. He ignited his Golden Crow Flames and borrowed the firelight to guide his steps forward.

Bang.

A sound suddenly rang out from behind him, it sounded as if some sort of stone had fallen to the ground. The sound was very faint, but in this silent world, it could be heard clear as day. It caused Yun Che to

instantly halt in his tracks as his completely relaxed nerves tensed up, like he had come into contact with electricity.

Bang... bang... bang, bang, bang...

Something hard continued to fall against the ground, and it was getting faster and faster. The moment Yun Che decided to turn around, he heard a huge explosion suddenly shake the place.

Bang!!

“Don’t worry.” Jasmine said in a tepid tone, “It is just the stone wall at very end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest finally collapsing. When you destroyed the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, most of the energy from your attack had exploded against that wall. Even though it did not collapse then and there many cracks had been formed in it. But I didn’t think that it would actually collapse now.”

“Ah, so that’s what it was.” Yun

Che said as he gave a soft sigh of relief.

“Go take a look!” Jasmine abruptly said, “That is the stone wall at the very end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. Now that it has caved in... it is very possible that there is another world behind it!”

Yun Che moved forward as instructed, his footsteps were exceptionally cautious. At the same time, he caused the Golden Crow flames to burn even more intensely as they expanded the

radius of his vision slightly.

Crunch!

A small sound rang out as he stepped on something that was scattered on the ground. Yun Che swiftly focused on what was below his feet and he was astonished to find that he had stepped on a pile of black ash.

This was what remained after the Golden Crow flames had burned up the body of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign!



But only part of it had become ash, there was also something that the Golden Crow flames could not incinerate, it was as hard and solid as a boulder.

Yun Che did not pay any attention to it as he continued moving forward. He very quickly reached the point where the light of his flames shone on a pile of pitch-black rubble.

Yun Che flung out his arm, pushing the Golden Crow flames in his hand forward. The

moment the flames touched the ground, they shone even brighter, fully illuminating the path ahead... Half of the pitch-black stone wall that was at the end of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had crumbled, shattered stones littering the ground.

Beyond that wall lay a black hole that gave off the feeling of a deep abyss.

The Golden Crow flames that he tossed near the wall clearly illuminated the entire outline of that “black hole”. But he could

only see a dreadful inky darkness that lay beyond. He was not able to see what was inside at all. The Golden Crow flames were right next to the black hole, but their light could not penetrate into its interior.

It seemed to Yun Che that even if the strongest light one could imagine came into contact with the world behind that stone wall, it would be swallowed up in an instant.

“That is... Behind that wall, there seems to be another

dimension!” Yun Che said in a low voice and he found that he was unconsciously holding his breath. He suddenly thought of something. He was able to blast this stone wall open when he had pushed himself to his limits, but given the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign’s strength... Perhaps he would have needed a longer time but he definitely had the ability to blast it open as well.

But before it had been struck by his sword blast, this stone wall had clearly been completely untouched.

Could it be that for an entire ten thousand years, the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had failed to discover the world that lay on the other side of the wall?

Or... was it that he was aware of it but for some reason, he chose not to blast that wall open?

Or perhaps... that stone wall was constructed by the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign in the first place!?

Yun Che's heart burned with a huge suspicion and an intense curiosity. He once again ignited a cluster of Golden Crow flames in his hand. After that, he began to stride forward, intending to approach that "black hole" and investigate just what kind of world lay behind that stone wall.

But before his foot had even touched the ground, Jasmine suddenly shouted in alarm, "Don't approach that black hole! Immediately get back!!"

Yun Che's body froze before he

immediately turned around and retreated by a good distance.

“Jasmine, what’s wrong? Is there something dangerous in that place?” Yun Che asked cautiously.

“It is far more than merely being dangerous!” Jasmine said in an extremely serious voice, “I finally know where the dark devil energy in this place is coming from!”

“...So it’s coming from inside

that black hole?” Yun Che asked with sunken brows.

“That’s right! It lies behind that stone wall! To be able to release darkness energy of such a high level, whatever is hidden behind that wall is definitely extremely terrifying!” Jasmine’s voice grew more and more serious. He did not know if he was mishearing it but Yun Che could sense fear and alarm shooting through Jasmine’s voice right now, “Moreover, when I extended my senses into the interior of that black hole just now...”



Jasmine's voice came to a sudden halt and a long time passed before she finally exhaled faintly and continued, "I don't know how to describe what kind of feeling that was. Whatever it is, you need to leave immediately and you must never ever approach this place again!"

Yun Che gave a grunt of assent as he continued to draw back. It was just that this time, his retreat was much more leisurely. He was only alarmed at that terrifying unknown existence that laid behind that stone wall.

He was willing to repeatedly risk his life to obtain the Netherworld Udumbara Flower but he would definitely not be so stupid as to risk his life for the sake of satisfying his meaningless curiosity!

After he had retreated several steps, Yun Che turned around... But just as he was turning his body, he saw a faint shimmer of light flash across the corner of his eyes.

Hm? Light!?

How could there be anything that reflected light in this place?

After hesitating for a moment, Yun Che abruptly began striding forward at a quick pace.

“What are you trying to do!?” Jasmine asked in shock as she thought that he intended to force his way into that world behind the stone wall.

Once he was in the approximate

location of where he saw that light being reflected, he stopped and began to slowly lower his body to the ground.

In front of him lay the pile of ashes of that was all that remained of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. It was this pile of ash that had been unintentionally stepped on and scattered by him. Amidst the scattered ashes, there was a bizarre black light that was being reflected by the Golden Crow flames.

Yun Che extended a hand and reached towards the item that was flashing with light, retrieving it from the pile of ashes.

It was a round piece of black jade that fit perfectly in his palm. It was heavy and cold to the touch and it was flawlessly jet-black all over. It was extremely smooth and glossy and he did not see a single marking or rune anywhere on its surface.

“What is this?” Jasmine asked

suspiciously.

“I have no idea either. In fact, I was just about to ask you the same question.” Yun Che carefully examined it but he could not find anything odd. Furthermore, Jasmine’s words also told him that even she did not know what this was.

But he could definitely confirm one thing, this item was definitely something that belonged to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was

isolated in this place for ten thousand years but he had not thrown this item away. It was clear that he had always kept it on his person... If that was the case, then it definitely could not be merely a piece of ordinary black jade!!

Even the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's flesh had been burned to ashes by the Golden Crow flames, yet this jade remained completely undamaged. Just this point alone would be enough to prove that it was no common item.

It was just that it had no markings and no runes, it did not even give off any form of energy aura at all! Just from its aura alone, it appeared to be no more than a most ordinary piece of jade, something that was not even comparable to the lowest-grade profound jade.

“Jasmine, can you feel anything special about it?” Yun Che brought the black jade even closer to his eyes as he strove to discover something about it.

“...Why don't you try and



infuse your profound energy into it?” Jasmine asked.

“Alright!”

Yun Che summoned a thread of energy and he slowly and gently infused that thread of profound energy into the black jade. Immediately, a deep shock appeared on his face. With a flip of his hand, he sent an even stronger thread of profound energy into the black jade... and his face grew even more stunned and amazed.

“What is going on?” His expression caused Jasmine’s brows to knit together as she immediately asked him a question.

“It disappeared!?” Yun Che still stared at his palm in disbelief. The two threads of profound energy that he had infused into this piece of black jade had disappeared like a drop of water in an ocean, it had vanished without a trace. And this reflective black jade still did not give off any aura!

It was as if the two threads of profound energy had been swallowed up by a bottomless abyss, forever disappearing from this earth.

“Disappeared?” Jasmine’s expression was just as shocked as Yun Che. She thought about it for a while before speaking in a low voice, “Since it was something that belonged to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, then it is extremely likely that it is something on the level of the devils! Its mysteries will not be so easily divined by any ordinary power.”

“But don’t think too deeply about it right now and set it aside for the time being, it may come in use in the future. Right now, you’d be better off focusing your energy and attention on thinking of a way to escape from this place!”

# Chapter 793 – Gigantic Ice Flame

---

Yun Che first came to the spot that was right in front of the exit of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest. He stood before the barrier as two streams of profound energy simultaneously surged out from both his arms. Flames ignited around his left hand while ice crystal coalesced in his right hand.

Scarlet profound light and icy-blue profound light were swiftly being gathered between his arms as they expanded outwards.

After that he closed his eyes and focused his mind, his Evil God profound energy circulated as he slowly merged these two mutually repulsive forces together.

Three days ago, he had deliberately stayed behind in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest that was surrounded by an extremely strong isolating barrier. Even though this barrier was known as the strongest barrier in the Profound Sky Continent and even the powers of the Four Sacred Masters combined would not be able to break it open, his ice flames were something that

violated the very laws and principles of this world. In fact, it was something that could even be called a heaven-defying existence! When he was still only at the Sky Profound Realm, he was able to use these ice flames to melt the walls of the Primordial Profound Ark. When he had entered the initial stages of the Emperor Profound Realm, these ice flames were able to completely erase the Sun Moon Elder Ye Shi by simply touching him.

“Jasmine, this barrier may be the called the strongest barrier in the Profound Sky Continent

but it shouldn't be more solid and resilient than the Primordial Profound Ark, right!? The ice flames were even able to damage the Profound Primordial Ark, so it should definitely be able to break apart this barrier." Yun Che said with an air of confidence.

When he had first formed the ice flame, he needed to be completely focused and his profound veins and body would also experience a heavy burden. If he just relaxed a tick, it was possible that he would lose control of the ice flame and harm himself. But now, he could



practically create them at will.

“The Primordial Profound Ark is something from the Primordial Era, so how can this sealing barrier even compare to it?” Jasmine said disdainfully, “But don’t forget, you needed six whole months to create a breach in the walls of the Primordial Profound Ark that you could use to exit, and you created nearly a thousand ice flames in the process.”

“Moreover, the walls of the Primordial Profound Ark did not

have the ability to repair themselves. So even though this sealing barrier is far weaker than the Primordial Profound Ark, the moment it receives any damage, it will swiftly repair itself! So if you want to get out, you'll need to blast open a rather large hole!"

"That's something I do know." Yun Che said as he gave a small nod of his head, "But do you think that I can succeed?"

"I don't know." Jasmine said without thinking but after that

she doubled back on her words, “The so-called ‘ice flame’ that you hold in your hands is something that basically violates all the principles and laws of the world! I had never even heard of such a thing before this. Furthermore, I was always unable to sense what kind of principles of power it operated on, and its might is also something that I cannot fathom... Or perhaps, it does not even have anything that can be conceptualized as ‘power’. It is not possible to use conventional knowledge or common sense to predict what it can do.”

“At Frozen Cloud Asgard half a year ago, that elder from the Sun Moon Divine Hall merely touched the ice flame but he could not even put up any resistance as was incinerated to the point where even his bones had melted away. That result was something that completely exceeded my expectations. Today, I am naturally completely unable to say anything conclusive, you will just have to find out by giving it a shot.”

“Alright, let’s give it a shot then!” Before Yun Che’s arms drew back before he gently pushed them forward. This also

pushed the ice flame against the isolation barrier.

The destructive power of the ice flames were undoubtedly terrifying and Yun Che was convinced that they would even be able to seriously injure one of the Four Scared Masters if they came into contact with them. But creating the ice flame not only required him to be focused, it also required a lot of time. He also had to be extremely careful in handling them. He did not even dare use too much force when he flung it out. Therefore, while it was useful in assassinations, it was unusable

in real combat.

Otherwise, if the ice flame could be conjured as easily as all his other flames and flung out with full force, he could definitely trample all over the Sacred Grounds, roaming the Profound Sky Continent without a care in the world.

The ice flame soundlessly started burning the moment they came into contact with the barrier.

The burning of the ice flame had always been completely silent. This time was no exception. Under the remaining light, Yun Che witnessed the ice flame instantly burning a round hole into that incredibly resilient isolation barrier that had existed for an entire ten thousand years...

It was as if a hole had been burned into a silk cloth.

This hole was only about the size of his palm but as the ice flame continued to eat away at

the barrier, that hole grew deeper and deeper. By the time the ice flame had completely dissipated, that hole was half a foot deep... But it was still not deep enough to pierce the barrier.

Ssss!!

The sound of sizzling lightning continuously rang out in the air as the blue light around the damaged barrier began to flash. Energy surged forth from all directions as the barrier began to ripple like water.



One breath later, the ripples had died down and the hole that had been gouged out by the ice flame had completely disappeared. He could not even see a single trace of the damage that it had previously done.

Yun Che, “...”

Outside the barrier.

“Xue’er, why don’t you return with royal father first... Royal

father will definitely assign people to watch over this place twenty four hours a day. The moment there is any movement, I will immediately alert you. Is that okay?"

Feng Hengkong looked at his daughter with pain in his eyes as he tried his best to reason with her. For the past three days, he would come once a day. He could see that Feng Xue'er was growing more wan and thin with each passing day. It was just that Feng Xue'er refused to budge, no matter what he said.

Given his understanding of his own daughter, she was not an obstinate and stubborn person. On the contrary, she had always been obedient to him and the Phoenix God. She had always listened to what they had to say.

But once it was something that concerned Yun Che, she would actually become this stubborn... or one could even call it resolute and determined.

Before this, Yun Che had been the person he had hated the most in this world and he could

barely contain his desire to personally and cruelly end his life... But right now, he was fervently praying with all his might that Yun Che was still alive, and he was even praying that he was completely unharmed at the moment.

Because he was afraid that his daughter's smile would be forever taken away if something really happened to Yun Che.

“Royal Father, you don't need to worry about me. Big Brother Yun will definitely be alright.

Moreover, he cares for me so much that he definitely would not be willing to keep me waiting for long.” Feng Xue’er closed her eyes as she spoke softly, both her hands still placed on her chest.

“Divine Phoenix Sect Master, stop trying to convince her. Tomorrow is the day of the Devil Sword Conference, so you definitely must be busy preparing a lot of things. You don’t need to worry about Little Sister Xue’er, leave it to me.” Xia Yuanba chose this moment to speak out.

The sky had grown dark and it was dotted with stars. The curtain of night had already begun to fall over the blue sky and ocean. The moment this curtain of night was pierced by the light of the sun once more, it would signal the beginning of the Devil Sword Conference. All in all, it would only be ten to twelve hours before it began.

On this exceedingly rare occasion, nearly all the top practitioners of the Profound Sky Continent would be gathered in one place. The

meeting that was purportedly for the sake of comprehending “the mysteries of the Divine Profound” was an event that many of its attendees looked forward to with much anticipation.

“Haah...” Feng Hengkong’s lips moved but in the end, he could only sigh. The fact that Yun Che had been sealed inside the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest had long ago spread through Supreme Ocean Palace, so all of the people who came to attend the Devil Sword Conference were well-aware of this fact. Initially, people kept coming to this place

to see if Yun Che was truly capable of escaping from this place. But from the second day onwards, very few people came to investigate.

From the third day, everyone thought that Yun Che was undoubtedly dead.

Because this was the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest!!

Even the Four Sacred Masters would not be able to last a day inside there.



“Xue’er, if you truly believe that Yun Che will definitely return alive, then your royal father will also believe that as well... So your royal father will also come to visit this place every day.”

Before he left, Feng Hengkong lightly patted Feng Xue’er’s shoulder as he gave a silent sigh and suppressed all the emotion in his heart.

He was beginning to feel more and more that for the Divine Phoenix Sect to get entangled

with this Yun Che... was the greatest calamity that had struck them in the past five thousand years!!

Compared to Feng Xue'er, Xia Yuanba was far less worried about the current situation. Once his Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins awakened, his temperament, mental state and will had all been affected by it. He was far more cool and composed than he was before. This coupled with the fact that he had absolute trust in Yun Che meant that despite three days having passed, he still firmly believed that Yun Che would

definitely have enough confidence to escape if he was willing to stay behind in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

“Just what method can we use to blow a hole in this barrier...” Xia Yuanba stared at the barrier with furrowed brows, his mind tossing and turning as he rummaged his mind for an answer to this question.

At this moment, Feng Xue'er's delicate body suddenly shivered fiercely as her phoenix eyes sprung open and she asked in an

agitated voice, “Bulky Big Brother, did you just hear a sound just now?”

“A sound? What sound?” Xia Yuanba asked in a dazed voice, he had been deep in thought so he had not heard anything.

“It came from the barrier!” Feng Xue’er’s body descended as she shouted in an extremely emotional voice, “Big Brother Yun, is that you... Big Brother Yun, it’s definitely you, right!?”

## Within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

“Even though this barrier is a bit stronger than I had expected, in the end, it’s still possible to destroy it with the ice flame.”

Although his first attempt had ended in failure, there was no sign of disappointment on Yun Che’s face. He took two steps back and stretched out both his arms once more. His left hand burned ablaze while icy energy congealed in his right hand... However this time, he did not

care about any injury he might receive, he circulated his profound energy to its strongest. The flames on his left started to burn even more intensely while icy energy began to crazily gather at his right... Even after he had gathered those energies for more than ten breaths, he still had not stopped.

“You want to conjure up a huge ice flame?” Jasmine, who had noticed what he intended to do, spoke in a serious tone, “You’re taking a completely needless risk right now! I won’t need more than one or two days to reconstitute my body! Can’t you

even wait for this little bit of time!? To once again go as far as to... Your wounds aren't even completely healed yet, your profound veins are still running on empty! So to attempt to forcibly create such a gigantic ice flame right now, you are basically gambling with your life!"

"No!" Yun Che shook his head, an extremely confident expression on his face, "If it was before, I'd indeed be gambling with my life. But right now, I am nearly one hundred percent confident that I can pull this off."

“One hundred percent confident? Where is this confidence even coming from?” Jasmine asked suspiciously, “In the past, you have never even tried to conjure up such a huge ice flame! Let alone trying to do it in your present state!”

“When I woke up just now, I discovered that not only was my mind not exhausted, it was actually extremely clear. I even feel like my mental strength has suddenly improved by leaps and bounds. When I conjured that first ball of ice flame just now, I



found that I was not mistaken. Despite the serious injuries that I sustained and the current handicap on my profound strength, haven't you realized that the time it took to create that ice flame was even faster than usual?"

"...I also felt that it was strange that your head wasn't feeling the least bit heavy after you woke up." Jasmine said as she lapsed into thought for a moment. After that, she muttered to herself in a soft voice, "Could it be that after he endured that exceedingly torturous soul stealing power... his soul

actually rose to a new level? Or is it... that the Dragon God Soul, Phoenix Soul and Golden Crow Soul were now even more tightly bonded with his soul?

Or could it be that... both of these things had occurred!?

“Whenever I tried to create a slightly larger ice flame in the past, self-doubt would unconsciously manifest in my heart while warning bells rang in my head. This caused me to feel like I had no chance of succeeding and that if I did try

to force the issue, it would only lead to disastrous consequences for me. But this time, even though I am clearly still hurt, I am not feeling any sense of danger or any self-doubt. On the contrary, my heart is cool and composed.”

Yun Che inhaled a deep breath before he drew back both of his hand as he slowly brought the extremely intense and strong fire and ice energies together and began to merge them...

Fifteen minutes went by...

Half an hour went by...

This process had only finished once forty five minutes had passed. Yun Che opened his eyes and an icy blue flame that was a foot and a half tall silently burned in the center of his palm!

“To think that...” Jasmine sucked in a small breath, “Not only did the Netherworld Udumbara Flower not cause any permanent harm to your soul, in the end, it actually gave it a huge boost of power. You truly are a

freak.”

Yun Che’s chest rose and fell rapidly. His forehead was matted in cold sweat but his expression was one of intense excitement.

A flame that was only a foot and a half tall was completely insignificant and pathetic if these were normal profound flames we were talking about. But when it came to the ice flames, this was an exceedingly terrifying notion. Even though it was silently burning in the center of Yun Che’s palms, only

Yun Che knew that even though he had just created this flame, he was already starting to lose control over them.

“This time, I’m definitely going to be able to blow this barrier apart!” Yun Che muttered to himself as cautiously pushed his hands forward.

# Chapter 794 – Jasmine Reconstructs Her Body

---

The moment the ice flame touched the barrier, it continued its inexorable journey forward, not slowing in the slightest.

The strongest isolating barrier in the entire Profound Sky Continent was being brushed aside like a weak curtain of water. It was as though an raging flame was touching cold ice, because in the blink of an eye, a huge hole had been melted in the barrier. As the ice flame bored in deeper and deeper, the

hole was not only not repairing itself, it was actually slowly growing larger as the destructive power of the ice flame continued to eat away at it.

A faint beam of light started to shine through from outside the barrier. Even though it was night in the outside world, the night sky of the Profound Sky Continent was like glaring sunlight compared to the absolute darkness of the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest... Without making a single sound, the ice flames had completely pierced through the isolating barrier.



Furthermore, the hole that it had made was more than two feet wide!

Even though Yun Che had been full of confidence, he had not expected his plan to go so swimmingly... because the barrier in front of him had been publicly acknowledged as the most powerful barrier in the entire Profound Sky Continent! To think that it was not even able to withstand a single strike from the ice flame! Before he had even withdrawn the hands that he had pushed out, a hole

had already punched through the barrier.

“Hurry up and go!” Jasmine exclaimed.

Even though Yun Che’s heart was still in shock, his body reacted instantly. Just before the sizzling sound of the barrier repairing itself rang through the air, he had already activated Star God’s Broken Shadow as he flashed out of there like lightning.

Riiip!!

The speed at which the barrier repaired itself was incomparably fast. It was just after the instant he cleared the exit that he heard an ear-splitting thunderclap explode behind him. The hole that was made by the ice flames was swiftly closing and it looked like it was about to disappear altogether just a moment later. The only thing left in its wake were extremely fast-moving energy ripples.

The world before his eyes was

no longer cloaked in inky darkness, the air around him was no longer heavy and gloomy. The cool sea breeze caused Yun Che to feel extremely refreshed. Just as his body came to a halt, he felt himself being tightly hugged by a soft as cotton wool.

Feng Xue'er gave a cry as she tightly hugged him, she started bawling her eyes out almost immediately after that.

Yun Che froze there for a moment, but after that, he

immediately took action... Feng Xue'er must have stayed here for the past few days waiting for his return... Just like what he saw in that dreamy wonderland.

He hugged Feng Xue'er tightly as he softly whispered to her, "Xue'er, I'm sorry. I've made you worry for the past few days."

Feng Xue'er leaned against his chest as she sobbed and shook her head, "As long as Big Brother Yun is okay then that's fine... I knew Big Brother Yun would definitely make it out in one

piece...”

“Brother-in-law... This is great.” Xia Yuanba had rushed over, his face flushed red with agitation and excitement. He was so emotional that he could barely speak. At this time, his expression suddenly changed as he shouted anxiously, “Brother-in-law, you’re hurt!?”

Yun Che’s aura was thin and shallow and his face was white as a sheet! His aura was half as strong as it was normally and Xia Yuanba could clearly smell

blood wafting off him! It was clear that he had sustained extremely serious internal and external injuries and had lost a lot of blood as well!

“Ah?!” Feng Xue’er cried out in alarm, her petite face jerking up from Yun Che’s chest. It was only now that she noticed that his aura was weak and disordered and that his body was covered in wounds. She could even see quite a few wounds on his face that had not fully healed yet.

“Big Brother Yun, you...”

“Don’t worry.” Yun Che smiled as he waved his hand. His expression was completely relaxed and carefree as he continued, “I met with a few accidents in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, so I ended up suffering a few injuries. But the both of you should well know that I won’t be affected by injuries this light. It is only that my profound veins have been taxed strenuously, so I will need up to half a month for them to fully recover.”



“Big Brother Yun, let... let’s return to Supreme Ocean Palace first. Your wounds will definitely get better immediately.”

Tears shimmered in Feng Xue’er’s eyes, her heart in conflict between extreme joy and distress. She supported Yun Che as they flew at the most comfortable speed possible towards Supreme Ocean Palace. Xia Yuanba, who was behind them, wanted to remind her that Yun Che had absolutely no issue moving on his own but the moment the words came to his lips, he swallowed them back down instead. After thinking for

a moment, he caught up to them and shouted, "Little Sister Xue'er, Brother-in-law needs to recuperate from his injuries, so we need to find a quiet and safe place for him to rest. Bring Brother-in-law to Venerable Cloud Palace. That is where the people from my Absolute Monarch Sanctuary are currently residing, so Brother-in-law will be absolutely safe there."

"Absolute Monarch Sanctuary?" Yun Che shook his head lightly, "I think it's better if we don't. I don't want anyone to disturb me during this period."

“Brother-in-law, you don’t need to worry.” Xia Yuanba said solemnly as he slapped his chest, “I will explain it to Master and the rest of them so that no one will come and disturb Brother-in-law... and that includes even the Lord Saint Emperor himself.”

Yun Che gave it some thought before finally nodding his head and replying, “Alright then.”

Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was the head of the Four Sacred

Grounds. Being beside them would indeed be the safest place on the Profound Sky Continent.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Nest was only fifty kilometers away from Supreme Ocean Palace, so the three of them reached Supreme Ocean Palace very quickly. After that, they were ushered into Venerable Cloud Palace where Absolute Monarch Sanctuary were being housed under Xia Yuanba's instructions, arriving at the pavilion where Xia Yuanba was staying at.

“Brother-in-law, I’ve already sent a sound transmission to my master. You can be at ease and focus on your recovery here, there definitely won’t be anyone who will disturb you.” Xia Yuanba said confidently.

“...” Yun Che glanced outside the door of the pavilion and asked with furrowed brows, “What’s going on? Why is Supreme Ocean Palace so quiet? From the moment we returned here from the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, I haven’t even spotted a single person. I did not even see the disciples who normally keep watch over

Supreme Ocean Palace... Could it be due to the Devil Sword Conference that will begin once the morning comes?”

“That’s right.” Xia Yuanba said as he nodded his head, “According to what Master said, something extraordinary will happen tomorrow. The Thirteen Star Alignment, a rare occurrence that happens every ten thousand years will appear. When the appointed hour arrives, the natural yin energy on this world will start flourishing to its peak, and that will also be the time when the seal of the ‘devil sword’ will be

at its weakest. And this is exactly why they chose to hold the Devil Sword Conference tomorrow.”

“Furthermore, the Devil Sword Conference has been labelled as the most important event to happen in the Profound Sky Continent for the past few thousand years, so everyone is ensuring that no mishaps happen. Due to this, no one is allowed to cause any disturbances in the twenty four hour period before the Devil Sword Conference begins. Furthermore, once it is twelve hours before the conference begins, everyone is required to

stay within their own pavilions and no one is allowed to go out.

“Ah, so that explains it.” Yun Che’s brows twitched as he muttered to himself.

“So Brother-in-law can recuperate in peace here. Before the Devil Sword Conference begins, there definitely won’t be anyone who will come and disturb your rest. Actually, even if I did not send out that sound transmission, even if Master and the rest knew that you had returned, they may not come at



this... extremely critical period of time to visit Brother-in-law.”

“Big Brother Yun, did you obtain the item that you wanted to get? Why did you... sustain such serious injuries?” Feng Xue’er asked, her eyes filled with worry. As one of the few people who knew Yun Che best, she also knew that Yun Che’s body was far more abnormal than a normal person. So for him to sustain such serious injuries meant that he had met with uncommon danger within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest.

“I stayed behind in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest in order to wait for the Netherworld Udumbara Flower to fully bloom first before plucking it. But I did not realize that there was another extremely terrifying thing besides the Netherworld Udumbara Flower that was hidden within the darkness...” After he said those words, Yun Che suddenly felt his chest grow dull and heavy. His face suddenly flushed red as a large amount of fresh blood sprayed from his mouth.

“Big... Big Brother Yun!”

“Brother-in-law!!”

Feng Xue'er was so frightened that her pretty face lost all its color. Meanwhile, Xia Yuanba had also urgently rushed over, he was so shocked that he had nearly tripped over himself and fell to the floor. Yun Che hurriedly waved his hand as he tried to console them, “Don't worry, it's only some clogged up blood from my internal injuries. Now that I spat that out, I actually feel a lot better... Right now I just feel a bit weak and anemic. Once I rest for a while,

I'll be fine."

Feng Xue'er used the sleeve of her spotless snow white clothes to wipe away the blood that stained the corner of Yun Che's mouth. She anxiously exclaimed in a watery voice, "Then you should get some rest first Big Brother Yun. Bulky Big Brother and I will keep watch over this place... Or how about we leave Supreme Ocean Palace right now and return to Frozen Cloud Asgard?"

Xia Yuanba hurriedly said as

well, “Then let me leave with the both of you as well. I’ll wait till Brother-in-law gets better before returning to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.”

“No.” Yun Che said as he shook his head, “Now is not the time for us to return. Since we are in Supreme Ocean Palace and the Devil Sword Conference will begin once day breaks, it would be a waste for us to miss it.”

“Brother-in-law, you’re going to participate in the Devil Sword Conference? But your

injuries...”

“Don’t worry, I’m only going there to be an onlooker, I won’t be trying to break the seal on the devil sword. And I believe that with the state I am in right now, no one will be so dumb as to force me to participate either.” Yun Che said with a faint smile.

Once he had heard about the true origins of the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword from the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign, the Devil Sword Conference, which he initially had little interest in,

became an event that he could not afford to miss.

Because the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was a true devil sword! Furthermore, there was the devil soul of a true devil sealed inside of it... and it was the devil soul of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's son at that!

According to the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's words, the devil soul within should have have been scattered to the four winds long ago. But

in the end, it was still an ancient devil sword, so even if there was no devil soul within, it was very likely that there were a few mysteries hidden within that blade... Furthermore, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had spared no expense in arranging this event, so it was very likely that they made some sort of special discovery.

Other than that, both he and Jasmine were extremely suspicious about one thing: Why did the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign say that the only way that he could save his son all those years ago was to seal his



devil soul into his sword?

Xia Yuanba thought about it for a while before nodding, “Fine then, I won’t be participating in the breaking of the seal on the devil sword tomorrow either. Even if there is really some heaven-shaking secret that is hidden inside, I can hardly be bothered with it.”

Yun Che laughed as he replied, “Yuanba, you don’t need to be that considerate towards me. All of the people who are within Supreme Ocean Palace right now

are totally focused on the Devil Sword Conference, so no one will have the time to come and find trouble with me.”

Yun Che paused for a moment before speaking in an apologetic tone, “Yuanba, Xue’er, I have something very important that I need to do right away. Furthermore, I can only do it if I’m alone. So I’ll have to trouble the both of you to help me keep watch outside, and no matter what you hear, you must not come in... You mustn’t let anyone else in either.”

Shock appeared on the faces of Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er but they did not ask Yun Che for any reasons or explanations.

“Big Brother Yun, Xue'er will be right outside. I won't take a step further away from you.” Feng Xue'er said in a soft and gentle voice before she left the room with Xia Yuanba to keep watch over Yun Che.

The moment Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er left, Yun Che's expression grew pained and he spoke in a helpless manner,

“Jasmine, do you really need to start right away?”

A petite and delicate figure dressed in red appeared in front of Yun Che, her long crimson hair beautiful and dazzling. She ignored Yun Che's words and surveyed her surroundings before floating in the air. She then moved to the innermost part of the pavilion, settling in a corner of the room that was separated by a curtain. She said in a placid tone, “This spot will do. Bring over all the required items now.”

“...” Yun Che was rendered speechless for a moment, but he still obediently did as he was told. In fact, he could understand why Jasmine seemed so anxious and impatient. It had been seven years, an entire seven years, since she had no choice but to assume the form of a soul body. So she must definitely have been dreaming about the day she could reconstitute her body, reclaiming her life, power and freedom in one fell swoop.

Now that all of the requirements had been met, she could barely wait even a breath

longer.

“Jasmine, this is still Supreme Ocean Palace after all...”

“You don’t need to speak any further.” Jasmine said with a wave of her hand, a pout fixed on her tiny, milk-white face, “Anywhere would be fine to me. In a little while, I will set up an isolation barrier around this place and its strength will be tens of times stronger than the one that is set up around the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest! Even if it’s your ice flames, they would

have no hope of breaking this barrier. A mere Profound Sky Continent does not have the qualifications to alarm or agitate one such as I.”

“Alright then.” Yun Che could only nod his head as he quietly sucked in a cold breath of air: A barrier that was tens of times stronger than the one around the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest...

Yun Che retrieved the two profound cores that came from Sovereign Profound Beasts and the thirty five kilograms of

Purple Veined Divine Crystal... After he thought about it for a moment, he was afraid that this might not be enough, so he took out all the Purple Veined Divine Crystals that he had stored in the Sky Poison Pearl. Finally, he cautiously fished out the four Netherworld Udumbara Flower petals that were surrounded by a green light and he gently placed them behind the Purple Veined Divine Crystals.

Nearly fifty kilograms of Purple Veined Divine Crystals were stacked together, releasing an incomparably dense and rich spirit energy. Jasmine made a



quick gesture with her hand as an invisible energy completely trapped all of the spirit energy that was being released by the Purple Veined Divine Crystals, so as to prevent any outsiders from detecting it—She was naturally not worried that someone would make trouble for her, she was ensuring that she would not create any problems for Yun Che.

“Are these items truly enough?” Yun Che casually asked.

“In the end, I will also require

three drops of your blood essence.” After Jasmine finished speaking, her dainty finger suddenly shot out and landed between Yun Che’s brows. Before Yun Che even had any time to react, three droplets of dark red blood had floated out from between his eyes as they hovered above Jasmine’s fingertip.

These were no ordinary droplets of blood, these were droplets of his blood essence! A person’s vital energy and innate talent would be harmed if he even lost one drop of blood essence, much less three drops.

The anemic and heavily injured Yun Che suddenly lost three drops of blood essence, so his vision immediately started to swim as he stumbled backwards in a faint, nearly falling over while he was at it.

However, he had the Great Way of the Buddha so even lost blood essence could be regenerated. As a result, this loss of blood essence was far less serious than it would have been for a normal profound practitioner.

“Don’t worry, after I

reconstitute my body and slowly recover my vitality and strength, I will give you a drop of Star God's Blood as compensation." Jasmine said calmly.

Yun Che shook his head as he grimaced, "I don't need any compensation from you. Anyways... on the very first day we met, you already sucked out a lot of my blood. If it's you, then even if you want all the blood in my body, I would be happy and willing to give it to you."

"Hmph!" Jasmine gave a cold

and disdainful laugh, “Starting again with your insincere and flowery words again I see. I’ll say this once more, those moves that you pull to seduce women will only work on stupid women! Don’t ever think I’ll ever fall for one of your tricks!”

Jasmine had uttered similar words countless times before and every time she had said those words, they contained a deep contempt and disdain. However this time around, even though it was as harsh and cutting as it usually was, her eyes had suddenly...

“You may withdraw now because I’m about to begin. Remember, I can’t be interrupted during this period of time. The barrier that I will set up shortly will block out everything, including light and sound. So the only one who will be able to disturb me will be you. Before I come out of the barrier myself, even if something extremely important is happening, you must not send any sound transmissions to me.”

“Also, I will still need to maintain the connection I have

with your life before my body is fully reconstituted. So during this period of time, you must remember that you must definitely stay within a ten kilometer radius of me. If you have no choice but to exceed this distance, you must not exceed it for more than one hundred breaths! If not, it is possible that my soul will scatter.”

Yun Che stored those words in his heart before solemnly speaking, “You don’t need to worry, I guarantee that nothing will happen... Oh right, Jasmine, I have something that I want to ask you.”

Jasmine, “?”

Yun Che gave Jasmine a measured glance before he started to speak with a strange look in his eyes, “Since you are reconstituting your body, then is it possible to change the appearance of your new body... Err, what I’m trying to ask is this. Will your appearance be exactly the same as before after you’ve obtained your new body?”

Jasmine disdainfully turned



her face away from him, “When the body and soul combines into one, the soul will form the main substance of a person while the body will merely be its container. So if your soul is destroyed but your flesh remains, it will be impossible to reform your soul. But if your soul survives while your flesh is destroyed, as long as the power of your soul is sufficiently strong, you will be able to reconstitute a new body. Furthermore, reconstituting a new body does not mean that you are borrowing a body to be reborn, it is birthed from the soul, so it will naturally be no different from the soul body of the person who is reconstituting

her body!”

“So the appearance that you see right now is exactly what my new body is going to look like! I couldn’t change it even if I wanted to!”

“Ah, so that’s how it is!” Yun Che hurriedly nodded his head. A relieved look appeared on his face before he spoke sincerely, “Ah, that’s great to hear! Previously, I was worried that your appearance might change after your new body has been formed. I sure as heck don’t

want my most perfect Jasmine to change in the slightest. Even if it's the tiniest of changes, I might feel that it... wouldn't be too good."

"..." A strange ripple passed through Jasmine's eyes and for some unfathomable reason, she grew distracted for a moment. After that, she turned around and faced her back towards Yun Che. With a cold snort and a wave of her tiny hand, a curtain of light suddenly materialized in front of Yun Che, blocking his view of her completely.

Yun Che unconsciously backpedaled and the moment he had come to a stop, a three meter wide square-shaped barrier had already materialized before his eyes. The barrier was a faint white color, it was simple and radiated no light and it did not give off any aura. It simply seemed to be a curtain that was erected in place.

Yun Che did not utter a single word more. He slowly withdrew from the barrier, a complex look on his face as emotions started surging in his heart.

For the past few years, Jasmine had been an inextricable part of his life. Even though he had not allowed himself to develop a habit of relying on Jasmine's power, the time they had spent together was enough for her very presence to imperceptibly become a pillar that supported him.

From the moment Jasmine reconstituted her body, she would no longer have to rely on his life to survive and she would no longer stay within the Sky Poison Pearl. So they would no longer be able to feel each other's presence and the sound

of each other's hearts the way they used to before, when they were bonded so tightly that they could not separate themselves even if they wanted to.

He had desperately tried to help Jasmine reconstitute her body and the moment he had obtained the Netherworld Udumbara Flower for her, his heart had been filled with a wild joy. But now that the moment they had been waiting for was at hand, he discovered that his heart was not filled with unrelenting joy. On the contrary, it was filled with a complex emotion that he found hard to

put into words.

“What are you thinking...” Yun Che muttered to himself as he gave a self-deprecating chuckle, “Meeting Jasmine was the most fortunate thing to ever happen to me. Without Jasmine, I wouldn’t be the person I am today... So how can I have such selfish thoughts.”

Yun Che shook his head vigorously as he strove to clear his heart and mind of all distracting thoughts. He sat down and crossed his legs as he

began to calm his heart and prepared to enter a state where he could focus on his recovery.

At this moment, the back of his right hand shone with an icy-blue light before the image of the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul slowly appeared in the air.

Yun Che grew shocked... A sound transmission that came from Frozen Cloud Asgard?

He swiftly closed his eyes and concentrated, comprehending



the ice soul sound transmission that came from the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul. In a flash, his eyes shot open and he shouted as he jerked to his feet, “Wha... What!!”

# Chapter 795 – A

## Dangerous Situation

---

Supreme Ocean Palace. Under the cover of night.

“What did you say? Yun Che has returned?” This report caused the Sovereign of the Seas, Qu Fengyi, to react with incredulous shock.

She had sensed that there was something weird going on with the barrier around the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest so she

swiftly sent men to go investigate. But she never thought that she would receive such an amazingly shocking piece of news.

“Yun Che came back with Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s Xia Yuanba and the Divine Phoenix Sect’s Princess Snow. Right now, he is at Venerable Cloud Palace. Even though no one came out to greet him, many people observed his return. So this news will definitely spread quickly.”

A green-robed elder of Supreme Ocean Palace reported all of this to the Sovereign of the Seas in a respectful tone.

“...” The Sovereign of the Seas, Qu Fengyu, pondered silently for a brief moment before speaking in a low voice, “This sovereign personally held an audience with Yun Che a few days ago. Given his strength, there is no way he could survive in the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest for three days and it is even less possible that he would be able to escape... But given the current state of affairs, it seems that the tales of his master Old Man

Duotian were true after all.”

“My Lord Sovereign, since this affair involves the forbidden ground of our Supreme Ocean Palace, should I immediately summon him to see you?”

“No!” The Sovereign of the Sea, Qu Fengyu, directly rejected that proposal before continuing in a bland voice, “Even though this sovereign is extremely curious as to exactly what method he used to escape from the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, the Devil Sword Conference is at hand,

and we can brook no further disturbances or incidents. We will discuss this matter again once the Devil Sword Conference has ended.”

At the same time, in another corner of Supreme Ocean Palace.

“Father, this son has something to report... Yun Che has returned! Right now he is at Venerable Cloud Palace, this son saw it with his own two eyes!”

“Oh?” Xuanyuan Wentian, who

had been meditating, opened his eyes as he briefly slanted his face to the side. No shock crossed his face and he only gave a mild laugh as he replied, "Then that is truly the best news I've heard in awhile. I was regretting the fact that we would miss a grand spectacle at the Devil Sword Conference tomorrow. But now that things are the way they are, this regret can be forgotten."

"Father, aren't you at all curious as to how he escaped from the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest?" Xuanyuan Wendao asked with a mystified expression on his face, "From the moment he

entered the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest up till now, it has been more than eighty hours, so how exactly did he escape from there alive!? Moreover, that barrier is something that even Father is not able to do anything about but he could actually...”

“There is no need.” Xuanyuan Wentian said in a grave tone, “In ten hours, the Devil Sword Conference will convene. I have been waiting and preparing for this day for the past one thousand years! Now that the time is finally at hand, we cannot make any errors! A momentous event draws near!”



“Yes, it is this son who has reacted impulsively and recklessly.” Xuanyuan Wendao hurriedly bowed his head before cautiously continuing, “Then do we need to send anyone to keep an eye on Yun Che?”

“There’s no need!” Xuanyuan Wentian’s brows sunk by a fraction, his eyes were as calm as still water but one could see a dreadful cold light glinting in its depths, “On the contrary, don’t give him even the smallest reason to feel suspicious at all. Let him feel safe and secure

when he participates in the Devil Sword Conference tomorrow. Because if we're missing Yun Che for the Devil Sword Conference... Hmph, then it will end up being less interesting by far!"

"Yes!" Xuanyuan Wendao gave his speedy assent before a cold laugh bubbled from his throat, "That Yun Che definitely wouldn't even dream that Father had long ago uncovered most of his secrets! Once the Devil Sword is unsealed, the Mirror of Samsara will sooner or later become part of Father's prized possessions."

---

“When did this happen? Did anything happen to the others? Do we know who did this?”

Yun Che sent a sound transmission with extreme urgency and the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul quickly rang with a reply.

Three days ago... It had already been three days!?

Yun Che, who had originally calmed his mind so that he could begin his recovery, could no longer sit still. In a flash, his heart had become so anxious that it grew numb... Xiao Yun had disappeared three days ago and it was during this period that he had been trapped within the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest!

“Jasmine, we...”

The moment the words left his mouth, Yun Che suddenly realized it... Jasmine had

already begun reconstituting her body, so she definitely could not be disturbed! He was not even able to discuss anything with her right now.

Furthermore, he could not go anywhere that was outside a ten kilometer radius around Jasmine... so that meant that he definitely could not return to Floating Cloud City either!

Yun Che sucked in a deep breath as he strove to swiftly compose himself.

What had happened!? Why did Xiao Yun suddenly disappear!?

If he was alive, he was missing. If he was dead, they had not found the body. Yet they had not heard any strange or abnormal sounds before he had disappeared and they were not able to find any traces of a battle. Given the strength of Xiao Yun and Number One Under Heaven, to be able to kidnap Xiao Yun while rendering him powerless to resist and escaping the notice of Number One Under Heaven, the person who performed the deed was definitely at the level of a Monarch!!

Within the Profound Sky Continent, besides the Four Sacred Grounds, the only other power that had Monarchs in their ranks was the Divine Phoenix Sect... and one Fen Juechen. Given Fen Juechen's character and temperament, he definitely would not do such a thing. The Divine Phoenix Sect also did not have any reason to do such a thing. So that only left the Four Sacred Grounds!

However, why would any one of the Four Sacred Grounds make a move against Xiao Yun?

Could it be that Sun Moon Divine Hall had used some means to discover that I had manufactured this “Old Man Duotian”, so they decided to carry out their vengeance and kidnapped Xiao Yun to threaten me?

No, that cannot be right! If that was truly the case, given Sun Moon Divine Hall’s strength, they would be able to strike against me easily if they had seen through my deception. They would not need to make this kind of move. Even if they



really wanted to capture someone to use against me, Grandfather or Little Aunt would have been far more suitable targets. No matter what, it should not have been Xiao Yun.

Right... why was it Xiao Yun in the first place!?

Yun Che's brows sank even further. The more composure he regained, the more he realized how bad the current situation was.

Could it be that Xiao Yun's identity... was exposed?

No... there was no reason for that to happen! Among Xiao Yun, Number One Under Heaven and Number Seven Under Heaven, Number One Under Heaven and Number Seven Under Heaven still possessed the physical characteristics of the elven race. Even though their disguise had been perfect, there was still a chance that they would be exposed. Compared to the both of them, there should have been no way anyone could tell Xiao Yun had come from the Illusory Demon Realm!

Just because he was a completely new face did not mean that someone would be able to tell that he was from the Illusory Demon Realm!

Besides, Xiao Yun was a naturally cautious person, so he had not even used the slightest bit of profound energy while he had been residing in Floating Cloud City.

Furthermore, during the many visits he had paid to Floating Cloud City over the past few

months, he had not detected anyone spying on them or taking notice of them... He just occasionally sensed Fen Juechen's aura every now and then.

“Could it be...” The most dreadful and terrible possibility appeared in Yun Che's mind, “There are people from the Four Sacred Grounds that are still within the Illusory Demon Realm...”

Yun Che's chest rose and fell heavily as he sucked in a deep

breath. After that he raised his right hand and summoned out the Frozen Cloud Celestial Soul.

“Senior Master Murong, find a way to inform Little Aunt and the rest that Xiao Yun should be safe and sound, I have already managed to roughly guess his current location. Tomorrow, I will be bringing him home, so put their minds at ease for me. Also...” Yun Che paused for a moment, his voice growing heavier after that, “Make sure that my Grandfather, Little Aunt and Seventh Sister are all congregated within my Grandfather’s courtyard after

noon tomorrow. Until I appear, make sure that they don't even take a step outside those premises.”

Blue light flashed as his words were transmitted to Frozen Cloud Asgard which was fifty thousand kilometers away. Yun Che glanced at the isolation barrier that surrounded Jasmine as he muttered to himself in an extremely gloomy voice, “Why did it just have to be at this particular time. Haah...”

“It looks like I will have no

choice but to participate in the Devil Sword Conference tomorrow after all!”

“But I have been far too negligent this time around. I actually overlooked the fact that if the Four Sacred Grounds had the power to invade Demon Imperial City, then they would naturally be capable of silently infiltrating the Illusory Demon Realm as well... Besides, they still have a spy in Duke Ming!”

“Right now, I can only hope that the matter regarding the

Primordial Profound Ark has not been exposed. Or else...”

The curtain of night gradually retreated as the sky started to grow bright once more.

The Supreme Ocean Palace which had lain silent for an entire night was still exceptionally tranquil. But there was an abnormally strong profound energy that was surging in the air above it, it was almost as if it was portending that some major event was about to occur.



The surging and tossing profound energy completely roused Yun Che from his meditation. He slowly opened his eyes before inhaling a small breath of air.

Last night, he had only been thinking of the best method he could use to recover from some of his wounds. But things had turned out contrary to his wishes. First, Jasmine had left his body, then after that, he found out that Xiao Yun had disappeared. This matter was so serious that he could not

completely focus for the rest of the night, so his wounds recovered far slower than they normally would.

Behind the screen that lay at the corner of the pavilion, Jasmine's barrier was still completely still and silent. For the past seven years, he would always discuss things with Jasmine first whenever a major event had occurred. This was the first time Jasmine was not by his side so his heart was filled with an emptiness that far exceeded what he had been expecting... In fact, he was even feeling a bit bewildered and

distracted at the moment.

He got up and opened the door, striding out of the pavilion. The first thing he saw was Feng Xue'er and Xia Yuanba who had kept watch all night.

“Big Brother Yun, have your injuries gotten better?” Feng Xue'er drifted close to him like a floating flower as she asked in a concerned voice.

“Mn, they've gotten much better.” Yun Che said as he

surveyed his surroundings. He discovered that the entire palace was empty and devoid of people so he immediately asked, “Has your master and the rest of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary left for the Devil Sword Conference already?”

“Yes!” Xia Yuanba nodded his head as he replied, “Master and the rest departed from here about an hour ago. Master initially wanted to pay a visit to Brother-in-law and the other Spiritual Masters and elders also wanted to see Brother-in-law as well. But I told them that you had been seriously injured and

you needed a quiet place to rest, so they did not press the issue.”

“One hour ago? The Devil Sword Conference shouldn’t start for a while, correct?” Yun Che asked as his brows twitched.

“It’ll be roughly an hour’s time before it begins... Brother-in-law, your expression is rather peculiar today. Has something happened?” Xia Yuanba blurted out after he observed Yun Che’s current expression.

“...Let’s be off then. We will go to the Devil Sword Conference as well.” Yun Che did not explain as he grasped Feng Xue’er’s hand and began walking outside.

After they had exited Venerable Cloud Palace, Yun Che was about to ask Xia Yuanba where the Devil Sword Conference was being held when he saw Spiritual Master Ancient Blue standing in the courtyard. He was dressed all in white, holding a white horsetail whisk in his hand, a faint and serene smile on his face.

“Master, why are you still here? Shouldn’t you have already gone to the Sea God Arena?” Xia Yuanba asked in astonishment.

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue gave a faint laugh before his eyes turned to Yun Che, “I thought about it and decided it would be best to go with you. Little friend Yun, it looks like your injuries are indeed serious and your profound energy has greatly weakened as well. But it is good that your wounds have already stabilized and it will only require a period of quiet convalescence for you to fully recover. During this Devil Sword Conference,

you should just play the role of an observer, there is no need for you to force yourself into action.”

Yun Che strode forward as he replied, “I thank Senior Ancient for his concern. Because I am currently injured, even though I am staying within Venerable Cloud Palace for a while, I have not yet been able to visit all the seniors from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, so I’ll have to ask for your forgiveness in that regard.”

“It matters not.” Spiritual



Master Ancient Blue laughed merrily as he shook his head. He did not probe into how and why Yun Che had sustained those wounds and how he had been able to escape from the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest alive. He raised his head slightly to look at the sky, "In about an hour's time, the mysterious phenomenon of all thirteen stars aligning will appear in the blue dome of the heavens. This will also be the most critical period of time when it comes to the matter of unravelling the mysteries of the devil sword. Even though it is still rather early, all of the heroes of the Profound Sky Continent have already gathered at the Sea God

Arena. We should start making a move as well.”

The sun burned brightly in the blue sky above and there was nothing unusual happening at all.

The floating Ocean Palace still remained deathly silent, and they did not see a single person as they made their way to the Sea God Arena. In front of them, an incredibly astonishing aura radiated from afar... That was definitely the Sea God Arena where all the peak powerhouses

of the Profound Sky Continent were gathered. It was also the place where the Devil Sword Conference was being held. It was roughly six to seven kilometers away from their current location.

This distance somewhat comforted Yun Che.

# Chapter 796 – The Young Master Of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region

---

“Oh? So it is Senior Ancient.”

Just as the four of them had taken to the air, they heard a clear and bright voice ring out from their right.

A young-looking man who was dressed in green appeared. He was of average build and his

looks were ordinary, it could be said that this man did not possess a single distinctive feature. His profound strength aura placed him at the latter stage of the Tyrant Profound Realm, but even in this Supreme Ocean Palace that was filled with strong individuals, his countenance was still filled with an unrestrained pride and haughtiness.

He unhurriedly took to the air and flew towards them. He arrived in front of Spiritual Master Ancient Blue as he cupped his hands and greeted him, "This junior greets you."

“Ah, so it was the Young Sword Master.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue gave an imperceptible nod of his head as he replied in an admiring voice, “I haven’t seen you in just slightly over a decade but the cultivation of the Young Sword Master has actually improved to this extent. Your esteemed father must definitely be satisfied with your progress.”

The three words “Young Sword Master” caused Yun Che and Xia Yuanba’s brows to twitch.

The young master of the  
Mighty Heavenly Sword  
Region... Xuanyuan Wendao!

“Hahahaha.” The young man only gave a great laugh before he replied, “The praise of Senior Ancient Blue causes this junior to feel extremely ashamed. Compared to your disciple Junior Brother Xia, junior’s cultivation is like the weak glow of a firefly against the light of the luminous moon. It’s not even worth mentioning.”

Even though his words were modest and self-deprecating, his tone was still filled with a haughty arrogance. His eyes swept across Yun Che, Xia Yuanba and Feng Xue'er and his smile deepened even further, "Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's Xia Yuanba, Divine Phoenix Sect's Princess Snow and Frozen Cloud Asgard's Yun Che. Your names have shaken the Profound Sky Continent and you are publicly acknowledged as the three strongest people of the young generation. This humble Xuanyuan Wendao of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region has long been fascinated by the three of you and I never thought that I would be able to see all of you at



the same time today. It has truly been my lucky day.”

Xia Yuanba shuffled forward and he was about to exchange pleasantries with Xuanyuan Wendao, but it was as if Xuanyuan Wendao had not seen his actions. His eyes remained fixed on Feng Xue'er as he said in a self-serving manner, “I have especially heard that Princess Snow not only has startling talent but that her beauty is also capable of bringing about the downfall of countries, possessing the title of the ‘number one beauty in the Profound Sky Continent’. For

your heavenly features to be concealed by a mere gauze, for a piece of cloth to hold back such brilliance, it is truly a regrettable thing. Is it possible for you to do me the honor of allowing me to witness the beautiful face of the number one beauty in the Profound Sky Continent?”

When it came to profound strength cultivation, any one of Yun Che's three companions were far stronger than Xuanyuan Wendao. However, Xuanyuan Wendao was not the least bit respectful towards any of them. Astonishingly, he

behaved as if his behavior was merely natural and nothing out of the ordinary.

Because he was Xuanyuan Wentian's son, the Young Sword Master of the Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, the future master of a Sacred Ground!

If he was simply being haughty and proud, it could still be overlooked because of his exalted status. But his attitude and the manner in which he spoke to Feng Xue'er was plainly rude!

And his attitude even seemed to be colored by contempt and provocation.

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue's brows twitched as he turned to the side but he did not speak. Besides his Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, the other three Sacred Grounds, Supreme Ocean Palace, Sun Moon Divine Hall, and Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, all had their own young masters. Among these three young masters, Xuanyuan Wendao possessed the most shrewdness and was also the

hardest to pin down... Just like his father, Xuanyuan Wentian.

However, he was convinced that given Yun Che's capability, he would be able to easily deal with the provocations of Xuanyuan Wendao.

Xia Yuanba's brows jumped and it seemed as if his rage had been triggered. If it was any other person who was accompanying him, he would scarcely be bothered to even notice this Xuanyuan Wendao. But since he also seemed to be targeting Yun

Che and Feng Xue'er, his rage practically shot through the roof in a mere instant... he did not care if this Xuanyuan Wendao was a Young Sword Master or whatever.

Feng Xue'er replied in a calm and gentle voice, "Xue'er's visage is fleeting and transient, it would not please you to look upon it. It will greatly disappoint the Young Sword Master."

"Of course my Xue'er has a face that can bring about the

downfall of nations.” Just as Feng Xue’er had stopped speaking, Yun Che had begun to speak in a calm and clear manner. He crossed both hands across his chest and even though he was speaking to Xuanyuan Wendao, Yun Che’s eyes were fixed on the ground as he refused to even look at him, “It’s just that if you really want to take a look, then this humble one only has one word for you.”

“Oh?” Xuanyuan Wendao asked in an intrigued tone, “What advice does Asgard Master Yun have for me?”

Yun Che's eyes were still fixed to the ground as his mouth curved into a smile that was not a smile. His voice was as cold and clear as water:

“Scram!”

That one word caused the horsetail whisk in Spiritual Master Ancient Blue's hand to tremble slightly while both Feng Xue'er and Xia Yuanba had nearly jumped in shock. “Hahahaha...” Xuanyuan Wendao was stunned for a



moment but he did not grow angry instead he started laughing loudly, “I have long heard that Asgard Master Yun was a person whose arrogance reached the heavens and who feared nothing under them. Even my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is of no significance to him. Now that I have met you in person, I see that all the rumors were indeed true. No wonder two of the elders of my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region were pathetically flipped upside down by Asgard Master Yun. I even heard that the beloved daughter of our Ninth Elder nearly died at your hands.”

“Heh.” Yun Che gave a cold and low laugh before replying, “Since you know all of this, then why haven’t you taken a hike yet!? There are no guarantees that I won’t bury you right here and now!”

Xuanyuan Wendao’s expression finally underwent a small change.

He could faintly feel that Yun Che’s words were not pure intimidation or bravado, but they truly indicated that there

was a possibility that he would kill him right here and now!

Given Yun Che's power, killing him would be as easy as squashing an ant!

Even though Xuanyuan Wentian had warned him to not come into contact with Yun Che before the Devil Sword Conference began and to not give him any reason to feel suspicious, the moment he saw Yun Che, he could not resist the urge to show off his might and prestige as the Young Sword

Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Half of it was because he pitied the Yun Che who was about to become their plaything and the other half was so he could look upon the true features of Feng Xue'er, the person who was said to be the "number one beauty in the Profound Sky Continent".

But Xuanyuan Wendao had forgotten one important thing from all the rumors that described Yun Che, because what all the rumors mentioned about him was that he was "a lunatic who was capable of doing anything"!

Killing the young master of  
Mighty Heavenly Sword  
Region... This was something  
that no one would dare to do  
and it was even something that  
no one would dare to talk or  
even think about.

But Yun Che was definitely an  
exception to this rule!

He was even capable of taking  
on the entire Divine Phoenix  
Sect all by himself! For him to  
suddenly kill the young master  
of Mighty Heavenly Sword

Region within Supreme Ocean Palace... He was definitely capable of doing that!

As his heart began to shake with fear and terror, Xuanyuan Wendao's aura swiftly grew much weaker. His insulting haughtiness had been completely punctured by Yun Che's words. His face was fixed in a frozen smile as he replied, "Since Asgard Master Yun is not being welcoming towards this humble one, then it's fine! Farewell!"

It was clear that Xuanyuan Wendao had been terrified, because when he faced Yun Che's words and his faint killing intent, Xuanyuan Wendao, who was normally not even afraid of the Four Holy Masters, did not even dare to say anything nasty before he left. He was afraid of provoking a "lunatic" like Yun Che who did not follow any of the rules of common sense.

Xuanyuan Wendao had flown a good distance away before he turned around and said in a bland voice, "Asgard Master Yun, I also forgot to congratulate you on making it out of the

Moon Slaughter Devil Nest alive. Because it would truly be a pity if you missed this Devil Sword Conference as a result. I believe this Devil Sword Conference will be one of the most unforgettable events of your life.”

Xuanyuan Wendao’s expression instantly turned sinister the moment he turned his face away. He viciously muttered to himself, “This young master has lived for so many years but I have yet to see a fellow as arrogant as he is!”



“Yun Che... This young master originally held some pity in his heart towards you. But since you are actively courting death, this young master will be generous enough to personally bestow upon you the fate you so richly deserve!”

Xuanyuan Wendao pathetically left the scene after that. Xia Yuanba asked Yun Che in a shocked voice, “Brother-in-law, is there some grievance between him and you?”

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue

also turned his face towards them.

“...” Yun Che gave a deep sigh before slowly shaking his head, “Let’s make our way to the Sea God Arena first, you will very soon... understand exactly what is going on.”

“Ah!” Xia Yuanba nodded his head before exclaiming, “Brother-in-law, that person is the young master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, a future master of a Sacred Ground. I reckon that Brother-in-law is the

only person on this earth who would dare speak to him in such a way... Moreover, I could sense that Brother-in-law truly wanted to take action and kill him just now.”

“Let’s be off.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue said, “From the aura that is radiating from our destination, I can sense that most of the heroes of the realm have already gathered in that place. So even if we arrived now, we would still be rather late.”

The Platform, otherwise knows

as the “ Island”. It was named in such a way because it floated in the heart of Supreme Ocean Palace, it was a floating island which was hovered higher than all the other floating islands. This place was normally a testing ground where the disciples of Supreme Ocean Palace would compete against one another but because it had been chosen as the place where the Devil Sword Conference would be held, they had started preparing this place months in advance.

The Sea God Arena was surrounded by tens of thousands

of seats. These seats were not truly erected and fixed to the ground, instead they were floating in place. Even though they hovered in the empty air, they were supported by some invisible force, and they were stable and unmoving. In fact, even if a strong profound practitioner wanted to destroy them, they would not find it an easy task.

The closer they drew to the Sea God Arena, the more astonishing the aura that came from those powerhouses became. Whether it was Yun Che, Xia Yuanba or Feng

Xue'er... or anyone who had come to participate in the Devil Sword Conference, this was the first time in their lives that they had witnessed so many experts gathered in one place.

“What an alarming atmosphere!” Yun Che exclaimed.

“That’s only natural.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue’s expression was also colored with surprise. Even though he had lived for more than a thousand years, this was also the first time he had

witnessed such an astonishing spectacle, “Five hundred Monarchs and six thousand Overlords of the Profound Sky Continent have been gathered for this Devil Sword Conference. This event is so grand that it is completely unprecedented.”

“Ah?” Feng Xue’er let out a startled gasp, “Five hundred Monarchs... six thousand Overlords...”

Yun Che also sucked in a breath of cold air before speaking in a low voice, “So all of the

Monarchs and powerful Overlords in the Profound Sky Continent must be gathered in this place.”

Before he had reached the level of Monarch, he had definitely never imagined and would never have believed that there were actually five hundred Monarchs in the Profound Sky Continent, individuals who represented the very peak of power within the land.

“That is right.” Xia Yuanba nodded his head, “Almost all of



Absolute Monarch Sanctuary's Monarchs and Overlords who are at the sixth level and above have gathered here today. There are only three lower ranking elders who stayed behind to guard our Sacred Ground. The other Sacred Grounds have more or less made the same arrangements. The Divine Phoenix Sect should also have mobilized all of their Monarchs... even Little Sister Xue'er's great grandfather has come to this place."

"Great grandfather?" Yun Che's face was shocked, "Xue'er, is this the person that you told me

about before? Senior... Feng Zukui?”

“Mn!” Feng Xue’er lightly nodded her head, “Great Grandfather is normally meditating at a hidden location and he very rarely makes an appearance. So I didn’t think that I’d see even Great Grandfather here this time.”

“Heh heh.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue gave a tepid laugh before speaking, “For profound practitioners who have reached the level of Monarch, the words

“secrets of the Divine Profound” is an enticement that none of them can resist... Even if they know that it is extremely likely that it is a lie.”

The Platform was already right before their eyes and they could see thousands of people seated on those floating seats. Even the most unimpressive individual in this group was someone who was able to shake the heavens and the earth if they were among the Seven Nations.

“Little friend Yun, the seats of

the Devil Sword Conference are organized according to the powers and groups who are gathered here. You have come here on representing Frozen Cloud Asgard but you have come here by yourself and to sit by yourself would simply be too cold and cheerless. So would you like to sit with our Absolute Monarch Sanctuary?" Spiritual Master Ancient Blue said with a faint laugh.

Yun Che thought about it for a split second before nodding his head appreciatively, "Then this junior gladly accepts your invitation."

“Xue’er, I’ll be sitting with Yuanba over where the people of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary are seated later. You should return to your royal father’s side for now.” Yun Che turned towards Feng Xue’er as he spoke, his words causing both Xia Yuanba and Spiritual Master Ancient Blue to wear shocked looks on their faces.

“Ah? But I want to be with Big Brother Yun.” Feng Xue’er said in a mystified voice.

“I know.” Yun Che replied with a faint smile, “But you are still a member of the Divine Phoenix Sect after all and you are even the Divine Phoenix Sect’s most important Princess Snow. The Devil Sword Conference has gathered all of the strongest profound practitioners and powers within the Profound Sky Continent. If you are seen sitting with another power by all of these people, it will definitely cause the Divine Phoenix Sect to lose face and the mood of your royal father and all your clansmen will definitely be affected. So...”

Yun Che's words sounded perfectly reasonable so Feng Xue'er was momentarily left at a loss, but after that she cheerfully smiled and said, "I'll listen to Big Brother Yun. Big Brother Yun isn't only good to Xue'er but he also thinks of Xue'er's sect as well. If Royal Father and the others hear about this, they will definitely be very moved as well."

The four of them quickly flew to the Sea God Arena. Feng Xue'er detected and followed the Phoenix auras that were radiating from the seats and she very quickly found the Divine

Phoenix Sect. She descended to them and sat at Feng Hengkong's side.

Under the direction of Spiritual Master Ancient Blue, Yun Che was seated among the people of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. He sat with Xia Yuanba in the very last row.

As expected, the three of them had instantly drawn the attention of all the strong individuals that were gathered there... the one who drew the most attention of all was Yun



Che. Under the riveted gazes of all who were present, the entire gathering instantly fell silent.

# Chapter 797 – Devil Sword Conference (1)

---

There were over five hundred people from Absolute Monarch Sanctuary who were seated with him. Yun Che used his spiritual perception to quickly sweep the vicinity and even though he was already prepared for the result, he still felt a jolt of shock shoot through his body. If he did not count Xia Yuanba within these five hundred odd people, there were actually still one hundred and sixty three Monarchs among them!

The other four hundred odd people were all Overlords who were at the seventh level or above!

This was the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary who was not only the head of the Four Sacred Grounds but also had a legacy which had lasted for ten thousand years!!

It would require at least six or seven Guardian Families of the Illusory Demon Realm to combat just one Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.

After Spiritual Master Ancient Blue had taken his seat, the first row was filled with just twelve people!

Every single one of these twelve people were dressed similarly, all of them had white hair and white beards, they all held a horsetail whisk in one hand. All of them exuded extremely robust and mighty auras, especially the three who were seated in the very center of the first row. When Yun Che's spiritual perception came into contact with the auras of these three people, it felt as if he had been drawn into a boundless

ocean, a vast expanse whose limits he could not see.

These three people...

“The twelve people who are seated at the very front are the Twelve Spiritual Masters of our Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.” After Xia Yuanba noticed the direction of Yun Che’s gaze, he bent down and whispered in his ear, “The three people seated in the very center are the ones that I mentioned before. Spiritual Master Bitter Agony, Spiritual Master Nine Lamentations and

Spiritual Master Detached Heart. The three other level ten Monarchs that exist within Absolute Monarch Sanctuary other than the Lord Saint Emperor!”

Yun Che faintly nodded his head and said, “Experts who are at this level have profound energy that is as fierce as lightning and as strong as mountains. But it seems like the powerhouses who belong to Absolute Monarch Sanctuary are a different breed from the rest.”

“That is because the core of our Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s profound art is something called the ‘Sacred Heart’. The mightier your profound strength is and the more you comprehend that profound art, the fewer worldly desires and passions you will have.” Xia Yuanba replied before whispering something else, “Actually within Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, I am considered a complete freak as well.”

“Purging your worldly desires and clearing your heart?” At that moment, Yun Che remembered that Absolute

Monarch Sanctuary had also been among the powers that had invaded the Illusory Demon Realm. After which he gave a faint smile, “Perhaps most of their worldly desires and passions may fade but their lust for profound strength was not deadened in the slightest. Otherwise they would not have come out in force to participate in this Devil Sword Conference.”

When he had observed the Absolute Monarch Sanctuary’s Twelve Spiritual Masters, a few hundred threads of profound energy that originated from the members of Absolute Monarch



Sanctuary had also swept across his body. However, nobody came forward to speak with him and none of the Twelve Spiritual Masters or the elders of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary who were sitting in front turned around to look at him. All of their attention was focused on the Devil Sword Conference that was to be held below them.

“Brother-in-law, there’s something that I don’t understand.” Xia Yuanba whispered to Yun Che, “Why did you ask Little Sister Xue’er to separate from us?”

He naturally did not believe that Yun Che had done all of this for the sake of the Divine Phoenix Sect and their dignity.

Yun Che inhaled deeply before he faintly closed his eyes and sent Xia Yuanba a focused sound transmission, “Xiao Yun has been missing for the last three days.”

“What!” Xia Yuanba was extremely shocked and he nearly jumped to his feet but he maintained his posture and

hurriedly sent a sound transmission back, “What exactly happened? Who did it?”

“Given the ability of Xiao Yun, his wife and Number One Under Heaven who was watching over them, there are not many people in the Profound Sky Continent who could steal Xiao Yun away soundlessly and without leaving a trace.”

Xia Yuanba’s brows sunk, “The Four Great Sacred Grounds! Could it be Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!?”

He finally begun to understand why Yun Che had been so hard and cold towards Xuanyuan Wendao.

“In all likelihood.” Yun Che faintly sighed, “When we met Xuanyuan Wentian on the way to the Moon Slaughter Devil Nest, the look he had given me and the words he had spoken made me feel like something fishy was going on.”

“Outrageous!” Xia Yuanba balled his fists in rage, the green

veins on his forehead standing out, “In the end, Mighty Heavenly Sword Region is still one of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. To think that they would do such thing, eh? No, that’s not right. Why would they even kidnap Xiao Yun in the first place? What reason would they have?”

“It is very likely that my status as a son of the Illusory Demon Realm’s Yun Family has been discovered. So they are also likely aware of Xiao Yun’s status as well. Other than that, there is no other reason I can think of right now.” Yun Che said in a

low voice.

These words caused Xia Yuanba to suddenly realize just how serious the current situation had become. It was definitely no ordinary situation right now. He grabbed Yun Che's shoulders while he whispered in an anxious voice, "Since it's very likely your identity has been exposed, you can't stay here any longer! You should know that the Illusory Demon Realm is a place that has been demonized in the Profound Sky Continent. Furthermore, all the heroes of the realm have been gathered here today. If this matter gets

exposed publicly, you will be attacked from all sides!”

“I know but I can’t abandon Xiao Yun.”

These words caused Xia Yuanba’s heart to go cold. He immediately understood that as long as this reason remained, there was nothing he could say that would convince Yun Che to leave.

“Yuanba, you don’t need to be too worried.” Yun Che said in a

calm manner, “The situation may not be as bad as it looks. I still have the Primordial Profound Ark with me. As long as its existence isn’t exposed as well, I will be able to use it to make complete withdrawal, no matter what happens. So let’s just quietly observe the situation for now.”

“However, if the worst case scenario does happen, you must remember to keep your distance from me Yuanba! Don’t forget, the other three Sacred Grounds are hatefully jealous that Absolute Monarch Sanctuary has gotten their hands on a



disciple who possesses the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins. Even within Absolute Monarch Sanctuary itself, those foster children of the Saint Emperor and their supporters definitely view you as a thorn in their side. If my identity is really exposed to the world and you attempt to protect me, they will be able to label you as a 'demon' as well. So at that time, you definitely mustn't..."

At this time, Yun Che's brows suddenly furrowed and his eyes instantly went cold. This was because he felt an icy-cold killing intent lock on to his

body.

“Yun Che, you little punk!  
Hand over your life!!”

The sudden thunderous outburst shocked all the powerhouses that were present. A green-robed old man had flown up from the seats that were to the right of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and he was swooping towards Yun Che like a great eagle.

Furthermore, Yun Che had

never seen this person before.

This matter had happened too abruptly. Moreover, no one had expected that someone would dare to cause trouble at the venue the Devil Sword Conference was being held. Given that Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was seated right next to the seats where the interloper had emerged from, the green-robed old man was practically in front of Yun Che seconds after his furious shout had pierced the air. His profound energy turned into a sword as he prepared to deal a fatal blow to Yun Che. Even if other people wanted to

stop him, they would not have the opportunity to.

Before Yun Che had even moved, Xia Yuanba had exploded into a flurry of violence. He let out a furious yell as his fist exploded outwards.

Boom!!

A ring of energy pulsed outwards from the point of impact as it tore apart the clouds above. The powers of two Monarchs smashed against one

another but the deadlock would not last for long. Xia Yuanba's face was dark and overcast while alarm had appeared on the face of the green-robed old man. It was as if he could scarcely believe that his power had been so easily blocked by a junior like Xia Yuanba.

“Get lost!!”

Xia Yuanba gave another furious yell as his already thick and muscular arms grew even thicker. The power exploding out from his fist instantly

transformed from a windstorm into a hurricane.

Bang!!

The sword beam that the green-robed old man had made out of profound energy was instantly shattered. It was as if his entire body had been smashed by a gigantic hammer as he was thrown backwards tens of meter before he could bring his body to a halt. The green-robed old man's face had gone white as sheet after he had taken that blow.

Furthermore, Xia Yuanba had only pushed back a little. He advanced with a as the exploding energies that swirled around his body caused countless profound practitioners to hold their breath in amazement. There were also many of them who had gone pale with shock, mirroring the reaction of the green-robed old man.

Even though Yun Che did not recognize this green-robed old man, his name was known throughout the Four Great

Sacred Grounds.

This was an elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! Furthermore, he was ranked within the top ten elders of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region!

His profound strength cultivation was at the seventh level of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Yet he had been blown away by a single punch from Xia Yuanba, ceding the advantage to him!



Countless deeply shocked gazes landed on Xia Yuanba's body as more than a few people sucked in a cold breath of air. Only the strongest of the strong within the Profound Sky Continent had the privilege to enter the Sea God Arena. So everyone here had naturally heard the news that a disciple who possessed the Tyrannical Emperor's Divine Veins had appeared in Absolute Monarch Sanctuary. Furthermore, that disciple had become a Monarch when he was barely twenty years of age.

However all of this was just hearsay and many people were witnessing the reality of Xia Yuanba for the first time.

What just became a Monarch!? He was able to force a level seven Monarch back with a blow of his fist, so his strength was clearly at the latter stages of the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Even within the Four Great Sacred Grounds, that was the domain of the absolute strongest!

He was already so terrifying at a tender age of twenty, so no one was able to imagine what kind of monster he would be one hundred years later! Among the disciples of similar age in the other three Sacred Grounds, they would not be able to find a single person who was fit to even carry his shoes, much less be compared to him!

All the twelve Spiritual Masters of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary turned their heads and silently nodded. Their expressions were devoid of shock and only faint smiles and a vivid appreciation and admiration could be seen on

their faces. They were all pleased that Xia Yuanba's profound strength had improved by leaps and bounds once again within this short period of time.

Spiritual Master Ancient Blue slowly stood up and spoke in a calm and unhurried manner, "Xuanyuan Jue, as an elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, what reason would provoke you to suddenly raise your hand against a junior?"

The name Xuanyuan Jue caused Yun Che's brows to

twitch: It was him after all!

The Ninth Elder of Mighty  
Heavenly Sword Region,  
Xuanyuan Jue! Xuanyuan  
Yufeng's father, Ling Yun and  
Ling Jie's grandfather!

“Hmph!” After being beaten  
back by Xia Yuanba's fist, the  
shock in Xuanyuan Jue's heart  
had long ago exceeded his rage  
but if he retreated just like this,  
he would definitely lose all of his  
dignity. He stared at Yun Che  
before roaring in rage, “This  
little punk Yun Che not only

harmed two elders of our Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, he even made a move to kill my beloved daughter before. If I don't rip him to pieces today, how can I still call myself a father!?"

Yun Che still remained seated while a cold smile spread across his face, "Xuanyuan Yufeng's heart was venomous and wicked while her methods were sinister and despicable! If not for the fact that she was Ling Jie's mother, even killing her ten times over would not allow me to fully vent my hatred towards her! In the end, I spared her life but if

you're not grateful to me, that's fine. But to think that you actually had the face to bark wildly in front of me right now!"

"You're looking for death, you young punk!" Yun Che's words had undoubtedly added fuel to the fire, causing Xuanyuan Jue to become even more enraged.

"I would request that the two gentlemen here let their anger subside."

A calm and languid voice rang

out from where Supreme Ocean Palace was seated. Zi Ji slowly stood to face him, a bland smile on his face, "The grievances that the two of you have against each other isn't something that an outsider should get involved in. All the heroes of the realm have gathered here today for one thing and one thing alone. And that is the Devil Sword Conference. So this matter brooks no further delay. Furthermore, even if it was not for the sake of the Devil Sword Conference but as all of you are honored guests of Supreme Ocean Palace, we are naturally unwilling to see a single one of our honoured guests encounter any distress. So I would have to



request that two of you show this old man some face. Even though you have a great grievance against each other, I would request that you settle it after the both of you have left Supreme Ocean Palace.”

After being blown away by Xia Yuanba's fist, Xuanyuan Jue's dignity had already gone down the drain. It was hard to get off the back of a tiger but Zi Ji's words had undoubtedly given him a pretext to back down gracefully. Xuanyuan Jue flung out the sleeve of his robe as he gave a furious snort, “Fine! For the sake of Zi Ji, I will let this

young punk live for a few more days. Yun Che, you young punk! I heard that your master is the Old Man Duotian who should have returned to the dust many ages ago and that he has the ability to traverse the heavens and divide the earth... hahahaha. Even if it was the Heavenly King himself, I wouldn't be afraid of him, much less some Old Man Duotian! But I do want to see just how he will keep you safe from me once the time comes!”

Yun Che, “...”

“Ridiculous!” Xia Yuanba said in a contemptuous voice, “If you want to touch a hair on my Brother-in-law’s head, you’ll have to get past me first! It’s too bad that you can’t even beat a junior like me. To think that your sense of shame would be so lacking that you would even dare to challenge my Brother-in-law’s master! Aren’t you afraid that you’ll become the laughing stock of the entire profound world!?”

“You!” Xuanyuan Jue stared at Xia Yuanba as he nearly spat a mouthful of blood out.

“Yuanba, do not be disrespectful.” Spiritual Master Ancient Blue chided him in a placid voice.

## Chapter 798 – Devil Sword Conference (2)

---

Xuanyuan Wendao took to the skies and arrived at Xuanyuan Jue's side, "Ninth Elder, this isn't the time to settle your personal grievances. Let's speak of this again once the Devil Sword Conference has ended."

He cupped his hands towards where Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was seated before saying, "The Ninth Elder loves his daughter with all of his heart. So in a fit of passion, he disturbed everyone from

Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, I beg for your forgiveness on his behalf... Ninth Elder, let's return to our seats."

He gave Yun Che a bland look before pulling Xuanyuan Jue back towards where Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was seated.

"Ninth Elder, you are being too rash! Father already gave strict orders that no one is allowed to make trouble with Yun Che before the Devil Sword Conference begins!" Xuanyuan

Wendao said in his sound transmission to Xuanyuan Jue.

“Hmph! I simply can’t understand this! Our Sword Master has clearly already uncovered all of his secrets so why are we still acting so skittishly!?” Xuanyuan Jue shot back, his rage coming to full boil.

“Father is not scared of Yun Che, but there is a very important reason for our current actions and orders. If you had really killed Yun Che,

that would have wrecked Father's grand plan! At that time..." Xuanyuan Wendao gave Xuanyuan Jue a bland look, his eyes filled with warning.

Xuanyuan Jue fought back a faint shiver that ran through his body.

"That old villain! Despite being an elder of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, he still dared to publicly attack Brother-in-law in this place!" Xia Yuanba said in a hot-tempered voice.



“Don’t bother about him. On the contrary, these are the kind of people that you don’t need to be afraid of.” Yun Che’s brows sank as he thought about the worst case scenario and simulated plans that would allow him to respond.

Because of the previous matter, the Sea God Arena was no longer calm and quiet. Instead, it began to buzz with the sound of conversation. Yun Che could guess what these people were talking about even if he could not hear them: Topics like Xia Yuanba, the grievance that Mighty Heavenly Sword Region

had with him and why Xuanyuan Jue astonishingly seemed to be completely unafraid of his rumored “master”.

The air suddenly grew cold as a sharp aura that was so cold that it seemed to come from the very depths of the netherworld suddenly pervaded the air. This caused all conversation to grind to a sudden halt, as if all words had been frozen.

Yun Che suddenly raised his head and looked in the

direction of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region. Three pitch-black figures appeared from the sky out of nowhere like ghosts.

All three people were dressed in black, their expressions were as stiff as corpses. Their brows were as long and thin as swords and every line on their faces was so stiff that it looked like they had been carved with a blade.

Yun Che was five hundred meters distant from them but he could not feel any energy radiating from them and he

could not see any vigor or life in their eyes either. Yun Che closed his eyes and he actually could not even recall the appearances of these three people. Furthermore, based on his spiritual perception alone, he was completely unable to sense that there were three people floating in space. The only thing he could sense were three keen swords with unrivalled sharpness!

“What dreadful sword intent!” Yun Che muttered to himself.

The entire atmosphere of the Sea God Arena had instantly frozen due to the arrival of these three people. Even the expressions of the gathered elders of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had faintly changed at the arrival of these three people.

“Sword Attendant Heartless, Sword Attendant Merciless, Sword Attendant Emotionless. The most terrifying existence in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region! The Three Sword Attendants!” Xia Yuanba said with furrowed brows. Even though there was still quite a distance between them, he still felt as if three

sharp swords were pressed against his throat. His body had completely tensed up unconsciously and even his breathing had become uneven, “Even though this is the first time I have seen them, no one else besides these three dreadful sword attendants could produce such extreme sword intent.”

Yun Che’s brows knit together... Even though the aggregate strength of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was the least of the Four Sacred Grounds, they had the most level ten Monarchs. They had four people at this level, drawing

even with Absolute Monarch Sanctuary.

Besides Sword Master Xuanyuan Wentian, the other three level ten Monarchs were the “Three Sword Attendants” that Xia Yuanba had told him about a few days ago!

They were a terrifying existence whose might was second only to the Four Sacred Masters!!

“I heard from Master that these

three people had purged all their worldly passions and desires from a very young age. They bent their hearts solely towards mastering the sword and their cultivation in the way of the sword has reached the highest peaks, a supreme realm of mastery where there is nothing that they cannot do. Even blades of grass and flying flowers are swords to them. With a thought, they can summon countless blades of sword energy. They are able to kill someone without leaving a single trace. It was said that if all three of them joined forces, they would be able to rival a leader of a Sacred Ground!”



Xia Yuanba's voice was low and deep. When he had brought up the Three Sword Attendants earlier, it had only been a cursory introduction. But right now, after learning about Yun Che's situation, his heart felt incredibly heavy when he introduced these three people yet again, .

The three men floated down from the sky and they sat down at the front of where Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was being seated. As the Young Sword Master, Xuanyuan

Wendao got up from his seat at the fastest speed possible to greet them, his attitude respectful and reverential.

From this act alone, one could see just how exalted their status were in Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.

Yun Che's gaze swept across the venue before his eyes landed on where Supreme Ocean Palace was being seated. The most eye-catching sight was those seven old people who sat at the very front. They were all sitting side

by side and they were dressed in the exact same clothes, but each of their outfits were of a different color.

The gathered elders of Supreme Ocean Palace were garbed in light blue, but these seven people were dressed in red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple! The way they were dressed seemed to represent all the colors of the rainbow!

Xia Yuanba followed Yun Che's gaze before speaking, "Those seven people are the Seven

Venerable Ones of Supreme Ocean Palace! Venerable Purple and Venerable Blue who are seated in the middle are both level ten Monarchs who are able to rival the Three Sword Attendants!”

Yun Che’s gaze went from the Seven Venerable Ones of Supreme Ocean Palace to Zi Ji.

Zi Ji’s seat was astonishingly in front of even the Seven Venerable Ones!

It was as if Zi Ji had felt Yun Che's gaze because he turned to look at him at the same time. He gave a small nod of his head and a faint smile.

To the right of Supreme Ocean Palace was the area Sun Moon Divine Hall was being seated. All of the people seated there wore clothes that were emblazoned with a sun and a moon. The five people who were seated in the very front looked ancient but the sun and moon emblazoned on their clothes glowed with a luminosity that almost seemed real. These five ancients sat together and the aura they

released was dense and primal. It was as if their auras had mingled to create an independent and small world, one which others would have no hope of stepping into.

“Those five people are Sun Moon Divine Hall’s Sun Moon Divine Envoys! They are Divine Envoy Heavens Equal, Divine Envoy Blazing Sun, Divine Envoy Moon Punisher, Divine Envoy Star Banisher and Divine Envoy Earth Turner respectively. Among these five, Divine Envoy Heavens Equal and Divine Envoy Blazing Sun are both level ten Monarchs. Divine

Envoy Heavens Equal is especially strong, he is the mightiest of the Five Divine Envoys. His title 'Heavens Equal' basically indicates that he is of equal status and position as the Heavenly Monarch Ye Meixie. The other three Divine Envoys are all level nine Monarchs!"

Xia Yuanba explained to Yun Che.

Divine Envoys? So they chose to use the name of the gods in their titles?

Yun Che gave a quiet and cold chuckle before shooting a glance towards Ye Xinghan who sat behind the five Sun Moon Divine Envoys.

The young divine hall master of Sun Moon Divine Hall would definitely not be absent from this Devil Sword Conference. Furthermore, he stared straight at Yun Che as well, his gaze full of venom and hate. When his eyes met with Yun Che's eyes, his pupils immediately contracted and he quickly averted his gaze but the muscles on his face continued to twitch and writhe.



Besides the Four Great Sacred Grounds, all the other powers from the Profound Sky Continent that were gathered here were all sitting ramrod straight, none of them moving a single muscle. Their expressions were nervous and tense, their breathing was moderate and shallow and even their whispering was done in the most cautious and discreet manners. All of these powers were naturally aware that the Four Great Sacred Grounds were the paramount existences within the Profound Sky Continent, but they had definitely never imagined that the true power of

the Sacred Grounds was actually this terrible.

Monarchs, the legends that existed in their hearts and minds, an existence that they might encounter once every thousand years. Hundreds of them had appeared in this place! It was an event that was so shocking that it was highly plausible that they would remain dazed for many days.

The entire Sea God Arena was shrouded in a gigantic curtain of light. Even Yun Che's eyes were

unable to penetrate that veil of light and see what lay within. But anyone would be able to guess that the eponymous devil sword of this Devil Sword Conference lay behind this curtain of light.

Time was flowing slowly but at this moment, the light in the sky suddenly dimmed by a fraction.

This small decrease in brightness was something that a normal person would definitely not be able to detect. But all those who were seated here were

the most powerful individuals in the Profound Sky Continent. Their spiritual perceptions were all extremely keen and many of them had raised their heads to the sky the moment the light had dimmed.

“Brother-in-law, quickly look!” Xia Yuanba said as he raised his head to the sky.

The blazing sun hung in the east but it slowly crept towards the center. However, an extremely short and slim black scar had appeared at the border

of the eastern sky!

“The fabled Thirteen Star Alignment... Is it really going to appear now?” Xia Yuanba muttered to himself. At the same time, the entire Sea God Arena began rumbling with noise.

In the eastern part of the Sea God Arena, a beam of sword energy pierced the heavens. It was as if a blazing meteor had descended from the sky, the light it gave off was so piercing that everyone was blinded for a moment. Under that light, a

green figure slowly appeared within the space that had been slashed open by that sword beam. He was all dressed in green and his sword might was boundless. Once he appeared, it was as if an emperor was arriving in all of his pomp and glory, causing the hearts and souls of all who were gathered to tremble with fear.

Following the arrival of this person, every single member of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, from the lowest disciple to the mightiest sword attendant, rose from their seats and bowed in greeting:

“The absolute sword of heaven’s might is peerless and unmatched in this world! We welcome the Sword Master!”

The Sword Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region—  
Xuanyuan Wentian!

“Hahahaha!”

Wild laughter rang out from the western section of the Sea God Arena which was directly

opposite Xuanyuan Wentian. Amidst this wild laughter, the empty air above that area suddenly shone with a glaring profound light, it was as if a burning sun was being born. On the other side, a luminous waning moon also appeared floating in the air. One sun and one moon instantly suppressed all the light in this area and even the real sun that hung in the eastern sky seemed dimmer under the light of this sun and moon.

A tall and upright figure slowly walked out between the light that was emitted from this sun



and moon. He was garbed in white and his eyes twinkled like cold stars as a mighty aura that rivalled Xuanyuan Wentian's descended from above. This caused all of the profound practitioners who were sitting in the western section of the Sea God Arena to shiver fiercely as they could barely resist the urge to kneel on the floor and prostrate themselves in worship.

“Of the blazing sun and punishing moon, the Heavenly Monarch equals the heavens! We greet the Heavenly Monarch!”

This time, all of the profound practitioners of Sun Moon Divine Hall had gotten to their feet before they kneeled down in obeisance.

“The Holy Master of Sun Moon Divine Hall, the one who possesses the title of ‘Heavenly Monarch’, Ye Meixie!?” Yun Che muttered to himself. Ye Meixie appeared to be a middle-aged man, he looked far younger than Yun Che had expected.

In the southern part of the Sea God Arena, a faint yellow light

descended from the skies right in front of where Absolute Monarch Sanctuary was seated. Within that yellow light, a frail and thin figure dressed in white clothes appeared.

The moment that weak and frail figure appeared, all of the spiritual masters, elders and disciples of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary... Xia Yuanba included, all swiftly stood to their feet as they clasped their hands and shouted a greeting:

“Absolute Monarch Saint

Emperor, ruler of the myriad boundaries! We welcome the Saint Emperor!”

More than one hundred Monarchs and four hundred Sovereigns shouted that greeting at the same time, the profound energy that shook the air was mighty indeed. Yun Che was extremely close by and he was still heavily injured, so he did not react in time to shield himself. He was so shaken by the profound energy that his chest felt heavy and his vision swam, his wounds nearly opening up again due to the impact.

The frail and thin man slowly turned around as he gave an extremely calm and placid smile to the gathered members of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary and made a gesture for them to return to their seats. The moment he turned around, Yun Che clearly saw his features as well and his heart was filled with shock and astonishment.

Huangji Wuyu, the Saint Emperor of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary, the leader of the Four Sacred Grounds! The man who was publically acknowledged as

the most powerful person in the  
Profound Sky Continent! As one  
of the supreme powers whose  
existence was legendary,  
everyone thought that he would  
definitely possess a matchless  
and majestic figure and that his  
aura would shake the heavens.

But what appeared in Yun Che's  
eyes was a frail and thin young  
man... who did not look to be  
more than sixteen years of age!

But his gaze was that of an  
ancient man, his eyes looked like  
they had seen the rise and fall of

a hundred ages.

Xuanyuan Wentian's aura was incomparably sharp, it was as if ten thousand swords had descended from the sky. Ye Meixie's aura was boundless and majestic and it seemed as if it could collapse the sky. Huangji Wuyu, on the other hand, projected an aura that was not tyrannical in the slightest, there was no attacking intent in it... Actually, Yun Che could not even sense the presence of any profound energy from his body. It was as if he was mere commoner who did not even practice the profound way.

Huangji Wuyu's gaze touched Yun Che and it lingered there for a second. After that, he turned towards the Sea God Arena and quietly stared at the curtain of light that shrouded it.

In the west, a gentle aura that surged with hidden power descended from the sky, enveloping the hearts and souls of everyone present. At that moment, the picture of a vast and boundless ocean appeared in everyone's hearts. This ocean was raging and frothing as huge waves soared to the heavens.



Before a figure had even appeared, the entire Supreme Ocean Palace had all risen to their feet in greeting:

“The supreme Sovereign of the Seas, she who has no limits!”

Supreme Ocean Palace—Sovereign of the Seas Qu Fengyi had arrived! She was still garbed in those blue skirts that Yun Che had seen her wearing but her expression was dignified and her aura was incomparably noble and grand.

In the east: Mighty Heavenly  
Sword Region—Sword Master  
Xuanyuan Wentian.

In the west: Sun Moon Divine  
Hall—Heavenly Monarch Ye  
Meixie.

In the south: Absolute Monarch  
Sanctuary—Saint Emperor  
Huangji Wuyu.

In the north: Supreme Ocean  
Palace—Sovereign of the Seas

Qu Fengyi.

The masters of the Profound Sky's Four Great Sacred Grounds, the current four true rulers of the Profound Sky Continent were all gathered in this Sea God Arena!

# Chapter 799 – Devil Sword Conference (3)

---

The Sea God Arena had fallen completely silent. The Four Sacred Masters were gathered in one place. Their power and prestige enough to cover the earth and the sky, and it was enough to intimidate the entire continent.

Sovereign of the Seas Qu Fengyi raised her head to the sky as she looked at the sun, which was slowly being marked with a black scar, before speaking in a solemn voice, “The Thirteen

Star Alignment is about to occur. All our preparations of the past few months have been for this moment alone. The heroes of the realm have also gathered at my Supreme Ocean Palace just for the sake of gazing upon this devil sword and attempting to uncover its secrets together. If the secret of the devil sword can truly be unveiled as per our wishes and desires, then it will definitely be a grand occasion for our Profound Sky Continent.”

Sovereign of the Seas Qu Fengyi looked at Huangji Wuyu. “Even though this event is being held

by Supreme Ocean Palace, the Devil Sword Conference is not something that belongs to us alone. It is an event for the entire profound world of the Profound Sky Continent. Brother Huangji, you have the most seniority between the four of us, and your voice also carries the most weight. Therefore, you are the person most suitable to preside over this Devil Sword Conference.”

“Heheh.” Huangji Wuyu gave a tepid laugh. “The devil sword was obtained by Sword Master Xuanyuan, so it is natural that his knowledge of it would be the

deepest. We should let Sword Master Xuanyuan host this event. He would naturally be even more suited to the task than I.”

“Alright then!” Xuanyuan Wentian gave a great laugh as he wholeheartedly accepted that suggestion. “Since this is the case, I, Xuanyuan Wentian, will gladly comply.”

As his voice faded, Xuanyuan Wentian raised his right palm and a pale white sword beam discharged from the center of

his palm and shot toward the sky.

In an instant, that sword beam had already grown more than three hundred meters long, transforming into a three hundred and thirty meter long profound sword in Xuanyuan Wentian's hand. After that, he shouted as he slashed down at the Sea God Arena below him.

Clang!!

The gigantic curtain of light



that shrouded the Sea God Arena was split open by a single slash from that profound sword. Light shattered as ice would shatter, becoming countless fragments that scattered all over the place. They disappeared into thin air in the blink of an eye, revealing the Sea God Arena that had been hidden from view.

Everyone's eyes turned toward the Sea God Arena. Following the disappearance of that curtain of light, the Sea God Arena was completely revealed.

The Sea God Arena was several kilometers wide, and at this moment, everyone was astonished to find a gigantic circular profound formation imprinted on it. The profound light that this profound formation radiated was not intense. It glowed brilliantly at times, and grew dark at others. The rate at which the light alternated was exceptionally slow. The borders of the profound formation stretched to the edges of the Sea God Arena, practically covering every inch of it.

The center of the profound

formation was also the center of the Sea God Arena. A pitch black sword was there, gently floating in midair. The body of the sword was as black as ink. It was roughly six and a half feet long and one foot wide. It had a square hilt, and the half of the blade near the hilt had two irregular markings that ran down its length. If one looked closely, they would see that the markings were a crescent blood moon that had been cut in half!

Aside from all of these things, the sword did not emit an aura, nor did any power or light radiate from it. Instead,

everyone felt as if it were completely lifeless.

“So that is... the legendary Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?” Xia Yuanba could not help but exclaim aloud before continuing in a soft voice, “It doesn’t seem very extraordinary to me.”

Yun Che’s gaze was completely fixed on the sword. His eyes roamed across the body of the sword before finally coming to rest where the sigil of the blood colored broken moon was.

The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had said that the true name of this sword was the “Moon Slaughter Devil Sword”!

Furthermore, this blood colored broken moon sigil also fit the name of “Moon Slaughter”... there was no mistaking it!

The public may know of this sword as the “Heavenly Sin Divine Sword,” but only Yun Che knew that this was a completely authentic ancient devil sword!

He just did not know if the devil soul that had been stored in the blade still existed!

The devil soul of the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's son!

“What is that profound formation below it?” Yun Che asked in a low voice.

“Its function should be to gather profound energy,” Xia Yuanba replied. “This profound formation was already being prepared half a year ago. During

these last six months, Lord Saint Emperor spent most of his time at Supreme Ocean Palace specifically for the sake of setting up this profound formation. It should have been the same with the other Sacred Masters as well.”

Yun Che, “...”

Yun Che’s brows furrowed slightly, and he let out a long sigh. According to the memories that Jasmine had retrieved from Fen Juechen, the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword had been sealed

away by the Eternal Night Royal Family for generations. The entire clan had considered it a forbidden object, and no one was allowed to get close enough to touch it. Furthermore, they periodically would strengthen the seal.

Breaking the seal on the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was the goal of this Devil Sword Conference.

Furthermore, if it weren't for the seal that had been made by the Eternal Night Royal Family,



Mighty Heavenly Sword Region would not have been baffled for over a thousand years. In the end, they had no choice but to organize this Devil Sword Conference and borrow the power of all the mighty individuals in the land.

Could it be that the Evil God's seal still lingered on the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword?

No, that could not be the case! Even though the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's vitality and soul had been

completely shattered, he was obviously still able to escape the Evil God's seal. Furthermore, since the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign's sword, it would naturally be on his person and be one with his body. If the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign could escape that seal, then there would be no reason for the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword to still be affected by said seal.

Yun Che pondered this conundrum for a while before a thought suddenly sprang into his head. The Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign had said that

the Moon Slaughter Devil Sword, which was also the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, had been personally tossed into the Profound Sky Continent by him because he wanted to use it to gather information about the outside world. However, the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword independently severed the spiritual connection it had with the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign after he threw it out...

Furthermore, once a sword completely submitted to its master, it would be impossible for the sword to take the initiative to sever the spiritual

connection it had with its master!

This means that the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was still an independent existence at that time, and the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign was not its true master!

Or could it be that the Evil God's seal, which had lasted for a million years, had destroyed the spiritual contract that had been established between the Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign and his sword?

“This sword is, indeed, a devil sword, and it is also known as the ‘Heavenly Sin Divine Sword’!” Xuanyuan Wentian proclaimed in a clear, loud voice.

“Furthermore, the name ‘Heavenly Sin Divine Sword’ came from the Eternal Night Royal Family that was destroyed a thousand years ago.”

The faces of everyone present were filled with shock and astonishment. Especially among the Four Sacred Grounds, the

name “Eternal Night Royal Family” had always been taboo. The main culprit behind the destruction of the Eternal Night Royal Family was Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, so no one would have ever thought that Xuanyuan Wentian would voluntarily bring up the Eternal Night Royal Family.

“This matter occurred a thousand years ago, so it is natural that very few people know of the ‘Eternal Night Royal Family’. However, all of you who are gathered here today are also the overlords of the Profound Sky Continent, so I’m sure that

you have heard of it before.”

Those who knew of the Eternal Night Royal Family would roughly know the truth behind its destruction. Yet Xuanyuan Wentian’s voice still rang out as clear as a heavenly bell despite the scrutiny of the entire audience. His expression did not change. It was as if he were talking about a name that was not relevant to him at all. “The Eternal Night Royal Family was initially only a mediocre power, but they swiftly rose to the top after they obtaining this sword ten thousand years ago. In a short thousand years, they had

were able to lord over the  
Profound Sky Continent and be  
considered equal to the Four  
Great Sacred Grounds. At that  
time, the whole world knew that  
the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword  
must have been hiding some  
world-shaking secret.

“The Eternal Night Royal  
Family’s profound art was  
known as the ‘Eternal Night  
Illusory God Record’, and when  
they circulated their profound  
energy, it was pitch black. It was  
a baleful, malevolent energy that  
was extremely similar to the  
powers possessed by devils and  
fiends of legend. In the end,



however, a profound art is still a profound art. Whether or not a profound art is righteous or demonic is not dependent on the profound art, but the person using the profound art. This was why no one ever questioned whether or not the Eternal Night Royal Family had fallen to a demonic path and become degenerate. However, a thousand years ago, the Eternal Night Royal Family kept committing grievous sins that could not be forgiven or tolerated by heaven and earth. Since the Sacred Grounds were responsible for protecting the Profound Sky Continent through the generations, we had no choice but to join hands to

destroy the Eternal Night Royal Family forever.”

Who was the true evil, who was the one who had fallen to a demonic path, and who had committed crimes that were unforgivable to heaven and earth? These were facts that the other three Sacred Grounds knew well. There were even many people outside of the Sacred Grounds who were also aware of the truth. Yet Xuanyuan Wentian was able to skillfully continue without skipping a beat without a shred of guilt showing on his face. On the contrary, his face was filled

with a fervent righteousness.

Yun Che stared at Xuanyuan Wentian's face, but he did not find it comical or despicable. Instead, he felt a cold chill seize his heart.

This was an extremely terrifying man... one more terrifying than any person he had ever met.

“At that time, the Eternal Night King was known as Ye Mufeng. Even though he possessed

considerable profound strength, he was still weaker than any one of the Four Sacred Masters. However, when he brought out the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword in the end, his strength actually erupted and no one could face him. In the end, it took the combined power of the Four Sacred Masters and nineteen of the strongest elders from the Sacred Grounds to narrowly defeat him. Even then, we had to pay a terrible price. All Four Sacred Masters were heavily wounded, while ten of the nineteen elders were dead with the remaining injured as well.

The words uttered by Xuanyuan Wentian caused shock and alarm to appear on the faces of a majority of the audience. All of the people present were familiar with the name “Eternal Night Royal Family”, and all of them knew that this clan had been destroyed by the combined might of the Four Great Sacred Grounds. Yet no one but the Four Great Sacred Grounds knew the details concerning the demise of the Eternal Night King.

They had also never dreamed that the Eternal Night King had become that strong all those

years ago. To think that the Four Sacred Masters who lorded over the realm and nineteen of the most powerful elders from the Sacred Grounds had just barely defeated him!

The Four Sacred Masters had reached the very peak of the tenth level of the Sovereign Profound Realm. It could be said that, within the Sovereign Profound Realm, none were their equal!

To think that the Eternal Night King of a thousand years ago

was that terrifying. Could it be that... he had reached the legendary Divine Profound Realm?

Yun Che's brows furrowed as he coldly absorbed Xuanyuan Wentian's words. At this moment, he felt a cold, bone-piercing, and yet strangely familiar killing intent wash over him. Although the other party was trying its best to conceal it, Yun Che was extremely sensitive to killing intent, so it was not able to escape his spiritual perception.

Yun Che's gaze swept across the Sea God Arena as he attempted to locate the origin of that killing intent as quickly as possible. His eyes eventually settled on a familiar figure.

It was Fen Juechen!!

Fen Juechen was dressed in a set of black clothes, quietly sitting in an inconspicuous corner at the very edge of the venue. His expression was cold and gloomy, and his gaze alone would cause one's heart to throb.



“Fen Juechen... so he came after all!” Yun Che muttered to himself. Before this, all of his attention had been focused on the Four Great Sacred Grounds and how to deal with the approaching crisis. This, coupled with the fact that Fen Juechen had clearly suppressed his own presence, made Yun Che completely fail to notice him until now.

Fen Juechen’s goal in coming to this place was obviously the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. The only problem was, Yun Che

could not figure out what actions he would take to get it. Even though Fen Juechen now possessed great power, in comparison to four major powers who had flourished for ten thousand years, his personal strength was merely a drop of water in the ocean.

On the other hand, Yun Che was even more curious about one thing. Why would Mighty Heavenly Sword Region specifically invite Fen Juechen to participate in this Devil Sword Conference? Was it merely because his strength had fit the criteria that allowed him

to participate?

Feng Juechen's senses were also extremely sharp. When Yun Che looked in his direction, his gaze shot back at him almost immediately. A pair of eyes that looked like they belonged on a vicious wolf stared at Yun Che as a bone-piercing hatred swiftly took shape within them.

Yun Che's brows twitched as he stared at Fen Juechen's eyes, shock blooming in his heart.

He could feel the hatred that Fen Juechen held toward him... It was exactly the same as every other occasion they had clashed and had not diminished in the slightest. This time, however there was only hatred... yet no killing intent!?

What was going on? Yun Che's heart was filled with doubt and suspicion... Fen Juechen's desire to kill him had always been extremely strong. His desire to kill Yun Che was one of the reasons for his current pain-filled existence. Furthermore, he had never concealed his killing intent in front of him...

But this time there was only hatred and no killing intent!?

What's going on... Or is there some mistake with my perception?

While Yun Che was shocked and confused, Feng Juechen withdrew his icy cold gaze. His gaze grew hard as he fixed his eyes upon the pitch black sword that floated in the middle of the Sea God Arena. He did not look at Xuanyuan Wentian, nor did he look at any of the other

Sacred Masters... because he was afraid that he would not be able to prevent his extreme hatred and killing intent from leaking out.

Xuanyuan Wentian continued to speak. “After he took out the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, the Eternal Night King’s strength was extraordinary and completely surpassed the boundaries of the Sovereign Profound Realm. Furthermore, even though his physical body had been destroyed in the struggle, and he had been defeated in combat, his soul refused to die. According to the

legends, being able to exist as a soul after one's body has perished is an ability that is gained when one enters the Divine Profound Realm. It is definitely not something one can achieve with the power of a Monarch.

“So it stands to reason that the strength displayed by Eternal Night King Ye Mufeng after taking out the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was definitely a strength that surpassed the boundaries of the Sovereign Profound Realm and stepped into the legendary Divine Profound Realm!”

The Sea God Arena immediately started to buzz with noise as the face of every person present was filled with astonishment and expectation—Battling the Four Sacred Masters and nineteen other elders from the Four Sacred Grounds alone, and being able to endure as a soul after his body perished... these things clearly proved that the Eternal Night King's strength had definitely transcended the Sovereign Profound Realm!

Furthermore, all of this



information had been conveyed to them by the Sword Master of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region Xuanyuan Wentian while the three other Sacred Masters looked on. How could it possibly be false!

It seemed as though the “secrets of the Divine Profound” were not just empty words and false promises!

“The rise of the Eternal Night Royal Family occurred because they obtained the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. The enormous

change in Ye Mufeng also happened after he took out the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword. Therefore, it was clear that all of these secrets were contained within the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword.

“After we had punished Ye Mufeng one thousand years ago, we greedily lusted after the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword, hoping to decipher the secret behind Ye Mufeng’s sudden increase in strength. However, the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword was lost in that vicious battle and went missing for the past thousand years. Fortunately, my

Mighty Heavenly Sword Region managed to inadvertently stumble upon it in a remote wasteland one year ago...”

“This Xuanyuan Wentian is clearly full of bullshit, yet he acts so calm and composed as if his conscience were clear! His skin is unbelievably thick!” Xia Yuanba growled through gritted teeth. “My master had told me they had long suspected that the missing Heavenly Sin Divine Sword had fallen into the hands of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region a thousand years ago. All those years ago, Xuanyuan Wentian used despicably evil

methods to destroy the Eternal Night Royal Family and obtain the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword!”

“Let’s continue listening to his speech. He planned carefully and methodically for today’s performance,” Yun Che said in a low voice. A profound shrewdness, terrifying cunning... despicably evil methods... a profound strength and an organization that stood at the very summit of power... Yun Che was beginning to feel an increasingly heavy pressure emanate from Xuanyuan Wentian.

The sky slowly grew darker. Yun Che raised his head and saw that the black scar in the sky nearly covered a tenth of the scorching sun.

# Chapter 800 – Devil Sword Conference (4)

---

“After we obtained the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword by chance, my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region had selfish thoughts and we desired to keep the secrets of the devil sword for ourselves. However, the sword was covered by a strong and peerless seal, even the full might of my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region was unable to do anything to it. It was as if the very heavens themselves had willed that the secrets of the devil sword were not for one person to monopolize. Instead,

it was to be shared with the heroes of the realm, to the benefit of the profound way of our Profound Sky Continent!”

“Hahahaha, Sword Master Xuanyuan has truly spoken well.” Heavenly Monarch Ye Meixie interjected with a great laugh, “If this devil sword truly contains the mysteries of the Divine Profound and we manage to uncover it, then all the invited heroes of the realm will benefit greatly from it. Our Profound Sky Continent’s profound way will also break through to another realm, attaining the transcendence that even our

forefathers could not reach. When that time comes, the people of the Profound Sky Continent will no longer have to worry about the demons of the Illusory Demon Realm staring at them with greedy eyes. So if this truly comes to pass, it will be a grand event that will be spoken of for ten thousand years. It will be an event that will be etched in the history and consciousness of our entire continent, not merely confined to those of us who pursue the way of the profound.”

The demons of the Illusory Demon Realms were the ones



who were staring at you with covetous eyes, huh? Yun Che's eyes sank as a cold and disdainful smile appeared on his face.

If he had never been to the Illusory Demon Realm, he would have firmly believed like the rest of the Profound Sky Continent that the Four Great Sacred Grounds had always been defending the continent from the predations of the Illusory Demon Realm, and he would have no doubt that they deserved the mantle of "Sacred Ground".

But the truth that he had witnessed and heard about in the Illusory Demon Continent had been the complete opposite of what he heard his entire life!

Sovereign of the Seas Qu Fengyi's expression remained as cold and remote as calm water, nary a ripple of emotion showing on her face. Huangji Wuyu did not go along with this charade either. He briefly raised his head before speaking in a calm and dry voice, "Half of the scorching sun has been hidden away and the yang energy in the

air is gradually dissipating. The time is at hand. Let us prepare to begin.”

Xuanyuan Wentian gently nodded his head. His body began to slowly ascend as he spoke in a bright and clear voice, “The Thirteen Star Alignment. This is a strange and marvelous natural phenomenon that generally occurs every three thousand years. In a short fifteen minutes, this natural phenomenon will appear once more. At that time, the entire Profound Sky Continent will be darkened as yin energy covers the heavens. It is also at that time when the seal

on the devil sword will be at its weakest point in three thousand years!”

“The profound formation below is known as the Boundless Universe Formation. It is something that the Four Great Sacred Grounds took several months to complete. It is not something that can be used offensively, but it is able to activate all of the profound energy within its bounds instantly and use that energy to bombard the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword that lies in its center!”

“I see.” Yun Che gave a low gasp. So they would rely on this unique profound formation to perform the so-called gathering of all the might of the heroes of the realm.

The sky grew darker and darker. At this moment, Yun Che raised his head to look at the sky and he saw that half of the scorching sun had already been covered.

After half of it had been covered by the dark scar and the

sky began to grow darker at a faster speed. It was clearly noontime, but right now, it seemed as if evening had begun.

Xunayuan Wentian surveyed the sky as he faintly nodded to the other three Sacred Masters. He proclaimed in a loud voice, “The time is near! The time has come for all of us to gather our strength and uncover the secrets of the devil sword! Even though this sword was found by my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region, I, Xuanyuan Wentian, solemnly swear on my title of Sword Master that if the secrets of the Divine Profound are truly

uncovered after the seal on the sword has been broken, my Mighty Heavenly Sword Region and the three other Sacred Grounds will not hide and keep it for ourselves. It will be freely shared with all who are participating in the unsealing of this devil sword!”

“The words of Sword Master Xuanyuan are naturally trustworthy, his word is his bond!”

Over at where the Divine Phoenix Sect was seated, Feng

Zukui slowly stood up from his seat. Among the powers outside of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, the Divine Phoenix Sect held the most clout and the most influence. Furthermore, the person who possessed the most exalted status within the sect was naturally Feng Zukui as well, “What should we do when the coming phenomenon of the Thirteen Star Alignment arrives?”

“It’s very simple.” Xuanyuan Wentian replied, “I just have to request that all of you rise from your seats and come inside this Boundless Universe Formation



while gathering all of the profound energy in your bodies without reservation. The moment the thirteen stars do align and the heaven and earth turns completely dark, I would request that everyone listen to my command and pour all of your profound energy into this formation. This will enable the Boundless Universe Formation to gather an extremely strong power.... No matter how strong the seal on the devil sword is, if the might of everyone present today is gathered up, we will definitely be able to break it in a single strike!”

“Hahahaha, so that is how it is! This old man had always thought that this would be an extremely arduous and risky undertaking. If not, the grand Four Great Sacred Grounds would not have to go so far as to invite all the heroes of the realm. But to think that it was actually so simple.” Feng Zukui let out a great laugh as he took to the skies as well, “Divine Phoenix disciples, listen to my command! Follow me and move inside the Sea God Arena!”

Under Feng Zukui’s command, all the members of the Divine Phoenix Sect had flown up from

their seats to arrive within the Boundless Universe Formation. Feng Xue'er hesitated for a moment as she glanced at where Yun Che was seated, but in the end, she had no choice but to accompany Feng Hengkong.

If the Divine Phoenix Sect took the lead, then the other powers within the Seven Nations would not fall behind either, and they followed suit as well. Following the faint gestures made by the Four Sacred Masters, all the gathered disciples of the Four Great Sacred Grounds all took to the sky as well, as they flew onto the Sea God Arena.

In the blink of an eye, the seats that surrounded the Sea God Arena had been completely emptied as the six thousand over profound practitioners who represented the highest level of power within the Profound Sky Continent all floated over the Boundless Universe Formation.

However, three people had yet to leave their seats.

Yun Che, Xia Yuanba... and Fen Juechen!

Furthermore, the three people that were left were all extremely irritating to the eye.

There were no dark clouds in the sky, yet it had still become very dark as the black scar had covered seventy percent of the sun. A deathly stillness had settled over the venue and it seemed as all life had been drained out of the air. Even these mighty profound practitioners felt their chests being engulfed by a heavy pressure.

At this time, Xuanyuan Wentian's eyes swivelled towards Yun Che as he suddenly spoke, "Asgard Master Yun, could it be that you have no interest towards this devil sword or the secrets of the Divine Profound?"

The words of Xuanyuan Wentian caused everyone to focus their attention on Yun Che.

If this was someone else, they would have definitely become so

frightened that their faces would have lost all color. But Yun Che had already prepared for such an eventuality so he gave a faint laugh instead, "It is not that this junior possesses no interest towards these things. It is just that I am still recovering from my wounds. The spirit is willing but the flesh is weak."

"Ah, so that was how it is." Xuanyuan Wentian said as he nodded his head. His tone changed as he gave a faint smile, "I heard that Asgard Master Yun's teacher is Old Man Duotian. Ten thousand years ago, Old Man Duotian's had

obtained a world-shaking breakthrough in his profound cultivation, so he must have already reached the pinnacle of perfection. I heard that an elder of the Sun Moon Divine Elder, Ye Shi, had unwittingly offended your revered master and he was completely annihilated by a small wisp of flame. This level of cultivation is completely unheard of and it's something that has shocked the entire world. If your revered master is able to make an appearance today, he would be able to break this seal on this devil sword with a flick of his wrist, and we would not even need to mobilize the entire profound world of the Profound Sky Continent.”



“Even though he might disdain to take action, if we could even witness the legendary Old Man Duotian, it would be the greatest fortune in our lifetime.”

Only Yun Che could hear the sarcasm and mockery in Xuanyuan Wentian’s voice.

This definitely confirmed that the truth behind “Old Man Duotian” was something that had been exposed to Xuanyuan Wentian! It was also obvious now that the kidnapping of Xiao

Yun had been done by Mighty Heavenly Sword Region.... Before this, he was only eighty percent certain. But right now, he was thoroughly convinced!

“My master has no desire to step into the affairs of mortals!” Yun Che replied, remaining calm and composed throughout.

“Heh heh, then that is truly regrettable.” Xuanyuan Wentian gaze shifted to the side as he looked at Xia Yuanba, “Could it be that young Xia is also completely uninterested in the

secrets of the Divine Profound?”

“Of course I’m not interested.” Xia Yuanba replied as he crossed his arms over his chest. He had not been moved at all and it even seemed like there was a violent energy hidden within him, “If I want to step into the Divine Profound Realm, it will take me no more than one hundred years, so why would I have any need for the so-called secrets of the Divine Profound... Moreover, we don’t know if it even exists.”

Once these words were uttered, it shocked everyone who was present. Even the faces of the Four Sacred Masters themselves had undergone a dramatic change. Claiming that he would be able to break through to the Divine Profound Realm within one hundred years, even one of the Four Sacred Masters would not be able to make such an arrogant and outrageous claim... Because in the ten thousand year history of the Four Great Sacred Grounds, even those old monsters who had lived for two to three thousand years had been unable to truly touch the Divine Profound Realm.

“Hahahahaha!” The calm and easygoing Huangji Wuyu threw his head back in great laughter, “Yuanba, there has never been a person who has dared to make such an outrageous claim before you did. The words you just said doesn’t matter. Offending Sword Master Xuanyuan is a small thing as well. But Yuanba, you have belittled all the heroes of the realm with one simple sentence. However, this is simply music to this emperor’s ears, hahahahaha...”

It was extremely rare for the Sacred Master of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary to display

such emotion. The Twelve Spiritual Masters and the gathered elders of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary had also begun to laugh as well and their laughter was laced with satisfaction and pride. If someone else had uttered those words, it would have been treated as a complete joke. But only Xia Yuanba possessed the right to show such arrogance!

It was just over ten days ago that Xia Yuanba had suddenly experienced a breakthrough in strength yet again after a short period of confinement. Huangji Wuyu had told the Twelve

Spiritual Masters then and there: It was very possible that Xia Yuanba would step into the fabled Divine Profound Realm in the future, becoming the first person to do so in the history of Absolute Monarch Sanctuary!

Sovereign of the Seas Qu Fengyi said in a grave voice, “There is no need for Sword Master Xuanyuan to speak any further. It is entirely up to the individual whether they will exert themselves during today’s Devil Sword Conference. If they do not believe or look down on the secrets of the devil sword, then they are certainly within their

rights to merely be observers. There is no need to demand or force anyone to do anything! Anyways, the time is at hand! It is about to begin!”

“Alright!”

Eighty percent of the sun had been shrouded by darkness and the skies had become so dark that it seemed as if the curtain of night had fallen upon them. Xuanyuan Wentian raised both of his hands as he spoke, “In about one hundred breaths, the thirteen stars will align. So I



request that all of you follow me and concentrate all of the profound energy in your body. You must definitely not hold anything back! The moment the heavens and earth become completely shrouded in darkness, pour forth all your profound energy into the formation at my command! Let's break the seal on the devil sword!"

"Haah!"

Xuanyuan Wentian gave a great shout as his clothes billowed and

his hair stood on end. The profound energy surrounding his body surged and swelled as it manifested a sword intent that covered the heavens.

Huangji Wuyu, Qu Fengyi and Ye Meixie followed suit as four world-shaking auras pressed down on everyone. The power in the air was so heavy and powerful that it seemed like a deity was about to descend from the heavens. This startled the powers from the Seven Nations so badly that they had turned completely ashen.

“Divine Phoenix disciples, heed my command! Concentrate all of the profound energy in your body! Hold back nothing!”

All of the profound energy surrounding Feng Zukui flared up as well as Phoenix flames soared into the heavens. Under his command, all of the Divine Phoenix disciples had ignited their divine Phoenix flames at the same time. In an instant, the darkening sky became stained by a startling crimson light.

Following this, all of the

profound practitioners from the Sacred Grounds and the other powers of the Seven Nations began to focus all of their profound energy as well. More than five hundred Monarchs and six thousand Overlords focused their power at the same time, causing the gathered force to be terrifying. All of this profound energy was being focused and was in an unreleased state. This caused Yun Che, who was looking on at the sidelines, to feel as if a terrible and frightening storm was heading his way.

In his normal state, even

though this aura was alarming, it would not be enough to force him back. But right now, his entire body was wounded, so it was rather hard for him to bear.

Xia Yuanba swiftly extended a hand in front of Yun Che. Immediately, Yun Che felt the pressure that he was facing lessen by several times as his breathing grew regular once more.

The reason why Xia Yuanba did not enter the Sea God Arena was not because he was uninterested

in the secrets of the devil sword. It was to protect Yun Che. Because he was aware of Yun Che's injuries and the upcoming peril he would face.

On the other side of the Sea God Arena, Fen Juechen had raised his head as well. But he was not looking at a single person. His hungry, wolf-like eyes emitted an extremely malevolent light... as he fiercely stared at the Heavenly Sin Divine Sword that floated in the middle of the Sea God Arena.

The skies grew darker and darker and the originally round sun was covered by so much darkness that only a sliver of it remained in the sky, and even that sliver of light was gradually fading to nothingness... Its color was turning from a scorching orange to a dark red color.

Once the time arrived, even the last smear of dark red light would be completely devoured by the darkness.

In an instant, the world suddenly turned pitch-black as

the world was completely engulfed by darkness, without a shred of light. The wind had stopped blowing completely and the air had abruptly turned cold. The entire world seemed to become cold and gloomy as a heavy pressure filled the air. It was as if the entire world had been plunged into a boundless purgatory of darkness.

The Thirteen Star Alignment that only happened once every three thousand years had finally come! Within this three thousand year period, this was also the time when the yin energy in the heavens and earth



would be at its richest and most flourishing.

At this time, the Boundless Universe Formation on the Sea God Arena began to fiercely glow with light.

“It is now!” Xuanyuan Wentian gave a roar that ripped through the heavens!

This roar snapped the taut and stretched nerves of all who were present. They immediately responded and fiercely poured

out their profound energy in the  
same instant...

# Table of Contents

## Synopsis

- Chapter 651 – Final Desperate Struggle!
- Chapter 652 – Tempest Of Rage
- Chapter 653 – I’m Back...
- Chapter 654 – Bloody Massacre
- Chapter 655 – Yellow Springs Ashes
- Chapter 656 – Frozen Cloud’s Bad News (1)
- Chapter 657 – Frozen Cloud’s Bad News (2)
- Chapter 658 – Working In Vain
- Chapter 659 – Heartless Instant Kill
- Chapter 660 – Scared Witless
- Chapter 661 – New Asgard Master
- Chapter 662 – Divine Phoenix Coming Again
- Chapter 663 – The Overlord Returns
- Chapter 664 – Frozen Cloud Post-Calamity
- Chapter 665 – Frozen Cloud’s Way Out
- Chapter 666 – Sudden Crisis
- Chapter 667 – Frozen Cloud Celestial Shadow
- Chapter 668 – The Approaching Sun Moon Divine Hall
- Chapter 669 – Four Great Elders
- Chapter 670 – Calamity Strikes Again
- Chapter 671 – False Bravado
- Chapter 672 – A Might Which Covers The Heavens
- Chapter 673 – Exposed?
- Chapter 674 – Absolute Deterrence
- Chapter 675 – Flee In Disorder
- Chapter 676 – Casting Off The Calamity
- Chapter 677 – The Shuddering Divine Hall
- Chapter 678 – Floating Cloud City’s Devilish Energy
- Chapter 679 – Fen Juechen?!
- Chapter 680 – Arranging The Duel
- Chapter 681 – Reunion (1)
- Chapter 682 – Reunion (2)
- Chapter 683 – The “Old Man Duotian” Of Legend

Chapter 684 – Devil Sword Conference?  
Chapter 685 – Then That Is Simply Too Wonderful!  
Chapter 686 – Profound Strength Endowment?  
Chapter 687 – Xiao Family's Joy  
Chapter 688 – Sword Pointed At Divine Phoenix  
Chapter 689 – Divine Phoenix's Killing Intent  
Chapter 690 – Sleeping In Each Other's Embrace  
Chapter 691 – Meeting Zi Ji Once Again  
Chapter 692 – Lost Control  
Chapter 693 – The Culprit Who Was Discovered Too Late  
Chapter 694 – We're Gonna Be Rich  
Chapter 695 – Moon Slaughter Demon Nest?  
Chapter 696 – Ocean Palace's Secret  
Chapter 697 – At The Gates Of Phoenix City  
Chapter 698 – Destroying The Phoenix God Sculpture  
Chapter 699 – Rebuking Divine Phoenix  
Chapter 700 – What Now?  
Chapter 701 – Divine Phoenix's Chaos  
Chapter 702 – Soaring Into The Sky  
Chapter 703 – Hatred That Exceeds The Heavens  
Chapter 704 – The Death-Seeking Divine Phoenix Army  
Chapter 705 – Phoenix Sealing Imprisonment Formation?  
Chapter 706 – Atrocious Performance  
Chapter 707 – Beliefs Collapsed  
Chapter 708 – Drawing Closer With Every Step  
Chapter 709 – Trembling Divine Phoenix Sect  
Chapter 710 – Weak Point?  
Chapter 711 – Born Arrogant  
Chapter 712 – Battling A Monarch  
Chapter 713 – Heavy Sword Suppression  
Chapter 714 – Quick End To The Battle  
Chapter 715 – Divine Phoenix's Nightmare  
Chapter 716 – Feng Tianwei  
Chapter 717 – Insane Retaliation  
Chapter 718 – Yellow Spring Ashes  
Chapter 719 – The Threat Of Annihilation  
Chapter 720 – Excessive Extent  
Chapter 721 – Finally Meeting  
Chapter 722 – Cruel  
Chapter 723 – Reason

Chapter 724 – The Awakened Phoenix Soul Within Feng  
Xue'er  
Chapter 725 – Atoning For The Sins Of The Father  
Chapter 726 – The True Reason  
Chapter 727 – Kneel Of The Divine Maiden  
Chapter 728 – Cang Yue's Decision  
Chapter 729 – Heavy Transformation  
Chapter 730 – Half Year Agreement  
Chapter 731 – End Of The War  
Chapter 732 – Temporary Peacefulness  
Chapter 733 – Jasmine's Killing Intent  
Chapter 734 – Disobeying The Law Of Heaven  
Chapter 735 – Murong Qianxue  
Chapter 736 – Success  
Chapter 737 – Deeply and Affectionately  
Chapter 738 – Unfilial Son  
Chapter 739 – Asgard Visitor  
Chapter 740 – The Scent Of A Plot  
Chapter 741 – Jasmine That Escaped From The Devilish  
Nightmare  
Chapter 742 – Day Of The Promised Battle  
Chapter 743 – Illusory Devil Tome Of Eternal Night?  
Chapter 744 – Night Devil Heaven Burial  
Chapter 745 – Counterattack Begins  
Chapter 746 – Unexpected Battle  
Chapter 747 – Complete Victory?  
Chapter 748 – Lightless Eternal Night, Yellow Springs Ashes  
Chapter 749 – Unwilling Defeat  
Chapter 750 – History Of The Past  
Chapter 751 – The End Of The Era Of Gods  
Chapter 752 – Ancient Devil Art  
Chapter 753 – Forbidden Reincarnation Technique  
Chapter 754 – The Strange Heavenly Sin Divine Sword  
Chapter 755 – Heavenly Sword Villa's Distinguished Guests  
Chapter 756 – Condemnation  
Chapter 757 – Xuanyuan Yufeng!  
Chapter 758 – Xuanyuan Jiuding  
Chapter 759 – Embarrassing Beyond Belief  
Chapter 760 – Goodbye, Ling Jie  
Chapter 761 – Fateful Turning Point

Chapter 762 – Hatred Higher Than The Heavens  
Chapter 763 – Tears Of A Devil  
Chapter 764 – The Approaching Devil Sword Conference  
Chapter 765 – The Peculiar Frozen End Divine Art  
Chapter 766 – Crippling Duke Ming  
Chapter 767 – Floating Ocean Palace  
Chapter 768 – Summoned By The Sovereign Of The Seas  
Chapter 769 – Ocean Palace's Sacred Master  
Chapter 770 – A Bad Bargain  
Chapter 771 – Mighty Heavenly Sword Master  
Chapter 772 – Moon Slaughter Devil Nest  
Chapter 773 – Half-Bloomed Udumbara (1)  
Chapter 774 – Half-Bloomed Udumbara (2)  
Chapter 775 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (1)  
Chapter 776 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (2)  
Chapter 777 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (3)  
Chapter 778 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (4)  
Chapter 779 – Moon Slaughter Devil Sovereign (5)  
Chapter 780 – Xiao Yun's Disappearance  
Chapter 781 – Fierce Battle Within The Devil Nest  
Chapter 782 – Devil Transformation  
Chapter 783 – Blooming Of The Udumbara  
Chapter 784 – Desperate Straits  
Chapter 785 – Desperate Gamble  
Chapter 786 – Heaven Smiting Devil Slayer  
Chapter 787 – Taking The Netherworld Udumbara By Force  
Chapter 788 – My Jasmine (1)  
Chapter 789 – My Jasmine (2)  
Chapter 790 – My Jasmine (3)  
Chapter 791 – Hazy Dreamscape  
Chapter 792 – Mysterious Black Jade  
Chapter 793 – Gigantic Ice Flame  
Chapter 794 – Jasmine Reconstructs Her Body  
Chapter 795 – A Dangerous Situation  
Chapter 796 – The Young Master Of Mighty Heavenly Sword Region  
Chapter 797 – Devil Sword Conference (1)  
Chapter 798 – Devil Sword Conference (2)  
Chapter 799 – Devil Sword Conference (3)  
Chapter 800 – Devil Sword Conference (4)

# Guide

[Cover](#)